CHAPTER\_NN I\_CD JONATHAN\_NNP HARKER\_NNP 'S\_POS JOURNAL\_NN -LRB-\_-LRB- Kept\_NN in\_IN shorthand\_NN .\_. -RRB-\_-RRB-

3\_CD May\_NNP .\_.

Bistritz\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Left\_VBN Munich\_NNP at\_IN 8:35\_CD P.\_NNP M.\_NNP ,\_, on\_IN 1st\_JJ May\_NNP ,\_, arriving\_VBG at\_IN Vienna\_NNP early\_JJ next\_JJ morning\_NN ;\_: should\_MD have\_VB arrived\_VBN at\_IN 6:46\_CD ,\_, but\_CC train\_NN was\_VBD an\_DT hour\_NN late\_RB .\_.

Buda-Pesth\_NNP seems\_VBZ a\_DT wonderful\_JJ place\_NN ,\_, from\_IN the\_DT glimpse\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP got\_VBD of\_IN it\_PRP from\_IN the\_DT train\_NN and\_CC the\_DT little\_JJ I\_PRP could\_MD walk\_VB through\_IN the\_DT streets\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP feared\_VBD to\_TO go\_VB very\_RB far\_RB from\_IN the\_DT station\_NN ,\_, as\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD arrived\_VBN late\_RB and\_CC would\_MD start\_VB as\_IN near\_IN the\_DT correct\_JJ time\_NN as\_IN possible\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT impression\_NN I\_PRP had\_VBD was\_VBD that\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD leaving\_VBG the\_DT West\_NNP and\_CC entering\_VBG the\_DT East\_NNP ;\_: the\_DT most\_RBS western\_JJ of\_IN splendid\_JJ bridges\_NNS over\_IN the\_DT Danube\_NNP ,\_, which\_WDT is\_VBZ here\_RB of\_IN noble\_JJ width\_NN and\_CC depth\_NN ,\_, took\_VBD us\_PRP among\_IN the\_DT traditions\_NNS of\_IN Turkish\_JJ rule\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP left\_VBD in\_IN pretty\_RB good\_JJ time\_NN ,\_, and\_CC came\_VBD after\_IN nightfall\_NN to\_TO Klausenburgh\_NNP .\_.

Here\_RB I\_PRP stopped\_VBD for\_IN the\_DT night\_NN at\_IN the\_DT Hotel\_NNP Royale\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD for\_IN dinner\_NN ,\_, or\_CC rather\_RB supper\_NN ,\_, a\_DT chicken\_NN done\_VBN up\_RP some\_DT way\_NN with\_IN red\_JJ pepper\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT was\_VBD very\_RB good\_JJ but\_CC thirsty\_JJ .\_.

-LRB-\_-LRB- Mem.\_NNP ,\_, get\_VB recipe\_NN for\_IN Mina\_NNP .\_. -RRB-\_-RRB-

I\_PRP asked\_VBD the\_DT waiter\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP said\_VBD it\_PRP was\_VBD called\_VBN ``\_`` paprika\_NN hendl\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' and\_CC that\_IN ,\_, as\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT national\_JJ dish\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP should\_MD be\_VB able\_JJ to\_TO get\_VB it\_PRP anywhere\_RB along\_IN the\_DT Carpathians\_NNPS .\_.

I\_PRP found\_VBD my\_PRP$ smattering\_NN of\_IN German\_NNP very\_RB useful\_JJ here\_RB ;\_: indeed\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB know\_VB how\_WRB I\_PRP should\_MD be\_VB able\_JJ to\_TO get\_VB on\_RP without\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

Having\_VBG had\_VBD some\_DT time\_NN at\_IN my\_PRP$ disposal\_NN when\_WRB in\_IN London\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP had\_VBD visited\_VBN the\_DT British\_NNP Museum\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC made\_VBD search\_NN among\_IN the\_DT books\_NNS and\_CC maps\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT library\_NN regarding\_VBG Transylvania\_NNP ;\_: it\_PRP had\_VBD struck\_VBN me\_PRP that\_IN some\_DT foreknowledge\_NN of\_IN the\_DT country\_NN could\_MD hardly\_RB fail\_VB to\_TO have\_VB some\_DT importance\_NN in\_IN dealing\_VBG with\_IN a\_DT nobleman\_NN of\_IN that\_DT country\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP find\_VBP that\_IN the\_DT district\_NN he\_PRP named\_VBD is\_VBZ in\_IN the\_DT extreme\_NN east\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT country\_NN ,\_, just\_RB on\_IN the\_DT borders\_NNS of\_IN three\_CD states\_NNS ,\_, Transylvania\_NNP ,\_, Moldavia\_NNP and\_CC Bukovina\_NNP ,\_, in\_IN the\_DT midst\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Carpathian\_JJ mountains\_NNS ;\_: one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT wildest\_JJS and\_CC least\_JJS known\_JJ portions\_NNS of\_IN Europe\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB able\_JJ to\_TO light\_VB on\_IN any\_DT map\_NN or\_CC work\_NN giving\_VBG the\_DT exact\_JJ locality\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Castle\_NNP Dracula\_NNP ,\_, as\_IN there\_EX are\_VBP no\_DT maps\_NNS of\_IN this\_DT country\_NN as\_RB yet\_RB to\_TO compare\_VB with\_IN our\_PRP$ own\_JJ Ordnance\_NNP Survey\_NNP maps\_VBZ ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP found\_VBD that\_IN Bistritz\_NNP ,\_, the\_DT post\_NN town\_NN named\_VBN by\_IN Count\_NNP Dracula\_NNP ,\_, is\_VBZ a\_DT fairly\_RB well-known\_JJ place\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD enter\_VB here\_RB some\_DT of\_IN my\_PRP$ notes\_NNS ,\_, as\_IN they\_PRP may\_MD refresh\_VB my\_PRP$ memory\_NN when\_WRB I\_PRP talk\_VBP over\_IN my\_PRP$ travels\_NNS with\_IN Mina\_NNP .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT population\_NN of\_IN Transylvania\_NNP there\_EX are\_VBP four\_CD distinct\_JJ nationalities\_NNS :\_: Saxons\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT South\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC mixed\_JJ with\_IN them\_PRP the\_DT Wallachs\_NNPS ,\_, who\_WP are\_VBP the\_DT descendants\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT Dacians\_NNPS ;\_: Magyars\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT West\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC Szekelys\_NNP in\_IN the\_DT East\_NNP and\_CC North\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP going\_VBG among\_IN the\_DT latter\_JJ ,\_, who\_WP claim\_VBP to\_TO be\_VB descended\_VBN from\_IN Attila\_NNP and\_CC the\_DT Huns\_NNPS .\_.

This\_DT may\_MD be\_VB so\_RB ,\_, for\_IN when\_WRB the\_DT Magyars\_NNPS conquered\_VBD the\_DT country\_NN in\_IN the\_DT eleventh\_JJ century\_NN they\_PRP found\_VBD the\_DT Huns\_NNPS settled\_VBD in\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP read\_VBP that\_IN every\_DT known\_JJ superstition\_NN in\_IN the\_DT world\_NN is\_VBZ gathered\_VBN into\_IN the\_DT horseshoe\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Carpathians\_NNPS ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN it\_PRP were\_VBD the\_DT centre\_NN of\_IN some\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN imaginative\_JJ whirlpool\_NN ;\_: if\_IN so\_RB my\_PRP$ stay\_NN may\_MD be\_VB very\_RB interesting\_JJ .\_.

-LRB-\_-LRB- Mem.\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP must\_MD ask\_VB the\_DT Count\_NNP all\_DT about\_IN them\_PRP .\_. -RRB-\_-RRB-

I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB sleep\_VB well\_RB ,\_, though\_IN my\_PRP$ bed\_NN was\_VBD comfortable\_JJ enough\_RB ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD all\_DT sorts\_NNS of\_IN queer\_NN dreams\_NNS .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT dog\_NN howling\_VBG all\_DT night\_NN under\_IN my\_PRP$ window\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT may\_MD have\_VB had\_VBD something\_NN to\_TO do\_VB with\_IN it\_PRP ;\_: or\_CC it\_PRP may\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN the\_DT paprika\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO drink\_VB up\_RP all\_PDT the\_DT water\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ carafe\_NN ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD still\_RB thirsty\_JJ .\_.

Towards\_IN morning\_NN I\_PRP slept\_VBD and\_CC was\_VBD wakened\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT continuous\_JJ knocking\_VBG at\_IN my\_PRP$ door\_NN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP guess\_VBP I\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN sleeping\_VBG soundly\_RB then\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD for\_IN breakfast\_NN more\_JJR paprika\_NN ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN porridge\_NN of\_IN maize\_FW flour\_FW which\_WDT they\_PRP said\_VBD was\_VBD ``\_`` mamaliga\_FW ,\_, ''\_'' and\_CC egg-plant\_NN stuffed\_VBN with\_IN forcemeat\_NN ,\_, a\_DT very\_RB excellent\_JJ dish\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT they\_PRP call\_VBP ``\_`` impletata\_NN .\_. ''\_''

-LRB-\_-LRB- Mem.\_NNP ,\_, get\_VB recipe\_NN for\_IN this\_DT also\_RB .\_. -RRB-\_-RRB-

I\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO hurry\_VB breakfast\_NN ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT train\_NN started\_VBD a\_DT little\_JJ before\_IN eight\_CD ,\_, or\_CC rather\_RB it\_PRP ought\_MD to\_TO have\_VB done\_VBN so\_RB ,\_, for\_IN after\_IN rushing\_VBG to\_TO the\_DT station\_NN at\_IN 7:30\_CD I\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO sit\_VB in\_IN the\_DT carriage\_NN for\_IN more\_JJR than\_IN an\_DT hour\_NN before\_IN we\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO move\_VB .\_.

It\_PRP seems\_VBZ to\_TO me\_PRP that\_IN the\_DT further\_JJ east\_JJ you\_PRP go\_VBP the\_DT more\_RBR unpunctual\_JJ are\_VBP the\_DT trains\_NNS .\_.

What\_WP ought\_MD they\_PRP to\_TO be\_VB in\_IN China\_NNP ?\_.

All\_DT day\_NN long\_RB we\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO dawdle\_VB through\_IN a\_DT country\_NN which\_WDT was\_VBD full\_JJ of\_IN beauty\_NN of\_IN every\_DT kind\_NN .\_.

Sometimes\_RB we\_PRP saw\_VBD little\_JJ towns\_NNS or\_CC castles\_NNS on\_IN the\_DT top\_NN of\_IN steep\_JJ hills\_NNS such\_JJ as\_IN we\_PRP see\_VBP in\_IN old\_JJ missals\_NNS ;\_: sometimes\_RB we\_PRP ran\_VBD by\_IN rivers\_NNS and\_CC streams\_NNS which\_WDT seemed\_VBD from\_IN the\_DT wide\_JJ stony\_NN margin\_NN on\_IN each\_DT side\_NN of\_IN them\_PRP to\_TO be\_VB subject\_JJ to\_TO great\_JJ floods\_NNS .\_.

It\_PRP takes\_VBZ a\_DT lot\_NN of\_IN water\_NN ,\_, and\_CC running\_VBG strong\_JJ ,\_, to\_TO sweep\_NN the\_DT outside\_JJ edge\_NN of\_IN a\_DT river\_NN clear\_JJ .\_.

At\_IN every\_DT station\_NN there\_EX were\_VBD groups\_NNS of\_IN people\_NNS ,\_, sometimes\_RB crowds\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN all\_DT sorts\_NNS of\_IN attire\_NN .\_.

Some\_DT of\_IN them\_PRP were\_VBD just\_RB like\_IN the\_DT peasants\_NNS at\_IN home\_NN or\_CC those\_DT I\_PRP saw\_VBD coming\_VBG through\_IN France\_NNP and\_CC Germany\_NNP ,\_, with\_IN short\_JJ jackets\_NNS and\_CC round\_NN hats\_NNS and\_CC home-made\_JJ trousers\_NNS ;\_: but\_CC others\_NNS were\_VBD very\_RB picturesque\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT women\_NNS looked\_VBD pretty\_RB ,\_, except\_IN when\_WRB you\_PRP got\_VBD near\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC they\_PRP were\_VBD very\_RB clumsy\_JJ about\_IN the\_DT waist\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP had\_VBD all\_DT full\_JJ white\_JJ sleeves\_NNS of\_IN some\_DT kind\_NN or\_CC other\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC most\_JJS of\_IN them\_PRP had\_VBD big\_JJ belts\_NNS with\_IN a\_DT lot\_NN of\_IN strips\_NNS of\_IN something\_NN fluttering\_VBG from\_IN them\_PRP like\_IN the\_DT dresses\_NNS in\_IN a\_DT ballet\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC of\_IN course\_NN there\_EX were\_VBD petticoats\_NNS under\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT strangest\_JJS figures\_NNS we\_PRP saw\_VBD were\_VBD the\_DT Slovaks\_NNPS ,\_, who\_WP were\_VBD more\_JJR barbarian\_NN than\_IN the\_DT rest\_NN ,\_, with\_IN their\_PRP$ big\_JJ cow-boy\_JJ hats\_NNS ,\_, great\_JJ baggy\_JJ dirty-white\_JJ trousers\_NNS ,\_, white\_JJ linen\_NN shirts\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC enormous\_JJ heavy\_JJ leather\_NN belts\_NNS ,\_, nearly\_RB a\_DT foot\_NN wide\_JJ ,\_, all\_DT studded\_VBD over\_RP with\_IN brass\_NN nails\_NNS .\_.

They\_PRP wore\_VBD high\_JJ boots\_NNS ,\_, with\_IN their\_PRP$ trousers\_NNS tucked\_VBD into\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC had\_VBD long\_JJ black\_JJ hair\_NN and\_CC heavy\_JJ black\_JJ moustaches\_NNS .\_.

They\_PRP are\_VBP very\_RB picturesque\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC do\_VBP not\_RB look\_VB prepossessing\_JJ .\_.

On\_IN the\_DT stage\_NN they\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB set\_VBN down\_RP at\_IN once\_RB as\_IN some\_DT old\_JJ Oriental\_JJ band\_NN of\_IN brigands\_NNS .\_.

They\_PRP are\_VBP ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP told\_VBN ,\_, very\_RB harmless\_JJ and\_CC rather\_RB wanting\_VBG in\_IN natural\_JJ self-assertion\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT dark\_JJ side\_NN of\_IN twilight\_NN when\_WRB we\_PRP got\_VBD to\_TO Bistritz\_NNP ,\_, which\_WDT is\_VBZ a\_DT very\_RB interesting\_JJ old\_JJ place\_NN .\_.

Being\_VBG practically\_RB on\_IN the\_DT frontier\_NN --\_: for\_IN the\_DT Borgo\_NNP Pass\_NN leads\_VBZ from\_IN it\_PRP into\_IN Bukovina\_NNP --\_: it\_PRP has\_VBZ had\_VBN a\_DT very\_RB stormy\_JJ existence\_NN ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP certainly\_RB shows\_VBZ marks\_NNS of\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

Fifty\_CD years\_NNS ago\_IN a\_DT series\_NN of\_IN great\_JJ fires\_NNS took\_VBD place\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT made\_VBD terrible\_JJ havoc\_NN on\_IN five\_CD separate\_JJ occasions\_NNS .\_.

At\_IN the\_DT very\_JJ beginning\_NN of\_IN the\_DT seventeenth\_JJ century\_NN it\_PRP underwent\_VBD a\_DT siege\_NN of\_IN three\_CD weeks\_NNS and\_CC lost\_VBD 13,000\_CD people\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT casualties\_NNS of\_IN war\_NN proper\_JJ being\_VBG assisted\_VBN by\_IN famine\_NN and\_CC disease\_NN .\_.

Count\_NNP Dracula\_NNP had\_VBD directed\_VBN me\_PRP to\_TO go\_VB to\_TO the\_DT Golden\_NNP Krone\_NNP Hotel\_NNP ,\_, which\_WDT I\_PRP found\_VBD ,\_, to\_TO my\_PRP$ great\_JJ delight\_NN ,\_, to\_TO be\_VB thoroughly\_RB old-fashioned\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN of\_IN course\_NN I\_PRP wanted\_VBD to\_TO see\_VB all\_DT I\_PRP could\_MD of\_IN the\_DT ways\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT country\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD evidently\_RB expected\_VBN ,\_, for\_IN when\_WRB I\_PRP got\_VBD near\_IN the\_DT door\_NN I\_PRP faced\_VBD a\_DT cheery-looking\_JJ elderly\_JJ woman\_NN in\_IN the\_DT usual\_JJ peasant\_NN dress\_NN --\_: white\_JJ undergarment\_NN with\_IN long\_JJ double\_JJ apron\_NN ,\_, front\_NN ,\_, and\_CC back\_RB ,\_, of\_IN coloured\_JJ stuff\_NN fitting\_JJ almost\_RB too\_RB tight\_JJ for\_IN modesty\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP came\_VBD close\_RB she\_PRP bowed\_VBD and\_CC said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` The\_DT Herr\_NNP Englishman\_NNP ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Yes\_UH ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` Jonathan\_NNP Harker\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

She\_PRP smiled\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC gave\_VBD some\_DT message\_NN to\_TO an\_DT elderly\_JJ man\_NN in\_IN white\_JJ shirt-sleeves\_NNS ,\_, who\_WP had\_VBD followed\_VBN her\_PRP to\_TO the\_DT door\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP went\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC immediately\_RB returned\_VBD with\_IN a\_DT letter\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` My\_PRP$ Friend\_NN .\_.

--\_: Welcome\_VB to\_TO the\_DT Carpathians\_NNPS .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP anxiously\_RB expecting\_VBG you\_PRP .\_.

Sleep\_VB well\_RB to-night\_JJ .\_.

At\_IN three\_CD to-morrow\_NNS the\_DT diligence\_NN will\_MD start\_VB for\_IN Bukovina\_NNP ;\_: a\_DT place\_NN on\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ kept\_VBN for\_IN you\_PRP .\_.

At\_IN the\_DT Borgo\_NNP Pass\_VB my\_PRP$ carriage\_NN will\_MD await\_VB you\_PRP and\_CC will\_MD bring\_VB you\_PRP to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP trust\_VBP that\_IN your\_PRP$ journey\_NN from\_IN London\_NNP has\_VBZ been\_VBN a\_DT happy\_JJ one\_CD ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD enjoy\_VB your\_PRP$ stay\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ beautiful\_JJ land\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Your\_PRP$ friend\_NN ,\_, ``\_`` Dracula\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

4\_CD May\_NNP .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP found\_VBD that\_IN my\_PRP$ landlord\_NN had\_VBD got\_VBN a\_DT letter\_NN from\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP ,\_, directing\_VBG him\_PRP to\_TO secure\_VB the\_DT best\_JJS place\_NN on\_IN the\_DT coach\_NN for\_IN me\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC on\_IN making\_VBG inquiries\_NNS as\_IN to\_TO details\_NNS he\_PRP seemed\_VBD somewhat\_RB reticent\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC pretended\_VBD that\_IN he\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB understand\_VB my\_PRP$ German\_NNP .\_.

This\_DT could\_MD not\_RB be\_VB true\_JJ ,\_, because\_IN up\_IN to\_TO then\_RB he\_PRP had\_VBD understood\_VBN it\_PRP perfectly\_RB ;\_: at\_IN least\_JJS ,\_, he\_PRP answered\_VBD my\_PRP$ questions\_NNS exactly\_RB as\_IN if\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD .\_.

He\_PRP and\_CC his\_PRP$ wife\_NN ,\_, the\_DT old\_JJ lady\_NN who\_WP had\_VBD received\_VBN me\_PRP ,\_, looked\_VBD at\_IN each\_DT other\_JJ in\_IN a\_DT frightened\_JJ sort\_NN of\_IN way\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP mumbled\_VBD out\_RP that\_IN the\_DT money\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN sent\_VBN in\_IN a\_DT letter\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_DT was\_VBD all\_DT he\_PRP knew\_VBD .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP asked\_VBD him\_PRP if\_IN he\_PRP knew\_VBD Count\_NNP Dracula\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC could\_MD tell\_VB me\_PRP anything\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ castle\_NN ,\_, both\_CC he\_PRP and\_CC his\_PRP$ wife\_NN crossed\_VBD themselves\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, saying\_VBG that\_IN they\_PRP knew\_VBD nothing\_NN at\_IN all\_DT ,\_, simply\_RB refused\_VBD to\_TO speak\_VB further\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD so\_RB near\_IN the\_DT time\_NN of\_IN starting\_VBG that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD no\_DT time\_NN to\_TO ask\_VB any\_DT one\_NN else\_RB ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD all\_DT very\_RB mysterious\_JJ and\_CC not\_RB by\_IN any\_DT means\_NNS comforting\_JJ .\_.

Just\_RB before\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD leaving\_VBG ,\_, the\_DT old\_JJ lady\_NN came\_VBD up\_RB to\_TO my\_PRP$ room\_NN and\_CC said\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT very\_RB hysterical\_JJ way\_NN :\_: ``\_`` Must\_MD you\_PRP go\_VB ?\_.

Oh\_UH !\_.

young\_JJ Herr\_NNP ,\_, must\_MD you\_PRP go\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

She\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN such\_JJ an\_DT excited\_JJ state\_NN that\_IN she\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO have\_VB lost\_VBN her\_PRP$ grip\_NN of\_IN what\_WP German\_NNP she\_PRP knew\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC mixed\_VBD it\_PRP all\_DT up\_RP with\_IN some\_DT other\_JJ language\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB know\_VB at\_IN all\_DT .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD just\_RB able\_JJ to\_TO follow\_VB her\_PRP by\_IN asking\_VBG many\_JJ questions\_NNS .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP told\_VBD her\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP must\_MD go\_VB at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD engaged\_VBN on\_IN important\_JJ business\_NN ,\_, she\_PRP asked\_VBD again\_RB :\_: ``\_`` Do\_VBP you\_PRP know\_VB what\_WP day\_NN it\_PRP is\_VBZ ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP answered\_VBD that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD the\_DT fourth\_JJ of\_IN May\_NNP .\_.

She\_PRP shook\_VBD her\_PRP$ head\_NN as\_IN she\_PRP said\_VBD again\_RB :\_: ``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, yes\_UH !\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP that\_DT !\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP that\_IN ,\_, but\_CC do\_VBP you\_PRP know\_VB what\_WP day\_NN it\_PRP is\_VBZ ?\_. ''\_''

On\_IN my\_PRP$ saying\_VBG that\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB understand\_VB ,\_, she\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: ``\_`` It\_PRP is\_VBZ the\_DT eve\_NN of\_IN St.\_NNP George\_NNP 's\_POS Day\_NN .\_.

Do\_VBP you\_PRP not\_RB know\_VB that\_DT to-night\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB the\_DT clock\_NN strikes\_VBZ midnight\_NN ,\_, all\_PDT the\_DT evil\_JJ things\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT world\_NN will\_MD have\_VB full\_JJ sway\_VB ?\_.

Do\_VBP you\_PRP know\_VB where\_WRB you\_PRP are\_VBP going\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC what\_WP you\_PRP are\_VBP going\_VBG to\_TO ?\_. ''\_''

She\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN such\_JJ evident\_JJ distress\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP tried\_VBD to\_TO comfort\_VB her\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC without\_IN effect\_NN .\_.

Finally\_RB she\_PRP went\_VBD down\_RB on\_IN her\_PRP$ knees\_NNS and\_CC implored\_VBD me\_PRP not\_RB to\_TO go\_VB ;\_: at\_IN least\_JJS to\_TO wait\_VB a\_DT day\_NN or\_CC two\_CD before\_IN starting\_VBG .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD all\_DT very\_RB ridiculous\_JJ but\_CC I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB feel\_VB comfortable\_JJ .\_.

However\_RB ,\_, there\_EX was\_VBD business\_NN to\_TO be\_VB done\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD allow\_VB nothing\_NN to\_TO interfere\_VB with\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP therefore\_RB tried\_VBD to\_TO raise\_VB her\_PRP up\_RP ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD ,\_, as\_RB gravely\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP thanked\_VBD her\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC my\_PRP$ duty\_NN was\_VBD imperative\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN I\_PRP must\_MD go\_VB .\_.

She\_PRP then\_RB rose\_VBD and\_CC dried\_VBD her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC taking\_VBG a\_DT crucifix\_NN from\_IN her\_PRP$ neck\_NN offered\_VBD it\_PRP to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB know\_VB what\_WP to\_TO do\_VB ,\_, for\_IN ,\_, as\_IN an\_DT English\_NNP Churchman\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN taught\_VBN to\_TO regard\_VB such\_JJ things\_NNS as\_IN in\_IN some\_DT measure\_NN idolatrous\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC yet\_RB it\_PRP seemed\_VBD so\_RB ungracious\_JJ to\_TO refuse\_VB an\_DT old\_JJ lady\_NN meaning\_NN so\_RB well\_RB and\_CC in\_IN such\_JJ a\_DT state\_NN of\_IN mind\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP saw\_VBD ,\_, I\_PRP suppose\_VBP ,\_, the\_DT doubt\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, for\_IN she\_PRP put\_VBD the\_DT rosary\_NN round\_VB my\_PRP$ neck\_NN ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` For\_IN your\_PRP$ mother\_NN 's\_POS sake\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' and\_CC went\_VBD out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT room\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP writing\_VBG up\_RP this\_DT part\_NN of\_IN the\_DT diary\_NN whilst\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP waiting\_VBG for\_IN the\_DT coach\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT is\_VBZ ,\_, of\_IN course\_NN ,\_, late\_RB ;\_: and\_CC the\_DT crucifix\_NN is\_VBZ still\_RB round\_VB my\_PRP$ neck\_NN .\_.

Whether\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ the\_DT old\_JJ lady\_NN 's\_POS fear\_NN ,\_, or\_CC the\_DT many\_JJ ghostly\_JJ traditions\_NNS of\_IN this\_DT place\_NN ,\_, or\_CC the\_DT crucifix\_NN itself\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB know\_VB ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB feeling\_VBG nearly\_RB as\_RB easy\_JJ in\_IN my\_PRP$ mind\_NN as\_IN usual\_JJ .\_.

If\_IN this\_DT book\_NN should\_MD ever\_RB reach\_VB Mina\_NNP before\_IN I\_PRP do\_VBP ,\_, let\_VB it\_PRP bring\_VB my\_PRP$ good-bye\_NN .\_.

Here\_RB comes\_VBZ the\_DT coach\_NN !\_.

5\_CD May\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT Castle\_NNP .\_.

--\_: The\_DT grey\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN has\_VBZ passed\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT sun\_NN is\_VBZ high\_JJ over\_IN the\_DT distant\_JJ horizon\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT seems\_VBZ jagged\_VBN ,\_, whether\_IN with\_IN trees\_NNS or\_CC hills\_NNS I\_PRP know\_VBP not\_RB ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ so\_RB far\_RB off\_IN that\_DT big\_JJ things\_NNS and\_CC little\_JJ are\_VBP mixed\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB sleepy\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB to\_TO be\_VB called\_VBN till\_IN I\_PRP awake\_RB ,\_, naturally\_RB I\_PRP write\_VBP till\_IN sleep\_NN comes\_VBZ .\_.

There\_EX are\_VBP many\_JJ odd\_JJ things\_NNS to\_TO put\_VB down\_RP ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, lest\_IN who\_WP reads\_VBZ them\_PRP may\_MD fancy\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP dined\_VBD too\_RB well\_RB before\_IN I\_PRP left\_VBD Bistritz\_NNP ,\_, let\_VB me\_PRP put\_VB down\_RP my\_PRP$ dinner\_NN exactly\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP dined\_VBD on\_IN what\_WP they\_PRP called\_VBD ``\_`` robber\_NN steak\_NN ''\_'' --\_: bits\_NNS of\_IN bacon\_NN ,\_, onion\_NN ,\_, and\_CC beef\_NN ,\_, seasoned\_JJ with\_IN red\_JJ pepper\_NN ,\_, and\_CC strung\_VBG on\_IN sticks\_NNS and\_CC roasted\_JJ over\_IN the\_DT fire\_NN ,\_, in\_IN the\_DT simple\_JJ style\_NN of\_IN the\_DT London\_NNP cat\_NN 's\_POS meat\_NN !\_.

The\_DT wine\_NN was\_VBD Golden\_NNP Mediasch\_NNP ,\_, which\_WDT produces\_VBZ a\_DT queer\_JJR sting\_NN on\_IN the\_DT tongue\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT is\_VBZ ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, not\_RB disagreeable\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD only\_RB a\_DT couple\_NN of\_IN glasses\_NNS of\_IN this\_DT ,\_, and\_CC nothing\_NN else\_RB .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP got\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT coach\_NN the\_DT driver\_NN had\_VBD not\_RB taken\_VBN his\_PRP$ seat\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP saw\_VBD him\_PRP talking\_VBG with\_IN the\_DT landlady\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP were\_VBD evidently\_RB talking\_VBG of\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN every\_DT now\_RB and\_CC then\_RB they\_PRP looked\_VBD at\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT people\_NNS who\_WP were\_VBD sitting\_VBG on\_IN the\_DT bench\_NN outside\_IN the\_DT door\_NN --\_: which\_WDT they\_PRP call\_VBP by\_IN a\_DT name\_NN meaning\_NN ``\_`` word-bearer\_NN ''\_'' --\_: came\_VBD and\_CC listened\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB looked\_VBD at\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, most\_JJS of\_IN them\_PRP pityingly\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD hear\_VB a\_DT lot\_NN of\_IN words\_NNS often\_RB repeated\_JJ ,\_, queer\_JJ words\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN there\_EX were\_VBD many\_JJ nationalities\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT crowd\_NN ;\_: so\_IN I\_PRP quietly\_RB got\_VBD my\_PRP$ polyglot\_JJ dictionary\_NN from\_IN my\_PRP$ bag\_NN and\_CC looked\_VBD them\_PRP out\_RP .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD say\_VB they\_PRP were\_VBD not\_RB cheering\_VBG to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN amongst\_IN them\_PRP were\_VBD ``\_`` Ordog\_NNP ''\_'' --\_: Satan\_NNP ,\_, ``\_`` pokol\_NN ''\_'' --\_: hell\_NN ,\_, ``\_`` stregoica\_NN ''\_'' --\_: witch\_NN ,\_, ``\_`` vrolok\_NN ''\_'' and\_CC ``\_`` vlkoslak\_NN ''\_'' --\_: both\_DT of\_IN which\_WDT mean\_VBP the\_DT same\_JJ thing\_NN ,\_, one\_CD being\_VBG Slovak\_NNP and\_CC the\_DT other\_JJ Servian\_NNP for\_IN something\_NN that\_WDT is\_VBZ either\_DT were-wolf\_NN or\_CC vampire\_NN .\_.

-LRB-\_-LRB- Mem.\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP must\_MD ask\_VB the\_DT Count\_NN about\_IN these\_DT superstitions\_NNS -RRB-\_-RRB- When\_WRB we\_PRP started\_VBD ,\_, the\_DT crowd\_NN round\_NN the\_DT inn\_NN door\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT had\_VBD by\_IN this\_DT time\_NN swelled\_VBD to\_TO a\_DT considerable\_JJ size\_NN ,\_, all\_DT made\_VBD the\_DT sign\_NN of\_IN the\_DT cross\_NN and\_CC pointed\_VBD two\_CD fingers\_NNS towards\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

With\_IN some\_DT difficulty\_NN I\_PRP got\_VBD a\_DT fellow-passenger\_NN to\_TO tell\_VB me\_PRP what\_WP they\_PRP meant\_VBD ;\_: he\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB answer\_VB at\_IN first\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC on\_IN learning\_VBG that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD English\_NNP ,\_, he\_PRP explained\_VBD that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT charm\_NN or\_CC guard\_NN against\_IN the\_DT evil\_JJ eye\_NN .\_.

This\_DT was\_VBD not\_RB very\_RB pleasant\_JJ for\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, just\_RB starting\_VBG for\_IN an\_DT unknown\_JJ place\_NN to\_TO meet\_VB an\_DT unknown\_JJ man\_NN ;\_: but\_CC every\_DT one\_NN seemed\_VBD so\_RB kind-hearted\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB sorrowful\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB sympathetic\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB but\_CC be\_VB touched\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD never\_RB forget\_VB the\_DT last\_JJ glimpse\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP had\_VBD of\_IN the\_DT inn-yard\_NN and\_CC its\_PRP$ crowd\_NN of\_IN picturesque\_JJ figures\_NNS ,\_, all\_DT crossing\_VBG themselves\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN they\_PRP stood\_VBD round\_NN the\_DT wide\_JJ archway\_NN ,\_, with\_IN its\_PRP$ background\_NN of\_IN rich\_JJ foliage\_NN of\_IN oleander\_NN and\_CC orange\_NN trees\_NNS in\_IN green\_JJ tubs\_NNS clustered\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT centre\_NN of\_IN the\_DT yard\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB our\_PRP$ driver\_NN ,\_, whose\_WP$ wide\_JJ linen\_NN drawers\_NNS covered\_VBD the\_DT whole\_JJ front\_NN of\_IN the\_DT box-seat\_NN --\_: ``\_`` gotza\_NN ''\_'' they\_PRP call\_VBP them\_PRP --\_: cracked\_VBD his\_PRP$ big\_JJ whip\_NN over\_IN his\_PRP$ four\_CD small\_JJ horses\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT ran\_VBD abreast\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP set\_VBD off\_RP on\_IN our\_PRP$ journey\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP soon\_RB lost\_VBD sight\_NN and\_CC recollection\_NN of\_IN ghostly\_JJ fears\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT beauty\_NN of\_IN the\_DT scene\_NN as\_IN we\_PRP drove\_VBD along\_RB ,\_, although\_IN had\_VBD I\_PRP known\_VBD the\_DT language\_NN ,\_, or\_CC rather\_RB languages\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT my\_PRP$ fellow-passengers\_NNS were\_VBD speaking\_VBG ,\_, I\_PRP might\_MD not\_RB have\_VB been\_VBN able\_JJ to\_TO throw\_VB them\_PRP off\_RP so\_RB easily\_RB .\_.

Before\_IN us\_PRP lay\_VBD a\_DT green\_JJ sloping\_NN land\_NN full\_JJ of\_IN forests\_NNS and\_CC woods\_NNS ,\_, with\_IN here\_RB and\_CC there\_RB steep\_JJ hills\_NNS ,\_, crowned\_VBN with\_IN clumps\_NNS of\_IN trees\_NNS or\_CC with\_IN farmhouses\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT blank\_JJ gable\_JJ end\_NN to\_TO the\_DT road\_NN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD everywhere\_RB a\_DT bewildering\_JJ mass\_NN of\_IN fruit\_NN blossom\_NN --\_: apple\_NN ,\_, plum\_NN ,\_, pear\_NN ,\_, cherry\_NN ;\_: and\_CC as\_IN we\_PRP drove\_VBD by\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB the\_DT green\_JJ grass\_NN under\_IN the\_DT trees\_NNS spangled\_VBD with\_IN the\_DT fallen\_JJ petals\_NNS .\_.

In\_IN and\_CC out\_IN amongst\_IN these\_DT green\_JJ hills\_NNS of\_IN what\_WP they\_PRP call\_VBP here\_RB the\_DT ``\_`` Mittel\_NNP Land\_NNP ''\_'' ran\_VBD the\_DT road\_NN ,\_, losing\_VBG itself\_PRP as\_IN it\_PRP swept\_VBD round\_NN the\_DT grassy\_JJ curve\_NN ,\_, or\_CC was\_VBD shut\_VBN out\_RP by\_IN the\_DT straggling\_VBG ends\_NNS of\_IN pine\_VBP woods\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT here\_RB and\_CC there\_RB ran\_VBD down\_RP the\_DT hillsides\_NNS like\_IN tongues\_NNS of\_IN flame\_NN .\_.

The\_DT road\_NN was\_VBD rugged\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC still\_RB we\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO fly\_VB over\_IN it\_PRP with\_IN a\_DT feverish\_JJ haste\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB understand\_VB then\_RB what\_WP the\_DT haste\_NN meant\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT driver\_NN was\_VBD evidently\_RB bent\_JJ on\_IN losing\_VBG no\_DT time\_NN in\_IN reaching\_VBG Borgo\_NNP Prund\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD told\_VBN that\_IN this\_DT road\_NN is\_VBZ in\_IN summertime\_NN excellent\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC that\_IN it\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB yet\_RB been\_VBN put\_VBN in\_IN order\_NN after\_IN the\_DT winter\_NN snows\_NNS .\_.

In\_IN this\_DT respect\_NN it\_PRP is\_VBZ different\_JJ from\_IN the\_DT general\_JJ run\_NN of\_IN roads\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT Carpathians\_NNPS ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ an\_DT old\_JJ tradition\_NN that\_IN they\_PRP are\_VBP not\_RB to\_TO be\_VB kept\_VBN in\_IN too\_RB good\_JJ order\_NN .\_.

Of\_IN old\_JJ the\_DT Hospadars\_NNPS would\_MD not\_RB repair\_VB them\_PRP ,\_, lest\_IN the\_DT Turk\_NNP should\_MD think\_VB that\_IN they\_PRP were\_VBD preparing\_VBG to\_TO bring\_VB in\_RP foreign\_JJ troops\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB hasten\_VB the\_DT war\_NN which\_WDT was\_VBD always\_RB really\_RB at\_IN loading\_VBG point\_NN .\_.

Beyond\_IN the\_DT green\_JJ swelling\_VBG hills\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT Mittel\_NNP Land\_NNP rose\_VBD mighty\_JJ slopes\_NNS of\_IN forest\_NN up\_IN to\_TO the\_DT lofty\_JJ steeps\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT Carpathians\_NNPS themselves\_PRP .\_.

Right\_RB and\_CC left\_RB of\_IN us\_PRP they\_PRP towered\_VBD ,\_, with\_IN the\_DT afternoon\_NN sun\_NN falling\_VBG full\_JJ upon\_IN them\_PRP and\_CC bringing\_VBG out\_RP all\_PDT the\_DT glorious\_JJ colours\_NNS of\_IN this\_DT beautiful\_JJ range\_NN ,\_, deep\_JJ blue\_JJ and\_CC purple\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT shadows\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT peaks\_NNS ,\_, green\_JJ and\_CC brown\_JJ where\_WRB grass\_NN and\_CC rock\_NN mingled\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC an\_DT endless\_JJ perspective\_NN of\_IN jagged\_JJ rock\_NN and\_CC pointed\_JJ crags\_NNS ,\_, till\_IN these\_DT were\_VBD themselves\_PRP lost\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT distance\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB the\_DT snowy\_JJ peaks\_NNS rose\_VBD grandly\_RB .\_.

Here\_RB and\_CC there\_RB seemed\_VBD mighty\_JJ rifts\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT mountains\_NNS ,\_, through\_IN which\_WDT ,\_, as\_IN the\_DT sun\_NN began\_VBD to\_TO sink\_VB ,\_, we\_PRP saw\_VBD now\_RB and\_CC again\_RB the\_DT white\_JJ gleam\_NN of\_IN falling\_VBG water\_NN .\_.

One\_CD of\_IN my\_PRP$ companions\_NNS touched\_VBD my\_PRP$ arm\_NN as\_IN we\_PRP swept\_VBD round\_NN the\_DT base\_NN of\_IN a\_DT hill\_NN and\_CC opened\_VBD up\_RP the\_DT lofty\_JJ ,\_, snow-covered\_JJ peak\_NN of\_IN a\_DT mountain\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT seemed\_VBD ,\_, as\_IN we\_PRP wound\_VBP on\_IN our\_PRP$ serpentine\_JJ way\_NN ,\_, to\_TO be\_VB right\_JJ before\_IN us\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Look\_VB !\_.

Isten\_FW szek\_FW !\_. ''\_''

--\_: ``\_`` God\_NNP 's\_POS seat\_NN !\_. ''\_''

--\_: and\_CC he\_PRP crossed\_VBD himself\_PRP reverently\_RB .\_.

As\_IN we\_PRP wound\_VBP on\_IN our\_PRP$ endless\_JJ way\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT sun\_NN sank\_VBD lower\_JJR and\_CC lower\_JJR behind\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, the\_DT shadows\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT evening\_NN began\_VBD to\_TO creep\_VB round\_VB us\_PRP .\_.

This\_DT was\_VBD emphasised\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT fact\_NN that\_IN the\_DT snowy\_JJ mountain-top\_NN still\_RB held\_VBD the\_DT sunset\_NN ,\_, and\_CC seemed\_VBD to\_TO glow\_NN out\_RP with\_IN a\_DT delicate\_JJ cool\_JJ pink\_NN .\_.

Here\_RB and\_CC there\_RB we\_PRP passed\_VBD Cszeks\_NNPS and\_CC Slovaks\_NNPS ,\_, all\_DT in\_IN picturesque\_JJ attire\_NN ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP noticed\_VBD that\_DT goitre\_NN was\_VBD painfully\_RB prevalent\_JJ .\_.

By\_IN the\_DT roadside\_NN were\_VBD many\_JJ crosses\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN we\_PRP swept\_VBD by\_IN ,\_, my\_PRP$ companions\_NNS all\_DT crossed\_VBD themselves\_PRP .\_.

Here\_RB and\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT peasant\_NN man\_NN or\_CC woman\_NN kneeling\_VBG before\_IN a\_DT shrine\_NN ,\_, who\_WP did\_VBD not\_RB even\_RB turn\_VB round\_NN as\_IN we\_PRP approached\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC seemed\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT self-surrender\_NN of\_IN devotion\_NN to\_TO have\_VB neither\_CC eyes\_NNS nor\_CC ears\_NNS for\_IN the\_DT outer\_JJ world\_NN .\_.

There\_EX were\_VBD many\_JJ things\_NNS new\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP :\_: for\_IN instance\_NN ,\_, hay-ricks\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT trees\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC here\_RB and\_CC there\_RB very\_RB beautiful\_JJ masses\_NNS of\_IN weeping\_VBG birch\_NN ,\_, their\_PRP$ white\_NN stems\_VBZ shining\_VBG like\_IN silver\_NN through\_IN the\_DT delicate\_JJ green\_NN of\_IN the\_DT leaves\_NNS .\_.

Now\_RB and\_CC again\_RB we\_PRP passed\_VBD a\_DT leiter-wagon\_NN --\_: the\_DT ordinary\_JJ peasant\_NN 's\_POS cart\_NN --\_: with\_IN its\_PRP$ long\_JJ ,\_, snake-like\_JJ vertebra\_NN ,\_, calculated\_VBN to\_TO suit\_VB the\_DT inequalities\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT road\_NN .\_.

On\_IN this\_DT were\_VBD sure\_JJ to\_TO be\_VB seated\_VBN quite\_RB a\_DT group\_NN of\_IN home-coming\_JJ peasants\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT Cszeks\_NNPS with\_IN their\_PRP$ white\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT Slovaks\_NNPS with\_IN their\_PRP$ coloured\_JJ ,\_, sheepskins\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT latter\_JJ carrying\_NN lance-fashion\_NN their\_PRP$ long\_JJ staves\_NNS ,\_, with\_IN axe\_NN at\_IN end\_NN .\_.

As\_IN the\_DT evening\_NN fell\_VBD it\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO get\_VB very\_RB cold\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT growing\_VBG twilight\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO merge\_VB into\_IN one\_CD dark\_JJ mistiness\_NN the\_DT gloom\_NN of\_IN the\_DT trees\_NNS ,\_, oak\_NN ,\_, beech\_NN ,\_, and\_CC pine\_VB ,\_, though\_IN in\_IN the\_DT valleys\_NNS which\_WDT ran\_VBD deep\_JJ between\_IN the\_DT spurs\_VBZ of\_IN the\_DT hills\_NNS ,\_, as\_IN we\_PRP ascended\_VBD through\_IN the\_DT Pass\_NN ,\_, the\_DT dark\_JJ firs\_NNS stood\_VBD out\_RP here\_RB and\_CC there\_RB against\_IN the\_DT background\_NN of\_IN late-lying\_JJ snow\_NN .\_.

Sometimes\_RB ,\_, as\_IN the\_DT road\_NN was\_VBD cut\_VBN through\_IN the\_DT pine\_VBP woods\_NNS that\_WDT seemed\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT darkness\_NN to\_TO be\_VB closing\_VBG down\_RB upon\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, great\_JJ masses\_NNS of\_IN greyness\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT here\_RB and\_CC there\_RB bestrewed\_VBD the\_DT trees\_NNS ,\_, produced\_VBD a\_DT peculiarly\_RB weird\_JJ and\_CC solemn\_JJ effect\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT carried\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT thoughts\_NNS and\_CC grim\_JJ fancies\_VBZ engendered\_VBN earlier\_RBR in\_IN the\_DT evening\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB the\_DT falling\_VBG sunset\_NN threw\_VBD into\_IN strange\_JJ relief\_NN the\_DT ghost-like\_JJ clouds\_NNS which\_WDT amongst\_IN the\_DT Carpathians\_NNPS seem\_VBP to\_TO wind\_VB ceaselessly\_RB through\_IN the\_DT valleys\_NNS .\_.

Sometimes\_RB the\_DT hills\_NNS were\_VBD so\_RB steep\_JJ that\_IN ,\_, despite\_IN our\_PRP$ driver\_NN 's\_POS haste\_NN ,\_, the\_DT horses\_NNS could\_MD only\_RB go\_VB slowly\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP wished\_VBD to\_TO get\_VB down\_RB and\_CC walk\_VB up\_RP them\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN we\_PRP do\_VBP at\_IN home\_NN ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT driver\_NN would\_MD not\_RB hear\_VB of\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

``\_`` No\_UH ,\_, no\_DT ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ;\_: ``\_`` you\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB walk\_VB here\_RB ;\_: the\_DT dogs\_NNS are\_VBP too\_RB fierce\_JJ ''\_'' ;\_: and\_CC then\_RB he\_PRP added\_VBD ,\_, with\_IN what\_WP he\_PRP evidently\_RB meant\_VBD for\_IN grim\_JJ pleasantry\_NN --\_: for\_IN he\_PRP looked\_VBD round\_NN to\_TO catch\_VB the\_DT approving\_VBG smile\_NN of\_IN the\_DT rest\_NN --\_: ``\_`` and\_CC you\_PRP may\_MD have\_VB enough\_RB of\_IN such\_JJ matters\_NNS before\_IN you\_PRP go\_VBP to\_TO sleep\_VB .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT only\_JJ stop\_NN he\_PRP would\_MD make\_VB was\_VBD a\_DT moment\_NN 's\_POS pause\_NN to\_TO light\_VB his\_PRP$ lamps\_NNS .\_.

When\_WRB it\_PRP grew\_VBD dark\_NN there\_RB seemed\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB some\_DT excitement\_NN amongst\_IN the\_DT passengers\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC they\_PRP kept\_VBD speaking\_VBG to\_TO him\_PRP ,\_, one\_CD after\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN urging\_VBG him\_PRP to\_TO further\_JJ speed\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP lashed\_VBD the\_DT horses\_NNS unmercifully\_RB with\_IN his\_PRP$ long\_JJ whip\_NN ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN wild\_JJ cries\_VBZ of\_IN encouragement\_NN urged\_VBD them\_PRP on\_RP to\_TO further\_JJ exertions\_NNS .\_.

Then\_RB through\_IN the\_DT darkness\_NN I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN patch\_NN of\_IN grey\_JJ light\_NN ahead\_RB of\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN there\_EX were\_VBD a\_DT cleft\_NN in\_IN the\_DT hills\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT excitement\_NN of\_IN the\_DT passengers\_NNS grew\_VBD greater\_JJR ;\_: the\_DT crazy\_JJ coach\_NN rocked\_VBD on\_IN its\_PRP$ great\_JJ leather\_NN springs\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC swayed\_VBD like\_IN a\_DT boat\_NN tossed\_VBN on\_IN a\_DT stormy\_JJ sea\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO hold\_VB on\_RP .\_.

The\_DT road\_NN grew\_VBD more\_JJR level\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP appeared\_VBD to\_TO fly\_VB along\_RB .\_.

Then\_RB the\_DT mountains\_NNS seemed\_VBD to\_TO come\_VB nearer\_IN to\_TO us\_PRP on\_IN each\_DT side\_NN and\_CC to\_TO frown\_VB down\_RP upon\_IN us\_PRP ;\_: we\_PRP were\_VBD entering\_VBG on\_IN the\_DT Borgo\_NNP Pass\_NN .\_.

One\_CD by\_IN one\_CD several\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT passengers\_NNS offered\_VBD me\_PRP gifts\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT they\_PRP pressed\_VBD upon\_IN me\_PRP with\_IN an\_DT earnestness\_NN which\_WDT would\_MD take\_VB no\_DT denial\_NN ;\_: these\_DT were\_VBD certainly\_RB of\_IN an\_DT odd\_JJ and\_CC varied\_JJ kind\_NN ,\_, but\_CC each\_DT was\_VBD given\_VBN in\_IN simple\_JJ good\_JJ faith\_NN ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT kindly\_RB word\_NN ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT blessing\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN strange\_JJ mixture\_NN of\_IN fear-meaning\_JJ movements\_NNS which\_WDT I\_PRP had\_VBD seen\_VBN outside\_IN the\_DT hotel\_NN at\_IN Bistritz\_NNP --\_: the\_DT sign\_NN of\_IN the\_DT cross\_NN and\_CC the\_DT guard\_NN against\_IN the\_DT evil\_JJ eye\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB ,\_, as\_IN we\_PRP flew\_VBD along\_RB ,\_, the\_DT driver\_NN leaned\_VBD forward\_RB ,\_, and\_CC on\_IN each\_DT side\_NN the\_DT passengers\_NNS ,\_, craning\_VBG over\_IN the\_DT edge\_NN of\_IN the\_DT coach\_NN ,\_, peered\_VBD eagerly\_RB into\_IN the\_DT darkness\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD evident\_JJ that\_IN something\_NN very\_RB exciting\_JJ was\_VBD either\_CC happening\_VBG or\_CC expected\_VBN ,\_, but\_CC though\_IN I\_PRP asked\_VBD each\_DT passenger\_NN ,\_, no\_DT one\_NN would\_MD give\_VB me\_PRP the\_DT slightest\_JJS explanation\_NN .\_.

This\_DT state\_NN of\_IN excitement\_NN kept\_VBD on\_RP for\_IN some\_DT little\_JJ time\_NN ;\_: and\_CC at\_IN last\_JJ we\_PRP saw\_VBD before\_IN us\_PRP the\_DT Pass\_NN opening\_VBG out\_RP on\_IN the\_DT eastern\_JJ side\_NN .\_.

There\_EX were\_VBD dark\_JJ ,\_, rolling\_JJ clouds\_NNS overhead\_NN ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN the\_DT air\_NN the\_DT heavy\_JJ ,\_, oppressive\_JJ sense\_NN of\_IN thunder\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP seemed\_VBD as\_IN though\_IN the\_DT mountain\_NN range\_NN had\_VBD separated\_VBN two\_CD atmospheres\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN now\_RB we\_PRP had\_VBD got\_VBN into\_IN the\_DT thunderous\_JJ one\_CD .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD now\_RB myself\_PRP looking\_VBG out\_RP for\_IN the\_DT conveyance\_NN which\_WDT was\_VBD to\_TO take\_VB me\_PRP to\_TO the\_DT Count\_NN .\_.

Each\_DT moment\_NN I\_PRP expected\_VBD to\_TO see\_VB the\_DT glare\_NN of\_IN lamps\_NNS through\_IN the\_DT blackness\_NN ;\_: but\_CC all\_DT was\_VBD dark\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT only\_JJ light\_NN was\_VBD the\_DT flickering\_VBG rays\_NNS of\_IN our\_PRP$ own\_JJ lamps\_NNS ,\_, in\_IN which\_WDT the\_DT steam\_NN from\_IN our\_PRP$ hard-driven\_JJ horses\_NNS rose\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT white\_JJ cloud\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB now\_RB the\_DT sandy\_JJ road\_NN lying\_VBG white\_JJ before\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD on\_IN it\_PRP no\_DT sign\_NN of\_IN a\_DT vehicle\_NN .\_.

The\_DT passengers\_NNS drew\_VBD back\_RB with\_IN a\_DT sigh\_NN of\_IN gladness\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT seemed\_VBD to\_TO mock\_JJ my\_PRP$ own\_JJ disappointment\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD already\_RB thinking\_VBG what\_WP I\_PRP had\_VBD best\_JJS do\_VBP ,\_, when\_WRB the\_DT driver\_NN ,\_, looking\_VBG at\_IN his\_PRP$ watch\_NN ,\_, said\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT others\_NNS something\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP could\_MD hardly\_RB hear\_VB ,\_, it\_PRP was\_VBD spoken\_VBN so\_RB quietly\_RB and\_CC in\_IN so\_RB low\_JJ a\_DT tone\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP thought\_VBD it\_PRP was\_VBD ``\_`` An\_DT hour\_NN less\_JJR than\_IN the\_DT time\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Then\_RB turning\_VBG to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD in\_IN German\_NNP worse\_JJR than\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ :\_: --\_: ``\_`` There\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT carriage\_NN here\_RB .\_.

The\_DT Herr\_NNP is\_VBZ not\_RB expected\_VBN after\_IN all\_DT .\_.

He\_PRP will\_MD now\_RB come\_VB on\_RP to\_TO Bukovina\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC return\_NN to-morrow\_NN or\_CC the\_DT next\_JJ day\_NN ;\_: better\_RB the\_DT next\_JJ day\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Whilst\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD speaking\_VBG the\_DT horses\_NNS began\_VBD to\_TO neigh\_VB and\_CC snort\_VB and\_CC plunge\_VB wildly\_RB ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN the\_DT driver\_NN had\_VBD to\_TO hold\_VB them\_PRP up\_RP .\_.

Then\_RB ,\_, amongst\_IN a\_DT chorus\_NN of\_IN screams\_NNS from\_IN the\_DT peasants\_NNS and\_CC a\_DT universal\_JJ crossing\_VBG of\_IN themselves\_PRP ,\_, a\_DT calèche\_NN ,\_, with\_IN four\_CD horses\_NNS ,\_, drove\_VBD up\_RP behind\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, overtook\_VB us\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC drew\_VBD up\_RP beside\_IN the\_DT coach\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB from\_IN the\_DT flash\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ lamps\_NNS ,\_, as\_IN the\_DT rays\_NNS fell\_VBD on\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, that\_IN the\_DT horses\_NNS were\_VBD coal-black\_JJ and\_CC splendid\_JJ animals\_NNS .\_.

They\_PRP were\_VBD driven\_VBN by\_IN a\_DT tall\_JJ man\_NN ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT long\_JJ brown\_JJ beard\_NN and\_CC a\_DT great\_JJ black\_JJ hat\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT seemed\_VBD to\_TO hide\_VB his\_PRP$ face\_NN from\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD only\_RB see\_VB the\_DT gleam\_NN of\_IN a\_DT pair\_NN of\_IN very\_RB bright\_JJ eyes\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT seemed\_VBD red\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT lamplight\_NN ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP turned\_VBD to\_TO us\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT driver\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP are\_VBP early\_JJ to-night\_NN ,\_, my\_PRP$ friend\_NN .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT man\_NN stammered\_VBD in\_IN reply\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` The\_DT English\_NNP Herr\_NNP was\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT hurry\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' to\_TO which\_WDT the\_DT stranger\_NN replied\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` That\_DT is\_VBZ why\_WRB ,\_, I\_PRP suppose\_VBP ,\_, you\_PRP wished\_VBD him\_PRP to\_TO go\_VB on\_RP to\_TO Bukovina\_NNP .\_.

You\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB deceive\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, my\_PRP$ friend\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP know\_VBP too\_RB much\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC my\_PRP$ horses\_NNS are\_VBP swift\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

As\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD he\_PRP smiled\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT lamplight\_NN fell\_VBD on\_IN a\_DT hard-looking\_JJ mouth\_NN ,\_, with\_IN very\_RB red\_JJ lips\_NNS and\_CC sharp-looking\_JJ teeth\_NNS ,\_, as\_RB white\_JJ as\_IN ivory\_NN .\_.

One\_CD of\_IN my\_PRP$ companions\_NNS whispered\_VBD to\_TO another\_DT the\_DT line\_NN from\_IN Burger\_NNP 's\_POS ``\_`` Lenore\_NNP ''\_'' :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Denn\_NNP die\_VB Todten\_FW reiten\_FW schnell\_NN ''\_'' --\_: -LRB-\_-LRB- ``\_`` For\_IN the\_DT dead\_JJ travel\_NN fast\_RB .\_. ''\_'' -RRB-\_-RRB-

The\_DT strange\_JJ driver\_NN evidently\_RB heard\_VBD the\_DT words\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP looked\_VBD up\_RP with\_IN a\_DT gleaming\_JJ smile\_NN .\_.

The\_DT passenger\_NN turned\_VBD his\_PRP$ face\_NN away\_RB ,\_, at\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ time\_NN putting\_VBG out\_RP his\_PRP$ two\_CD fingers\_NNS and\_CC crossing\_VBG himself\_PRP .\_.

``\_`` Give\_VB me\_PRP the\_DT Herr\_NNP 's\_POS luggage\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD the\_DT driver\_NN ;\_: and\_CC with\_IN exceeding\_VBG alacrity\_NN my\_PRP$ bags\_NN were\_VBD handed\_VBN out\_RP and\_CC put\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT calèche\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB I\_PRP descended\_VBD from\_IN the\_DT side\_NN of\_IN the\_DT coach\_NN ,\_, as\_IN the\_DT calèche\_NN was\_VBD close\_JJ alongside\_IN ,\_, the\_DT driver\_NN helping\_VBG me\_PRP with\_IN a\_DT hand\_NN which\_WDT caught\_VBD my\_PRP$ arm\_NN in\_IN a\_DT grip\_NN of\_IN steel\_NN ;\_: his\_PRP$ strength\_NN must\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN prodigious\_JJ .\_.

Without\_IN a\_DT word\_NN he\_PRP shook\_VBD his\_PRP$ reins\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT horses\_NNS turned\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP swept\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT darkness\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Pass\_NN .\_.

As\_IN I\_PRP looked\_VBD back\_RB I\_PRP saw\_VBD the\_DT steam\_NN from\_IN the\_DT horses\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT coach\_NN by\_IN the\_DT light\_NN of\_IN the\_DT lamps\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC projected\_VBN against\_IN it\_PRP the\_DT figures\_NNS of\_IN my\_PRP$ late\_JJ companions\_NNS crossing\_VBG themselves\_PRP .\_.

Then\_RB the\_DT driver\_NN cracked\_VBD his\_PRP$ whip\_NN and\_CC called\_VBN to\_TO his\_PRP$ horses\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC off\_IN they\_PRP swept\_VBD on\_IN their\_PRP$ way\_NN to\_TO Bukovina\_NNP .\_.

As\_IN they\_PRP sank\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT darkness\_NN I\_PRP felt\_VBD a\_DT strange\_JJ chill\_NN ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT lonely\_JJ feeling\_NN came\_VBD over\_IN me\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC a\_DT cloak\_NN was\_VBD thrown\_VBN over\_IN my\_PRP$ shoulders\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT rug\_NN across\_IN my\_PRP$ knees\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT driver\_NN said\_VBD in\_IN excellent\_JJ German\_JJ :\_: --\_: ``\_`` The\_DT night\_NN is\_VBZ chill\_NN ,\_, mein\_NN Herr\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC my\_PRP$ master\_NN the\_DT Count\_NNP bade\_VBD me\_PRP take\_VB all\_DT care\_NN of\_IN you\_PRP .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT flask\_NN of\_IN slivovitz\_NN -LRB-\_-LRB- the\_DT plum\_NN brandy\_NN of\_IN the\_DT country\_NN -RRB-\_-RRB- underneath\_IN the\_DT seat\_NN ,\_, if\_IN you\_PRP should\_MD require\_VB it\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB take\_VB any\_DT ,\_, but\_CC it\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT comfort\_NN to\_TO know\_VB it\_PRP was\_VBD there\_EX all\_PDT the\_DT same\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP felt\_VBD a\_DT little\_JJ strangely\_NN ,\_, and\_CC not\_RB a\_DT little\_RB frightened\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP think\_VBP had\_VBD there\_RB been\_VBN any\_DT alternative\_NN I\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB taken\_VBN it\_PRP ,\_, instead\_RB of\_IN prosecuting\_VBG that\_IN unknown\_JJ night\_NN journey\_NN .\_.

The\_DT carriage\_NN went\_VBD at\_IN a\_DT hard\_JJ pace\_NN straight\_RB along\_RB ,\_, then\_RB we\_PRP made\_VBD a\_DT complete\_JJ turn\_NN and\_CC went\_VBD along\_IN another\_DT straight\_JJ road\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP that\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD simply\_RB going\_VBG over\_IN and\_CC over\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ ground\_NN again\_RB ;\_: and\_CC so\_RB I\_PRP took\_VBD note\_NN of\_IN some\_DT salient\_JJ point\_NN ,\_, and\_CC found\_VBD that\_IN this\_DT was\_VBD so\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB liked\_VBN to\_TO have\_VB asked\_VBN the\_DT driver\_NN what\_WP this\_DT all\_DT meant\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP really\_RB feared\_VBD to\_TO do\_VB so\_RB ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP thought\_VBD that\_IN ,\_, placed\_VBN as\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, any\_DT protest\_NN would\_MD have\_VB had\_VBN no\_DT effect\_NN in\_IN case\_NN there\_EX had\_VBD been\_VBN an\_DT intention\_NN to\_TO delay\_VB .\_.

By-and-by\_JJ ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD curious\_JJ to\_TO know\_VB how\_WRB time\_NN was\_VBD passing\_VBG ,\_, I\_PRP struck\_VBD a\_DT match\_NN ,\_, and\_CC by\_IN its\_PRP$ flame\_NN looked\_VBD at\_IN my\_PRP$ watch\_NN ;\_: it\_PRP was\_VBD within\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ minutes\_NNS of\_IN midnight\_NN .\_.

This\_DT gave\_VBD me\_PRP a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN shock\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP suppose\_VBP the\_DT general\_JJ superstition\_NN about\_IN midnight\_NN was\_VBD increased\_VBN by\_IN my\_PRP$ recent\_JJ experiences\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP waited\_VBD with\_IN a\_DT sick\_JJ feeling\_NN of\_IN suspense\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB a\_DT dog\_NN began\_VBD to\_TO howl\_NN somewhere\_RB in\_IN a\_DT farmhouse\_NN far\_RB down\_IN the\_DT road\_NN --\_: a\_DT long\_JJ ,\_, agonised\_JJ wailing\_VBG ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN from\_IN fear\_NN .\_.

The\_DT sound\_NN was\_VBD taken\_VBN up\_RP by\_IN another\_DT dog\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB another\_DT and\_CC another\_DT ,\_, till\_IN ,\_, borne\_VBN on\_IN the\_DT wind\_NN which\_WDT now\_RB sighed\_VBD softly\_RB through\_IN the\_DT Pass\_NN ,\_, a\_DT wild\_JJ howling\_NN began\_VBD ,\_, which\_WDT seemed\_VBD to\_TO come\_VB from\_IN all\_DT over\_IN the\_DT country\_NN ,\_, as\_RB far\_RB as\_IN the\_DT imagination\_NN could\_MD grasp\_VB it\_PRP through\_IN the\_DT gloom\_NN of\_IN the\_DT night\_NN .\_.

At\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ howl\_NN the\_DT horses\_NNS began\_VBD to\_TO strain\_NN and\_CC rear\_NN ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT driver\_NN spoke\_VBD to\_TO them\_PRP soothingly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC they\_PRP quieted\_VBD down\_RB ,\_, but\_CC shivered\_VBD and\_CC sweated\_VBD as\_IN though\_IN after\_IN a\_DT runaway\_JJ from\_IN sudden\_JJ fright\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB ,\_, far\_RB off\_RB in\_IN the\_DT distance\_NN ,\_, from\_IN the\_DT mountains\_NNS on\_IN each\_DT side\_NN of\_IN us\_PRP began\_VBD a\_DT louder\_RBR and\_CC a\_DT sharper\_JJR howling\_NN --\_: that\_DT of\_IN wolves\_NNS --\_: which\_WDT affected\_VBD both\_CC the\_DT horses\_NNS and\_CC myself\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ way\_NN --\_: for\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD minded\_VBN to\_TO jump\_VB from\_IN the\_DT calèche\_NN and\_CC run\_NN ,\_, whilst\_IN they\_PRP reared\_VBD again\_RB and\_CC plunged\_VBD madly\_RB ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN the\_DT driver\_NN had\_VBD to\_TO use\_VB all\_PDT his\_PRP$ great\_JJ strength\_NN to\_TO keep\_VB them\_PRP from\_IN bolting\_VBG .\_.

In\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ minutes\_NNS ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ own\_JJ ears\_NNS got\_VBD accustomed\_VBN to\_TO the\_DT sound\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT horses\_NNS so\_RB far\_RB became\_VBD quiet\_JJ that\_IN the\_DT driver\_NN was\_VBD able\_JJ to\_TO descend\_VB and\_CC to\_TO stand\_VB before\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP petted\_VBD and\_CC soothed\_VBD them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC whispered\_VBD something\_NN in\_IN their\_PRP$ ears\_NNS ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP heard\_VBN of\_IN horse-tamers\_NNS doing\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN extraordinary\_JJ effect\_NN ,\_, for\_IN under\_IN his\_PRP$ caresses\_NNS they\_PRP became\_VBD quite\_RB manageable\_JJ again\_RB ,\_, though\_IN they\_PRP still\_RB trembled\_VBD .\_.

The\_DT driver\_NN again\_RB took\_VBD his\_PRP$ seat\_NN ,\_, and\_CC shaking\_VBG his\_PRP$ reins\_NNS ,\_, started\_VBD off\_RP at\_IN a\_DT great\_JJ pace\_NN .\_.

This\_DT time\_NN ,\_, after\_IN going\_VBG to\_TO the\_DT far\_JJ side\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Pass\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP suddenly\_RB turned\_VBD down\_RP a\_DT narrow\_JJ roadway\_NN which\_WDT ran\_VBD sharply\_RB to\_TO the\_DT right\_NN .\_.

Soon\_RB we\_PRP were\_VBD hemmed\_VBN in\_IN with\_IN trees\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT in\_IN places\_NNS arched\_VBN right\_RB over\_IN the\_DT roadway\_NN till\_IN we\_PRP passed\_VBD as\_IN through\_IN a\_DT tunnel\_NN ;\_: and\_CC again\_RB great\_JJ frowning\_VBG rocks\_NNS guarded\_VBD us\_PRP boldly\_RB on\_IN either\_DT side\_NN .\_.

Though\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD in\_IN shelter\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP could\_MD hear\_VB the\_DT rising\_VBG wind\_NN ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP moaned\_VBD and\_CC whistled\_VBD through\_IN the\_DT rocks\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT branches\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT trees\_NNS crashed\_VBD together\_RB as\_IN we\_PRP swept\_VBD along\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP grew\_VBD colder\_JJR and\_CC colder\_JJR still\_RB ,\_, and\_CC fine\_JJ ,\_, powdery\_JJ snow\_NN began\_VBD to\_TO fall\_VB ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN soon\_RB we\_PRP and\_CC all\_DT around\_IN us\_PRP were\_VBD covered\_VBN with\_IN a\_DT white\_JJ blanket\_NN .\_.

The\_DT keen\_JJ wind\_NN still\_RB carried\_VBD the\_DT howling\_NN of\_IN the\_DT dogs\_NNS ,\_, though\_IN this\_DT grew\_VBD fainter\_RB as\_IN we\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN our\_PRP$ way\_NN .\_.

The\_DT baying\_NN of\_IN the\_DT wolves\_NNS sounded\_VBD nearer\_IN and\_CC nearer\_IN ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN they\_PRP were\_VBD closing\_VBG round\_NN on\_IN us\_PRP from\_IN every\_DT side\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP grew\_VBD dreadfully\_RB afraid\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT horses\_NNS shared\_VBD my\_PRP$ fear\_NN .\_.

The\_DT driver\_NN ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, was\_VBD not\_RB in\_IN the\_DT least\_JJS disturbed\_JJ ;\_: he\_PRP kept\_VBD turning\_VBG his\_PRP$ head\_NN to\_TO left\_NN and\_CC right\_NN ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB see\_VB anything\_NN through\_IN the\_DT darkness\_NN .\_.

Suddenly\_RB ,\_, away\_RB on\_IN our\_PRP$ left\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP saw\_VBD a\_DT faint\_JJ flickering\_VBG blue\_JJ flame\_NN .\_.

The\_DT driver\_NN saw\_VBD it\_PRP at\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ moment\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB checked\_VBD the\_DT horses\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, jumping\_VBG to\_TO the\_DT ground\_NN ,\_, disappeared\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT darkness\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB know\_VB what\_WP to\_TO do\_VB ,\_, the\_DT less\_JJR as\_IN the\_DT howling\_NN of\_IN the\_DT wolves\_NNS grew\_VBD closer\_RB ;\_: but\_CC while\_IN I\_PRP wondered\_VBD the\_DT driver\_NN suddenly\_RB appeared\_VBD again\_RB ,\_, and\_CC without\_IN a\_DT word\_NN took\_VBD his\_PRP$ seat\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP resumed\_VBD our\_PRP$ journey\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP think\_VBP I\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB fallen\_VBN asleep\_RB and\_CC kept\_VBD dreaming\_VBG of\_IN the\_DT incident\_NN ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB repeated\_VBN endlessly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC now\_RB looking\_VBG back\_RB ,\_, it\_PRP is\_VBZ like\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN awful\_JJ nightmare\_NN .\_.

Once\_RB the\_DT flame\_NN appeared\_VBD so\_RB near\_IN the\_DT road\_NN ,\_, that\_IN even\_RB in\_IN the\_DT darkness\_NN around\_IN us\_PRP I\_PRP could\_MD watch\_VB the\_DT driver\_NN 's\_POS motions\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP went\_VBD rapidly\_RB to\_TO where\_WRB the\_DT blue\_JJ flame\_NN arose\_VBD --\_: it\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN very\_RB faint\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB seem\_VB to\_TO illumine\_VB the\_DT place\_NN around\_IN it\_PRP at\_IN all\_DT --\_: and\_CC gathering\_VBG a\_DT few\_JJ stones\_NNS ,\_, formed\_VBD them\_PRP into\_IN some\_DT device\_NN .\_.

Once\_RB there\_RB appeared\_VBD a\_DT strange\_JJ optical\_JJ effect\_NN :\_: when\_WRB he\_PRP stood\_VBD between\_IN me\_PRP and\_CC the\_DT flame\_NN he\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB obstruct\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB its\_PRP$ ghostly\_JJ flicker\_NN all\_PDT the\_DT same\_JJ .\_.

This\_DT startled\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC as\_IN the\_DT effect\_NN was\_VBD only\_RB momentary\_JJ ,\_, I\_PRP took\_VBD it\_PRP that\_IN my\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS deceived\_VBD me\_PRP straining\_VBG through\_IN the\_DT darkness\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB for\_IN a\_DT time\_NN there\_EX were\_VBD no\_DT blue\_JJ flames\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP sped\_VBD onwards\_NNS through\_IN the\_DT gloom\_NN ,\_, with\_IN the\_DT howling\_NN of\_IN the\_DT wolves\_NNS around\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN they\_PRP were\_VBD following\_VBG in\_IN a\_DT moving\_JJ circle\_NN .\_.

At\_IN last\_JJ there\_EX came\_VBD a\_DT time\_NN when\_WRB the\_DT driver\_NN went\_VBD further\_JJ afield\_NN than\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD yet\_RB gone\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC during\_IN his\_PRP$ absence\_NN ,\_, the\_DT horses\_NNS began\_VBD to\_TO tremble\_VB worse\_JJR than\_IN ever\_RB and\_CC to\_TO snort\_VB and\_CC scream\_VB with\_IN fright\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB see\_VB any\_DT cause\_NN for\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT howling\_NN of\_IN the\_DT wolves\_NNS had\_VBD ceased\_VBN altogether\_RB ;\_: but\_CC just\_RB then\_RB the\_DT moon\_NN ,\_, sailing\_VBG through\_IN the\_DT black\_JJ clouds\_NNS ,\_, appeared\_VBD behind\_IN the\_DT jagged\_JJ crest\_NN of\_IN a\_DT beetling\_NN ,\_, pine-clad\_JJ rock\_NN ,\_, and\_CC by\_IN its\_PRP$ light\_NN I\_PRP saw\_VBD around\_IN us\_PRP a\_DT ring\_NN of\_IN wolves\_NNS ,\_, with\_IN white\_JJ teeth\_NNS and\_CC lolling\_VBG red\_JJ tongues\_NNS ,\_, with\_IN long\_JJ ,\_, sinewy\_JJ limbs\_NNS and\_CC shaggy\_JJ hair\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP were\_VBD a\_DT hundred\_CD times\_NNS more\_RBR terrible\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT grim\_JJ silence\_NN which\_WDT held\_VBD them\_PRP than\_IN even\_RB when\_WRB they\_PRP howled\_VBD .\_.

For\_IN myself\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP felt\_VBD a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN paralysis\_NN of\_IN fear\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ only\_RB when\_WRB a\_DT man\_NN feels\_VBZ himself\_PRP face\_VBP to\_TO face\_VB with\_IN such\_JJ horrors\_NNS that\_IN he\_PRP can\_MD understand\_VB their\_PRP$ true\_JJ import\_NN .\_.

All\_DT at\_IN once\_RB the\_DT wolves\_NNS began\_VBD to\_TO howl\_NN as\_IN though\_IN the\_DT moonlight\_NN had\_VBD had\_VBN some\_DT peculiar\_JJ effect\_NN on\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT horses\_NNS jumped\_VBD about\_IN and\_CC reared\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC looked\_VBD helplessly\_RB round\_JJ with\_IN eyes\_NNS that\_WDT rolled\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT way\_NN painful\_JJ to\_TO see\_VB ;\_: but\_CC the\_DT living\_VBG ring\_NN of\_IN terror\_NN encompassed\_VBD them\_PRP on\_IN every\_DT side\_NN ;\_: and\_CC they\_PRP had\_VBD perforce\_NN to\_TO remain\_VB within\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP called\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT coachman\_NN to\_TO come\_VB ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP that\_IN our\_PRP$ only\_JJ chance\_NN was\_VBD to\_TO try\_VB to\_TO break\_VB out\_RP through\_IN the\_DT ring\_NN and\_CC to\_TO aid\_VB his\_PRP$ approach\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP shouted\_VBD and\_CC beat\_VBD the\_DT side\_NN of\_IN the\_DT calèche\_NN ,\_, hoping\_VBG by\_IN the\_DT noise\_NN to\_TO scare\_VB the\_DT wolves\_NNS from\_IN that\_DT side\_NN ,\_, so\_RB as\_IN to\_TO give\_VB him\_PRP a\_DT chance\_NN of\_IN reaching\_VBG the\_DT trap\_NN .\_.

How\_WRB he\_PRP came\_VBD there\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP know\_VBP not\_RB ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP heard\_VBD his\_PRP$ voice\_NN raised\_VBN in\_IN a\_DT tone\_NN of\_IN imperious\_JJ command\_NN ,\_, and\_CC looking\_VBG towards\_IN the\_DT sound\_NN ,\_, saw\_VBD him\_PRP stand\_VB in\_IN the\_DT roadway\_NN .\_.

As\_IN he\_PRP swept\_VBD his\_PRP$ long\_JJ arms\_NNS ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN brushing\_NN aside\_RB some\_DT impalpable\_JJ obstacle\_NN ,\_, the\_DT wolves\_NNS fell\_VBD back\_RB and\_CC back\_RB further\_RB still\_RB .\_.

Just\_RB then\_RB a\_DT heavy\_JJ cloud\_NN passed\_VBN across\_IN the\_DT face\_NN of\_IN the\_DT moon\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD again\_RB in\_IN darkness\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB again\_RB the\_DT driver\_NN was\_VBD climbing\_VBG into\_IN the\_DT calèche\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT wolves\_NNS had\_VBD disappeared\_VBN .\_.

This\_DT was\_VBD all\_DT so\_RB strange\_JJ and\_CC uncanny\_JJ that\_IN a\_DT dreadful\_JJ fear\_NN came\_VBD upon\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP was\_VBD afraid\_JJ to\_TO speak\_VB or\_CC move\_VB .\_.

The\_DT time\_NN seemed\_VBD interminable\_JJ as\_IN we\_PRP swept\_VBD on\_IN our\_PRP$ way\_NN ,\_, now\_RB in\_IN almost\_RB complete\_JJ darkness\_NN ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT rolling\_NN clouds\_NNS obscured\_VBD the\_DT moon\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP kept\_VBD on\_IN ascending\_VBG ,\_, with\_IN occasional\_JJ periods\_NNS of\_IN quick\_JJ descent\_NN ,\_, but\_CC in\_IN the\_DT main\_NN always\_RB ascending\_VBG .\_.

Suddenly\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP became\_VBD conscious\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT fact\_NN that\_IN the\_DT driver\_NN was\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT act\_NN of\_IN pulling\_VBG up\_RP the\_DT horses\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT courtyard\_NN of\_IN a\_DT vast\_JJ ruined\_VBN castle\_NN ,\_, from\_IN whose\_WP$ tall\_JJ black\_JJ windows\_NNS came\_VBD no\_DT ray\_NN of\_IN light\_NN ,\_, and\_CC whose\_WP$ broken\_JJ battlements\_NNS showed\_VBD a\_DT jagged\_JJ line\_NN against\_IN the\_DT moonlit\_JJ sky\_NN .\_.

CHAPTER\_NN II\_CD JONATHAN\_NNP HARKER\_NNP 'S\_POS JOURNAL\_NN --\_: continued\_VBD 5\_CD May\_NNP .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN asleep\_RB ,\_, for\_IN certainly\_RB if\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN fully\_RB awake\_RB I\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB noticed\_VBN the\_DT approach\_NN of\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT remarkable\_JJ place\_NN .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT gloom\_NN the\_DT courtyard\_NN looked\_VBD of\_IN considerable\_JJ size\_NN ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN several\_JJ dark\_JJ ways\_NNS led\_VBD from\_IN it\_PRP under\_IN great\_JJ round\_NN arches\_NNS ,\_, it\_PRP perhaps\_RB seemed\_VBD bigger\_JJR than\_IN it\_PRP really\_RB is\_VBZ .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB yet\_RB been\_VBN able\_JJ to\_TO see\_VB it\_PRP by\_IN daylight\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB the\_DT calèche\_NN stopped\_VBD ,\_, the\_DT driver\_NN jumped\_VBD down\_RB and\_CC held\_VBD out\_RP his\_PRP$ hand\_NN to\_TO assist\_VB me\_PRP to\_TO alight\_VB .\_.

Again\_RB I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB but\_CC notice\_VB his\_PRP$ prodigious\_JJ strength\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ hand\_NN actually\_RB seemed\_VBD like\_IN a\_DT steel\_NN vice\_NN that\_WDT could\_MD have\_VB crushed\_VBN mine\_NN if\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD chosen\_VBN .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP took\_VBD out\_RP my\_PRP$ traps\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC placed\_VBD them\_PRP on\_IN the\_DT ground\_NN beside\_IN me\_PRP as\_IN I\_PRP stood\_VBD close\_RB to\_TO a\_DT great\_JJ door\_NN ,\_, old\_JJ and\_CC studded\_VBD with\_IN large\_JJ iron\_NN nails\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC set\_VBN in\_IN a\_DT projecting\_VBG doorway\_NN of\_IN massive\_JJ stone\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB even\_RB in\_IN the\_DT dim\_JJ light\_NN that\_IN the\_DT stone\_NN was\_VBD massively\_RB carved\_VBN ,\_, but\_CC that\_IN the\_DT carving\_VBG had\_VBD been\_VBN much\_RB worn\_VBN by\_IN time\_NN and\_CC weather\_NN .\_.

As\_IN I\_PRP stood\_VBD ,\_, the\_DT driver\_NN jumped\_VBD again\_RB into\_IN his\_PRP$ seat\_NN and\_CC shook\_VBD the\_DT reins\_NNS ;\_: the\_DT horses\_NNS started\_VBD forward\_RB ,\_, and\_CC trap\_NN and\_CC all\_DT disappeared\_VBD down\_RB one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT dark\_JJ openings\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP stood\_VBD in\_IN silence\_NN where\_WRB I\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB know\_VB what\_WP to\_TO do\_VB .\_.

Of\_IN bell\_NN or\_CC knocker\_NN there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT sign\_NN ;\_: through\_IN these\_DT frowning\_VBG walls\_NNS and\_CC dark\_JJ window\_NN openings\_NNS it\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB likely\_JJ that\_IN my\_PRP$ voice\_NN could\_MD penetrate\_VB .\_.

The\_DT time\_NN I\_PRP waited\_VBD seemed\_VBD endless\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP felt\_VBD doubts\_NNS and\_CC fears\_NNS crowding\_VBG upon\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

What\_WDT sort\_NN of\_IN place\_NN had\_VBD I\_PRP come\_VBP to\_TO ,\_, and\_CC among\_IN what\_WDT kind\_NN of\_IN people\_NNS ?\_.

What\_WDT sort\_NN of\_IN grim\_JJ adventure\_NN was\_VBD it\_PRP on\_IN which\_WDT I\_PRP had\_VBD embarked\_VBN ?\_.

Was\_VBD this\_DT a\_DT customary\_JJ incident\_NN in\_IN the\_DT life\_NN of\_IN a\_DT solicitor\_NN 's\_POS clerk\_NN sent\_VBD out\_RP to\_TO explain\_VB the\_DT purchase\_NN of\_IN a\_DT London\_NNP estate\_NN to\_TO a\_DT foreigner\_NN ?\_.

Solicitor\_NN 's\_POS clerk\_NN !\_.

Mina\_NNP would\_MD not\_RB like\_VB that\_DT .\_.

Solicitor\_NN --\_: for\_IN just\_RB before\_IN leaving\_VBG London\_NNP I\_PRP got\_VBD word\_NN that\_IN my\_PRP$ examination\_NN was\_VBD successful\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP now\_RB a\_DT full-blown\_JJ solicitor\_NN !\_.

I\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO rub\_VB my\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS and\_CC pinch\_VB myself\_PRP to\_TO see\_VB if\_IN I\_PRP were\_VBD awake\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP all\_DT seemed\_VBD like\_IN a\_DT horrible\_JJ nightmare\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP expected\_VBD that\_IN I\_PRP should\_MD suddenly\_RB awake\_RB ,\_, and\_CC find\_VB myself\_PRP at\_IN home\_NN ,\_, with\_IN the\_DT dawn\_NN struggling\_VBG in\_RP through\_IN the\_DT windows\_NNS ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD now\_RB and\_CC again\_RB felt\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN after\_IN a\_DT day\_NN of\_IN overwork\_NN .\_.

But\_CC my\_PRP$ flesh\_NN answered\_VBD the\_DT pinching\_VBG test\_NN ,\_, and\_CC my\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS were\_VBD not\_RB to\_TO be\_VB deceived\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD indeed\_RB awake\_JJ and\_CC among\_IN the\_DT Carpathians\_NNPS .\_.

All\_DT I\_PRP could\_MD do\_VB now\_RB was\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB patient\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO wait\_VB the\_DT coming\_VBG of\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN .\_.

Just\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD come\_VBN to\_TO this\_DT conclusion\_NN I\_PRP heard\_VBD a\_DT heavy\_JJ step\_NN approaching\_VBG behind\_IN the\_DT great\_JJ door\_NN ,\_, and\_CC saw\_VBD through\_IN the\_DT chinks\_NNS the\_DT gleam\_NN of\_IN a\_DT coming\_JJ light\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB there\_EX was\_VBD the\_DT sound\_NN of\_IN rattling\_VBG chains\_NNS and\_CC the\_DT clanking\_NN of\_IN massive\_JJ bolts\_NNS drawn\_VBN back\_RB .\_.

A\_DT key\_NN was\_VBD turned\_VBN with\_IN the\_DT loud\_JJ grating\_JJ noise\_NN of\_IN long\_JJ disuse\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT great\_JJ door\_NN swung\_VBD back\_RB .\_.

Within\_IN ,\_, stood\_VBD a\_DT tall\_JJ old\_JJ man\_NN ,\_, clean\_JJ shaven\_NNS save\_VBP for\_IN a\_DT long\_JJ white\_JJ moustache\_NN ,\_, and\_CC clad\_VBN in\_IN black\_JJ from\_IN head\_NN to\_TO foot\_VB ,\_, without\_IN a\_DT single\_JJ speck\_NN of\_IN colour\_NN about\_IN him\_PRP anywhere\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP held\_VBD in\_IN his\_PRP$ hand\_NN an\_DT antique\_JJ silver\_NN lamp\_NN ,\_, in\_IN which\_WDT the\_DT flame\_NN burned\_VBN without\_IN chimney\_NN or\_CC globe\_NN of\_IN any\_DT kind\_NN ,\_, throwing\_VBG long\_RB quivering\_VBG shadows\_NNS as\_IN it\_PRP flickered\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT draught\_NN of\_IN the\_DT open\_JJ door\_NN .\_.

The\_DT old\_JJ man\_NN motioned\_VBD me\_PRP in\_RP with\_IN his\_PRP$ right\_JJ hand\_NN with\_IN a\_DT courtly\_JJ gesture\_NN ,\_, saying\_VBG in\_IN excellent\_JJ English\_NNP ,\_, but\_CC with\_IN a\_DT strange\_JJ intonation\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Welcome\_VB to\_TO my\_PRP$ house\_NN !\_.

Enter\_VB freely\_RB and\_CC of\_IN your\_PRP$ own\_JJ will\_NN !\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP made\_VBD no\_DT motion\_NN of\_IN stepping\_VBG to\_TO meet\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC stood\_VBD like\_IN a\_DT statue\_NN ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN his\_PRP$ gesture\_NN of\_IN welcome\_JJ had\_VBD fixed\_VBN him\_PRP into\_IN stone\_NN .\_.

The\_DT instant\_NN ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD stepped\_VBN over\_IN the\_DT threshold\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP moved\_VBD impulsively\_RB forward\_RB ,\_, and\_CC holding\_VBG out\_RP his\_PRP$ hand\_NN grasped\_VBD mine\_NN with\_IN a\_DT strength\_NN which\_WDT made\_VBD me\_PRP wince\_NN ,\_, an\_DT effect\_NN which\_WDT was\_VBD not\_RB lessened\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT fact\_NN that\_IN it\_PRP seemed\_VBD as\_RB cold\_JJ as\_IN ice\_NN --\_: more\_JJR like\_IN the\_DT hand\_NN of\_IN a\_DT dead\_NN than\_IN a\_DT living\_VBG man\_NN .\_.

Again\_RB he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Welcome\_VB to\_TO my\_PRP$ house\_NN .\_.

Come\_VB freely\_RB .\_.

Go\_VB safely\_RB ;\_: and\_CC leave\_VBP something\_NN of\_IN the\_DT happiness\_NN you\_PRP bring\_VBP !\_. ''\_''

The\_DT strength\_NN of\_IN the\_DT handshake\_NN was\_VBD so\_RB much\_RB akin\_JJ to\_TO that\_DT which\_WDT I\_PRP had\_VBD noticed\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT driver\_NN ,\_, whose\_WP$ face\_NN I\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB seen\_VBN ,\_, that\_IN for\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN I\_PRP doubted\_VBD if\_IN it\_PRP were\_VBD not\_RB the\_DT same\_JJ person\_NN to\_TO whom\_WP I\_PRP was\_VBD speaking\_VBG ;\_: so\_RB to\_TO make\_VB sure\_JJ ,\_, I\_PRP said\_VBD interrogatively\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Count\_NNP Dracula\_NNP ?\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP bowed\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT courtly\_JJ way\_NN as\_IN he\_PRP replied\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP am\_VBP Dracula\_NNP ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP bid\_VBP you\_PRP welcome\_RB ,\_, Mr.\_NNP Harker\_NNP ,\_, to\_TO my\_PRP$ house\_NN .\_.

Come\_VB in\_IN ;\_: the\_DT night\_NN air\_NN is\_VBZ chill\_NN ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP must\_MD need\_VB to\_TO eat\_VB and\_CC rest\_VB .\_. ''\_''

As\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD speaking\_VBG ,\_, he\_PRP put\_VBD the\_DT lamp\_NN on\_IN a\_DT bracket\_NN on\_IN the\_DT wall\_NN ,\_, and\_CC stepping\_VBG out\_RP ,\_, took\_VBD my\_PRP$ luggage\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP had\_VBD carried\_VBN it\_PRP in\_IN before\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD forestall\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP protested\_VBD but\_CC he\_PRP insisted\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Nay\_NN ,\_, sir\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP are\_VBP my\_PRP$ guest\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ late\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC my\_PRP$ people\_NNS are\_VBP not\_RB available\_JJ .\_.

Let\_VB me\_PRP see\_VB to\_TO your\_PRP$ comfort\_NN myself\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP insisted\_VBD on\_IN carrying\_VBG my\_PRP$ traps\_NNS along\_IN the\_DT passage\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB up\_RP a\_DT great\_JJ winding\_VBG stair\_NN ,\_, and\_CC along\_IN another\_DT great\_JJ passage\_NN ,\_, on\_IN whose\_WP$ stone\_NN floor\_NN our\_PRP$ steps\_NNS rang\_VBD heavily\_RB .\_.

At\_IN the\_DT end\_NN of\_IN this\_DT he\_PRP threw\_VBD open\_VB a\_DT heavy\_JJ door\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP rejoiced\_VBD to\_TO see\_VB within\_IN a\_DT well-lit\_JJ room\_NN in\_IN which\_WDT a\_DT table\_NN was\_VBD spread\_VBN for\_IN supper\_NN ,\_, and\_CC on\_IN whose\_WP$ mighty\_JJ hearth\_NN a\_DT great\_JJ fire\_NN of\_IN logs\_NNS ,\_, freshly\_RB replenished\_VBN ,\_, flamed\_VBN and\_CC flared\_VBN .\_.

The\_DT Count\_NN halted\_NN ,\_, putting\_VBG down\_RP my\_PRP$ bags\_NN ,\_, closed\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, and\_CC crossing\_VBG the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, opened\_VBD another\_DT door\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT led\_VBD into\_IN a\_DT small\_JJ octagonal\_JJ room\_NN lit\_VBN by\_IN a\_DT single\_JJ lamp\_NN ,\_, and\_CC seemingly\_RB without\_IN a\_DT window\_NN of\_IN any\_DT sort\_NN .\_.

Passing\_VBG through\_IN this\_DT ,\_, he\_PRP opened\_VBD another\_DT door\_NN ,\_, and\_CC motioned\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO enter\_VB .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT welcome\_JJ sight\_NN ;\_: for\_IN here\_RB was\_VBD a\_DT great\_JJ bedroom\_NN well\_RB lighted\_VBN and\_CC warmed\_VBN with\_IN another\_DT log\_NN fire\_NN ,\_, --\_: also\_RB added\_VBD to\_TO but\_CC lately\_RB ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT top\_JJ logs\_NNS were\_VBD fresh\_JJ --\_: which\_WDT sent\_VBD a\_DT hollow\_JJ roar\_NN up\_RP the\_DT wide\_JJ chimney\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Count\_NNP himself\_PRP left\_VBD my\_PRP$ luggage\_NN inside\_IN and\_CC withdrew\_VBD ,\_, saying\_VBG ,\_, before\_IN he\_PRP closed\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP will\_MD need\_VB ,\_, after\_IN your\_PRP$ journey\_NN ,\_, to\_TO refresh\_VB yourself\_PRP by\_IN making\_VBG your\_PRP$ toilet\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP trust\_VBP you\_PRP will\_MD find\_VB all\_DT you\_PRP wish\_VBP .\_.

When\_WRB you\_PRP are\_VBP ready\_JJ ,\_, come\_VBN into\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ room\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB you\_PRP will\_MD find\_VB your\_PRP$ supper\_NN prepared\_VBN .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT light\_NN and\_CC warmth\_NN and\_CC the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS courteous\_JJ welcome\_JJ seemed\_VBD to\_TO have\_VB dissipated\_VBN all\_DT my\_PRP$ doubts\_NNS and\_CC fears\_NNS .\_.

Having\_VBG then\_RB reached\_VBD my\_PRP$ normal\_JJ state\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP discovered\_VBD that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD half\_RB famished\_VBN with\_IN hunger\_NN ;\_: so\_RB making\_VBG a\_DT hasty\_JJ toilet\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP went\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ room\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP found\_VBD supper\_NN already\_RB laid\_VBN out\_RP .\_.

My\_PRP$ host\_NN ,\_, who\_WP stood\_VBD on\_IN one\_CD side\_NN of\_IN the\_DT great\_JJ fireplace\_NN ,\_, leaning\_VBG against\_IN the\_DT stonework\_NN ,\_, made\_VBD a\_DT graceful\_JJ wave\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ hand\_NN to\_TO the\_DT table\_NN ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP pray\_VBP you\_PRP ,\_, be\_VB seated\_VBN and\_CC sup\_NN how\_WRB you\_PRP please\_VBP .\_.

You\_PRP will\_MD ,\_, I\_PRP trust\_VBP ,\_, excuse\_VBP me\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB join\_VB you\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP dined\_VBN already\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB sup\_VB .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP handed\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP the\_DT sealed\_JJ letter\_NN which\_WDT Mr.\_NNP Hawkins\_NNP had\_VBD entrusted\_VBN to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP opened\_VBD it\_PRP and\_CC read\_VB it\_PRP gravely\_RB ;\_: then\_RB ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT charming\_JJ smile\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP handed\_VBD it\_PRP to\_TO me\_PRP to\_TO read\_VB .\_.

One\_CD passage\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, at\_IN least\_JJS ,\_, gave\_VBD me\_PRP a\_DT thrill\_NN of\_IN pleasure\_NN .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP must\_MD regret\_VB that\_IN an\_DT attack\_NN of\_IN gout\_NN ,\_, from\_IN which\_WDT malady\_NN I\_PRP am\_VBP a\_DT constant\_JJ sufferer\_NN ,\_, forbids\_VBZ absolutely\_RB any\_DT travelling\_VBG on\_IN my\_PRP$ part\_NN for\_IN some\_DT time\_NN to\_TO come\_VB ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP happy\_JJ to\_TO say\_VB I\_PRP can\_MD send\_VB a\_DT sufficient\_JJ substitute\_NN ,\_, one\_CD in\_IN whom\_WP I\_PRP have\_VBP every\_DT possible\_JJ confidence\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT young\_JJ man\_NN ,\_, full\_JJ of\_IN energy\_NN and\_CC talent\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ way\_NN ,\_, and\_CC of\_IN a\_DT very\_RB faithful\_JJ disposition\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ discreet\_JJ and\_CC silent\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC has\_VBZ grown\_VBN into\_IN manhood\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ service\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB ready\_JJ to\_TO attend\_VB on\_IN you\_PRP when\_WRB you\_PRP will\_MD during\_IN his\_PRP$ stay\_NN ,\_, and\_CC shall\_MD take\_VB your\_PRP$ instructions\_NNS in\_IN all\_DT matters\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT Count\_NNP himself\_PRP came\_VBD forward\_RB and\_CC took\_VBD off\_RP the\_DT cover\_NN of\_IN a\_DT dish\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP fell\_VBD to\_TO at\_IN once\_RB on\_IN an\_DT excellent\_JJ roast\_NN chicken\_NN .\_.

This\_DT ,\_, with\_IN some\_DT cheese\_NN and\_CC a\_DT salad\_NN and\_CC a\_DT bottle\_NN of\_IN old\_JJ Tokay\_NNP ,\_, of\_IN which\_WDT I\_PRP had\_VBD two\_CD glasses\_NNS ,\_, was\_VBD my\_PRP$ supper\_NN .\_.

During\_IN the\_DT time\_NN I\_PRP was\_VBD eating\_VBG it\_PRP the\_DT Count\_NNP asked\_VBD me\_PRP many\_JJ questions\_NNS as\_IN to\_TO my\_PRP$ journey\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP told\_VBD him\_PRP by\_IN degrees\_NNS all\_DT I\_PRP had\_VBD experienced\_VBN .\_.

By\_IN this\_DT time\_NN I\_PRP had\_VBD finished\_VBN my\_PRP$ supper\_NN ,\_, and\_CC by\_IN my\_PRP$ host\_NN 's\_POS desire\_NN had\_VBD drawn\_VBN up\_RP a\_DT chair\_NN by\_IN the\_DT fire\_NN and\_CC begun\_VBN to\_TO smoke\_VB a\_DT cigar\_NN which\_WDT he\_PRP offered\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, at\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ time\_NN excusing\_VBG himself\_PRP that\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB smoke\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD now\_RB an\_DT opportunity\_NN of\_IN observing\_VBG him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC found\_VBD him\_PRP of\_IN a\_DT very\_RB marked\_JJ physiognomy\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ face\_NN was\_VBD a\_DT strong\_JJ --\_: a\_DT very\_RB strong\_JJ --\_: aquiline\_NN ,\_, with\_IN high\_JJ bridge\_NN of\_IN the\_DT thin\_JJ nose\_NN and\_CC peculiarly\_RB arched\_JJ nostrils\_NNS ;\_: with\_IN lofty\_JJ domed\_JJ forehead\_NN ,\_, and\_CC hair\_NN growing\_VBG scantily\_RB round\_VB the\_DT temples\_NNS but\_CC profusely\_RB elsewhere\_RB .\_.

His\_PRP$ eyebrows\_NNS were\_VBD very\_RB massive\_JJ ,\_, almost\_RB meeting\_VBG over\_IN the\_DT nose\_NN ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN bushy\_JJ hair\_NN that\_WDT seemed\_VBD to\_TO curl\_VB in\_IN its\_PRP$ own\_JJ profusion\_NN .\_.

The\_DT mouth\_NN ,\_, so\_RB far\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB it\_PRP under\_IN the\_DT heavy\_JJ moustache\_NN ,\_, was\_VBD fixed\_VBN and\_CC rather\_RB cruel-looking\_JJ ,\_, with\_IN peculiarly\_RB sharp\_JJ white\_JJ teeth\_NNS ;\_: these\_DT protruded\_VBD over\_IN the\_DT lips\_NNS ,\_, whose\_WP$ remarkable\_JJ ruddiness\_NN showed\_VBD astonishing\_JJ vitality\_NN in\_IN a\_DT man\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ years\_NNS .\_.

For\_IN the\_DT rest\_NN ,\_, his\_PRP$ ears\_NNS were\_VBD pale\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC at\_IN the\_DT tops\_NNS extremely\_RB pointed\_VBD ;\_: the\_DT chin\_NN was\_VBD broad\_JJ and\_CC strong\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT cheeks\_NNS firm\_NN though\_IN thin\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT general\_JJ effect\_NN was\_VBD one\_CD of\_IN extraordinary\_JJ pallor\_NN .\_.

Hitherto\_RB I\_PRP had\_VBD noticed\_VBN the\_DT backs\_NNS of\_IN his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS as\_IN they\_PRP lay\_VBP on\_IN his\_PRP$ knees\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT firelight\_NN ,\_, and\_CC they\_PRP had\_VBD seemed\_VBN rather\_RB white\_JJ and\_CC fine\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC seeing\_VBG them\_PRP now\_RB close\_RB to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB but\_CC notice\_VB that\_IN they\_PRP were\_VBD rather\_RB coarse\_JJ --\_: broad\_JJ ,\_, with\_IN squat\_JJ fingers\_NNS .\_.

Strange\_JJ to\_TO say\_VB ,\_, there\_EX were\_VBD hairs\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT centre\_NN of\_IN the\_DT palm\_NN .\_.

The\_DT nails\_NNS were\_VBD long\_JJ and\_CC fine\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC cut\_VBD to\_TO a\_DT sharp\_JJ point\_NN .\_.

As\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP leaned\_VBD over\_IN me\_PRP and\_CC his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS touched\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB repress\_VB a\_DT shudder\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP may\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN that\_IN his\_PRP$ breath\_NN was\_VBD rank\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC a\_DT horrible\_JJ feeling\_NN of\_IN nausea\_NN came\_VBD over\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, which\_WDT ,\_, do\_VBP what\_WP I\_PRP would\_MD ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB conceal\_VB .\_.

The\_DT Count\_NNP ,\_, evidently\_RB noticing\_VBG it\_PRP ,\_, drew\_VBD back\_RB ;\_: and\_CC with\_IN a\_DT grim\_JJ sort\_NN of\_IN smile\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT showed\_VBD more\_RBR than\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD yet\_RB done\_VBN his\_PRP$ protuberant\_JJ teeth\_NNS ,\_, sat\_VBD himself\_PRP down\_RP again\_RB on\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ side\_NN of\_IN the\_DT fireplace\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP were\_VBD both\_DT silent\_JJ for\_IN a\_DT while\_NN ;\_: and\_CC as\_IN I\_PRP looked\_VBD towards\_IN the\_DT window\_NN I\_PRP saw\_VBD the\_DT first\_JJ dim\_JJ streak\_NN of\_IN the\_DT coming\_VBG dawn\_NN .\_.

There\_EX seemed\_VBD a\_DT strange\_JJ stillness\_NN over\_IN everything\_NN ;\_: but\_CC as\_IN I\_PRP listened\_VBD I\_PRP heard\_VBD as\_IN if\_IN from\_IN down\_RB below\_IN in\_IN the\_DT valley\_NN the\_DT howling\_NN of\_IN many\_JJ wolves\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS eyes\_NNS gleamed\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Listen\_VB to\_TO them\_PRP --\_: the\_DT children\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT night\_NN .\_.

What\_WDT music\_NN they\_PRP make\_VBP !\_. ''\_''

Seeing\_VBG ,\_, I\_PRP suppose\_VBP ,\_, some\_DT expression\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ face\_NN strange\_JJ to\_TO him\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP added\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Ah\_NN ,\_, sir\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP dwellers\_VBZ in\_IN the\_DT city\_NN can\_MD not\_RB enter\_VB into\_IN the\_DT feelings\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT hunter\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Then\_RB he\_PRP rose\_VBD and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` But\_CC you\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB tired\_VBN .\_.

Your\_PRP$ bedroom\_NN is\_VBZ all\_DT ready\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC to-morrow\_NN you\_PRP shall\_MD sleep\_VB as\_RB late\_RB as\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP to\_TO be\_VB away\_RB till\_IN the\_DT afternoon\_NN ;\_: so\_RB sleep\_VB well\_RB and\_CC dream\_VB well\_RB !\_. ''\_''

With\_IN a\_DT courteous\_JJ bow\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP opened\_VBD for\_IN me\_PRP himself\_PRP the\_DT door\_NN to\_TO the\_DT octagonal\_JJ room\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP entered\_VBD my\_PRP$ bedroom\_NN ...\_: .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP all\_DT in\_IN a\_DT sea\_NN of\_IN wonders\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP doubt\_VBP ;\_: I\_PRP fear\_VBP ;\_: I\_PRP think\_VBP strange\_JJ things\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT I\_PRP dare\_VBP not\_RB confess\_VB to\_TO my\_PRP$ own\_JJ soul\_NN .\_.

God\_NNP keep\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, if\_IN only\_RB for\_IN the\_DT sake\_NN of\_IN those\_DT dear\_RB to\_TO me\_PRP !\_.

7\_CD May\_NNP .\_.

--\_: It\_PRP is\_VBZ again\_RB early\_JJ morning\_NN ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP rested\_VBN and\_CC enjoyed\_VBN the\_DT last\_JJ twenty-four\_CD hours\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP slept\_VBD till\_IN late\_RB in\_IN the\_DT day\_NN ,\_, and\_CC awoke\_VBD of\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ accord\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD dressed\_VBN myself\_PRP I\_PRP went\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN where\_WRB we\_PRP had\_VBD supped\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC found\_VBD a\_DT cold\_JJ breakfast\_NN laid\_VBN out\_RP ,\_, with\_IN coffee\_NN kept\_VBD hot\_JJ by\_IN the\_DT pot\_NN being\_VBG placed\_VBN on\_IN the\_DT hearth\_NN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT card\_NN on\_IN the\_DT table\_NN ,\_, on\_IN which\_WDT was\_VBD written\_VBN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP have\_VBP to\_TO be\_VB absent\_JJ for\_IN a\_DT while\_NN .\_.

Do\_VBP not\_RB wait\_VB for\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

--\_: D.\_NNP ''\_'' I\_PRP set\_VBP to\_TO and\_CC enjoyed\_VBD a\_DT hearty\_JJ meal\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD done\_VBN ,\_, I\_PRP looked\_VBD for\_IN a\_DT bell\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP might\_MD let\_VB the\_DT servants\_NNS know\_VBP I\_PRP had\_VBD finished\_VBN ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB find\_VB one\_CD .\_.

There\_EX are\_VBP certainly\_RB odd\_JJ deficiencies\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT house\_NN ,\_, considering\_VBG the\_DT extraordinary\_JJ evidences\_NNS of\_IN wealth\_NN which\_WDT are\_VBP round\_JJ me\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT table\_NN service\_NN is\_VBZ of\_IN gold\_NN ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB beautifully\_RB wrought\_VBD that\_IN it\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB of\_IN immense\_JJ value\_NN .\_.

The\_DT curtains\_NNS and\_CC upholstery\_NN of\_IN the\_DT chairs\_NNS and\_CC sofas\_NNS and\_CC the\_DT hangings\_NNS of\_IN my\_PRP$ bed\_NN are\_VBP of\_IN the\_DT costliest\_JJS and\_CC most\_RBS beautiful\_JJ fabrics\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC must\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN of\_IN fabulous\_JJ value\_NN when\_WRB they\_PRP were\_VBD made\_VBN ,\_, for\_IN they\_PRP are\_VBP centuries\_NNS old\_JJ ,\_, though\_IN in\_IN excellent\_JJ order\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP saw\_VBD something\_NN like\_IN them\_PRP in\_IN Hampton\_NNP Court\_NNP ,\_, but\_CC there\_RB they\_PRP were\_VBD worn\_VBN and\_CC frayed\_VBN and\_CC moth-eaten\_JJ .\_.

But\_CC still\_RB in\_IN none\_NN of\_IN the\_DT rooms\_NNS is\_VBZ there\_RB a\_DT mirror\_NN .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ not\_RB even\_RB a\_DT toilet\_NN glass\_NN on\_IN my\_PRP$ table\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO get\_VB the\_DT little\_JJ shaving\_JJ glass\_NN from\_IN my\_PRP$ bag\_NN before\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD either\_RB shave\_VB or\_CC brush\_VB my\_PRP$ hair\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB yet\_RB seen\_VBN a\_DT servant\_NN anywhere\_RB ,\_, or\_CC heard\_VBD a\_DT sound\_NN near\_IN the\_DT castle\_NN except\_IN the\_DT howling\_NN of\_IN wolves\_NNS .\_.

Some\_DT time\_NN after\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD finished\_VBN my\_PRP$ meal\_NN --\_: I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB know\_VB whether\_IN to\_TO call\_VB it\_PRP breakfast\_NN or\_CC dinner\_NN ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD between\_IN five\_CD and\_CC six\_CD o'clock\_RB when\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD it\_PRP --\_: I\_PRP looked\_VBD about\_IN for\_IN something\_NN to\_TO read\_VB ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB like\_VB to\_TO go\_VB about\_IN the\_DT castle\_NN until\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD asked\_VBN the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS permission\_NN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD absolutely\_RB nothing\_NN in\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, book\_NN ,\_, newspaper\_NN ,\_, or\_CC even\_RB writing\_VBG materials\_NNS ;\_: so\_IN I\_PRP opened\_VBD another\_DT door\_NN in\_IN the\_DT room\_NN and\_CC found\_VBD a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN library\_NN .\_.

The\_DT door\_NN opposite\_JJ mine\_NN I\_PRP tried\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC found\_VBD it\_PRP locked\_VBD .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT library\_NN I\_PRP found\_VBD ,\_, to\_TO my\_PRP$ great\_JJ delight\_NN ,\_, a\_DT vast\_JJ number\_NN of\_IN English\_JJ books\_NNS ,\_, whole\_JJ shelves\_NNS full\_JJ of\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC bound\_VBD volumes\_NNS of\_IN magazines\_NNS and\_CC newspapers\_NNS .\_.

A\_DT table\_NN in\_IN the\_DT centre\_NN was\_VBD littered\_VBN with\_IN English\_JJ magazines\_NNS and\_CC newspapers\_NNS ,\_, though\_IN none\_NN of\_IN them\_PRP were\_VBD of\_IN very\_RB recent\_JJ date\_NN .\_.

The\_DT books\_NNS were\_VBD of\_IN the\_DT most\_RBS varied\_JJ kind\_NN --\_: history\_NN ,\_, geography\_NN ,\_, politics\_NNS ,\_, political\_JJ economy\_NN ,\_, botany\_NN ,\_, geology\_NN ,\_, law\_NN --\_: all\_DT relating\_VBG to\_TO England\_NNP and\_CC English\_NNP life\_NN and\_CC customs\_NNS and\_CC manners\_NNS .\_.

There\_EX were\_VBD even\_RB such\_JJ books\_NNS of\_IN reference\_NN as\_IN the\_DT London\_NNP Directory\_NNP ,\_, the\_DT ``\_`` Red\_NNP ''\_'' and\_CC ``\_`` Blue\_NNP ''\_'' books\_NNS ,\_, Whitaker\_NNP 's\_POS Almanac\_NNP ,\_, the\_DT Army\_NNP and\_CC Navy\_NNP Lists\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC --\_: it\_PRP somehow\_RB gladdened\_VBD my\_PRP$ heart\_NN to\_TO see\_VB it\_PRP --\_: the\_DT Law\_NN List\_NN .\_.

Whilst\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD looking\_VBG at\_IN the\_DT books\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT door\_NN opened\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT Count\_NNP entered\_VBD .\_.

He\_PRP saluted\_VBD me\_PRP in\_IN a\_DT hearty\_JJ way\_NN ,\_, and\_CC hoped\_VBD that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD had\_VBN a\_DT good\_JJ night\_NN 's\_POS rest\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP am\_VBP glad\_JJ you\_PRP found\_VBD your\_PRP$ way\_NN in\_IN here\_RB ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP sure\_JJ there\_EX is\_VBZ much\_JJ that\_WDT will\_MD interest\_VB you\_PRP .\_.

These\_DT companions\_NNS ''\_'' --\_: and\_CC he\_PRP laid\_VBD his\_PRP$ hand\_NN on\_IN some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT books\_NNS --\_: ``\_`` have\_VBP been\_VBN good\_JJ friends\_NNS to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC for\_IN some\_DT years\_NNS past\_NN ,\_, ever\_RB since\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD the\_DT idea\_NN of\_IN going\_VBG to\_TO London\_NNP ,\_, have\_VBP given\_VBN me\_PRP many\_JJ ,\_, many\_JJ hours\_NNS of\_IN pleasure\_NN .\_.

Through\_IN them\_PRP I\_PRP have\_VBP come\_VBN to\_TO know\_VB your\_PRP$ great\_JJ England\_NNP ;\_: and\_CC to\_TO know\_VB her\_PRP is\_VBZ to\_TO love\_VB her\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP long\_JJ to\_TO go\_VB through\_IN the\_DT crowded\_JJ streets\_NNS of\_IN your\_PRP$ mighty\_JJ London\_NNP ,\_, to\_TO be\_VB in\_IN the\_DT midst\_NN of\_IN the\_DT whirl\_NN and\_CC rush\_NN of\_IN humanity\_NN ,\_, to\_TO share\_VB its\_PRP$ life\_NN ,\_, its\_PRP$ change\_NN ,\_, its\_PRP$ death\_NN ,\_, and\_CC all\_DT that\_WDT makes\_VBZ it\_PRP what\_WP it\_PRP is\_VBZ .\_.

But\_CC alas\_UH !\_.

as\_IN yet\_RB I\_PRP only\_RB know\_VBP your\_PRP$ tongue\_NN through\_IN books\_NNS .\_.

To\_TO you\_PRP ,\_, my\_PRP$ friend\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP look\_VBP that\_IN I\_PRP know\_VBP it\_PRP to\_TO speak\_VB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` But\_CC ,\_, Count\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` you\_PRP know\_VBP and\_CC speak\_VBP English\_NNP thoroughly\_RB !\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP bowed\_VBD gravely\_RB .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP thank\_VBP you\_PRP ,\_, my\_PRP$ friend\_NN ,\_, for\_IN your\_PRP$ all\_DT too-flattering\_JJ estimate\_NN ,\_, but\_CC yet\_RB I\_PRP fear\_VBP that\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP but\_CC a\_DT little\_JJ way\_NN on\_IN the\_DT road\_NN I\_PRP would\_MD travel\_VB .\_.

True\_JJ ,\_, I\_PRP know\_VBP the\_DT grammar\_NN and\_CC the\_DT words\_NNS ,\_, but\_CC yet\_RB I\_PRP know\_VBP not\_RB how\_WRB to\_TO speak\_VB them\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Indeed\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` you\_PRP speak\_VBP excellently\_RB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Not\_RB so\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP answered\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Well\_UH ,\_, I\_PRP know\_VBP that\_IN ,\_, did\_VBD I\_PRP move\_VB and\_CC speak\_VB in\_IN your\_PRP$ London\_NNP ,\_, none\_NN there\_EX are\_VBP who\_WP would\_MD not\_RB know\_VB me\_PRP for\_IN a\_DT stranger\_NN .\_.

That\_DT is\_VBZ not\_RB enough\_RB for\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

Here\_RB I\_PRP am\_VBP noble\_JJ ;\_: I\_PRP am\_VBP boyar\_NN ;\_: the\_DT common\_JJ people\_NNS know\_VBP me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP master\_NN .\_.

But\_CC a\_DT stranger\_NN in\_IN a\_DT strange\_JJ land\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP is\_VBZ no\_DT one\_NN ;\_: men\_NNS know\_VBP him\_PRP not\_RB --\_: and\_CC to\_TO know\_VB not\_RB is\_VBZ to\_TO care\_VB not\_RB for\_IN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP content\_JJ if\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP like\_IN the\_DT rest\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN no\_DT man\_NN stops\_VBZ if\_IN he\_PRP see\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, or\_CC pause\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ speaking\_NN if\_IN he\_PRP hear\_VB my\_PRP$ words\_NNS ,\_, `\_`` Ha\_NN ,\_, ha\_NN !\_.

a\_DT stranger\_NN !\_. '\_''

I\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN so\_RB long\_JJ master\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB master\_JJ still\_RB --\_: or\_CC at\_IN least\_JJS that\_IN none\_NN other\_JJ should\_MD be\_VB master\_NN of\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

You\_PRP come\_VBP to\_TO me\_PRP not\_RB alone\_RB as\_IN agent\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ friend\_NN Peter\_NNP Hawkins\_NNP ,\_, of\_IN Exeter\_NNP ,\_, to\_TO tell\_VB me\_PRP all\_DT about\_IN my\_PRP$ new\_JJ estate\_NN in\_IN London\_NNP .\_.

You\_PRP shall\_MD ,\_, I\_PRP trust\_VBP ,\_, rest\_VBP here\_RB with\_IN me\_PRP awhile\_RB ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN by\_IN our\_PRP$ talking\_VBG I\_PRP may\_MD learn\_VB the\_DT English\_NNP intonation\_NN ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP would\_MD that\_IN you\_PRP tell\_VBP me\_PRP when\_WRB I\_PRP make\_VBP error\_NN ,\_, even\_RB of\_IN the\_DT smallest\_JJS ,\_, in\_IN my\_PRP$ speaking\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP sorry\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB away\_RB so\_RB long\_JJ to-day\_NN ;\_: but\_CC you\_PRP will\_MD ,\_, I\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, forgive\_VBP one\_CD who\_WP has\_VBZ so\_RB many\_JJ important\_JJ affairs\_NNS in\_IN hand\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Of\_IN course\_NN I\_PRP said\_VBD all\_DT I\_PRP could\_MD about\_IN being\_VBG willing\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC asked\_VBD if\_IN I\_PRP might\_MD come\_VB into\_IN that\_DT room\_NN when\_WRB I\_PRP chose\_VBD .\_.

He\_PRP answered\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` Yes\_UH ,\_, certainly\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' and\_CC added\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP may\_MD go\_VB anywhere\_RB you\_PRP wish\_VBP in\_IN the\_DT castle\_NN ,\_, except\_IN where\_WRB the\_DT doors\_NNS are\_VBP locked\_VBN ,\_, where\_WRB of\_IN course\_NN you\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB wish\_VB to\_TO go\_VB .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ reason\_NN that\_IN all\_DT things\_NNS are\_VBP as\_IN they\_PRP are\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC did\_VBD you\_PRP see\_VB with\_IN my\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS and\_CC know\_VB with\_IN my\_PRP$ knowledge\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP would\_MD perhaps\_RB better\_RBR understand\_VB .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP said\_VBD I\_PRP was\_VBD sure\_JJ of\_IN this\_DT ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` We\_PRP are\_VBP in\_IN Transylvania\_NNP ;\_: and\_CC Transylvania\_NNP is\_VBZ not\_RB England\_NNP .\_.

Our\_PRP$ ways\_NNS are\_VBP not\_RB your\_PRP$ ways\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX shall\_MD be\_VB to\_TO you\_PRP many\_JJ strange\_JJ things\_NNS .\_.

Nay\_NNP ,\_, from\_IN what\_WP you\_PRP have\_VBP told\_VBN me\_PRP of\_IN your\_PRP$ experiences\_NNS already\_RB ,\_, you\_PRP know\_VBP something\_NN of\_IN what\_WP strange\_JJ things\_NNS there\_EX may\_MD be\_VB .\_. ''\_''

This\_DT led\_VBD to\_TO much\_JJ conversation\_NN ;\_: and\_CC as\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD evident\_JJ that\_IN he\_PRP wanted\_VBD to\_TO talk\_VB ,\_, if\_IN only\_RB for\_IN talking\_NN 's\_POS sake\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP asked\_VBD him\_PRP many\_JJ questions\_NNS regarding\_VBG things\_NNS that\_WDT had\_VBD already\_RB happened\_VBN to\_TO me\_PRP or\_CC come\_VB within\_IN my\_PRP$ notice\_NN .\_.

Sometimes\_RB he\_PRP sheered\_VBD off\_RP the\_DT subject\_NN ,\_, or\_CC turned\_VBD the\_DT conversation\_NN by\_IN pretending\_VBG not\_RB to\_TO understand\_VB ;\_: but\_CC generally\_RB he\_PRP answered\_VBD all\_DT I\_PRP asked\_VBD most\_RBS frankly\_RB .\_.

Then\_RB as\_IN time\_NN went\_VBD on\_IN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP had\_VBD got\_VBN somewhat\_RB bolder\_JJR ,\_, I\_PRP asked\_VBD him\_PRP of\_IN some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT strange\_JJ things\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT preceding\_JJ night\_NN ,\_, as\_IN ,\_, for\_IN instance\_NN ,\_, why\_WRB the\_DT coachman\_NN went\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT places\_NNS where\_WRB he\_PRP had\_VBD seen\_VBN the\_DT blue\_JJ flames\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP then\_RB explained\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD commonly\_RB believed\_VBN that\_IN on\_IN a\_DT certain\_JJ night\_NN of\_IN the\_DT year\_NN --\_: last\_JJ night\_NN ,\_, in\_IN fact\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB all\_DT evil\_JJ spirits\_NNS are\_VBP supposed\_VBN to\_TO have\_VB unchecked\_JJ sway\_VB --\_: a\_DT blue\_JJ flame\_NN is\_VBZ seen\_VBN over\_IN any\_DT place\_NN where\_WRB treasure\_NN has\_VBZ been\_VBN concealed\_VBN .\_.

``\_`` That\_DT treasure\_NN has\_VBZ been\_VBN hidden\_VBN ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN ,\_, ``\_`` in\_IN the\_DT region\_NN through\_IN which\_WDT you\_PRP came\_VBD last\_JJ night\_NN ,\_, there\_EX can\_MD be\_VB but\_CC little\_JJ doubt\_NN ;\_: for\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD the\_DT ground\_NN fought\_VBD over\_RP for\_IN centuries\_NNS by\_IN the\_DT Wallachian\_NNP ,\_, the\_DT Saxon\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT Turk\_NNP .\_.

Why\_WRB ,\_, there\_EX is\_VBZ hardly\_RB a\_DT foot\_NN of\_IN soil\_NN in\_IN all\_PDT this\_DT region\_NN that\_WDT has\_VBZ not\_RB been\_VBN enriched\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT blood\_NN of\_IN men\_NNS ,\_, patriots\_NNS or\_CC invaders\_NNS .\_.

In\_IN old\_JJ days\_NNS there\_EX were\_VBD stirring\_VBG times\_NNS ,\_, when\_WRB the\_DT Austrian\_JJ and\_CC the\_DT Hungarian\_JJ came\_VBD up\_RP in\_IN hordes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT patriots\_NNS went\_VBD out\_RP to\_TO meet\_VB them\_PRP --\_: men\_NNS and\_CC women\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT aged\_JJ and\_CC the\_DT children\_NNS too\_RB --\_: and\_CC waited\_VBD their\_PRP$ coming\_VBG on\_IN the\_DT rocks\_NNS above\_IN the\_DT passes\_NNS ,\_, that\_IN they\_PRP might\_MD sweep\_NN destruction\_NN on\_IN them\_PRP with\_IN their\_PRP$ artificial\_JJ avalanches\_NNS .\_.

When\_WRB the\_DT invader\_NN was\_VBD triumphant\_JJ he\_PRP found\_VBD but\_CC little\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN whatever\_WDT there\_EX was\_VBD had\_VBD been\_VBN sheltered\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT friendly\_JJ soil\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` But\_CC how\_WRB ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD I\_PRP ,\_, ``\_`` can\_MD it\_PRP have\_VB remained\_VBN so\_RB long\_RB undiscovered\_JJ ,\_, when\_WRB there\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT sure\_JJ index\_NN to\_TO it\_PRP if\_IN men\_NNS will\_MD but\_CC take\_VB the\_DT trouble\_NN to\_TO look\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

The\_DT Count\_NNP smiled\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN his\_PRP$ lips\_NNS ran\_VBD back\_RB over\_IN his\_PRP$ gums\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT long\_JJ ,\_, sharp\_JJ ,\_, canine\_JJ teeth\_NNS showed\_VBD out\_RP strangely\_RB ;\_: he\_PRP answered\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Because\_IN your\_PRP$ peasant\_NN is\_VBZ at\_IN heart\_NN a\_DT coward\_NN and\_CC a\_DT fool\_NN !\_.

Those\_DT flames\_NNS only\_RB appear\_VBP on\_IN one\_CD night\_NN ;\_: and\_CC on\_IN that\_DT night\_NN no\_DT man\_NN of\_IN this\_DT land\_NN will\_MD ,\_, if\_IN he\_PRP can\_MD help\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, stir\_VB without\_IN his\_PRP$ doors\_NNS .\_.

And\_CC ,\_, dear\_RB sir\_NN ,\_, even\_RB if\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD he\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB know\_VB what\_WP to\_TO do\_VB .\_.

Why\_WRB ,\_, even\_RB the\_DT peasant\_NN that\_IN you\_PRP tell\_VBP me\_PRP of\_IN who\_WP marked\_VBD the\_DT place\_NN of\_IN the\_DT flame\_NN would\_MD not\_RB know\_VB where\_WRB to\_TO look\_VB in\_IN daylight\_NN even\_RB for\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ work\_NN .\_.

Even\_RB you\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP dare\_MD be\_VB sworn\_VBN ,\_, be\_VB able\_JJ to\_TO find\_VB these\_DT places\_NNS again\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` There\_EX you\_PRP are\_VBP right\_JJ ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP know\_VBP no\_RB more\_JJR than\_IN the\_DT dead\_JJ where\_WRB even\_RB to\_TO look\_VB for\_IN them\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

Then\_RB we\_PRP drifted\_VBD into\_IN other\_JJ matters\_NNS .\_.

``\_`` Come\_VB ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD at\_IN last\_JJ ,\_, ``\_`` tell\_VB me\_PRP of\_IN London\_NNP and\_CC of\_IN the\_DT house\_NN which\_WDT you\_PRP have\_VBP procured\_VBN for\_IN me\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

With\_IN an\_DT apology\_NN for\_IN my\_PRP$ remissness\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP went\_VBD into\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ room\_NN to\_TO get\_VB the\_DT papers\_NNS from\_IN my\_PRP$ bag\_NN .\_.

Whilst\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD placing\_VBG them\_PRP in\_IN order\_NN I\_PRP heard\_VBD a\_DT rattling\_VBG of\_IN china\_NN and\_CC silver\_NN in\_IN the\_DT next\_JJ room\_NN ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN I\_PRP passed\_VBD through\_IN ,\_, noticed\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT table\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN cleared\_VBN and\_CC the\_DT lamp\_NN lit\_VBD ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD by\_IN this\_DT time\_NN deep\_RB into\_IN the\_DT dark\_NN .\_.

The\_DT lamps\_NNS were\_VBD also\_RB lit\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT study\_NN or\_CC library\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP found\_VBD the\_DT Count\_NN lying\_VBG on\_IN the\_DT sofa\_NN ,\_, reading\_NN ,\_, of\_IN all\_DT things\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT world\_NN ,\_, an\_DT English\_NNP Bradshaw\_NNP 's\_POS Guide\_NNP .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP came\_VBD in\_IN he\_PRP cleared\_VBD the\_DT books\_NNS and\_CC papers\_NNS from\_IN the\_DT table\_NN ;\_: and\_CC with\_IN him\_PRP I\_PRP went\_VBD into\_IN plans\_NNS and\_CC deeds\_NNS and\_CC figures\_NNS of\_IN all\_DT sorts\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD interested\_JJ in\_IN everything\_NN ,\_, and\_CC asked\_VBD me\_PRP a\_DT myriad\_JJ questions\_NNS about\_IN the\_DT place\_NN and\_CC its\_PRP$ surroundings\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP clearly\_RB had\_VBD studied\_VBN beforehand\_RB all\_DT he\_PRP could\_MD get\_VB on\_IN the\_DT subject\_NN of\_IN the\_DT neighbourhood\_NN ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP evidently\_RB at\_IN the\_DT end\_NN knew\_VBD very\_RB much\_RB more\_JJR than\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP remarked\_VBD this\_DT ,\_, he\_PRP answered\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Well\_UH ,\_, but\_CC ,\_, my\_PRP$ friend\_NN ,\_, is\_VBZ it\_PRP not\_RB needful\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP should\_MD ?\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP go\_VBP there\_EX I\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB all\_DT alone\_RB ,\_, and\_CC my\_PRP$ friend\_NN Harker\_NNP Jonathan\_NNP --\_: nay\_NN ,\_, pardon\_NN me\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP fall\_VBP into\_IN my\_PRP$ country\_NN 's\_POS habit\_NN of\_IN putting\_VBG your\_PRP$ patronymic\_NN first\_RB --\_: my\_PRP$ friend\_NN Jonathan\_NNP Harker\_NNP will\_MD not\_RB be\_VB by\_IN my\_PRP$ side\_NN to\_TO correct\_VB and\_CC aid\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB in\_IN Exeter\_NNP ,\_, miles\_NNS away\_RB ,\_, probably\_RB working\_VBG at\_IN papers\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT law\_NN with\_IN my\_PRP$ other\_JJ friend\_NN ,\_, Peter\_NNP Hawkins\_NNP .\_.

So\_RB !\_. ''\_''

We\_PRP went\_VBD thoroughly\_RB into\_IN the\_DT business\_NN of\_IN the\_DT purchase\_NN of\_IN the\_DT estate\_NN at\_IN Purfleet\_NNP .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD told\_VBN him\_PRP the\_DT facts\_NNS and\_CC got\_VBD his\_PRP$ signature\_NN to\_TO the\_DT necessary\_JJ papers\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC had\_VBD written\_VBN a\_DT letter\_NN with\_IN them\_PRP ready\_JJ to\_TO post\_VB to\_TO Mr.\_NNP Hawkins\_NNP ,\_, he\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO ask\_VB me\_PRP how\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD come\_VBN across\_RB so\_RB suitable\_JJ a\_DT place\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP read\_VBP to\_TO him\_PRP the\_DT notes\_NNS which\_WDT I\_PRP had\_VBD made\_VBN at\_IN the\_DT time\_NN ,\_, and\_CC which\_WDT I\_PRP inscribe\_VBP here\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` At\_IN Purfleet\_NNP ,\_, on\_IN a\_DT by-road\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP came\_VBD across\_IN just\_RB such\_JJ a\_DT place\_NN as\_IN seemed\_VBN to\_TO be\_VB required\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC where\_WRB was\_VBD displayed\_VBN a\_DT dilapidated\_JJ notice\_NN that\_IN the\_DT place\_NN was\_VBD for\_IN sale\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ surrounded\_VBN by\_IN a\_DT high\_JJ wall\_NN ,\_, of\_IN ancient\_JJ structure\_NN ,\_, built\_VBN of\_IN heavy\_JJ stones\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC has\_VBZ not\_RB been\_VBN repaired\_VBN for\_IN a\_DT large\_JJ number\_NN of\_IN years\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT closed\_JJ gates\_NNS are\_VBP of\_IN heavy\_JJ old\_JJ oak\_NN and\_CC iron\_NN ,\_, all\_DT eaten\_VBD with\_IN rust\_NN .\_.

``\_`` The\_DT estate\_NN is\_VBZ called\_VBN Carfax\_NNP ,\_, no\_DT doubt\_NN a\_DT corruption\_NN of\_IN the\_DT old\_JJ Quatre\_NNP Face\_NNP ,\_, as\_IN the\_DT house\_NN is\_VBZ four-sided\_JJ ,\_, agreeing\_VBG with\_IN the\_DT cardinal\_JJ points\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT compass\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP contains\_VBZ in\_IN all\_DT some\_DT twenty\_CD acres\_NNS ,\_, quite\_RB surrounded\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT solid\_JJ stone\_NN wall\_NN above\_IN mentioned\_VBN .\_.

There\_EX are\_VBP many\_JJ trees\_NNS on\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, which\_WDT make\_VBP it\_PRP in\_IN places\_NNS gloomy\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT deep\_JJ ,\_, dark-looking\_JJ pond\_NN or\_CC small\_JJ lake\_NN ,\_, evidently\_RB fed\_VBN by\_IN some\_DT springs\_NNS ,\_, as\_IN the\_DT water\_NN is\_VBZ clear\_JJ and\_CC flows\_VBZ away\_RB in\_IN a\_DT fair-sized\_JJ stream\_NN .\_.

The\_DT house\_NN is\_VBZ very\_RB large\_JJ and\_CC of\_IN all\_DT periods\_NNS back\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP should\_MD say\_VB ,\_, to\_TO mediæval\_JJ times\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN one\_CD part\_NN is\_VBZ of\_IN stone\_NN immensely\_RB thick\_JJ ,\_, with\_IN only\_RB a\_DT few\_JJ windows\_NNS high\_JJ up\_RB and\_CC heavily\_RB barred\_VBN with\_IN iron\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP looks\_VBZ like\_IN part\_NN of\_IN a\_DT keep\_VB ,\_, and\_CC is\_VBZ close\_JJ to\_TO an\_DT old\_JJ chapel\_NN or\_CC church\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB enter\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB the\_DT key\_NN of\_IN the\_DT door\_NN leading\_VBG to\_TO it\_PRP from\_IN the\_DT house\_NN ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP taken\_VBN with\_IN my\_PRP$ kodak\_JJ views\_NNS of\_IN it\_PRP from\_IN various\_JJ points\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT house\_NN has\_VBZ been\_VBN added\_VBN to\_TO ,\_, but\_CC in\_IN a\_DT very\_RB straggling\_JJ way\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP can\_MD only\_RB guess\_VB at\_IN the\_DT amount\_NN of\_IN ground\_NN it\_PRP covers\_VBZ ,\_, which\_WDT must\_MD be\_VB very\_RB great\_JJ .\_.

There\_EX are\_VBP but\_CC few\_JJ houses\_NNS close\_RB at\_IN hand\_NN ,\_, one\_CD being\_VBG a\_DT very\_RB large\_JJ house\_NN only\_RB recently\_RB added\_VBN to\_TO and\_CC formed\_VBN into\_IN a\_DT private\_JJ lunatic\_JJ asylum\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, visible\_JJ from\_IN the\_DT grounds\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

When\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD finished\_VBN ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP am\_VBP glad\_JJ that\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ old\_JJ and\_CC big\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP myself\_PRP am\_VBP of\_IN an\_DT old\_JJ family\_NN ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO live\_VB in\_IN a\_DT new\_JJ house\_NN would\_MD kill\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

A\_DT house\_NN can\_MD not\_RB be\_VB made\_VBN habitable\_JJ in\_IN a\_DT day\_NN ;\_: and\_CC ,\_, after\_IN all\_DT ,\_, how\_WRB few\_JJ days\_NNS go\_VBP to\_TO make\_VB up\_RP a\_DT century\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP rejoice\_VBP also\_RB that\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT chapel\_NN of\_IN old\_JJ times\_NNS .\_.

We\_PRP Transylvanian\_JJ nobles\_NNS love\_VBP not\_RB to\_TO think\_VB that\_IN our\_PRP$ bones\_NNS may\_MD lie\_VB amongst\_IN the\_DT common\_JJ dead\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP seek\_VBP not\_RB gaiety\_NN nor\_CC mirth\_NN ,\_, not\_RB the\_DT bright\_JJ voluptuousness\_NN of\_IN much\_JJ sunshine\_NN and\_CC sparkling\_JJ waters\_NNS which\_WDT please\_VBP the\_DT young\_JJ and\_CC gay\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP no\_RB longer\_RB young\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC my\_PRP$ heart\_NN ,\_, through\_IN weary\_JJ years\_NNS of\_IN mourning\_NN over\_IN the\_DT dead\_NN ,\_, is\_VBZ not\_RB attuned\_JJ to\_TO mirth\_NN .\_.

Moreover\_RB ,\_, the\_DT walls\_NNS of\_IN my\_PRP$ castle\_NN are\_VBP broken\_VBN ;\_: the\_DT shadows\_NNS are\_VBP many\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT wind\_NN breathes\_VBZ cold\_JJ through\_IN the\_DT broken\_JJ battlements\_NNS and\_CC casements\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP love\_VBP the\_DT shade\_NN and\_CC the\_DT shadow\_NN ,\_, and\_CC would\_MD be\_VB alone\_RB with\_IN my\_PRP$ thoughts\_NNS when\_WRB I\_PRP may\_MD .\_. ''\_''

Somehow\_RB his\_PRP$ words\_NNS and\_CC his\_PRP$ look\_NN did\_VBD not\_RB seem\_VB to\_TO accord\_NN ,\_, or\_CC else\_RB it\_PRP was\_VBD that\_IN his\_PRP$ cast\_NN of\_IN face\_NN made\_VBD his\_PRP$ smile\_NN look\_NN malignant\_JJ and\_CC saturnine\_JJ .\_.

Presently\_RB ,\_, with\_IN an\_DT excuse\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP left\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, asking\_VBG me\_PRP to\_TO put\_VB all\_DT my\_PRP$ papers\_NNS together\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD some\_DT little\_JJ time\_NN away\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO look\_VB at\_IN some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT books\_NNS around\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

One\_CD was\_VBD an\_DT atlas\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT I\_PRP found\_VBD opened\_VBN naturally\_RB at\_IN England\_NNP ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN that\_DT map\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN much\_RB used\_VBN .\_.

On\_IN looking\_VBG at\_IN it\_PRP I\_PRP found\_VBD in\_IN certain\_JJ places\_NNS little\_RB rings\_VBZ marked\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC on\_IN examining\_VBG these\_DT I\_PRP noticed\_VBD that\_IN one\_CD was\_VBD near\_IN London\_NNP on\_IN the\_DT east\_JJ side\_NN ,\_, manifestly\_RB where\_WRB his\_PRP$ new\_JJ estate\_NN was\_VBD situated\_VBN ;\_: the\_DT other\_JJ two\_CD were\_VBD Exeter\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC Whitby\_NNP on\_IN the\_DT Yorkshire\_NNP coast\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD the\_DT better\_JJR part\_NN of\_IN an\_DT hour\_NN when\_WRB the\_DT Count\_NNP returned\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Aha\_NN !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD ;\_: ``\_`` still\_RB at\_IN your\_PRP$ books\_NNS ?\_.

Good\_JJ !\_.

But\_CC you\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB work\_VB always\_RB .\_.

Come\_VB ;\_: I\_PRP am\_VBP informed\_VBN that\_IN your\_PRP$ supper\_NN is\_VBZ ready\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP took\_VBD my\_PRP$ arm\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP went\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT next\_JJ room\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB I\_PRP found\_VBD an\_DT excellent\_JJ supper\_NN ready\_JJ on\_IN the\_DT table\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Count\_NNP again\_RB excused\_VBD himself\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD dined\_VBN out\_RP on\_IN his\_PRP$ being\_VBG away\_RB from\_IN home\_NN .\_.

But\_CC he\_PRP sat\_VBD as\_IN on\_IN the\_DT previous\_JJ night\_NN ,\_, and\_CC chatted\_VBD whilst\_IN I\_PRP ate\_VBD .\_.

After\_IN supper\_NN I\_PRP smoked\_VBD ,\_, as\_IN on\_IN the\_DT last\_JJ evening\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT Count\_NN stayed\_VBD with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, chatting\_VBG and\_CC asking\_VBG questions\_NNS on\_IN every\_DT conceivable\_JJ subject\_NN ,\_, hour\_NN after\_IN hour\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP felt\_VBD that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD getting\_VBG very\_RB late\_RB indeed\_RB ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB say\_VB anything\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP felt\_VBD under\_IN obligation\_NN to\_TO meet\_VB my\_PRP$ host\_NN 's\_POS wishes\_NNS in\_IN every\_DT way\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB sleepy\_JJ ,\_, as\_IN the\_DT long\_JJ sleep\_NN yesterday\_NN had\_VBD fortified\_VBN me\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB help\_VB experiencing\_VBG that\_DT chill\_NN which\_WDT comes\_VBZ over\_IN one\_CD at\_IN the\_DT coming\_VBG of\_IN the\_DT dawn\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT is\_VBZ like\_IN ,\_, in\_IN its\_PRP$ way\_NN ,\_, the\_DT turn\_NN of\_IN the\_DT tide\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP say\_VBP that\_IN people\_NNS who\_WP are\_VBP near\_IN death\_NN die\_NN generally\_RB at\_IN the\_DT change\_NN to\_TO the\_DT dawn\_NN or\_CC at\_IN the\_DT turn\_NN of\_IN the\_DT tide\_NN ;\_: any\_DT one\_NN who\_WP has\_VBZ when\_WRB tired\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC tied\_VBD as\_IN it\_PRP were\_VBD to\_TO his\_PRP$ post\_NN ,\_, experienced\_VBD this\_DT change\_NN in\_IN the\_DT atmosphere\_NN can\_MD well\_RB believe\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

All\_DT at\_IN once\_RB we\_PRP heard\_VBD the\_DT crow\_NN of\_IN a\_DT cock\_NN coming\_VBG up\_RP with\_IN preternatural\_JJ shrillness\_NN through\_IN the\_DT clear\_JJ morning\_NN air\_NN ;\_: Count\_NNP Dracula\_NNP ,\_, jumping\_VBG to\_TO his\_PRP$ feet\_NNS ,\_, said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Why\_WRB ,\_, there\_EX is\_VBZ the\_DT morning\_NN again\_RB !\_.

How\_WRB remiss\_VBZ I\_PRP am\_VBP to\_TO let\_VB you\_PRP stay\_VB up\_RP so\_RB long\_RB .\_.

You\_PRP must\_MD make\_VB your\_PRP$ conversation\_NN regarding\_VBG my\_PRP$ dear\_RB new\_JJ country\_NN of\_IN England\_NNP less\_RBR interesting\_JJ ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB forget\_VB how\_WRB time\_NN flies\_VBZ by\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, ''\_'' and\_CC ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT courtly\_JJ bow\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP quickly\_RB left\_VBD me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP went\_VBD into\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ room\_NN and\_CC drew\_VBD the\_DT curtains\_NNS ,\_, but\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD little\_JJ to\_TO notice\_VB ;\_: my\_PRP$ window\_NN opened\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT courtyard\_NN ,\_, all\_DT I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB was\_VBD the\_DT warm\_JJ grey\_JJ of\_IN quickening\_VBG sky\_NN .\_.

So\_RB I\_PRP pulled\_VBD the\_DT curtains\_NNS again\_RB ,\_, and\_CC have\_VBP written\_VBN of\_IN this\_DT day\_NN .\_.

8\_CD May\_NNP .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO fear\_VB as\_IN I\_PRP wrote\_VBD in\_IN this\_DT book\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD getting\_VBG too\_RB diffuse\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC now\_RB I\_PRP am\_VBP glad\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP went\_VBD into\_IN detail\_NN from\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ something\_NN so\_RB strange\_JJ about\_IN this\_DT place\_NN and\_CC all\_DT in\_IN it\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB but\_CC feel\_VB uneasy\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP wish\_VBP I\_PRP were\_VBD safe\_JJ out\_IN of\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, or\_CC that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD never\_RB come\_VBN .\_.

It\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB that\_IN this\_DT strange\_JJ night-existence\_NN is\_VBZ telling\_VBG on\_IN me\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC would\_MD that\_IN that\_DT were\_VBD all\_DT !\_.

If\_IN there\_EX were\_VBD any\_DT one\_CD to\_TO talk\_VB to\_TO I\_PRP could\_MD bear\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC there\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT one\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP only\_RB the\_DT Count\_NN to\_TO speak\_VB with\_IN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP !\_.

--\_: I\_PRP fear\_VBP I\_PRP am\_VBP myself\_PRP the\_DT only\_JJ living\_NN soul\_NN within\_IN the\_DT place\_NN .\_.

Let\_VB me\_PRP be\_VB prosaic\_JJ so\_RB far\_RB as\_IN facts\_NNS can\_MD be\_VB ;\_: it\_PRP will\_MD help\_VB me\_PRP to\_TO bear\_VB up\_RP ,\_, and\_CC imagination\_NN must\_MD not\_RB run\_VB riot\_NN with\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

If\_IN it\_PRP does\_VBZ I\_PRP am\_VBP lost\_VBN .\_.

Let\_VB me\_PRP say\_VB at\_IN once\_RB how\_WRB I\_PRP stand\_VBP --\_: or\_CC seem\_VBP to\_TO .\_.

I\_PRP only\_RB slept\_VBD a\_DT few\_JJ hours\_NNS when\_WRB I\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO bed\_NN ,\_, and\_CC feeling\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB sleep\_VB any\_DT more\_JJR ,\_, got\_VBD up\_RP .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD hung\_VBN my\_PRP$ shaving\_VBG glass\_NN by\_IN the\_DT window\_NN ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD just\_RB beginning\_VBG to\_TO shave\_VB .\_.

Suddenly\_RB I\_PRP felt\_VBD a\_DT hand\_NN on\_IN my\_PRP$ shoulder\_NN ,\_, and\_CC heard\_VBD the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS voice\_NN saying\_VBG to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, ``\_`` Good-morning\_NN .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP started\_VBD ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP amazed\_VBD me\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB seen\_VBN him\_PRP ,\_, since\_IN the\_DT reflection\_NN of\_IN the\_DT glass\_NN covered\_VBD the\_DT whole\_JJ room\_NN behind\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

In\_IN starting\_VBG I\_PRP had\_VBD cut\_VBN myself\_PRP slightly\_RB ,\_, but\_CC did\_VBD not\_RB notice\_VB it\_PRP at\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN .\_.

Having\_VBG answered\_VBN the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS salutation\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP turned\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT glass\_NN again\_RB to\_TO see\_VB how\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN mistaken\_VBN .\_.

This\_DT time\_NN there\_EX could\_MD be\_VB no\_DT error\_NN ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT man\_NN was\_VBD close\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB him\_PRP over\_IN my\_PRP$ shoulder\_NN .\_.

But\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT reflection\_NN of\_IN him\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT mirror\_NN !\_.

The\_DT whole\_JJ room\_NN behind\_IN me\_PRP was\_VBD displayed\_VBN ;\_: but\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT sign\_NN of\_IN a\_DT man\_NN in\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, except\_IN myself\_PRP .\_.

This\_DT was\_VBD startling\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, coming\_VBG on\_IN the\_DT top\_NN of\_IN so\_RB many\_JJ strange\_JJ things\_NNS ,\_, was\_VBD beginning\_VBG to\_TO increase\_VB that\_IN vague\_JJ feeling\_NN of\_IN uneasiness\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP always\_RB have\_VBP when\_WRB the\_DT Count\_NNP is\_VBZ near\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC at\_IN the\_DT instant\_NN I\_PRP saw\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT cut\_NN had\_VBD bled\_VBN a\_DT little\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT blood\_NN was\_VBD trickling\_VBG over\_IN my\_PRP$ chin\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP laid\_VBD down\_RP the\_DT razor\_NN ,\_, turning\_VBG as\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD so\_RB half\_JJ round\_NN to\_TO look\_VB for\_IN some\_DT sticking\_NN plaster\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB the\_DT Count\_NNP saw\_VBD my\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS blazed\_VBN with\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN demoniac\_NN fury\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP suddenly\_RB made\_VBD a\_DT grab\_NN at\_IN my\_PRP$ throat\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP drew\_VBD away\_RB ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ hand\_NN touched\_VBD the\_DT string\_NN of\_IN beads\_NNS which\_WDT held\_VBD the\_DT crucifix\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP made\_VBD an\_DT instant\_JJ change\_NN in\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT fury\_NN passed\_VBD so\_RB quickly\_RB that\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD hardly\_RB believe\_VB that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD ever\_RB there\_RB .\_.

``\_`` Take\_VB care\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` take\_VB care\_NN how\_WRB you\_PRP cut\_VBD yourself\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ more\_RBR dangerous\_JJ than\_IN you\_PRP think\_VBP in\_IN this\_DT country\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Then\_RB seizing\_VBG the\_DT shaving\_VBG glass\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: ``\_`` And\_CC this\_DT is\_VBZ the\_DT wretched\_JJ thing\_NN that\_WDT has\_VBZ done\_VBN the\_DT mischief\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT foul\_JJ bauble\_NN of\_IN man\_NN 's\_POS vanity\_NN .\_.

Away\_RB with\_IN it\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

and\_CC opening\_VBG the\_DT heavy\_JJ window\_NN with\_IN one\_CD wrench\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ terrible\_JJ hand\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP flung\_VBD out\_RP the\_DT glass\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT was\_VBD shattered\_VBN into\_IN a\_DT thousand\_CD pieces\_NNS on\_IN the\_DT stones\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT courtyard\_NN far\_RB below\_IN .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP withdrew\_VBD without\_IN a\_DT word\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ very\_RB annoying\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB see\_VB how\_WRB I\_PRP am\_VBP to\_TO shave\_VB ,\_, unless\_IN in\_IN my\_PRP$ watch-case\_NN or\_CC the\_DT bottom\_NN of\_IN the\_DT shaving-pot\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT is\_VBZ fortunately\_RB of\_IN metal\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP went\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT dining-room\_NN ,\_, breakfast\_NN was\_VBD prepared\_VBN ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB find\_VB the\_DT Count\_NNP anywhere\_RB .\_.

So\_RB I\_PRP breakfasted\_VBD alone\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ strange\_JJ that\_IN as\_RB yet\_RB I\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB seen\_VBN the\_DT Count\_NNP eat\_VB or\_CC drink\_VB .\_.

He\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB a\_DT very\_RB peculiar\_JJ man\_NN !\_.

After\_IN breakfast\_NN I\_PRP did\_VBD a\_DT little\_JJ exploring\_VBG in\_IN the\_DT castle\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP went\_VBD out\_RP on\_IN the\_DT stairs\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC found\_VBD a\_DT room\_NN looking\_VBG towards\_IN the\_DT South\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT view\_NN was\_VBD magnificent\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC from\_IN where\_WRB I\_PRP stood\_VBD there\_EX was\_VBD every\_DT opportunity\_NN of\_IN seeing\_VBG it\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT castle\_NN is\_VBZ on\_IN the\_DT very\_JJ edge\_NN of\_IN a\_DT terrible\_JJ precipice\_NN .\_.

A\_DT stone\_NN falling\_VBG from\_IN the\_DT window\_NN would\_MD fall\_VB a\_DT thousand\_CD feet\_NNS without\_IN touching\_VBG anything\_NN !\_.

As\_RB far\_RB as\_IN the\_DT eye\_NN can\_MD reach\_VB is\_VBZ a\_DT sea\_NN of\_IN green\_JJ tree\_NN tops\_NNS ,\_, with\_IN occasionally\_RB a\_DT deep\_JJ rift\_NN where\_WRB there\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT chasm\_NN .\_.

Here\_RB and\_CC there\_EX are\_VBP silver\_JJ threads\_NNS where\_WRB the\_DT rivers\_NNS wind\_VBP in\_IN deep\_JJ gorges\_NNS through\_IN the\_DT forests\_NNS .\_.

But\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB in\_IN heart\_NN to\_TO describe\_VB beauty\_NN ,\_, for\_IN when\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD seen\_VBN the\_DT view\_NN I\_PRP explored\_VBD further\_RBR ;\_: doors\_NNS ,\_, doors\_NNS ,\_, doors\_NNS everywhere\_RB ,\_, and\_CC all\_DT locked\_VBN and\_CC bolted\_VBN .\_.

In\_IN no\_DT place\_NN save\_VB from\_IN the\_DT windows\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT castle\_NN walls\_NNS is\_VBZ there\_RB an\_DT available\_JJ exit\_NN .\_.

The\_DT castle\_NN is\_VBZ a\_DT veritable\_JJ prison\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP a\_DT prisoner\_NN !\_.

CHAPTER\_NNP III\_NNP JONATHAN\_NNP HARKER\_NNP 'S\_POS JOURNAL\_NN --\_: continued\_VBD WHEN\_WRB I\_PRP found\_VBD that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT prisoner\_NN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN wild\_JJ feeling\_NN came\_VBD over\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP rushed\_VBD up\_IN and\_CC down\_IN the\_DT stairs\_NNS ,\_, trying\_VBG every\_DT door\_NN and\_CC peering\_VBG out\_IN of\_IN every\_DT window\_NN I\_PRP could\_MD find\_VB ;\_: but\_CC after\_IN a\_DT little\_JJ the\_DT conviction\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ helplessness\_NN overpowered\_VBD all\_DT other\_JJ feelings\_NNS .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP look\_VBP back\_RB after\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ hours\_NNS I\_PRP think\_VBP I\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN mad\_JJ for\_IN the\_DT time\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP behaved\_VBD much\_RB as\_IN a\_DT rat\_NN does\_VBZ in\_IN a\_DT trap\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, the\_DT conviction\_NN had\_VBD come\_VBN to\_TO me\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD helpless\_JJ I\_PRP sat\_VBD down\_RB quietly\_RB --\_: as\_RB quietly\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP ever\_RB done\_VBN anything\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ life\_NN --\_: and\_CC began\_VBD to\_TO think\_VB over\_IN what\_WP was\_VBD best\_JJS to\_TO be\_VB done\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP thinking\_VBG still\_RB ,\_, and\_CC as\_RB yet\_RB have\_VBP come\_VBN to\_TO no\_DT definite\_JJ conclusion\_NN .\_.

Of\_IN one\_CD thing\_NN only\_RB am\_VBP I\_PRP certain\_JJ ;\_: that\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ no\_DT use\_NN making\_VBG my\_PRP$ ideas\_NNS known\_VBN to\_TO the\_DT Count\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP knows\_VBZ well\_RB that\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP imprisoned\_VBN ;\_: and\_CC as\_IN he\_PRP has\_VBZ done\_VBN it\_PRP himself\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC has\_VBZ doubtless\_JJ his\_PRP$ own\_JJ motives\_NNS for\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP would\_MD only\_RB deceive\_VB me\_PRP if\_IN I\_PRP trusted\_VBD him\_PRP fully\_RB with\_IN the\_DT facts\_NNS .\_.

So\_RB far\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD see\_VB ,\_, my\_PRP$ only\_JJ plan\_NN will\_MD be\_VB to\_TO keep\_VB my\_PRP$ knowledge\_NN and\_CC my\_PRP$ fears\_NNS to\_TO myself\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC my\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS open\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP ,\_, I\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, either\_CC being\_VBG deceived\_VBN ,\_, like\_IN a\_DT baby\_NN ,\_, by\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ fears\_NNS ,\_, or\_CC else\_RB I\_PRP am\_VBP in\_IN desperate\_JJ straits\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC if\_IN the\_DT latter\_JJ be\_VB so\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP need\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC shall\_MD need\_VB ,\_, all\_DT my\_PRP$ brains\_NNS to\_TO get\_VB through\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD hardly\_RB come\_VBN to\_TO this\_DT conclusion\_NN when\_WRB I\_PRP heard\_VBD the\_DT great\_JJ door\_NN below\_IN shut\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC knew\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP had\_VBD returned\_VBN .\_.

He\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB come\_VB at\_IN once\_RB into\_IN the\_DT library\_NN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP went\_VBD cautiously\_RB to\_TO my\_PRP$ own\_JJ room\_NN and\_CC found\_VBD him\_PRP making\_VBG the\_DT bed\_NN .\_.

This\_DT was\_VBD odd\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC only\_RB confirmed\_VBD what\_WP I\_PRP had\_VBD all\_DT along\_RB thought\_VBN --\_: that\_IN there\_EX were\_VBD no\_DT servants\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT house\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB later\_RB I\_PRP saw\_VBD him\_PRP through\_IN the\_DT chink\_NN of\_IN the\_DT hinges\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT door\_NN laying\_VBG the\_DT table\_NN in\_IN the\_DT dining-room\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP was\_VBD assured\_VBN of\_IN it\_PRP ;\_: for\_IN if\_IN he\_PRP does\_VBZ himself\_PRP all\_PDT these\_DT menial\_JJ offices\_NNS ,\_, surely\_RB it\_PRP is\_VBZ proof\_NN that\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT one\_NN else\_RB to\_TO do\_VB them\_PRP .\_.

This\_DT gave\_VBD me\_PRP a\_DT fright\_NN ,\_, for\_IN if\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT one\_NN else\_RB in\_IN the\_DT castle\_NN ,\_, it\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN the\_DT Count\_NNP himself\_PRP who\_WP was\_VBD the\_DT driver\_NN of\_IN the\_DT coach\_NN that\_WDT brought\_VBD me\_PRP here\_RB .\_.

This\_DT is\_VBZ a\_DT terrible\_JJ thought\_NN ;\_: for\_IN if\_IN so\_RB ,\_, what\_WP does\_VBZ it\_PRP mean\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP could\_MD control\_VB the\_DT wolves\_NNS ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD ,\_, by\_IN only\_RB holding\_VBG up\_RP his\_PRP$ hand\_NN in\_IN silence\_NN .\_.

How\_WRB was\_VBD it\_PRP that\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT people\_NNS at\_IN Bistritz\_NNP and\_CC on\_IN the\_DT coach\_NN had\_VBD some\_DT terrible\_JJ fear\_NN for\_IN me\_PRP ?\_.

What\_WP meant\_VBD the\_DT giving\_VBG of\_IN the\_DT crucifix\_NN ,\_, of\_IN the\_DT garlic\_NN ,\_, of\_IN the\_DT wild\_JJ rose\_NN ,\_, of\_IN the\_DT mountain\_NN ash\_JJ ?\_.

Bless\_VB that\_DT good\_JJ ,\_, good\_JJ woman\_NN who\_WP hung\_VBD the\_DT crucifix\_NN round\_NN my\_PRP$ neck\_NN !\_.

for\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT comfort\_NN and\_CC a\_DT strength\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP whenever\_WRB I\_PRP touch\_VBP it\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ odd\_JJ that\_IN a\_DT thing\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN taught\_VBN to\_TO regard\_VB with\_IN disfavour\_NN and\_CC as\_IN idolatrous\_JJ should\_MD in\_IN a\_DT time\_NN of\_IN loneliness\_NN and\_CC trouble\_NN be\_VB of\_IN help\_NN .\_.

Is\_VBZ it\_PRP that\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ something\_NN in\_IN the\_DT essence\_NN of\_IN the\_DT thing\_NN itself\_PRP ,\_, or\_CC that\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT medium\_NN ,\_, a\_DT tangible\_JJ help\_NN ,\_, in\_IN conveying\_VBG memories\_NNS of\_IN sympathy\_NN and\_CC comfort\_NN ?\_.

Some\_DT time\_NN ,\_, if\_IN it\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB ,\_, I\_PRP must\_MD examine\_VB this\_DT matter\_NN and\_CC try\_VB to\_TO make\_VB up\_RP my\_PRP$ mind\_NN about\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT meantime\_NN I\_PRP must\_MD find\_VB out\_RP all\_DT I\_PRP can\_MD about\_IN Count\_NNP Dracula\_NNP ,\_, as\_IN it\_PRP may\_MD help\_VB me\_PRP to\_TO understand\_VB .\_.

To-night\_JJ he\_PRP may\_MD talk\_VB of\_IN himself\_PRP ,\_, if\_IN I\_PRP turn\_VBP the\_DT conversation\_NN that\_DT way\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB very\_RB careful\_JJ ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, not\_RB to\_TO awake\_RB his\_PRP$ suspicion\_NN .\_.

Midnight\_NN .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP have\_VBP had\_VBN a\_DT long\_JJ talk\_NN with\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP asked\_VBD him\_PRP a\_DT few\_JJ questions\_NNS on\_IN Transylvania\_NNP history\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP warmed\_VBD up\_RP to\_TO the\_DT subject\_NN wonderfully\_RB .\_.

In\_IN his\_PRP$ speaking\_NN of\_IN things\_NNS and\_CC people\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC especially\_RB of\_IN battles\_NNS ,\_, he\_PRP spoke\_VBD as\_IN if\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN present\_JJ at\_IN them\_PRP all\_DT .\_.

This\_DT he\_PRP afterwards\_RB explained\_VBD by\_IN saying\_VBG that\_IN to\_TO a\_DT boyar\_NN the\_DT pride\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ house\_NN and\_CC name\_NN is\_VBZ his\_PRP$ own\_JJ pride\_NN ,\_, that\_IN their\_PRP$ glory\_NN is\_VBZ his\_PRP$ glory\_NN ,\_, that\_IN their\_PRP$ fate\_NN is\_VBZ his\_PRP$ fate\_NN .\_.

Whenever\_NNP he\_PRP spoke\_VBD of\_IN his\_PRP$ house\_NN he\_PRP always\_RB said\_VBD ``\_`` we\_PRP ,\_, ''\_'' and\_CC spoke\_VBD almost\_RB in\_IN the\_DT plural\_NN ,\_, like\_IN a\_DT king\_NN speaking\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP wish\_VBP I\_PRP could\_MD put\_VB down\_RP all\_DT he\_PRP said\_VBD exactly\_RB as\_IN he\_PRP said\_VBD it\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN to\_TO me\_PRP it\_PRP was\_VBD most\_RBS fascinating\_JJ .\_.

It\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO have\_VB in\_IN it\_PRP a\_DT whole\_JJ history\_NN of\_IN the\_DT country\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP grew\_VBD excited\_JJ as\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC walked\_VBD about\_IN the\_DT room\_NN pulling\_VBG his\_PRP$ great\_JJ white\_JJ moustache\_NN and\_CC grasping\_VBG anything\_NN on\_IN which\_WDT he\_PRP laid\_VBD his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS as\_IN though\_IN he\_PRP would\_MD crush\_VB it\_PRP by\_IN main\_JJ strength\_NN .\_.

One\_CD thing\_NN he\_PRP said\_VBD which\_WDT I\_PRP shall\_MD put\_VB down\_RP as\_RB nearly\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD ;\_: for\_IN it\_PRP tells\_VBZ in\_IN its\_PRP$ way\_NN the\_DT story\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ race\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` We\_PRP Szekelys\_NNPS have\_VBP a\_DT right\_NN to\_TO be\_VB proud\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN in\_IN our\_PRP$ veins\_NNS flows\_VBZ the\_DT blood\_NN of\_IN many\_JJ brave\_VBP races\_NNS who\_WP fought\_VBD as\_IN the\_DT lion\_NN fights\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN lordship\_NN .\_.

Here\_RB ,\_, in\_IN the\_DT whirlpool\_NN of\_IN European\_JJ races\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT Ugric\_NNP tribe\_NN bore\_VBD down\_RB from\_IN Iceland\_NNP the\_DT fighting\_NN spirit\_NN which\_WDT Thor\_NNP and\_CC Wodin\_NNP gave\_VBD them\_PRP ,\_, which\_WDT their\_PRP$ Berserkers\_NNS displayed\_VBD to\_TO such\_JJ fell\_JJ intent\_NN on\_IN the\_DT seaboards\_NNS of\_IN Europe\_NNP ,\_, ay\_NN ,\_, and\_CC of\_IN Asia\_NNP and\_CC Africa\_NNP too\_RB ,\_, till\_IN the\_DT peoples\_NNS thought\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT were-wolves\_NNS themselves\_PRP had\_VBD come\_VBN .\_.

Here\_RB ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB they\_PRP came\_VBD ,\_, they\_PRP found\_VBD the\_DT Huns\_NNP ,\_, whose\_WP$ warlike\_JJ fury\_NN had\_VBD swept\_VBN the\_DT earth\_NN like\_IN a\_DT living\_NN flame\_NN ,\_, till\_IN the\_DT dying\_VBG peoples\_NNS held\_VBD that\_IN in\_IN their\_PRP$ veins\_NNS ran\_VBD the\_DT blood\_NN of\_IN those\_DT old\_JJ witches\_NNS ,\_, who\_WP ,\_, expelled\_VBN from\_IN Scythia\_NNP had\_VBD mated\_VBN with\_IN the\_DT devils\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT desert\_NN .\_.

Fools\_NNS ,\_, fools\_NNS !\_.

What\_WDT devil\_NNP or\_CC what\_WDT witch\_NN was\_VBD ever\_RB so\_RB great\_JJ as\_IN Attila\_NNP ,\_, whose\_WP$ blood\_NN is\_VBZ in\_IN these\_DT veins\_NNS ?\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP held\_VBD up\_RP his\_PRP$ arms\_NNS .\_.

``\_`` Is\_VBZ it\_PRP a\_DT wonder\_NN that\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD a\_DT conquering\_VBG race\_NN ;\_: that\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD proud\_JJ ;\_: that\_IN when\_WRB the\_DT Magyar\_NNP ,\_, the\_DT Lombard\_NNP ,\_, the\_DT Avar\_NNP ,\_, the\_DT Bulgar\_NNP ,\_, or\_CC the\_DT Turk\_NNP poured\_VBD his\_PRP$ thousands\_NNS on\_IN our\_PRP$ frontiers\_NNS ,\_, we\_PRP drove\_VBD them\_PRP back\_RP ?\_.

Is\_VBZ it\_PRP strange\_JJ that\_IN when\_WRB Arpad\_NNP and\_CC his\_PRP$ legions\_NNS swept\_VBD through\_IN the\_DT Hungarian\_JJ fatherland\_NN he\_PRP found\_VBD us\_PRP here\_RB when\_WRB he\_PRP reached\_VBD the\_DT frontier\_NN ;\_: that\_IN the\_DT Honfoglalas\_NNP was\_VBD completed\_VBN there\_RB ?\_.

And\_CC when\_WRB the\_DT Hungarian\_JJ flood\_NN swept\_VBD eastward\_RB ,\_, the\_DT Szekelys\_NNPS were\_VBD claimed\_VBN as\_IN kindred\_NN by\_IN the\_DT victorious\_JJ Magyars\_NNPS ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO us\_PRP for\_IN centuries\_NNS was\_VBD trusted\_VBN the\_DT guarding\_VBG of\_IN the\_DT frontier\_NN of\_IN Turkey-land\_NN ;\_: ay\_NN ,\_, and\_CC more\_JJR than\_IN that\_DT ,\_, endless\_JJ duty\_NN of\_IN the\_DT frontier\_NN guard\_NN ,\_, for\_IN ,\_, as\_IN the\_DT Turks\_NNPS say\_VBP ,\_, `\_`` water\_NN sleeps\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC enemy\_NN is\_VBZ sleepless\_JJ .\_. '\_''

Who\_WP more\_RBR gladly\_RB than\_IN we\_PRP throughout\_IN the\_DT Four\_NNP Nations\_NNP received\_VBD the\_DT `\_`` bloody\_JJ sword\_NN ,\_, '\_'' or\_CC at\_IN its\_PRP$ warlike\_JJ call\_NN flocked\_VBD quicker\_JJR to\_TO the\_DT standard\_NN of\_IN the\_DT King\_NNP ?\_.

When\_WRB was\_VBD redeemed\_VBN that\_IN great\_JJ shame\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ nation\_NN ,\_, the\_DT shame\_NN of\_IN Cassova\_NNP ,\_, when\_WRB the\_DT flags\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT Wallach\_NNP and\_CC the\_DT Magyar\_NNP went\_VBD down\_RB beneath\_IN the\_DT Crescent\_NNP ?\_.

Who\_WP was\_VBD it\_PRP but\_CC one\_CD of\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ race\_NN who\_WP as\_IN Voivode\_NNP crossed\_VBD the\_DT Danube\_NNP and\_CC beat\_VB the\_DT Turk\_NNP on\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ ground\_NN ?\_.

This\_DT was\_VBD a\_DT Dracula\_NNP indeed\_RB !\_.

Woe\_NN was\_VBD it\_PRP that\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ unworthy\_JJ brother\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB he\_PRP had\_VBD fallen\_VBN ,\_, sold\_VBD his\_PRP$ people\_NNS to\_TO the\_DT Turk\_NNP and\_CC brought\_VBD the\_DT shame\_NN of\_IN slavery\_NN on\_IN them\_PRP !\_.

Was\_VBD it\_PRP not\_RB this\_DT Dracula\_NNP ,\_, indeed\_RB ,\_, who\_WP inspired\_VBD that\_IN other\_JJ of\_IN his\_PRP$ race\_NN who\_WP in\_IN a\_DT later\_JJ age\_NN again\_RB and\_CC again\_RB brought\_VBD his\_PRP$ forces\_NNS over\_IN the\_DT great\_JJ river\_NN into\_IN Turkey-land\_NN ;\_: who\_WP ,\_, when\_WRB he\_PRP was\_VBD beaten\_VBN back\_RB ,\_, came\_VBD again\_RB ,\_, and\_CC again\_RB ,\_, and\_CC again\_RB ,\_, though\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO come\_VB alone\_RB from\_IN the\_DT bloody\_JJ field\_NN where\_WRB his\_PRP$ troops\_NNS were\_VBD being\_VBG slaughtered\_VBN ,\_, since\_IN he\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN he\_PRP alone\_RB could\_MD ultimately\_RB triumph\_NN !\_.

They\_PRP said\_VBD that\_IN he\_PRP thought\_VBD only\_RB of\_IN himself\_PRP .\_.

Bah\_NN !\_.

what\_WDT good\_NN are\_VBP peasants\_NNS without\_IN a\_DT leader\_NN ?\_.

Where\_WRB ends\_VBZ the\_DT war\_NN without\_IN a\_DT brain\_NN and\_CC heart\_NN to\_TO conduct\_VB it\_PRP ?\_.

Again\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB ,\_, after\_IN the\_DT battle\_NN of\_IN Mohács\_NNP ,\_, we\_PRP threw\_VBD off\_RP the\_DT Hungarian\_JJ yoke\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP of\_IN the\_DT Dracula\_NNP blood\_NN were\_VBD amongst\_IN their\_PRP$ leaders\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN our\_PRP$ spirit\_NN would\_MD not\_RB brook\_VB that\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD not\_RB free\_JJ .\_.

Ah\_NN ,\_, young\_JJ sir\_NN ,\_, the\_DT Szekelys\_NNP --\_: and\_CC the\_DT Dracula\_NNP as\_IN their\_PRP$ heart\_NN 's\_POS blood\_NN ,\_, their\_PRP$ brains\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC their\_PRP$ swords\_NNS --\_: can\_MD boast\_VB a\_DT record\_NN that\_IN mushroom\_NN growths\_NNS like\_IN the\_DT Hapsburgs\_NNPS and\_CC the\_DT Romanoffs\_NNPS can\_MD never\_RB reach\_VB .\_.

The\_DT warlike\_JJ days\_NNS are\_VBP over\_RB .\_.

Blood\_NNP is\_VBZ too\_RB precious\_JJ a\_DT thing\_NN in\_IN these\_DT days\_NNS of\_IN dishonourable\_JJ peace\_NN ;\_: and\_CC the\_DT glories\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT great\_JJ races\_NNS are\_VBP as\_IN a\_DT tale\_NN that\_WDT is\_VBZ told\_VBN .\_. ''\_''

It\_PRP was\_VBD by\_IN this\_DT time\_NN close\_NN on\_IN morning\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO bed\_NN .\_.

-LRB-\_-LRB- Mem.\_NNP ,\_, this\_DT diary\_NN seems\_VBZ horribly\_RB like\_IN the\_DT beginning\_NN of\_IN the\_DT ``\_`` Arabian\_NNP Nights\_NNPS ,\_, ''\_'' for\_IN everything\_NN has\_VBZ to\_TO break\_VB off\_RP at\_IN cockcrow\_NN --\_: or\_CC like\_IN the\_DT ghost\_NN of\_IN Hamlet\_NNP 's\_POS father\_NN .\_. -RRB-\_-RRB-

12\_CD May\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Let\_VB me\_PRP begin\_VB with\_IN facts\_NNS --\_: bare\_JJ ,\_, meagre\_JJ facts\_NNS ,\_, verified\_VBN by\_IN books\_NNS and\_CC figures\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC of\_IN which\_WDT there\_EX can\_MD be\_VB no\_DT doubt\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB confuse\_VB them\_PRP with\_IN experiences\_NNS which\_WDT will\_MD have\_VB to\_TO rest\_VB on\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ observation\_NN ,\_, or\_CC my\_PRP$ memory\_NN of\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

Last\_JJ evening\_NN when\_WRB the\_DT Count\_NNP came\_VBD from\_IN his\_PRP$ room\_NN he\_PRP began\_VBD by\_IN asking\_VBG me\_PRP questions\_NNS on\_IN legal\_JJ matters\_NNS and\_CC on\_IN the\_DT doing\_VBG of\_IN certain\_JJ kinds\_NNS of\_IN business\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD spent\_VBN the\_DT day\_NN wearily\_RB over\_IN books\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, simply\_RB to\_TO keep\_VB my\_PRP$ mind\_NN occupied\_VBD ,\_, went\_VBD over\_IN some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT matters\_NNS I\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN examined\_VBN in\_IN at\_IN Lincoln\_NNP 's\_POS Inn\_NNP .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT certain\_JJ method\_NN in\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS inquiries\_NNS ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP shall\_MD try\_VB to\_TO put\_VB them\_PRP down\_RP in\_IN sequence\_NN ;\_: the\_DT knowledge\_NN may\_MD somehow\_RB or\_CC some\_DT time\_NN be\_VB useful\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

First\_RB ,\_, he\_PRP asked\_VBD if\_IN a\_DT man\_NN in\_IN England\_NNP might\_MD have\_VB two\_CD solicitors\_NNS or\_CC more\_JJR .\_.

I\_PRP told\_VBD him\_PRP he\_PRP might\_MD have\_VB a\_DT dozen\_NN if\_IN he\_PRP wished\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC that\_IN it\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB be\_VB wise\_JJ to\_TO have\_VB more\_JJR than\_IN one\_CD solicitor\_NN engaged\_VBD in\_IN one\_CD transaction\_NN ,\_, as\_IN only\_JJ one\_NN could\_MD act\_VB at\_IN a\_DT time\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN to\_TO change\_VB would\_MD be\_VB certain\_JJ to\_TO militate\_VB against\_IN his\_PRP$ interest\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP seemed\_VBD thoroughly\_RB to\_TO understand\_VB ,\_, and\_CC went\_VBD on\_RP to\_TO ask\_VB if\_IN there\_EX would\_MD be\_VB any\_DT practical\_JJ difficulty\_NN in\_IN having\_VBG one\_CD man\_NN to\_TO attend\_VB ,\_, say\_VB ,\_, to\_TO banking\_NN ,\_, and\_CC another\_DT to\_TO look\_VB after\_IN shipping\_NN ,\_, in\_IN case\_NN local\_JJ help\_NN were\_VBD needed\_VBN in\_IN a\_DT place\_NN far\_RB from\_IN the\_DT home\_NN of\_IN the\_DT banking\_NN solicitor\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP asked\_VBD him\_PRP to\_TO explain\_VB more\_RBR fully\_RB ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP might\_MD not\_RB by\_IN any\_DT chance\_NN mislead\_VBD him\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP shall\_MD illustrate\_VB .\_.

Your\_PRP$ friend\_NN and\_CC mine\_NN ,\_, Mr.\_NNP Peter\_NNP Hawkins\_NNP ,\_, from\_IN under\_IN the\_DT shadow\_NN of\_IN your\_PRP$ beautiful\_JJ cathedral\_NN at\_IN Exeter\_NNP ,\_, which\_WDT is\_VBZ far\_RB from\_IN London\_NNP ,\_, buys\_VBZ for\_IN me\_PRP through\_IN your\_PRP$ good\_JJ self\_NN my\_PRP$ place\_NN at\_IN London\_NNP .\_.

Good\_JJ !\_.

Now\_RB here\_RB let\_VB me\_PRP say\_VB frankly\_RB ,\_, lest\_IN you\_PRP should\_MD think\_VB it\_PRP strange\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP sought\_VBN the\_DT services\_NNS of\_IN one\_CD so\_RB far\_RB off\_RP from\_IN London\_NNP instead\_RB of\_IN some\_DT one\_CD resident\_NN there\_RB ,\_, that\_IN my\_PRP$ motive\_NN was\_VBD that\_IN no\_DT local\_JJ interest\_NN might\_MD be\_VB served\_VBN save\_IN my\_PRP$ wish\_NN only\_RB ;\_: and\_CC as\_IN one\_CD of\_IN London\_NNP residence\_NN might\_NN ,\_, perhaps\_RB ,\_, have\_VBP some\_DT purpose\_NN of\_IN himself\_PRP or\_CC friend\_NN to\_TO serve\_VB ,\_, I\_PRP went\_VBD thus\_RB afield\_JJ to\_TO seek\_VB my\_PRP$ agent\_NN ,\_, whose\_WP$ labours\_NNS should\_MD be\_VB only\_RB to\_TO my\_PRP$ interest\_NN .\_.

Now\_RB ,\_, suppose\_VB I\_PRP ,\_, who\_WP have\_VBP much\_JJ of\_IN affairs\_NNS ,\_, wish\_VBP to\_TO ship\_VB goods\_NNS ,\_, say\_VB ,\_, to\_TO Newcastle\_NNP ,\_, or\_CC Durham\_NNP ,\_, or\_CC Harwich\_NNP ,\_, or\_CC Dover\_NNP ,\_, might\_MD it\_PRP not\_RB be\_VB that\_IN it\_PRP could\_MD with\_IN more\_JJR ease\_NN be\_VB done\_VBN by\_IN consigning\_VBG to\_TO one\_CD in\_IN these\_DT ports\_NNS ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP answered\_VBD that\_IN certainly\_RB it\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB most\_RBS easy\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC that\_IN we\_PRP solicitors\_NNS had\_VBD a\_DT system\_NN of\_IN agency\_NN one\_CD for\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN local\_JJ work\_NN could\_MD be\_VB done\_VBN locally\_RB on\_IN instruction\_NN from\_IN any\_DT solicitor\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN the\_DT client\_NN ,\_, simply\_RB placing\_VBG himself\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT hands\_NNS of\_IN one\_CD man\_NN ,\_, could\_MD have\_VB his\_PRP$ wishes\_NNS carried\_VBD out\_RP by\_IN him\_PRP without\_IN further\_JJ trouble\_NN .\_.

``\_`` But\_CC ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD he\_PRP ,\_, ``\_`` I\_PRP could\_MD be\_VB at\_IN liberty\_NN to\_TO direct\_VB myself\_PRP .\_.

Is\_VBZ it\_PRP not\_RB so\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Of\_IN course\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP replied\_VBD ;\_: and\_CC ``\_`` such\_JJ is\_VBZ often\_RB done\_VBN by\_IN men\_NNS of\_IN business\_NN ,\_, who\_WP do\_VBP not\_RB like\_VB the\_DT whole\_NN of\_IN their\_PRP$ affairs\_NNS to\_TO be\_VB known\_VBN by\_IN any\_DT one\_CD person\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Good\_JJ !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB went\_VBD on\_RP to\_TO ask\_VB about\_IN the\_DT means\_NNS of\_IN making\_VBG consignments\_NNS and\_CC the\_DT forms\_NNS to\_TO be\_VB gone\_VBN through\_IN ,\_, and\_CC of\_IN all\_DT sorts\_NNS of\_IN difficulties\_NNS which\_WDT might\_MD arise\_VB ,\_, but\_CC by\_IN forethought\_NN could\_MD be\_VB guarded\_VBN against\_IN .\_.

I\_PRP explained\_VBD all\_PDT these\_DT things\_NNS to\_TO him\_PRP to\_TO the\_DT best\_JJS of\_IN my\_PRP$ ability\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP certainly\_RB left\_VBD me\_PRP under\_IN the\_DT impression\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB made\_VBN a\_DT wonderful\_JJ solicitor\_NN ,\_, for\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD nothing\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB think\_VB of\_IN or\_CC foresee\_VB .\_.

For\_IN a\_DT man\_NN who\_WP was\_VBD never\_RB in\_IN the\_DT country\_NN ,\_, and\_CC who\_WP did\_VBD not\_RB evidently\_RB do\_VB much\_RB in\_IN the\_DT way\_NN of\_IN business\_NN ,\_, his\_PRP$ knowledge\_NN and\_CC acumen\_NNS were\_VBD wonderful\_JJ .\_.

When\_WRB he\_PRP had\_VBD satisfied\_VBN himself\_PRP on\_IN these\_DT points\_NNS of\_IN which\_WDT he\_PRP had\_VBD spoken\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP had\_VBD verified\_VBN all\_RB as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD by\_IN the\_DT books\_NNS available\_JJ ,\_, he\_PRP suddenly\_RB stood\_VBD up\_RB and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Have\_VBP you\_PRP written\_VBN since\_IN your\_PRP$ first\_JJ letter\_NN to\_TO our\_PRP$ friend\_NN Mr.\_NNP Peter\_NNP Hawkins\_NNP ,\_, or\_CC to\_TO any\_DT other\_JJ ?\_. ''\_''

It\_PRP was\_VBD with\_IN some\_DT bitterness\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ heart\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP answered\_VBD that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB ,\_, that\_IN as\_IN yet\_RB I\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB seen\_VBN any\_DT opportunity\_NN of\_IN sending\_VBG letters\_NNS to\_TO anybody\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Then\_RB write\_VB now\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ young\_JJ friend\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, laying\_VBG a\_DT heavy\_JJ hand\_NN on\_IN my\_PRP$ shoulder\_NN :\_: ``\_`` write\_VB to\_TO our\_PRP$ friend\_NN and\_CC to\_TO any\_DT other\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC say\_VB ,\_, if\_IN it\_PRP will\_MD please\_VB you\_PRP ,\_, that\_IN you\_PRP shall\_MD stay\_VB with\_IN me\_PRP until\_IN a\_DT month\_NN from\_IN now\_RB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Do\_VBP you\_PRP wish\_VB me\_PRP to\_TO stay\_VB so\_RB long\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP asked\_VBD ,\_, for\_IN my\_PRP$ heart\_NN grew\_VBD cold\_JJ at\_IN the\_DT thought\_NN .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP desire\_VBP it\_PRP much\_RB ;\_: nay\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP will\_MD take\_VB no\_DT refusal\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB your\_PRP$ master\_NN ,\_, employer\_NN ,\_, what\_WP you\_PRP will\_MD ,\_, engaged\_VBD that\_IN someone\_NN should\_MD come\_VB on\_IN his\_PRP$ behalf\_NN ,\_, it\_PRP was\_VBD understood\_VBN that\_IN my\_PRP$ needs\_NNS only\_RB were\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB consulted\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB stinted\_VBN .\_.

Is\_VBZ it\_PRP not\_RB so\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

What\_WP could\_MD I\_PRP do\_VB but\_CC bow\_VB acceptance\_NN ?\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD Mr.\_NNP Hawkins\_NNP 's\_POS interest\_NN ,\_, not\_RB mine\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO think\_VB of\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, not\_RB myself\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC besides\_IN ,\_, while\_IN Count\_NNP Dracula\_NNP was\_VBD speaking\_VBG ,\_, there\_EX was\_VBD that\_IN in\_IN his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS and\_CC in\_IN his\_PRP$ bearing\_NN which\_WDT made\_VBD me\_PRP remember\_VB that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT prisoner\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN if\_IN I\_PRP wished\_VBD it\_PRP I\_PRP could\_MD have\_VB no\_DT choice\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Count\_NNP saw\_VBD his\_PRP$ victory\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ bow\_NN ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ mastery\_NN in\_IN the\_DT trouble\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP began\_VBD at\_IN once\_RB to\_TO use\_VB them\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC in\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ smooth\_NN ,\_, resistless\_JJ way\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP pray\_VBP you\_PRP ,\_, my\_PRP$ good\_JJ young\_JJ friend\_NN ,\_, that\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB discourse\_NN of\_IN things\_NNS other\_JJ than\_IN business\_NN in\_IN your\_PRP$ letters\_NNS .\_.

It\_PRP will\_MD doubtless\_RB please\_VB your\_PRP$ friends\_NNS to\_TO know\_VB that\_IN you\_PRP are\_VBP well\_RB ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN you\_PRP look\_VBP forward\_RB to\_TO getting\_VBG home\_NN to\_TO them\_PRP .\_.

Is\_VBZ it\_PRP not\_RB so\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

As\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD he\_PRP handed\_VBD me\_PRP three\_CD sheets\_NNS of\_IN note-paper\_NN and\_CC three\_CD envelopes\_NNS .\_.

They\_PRP were\_VBD all\_DT of\_IN the\_DT thinnest\_JJS foreign\_JJ post\_NN ,\_, and\_CC looking\_VBG at\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, then\_RB at\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC noticing\_VBG his\_PRP$ quiet\_JJ smile\_NN ,\_, with\_IN the\_DT sharp\_JJ ,\_, canine\_JJ teeth\_NNS lying\_VBG over\_IN the\_DT red\_JJ underlip\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP understood\_VBD as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN if\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD spoken\_VBN that\_IN I\_PRP should\_MD be\_VB careful\_JJ what\_WP I\_PRP wrote\_VBD ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB able\_JJ to\_TO read\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

So\_RB I\_PRP determined\_VBD to\_TO write\_VB only\_RB formal\_JJ notes\_NNS now\_RB ,\_, but\_CC to\_TO write\_VB fully\_RB to\_TO Mr.\_NNP Hawkins\_NNP in\_IN secret\_NN ,\_, and\_CC also\_RB to\_TO Mina\_NNP ,\_, for\_IN to\_TO her\_PRP$ I\_PRP could\_MD write\_VB in\_IN shorthand\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT would\_MD puzzle\_VB the\_DT Count\_NNP ,\_, if\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD see\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD written\_VBN my\_PRP$ two\_CD letters\_NNS I\_PRP sat\_VBD quiet\_JJ ,\_, reading\_VBG a\_DT book\_NN whilst\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP wrote\_VBD several\_JJ notes\_NNS ,\_, referring\_VBG as\_IN he\_PRP wrote\_VBD them\_PRP to\_TO some\_DT books\_NNS on\_IN his\_PRP$ table\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP took\_VBD up\_RP my\_PRP$ two\_CD and\_CC placed\_VBD them\_PRP with\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC put\_VBN by\_IN his\_PRP$ writing\_VBG materials\_NNS ,\_, after\_IN which\_WDT ,\_, the\_DT instant\_NN the\_DT door\_NN had\_VBD closed\_VBN behind\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP leaned\_VBD over\_RB and\_CC looked\_VBD at\_IN the\_DT letters\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT were\_VBD face\_VB down\_RP on\_IN the\_DT table\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP felt\_VBD no\_DT compunction\_NN in\_IN doing\_VBG so\_RB ,\_, for\_IN under\_IN the\_DT circumstances\_NNS I\_PRP felt\_VBD that\_IN I\_PRP should\_MD protect\_VB myself\_PRP in\_IN every\_DT way\_NN I\_PRP could\_MD .\_.

One\_CD of\_IN the\_DT letters\_NNS was\_VBD directed\_VBN to\_TO Samuel\_NNP F.\_NNP Billington\_NNP ,\_, No.\_NNP 7\_CD ,\_, The\_DT Crescent\_NNP ,\_, Whitby\_NNP ,\_, another\_DT to\_TO Herr\_NNP Leutner\_NNP ,\_, Varna\_NNP ;\_: the\_DT third\_JJ was\_VBD to\_TO Coutts\_NNP &\_CC Co.\_NNP ,\_, London\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT fourth\_JJ to\_TO Herren\_NNP Klopstock\_NNP &\_CC Billreuth\_NNP ,\_, bankers\_NNS ,\_, Buda-Pesth\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT second\_JJ and\_CC fourth\_JJ were\_VBD unsealed\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD just\_RB about\_IN to\_TO look\_VB at\_IN them\_PRP when\_WRB I\_PRP saw\_VBD the\_DT door-handle\_JJ move\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP sank\_VBD back\_RB in\_IN my\_PRP$ seat\_NN ,\_, having\_VBG just\_RB had\_VBD time\_NN to\_TO replace\_VB the\_DT letters\_NNS as\_IN they\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN and\_CC to\_TO resume\_VB my\_PRP$ book\_NN before\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP ,\_, holding\_VBG still\_RB another\_DT letter\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ hand\_NN ,\_, entered\_VBD the\_DT room\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP took\_VBD up\_RP the\_DT letters\_NNS on\_IN the\_DT table\_NN and\_CC stamped\_VBD them\_PRP carefully\_RB ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB turning\_VBG to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP trust\_VBP you\_PRP will\_MD forgive\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP much\_JJ work\_NN to\_TO do\_VB in\_IN private\_JJ this\_DT evening\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP will\_MD ,\_, I\_PRP hope\_VBP ,\_, find\_VBP all\_DT things\_NNS as\_IN you\_PRP wish\_VBP .\_. ''\_''

At\_IN the\_DT door\_NN he\_PRP turned\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC after\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN 's\_POS pause\_NN said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Let\_VB me\_PRP advise\_VB you\_PRP ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB young\_JJ friend\_NN --\_: nay\_NN ,\_, let\_VB me\_PRP warn\_VB you\_PRP with\_IN all\_DT seriousness\_NN ,\_, that\_WDT should\_MD you\_PRP leave\_VB these\_DT rooms\_NNS you\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB by\_IN any\_DT chance\_NN go\_VB to\_TO sleep\_VB in\_IN any\_DT other\_JJ part\_NN of\_IN the\_DT castle\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ old\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC has\_VBZ many\_JJ memories\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX are\_VBP bad\_JJ dreams\_NNS for\_IN those\_DT who\_WP sleep\_VBP unwisely\_RB .\_.

Be\_VB warned\_VBN !\_.

Should\_MD sleep\_VB now\_RB or\_CC ever\_RB overcome\_VB you\_PRP ,\_, or\_CC be\_VB like\_IN to\_TO do\_VB ,\_, then\_RB haste\_NN to\_TO your\_PRP$ own\_JJ chamber\_NN or\_CC to\_TO these\_DT rooms\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN your\_PRP$ rest\_NN will\_MD then\_RB be\_VB safe\_JJ .\_.

But\_CC if\_IN you\_PRP be\_VB not\_RB careful\_JJ in\_IN this\_DT respect\_NN ,\_, then\_RB ''\_'' --\_: He\_PRP finished\_VBD his\_PRP$ speech\_NN in\_IN a\_DT gruesome\_JJ way\_NN ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP motioned\_VBD with\_IN his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS as\_IN if\_IN he\_PRP were\_VBD washing\_VBG them\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP quite\_RB understood\_VBD ;\_: my\_PRP$ only\_JJ doubt\_NN was\_VBD as\_IN to\_TO whether\_IN any\_DT dream\_NN could\_MD be\_VB more\_RBR terrible\_JJ than\_IN the\_DT unnatural\_JJ ,\_, horrible\_JJ net\_NN of\_IN gloom\_NN and\_CC mystery\_NN which\_WDT seemed\_VBD closing\_VBG around\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

Later\_RB .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP endorse\_VBP the\_DT last\_JJ words\_NNS written\_VBN ,\_, but\_CC this\_DT time\_NN there\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT doubt\_NN in\_IN question\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB fear\_VB to\_TO sleep\_VB in\_IN any\_DT place\_NN where\_WRB he\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP placed\_VBN the\_DT crucifix\_NN over\_IN the\_DT head\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ bed\_NN --\_: I\_PRP imagine\_VBP that\_IN my\_PRP$ rest\_NN is\_VBZ thus\_RB freer\_JJR from\_IN dreams\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC there\_EX it\_PRP shall\_MD remain\_VB .\_.

When\_WRB he\_PRP left\_VBD me\_PRP I\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO my\_PRP$ room\_NN .\_.

After\_IN a\_DT little\_JJ while\_NN ,\_, not\_RB hearing\_VBG any\_DT sound\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP came\_VBD out\_RB and\_CC went\_VBD up\_RP the\_DT stone\_NN stair\_NN to\_TO where\_WRB I\_PRP could\_MD look\_VB out\_RP towards\_IN the\_DT South\_NNP .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD some\_DT sense\_NN of\_IN freedom\_NN in\_IN the\_DT vast\_JJ expanse\_NN ,\_, inaccessible\_JJ though\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN compared\_VBN with\_IN the\_DT narrow\_JJ darkness\_NN of\_IN the\_DT courtyard\_NN .\_.

Looking\_VBG out\_RP on\_IN this\_DT ,\_, I\_PRP felt\_VBD that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD indeed\_RB in\_IN prison\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO want\_VB a\_DT breath\_NN of\_IN fresh\_JJ air\_NN ,\_, though\_IN it\_PRP were\_VBD of\_IN the\_DT night\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP beginning\_VBG to\_TO feel\_VB this\_DT nocturnal\_JJ existence\_NN tell\_VB on\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ destroying\_VBG my\_PRP$ nerve\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP start\_VBP at\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ shadow\_NN ,\_, and\_CC am\_RB full\_JJ of\_IN all\_DT sorts\_NNS of\_IN horrible\_JJ imaginings\_NNS .\_.

God\_NNP knows\_VBZ that\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ ground\_NN for\_IN my\_PRP$ terrible\_JJ fear\_NN in\_IN this\_DT accursed\_JJ place\_NN !\_.

I\_PRP looked\_VBD out\_RP over\_IN the\_DT beautiful\_JJ expanse\_NN ,\_, bathed\_VBN in\_IN soft\_JJ yellow\_JJ moonlight\_NN till\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD almost\_RB as\_RB light\_JJ as\_IN day\_NN .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT soft\_JJ light\_NN the\_DT distant\_JJ hills\_NNS became\_VBD melted\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT shadows\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT valleys\_NNS and\_CC gorges\_NNS of\_IN velvety\_JJ blackness\_NN .\_.

The\_DT mere\_JJ beauty\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO cheer\_VB me\_PRP ;\_: there\_EX was\_VBD peace\_NN and\_CC comfort\_NN in\_IN every\_DT breath\_NN I\_PRP drew\_VBD .\_.

As\_IN I\_PRP leaned\_VBD from\_IN the\_DT window\_NN my\_PRP$ eye\_NN was\_VBD caught\_VBN by\_IN something\_NN moving\_VBG a\_DT storey\_NN below\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC somewhat\_RB to\_TO my\_PRP$ left\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB I\_PRP imagined\_VBD ,\_, from\_IN the\_DT order\_NN of\_IN the\_DT rooms\_NNS ,\_, that\_IN the\_DT windows\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS own\_JJ room\_NN would\_MD look\_VB out\_RP .\_.

The\_DT window\_NN at\_IN which\_WDT I\_PRP stood\_VBD was\_VBD tall\_JJ and\_CC deep\_JJ ,\_, stone-mullioned\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC though\_IN weatherworn\_JJ ,\_, was\_VBD still\_RB complete\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP was\_VBD evidently\_RB many\_JJ a\_DT day\_NN since\_IN the\_DT case\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN there\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP drew\_VBD back\_RB behind\_IN the\_DT stonework\_NN ,\_, and\_CC looked\_VBD carefully\_RB out\_RB .\_.

What\_WP I\_PRP saw\_VBD was\_VBD the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS head\_NN coming\_VBG out\_RP from\_IN the\_DT window\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB see\_VB the\_DT face\_NN ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP knew\_VBD the\_DT man\_NN by\_IN the\_DT neck\_NN and\_CC the\_DT movement\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ back\_NN and\_CC arms\_NNS .\_.

In\_IN any\_DT case\_NN I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB mistake\_NN the\_DT hands\_NNS which\_WDT I\_PRP had\_VBD had\_VBN so\_RB many\_JJ opportunities\_NNS of\_IN studying\_VBG .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD at\_IN first\_JJ interested\_JJ and\_CC somewhat\_RB amused\_VBN ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ wonderful\_JJ how\_WRB small\_JJ a\_DT matter\_NN will\_MD interest\_VB and\_CC amuse\_VB a\_DT man\_NN when\_WRB he\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT prisoner\_NN .\_.

But\_CC my\_PRP$ very\_JJ feelings\_NNS changed\_VBN to\_TO repulsion\_NN and\_CC terror\_NN when\_WRB I\_PRP saw\_VBD the\_DT whole\_JJ man\_NN slowly\_RB emerge\_VBP from\_IN the\_DT window\_NN and\_CC begin\_VB to\_TO crawl\_VB down\_RP the\_DT castle\_NN wall\_NN over\_IN that\_DT dreadful\_JJ abyss\_NN ,\_, face\_VBP down\_RP with\_IN his\_PRP$ cloak\_NN spreading\_VBG out\_RP around\_IN him\_PRP like\_IN great\_JJ wings\_NNS .\_.

At\_IN first\_RB I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB believe\_VB my\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP thought\_VBD it\_PRP was\_VBD some\_DT trick\_NN of\_IN the\_DT moonlight\_NN ,\_, some\_DT weird\_JJ effect\_NN of\_IN shadow\_NN ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP kept\_VBD looking\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP could\_MD be\_VB no\_DT delusion\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP saw\_VBD the\_DT fingers\_NNS and\_CC toes\_NNS grasp\_VBP the\_DT corners\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT stones\_NNS ,\_, worn\_VBN clear\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT mortar\_NN by\_IN the\_DT stress\_NN of\_IN years\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC by\_IN thus\_RB using\_VBG every\_DT projection\_NN and\_CC inequality\_NN move\_NN downwards\_VBZ with\_IN considerable\_JJ speed\_NN ,\_, just\_RB as\_IN a\_DT lizard\_NN moves\_VBZ along\_IN a\_DT wall\_NN .\_.

What\_WDT manner\_NN of\_IN man\_NN is\_VBZ this\_DT ,\_, or\_CC what\_WDT manner\_NN of\_IN creature\_NN is\_VBZ it\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT semblance\_NN of\_IN man\_NN ?\_.

I\_PRP feel\_VBP the\_DT dread\_NN of\_IN this\_DT horrible\_JJ place\_NN overpowering\_VBG me\_PRP ;\_: I\_PRP am\_VBP in\_IN fear\_NN --\_: in\_IN awful\_JJ fear\_NN --\_: and\_CC there\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT escape\_NN for\_IN me\_PRP ;\_: I\_PRP am\_VBP encompassed\_VBN about\_RP with\_IN terrors\_NNS that\_IN I\_PRP dare\_VBP not\_RB think\_VB of\_IN ...\_: 15\_CD May\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Once\_RB more\_JJR have\_VBP I\_PRP seen\_VBN the\_DT Count\_NNP go\_VB out\_RP in\_IN his\_PRP$ lizard\_NN fashion\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP moved\_VBD downwards\_NNS in\_IN a\_DT sidelong\_JJ way\_NN ,\_, some\_DT hundred\_CD feet\_NNS down\_RB ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT good\_JJ deal\_NN to\_TO the\_DT left\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP vanished\_VBD into\_IN some\_DT hole\_NN or\_CC window\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB his\_PRP$ head\_NN had\_VBD disappeared\_VBN ,\_, I\_PRP leaned\_VBD out\_RP to\_TO try\_VB and\_CC see\_VB more\_JJR ,\_, but\_CC without\_IN avail\_NN --\_: the\_DT distance\_NN was\_VBD too\_RB great\_JJ to\_TO allow\_VB a\_DT proper\_JJ angle\_NN of\_IN sight\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP knew\_VBD he\_PRP had\_VBD left\_VBN the\_DT castle\_NN now\_RB ,\_, and\_CC thought\_VBD to\_TO use\_VB the\_DT opportunity\_NN to\_TO explore\_VB more\_JJR than\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD dared\_VBN to\_TO do\_VB as\_RB yet\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP went\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, and\_CC taking\_VBG a\_DT lamp\_NN ,\_, tried\_VBD all\_PDT the\_DT doors\_NNS .\_.

They\_PRP were\_VBD all\_DT locked\_VBN ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD expected\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT locks\_NNS were\_VBD comparatively\_RB new\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP went\_VBD down\_IN the\_DT stone\_NN stairs\_NNS to\_TO the\_DT hall\_NN where\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD entered\_VBN originally\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP found\_VBD I\_PRP could\_MD pull\_VB back\_RP the\_DT bolts\_NNS easily\_RB enough\_RB and\_CC unhook\_VB the\_DT great\_JJ chains\_NNS ;\_: but\_CC the\_DT door\_NN was\_VBD locked\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT key\_NN was\_VBD gone\_VBN !\_.

That\_DT key\_NN must\_MD be\_VB in\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS room\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP must\_MD watch\_VB should\_MD his\_PRP$ door\_NN be\_VB unlocked\_VBN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD get\_VB it\_PRP and\_CC escape\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP went\_VBD on\_RP to\_TO make\_VB a\_DT thorough\_JJ examination\_NN of\_IN the\_DT various\_JJ stairs\_NNS and\_CC passages\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO try\_VB the\_DT doors\_NNS that\_WDT opened\_VBD from\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

One\_CD or\_CC two\_CD small\_JJ rooms\_NNS near\_IN the\_DT hall\_NN were\_VBD open\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD nothing\_NN to\_TO see\_VB in\_IN them\_PRP except\_IN old\_JJ furniture\_NN ,\_, dusty\_JJ with\_IN age\_NN and\_CC moth-eaten\_JJ .\_.

At\_IN last\_JJ ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP found\_VBD one\_CD door\_NN at\_IN the\_DT top\_NN of\_IN the\_DT stairway\_NN which\_WDT ,\_, though\_IN it\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB locked\_VBN ,\_, gave\_VBD a\_DT little\_JJ under\_IN pressure\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP tried\_VBD it\_PRP harder\_JJR ,\_, and\_CC found\_VBD that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB really\_RB locked\_VBN ,\_, but\_CC that\_IN the\_DT resistance\_NN came\_VBD from\_IN the\_DT fact\_NN that\_IN the\_DT hinges\_NNS had\_VBD fallen\_VBN somewhat\_RB ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT heavy\_JJ door\_NN rested\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT floor\_NN .\_.

Here\_RB was\_VBD an\_DT opportunity\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP might\_MD not\_RB have\_VB again\_RB ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP exerted\_VBD myself\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN many\_JJ efforts\_NNS forced\_VBD it\_PRP back\_RB so\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD enter\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD now\_RB in\_IN a\_DT wing\_NN of\_IN the\_DT castle\_NN further\_RB to\_TO the\_DT right\_NN than\_IN the\_DT rooms\_NNS I\_PRP knew\_VBD and\_CC a\_DT storey\_NN lower\_RBR down\_RB .\_.

From\_IN the\_DT windows\_NNS I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB that\_IN the\_DT suite\_NN of\_IN rooms\_NNS lay\_VBP along\_RB to\_TO the\_DT south\_NN of\_IN the\_DT castle\_NN ,\_, the\_DT windows\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT end\_NN room\_NN looking\_VBG out\_RP both\_DT west\_NN and\_CC south\_NN .\_.

On\_IN the\_DT latter\_JJ side\_NN ,\_, as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN to\_TO the\_DT former\_JJ ,\_, there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT great\_JJ precipice\_NN .\_.

The\_DT castle\_NN was\_VBD built\_VBN on\_IN the\_DT corner\_NN of\_IN a\_DT great\_JJ rock\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN on\_IN three\_CD sides\_NNS it\_PRP was\_VBD quite\_RB impregnable\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC great\_JJ windows\_NNS were\_VBD placed\_VBN here\_RB where\_WRB sling\_NN ,\_, or\_CC bow\_NN ,\_, or\_CC culverin\_NN could\_MD not\_RB reach\_VB ,\_, and\_CC consequently\_RB light\_NN and\_CC comfort\_NN ,\_, impossible\_JJ to\_TO a\_DT position\_NN which\_WDT had\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB guarded\_VBN ,\_, were\_VBD secured\_VBN .\_.

To\_TO the\_DT west\_NN was\_VBD a\_DT great\_JJ valley\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB ,\_, rising\_VBG far\_RB away\_RB ,\_, great\_JJ jagged\_JJ mountain\_NN fastnesses\_NNS ,\_, rising\_VBG peak\_NN on\_IN peak\_NN ,\_, the\_DT sheer\_JJ rock\_NN studded\_VBN with\_IN mountain\_NN ash\_JJ and\_CC thorn\_NN ,\_, whose\_WP$ roots\_NNS clung\_VBP in\_IN cracks\_NNS and\_CC crevices\_NNS and\_CC crannies\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT stone\_NN .\_.

This\_DT was\_VBD evidently\_RB the\_DT portion\_NN of\_IN the\_DT castle\_NN occupied\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT ladies\_NNS in\_IN bygone\_JJ days\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT furniture\_NN had\_VBD more\_JJR air\_NN of\_IN comfort\_NN than\_IN any\_DT I\_PRP had\_VBD seen\_VBN .\_.

The\_DT windows\_NNS were\_VBD curtainless\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT yellow\_JJ moonlight\_NN ,\_, flooding\_NN in\_IN through\_IN the\_DT diamond\_NN panes\_NNS ,\_, enabled\_VBD one\_CD to\_TO see\_VB even\_JJ colours\_NNS ,\_, whilst\_IN it\_PRP softened\_VBD the\_DT wealth\_NN of\_IN dust\_NN which\_WDT lay\_VBD over\_IN all\_DT and\_CC disguised\_VBN in\_IN some\_DT measure\_NN the\_DT ravages\_NNS of\_IN time\_NN and\_CC the\_DT moth\_NN .\_.

My\_PRP$ lamp\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB of\_IN little\_JJ effect\_NN in\_IN the\_DT brilliant\_JJ moonlight\_NN ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP was\_VBD glad\_JJ to\_TO have\_VB it\_PRP with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT dread\_NN loneliness\_NN in\_IN the\_DT place\_NN which\_WDT chilled\_VBD my\_PRP$ heart\_NN and\_CC made\_VBD my\_PRP$ nerves\_NNS tremble\_VBP .\_.

Still\_RB ,\_, it\_PRP was\_VBD better\_JJR than\_IN living\_NN alone\_RB in\_IN the\_DT rooms\_NNS which\_WDT I\_PRP had\_VBD come\_VBN to\_TO hate\_VB from\_IN the\_DT presence\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN ,\_, and\_CC after\_IN trying\_VBG a\_DT little\_JJ to\_TO school\_VB my\_PRP$ nerves\_NNS ,\_, I\_PRP found\_VBD a\_DT soft\_JJ quietude\_NN come\_VBN over\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

Here\_RB I\_PRP am\_VBP ,\_, sitting\_VBG at\_IN a\_DT little\_JJ oak\_NN table\_NN where\_WRB in\_IN old\_JJ times\_NNS possibly\_RB some\_DT fair\_JJ lady\_NN sat\_VBD to\_TO pen\_NN ,\_, with\_IN much\_JJ thought\_NN and\_CC many\_JJ blushes\_NNS ,\_, her\_PRP$ ill-spelt\_JJ love-letter\_NN ,\_, and\_CC writing\_VBG in\_IN my\_PRP$ diary\_NN in\_IN shorthand\_NN all\_DT that\_WDT has\_VBZ happened\_VBN since\_IN I\_PRP closed\_VBD it\_PRP last\_JJ .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ nineteenth\_JJ century\_NN up-to-date\_JJ with\_IN a\_DT vengeance\_NN .\_.

And\_CC yet\_RB ,\_, unless\_IN my\_PRP$ senses\_NNS deceive\_VBP me\_PRP ,\_, the\_DT old\_JJ centuries\_NNS had\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC have\_VBP ,\_, powers\_NNS of\_IN their\_PRP$ own\_JJ which\_WDT mere\_JJ ``\_`` modernity\_NN ''\_'' can\_MD not\_RB kill\_VB .\_.

Later\_RB :\_: the\_DT Morning\_NN of\_IN 16\_CD May\_NNP .\_.

--\_: God\_NNP preserve\_VB my\_PRP$ sanity\_NN ,\_, for\_IN to\_TO this\_DT I\_PRP am\_VBP reduced\_VBN .\_.

Safety\_NNP and\_CC the\_DT assurance\_NN of\_IN safety\_NN are\_VBP things\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT past\_NN .\_.

Whilst\_IN I\_PRP live\_VBP on\_IN here\_RB there\_EX is\_VBZ but\_CC one\_CD thing\_NN to\_TO hope\_VB for\_IN ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB go\_VB mad\_JJ ,\_, if\_IN ,\_, indeed\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP be\_VB not\_RB mad\_JJ already\_RB .\_.

If\_IN I\_PRP be\_VB sane\_JJ ,\_, then\_RB surely\_RB it\_PRP is\_VBZ maddening\_VBG to\_TO think\_VB that\_DT of\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT foul\_JJ things\_NNS that\_WDT lurk\_VBP in\_IN this\_DT hateful\_JJ place\_NN the\_DT Count\_NNP is\_VBZ the\_DT least\_JJS dreadful\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP ;\_: that\_DT to\_TO him\_PRP alone\_RB I\_PRP can\_MD look\_VB for\_IN safety\_NN ,\_, even\_RB though\_IN this\_DT be\_VB only\_RB whilst\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD serve\_VB his\_PRP$ purpose\_NN .\_.

Great\_NNP God\_NNP !\_.

merciful\_JJ God\_NNP !\_.

Let\_VB me\_PRP be\_VB calm\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN out\_IN of\_IN that\_DT way\_NN lies\_VBZ madness\_NN indeed\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP begin\_VBP to\_TO get\_VB new\_JJ lights\_NNS on\_IN certain\_JJ things\_NNS which\_WDT have\_VBP puzzled\_VBN me\_PRP .\_.

Up\_IN to\_TO now\_RB I\_PRP never\_RB quite\_RB knew\_VBD what\_WP Shakespeare\_NNP meant\_VBD when\_WRB he\_PRP made\_VBD Hamlet\_NNP say\_VBP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` My\_PRP$ tablets\_NNS !\_.

quick\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ tablets\_NNS !\_.

’T\_NN is\_VBZ meet\_VB that\_IN I\_PRP put\_VBD it\_PRP down\_RP ,\_, ''\_'' etc.\_NN ,\_, for\_IN now\_RB ,\_, feeling\_NN as\_IN though\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ brain\_NN were\_VBD unhinged\_VBN or\_CC as\_IN if\_IN the\_DT shock\_NN had\_VBD come\_VBN which\_WDT must\_MD end\_VB in\_IN its\_PRP$ undoing\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP turn\_VBP to\_TO my\_PRP$ diary\_NN for\_IN repose\_NN .\_.

The\_DT habit\_NN of\_IN entering\_VBG accurately\_RB must\_MD help\_VB to\_TO soothe\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS mysterious\_JJ warning\_NN frightened\_VBD me\_PRP at\_IN the\_DT time\_NN ;\_: it\_PRP frightens\_VBZ me\_PRP more\_RBR now\_RB when\_WRB I\_PRP think\_VBP of\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN in\_IN future\_NN he\_PRP has\_VBZ a\_DT fearful\_JJ hold\_NN upon\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD fear\_VB to\_TO doubt\_VB what\_WP he\_PRP may\_MD say\_VB !\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD written\_VBN in\_IN my\_PRP$ diary\_NN and\_CC had\_VBD fortunately\_RB replaced\_VBN the\_DT book\_NN and\_CC pen\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ pocket\_NN I\_PRP felt\_VBD sleepy\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS warning\_NN came\_VBD into\_IN my\_PRP$ mind\_NN ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP took\_VBD a\_DT pleasure\_NN in\_IN disobeying\_VBG it\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT sense\_NN of\_IN sleep\_NN was\_VBD upon\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN it\_PRP the\_DT obstinacy\_NN which\_WDT sleep\_NN brings\_VBZ as\_IN outrider\_NN .\_.

The\_DT soft\_JJ moonlight\_NN soothed\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT wide\_JJ expanse\_NN without\_IN gave\_VBD a\_DT sense\_NN of\_IN freedom\_NN which\_WDT refreshed\_VBD me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP determined\_VBD not\_RB to\_TO return\_VB to-night\_JJ to\_TO the\_DT gloom-haunted\_JJ rooms\_NNS ,\_, but\_CC to\_TO sleep\_VB here\_RB ,\_, where\_WRB ,\_, of\_IN old\_JJ ,\_, ladies\_NNS had\_VBD sat\_VBN and\_CC sung\_VBN and\_CC lived\_VBN sweet\_JJ lives\_NNS whilst\_IN their\_PRP$ gentle\_JJ breasts\_NNS were\_VBD sad\_JJ for\_IN their\_PRP$ menfolk\_NN away\_RB in\_IN the\_DT midst\_NN of\_IN remorseless\_JJ wars\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP drew\_VBD a\_DT great\_JJ couch\_NN out\_IN of\_IN its\_PRP$ place\_NN near\_IN the\_DT corner\_NN ,\_, so\_RB that\_IN as\_IN I\_PRP lay\_VBP ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD look\_VB at\_IN the\_DT lovely\_JJ view\_NN to\_TO east\_JJ and\_CC south\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC unthinking\_JJ of\_IN and\_CC uncaring\_JJ for\_IN the\_DT dust\_NN ,\_, composed\_VBD myself\_PRP for\_IN sleep\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP suppose\_VBP I\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB fallen\_VBN asleep\_RB ;\_: I\_PRP hope\_VBP so\_RB ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP fear\_VBP ,\_, for\_IN all\_DT that\_WDT followed\_VBD was\_VBD startlingly\_RB real\_JJ --\_: so\_RB real\_JJ that\_IN now\_RB sitting\_VBG here\_RB in\_IN the\_DT broad\_JJ ,\_, full\_JJ sunlight\_NN of\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB in\_IN the\_DT least\_JJS believe\_VBP that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD all\_DT sleep\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB alone\_RB .\_.

The\_DT room\_NN was\_VBD the\_DT same\_JJ ,\_, unchanged\_JJ in\_IN any\_DT way\_NN since\_IN I\_PRP came\_VBD into\_IN it\_PRP ;\_: I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB along\_IN the\_DT floor\_NN ,\_, in\_IN the\_DT brilliant\_JJ moonlight\_NN ,\_, my\_PRP$ own\_JJ footsteps\_NNS marked\_VBD where\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD disturbed\_VBN the\_DT long\_JJ accumulation\_NN of\_IN dust\_NN .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT moonlight\_NN opposite\_NN me\_PRP were\_VBD three\_CD young\_JJ women\_NNS ,\_, ladies\_NNS by\_IN their\_PRP$ dress\_NN and\_CC manner\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP thought\_VBD at\_IN the\_DT time\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB dreaming\_VBG when\_WRB I\_PRP saw\_VBD them\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN ,\_, though\_IN the\_DT moonlight\_NN was\_VBD behind\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, they\_PRP threw\_VBD no\_DT shadow\_NN on\_IN the\_DT floor\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP came\_VBD close\_RB to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC looked\_VBD at\_IN me\_PRP for\_IN some\_DT time\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB whispered\_VBD together\_RB .\_.

Two\_CD were\_VBD dark\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC had\_VBD high\_JJ aquiline\_JJ noses\_NNS ,\_, like\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN ,\_, and\_CC great\_JJ dark\_NN ,\_, piercing\_VBG eyes\_NNS that\_WDT seemed\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB almost\_RB red\_JJ when\_WRB contrasted\_VBN with\_IN the\_DT pale\_JJ yellow\_JJ moon\_NN .\_.

The\_DT other\_JJ was\_VBD fair\_JJ ,\_, as\_RB fair\_JJ as\_IN can\_MD be\_VB ,\_, with\_IN great\_JJ wavy\_JJ masses\_NNS of\_IN golden\_JJ hair\_NN and\_CC eyes\_NNS like\_IN pale\_JJ sapphires\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP seemed\_VBD somehow\_RB to\_TO know\_VB her\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO know\_VB it\_PRP in\_IN connection\_NN with\_IN some\_DT dreamy\_JJ fear\_NN ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB recollect\_VB at\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN how\_WRB or\_CC where\_WRB .\_.

All\_DT three\_CD had\_VBD brilliant\_JJ white\_JJ teeth\_NNS that\_WDT shone\_VBP like\_IN pearls\_NNS against\_IN the\_DT ruby\_NN of\_IN their\_PRP$ voluptuous\_JJ lips\_NNS .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD something\_NN about\_IN them\_PRP that\_WDT made\_VBD me\_PRP uneasy\_JJ ,\_, some\_DT longing\_NN and\_CC at\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ time\_NN some\_DT deadly\_JJ fear\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP felt\_VBD in\_IN my\_PRP$ heart\_NN a\_DT wicked\_JJ ,\_, burning\_VBG desire\_NN that\_IN they\_PRP would\_MD kiss\_NN me\_PRP with\_IN those\_DT red\_JJ lips\_NNS .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB good\_JJ to\_TO note\_VB this\_DT down\_RP ,\_, lest\_IN some\_DT day\_NN it\_PRP should\_MD meet\_VB Mina\_NNP 's\_POS eyes\_NNS and\_CC cause\_VB her\_PRP$ pain\_NN ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ the\_DT truth\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP whispered\_VBD together\_RB ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB they\_PRP all\_DT three\_CD laughed\_VBD --\_: such\_PDT a\_DT silvery\_JJ ,\_, musical\_JJ laugh\_NN ,\_, but\_CC as\_RB hard\_RB as\_IN though\_IN the\_DT sound\_NN never\_RB could\_MD have\_VB come\_VBN through\_IN the\_DT softness\_NN of\_IN human\_JJ lips\_NNS .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD like\_IN the\_DT intolerable\_JJ ,\_, tingling\_JJ sweetness\_NN of\_IN water-glasses\_NNS when\_WRB played\_VBN on\_RP by\_IN a\_DT cunning\_JJ hand\_NN .\_.

The\_DT fair\_JJ girl\_NN shook\_VBD her\_PRP$ head\_NN coquettishly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT other\_JJ two\_CD urged\_VBD her\_PRP on\_RP .\_.

One\_CD said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Go\_VB on\_IN !\_.

You\_PRP are\_VBP first\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP shall\_MD follow\_VB ;\_: yours\_PRP$ is\_VBZ the\_DT right\_NN to\_TO begin\_VB .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT other\_JJ added\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` He\_PRP is\_VBZ young\_JJ and\_CC strong\_JJ ;\_: there\_EX are\_VBP kisses\_NNS for\_IN us\_PRP all\_DT .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP lay\_VBP quiet\_JJ ,\_, looking\_VBG out\_RP under\_IN my\_PRP$ eyelashes\_NNS in\_IN an\_DT agony\_NN of\_IN delightful\_JJ anticipation\_NN .\_.

The\_DT fair\_JJ girl\_NN advanced\_JJ and\_CC bent\_JJ over\_IN me\_PRP till\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD feel\_VB the\_DT movement\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ breath\_NN upon\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

Sweet\_JJ it\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN one\_CD sense\_NN ,\_, honey-sweet\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC sent\_VBD the\_DT same\_JJ tingling\_NN through\_IN the\_DT nerves\_NNS as\_IN her\_PRP$ voice\_NN ,\_, but\_CC with\_IN a\_DT bitter\_JJ underlying\_VBG the\_DT sweet\_JJ ,\_, a\_DT bitter\_JJ offensiveness\_NN ,\_, as\_IN one\_CD smells\_VBZ in\_IN blood\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD afraid\_JJ to\_TO raise\_VB my\_PRP$ eyelids\_NNS ,\_, but\_CC looked\_VBD out\_RP and\_CC saw\_VBD perfectly\_RB under\_IN the\_DT lashes\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT girl\_NN went\_VBD on\_IN her\_PRP$ knees\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC bent\_NN over\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, simply\_RB gloating\_VBG .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT deliberate\_JJ voluptuousness\_NN which\_WDT was\_VBD both\_DT thrilling\_JJ and\_CC repulsive\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN she\_PRP arched\_VBD her\_PRP$ neck\_NN she\_PRP actually\_RB licked\_VBD her\_PRP$ lips\_NNS like\_IN an\_DT animal\_NN ,\_, till\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB in\_IN the\_DT moonlight\_NN the\_DT moisture\_NN shining\_VBG on\_IN the\_DT scarlet\_JJ lips\_NNS and\_CC on\_IN the\_DT red\_JJ tongue\_NN as\_IN it\_PRP lapped\_VBD the\_DT white\_JJ sharp\_JJ teeth\_NNS .\_.

Lower\_NNP and\_CC lower\_JJR went\_VBD her\_PRP$ head\_NN as\_IN the\_DT lips\_NNS went\_VBD below\_IN the\_DT range\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ mouth\_NN and\_CC chin\_NN and\_CC seemed\_VBD about\_IN to\_TO fasten\_VB on\_IN my\_PRP$ throat\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB she\_PRP paused\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD hear\_VB the\_DT churning\_VBG sound\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ tongue\_NN as\_IN it\_PRP licked\_VBD her\_PRP$ teeth\_NNS and\_CC lips\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC could\_MD feel\_VB the\_DT hot\_JJ breath\_NN on\_IN my\_PRP$ neck\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB the\_DT skin\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ throat\_NN began\_VBD to\_TO tingle\_VB as\_IN one\_NN 's\_POS flesh\_NN does\_VBZ when\_WRB the\_DT hand\_NN that\_WDT is\_VBZ to\_TO tickle\_VB it\_PRP approaches\_VBZ nearer\_IN --\_: nearer\_IN .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD feel\_VB the\_DT soft\_JJ ,\_, shivering\_VBG touch\_NN of\_IN the\_DT lips\_NNS on\_IN the\_DT super-sensitive\_JJ skin\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ throat\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT hard\_JJ dents\_NNS of\_IN two\_CD sharp\_JJ teeth\_NNS ,\_, just\_RB touching\_VBG and\_CC pausing\_VBG there\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP closed\_VBD my\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS in\_IN a\_DT languorous\_JJ ecstasy\_NN and\_CC waited\_VBD --\_: waited\_VBD with\_IN beating\_NN heart\_NN .\_.

But\_CC at\_IN that\_DT instant\_NN ,\_, another\_DT sensation\_NN swept\_VBD through\_IN me\_PRP as\_RB quick\_JJ as\_IN lightning\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD conscious\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT presence\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN ,\_, and\_CC of\_IN his\_PRP$ being\_VBG as\_IN if\_IN lapped\_VBN in\_IN a\_DT storm\_NN of\_IN fury\_NN .\_.

As\_IN my\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS opened\_VBD involuntarily\_RB I\_PRP saw\_VBD his\_PRP$ strong\_JJ hand\_NN grasp\_VBP the\_DT slender\_JJ neck\_NN of\_IN the\_DT fair\_JJ woman\_NN and\_CC with\_IN giant\_NN 's\_POS power\_NN draw\_NN it\_PRP back\_RB ,\_, the\_DT blue\_JJ eyes\_NNS transformed\_VBN with\_IN fury\_NN ,\_, the\_DT white\_JJ teeth\_NNS champing\_VBG with\_IN rage\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT fair\_JJ cheeks\_NNS blazing\_VBG red\_JJ with\_IN passion\_NN .\_.

But\_CC the\_DT Count\_NN !\_.

Never\_NNP did\_VBD I\_PRP imagine\_VB such\_JJ wrath\_NN and\_CC fury\_NN ,\_, even\_RB to\_TO the\_DT demons\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT pit\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS were\_VBD positively\_RB blazing\_VBG .\_.

The\_DT red\_JJ light\_NN in\_IN them\_PRP was\_VBD lurid\_JJ ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN the\_DT flames\_NNS of\_IN hell-fire\_FW blazed\_FW behind\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

His\_PRP$ face\_NN was\_VBD deathly\_RB pale\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT lines\_NNS of\_IN it\_PRP were\_VBD hard\_RB like\_IN drawn\_VBN wires\_NNS ;\_: the\_DT thick\_JJ eyebrows\_NNS that\_WDT met\_VBD over\_IN the\_DT nose\_NN now\_RB seemed\_VBD like\_IN a\_DT heaving\_VBG bar\_NN of\_IN white-hot\_JJ metal\_NN .\_.

With\_IN a\_DT fierce\_JJ sweep\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ arm\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP hurled\_VBD the\_DT woman\_NN from\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB motioned\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT others\_NNS ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN he\_PRP were\_VBD beating\_VBG them\_PRP back\_RB ;\_: it\_PRP was\_VBD the\_DT same\_JJ imperious\_JJ gesture\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD seen\_VBN used\_VBN to\_TO the\_DT wolves\_NNS .\_.

In\_IN a\_DT voice\_NN which\_WDT ,\_, though\_IN low\_JJ and\_CC almost\_RB in\_IN a\_DT whisper\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO cut\_VB through\_IN the\_DT air\_NN and\_CC then\_RB ring\_NN round\_VBP the\_DT room\_NN he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` How\_WRB dare\_VBP you\_PRP touch\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, any\_DT of\_IN you\_PRP ?\_.

How\_WRB dare\_VBP you\_PRP cast\_VBP eyes\_NNS on\_IN him\_PRP when\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD forbidden\_VBN it\_PRP ?\_.

Back\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP tell\_VBP you\_PRP all\_DT !\_.

This\_DT man\_NN belongs\_VBZ to\_TO me\_PRP !\_.

Beware\_VB how\_WRB you\_PRP meddle\_VBP with\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, or\_CC you\_PRP 'll\_MD have\_VB to\_TO deal\_VB with\_IN me\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT fair\_JJ girl\_NN ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT laugh\_NN of\_IN ribald\_JJ coquetry\_NN ,\_, turned\_VBD to\_TO answer\_VB him\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP yourself\_PRP never\_RB loved\_VBD ;\_: you\_PRP never\_RB love\_VB !\_. ''\_''

On\_IN this\_DT the\_DT other\_JJ women\_NNS joined\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC such\_PDT a\_DT mirthless\_JJ ,\_, hard\_JJ ,\_, soulless\_JJ laughter\_NN rang\_VBD through\_IN the\_DT room\_NN that\_IN it\_PRP almost\_RB made\_VBD me\_PRP faint\_JJ to\_TO hear\_VB ;\_: it\_PRP seemed\_VBD like\_IN the\_DT pleasure\_NN of\_IN fiends\_NNS .\_.

Then\_RB the\_DT Count\_NNP turned\_VBD ,\_, after\_IN looking\_VBG at\_IN my\_PRP$ face\_NN attentively\_RB ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT soft\_JJ whisper\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Yes\_UH ,\_, I\_PRP too\_RB can\_MD love\_VB ;\_: you\_PRP yourselves\_NNS can\_MD tell\_VB it\_PRP from\_IN the\_DT past\_NN .\_.

Is\_VBZ it\_PRP not\_RB so\_RB ?\_.

Well\_UH ,\_, now\_RB I\_PRP promise\_VBP you\_PRP that\_IN when\_WRB I\_PRP am\_VBP done\_VBN with\_IN him\_PRP you\_PRP shall\_MD kiss\_NN him\_PRP at\_IN your\_PRP$ will\_NN .\_.

Now\_RB go\_VB !\_.

go\_VB !\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD awaken\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ work\_NN to\_TO be\_VB done\_VBN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Are\_VBP we\_PRP to\_TO have\_VB nothing\_NN to-night\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

said\_VBD one\_CD of\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT low\_JJ laugh\_NN ,\_, as\_IN she\_PRP pointed\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT bag\_NN which\_WDT he\_PRP had\_VBD thrown\_VBN upon\_IN the\_DT floor\_NN ,\_, and\_CC which\_WDT moved\_VBD as\_IN though\_IN there\_EX were\_VBD some\_DT living\_VBG thing\_NN within\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

For\_IN answer\_NN he\_PRP nodded\_VBD his\_PRP$ head\_NN .\_.

One\_CD of\_IN the\_DT women\_NNS jumped\_VBD forward\_RB and\_CC opened\_VBD it\_PRP .\_.

If\_IN my\_PRP$ ears\_NNS did\_VBD not\_RB deceive\_VB me\_PRP there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT gasp\_VBP and\_CC a\_DT low\_JJ wail\_VB ,\_, as\_IN of\_IN a\_DT half-smothered\_JJ child\_NN .\_.

The\_DT women\_NNS closed\_VBD round\_NN ,\_, whilst\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD aghast\_JJ with\_IN horror\_NN ;\_: but\_CC as\_IN I\_PRP looked\_VBD they\_PRP disappeared\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN them\_PRP the\_DT dreadful\_JJ bag\_NN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT door\_NN near\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC they\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB have\_VB passed\_VBN me\_PRP without\_IN my\_PRP$ noticing\_VBG .\_.

They\_PRP simply\_RB seemed\_VBD to\_TO fade\_VB into\_IN the\_DT rays\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT moonlight\_NN and\_CC pass\_VB out\_RP through\_IN the\_DT window\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB outside\_IN the\_DT dim\_JJ ,\_, shadowy\_JJ forms\_NNS for\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN before\_IN they\_PRP entirely\_RB faded\_VBD away\_RB .\_.

Then\_RB the\_DT horror\_NN overcame\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP sank\_VBD down\_RB unconscious\_JJ .\_.

CHAPTER\_NNP IV\_NNP JONATHAN\_NNP HARKER\_NNP 'S\_POS JOURNAL\_NN --\_: continued\_VBD I\_PRP AWOKE\_VBD in\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ bed\_NN .\_.

If\_IN it\_PRP be\_VB that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB dreamt\_VBN ,\_, the\_DT Count\_NNP must\_MD have\_VB carried\_VBN me\_PRP here\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP tried\_VBD to\_TO satisfy\_VB myself\_PRP on\_IN the\_DT subject\_NN ,\_, but\_CC could\_MD not\_RB arrive\_VB at\_IN any\_DT unquestionable\_JJ result\_NN .\_.

To\_TO be\_VB sure\_JJ ,\_, there\_EX were\_VBD certain\_JJ small\_JJ evidences\_NNS ,\_, such\_JJ as\_IN that\_DT my\_PRP$ clothes\_NNS were\_VBD folded\_VBN and\_CC laid\_VBN by\_IN in\_IN a\_DT manner\_NN which\_WDT was\_VBD not\_RB my\_PRP$ habit\_NN .\_.

My\_PRP$ watch\_NN was\_VBD still\_RB unwound\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP rigorously\_RB accustomed\_VBN to\_TO wind\_VB it\_PRP the\_DT last\_JJ thing\_NN before\_IN going\_VBG to\_TO bed\_NN ,\_, and\_CC many\_JJ such\_JJ details\_NNS .\_.

But\_CC these\_DT things\_NNS are\_VBP no\_DT proof\_NN ,\_, for\_IN they\_PRP may\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN evidences\_NNS that\_IN my\_PRP$ mind\_NN was\_VBD not\_RB as\_RB usual\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, from\_IN some\_DT cause\_NN or\_CC another\_DT ,\_, I\_PRP had\_VBD certainly\_RB been\_VBN much\_JJ upset\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD watch\_VB for\_IN proof\_NN .\_.

Of\_IN one\_CD thing\_NN I\_PRP am\_VBP glad\_JJ :\_: if\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN carried\_VBD me\_PRP here\_RB and\_CC undressed\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN hurried\_VBN in\_IN his\_PRP$ task\_NN ,\_, for\_IN my\_PRP$ pockets\_NNS are\_VBP intact\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP sure\_RB this\_DT diary\_NN would\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN a\_DT mystery\_NN to\_TO him\_PRP which\_WDT he\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB have\_VB brooked\_VBN .\_.

He\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB taken\_VBN or\_CC destroyed\_VBN it\_PRP .\_.

As\_IN I\_PRP look\_VBP round\_JJ this\_DT room\_NN ,\_, although\_IN it\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN to\_TO me\_PRP so\_RB full\_JJ of\_IN fear\_NN ,\_, it\_PRP is\_VBZ now\_RB a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN sanctuary\_NN ,\_, for\_IN nothing\_NN can\_MD be\_VB more\_RBR dreadful\_JJ than\_IN those\_DT awful\_JJ women\_NNS ,\_, who\_WP were\_VBD --\_: who\_WP are\_VBP --\_: waiting\_VBG to\_TO suck\_VB my\_PRP$ blood\_NN .\_.

18\_CD May\_NNP .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN down\_RP to\_TO look\_VB at\_IN that\_DT room\_NN again\_RB in\_IN daylight\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP must\_MD know\_VB the\_DT truth\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP got\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT doorway\_NN at\_IN the\_DT top\_NN of\_IN the\_DT stairs\_NNS I\_PRP found\_VBD it\_PRP closed\_VBD .\_.

It\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN so\_RB forcibly\_RB driven\_VBN against\_IN the\_DT jamb\_NN that\_IN part\_NN of\_IN the\_DT woodwork\_NN was\_VBD splintered\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB that\_IN the\_DT bolt\_NN of\_IN the\_DT lock\_NN had\_VBD not\_RB been\_VBN shot\_VBN ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT door\_NN is\_VBZ fastened\_VBN from\_IN the\_DT inside\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP fear\_VBP it\_PRP was\_VBD no\_DT dream\_NN ,\_, and\_CC must\_MD act\_VB on\_IN this\_DT surmise\_NN .\_.

19\_CD May\_NNP .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP am\_VBP surely\_RB in\_IN the\_DT toils\_NNS .\_.

Last\_JJ night\_NN the\_DT Count\_NNP asked\_VBD me\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT suavest\_JJS tones\_NNS to\_TO write\_VB three\_CD letters\_NNS ,\_, one\_CD saying\_VBG that\_IN my\_PRP$ work\_NN here\_RB was\_VBD nearly\_RB done\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN I\_PRP should\_MD start\_VB for\_IN home\_NN within\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ days\_NNS ,\_, another\_DT that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD starting\_VBG on\_IN the\_DT next\_JJ morning\_NN from\_IN the\_DT time\_NN of\_IN the\_DT letter\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT third\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD left\_VBN the\_DT castle\_NN and\_CC arrived\_VBD at\_IN Bistritz\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP would\_MD fain\_RB have\_VB rebelled\_VBN ,\_, but\_CC felt\_VBD that\_IN in\_IN the\_DT present\_JJ state\_NN of\_IN things\_NNS it\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB madness\_NN to\_TO quarrel\_VB openly\_RB with\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN whilst\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP so\_RB absolutely\_RB in\_IN his\_PRP$ power\_NN ;\_: and\_CC to\_TO refuse\_VB would\_MD be\_VB to\_TO excite\_VB his\_PRP$ suspicion\_NN and\_CC to\_TO arouse\_VB his\_PRP$ anger\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP knows\_VBZ that\_IN I\_PRP know\_VBP too\_RB much\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN I\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB live\_VB ,\_, lest\_IN I\_PRP be\_VB dangerous\_JJ to\_TO him\_PRP ;\_: my\_PRP$ only\_JJ chance\_NN is\_VBZ to\_TO prolong\_VB my\_PRP$ opportunities\_NNS .\_.

Something\_NN may\_MD occur\_VB which\_WDT will\_MD give\_VB me\_PRP a\_DT chance\_NN to\_TO escape\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP saw\_VBD in\_IN his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS something\_NN of\_IN that\_DT gathering\_NN wrath\_NN which\_WDT was\_VBD manifest\_JJ when\_WRB he\_PRP hurled\_VBD that\_IN fair\_JJ woman\_NN from\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP explained\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP that\_IN posts\_NNS were\_VBD few\_JJ and\_CC uncertain\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN my\_PRP$ writing\_NN now\_RB would\_MD ensure\_VB ease\_NN of\_IN mind\_NN to\_TO my\_PRP$ friends\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC he\_PRP assured\_VBD me\_PRP with\_IN so\_RB much\_JJ impressiveness\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP would\_MD countermand\_VB the\_DT later\_JJ letters\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT would\_MD be\_VB held\_VBN over\_RP at\_IN Bistritz\_NNP until\_IN due\_JJ time\_NN in\_IN case\_NN chance\_NN would\_MD admit\_VB of\_IN my\_PRP$ prolonging\_VBG my\_PRP$ stay\_NN ,\_, that\_DT to\_TO oppose\_VB him\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN to\_TO create\_VB new\_JJ suspicion\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP therefore\_RB pretended\_VBD to\_TO fall\_VB in\_RP with\_IN his\_PRP$ views\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC asked\_VBD him\_PRP what\_WP dates\_VBZ I\_PRP should\_MD put\_VB on\_IN the\_DT letters\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP calculated\_VBD a\_DT minute\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` The\_DT first\_JJ should\_MD be\_VB June\_NNP 12\_CD ,\_, the\_DT second\_JJ June\_NNP 19\_CD ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT third\_JJ June\_NNP 29\_CD .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP know\_VBP now\_RB the\_DT span\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ life\_NN .\_.

God\_NNP help\_VB me\_PRP !\_.

28\_CD May\_NNP .\_.

--\_: There\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT chance\_NN of\_IN escape\_NN ,\_, or\_CC at\_IN any\_DT rate\_NN of\_IN being\_VBG able\_JJ to\_TO send\_VB word\_NN home\_NN .\_.

A\_DT band\_NN of\_IN Szgany\_NNP have\_VBP come\_VBN to\_TO the\_DT castle\_NN ,\_, and\_CC are\_VBP encamped\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT courtyard\_NN .\_.

These\_DT Szgany\_NNP are\_VBP gipsies\_NNS ;\_: I\_PRP have\_VBP notes\_NNS of\_IN them\_PRP in\_IN my\_PRP$ book\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP are\_VBP peculiar\_JJ to\_TO this\_DT part\_NN of\_IN the\_DT world\_NN ,\_, though\_IN allied\_VBN to\_TO the\_DT ordinary\_JJ gipsies\_NNS all\_PDT the\_DT world\_NN over\_IN .\_.

There\_EX are\_VBP thousands\_NNS of\_IN them\_PRP in\_IN Hungary\_NNP and\_CC Transylvania\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP are\_VBP almost\_RB outside\_IN all\_DT law\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP attach\_VBP themselves\_PRP as\_IN a\_DT rule\_NN to\_TO some\_DT great\_JJ noble\_JJ or\_CC boyar\_NN ,\_, and\_CC call\_VB themselves\_PRP by\_IN his\_PRP$ name\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP are\_VBP fearless\_JJ and\_CC without\_IN religion\_NN ,\_, save\_VB superstition\_NN ,\_, and\_CC they\_PRP talk\_VBP only\_RB their\_PRP$ own\_JJ varieties\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT Romany\_NNP tongue\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD write\_VB some\_DT letters\_NNS home\_NN ,\_, and\_CC shall\_MD try\_VB to\_TO get\_VB them\_PRP to\_TO have\_VB them\_PRP posted\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP already\_RB spoken\_VBN them\_PRP through\_IN my\_PRP$ window\_NN to\_TO begin\_VB acquaintanceship\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP took\_VBD their\_PRP$ hats\_NNS off\_RP and\_CC made\_VBD obeisance\_NN and\_CC many\_JJ signs\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB understand\_VB any\_DT more\_JJR than\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD their\_PRP$ spoken\_VBN language\_NN ...\_: .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP written\_VBN the\_DT letters\_NNS .\_.

Mina\_NNP 's\_POS is\_VBZ in\_IN shorthand\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP simply\_RB ask\_VB Mr.\_NNP Hawkins\_NNP to\_TO communicate\_VB with\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

To\_TO her\_PRP$ I\_PRP have\_VBP explained\_VBN my\_PRP$ situation\_NN ,\_, but\_CC without\_IN the\_DT horrors\_NNS which\_WDT I\_PRP may\_MD only\_RB surmise\_VB .\_.

It\_PRP would\_MD shock\_VB and\_CC frighten\_VB her\_PRP to\_TO death\_NN were\_VBD I\_PRP to\_TO expose\_VB my\_PRP$ heart\_NN to\_TO her\_PRP .\_.

Should\_MD the\_DT letters\_NNS not\_RB carry\_VBP ,\_, then\_RB the\_DT Count\_NN shall\_MD not\_RB yet\_RB know\_VB my\_PRP$ secret\_NN or\_CC the\_DT extent\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ knowledge\_NN ...\_: .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP given\_VBN the\_DT letters\_NNS ;\_: I\_PRP threw\_VBD them\_PRP through\_IN the\_DT bars\_NNS of\_IN my\_PRP$ window\_NN with\_IN a\_DT gold\_NN piece\_NN ,\_, and\_CC made\_VBD what\_WP signs\_NNS I\_PRP could\_MD to\_TO have\_VB them\_PRP posted\_VBN .\_.

The\_DT man\_NN who\_WP took\_VBD them\_PRP pressed\_VBD them\_PRP to\_TO his\_PRP$ heart\_NN and\_CC bowed\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB put\_VBD them\_PRP in\_IN his\_PRP$ cap\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD do\_VB no\_RB more\_JJR .\_.

I\_PRP stole\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO the\_DT study\_NN ,\_, and\_CC began\_VBD to\_TO read\_VB .\_.

As\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN did\_VBD not\_RB come\_VB in\_IN ,\_, I\_PRP have\_VBP written\_VBN here\_RB ...\_: .\_.

The\_DT Count\_NNP has\_VBZ come\_VBN .\_.

He\_PRP sat\_VBD down\_RP beside\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD in\_IN his\_PRP$ smoothest\_JJS voice\_NN as\_IN he\_PRP opened\_VBD two\_CD letters\_NNS :\_: --\_: ``\_`` The\_DT Szgany\_NNP has\_VBZ given\_VBN me\_PRP these\_DT ,\_, of\_IN which\_WDT ,\_, though\_IN I\_PRP know\_VBP not\_RB whence\_VB they\_PRP come\_VBP ,\_, I\_PRP shall\_MD ,\_, of\_IN course\_NN ,\_, take\_VB care\_NN .\_.

See\_VB !\_. ''\_''

--\_: he\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB looked\_VBN at\_IN it\_PRP --\_: ``\_`` one\_CD is\_VBZ from\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO my\_PRP$ friend\_NN Peter\_NNP Hawkins\_NNP ;\_: the\_DT other\_JJ ''\_'' --\_: here\_RB he\_PRP caught\_VBD sight\_NN of\_IN the\_DT strange\_JJ symbols\_NNS as\_IN he\_PRP opened\_VBD the\_DT envelope\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT dark\_JJ look\_NN came\_VBD into\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS blazed\_VBD wickedly\_RB --\_: ``\_`` the\_DT other\_JJ is\_VBZ a\_DT vile\_JJ thing\_NN ,\_, an\_DT outrage\_NN upon\_IN friendship\_NN and\_CC hospitality\_NN !\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB signed\_VBN .\_.

Well\_UH !\_.

so\_IN it\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB matter\_VB to\_TO us\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

And\_CC he\_PRP calmly\_RB held\_VBD letter\_NN and\_CC envelope\_NN in\_IN the\_DT flame\_NN of\_IN the\_DT lamp\_NN till\_IN they\_PRP were\_VBD consumed\_VBN .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` The\_DT letter\_NN to\_TO Hawkins\_NNP --\_: that\_IN I\_PRP shall\_MD ,\_, of\_IN course\_NN ,\_, send\_VB on\_IN ,\_, since\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ yours\_PRP$ .\_.

Your\_PRP$ letters\_NNS are\_VBP sacred\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

Your\_PRP$ pardon\_NN ,\_, my\_PRP$ friend\_NN ,\_, that\_IN unknowingly\_RB I\_PRP did\_VBD break\_VB the\_DT seal\_NN .\_.

Will\_MD you\_PRP not\_RB cover\_VB it\_PRP again\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP held\_VBD out\_RP the\_DT letter\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN a\_DT courteous\_JJ bow\_NN handed\_VBD me\_PRP a\_DT clean\_JJ envelope\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD only\_RB redirect\_VB it\_PRP and\_CC hand\_VB it\_PRP to\_TO him\_PRP in\_IN silence\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB he\_PRP went\_VBD out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT room\_NN I\_PRP could\_MD hear\_VB the\_DT key\_JJ turn\_NN softly\_RB .\_.

A\_DT minute\_NN later\_RB I\_PRP went\_VBD over\_RB and\_CC tried\_VBD it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT door\_NN was\_VBD locked\_VBN .\_.

When\_WRB ,\_, an\_DT hour\_NN or\_CC two\_CD after\_RB ,\_, the\_DT Count\_NNP came\_VBD quietly\_RB into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, his\_PRP$ coming\_VBG awakened\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD gone\_VBN to\_TO sleep\_VB on\_IN the\_DT sofa\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD very\_RB courteous\_JJ and\_CC very\_RB cheery\_JJ in\_IN his\_PRP$ manner\_NN ,\_, and\_CC seeing\_VBG that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN sleeping\_VBG ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` So\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ friend\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP are\_VBP tired\_VBN ?\_.

Get\_VB to\_TO bed\_NN .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ the\_DT surest\_JJS rest\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB have\_VB the\_DT pleasure\_NN to\_TO talk\_VB to-night\_JJ ,\_, since\_IN there\_EX are\_VBP many\_JJ labours\_NNS to\_TO me\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC you\_PRP will\_MD sleep\_VB ,\_, I\_PRP pray\_VBP .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP passed\_VBD to\_TO my\_PRP$ room\_NN and\_CC went\_VBD to\_TO bed\_NN ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, strange\_JJ to\_TO say\_VB ,\_, slept\_VBD without\_IN dreaming\_VBG .\_.

Despair\_NN has\_VBZ its\_PRP$ own\_JJ calms\_NNS .\_.

31\_CD May\_NNP .\_.

--\_: This\_DT morning\_NN when\_WRB I\_PRP woke\_VBD I\_PRP thought\_VBD I\_PRP would\_MD provide\_VB myself\_PRP with\_IN some\_DT paper\_NN and\_CC envelopes\_NNS from\_IN my\_PRP$ bag\_NN and\_CC keep\_VB them\_PRP in\_IN my\_PRP$ pocket\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP might\_MD write\_VB in\_IN case\_NN I\_PRP should\_MD get\_VB an\_DT opportunity\_NN ,\_, but\_CC again\_RB a\_DT surprise\_NN ,\_, again\_RB a\_DT shock\_NN !\_.

Every\_DT scrap\_NN of\_IN paper\_NN was\_VBD gone\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN it\_PRP all\_DT my\_PRP$ notes\_NNS ,\_, my\_PRP$ memoranda\_NNS ,\_, relating\_VBG to\_TO railways\_NNS and\_CC travel\_NN ,\_, my\_PRP$ letter\_NN of\_IN credit\_NN ,\_, in\_IN fact\_NN all\_DT that\_WDT might\_MD be\_VB useful\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP were\_VBD I\_PRP once\_RB outside\_IN the\_DT castle\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP sat\_VBD and\_CC pondered\_VBD awhile\_RB ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB some\_DT thought\_NN occurred\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP made\_VBD search\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ portmanteau\_NN and\_CC in\_IN the\_DT wardrobe\_NN where\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD placed\_VBN my\_PRP$ clothes\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT suit\_NN in\_IN which\_WDT I\_PRP had\_VBD travelled\_VBN was\_VBD gone\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC also\_RB my\_PRP$ overcoat\_NN and\_CC rug\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP could\_MD find\_VB no\_DT trace\_NN of\_IN them\_PRP anywhere\_RB .\_.

This\_DT looked\_VBD like\_IN some\_DT new\_JJ scheme\_NN of\_IN villainy\_NN ...\_: 17\_CD June\_NNP .\_.

--\_: This\_DT morning\_NN ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD sitting\_VBG on\_IN the\_DT edge\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ bed\_NN cudgelling\_VBG my\_PRP$ brains\_NNS ,\_, I\_PRP heard\_VBD without\_IN a\_DT cracking\_VBG of\_IN whips\_VBZ and\_CC pounding\_VBG and\_CC scraping\_VBG of\_IN horses\_NNS '\_POS feet\_NNS up\_IN the\_DT rocky\_JJ path\_NN beyond\_IN the\_DT courtyard\_NN .\_.

With\_IN joy\_NN I\_PRP hurried\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT window\_NN ,\_, and\_CC saw\_VBD drive\_NN into\_IN the\_DT yard\_NN two\_CD great\_JJ leiter-wagons\_NNS ,\_, each\_DT drawn\_VBN by\_IN eight\_CD sturdy\_JJ horses\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC at\_IN the\_DT head\_NN of\_IN each\_DT pair\_NN a\_DT Slovak\_NNP ,\_, with\_IN his\_PRP$ wide\_JJ hat\_NN ,\_, great\_JJ nail-studded\_JJ belt\_NN ,\_, dirty\_JJ sheepskin\_NN ,\_, and\_CC high\_JJ boots\_NNS .\_.

They\_PRP had\_VBD also\_RB their\_PRP$ long\_JJ staves\_NNS in\_IN hand\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP ran\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, intending\_VBG to\_TO descend\_VB and\_CC try\_VB and\_CC join\_VB them\_PRP through\_IN the\_DT main\_JJ hall\_NN ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP thought\_VBD that\_DT way\_NN might\_MD be\_VB opened\_VBN for\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

Again\_RB a\_DT shock\_NN :\_: my\_PRP$ door\_NN was\_VBD fastened\_VBN on\_IN the\_DT outside\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB I\_PRP ran\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT window\_NN and\_CC cried\_VBD to\_TO them\_PRP .\_.

They\_PRP looked\_VBD up\_RP at\_IN me\_PRP stupidly\_RB and\_CC pointed\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC just\_RB then\_RB the\_DT ``\_`` hetman\_NN ''\_'' of\_IN the\_DT Szgany\_NNP came\_VBD out\_RP ,\_, and\_CC seeing\_VBG them\_PRP pointing\_VBG to\_TO my\_PRP$ window\_NN ,\_, said\_VBD something\_NN ,\_, at\_IN which\_WDT they\_PRP laughed\_VBD .\_.

Henceforth\_RB no\_DT effort\_NN of\_IN mine\_NN ,\_, no\_DT piteous\_JJ cry\_NN or\_CC agonised\_JJ entreaty\_NN ,\_, would\_MD make\_VB them\_PRP even\_RB look\_VB at\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

They\_PRP resolutely\_RB turned\_VBD away\_RB .\_.

The\_DT leiter-wagons\_NNS contained\_VBD great\_JJ ,\_, square\_JJ boxes\_NNS ,\_, with\_IN handles\_VBZ of\_IN thick\_JJ rope\_NN ;\_: these\_DT were\_VBD evidently\_RB empty\_JJ by\_IN the\_DT ease\_NN with\_IN which\_WDT the\_DT Slovaks\_NNPS handled\_VBD them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC by\_IN their\_PRP$ resonance\_NN as\_IN they\_PRP were\_VBD roughly\_RB moved\_VBN .\_.

When\_WRB they\_PRP were\_VBD all\_DT unloaded\_JJ and\_CC packed\_JJ in\_IN a\_DT great\_JJ heap\_NN in\_IN one\_CD corner\_NN of\_IN the\_DT yard\_NN ,\_, the\_DT Slovaks\_NNPS were\_VBD given\_VBN some\_DT money\_NN by\_IN the\_DT Szgany\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC spitting\_VBG on\_IN it\_PRP for\_IN luck\_NN ,\_, lazily\_RB went\_VBD each\_DT to\_TO his\_PRP$ horse\_NN 's\_POS head\_NN .\_.

Shortly\_RB afterwards\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP heard\_VBD the\_DT cracking\_VBG of\_IN their\_PRP$ whips\_VBZ die\_VB away\_RB in\_IN the\_DT distance\_NN .\_.

24\_CD June\_NNP ,\_, before\_IN morning\_NN .\_.

--\_: Last\_JJ night\_NN the\_DT Count\_NNP left\_VBD me\_PRP early\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC locked\_VBD himself\_PRP into\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ room\_NN .\_.

As\_RB soon\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP dared\_VBD I\_PRP ran\_VBD up\_RP the\_DT winding\_VBG stair\_NN ,\_, and\_CC looked\_VBD out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT window\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT opened\_VBD south\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP thought\_VBD I\_PRP would\_MD watch\_VB for\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP ,\_, for\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ something\_NN going\_VBG on\_RP .\_.

The\_DT Szgany\_NNP are\_VBP quartered\_VBN somewhere\_RB in\_IN the\_DT castle\_NN and\_CC are\_VBP doing\_VBG work\_NN of\_IN some\_DT kind\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP it\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN now\_RB and\_CC then\_RB I\_PRP hear\_VBP a\_DT far-away\_JJ muffled\_VBN sound\_NN as\_IN of\_IN mattock\_NN and\_CC spade\_NN ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, whatever\_WDT it\_PRP is\_VBZ ,\_, it\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB the\_DT end\_NN of\_IN some\_DT ruthless\_JJ villainy\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN at\_IN the\_DT window\_NN somewhat\_RB less\_JJR than\_IN half\_PDT an\_DT hour\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB I\_PRP saw\_VBD something\_NN coming\_VBG out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS window\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP drew\_VBD back\_RB and\_CC watched\_VBD carefully\_RB ,\_, and\_CC saw\_VBD the\_DT whole\_JJ man\_NN emerge\_VB .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT new\_JJ shock\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP to\_TO find\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT suit\_NN of\_IN clothes\_NNS which\_WDT I\_PRP had\_VBD worn\_VBN whilst\_IN travelling\_VBG here\_RB ,\_, and\_CC slung\_NN over\_IN his\_PRP$ shoulder\_NN the\_DT terrible\_JJ bag\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP had\_VBD seen\_VBN the\_DT women\_NNS take\_VBP away\_RB .\_.

There\_EX could\_MD be\_VB no\_DT doubt\_NN as\_IN to\_TO his\_PRP$ quest\_NN ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN my\_PRP$ garb\_NN ,\_, too\_RB !\_.

This\_DT ,\_, then\_RB ,\_, is\_VBZ his\_PRP$ new\_JJ scheme\_NN of\_IN evil\_NN :\_: that\_IN he\_PRP will\_MD allow\_VB others\_NNS to\_TO see\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN they\_PRP think\_VBP ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN he\_PRP may\_MD both\_DT leave\_VBP evidence\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN seen\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT towns\_NNS or\_CC villages\_NNS posting\_VBG my\_PRP$ own\_JJ letters\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN any\_DT wickedness\_NN which\_WDT he\_PRP may\_MD do\_VB shall\_MD by\_IN the\_DT local\_JJ people\_NNS be\_VB attributed\_VBN to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP makes\_VBZ me\_PRP rage\_NN to\_TO think\_VB that\_IN this\_DT can\_MD go\_VB on\_RB ,\_, and\_CC whilst\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP shut\_VBN up\_RP here\_RB ,\_, a\_DT veritable\_JJ prisoner\_NN ,\_, but\_CC without\_IN that\_DT protection\_NN of\_IN the\_DT law\_NN which\_WDT is\_VBZ even\_RB a\_DT criminal\_NN 's\_POS right\_NN and\_CC consolation\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP thought\_VBD I\_PRP would\_MD watch\_VB for\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS return\_NN ,\_, and\_CC for\_IN a\_DT long\_JJ time\_NN sat\_VBD doggedly\_RB at\_IN the\_DT window\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB I\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO notice\_VB that\_IN there\_EX were\_VBD some\_DT quaint\_JJ little\_JJ specks\_NNS floating\_VBG in\_IN the\_DT rays\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT moonlight\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP were\_VBD like\_IN the\_DT tiniest\_JJS grains\_NNS of\_IN dust\_NN ,\_, and\_CC they\_PRP whirled\_VBD round\_NN and\_CC gathered\_VBN in\_IN clusters\_NNS in\_IN a\_DT nebulous\_JJ sort\_NN of\_IN way\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP watched\_VBD them\_PRP with\_IN a\_DT sense\_NN of\_IN soothing\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN calm\_NN stole\_VBD over\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP leaned\_VBD back\_RB in\_IN the\_DT embrasure\_NN in\_IN a\_DT more\_RBR comfortable\_JJ position\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD enjoy\_VB more\_RBR fully\_RB the\_DT aërial\_JJ gambolling\_NN .\_.

Something\_NN made\_VBD me\_PRP start\_VB up\_RP ,\_, a\_DT low\_JJ ,\_, piteous\_JJ howling\_NN of\_IN dogs\_NNS somewhere\_RB far\_RB below\_IN in\_IN the\_DT valley\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT was\_VBD hidden\_VBN from\_IN my\_PRP$ sight\_NN .\_.

Louder\_JJR it\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO ring\_VB in\_IN my\_PRP$ ears\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT floating\_JJ motes\_NNS of\_IN dust\_NN to\_TO take\_VB new\_JJ shapes\_NNS to\_TO the\_DT sound\_NN as\_IN they\_PRP danced\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT moonlight\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP felt\_VBD myself\_PRP struggling\_VBG to\_TO awake\_RB to\_TO some\_DT call\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ instincts\_NNS ;\_: nay\_NN ,\_, my\_PRP$ very\_JJ soul\_NN was\_VBD struggling\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC my\_PRP$ half-remembered\_JJ sensibilities\_NNS were\_VBD striving\_VBG to\_TO answer\_VB the\_DT call\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD becoming\_VBG hypnotised\_VBN !\_.

Quicker\_JJR and\_CC quicker\_JJR danced\_VBD the\_DT dust\_NN ;\_: the\_DT moonbeams\_NNS seemed\_VBD to\_TO quiver\_VB as\_IN they\_PRP went\_VBD by\_IN me\_PRP into\_IN the\_DT mass\_NN of\_IN gloom\_NN beyond\_IN .\_.

More\_JJR and\_CC more\_JJR they\_PRP gathered\_VBD till\_IN they\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO take\_VB dim\_JJ phantom\_JJ shapes\_NNS .\_.

And\_CC then\_RB I\_PRP started\_VBD ,\_, broad\_JJ awake\_RB and\_CC in\_IN full\_JJ possession\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ senses\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC ran\_VBD screaming\_VBG from\_IN the\_DT place\_NN .\_.

The\_DT phantom\_JJ shapes\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT were\_VBD becoming\_VBG gradually\_RB materialised\_VBN from\_IN the\_DT moonbeams\_NNS ,\_, were\_VBD those\_DT of\_IN the\_DT three\_CD ghostly\_JJ women\_NNS to\_TO whom\_WP I\_PRP was\_VBD doomed\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP fled\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC felt\_VBD somewhat\_RB safer\_JJR in\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ room\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT moonlight\_NN and\_CC where\_WRB the\_DT lamp\_NN was\_VBD burning\_VBG brightly\_RB .\_.

When\_WRB a\_DT couple\_NN of\_IN hours\_NNS had\_VBD passed\_VBN I\_PRP heard\_VBD something\_NN stirring\_VBG in\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS room\_NN ,\_, something\_NN like\_IN a\_DT sharp\_JJ wail\_VB quickly\_RB suppressed\_VBD ;\_: and\_CC then\_RB there\_EX was\_VBD silence\_NN ,\_, deep\_JJ ,\_, awful\_JJ silence\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT chilled\_VBD me\_PRP .\_.

With\_IN a\_DT beating\_NN heart\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP tried\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP was\_VBD locked\_VBN in\_IN my\_PRP$ prison\_NN ,\_, and\_CC could\_MD do\_VB nothing\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP sat\_VBD down\_RB and\_CC simply\_RB cried\_VBD .\_.

As\_IN I\_PRP sat\_VBD I\_PRP heard\_VBD a\_DT sound\_NN in\_IN the\_DT courtyard\_NN without\_IN --\_: the\_DT agonised\_JJ cry\_NN of\_IN a\_DT woman\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP rushed\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT window\_NN ,\_, and\_CC throwing\_VBG it\_PRP up\_RP ,\_, peered\_VBD out\_RP between\_IN the\_DT bars\_NNS .\_.

There\_RB ,\_, indeed\_RB ,\_, was\_VBD a\_DT woman\_NN with\_IN dishevelled\_JJ hair\_NN ,\_, holding\_VBG her\_PRP$ hands\_NNS over\_IN her\_PRP$ heart\_NN as\_IN one\_CD distressed\_JJ with\_IN running\_VBG .\_.

She\_PRP was\_VBD leaning\_VBG against\_IN a\_DT corner\_NN of\_IN the\_DT gateway\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB she\_PRP saw\_VBD my\_PRP$ face\_NN at\_IN the\_DT window\_NN she\_PRP threw\_VBD herself\_PRP forward\_RB ,\_, and\_CC shouted\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT voice\_NN laden\_JJ with\_IN menace\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Monster\_NN ,\_, give\_VB me\_PRP my\_PRP$ child\_NN !\_. ''\_''

She\_PRP threw\_VBD herself\_PRP on\_IN her\_PRP$ knees\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC raising\_VBG up\_RP her\_PRP$ hands\_NNS ,\_, cried\_VBD the\_DT same\_JJ words\_NNS in\_IN tones\_NNS which\_WDT wrung\_VBD my\_PRP$ heart\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB she\_PRP tore\_VBD her\_PRP$ hair\_NN and\_CC beat\_VB her\_PRP$ breast\_NN ,\_, and\_CC abandoned\_VBD herself\_PRP to\_TO all\_PDT the\_DT violences\_NNS of\_IN extravagant\_JJ emotion\_NN .\_.

Finally\_RB ,\_, she\_PRP threw\_VBD herself\_PRP forward\_RB ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, though\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB see\_VB her\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD hear\_VB the\_DT beating\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ naked\_JJ hands\_NNS against\_IN the\_DT door\_NN .\_.

Somewhere\_RB high\_JJ overhead\_NN ,\_, probably\_RB on\_IN the\_DT tower\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP heard\_VBD the\_DT voice\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN calling\_VBG in\_IN his\_PRP$ harsh\_JJ ,\_, metallic\_JJ whisper\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ call\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB answered\_VBN from\_IN far\_RB and\_CC wide\_RB by\_IN the\_DT howling\_NN of\_IN wolves\_NNS .\_.

Before\_IN many\_JJ minutes\_NNS had\_VBD passed\_VBN a\_DT pack\_NN of\_IN them\_PRP poured\_VBD ,\_, like\_IN a\_DT pent-up\_JJ dam\_NN when\_WRB liberated\_VBN ,\_, through\_IN the\_DT wide\_JJ entrance\_NN into\_IN the\_DT courtyard\_NN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT cry\_NN from\_IN the\_DT woman\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT howling\_NN of\_IN the\_DT wolves\_NNS was\_VBD but\_CC short\_JJ .\_.

Before\_IN long\_RB they\_PRP streamed\_VBD away\_RB singly\_RB ,\_, licking\_VBG their\_PRP$ lips\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB pity\_NN her\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP knew\_VBD now\_RB what\_WP had\_VBD become\_VBN of\_IN her\_PRP$ child\_NN ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP was\_VBD better\_RBR dead\_JJ .\_.

What\_WP shall\_MD I\_PRP do\_VB ?\_.

what\_WP can\_MD I\_PRP do\_VB ?\_.

How\_WRB can\_MD I\_PRP escape\_VB from\_IN this\_DT dreadful\_JJ thing\_NN of\_IN night\_NN and\_CC gloom\_NN and\_CC fear\_NN ?\_.

25\_CD June\_NNP ,\_, morning\_NN .\_.

--\_: No\_DT man\_NN knows\_VBZ till\_IN he\_PRP has\_VBZ suffered\_VBN from\_IN the\_DT night\_NN how\_WRB sweet\_JJ and\_CC how\_WRB dear\_RB to\_TO his\_PRP$ heart\_NN and\_CC eye\_NN the\_DT morning\_NN can\_MD be\_VB .\_.

When\_WRB the\_DT sun\_NN grew\_VBD so\_RB high\_JJ this\_DT morning\_NN that\_IN it\_PRP struck\_VBD the\_DT top\_NN of\_IN the\_DT great\_JJ gateway\_NN opposite\_IN my\_PRP$ window\_NN ,\_, the\_DT high\_JJ spot\_NN which\_WDT it\_PRP touched\_VBD seemed\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP as\_IN if\_IN the\_DT dove\_VBN from\_IN the\_DT ark\_NN had\_VBD lighted\_VBN there\_RB .\_.

My\_PRP$ fear\_NN fell\_VBD from\_IN me\_PRP as\_IN if\_IN it\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN a\_DT vaporous\_JJ garment\_NN which\_WDT dissolved\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT warmth\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD take\_VB action\_NN of\_IN some\_DT sort\_NN whilst\_IN the\_DT courage\_NN of\_IN the\_DT day\_NN is\_VBZ upon\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

Last\_JJ night\_NN one\_CD of\_IN my\_PRP$ post-dated\_JJ letters\_NNS went\_VBD to\_TO post\_VB ,\_, the\_DT first\_JJ of\_IN that\_DT fatal\_JJ series\_NN which\_WDT is\_VBZ to\_TO blot\_NN out\_IN the\_DT very\_JJ traces\_NNS of\_IN my\_PRP$ existence\_NN from\_IN the\_DT earth\_NN .\_.

Let\_VB me\_PRP not\_RB think\_VB of\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

Action\_NNP !\_.

It\_PRP has\_VBZ always\_RB been\_VBN at\_IN night-time\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN molested\_VBN or\_CC threatened\_VBN ,\_, or\_CC in\_IN some\_DT way\_NN in\_IN danger\_NN or\_CC in\_IN fear\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB yet\_RB seen\_VBN the\_DT Count\_NN in\_IN the\_DT daylight\_NN .\_.

Can\_MD it\_PRP be\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP sleeps\_VBZ when\_WRB others\_NNS wake\_VBP ,\_, that\_IN he\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB awake\_RB whilst\_IN they\_PRP sleep\_VB ?\_.

If\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD only\_RB get\_VB into\_IN his\_PRP$ room\_NN !\_.

But\_CC there\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT possible\_JJ way\_NN .\_.

The\_DT door\_NN is\_VBZ always\_RB locked\_VBN ,\_, no\_DT way\_NN for\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

Yes\_RB ,\_, there\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT way\_NN ,\_, if\_IN one\_CD dares\_VBZ to\_TO take\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

Where\_WRB his\_PRP$ body\_NN has\_VBZ gone\_VBN why\_WRB may\_MD not\_RB another\_DT body\_NN go\_VB ?\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP seen\_VBN him\_PRP myself\_PRP crawl\_VBP from\_IN his\_PRP$ window\_NN .\_.

Why\_WRB should\_MD not\_RB I\_PRP imitate\_VBP him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC go\_VB in\_RP by\_IN his\_PRP$ window\_NN ?\_.

The\_DT chances\_NNS are\_VBP desperate\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC my\_PRP$ need\_NN is\_VBZ more\_RBR desperate\_JJ still\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD risk\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

At\_IN the\_DT worst\_JJS it\_PRP can\_MD only\_RB be\_VB death\_NN ;\_: and\_CC a\_DT man\_NN 's\_POS death\_NN is\_VBZ not\_RB a\_DT calf\_NN 's\_POS ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT dreaded\_JJ Hereafter\_NNP may\_MD still\_RB be\_VB open\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

God\_NNP help\_VB me\_PRP in\_IN my\_PRP$ task\_NN !\_.

Good-bye\_JJ ,\_, Mina\_NNP ,\_, if\_IN I\_PRP fail\_VBP ;\_: good-bye\_NN ,\_, my\_PRP$ faithful\_NN friend\_NN and\_CC second\_JJ father\_NN ;\_: good-bye\_NN ,\_, all\_DT ,\_, and\_CC last\_JJ of\_IN all\_DT Mina\_NNP !\_.

Same\_JJ day\_NN ,\_, later\_RB .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP have\_VBP made\_VBN the\_DT effort\_NN ,\_, and\_CC God\_NNP ,\_, helping\_VBG me\_PRP ,\_, have\_VBP come\_VBN safely\_RB back\_RB to\_TO this\_DT room\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD put\_VB down\_RP every\_DT detail\_NN in\_IN order\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP went\_VBD whilst\_IN my\_PRP$ courage\_NN was\_VBD fresh\_JJ straight\_RB to\_TO the\_DT window\_NN on\_IN the\_DT south\_JJ side\_NN ,\_, and\_CC at\_IN once\_RB got\_VBD outside\_JJ on\_IN the\_DT narrow\_JJ ledge\_NN of\_IN stone\_NN which\_WDT runs\_VBZ around\_IN the\_DT building\_NN on\_IN this\_DT side\_NN .\_.

The\_DT stones\_NNS are\_VBP big\_JJ and\_CC roughly\_RB cut\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT mortar\_NN has\_VBZ by\_IN process\_NN of\_IN time\_NN been\_VBN washed\_VBN away\_RB between\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP took\_VBD off\_RP my\_PRP$ boots\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC ventured\_VBD out\_RP on\_IN the\_DT desperate\_JJ way\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP looked\_VBD down\_RB once\_RB ,\_, so\_RB as\_IN to\_TO make\_VB sure\_JJ that\_IN a\_DT sudden\_JJ glimpse\_NN of\_IN the\_DT awful\_JJ depth\_NN would\_MD not\_RB overcome\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC after\_IN that\_DT kept\_VBD my\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS away\_RB from\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP knew\_VBD pretty\_RB well\_RB the\_DT direction\_NN and\_CC distance\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS window\_NN ,\_, and\_CC made\_VBN for\_IN it\_PRP as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD ,\_, having\_VBG regard\_NN to\_TO the\_DT opportunities\_NNS available\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB feel\_VB dizzy\_JJ --\_: I\_PRP suppose\_VBP I\_PRP was\_VBD too\_RB excited\_JJ --\_: and\_CC the\_DT time\_NN seemed\_VBD ridiculously\_RB short\_JJ till\_IN I\_PRP found\_VBD myself\_PRP standing\_VBG on\_IN the\_DT window-sill\_NN and\_CC trying\_VBG to\_TO raise\_VB up\_RP the\_DT sash\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD filled\_VBN with\_IN agitation\_NN ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB I\_PRP bent\_JJ down\_NN and\_CC slid\_VBD feet\_NNS foremost\_JJ in\_IN through\_IN the\_DT window\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB I\_PRP looked\_VBD around\_RP for\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP ,\_, but\_CC ,\_, with\_IN surprise\_NN and\_CC gladness\_NN ,\_, made\_VBD a\_DT discovery\_NN .\_.

The\_DT room\_NN was\_VBD empty\_JJ !\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD barely\_RB furnished\_VBN with\_IN odd\_JJ things\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT seemed\_VBD to\_TO have\_VB never\_RB been\_VBN used\_VBN ;\_: the\_DT furniture\_NN was\_VBD something\_NN the\_DT same\_JJ style\_NN as\_IN that\_DT in\_IN the\_DT south\_NN rooms\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD covered\_VBN with\_IN dust\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP looked\_VBD for\_IN the\_DT key\_NN ,\_, but\_CC it\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB in\_IN the\_DT lock\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB find\_VB it\_PRP anywhere\_RB .\_.

The\_DT only\_JJ thing\_NN I\_PRP found\_VBD was\_VBD a\_DT great\_JJ heap\_NN of\_IN gold\_NN in\_IN one\_CD corner\_NN --\_: gold\_NN of\_IN all\_DT kinds\_NNS ,\_, Roman\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC British\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC Austrian\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC Hungarian\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC Greek\_JJ and\_CC Turkish\_JJ money\_NN ,\_, covered\_VBN with\_IN a\_DT film\_NN of\_IN dust\_NN ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN it\_PRP had\_VBD lain\_VBN long\_RB in\_IN the\_DT ground\_NN .\_.

None\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP noticed\_VBD was\_VBD less\_JJR than\_IN three\_CD hundred\_CD years\_NNS old\_JJ .\_.

There\_EX were\_VBD also\_RB chains\_NNS and\_CC ornaments\_NNS ,\_, some\_DT jewelled\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC all\_DT of\_IN them\_PRP old\_JJ and\_CC stained\_VBN .\_.

At\_IN one\_CD corner\_NN of\_IN the\_DT room\_NN was\_VBD a\_DT heavy\_JJ door\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP tried\_VBD it\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN ,\_, since\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB find\_VB the\_DT key\_NN of\_IN the\_DT room\_NN or\_CC the\_DT key\_NN of\_IN the\_DT outer\_JJ door\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT was\_VBD the\_DT main\_JJ object\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ search\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP must\_MD make\_VB further\_JJ examination\_NN ,\_, or\_CC all\_DT my\_PRP$ efforts\_NNS would\_MD be\_VB in\_IN vain\_JJ .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD open\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC led\_VBD through\_IN a\_DT stone\_NN passage\_NN to\_TO a\_DT circular\_JJ stairway\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT went\_VBD steeply\_RB down\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP descended\_VBD ,\_, minding\_VBG carefully\_RB where\_WRB I\_PRP went\_VBD ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT stairs\_NNS were\_VBD dark\_JJ ,\_, being\_VBG only\_RB lit\_VBN by\_IN loopholes\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT heavy\_JJ masonry\_NN .\_.

At\_IN the\_DT bottom\_NN there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT dark\_JJ ,\_, tunnel-like\_JJ passage\_NN ,\_, through\_IN which\_WDT came\_VBD a\_DT deathly\_RB ,\_, sickly\_JJ odour\_NN ,\_, the\_DT odour\_NN of\_IN old\_JJ earth\_NN newly\_RB turned\_VBD .\_.

As\_IN I\_PRP went\_VBD through\_IN the\_DT passage\_NN the\_DT smell\_NN grew\_VBD closer\_JJR and\_CC heavier\_JJR .\_.

At\_IN last\_JJ I\_PRP pulled\_VBD open\_VB a\_DT heavy\_JJ door\_NN which\_WDT stood\_VBD ajar\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC found\_VBD myself\_PRP in\_IN an\_DT old\_JJ ,\_, ruined\_VBN chapel\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT had\_VBD evidently\_RB been\_VBN used\_VBN as\_IN a\_DT graveyard\_NN .\_.

The\_DT roof\_NN was\_VBD broken\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN two\_CD places\_NNS were\_VBD steps\_NNS leading\_VBG to\_TO vaults\_NNS ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT ground\_NN had\_VBD recently\_RB been\_VBN dug\_VBN over\_IN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT earth\_NN placed\_VBN in\_IN great\_JJ wooden\_JJ boxes\_NNS ,\_, manifestly\_RB those\_DT which\_WDT had\_VBD been\_VBN brought\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT Slovaks\_NNPS .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD nobody\_NN about\_IN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP made\_VBD search\_NN for\_IN any\_DT further\_JJ outlet\_NN ,\_, but\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD none\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB I\_PRP went\_VBD over\_IN every\_DT inch\_NN of\_IN the\_DT ground\_NN ,\_, so\_RB as\_RB not\_RB to\_TO lose\_VB a\_DT chance\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP went\_VBD down\_RB even\_RB into\_IN the\_DT vaults\_NNS ,\_, where\_WRB the\_DT dim\_JJ light\_NN struggled\_VBD ,\_, although\_IN to\_TO do\_VB so\_RB was\_VBD a\_DT dread\_NN to\_TO my\_PRP$ very\_JJ soul\_NN .\_.

Into\_NNP two\_CD of\_IN these\_DT I\_PRP went\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC saw\_VBD nothing\_NN except\_IN fragments\_NNS of\_IN old\_JJ coffins\_NNS and\_CC piles\_NNS of\_IN dust\_NN ;\_: in\_IN the\_DT third\_JJ ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP made\_VBD a\_DT discovery\_NN .\_.

There\_RB ,\_, in\_IN one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT great\_JJ boxes\_NNS ,\_, of\_IN which\_WDT there\_EX were\_VBD fifty\_CD in\_IN all\_DT ,\_, on\_IN a\_DT pile\_NN of\_IN newly\_RB dug\_VBN earth\_NN ,\_, lay\_VBD the\_DT Count\_NN !\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD either\_CC dead\_JJ or\_CC asleep\_JJ ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB say\_VB which\_WDT --\_: for\_IN the\_DT eyes\_NNS were\_VBD open\_JJ and\_CC stony\_NN ,\_, but\_CC without\_IN the\_DT glassiness\_NN of\_IN death\_NN --\_: and\_CC the\_DT cheeks\_NNS had\_VBD the\_DT warmth\_NN of\_IN life\_NN through\_IN all\_DT their\_PRP$ pallor\_NN ;\_: the\_DT lips\_NNS were\_VBD as\_RB red\_JJ as\_IN ever\_RB .\_.

But\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT sign\_NN of\_IN movement\_NN ,\_, no\_DT pulse\_NN ,\_, no\_DT breath\_NN ,\_, no\_DT beating\_NN of\_IN the\_DT heart\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP bent\_JJ over\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC tried\_VBD to\_TO find\_VB any\_DT sign\_NN of\_IN life\_NN ,\_, but\_CC in\_IN vain\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB have\_VB lain\_VBN there\_RB long\_RB ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT earthy\_JJ smell\_NN would\_MD have\_VB passed\_VBN away\_RB in\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ hours\_NNS .\_.

By\_IN the\_DT side\_NN of\_IN the\_DT box\_NN was\_VBD its\_PRP$ cover\_NN ,\_, pierced\_VBN with\_IN holes\_NNS here\_RB and\_CC there\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP thought\_VBD he\_PRP might\_MD have\_VB the\_DT keys\_NNS on\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC when\_WRB I\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO search\_VB I\_PRP saw\_VBD the\_DT dead\_JJ eyes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, dead\_JJ though\_IN they\_PRP were\_VBD ,\_, such\_JJ a\_DT look\_NN of\_IN hate\_NN ,\_, though\_IN unconscious\_JJ of\_IN me\_PRP or\_CC my\_PRP$ presence\_NN ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP fled\_VBD from\_IN the\_DT place\_NN ,\_, and\_CC leaving\_VBG the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS room\_NN by\_IN the\_DT window\_NN ,\_, crawled\_VBD again\_RB up\_IN the\_DT castle\_NN wall\_NN .\_.

Regaining\_VBG my\_PRP$ room\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP threw\_VBD myself\_PRP panting\_VBG upon\_IN the\_DT bed\_NN and\_CC tried\_VBD to\_TO think\_VB ...\_: 29\_CD June\_NNP .\_.

--\_: To-day\_NN is\_VBZ the\_DT date\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ last\_JJ letter\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT Count\_NNP has\_VBZ taken\_VBN steps\_NNS to\_TO prove\_VB that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD genuine\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN again\_RB I\_PRP saw\_VBD him\_PRP leave\_VBP the\_DT castle\_NN by\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ window\_NN ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN my\_PRP$ clothes\_NNS .\_.

As\_IN he\_PRP went\_VBD down\_IN the\_DT wall\_NN ,\_, lizard\_NN fashion\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP wished\_VBD I\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT gun\_NN or\_CC some\_DT lethal\_JJ weapon\_NN ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP might\_MD destroy\_VB him\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP fear\_VBP that\_IN no\_DT weapon\_NN wrought\_VBD alone\_RB by\_IN man\_NN 's\_POS hand\_NN would\_MD have\_VB any\_DT effect\_NN on\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP dared\_VBD not\_RB wait\_VB to\_TO see\_VB him\_PRP return\_VB ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP feared\_VBD to\_TO see\_VB those\_DT weird\_JJ sisters\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP came\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO the\_DT library\_NN ,\_, and\_CC read\_VB there\_RB till\_IN I\_PRP fell\_VBD asleep\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD awakened\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP looked\_VBD at\_IN me\_PRP as\_RB grimly\_RB as\_IN a\_DT man\_NN can\_MD look\_VB as\_IN he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` To-morrow\_JJ ,\_, my\_PRP$ friend\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP must\_MD part\_VB .\_.

You\_PRP return\_VBP to\_TO your\_PRP$ beautiful\_JJ England\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP to\_TO some\_DT work\_NN which\_WDT may\_MD have\_VB such\_JJ an\_DT end\_NN that\_IN we\_PRP may\_MD never\_RB meet\_VB .\_.

Your\_PRP$ letter\_NN home\_NN has\_VBZ been\_VBN despatched\_VBN ;\_: to-morrow\_NN I\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB be\_VB here\_RB ,\_, but\_CC all\_DT shall\_MD be\_VB ready\_JJ for\_IN your\_PRP$ journey\_NN .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN come\_VB the\_DT Szgany\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP have\_VBP some\_DT labours\_NNS of\_IN their\_PRP$ own\_JJ here\_RB ,\_, and\_CC also\_RB come\_VBP some\_DT Slovaks\_NNPS .\_.

When\_WRB they\_PRP have\_VBP gone\_VBN ,\_, my\_PRP$ carriage\_NN shall\_MD come\_VB for\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC shall\_MD bear\_VB you\_PRP to\_TO the\_DT Borgo\_NNP Pass\_NN to\_TO meet\_VB the\_DT diligence\_NN from\_IN Bukovina\_NNP to\_TO Bistritz\_NNP .\_.

But\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP in\_IN hopes\_NNS that\_IN I\_PRP shall\_MD see\_VB more\_JJR of\_IN you\_PRP at\_IN Castle\_NNP Dracula\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP suspected\_VBD him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC determined\_VBN to\_TO test\_VB his\_PRP$ sincerity\_NN .\_.

Sincerity\_NN !\_.

It\_PRP seems\_VBZ like\_IN a\_DT profanation\_NN of\_IN the\_DT word\_NN to\_TO write\_VB it\_PRP in\_IN connection\_NN with\_IN such\_JJ a\_DT monster\_NN ,\_, so\_RB asked\_VBD him\_PRP point-blank\_JJ :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Why\_WRB may\_MD I\_PRP not\_RB go\_VB to-night\_JJ ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Because\_IN ,\_, dear\_RB sir\_NN ,\_, my\_PRP$ coachman\_NN and\_CC horses\_NNS are\_VBP away\_RB on\_IN a\_DT mission\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` But\_CC I\_PRP would\_MD walk\_VB with\_IN pleasure\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP want\_VBP to\_TO get\_VB away\_RP at\_IN once\_RB .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP smiled\_VBD ,\_, such\_PDT a\_DT soft\_JJ ,\_, smooth\_JJ ,\_, diabolical\_JJ smile\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP knew\_VBD there\_EX was\_VBD some\_DT trick\_NN behind\_IN his\_PRP$ smoothness\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` And\_CC your\_PRP$ baggage\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB care\_VB about\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP can\_MD send\_VB for\_IN it\_PRP some\_DT other\_JJ time\_NN .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT Count\_NNP stood\_VBD up\_RP ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT sweet\_JJ courtesy\_NN which\_WDT made\_VBD me\_PRP rub\_VB my\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ,\_, it\_PRP seemed\_VBD so\_RB real\_JJ :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP English\_NNP have\_VBP a\_DT saying\_NN which\_WDT is\_VBZ close\_JJ to\_TO my\_PRP$ heart\_NN ,\_, for\_IN its\_PRP$ spirit\_NN is\_VBZ that\_IN which\_WDT rules\_VBZ our\_PRP$ boyars\_NNS :\_: `\_`` Welcome\_VB the\_DT coming\_VBG ;\_: speed\_VB the\_DT parting\_NN guest\_NN .\_. '\_''

Come\_VB with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB young\_JJ friend\_NN .\_.

Not\_RB an\_DT hour\_NN shall\_MD you\_PRP wait\_VB in\_IN my\_PRP$ house\_NN against\_IN your\_PRP$ will\_NN ,\_, though\_IN sad\_JJ am\_VBP I\_PRP at\_IN your\_PRP$ going\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN you\_PRP so\_RB suddenly\_RB desire\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

Come\_VB !\_. ''\_''

With\_IN a\_DT stately\_JJ gravity\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP ,\_, with\_IN the\_DT lamp\_NN ,\_, preceded\_VBD me\_PRP down\_RP the\_DT stairs\_NNS and\_CC along\_IN the\_DT hall\_NN .\_.

Suddenly\_RB he\_PRP stopped\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Hark\_VB !\_. ''\_''

Close\_RB at\_IN hand\_NN came\_VBD the\_DT howling\_NN of\_IN many\_JJ wolves\_NNS .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD almost\_RB as\_IN if\_IN the\_DT sound\_NN sprang\_VBD up\_RP at\_IN the\_DT rising\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ hand\_NN ,\_, just\_RB as\_IN the\_DT music\_NN of\_IN a\_DT great\_JJ orchestra\_NN seems\_VBZ to\_TO leap\_VB under\_IN the\_DT bâton\_NN of\_IN the\_DT conductor\_NN .\_.

After\_IN a\_DT pause\_NN of\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP proceeded\_VBD ,\_, in\_IN his\_PRP$ stately\_JJ way\_NN ,\_, to\_TO the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, drew\_VBD back\_RP the\_DT ponderous\_JJ bolts\_NNS ,\_, unhooked\_VBD the\_DT heavy\_JJ chains\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC began\_VBD to\_TO draw\_VB it\_PRP open\_JJ .\_.

To\_TO my\_PRP$ intense\_JJ astonishment\_NN I\_PRP saw\_VBD that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD unlocked\_VBN .\_.

Suspiciously\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP looked\_VBD all\_DT round\_NN ,\_, but\_CC could\_MD see\_VB no\_DT key\_NN of\_IN any\_DT kind\_NN .\_.

As\_IN the\_DT door\_NN began\_VBD to\_TO open\_VB ,\_, the\_DT howling\_NN of\_IN the\_DT wolves\_NNS without\_IN grew\_VBD louder\_RBR and\_CC angrier\_JJR ;\_: their\_PRP$ red\_JJ jaws\_NNS ,\_, with\_IN champing\_VBG teeth\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC their\_PRP$ blunt-clawed\_JJ feet\_NNS as\_IN they\_PRP leaped\_VBD ,\_, came\_VBD in\_RP through\_IN the\_DT opening\_NN door\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP knew\_VBD then\_RB that\_IN to\_TO struggle\_VB at\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN against\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN was\_VBD useless\_JJ .\_.

With\_IN such\_JJ allies\_NNS as\_IN these\_DT at\_IN his\_PRP$ command\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD do\_VB nothing\_NN .\_.

But\_CC still\_RB the\_DT door\_NN continued\_VBD slowly\_RB to\_TO open\_VB ,\_, and\_CC only\_RB the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS body\_NN stood\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT gap\_NN .\_.

Suddenly\_RB it\_PRP struck\_VBD me\_PRP that\_IN this\_DT might\_MD be\_VB the\_DT moment\_NN and\_CC means\_NNS of\_IN my\_PRP$ doom\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP was\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB given\_VBN to\_TO the\_DT wolves\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC at\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ instigation\_NN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT diabolical\_JJ wickedness\_NN in\_IN the\_DT idea\_NN great\_JJ enough\_RB for\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN a\_DT last\_JJ chance\_NN I\_PRP cried\_VBD out\_RP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Shut\_VB the\_DT door\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP shall\_MD wait\_VB till\_IN morning\_NN !\_. ''\_''

and\_CC covered\_VBD my\_PRP$ face\_NN with\_IN my\_PRP$ hands\_NNS to\_TO hide\_VB my\_PRP$ tears\_NNS of\_IN bitter\_JJ disappointment\_NN .\_.

With\_IN one\_CD sweep\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ powerful\_JJ arm\_NN ,\_, the\_DT Count\_NNP threw\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN shut\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT great\_JJ bolts\_NNS clanged\_VBD and\_CC echoed\_VBD through\_IN the\_DT hall\_NN as\_IN they\_PRP shot\_VBD back\_RB into\_IN their\_PRP$ places\_NNS .\_.

In\_IN silence\_NN we\_PRP returned\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT library\_NN ,\_, and\_CC after\_IN a\_DT minute\_NN or\_CC two\_CD I\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO my\_PRP$ own\_JJ room\_NN .\_.

The\_DT last\_JJ I\_PRP saw\_VBD of\_IN Count\_NNP Dracula\_NNP was\_VBD his\_PRP$ kissing\_VBG his\_PRP$ hand\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP ;\_: with\_IN a\_DT red\_JJ light\_NN of\_IN triumph\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN a\_DT smile\_NN that\_WDT Judas\_VBZ in\_IN hell\_NN might\_MD be\_VB proud\_JJ of\_IN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN my\_PRP$ room\_NN and\_CC about\_IN to\_TO lie\_VB down\_RP ,\_, I\_PRP thought\_VBD I\_PRP heard\_VBD a\_DT whispering\_NN at\_IN my\_PRP$ door\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO it\_PRP softly\_RB and\_CC listened\_VBD .\_.

Unless\_IN my\_PRP$ ears\_NNS deceived\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP heard\_VBD the\_DT voice\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Back\_RB ,\_, back\_RB ,\_, to\_TO your\_PRP$ own\_JJ place\_NN !\_.

Your\_PRP$ time\_NN is\_VBZ not\_RB yet\_RB come\_VBN .\_.

Wait\_VB !\_.

Have\_VBP patience\_NN !\_.

To-night\_NN is\_VBZ mine\_JJ .\_.

To-morrow\_JJ night\_NN is\_VBZ yours\_PRP$ !\_. ''\_''

There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT low\_JJ ,\_, sweet\_JJ ripple\_NN of\_IN laughter\_NN ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN a\_DT rage\_NN I\_PRP threw\_VBD open\_VB the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, and\_CC saw\_VBD without\_IN the\_DT three\_CD terrible\_JJ women\_NNS licking\_VBG their\_PRP$ lips\_NNS .\_.

As\_IN I\_PRP appeared\_VBD they\_PRP all\_DT joined\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT horrible\_JJ laugh\_NN ,\_, and\_CC ran\_VBD away\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP came\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO my\_PRP$ room\_NN and\_CC threw\_VBD myself\_PRP on\_IN my\_PRP$ knees\_NNS .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ then\_RB so\_RB near\_IN the\_DT end\_NN ?\_.

To-morrow\_NN !\_.

to-morrow\_NN !\_.

Lord\_NNP ,\_, help\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC those\_DT to\_TO whom\_WP I\_PRP am\_VBP dear\_RB !\_.

30\_CD June\_NNP ,\_, morning\_NN .\_.

--\_: These\_DT may\_MD be\_VB the\_DT last\_JJ words\_NNS I\_PRP ever\_RB write\_VB in\_IN this\_DT diary\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP slept\_VBD till\_IN just\_RB before\_IN the\_DT dawn\_NN ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB I\_PRP woke\_VBD threw\_VBD myself\_PRP on\_IN my\_PRP$ knees\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP determined\_VBD that\_IN if\_IN Death\_NNP came\_VBD he\_PRP should\_MD find\_VB me\_PRP ready\_JJ .\_.

At\_IN last\_JJ I\_PRP felt\_VBD that\_IN subtle\_JJ change\_NN in\_IN the\_DT air\_NN ,\_, and\_CC knew\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN had\_VBD come\_VBN .\_.

Then\_RB came\_VBD the\_DT welcome\_JJ cock-crow\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP felt\_VBD that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD safe\_JJ .\_.

With\_IN a\_DT glad\_JJ heart\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP opened\_VBD my\_PRP$ door\_NN and\_CC ran\_VBD down\_RB to\_TO the\_DT hall\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD seen\_VBN that\_IN the\_DT door\_NN was\_VBD unlocked\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC now\_RB escape\_NN was\_VBD before\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

With\_IN hands\_NNS that\_WDT trembled\_VBD with\_IN eagerness\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP unhooked\_VBD the\_DT chains\_NNS and\_CC drew\_VBD back\_RP the\_DT massive\_JJ bolts\_NNS .\_.

But\_CC the\_DT door\_NN would\_MD not\_RB move\_VB .\_.

Despair\_NN seized\_VBD me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP pulled\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC pulled\_VBD ,\_, at\_IN the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, and\_CC shook\_VBD it\_PRP till\_IN ,\_, massive\_JJ as\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, it\_PRP rattled\_VBD in\_IN its\_PRP$ casement\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB the\_DT bolt\_NN shot\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN locked\_VBN after\_IN I\_PRP left\_VBD the\_DT Count\_NNP .\_.

Then\_RB a\_DT wild\_JJ desire\_NN took\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO obtain\_VB that\_DT key\_NN at\_IN any\_DT risk\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP determined\_VBD then\_RB and\_CC there\_RB to\_TO scale\_VB the\_DT wall\_NN again\_RB and\_CC gain\_VB the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS room\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP might\_MD kill\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC death\_NN now\_RB seemed\_VBD the\_DT happier\_JJR choice\_NN of\_IN evils\_NNS .\_.

Without\_IN a\_DT pause\_NN I\_PRP rushed\_VBD up\_RB to\_TO the\_DT east\_JJ window\_NN ,\_, and\_CC scrambled\_VBD down\_RP the\_DT wall\_NN ,\_, as\_IN before\_RB ,\_, into\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS room\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD empty\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC that\_DT was\_VBD as\_IN I\_PRP expected\_VBD .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB see\_VB a\_DT key\_NN anywhere\_RB ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT heap\_NN of\_IN gold\_NN remained\_VBD .\_.

I\_PRP went\_VBD through\_IN the\_DT door\_NN in\_IN the\_DT corner\_NN and\_CC down\_IN the\_DT winding\_VBG stair\_NN and\_CC along\_IN the\_DT dark\_JJ passage\_NN to\_TO the\_DT old\_JJ chapel\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP knew\_VBD now\_RB well\_RB enough\_RB where\_WRB to\_TO find\_VB the\_DT monster\_NN I\_PRP sought\_VBD .\_.

The\_DT great\_JJ box\_NN was\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ place\_NN ,\_, close\_NN against\_IN the\_DT wall\_NN ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT lid\_NN was\_VBD laid\_VBN on\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, not\_RB fastened\_VBN down\_RB ,\_, but\_CC with\_IN the\_DT nails\_NNS ready\_JJ in\_IN their\_PRP$ places\_NNS to\_TO be\_VB hammered\_VBN home\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP knew\_VBD I\_PRP must\_MD reach\_VB the\_DT body\_NN for\_IN the\_DT key\_NN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP raised\_VBD the\_DT lid\_NN ,\_, and\_CC laid\_VBD it\_PRP back\_RB against\_IN the\_DT wall\_NN ;\_: and\_CC then\_RB I\_PRP saw\_VBD something\_NN which\_WDT filled\_VBD my\_PRP$ very\_JJ soul\_NN with\_IN horror\_NN .\_.

There\_EX lay\_VBD the\_DT Count\_NNP ,\_, but\_CC looking\_VBG as\_IN if\_IN his\_PRP$ youth\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN half\_RB renewed\_VBN ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT white\_JJ hair\_NN and\_CC moustache\_NN were\_VBD changed\_VBN to\_TO dark\_JJ iron-grey\_NN ;\_: the\_DT cheeks\_NNS were\_VBD fuller\_JJR ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT white\_JJ skin\_NN seemed\_VBD ruby-red\_JJ underneath\_IN ;\_: the\_DT mouth\_NN was\_VBD redder\_JJR than\_IN ever\_RB ,\_, for\_IN on\_IN the\_DT lips\_NNS were\_VBD gouts\_NNS of\_IN fresh\_JJ blood\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT trickled\_VBD from\_IN the\_DT corners\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT mouth\_NN and\_CC ran\_VBD over\_IN the\_DT chin\_NN and\_CC neck\_NN .\_.

Even\_RB the\_DT deep\_JJ ,\_, burning\_NN eyes\_NNS seemed\_VBD set\_VBN amongst\_IN swollen\_JJ flesh\_NN ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT lids\_NNS and\_CC pouches\_NNS underneath\_IN were\_VBD bloated\_JJ .\_.

It\_PRP seemed\_VBD as\_IN if\_IN the\_DT whole\_JJ awful\_JJ creature\_NN were\_VBD simply\_RB gorged\_VBN with\_IN blood\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP lay\_VBD like\_IN a\_DT filthy\_JJ leech\_NN ,\_, exhausted\_VBN with\_IN his\_PRP$ repletion\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP shuddered\_VBD as\_IN I\_PRP bent\_JJ over\_RP to\_TO touch\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC every\_DT sense\_NN in\_IN me\_PRP revolted\_VBD at\_IN the\_DT contact\_NN ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO search\_VB ,\_, or\_CC I\_PRP was\_VBD lost\_VBN .\_.

The\_DT coming\_VBG night\_NN might\_MD see\_VB my\_PRP$ own\_JJ body\_NN a\_DT banquet\_NN in\_IN a\_DT similar\_JJ way\_NN to\_TO those\_DT horrid\_JJ three\_CD .\_.

I\_PRP felt\_VBD all\_DT over\_IN the\_DT body\_NN ,\_, but\_CC no\_DT sign\_NN could\_MD I\_PRP find\_VB of\_IN the\_DT key\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB I\_PRP stopped\_VBD and\_CC looked\_VBD at\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT mocking\_VBG smile\_NN on\_IN the\_DT bloated\_JJ face\_NN which\_WDT seemed\_VBD to\_TO drive\_VB me\_PRP mad\_JJ .\_.

This\_DT was\_VBD the\_DT being\_VBG I\_PRP was\_VBD helping\_VBG to\_TO transfer\_VB to\_TO London\_NNP ,\_, where\_WRB ,\_, perhaps\_RB ,\_, for\_IN centuries\_NNS to\_TO come\_VB he\_PRP might\_MD ,\_, amongst\_IN its\_PRP$ teeming\_VBG millions\_NNS ,\_, satiate\_VB his\_PRP$ lust\_NN for\_IN blood\_NN ,\_, and\_CC create\_VB a\_DT new\_JJ and\_CC ever-widening\_JJ circle\_NN of\_IN semi-demons\_NNS to\_TO batten\_VB on\_IN the\_DT helpless\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT very\_JJ thought\_NN drove\_VBD me\_PRP mad\_JJ .\_.

A\_DT terrible\_JJ desire\_NN came\_VBD upon\_IN me\_PRP to\_TO rid\_VB the\_DT world\_NN of\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT monster\_NN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT lethal\_JJ weapon\_NN at\_IN hand\_NN ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP seized\_VBD a\_DT shovel\_NN which\_WDT the\_DT workmen\_NNS had\_VBD been\_VBN using\_VBG to\_TO fill\_VB the\_DT cases\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC lifting\_VBG it\_PRP high\_JJ ,\_, struck\_VBD ,\_, with\_IN the\_DT edge\_NN downward\_RB ,\_, at\_IN the\_DT hateful\_JJ face\_NN .\_.

But\_CC as\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD so\_RB the\_DT head\_NN turned\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT eyes\_NNS fell\_VBD full\_JJ upon\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, with\_IN all\_DT their\_PRP$ blaze\_NN of\_IN basilisk\_NN horror\_NN .\_.

The\_DT sight\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO paralyse\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT shovel\_NN turned\_VBD in\_RP my\_PRP$ hand\_NN and\_CC glanced\_VBD from\_IN the\_DT face\_NN ,\_, merely\_RB making\_VBG a\_DT deep\_JJ gash\_NN above\_IN the\_DT forehead\_NN .\_.

The\_DT shovel\_NN fell\_VBD from\_IN my\_PRP$ hand\_NN across\_IN the\_DT box\_NN ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN I\_PRP pulled\_VBD it\_PRP away\_RB the\_DT flange\_NN of\_IN the\_DT blade\_NN caught\_VBD the\_DT edge\_NN of\_IN the\_DT lid\_NN which\_WDT fell\_VBD over\_IN again\_RB ,\_, and\_CC hid\_VBD the\_DT horrid\_JJ thing\_NN from\_IN my\_PRP$ sight\_NN .\_.

The\_DT last\_JJ glimpse\_NN I\_PRP had\_VBD was\_VBD of\_IN the\_DT bloated\_JJ face\_NN ,\_, blood-stained\_JJ and\_CC fixed\_VBN with\_IN a\_DT grin\_NN of\_IN malice\_NN which\_WDT would\_MD have\_VB held\_VBN its\_PRP$ own\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT nethermost\_JJ hell\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP thought\_VBD and\_CC thought\_VBD what\_WP should\_MD be\_VB my\_PRP$ next\_JJ move\_NN ,\_, but\_CC my\_PRP$ brain\_NN seemed\_VBD on\_IN fire\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP waited\_VBD with\_IN a\_DT despairing\_JJ feeling\_NN growing\_VBG over\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

As\_IN I\_PRP waited\_VBD I\_PRP heard\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT distance\_NN a\_DT gipsy\_JJ song\_NN sung\_VBN by\_IN merry\_JJ voices\_NNS coming\_VBG closer\_RB ,\_, and\_CC through\_IN their\_PRP$ song\_NN the\_DT rolling\_NN of\_IN heavy\_JJ wheels\_NNS and\_CC the\_DT cracking\_VBG of\_IN whips\_VBZ ;\_: the\_DT Szgany\_NNP and\_CC the\_DT Slovaks\_NNPS of\_IN whom\_WP the\_DT Count\_NNP had\_VBD spoken\_VBN were\_VBD coming\_VBG .\_.

With\_IN a\_DT last\_JJ look\_NN around\_IN and\_CC at\_IN the\_DT box\_NN which\_WDT contained\_VBD the\_DT vile\_JJ body\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP ran\_VBD from\_IN the\_DT place\_NN and\_CC gained\_VBD the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS room\_NN ,\_, determined\_VBN to\_TO rush\_VB out\_RP at\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN the\_DT door\_NN should\_MD be\_VB opened\_VBN .\_.

With\_IN strained\_JJ ears\_NNS ,\_, I\_PRP listened\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC heard\_VBD downstairs\_RB the\_DT grinding\_VBG of\_IN the\_DT key\_NN in\_IN the\_DT great\_JJ lock\_NN and\_CC the\_DT falling\_VBG back\_RB of\_IN the\_DT heavy\_JJ door\_NN .\_.

There\_EX must\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN some\_DT other\_JJ means\_NNS of\_IN entry\_NN ,\_, or\_CC some\_DT one\_CD had\_VBD a\_DT key\_NN for\_IN one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT locked\_VBN doors\_NNS .\_.

Then\_RB there\_EX came\_VBD the\_DT sound\_NN of\_IN many\_JJ feet\_NNS tramping\_VBG and\_CC dying\_VBG away\_RB in\_IN some\_DT passage\_NN which\_WDT sent\_VBD up\_RP a\_DT clanging\_NN echo\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP turned\_VBD to\_TO run\_VB down\_RP again\_RB towards\_IN the\_DT vault\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB I\_PRP might\_MD find\_VB the\_DT new\_JJ entrance\_NN ;\_: but\_CC at\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN there\_RB seemed\_VBD to\_TO come\_VB a\_DT violent\_JJ puff\_NN of\_IN wind\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT door\_NN to\_TO the\_DT winding\_VBG stair\_NN blew\_VBD to\_TO with\_IN a\_DT shock\_NN that\_WDT set\_VBD the\_DT dust\_NN from\_IN the\_DT lintels\_NNS flying\_VBG .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP ran\_VBD to\_TO push\_VB it\_PRP open\_JJ ,\_, I\_PRP found\_VBD that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD hopelessly\_RB fast\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD again\_RB a\_DT prisoner\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT net\_NN of\_IN doom\_NN was\_VBD closing\_VBG round\_JJ me\_PRP more\_RBR closely\_RB .\_.

As\_IN I\_PRP write\_VBP there\_EX is\_VBZ in\_IN the\_DT passage\_NN below\_IN a\_DT sound\_NN of\_IN many\_JJ tramping\_VBG feet\_NNS and\_CC the\_DT crash\_NN of\_IN weights\_NNS being\_VBG set\_VBN down\_RP heavily\_RB ,\_, doubtless\_VBZ the\_DT boxes\_NNS ,\_, with\_IN their\_PRP$ freight\_NN of\_IN earth\_NN .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT sound\_NN of\_IN hammering\_NN ;\_: it\_PRP is\_VBZ the\_DT box\_NN being\_VBG nailed\_VBN down\_RB .\_.

Now\_RB I\_PRP can\_MD hear\_VB the\_DT heavy\_JJ feet\_NNS tramping\_VBG again\_RB along\_IN the\_DT hall\_NN ,\_, with\_IN many\_JJ other\_JJ idle\_JJ feet\_NNS coming\_VBG behind\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT door\_NN is\_VBZ shut\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT chains\_NNS rattle\_VBP ;\_: there\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT grinding\_VBG of\_IN the\_DT key\_NN in\_IN the\_DT lock\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP can\_MD hear\_VB the\_DT key\_NN withdraw\_VB :\_: then\_RB another\_DT door\_NN opens\_VBZ and\_CC shuts\_VBZ ;\_: I\_PRP hear\_VBP the\_DT creaking\_NN of\_IN lock\_NN and\_CC bolt\_NN .\_.

Hark\_NN !\_.

in\_IN the\_DT courtyard\_NN and\_CC down\_IN the\_DT rocky\_JJ way\_NN the\_DT roll\_NN of\_IN heavy\_JJ wheels\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT crack\_NN of\_IN whips\_VBZ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT chorus\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Szgany\_NNP as\_IN they\_PRP pass\_VBP into\_IN the\_DT distance\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP alone\_RB in\_IN the\_DT castle\_NN with\_IN those\_DT awful\_JJ women\_NNS .\_.

Faugh\_NN !\_.

Mina\_NNP is\_VBZ a\_DT woman\_NN ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX is\_VBZ nought\_JJ in\_IN common\_JJ .\_.

They\_PRP are\_VBP devils\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT Pit\_NN !\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB remain\_VB alone\_RB with\_IN them\_PRP ;\_: I\_PRP shall\_MD try\_VB to\_TO scale\_VB the\_DT castle\_NN wall\_NN farther\_RBR than\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP yet\_RB attempted\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD take\_VB some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT gold\_NN with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, lest\_IN I\_PRP want\_VBP it\_PRP later\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP may\_MD find\_VB a\_DT way\_NN from\_IN this\_DT dreadful\_JJ place\_NN .\_.

And\_CC then\_RB away\_RB for\_IN home\_NN !\_.

away\_RB to\_TO the\_DT quickest\_JJS and\_CC nearest\_JJS train\_NN !\_.

away\_RB from\_IN this\_DT cursed\_JJ spot\_NN ,\_, from\_IN this\_DT cursed\_JJ land\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB the\_DT devil\_NNP and\_CC his\_PRP$ children\_NNS still\_RB walk\_VBP with\_IN earthly\_JJ feet\_NNS !\_.

At\_IN least\_JJS God\_NNP 's\_POS mercy\_NN is\_VBZ better\_JJR than\_IN that\_DT of\_IN these\_DT monsters\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT precipice\_NN is\_VBZ steep\_JJ and\_CC high\_JJ .\_.

At\_IN its\_PRP$ foot\_NN a\_DT man\_NN may\_MD sleep\_VB --\_: as\_IN a\_DT man\_NN .\_.

Good-bye\_JJ ,\_, all\_DT !\_.

Mina\_NNP !\_.

CHAPTER\_NNP V\_NNP Letter\_NNP from\_IN Miss\_NNP Mina\_NNP Murray\_NNP to\_TO Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP Westenra\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` 9\_CD May\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` My\_PRP$ dearest\_JJ Lucy\_NNP ,\_, --\_: ``\_`` Forgive\_VB my\_PRP$ long\_JJ delay\_NN in\_IN writing\_NN ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN simply\_RB overwhelmed\_VBN with\_IN work\_NN .\_.

The\_DT life\_NN of\_IN an\_DT assistant\_JJ schoolmistress\_NN is\_VBZ sometimes\_RB trying\_VBG .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP longing\_NN to\_TO be\_VB with\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC by\_IN the\_DT sea\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB we\_PRP can\_MD talk\_VB together\_RB freely\_RB and\_CC build\_VB our\_PRP$ castles\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT air\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN working\_VBG very\_RB hard\_RB lately\_RB ,\_, because\_IN I\_PRP want\_VBP to\_TO keep\_VB up\_RP with\_IN Jonathan\_NNP 's\_POS studies\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN practising\_VBG shorthand\_NN very\_RB assiduously\_RB .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP are\_VBP married\_VBN I\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB able\_JJ to\_TO be\_VB useful\_JJ to\_TO Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC if\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD stenograph\_VB well\_RB enough\_RB I\_PRP can\_MD take\_VB down\_RP what\_WP he\_PRP wants\_VBZ to\_TO say\_VB in\_IN this\_DT way\_NN and\_CC write\_VB it\_PRP out\_RP for\_IN him\_PRP on\_IN the\_DT typewriter\_NN ,\_, at\_IN which\_WDT also\_RB I\_PRP am\_VBP practising\_VBG very\_RB hard\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP and\_CC I\_PRP sometimes\_RB write\_VBP letters\_NNS in\_IN shorthand\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP is\_VBZ keeping\_VBG a\_DT stenographic\_JJ journal\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ travels\_NNS abroad\_RB .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP am\_VBP with\_IN you\_PRP I\_PRP shall\_MD keep\_VB a\_DT diary\_NN in\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ way\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB mean\_VB one\_CD of\_IN those\_DT two-pages-to-the-week-with-Sunday-squeezed-in-a-corner\_JJ diaries\_NNS ,\_, but\_CC a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN journal\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP can\_MD write\_VB in\_IN whenever\_WRB I\_PRP feel\_VBP inclined\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB suppose\_VB there\_EX will\_MD be\_VB much\_JJ of\_IN interest\_NN to\_TO other\_JJ people\_NNS ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB intended\_VBN for\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP may\_MD show\_VB it\_PRP to\_TO Jonathan\_NNP some\_DT day\_NN if\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ in\_IN it\_PRP anything\_NN worth\_JJ sharing\_NN ,\_, but\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ really\_RB an\_DT exercise\_NN book\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD try\_VB to\_TO do\_VB what\_WP I\_PRP see\_VBP lady\_NN journalists\_NNS do\_VBP :\_: interviewing\_VBG and\_CC writing\_VBG descriptions\_NNS and\_CC trying\_VBG to\_TO remember\_VB conversations\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP told\_VBN that\_IN ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT little\_JJ practice\_NN ,\_, one\_PRP can\_MD remember\_VB all\_DT that\_WDT goes\_VBZ on\_IN or\_CC that\_IN one\_CD hears\_VBZ said\_VBD during\_IN a\_DT day\_NN .\_.

However\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP shall\_MD see\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP will\_MD tell\_VB you\_PRP of\_IN my\_PRP$ little\_JJ plans\_NNS when\_WRB we\_PRP meet\_VBP .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP just\_RB had\_VBN a\_DT few\_JJ hurried\_VBN lines\_NNS from\_IN Jonathan\_NNP from\_IN Transylvania\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ well\_RB ,\_, and\_CC will\_MD be\_VB returning\_VBG in\_IN about\_RB a\_DT week\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP longing\_NN to\_TO hear\_VB all\_PDT his\_PRP$ news\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB so\_RB nice\_JJ to\_TO see\_VB strange\_JJ countries\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP wonder\_VBP if\_IN we\_PRP --\_: I\_PRP mean\_VBP Jonathan\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP --\_: shall\_MD ever\_RB see\_VB them\_PRP together\_RB .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ the\_DT ten\_CD o'clock\_RB bell\_NN ringing\_NN .\_.

Good-bye\_JJ .\_.

``\_`` Your\_PRP$ loving\_JJ ``\_`` Mina\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` Tell\_VB me\_PRP all\_PDT the\_DT news\_NN when\_WRB you\_PRP write\_VBP .\_.

You\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB told\_VBN me\_PRP anything\_NN for\_IN a\_DT long\_JJ time\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP hear\_VBP rumours\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC especially\_RB of\_IN a\_DT tall\_JJ ,\_, handsome\_JJ ,\_, curly-haired\_JJ man\_NN ???\_CD ''\_'' Letter\_NNP ,\_, Lucy\_NNP Westenra\_NNP to\_TO Mina\_NNP Murray\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` 17\_CD ,\_, Chatham\_NNP Street\_NNP ,\_, ``\_`` Wednesday\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` My\_PRP$ dearest\_JJ Mina\_NNP ,\_, --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP must\_MD say\_VB you\_PRP tax\_VB me\_PRP very\_RB unfairly\_RB with\_IN being\_VBG a\_DT bad\_JJ correspondent\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP wrote\_VBD to\_TO you\_PRP twice\_RB since\_IN we\_PRP parted\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC your\_PRP$ last\_JJ letter\_NN was\_VBD only\_RB your\_PRP$ second\_NN .\_.

Besides\_IN ,\_, I\_PRP have\_VBP nothing\_NN to\_TO tell\_VB you\_PRP .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ really\_RB nothing\_NN to\_TO interest\_VB you\_PRP .\_.

Town\_NNP is\_VBZ very\_RB pleasant\_JJ just\_RB now\_RB ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP go\_VBP a\_DT good\_JJ deal\_NN to\_TO picture-galleries\_NNS and\_CC for\_IN walks\_VBZ and\_CC rides\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT park\_NN .\_.

As\_IN to\_TO the\_DT tall\_JJ ,\_, curly-haired\_JJ man\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP suppose\_VBP it\_PRP was\_VBD the\_DT one\_NN who\_WP was\_VBD with\_IN me\_PRP at\_IN the\_DT last\_JJ Pop\_NN .\_.

Some\_DT one\_CD has\_VBZ evidently\_RB been\_VBN telling\_VBG tales\_NNS .\_.

That\_DT was\_VBD Mr.\_NNP Holmwood\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP often\_RB comes\_VBZ to\_TO see\_VB us\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP and\_CC mamma\_NN get\_VB on\_IN very\_RB well\_RB together\_RB ;\_: they\_PRP have\_VBP so\_RB many\_JJ things\_NNS to\_TO talk\_VB about\_IN in\_IN common\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP met\_VBD some\_DT time\_NN ago\_IN a\_DT man\_NN that\_WDT would\_MD just\_RB do\_VB for\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, if\_IN you\_PRP were\_VBD not\_RB already\_RB engaged\_VBN to\_TO Jonathan\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ an\_DT excellent\_JJ parti\_NN ,\_, being\_VBG handsome\_JJ ,\_, well\_RB off\_IN ,\_, and\_CC of\_IN good\_JJ birth\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT doctor\_NN and\_CC really\_RB clever\_JJ .\_.

Just\_RB fancy\_JJ !\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ only\_RB nine-and-twenty\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP has\_VBZ an\_DT immense\_JJ lunatic\_JJ asylum\_NN all\_DT under\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ care\_NN .\_.

Mr.\_NNP Holmwood\_NNP introduced\_VBD him\_PRP to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP called\_VBD here\_RB to\_TO see\_VB us\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC often\_RB comes\_VBZ now\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP think\_VBP he\_PRP is\_VBZ one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT most\_RBS resolute\_JJ men\_NNS I\_PRP ever\_RB saw\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC yet\_RB the\_DT most\_JJS calm\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP seems\_VBZ absolutely\_RB imperturbable\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP can\_MD fancy\_JJ what\_WP a\_DT wonderful\_JJ power\_NN he\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB over\_IN his\_PRP$ patients\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ a\_DT curious\_JJ habit\_NN of\_IN looking\_VBG one\_CD straight\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT face\_NN ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN trying\_VBG to\_TO read\_VB one\_PRP 's\_POS thoughts\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP tries\_VBZ this\_DT on\_IN very\_RB much\_RB with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP flatter\_VBP myself\_PRP he\_PRP has\_VBZ got\_VBN a\_DT tough\_JJ nut\_NN to\_TO crack\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP that\_IN from\_IN my\_PRP$ glass\_NN .\_.

Do\_VBP you\_PRP ever\_RB try\_VB to\_TO read\_VB your\_PRP$ own\_JJ face\_NN ?\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP can\_MD tell\_VB you\_PRP it\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB a\_DT bad\_JJ study\_NN ,\_, and\_CC gives\_VBZ you\_PRP more\_JJR trouble\_NN than\_IN you\_PRP can\_MD well\_RB fancy\_JJ if\_IN you\_PRP have\_VBP never\_RB tried\_VBN it\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP says\_VBZ that\_IN I\_PRP afford\_VBP him\_PRP a\_DT curious\_JJ psychological\_JJ study\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP humbly\_RB think\_VBP I\_PRP do\_VBP .\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB ,\_, as\_IN you\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, take\_VBP sufficient\_JJ interest\_NN in\_IN dress\_NN to\_TO be\_VB able\_JJ to\_TO describe\_VB the\_DT new\_JJ fashions\_NNS .\_.

Dress\_NNP is\_VBZ a\_DT bore\_VBN .\_.

That\_DT is\_VBZ slang\_NN again\_RB ,\_, but\_CC never\_RB mind\_NN ;\_: Arthur\_NNP says\_VBZ that\_IN every\_DT day\_NN .\_.

There\_RB ,\_, it\_PRP is\_VBZ all\_DT out\_IN .\_.

Mina\_NNP ,\_, we\_PRP have\_VBP told\_VBN all\_DT our\_PRP$ secrets\_NNS to\_TO each\_DT other\_JJ since\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD children\_NNS ;\_: we\_PRP have\_VBP slept\_VBN together\_RB and\_CC eaten\_VBN together\_RB ,\_, and\_CC laughed\_VBD and\_CC cried\_VBD together\_RB ;\_: and\_CC now\_RB ,\_, though\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP spoken\_VBN ,\_, I\_PRP would\_MD like\_VB to\_TO speak\_VB more\_JJR .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, Mina\_NNP ,\_, could\_MD n't\_RB you\_PRP guess\_VB ?\_.

I\_PRP love\_VBP him\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP blushing\_VBG as\_IN I\_PRP write\_VBP ,\_, for\_IN although\_IN I\_PRP think\_VBP he\_PRP loves\_VBZ me\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP has\_VBZ not\_RB told\_VBN me\_PRP so\_RB in\_IN words\_NNS .\_.

But\_CC oh\_UH ,\_, Mina\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP love\_VBP him\_PRP ;\_: I\_PRP love\_VBP him\_PRP ;\_: I\_PRP love\_VBP him\_PRP !\_.

There\_RB ,\_, that\_WDT does\_VBZ me\_PRP good\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP wish\_VBP I\_PRP were\_VBD with\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, dear\_RB ,\_, sitting\_VBG by\_IN the\_DT fire\_NN undressing\_VBG ,\_, as\_IN we\_PRP used\_VBD to\_TO sit\_VB ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP would\_MD try\_VB to\_TO tell\_VB you\_PRP what\_WP I\_PRP feel\_VBP .\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB know\_VB how\_WRB I\_PRP am\_VBP writing\_VBG this\_DT even\_RB to\_TO you\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP afraid\_JJ to\_TO stop\_VB ,\_, or\_CC I\_PRP should\_MD tear\_VB up\_RP the\_DT letter\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB want\_VB to\_TO stop\_VB ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP do\_VBP so\_RB want\_VB to\_TO tell\_VB you\_PRP all\_DT .\_.

Let\_VB me\_PRP hear\_VB from\_IN you\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, and\_CC tell\_VB me\_PRP all\_DT that\_IN you\_PRP think\_VBP about\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

Mina\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP must\_MD stop\_VB .\_.

Good-night\_JJ .\_.

Bless\_VB me\_PRP in\_IN your\_PRP$ prayers\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC ,\_, Mina\_NNP ,\_, pray\_NN for\_IN my\_PRP$ happiness\_NN .\_.

``\_`` LUCY\_NN .\_.

``\_`` P.S.\_NNP --\_: I\_PRP need\_VBP not\_RB tell\_VB you\_PRP this\_DT is\_VBZ a\_DT secret\_NN .\_.

Good-night\_JJ again\_RB .\_.

``\_`` L.\_NNP ''\_'' Letter\_NNP ,\_, Lucy\_NNP Westenra\_NNP to\_TO Mina\_NNP Murray\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` 24\_CD May\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` My\_PRP$ dearest\_JJ Mina\_NNP ,\_, --\_: ``\_`` Thanks\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC thanks\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC thanks\_NNS again\_RB for\_IN your\_PRP$ sweet\_JJ letter\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD so\_RB nice\_JJ to\_TO be\_VB able\_JJ to\_TO tell\_VB you\_PRP and\_CC to\_TO have\_VB your\_PRP$ sympathy\_NN .\_.

``\_`` My\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, it\_PRP never\_RB rains\_NNS but\_CC it\_PRP pours\_VBZ .\_.

How\_WRB true\_JJ the\_DT old\_JJ proverbs\_NNS are\_VBP .\_.

Here\_RB am\_VBP I\_PRP ,\_, who\_WP shall\_MD be\_VB twenty\_CD in\_IN September\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC yet\_RB I\_PRP never\_RB had\_VBD a\_DT proposal\_NN till\_IN to-day\_NN ,\_, not\_RB a\_DT real\_JJ proposal\_NN ,\_, and\_CC to-day\_JJ I\_PRP have\_VBP had\_VBD three\_CD .\_.

Just\_RB fancy\_JJ !\_.

THREE\_CD proposals\_NNS in\_IN one\_CD day\_NN !\_.

Is\_VBZ n't\_RB it\_PRP awful\_JJ !\_.

I\_PRP feel\_VBP sorry\_JJ ,\_, really\_RB and\_CC truly\_RB sorry\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN two\_CD of\_IN the\_DT poor\_JJ fellows\_NNS .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, Mina\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP so\_RB happy\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB know\_VB what\_WP to\_TO do\_VB with\_IN myself\_PRP .\_.

And\_CC three\_CD proposals\_NNS !\_.

But\_CC ,\_, for\_IN goodness\_NN '\_'' sake\_NN ,\_, do\_VBP n't\_RB tell\_VB any\_DT of\_IN the\_DT girls\_NNS ,\_, or\_CC they\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB getting\_VBG all\_DT sorts\_NNS of\_IN extravagant\_JJ ideas\_NNS and\_CC imagining\_VBG themselves\_PRP injured\_VBD and\_CC slighted\_VBD if\_IN in\_IN their\_PRP$ very\_RB first\_JJ day\_NN at\_IN home\_NN they\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB get\_VB six\_CD at\_IN least\_JJS .\_.

Some\_DT girls\_NNS are\_VBP so\_RB vain\_JJ !\_.

You\_PRP and\_CC I\_PRP ,\_, Mina\_NNP dear\_RB ,\_, who\_WP are\_VBP engaged\_VBN and\_CC are\_VBP going\_VBG to\_TO settle\_VB down\_RP soon\_RB soberly\_RB into\_IN old\_JJ married\_JJ women\_NNS ,\_, can\_MD despise\_VB vanity\_NN .\_.

Well\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP must\_MD tell\_VB you\_PRP about\_IN the\_DT three\_CD ,\_, but\_CC you\_PRP must\_MD keep\_VB it\_PRP a\_DT secret\_NN ,\_, dear\_RB ,\_, from\_IN every\_DT one\_CD ,\_, except\_IN ,\_, of\_IN course\_NN ,\_, Jonathan\_NNP .\_.

You\_PRP will\_MD tell\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, because\_IN I\_PRP would\_MD ,\_, if\_IN I\_PRP were\_VBD in\_IN your\_PRP$ place\_NN ,\_, certainly\_RB tell\_VB Arthur\_NNP .\_.

A\_DT woman\_NN ought\_MD to\_TO tell\_VB her\_PRP$ husband\_NN everything\_NN --\_: do\_VBP n't\_RB you\_PRP think\_VB so\_RB ,\_, dear\_RB ?\_.

--\_: and\_CC I\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB fair\_JJ .\_.

Men\_NN like\_IN women\_NNS ,\_, certainly\_RB their\_PRP$ wives\_NNS ,\_, to\_TO be\_VB quite\_RB as\_RB fair\_JJ as\_IN they\_PRP are\_VBP ;\_: and\_CC women\_NNS ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP afraid\_JJ ,\_, are\_VBP not\_RB always\_RB quite\_RB as\_RB fair\_JJ as\_IN they\_PRP should\_MD be\_VB .\_.

Well\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, number\_NN One\_NN came\_VBD just\_RB before\_IN lunch\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP told\_VBD you\_PRP of\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, Dr.\_NNP John\_NNP Seward\_NNP ,\_, the\_DT lunatic-asylum\_JJ man\_NN ,\_, with\_IN the\_DT strong\_JJ jaw\_NN and\_CC the\_DT good\_JJ forehead\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD very\_RB cool\_JJ outwardly\_RB ,\_, but\_CC was\_VBD nervous\_JJ all\_PDT the\_DT same\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD evidently\_RB been\_VBN schooling\_NN himself\_PRP as\_IN to\_TO all\_DT sorts\_NNS of\_IN little\_JJ things\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC remembered\_VBD them\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC he\_PRP almost\_RB managed\_VBD to\_TO sit\_VB down\_RP on\_IN his\_PRP$ silk\_NN hat\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT men\_NNS do\_VBP n't\_RB generally\_RB do\_VB when\_WRB they\_PRP are\_VBP cool\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB when\_WRB he\_PRP wanted\_VBD to\_TO appear\_VB at\_IN ease\_NN he\_PRP kept\_VBD playing\_VBG with\_IN a\_DT lancet\_NN in\_IN a\_DT way\_NN that\_WDT made\_VBD me\_PRP nearly\_RB scream\_VBP .\_.

He\_PRP spoke\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, Mina\_NNP ,\_, very\_RB straightforwardly\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP told\_VBD me\_PRP how\_WRB dear\_RB I\_PRP was\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP ,\_, though\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD known\_VBN me\_PRP so\_RB little\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC what\_WP his\_PRP$ life\_NN would\_MD be\_VB with\_IN me\_PRP to\_TO help\_VB and\_CC cheer\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD going\_VBG to\_TO tell\_VB me\_PRP how\_WRB unhappy\_JJ he\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB if\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB care\_VB for\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC when\_WRB he\_PRP saw\_VBD me\_PRP cry\_VB he\_PRP said\_VBD that\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT brute\_JJ and\_CC would\_MD not\_RB add\_VB to\_TO my\_PRP$ present\_JJ trouble\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP broke\_VBD off\_RP and\_CC asked\_VBD if\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD love\_VB him\_PRP in\_IN time\_NN ;\_: and\_CC when\_WRB I\_PRP shook\_VBD my\_PRP$ head\_NN his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS trembled\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB with\_IN some\_DT hesitation\_NN he\_PRP asked\_VBD me\_PRP if\_IN I\_PRP cared\_VBD already\_RB for\_IN any\_DT one\_NN else\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP put\_VBD it\_PRP very\_RB nicely\_RB ,\_, saying\_VBG that\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB want\_VB to\_TO wring\_VB my\_PRP$ confidence\_NN from\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC only\_RB to\_TO know\_VB ,\_, because\_IN if\_IN a\_DT woman\_NN 's\_POS heart\_NN was\_VBD free\_JJ a\_DT man\_NN might\_MD have\_VB hope\_NN .\_.

And\_CC then\_RB ,\_, Mina\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP felt\_VBD a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN duty\_NN to\_TO tell\_VB him\_PRP that\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD some\_DT one\_CD .\_.

I\_PRP only\_RB told\_VBD him\_PRP that\_IN much\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB he\_PRP stood\_VBD up\_RP ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP looked\_VBD very\_RB strong\_JJ and\_CC very\_RB grave\_JJ as\_IN he\_PRP took\_VBD both\_DT my\_PRP$ hands\_NNS in\_IN his\_PRP$ and\_CC said\_VBD he\_PRP hoped\_VBD I\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB happy\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN if\_IN I\_PRP ever\_RB wanted\_VBD a\_DT friend\_NN I\_PRP must\_MD count\_VB him\_PRP one\_CD of\_IN my\_PRP$ best\_JJS .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, Mina\_NNP dear\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP ca\_MD n't\_RB help\_VB crying\_VBG :\_: and\_CC you\_PRP must\_MD excuse\_VB this\_DT letter\_NN being\_VBG all\_DT blotted\_VBD .\_.

Being\_VBG proposed\_VBN to\_TO is\_VBZ all\_DT very\_RB nice\_JJ and\_CC all\_PDT that\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN thing\_NN ,\_, but\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ n't\_RB at\_IN all\_PDT a\_DT happy\_JJ thing\_NN when\_WRB you\_PRP have\_VBP to\_TO see\_VB a\_DT poor\_JJ fellow\_NN ,\_, whom\_WP you\_PRP know\_VBP loves\_VBZ you\_PRP honestly\_RB ,\_, going\_VBG away\_RB and\_CC looking\_VBG all\_DT broken-hearted\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO know\_VB that\_DT ,\_, no\_DT matter\_NN what\_WP he\_PRP may\_MD say\_VB at\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP are\_VBP passing\_VBG quite\_RB out\_IN of\_IN his\_PRP$ life\_NN .\_.

My\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP must\_MD stop\_VB here\_RB at\_IN present\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP feel\_VBP so\_RB miserable\_JJ ,\_, though\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP so\_RB happy\_JJ .\_.

``\_`` Evening\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Arthur\_NNP has\_VBZ just\_RB gone\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP feel\_VBP in\_IN better\_JJR spirits\_NNS than\_IN when\_WRB I\_PRP left\_VBD off\_RP ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD go\_VB on\_IN telling\_VBG you\_PRP about\_IN the\_DT day\_NN .\_.

Well\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, number\_NN Two\_CD came\_VBD after\_IN lunch\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ such\_JJ a\_DT nice\_JJ fellow\_NN ,\_, an\_DT American\_NNP from\_IN Texas\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP looks\_VBZ so\_RB young\_JJ and\_CC so\_RB fresh\_JJ that\_IN it\_PRP seems\_VBZ almost\_RB impossible\_JJ that\_IN he\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN to\_TO so\_RB many\_JJ places\_NNS and\_CC has\_VBZ had\_VBN such\_JJ adventures\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP sympathise\_VBP with\_IN poor\_JJ Desdemona\_NNP when\_WRB she\_PRP had\_VBD such\_PDT a\_DT dangerous\_JJ stream\_NN poured\_VBN in\_IN her\_PRP$ ear\_NN ,\_, even\_RB by\_IN a\_DT black\_JJ man\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP suppose\_VBP that\_IN we\_PRP women\_NNS are\_VBP such\_JJ cowards\_NNS that\_IN we\_PRP think\_VBP a\_DT man\_NN will\_MD save\_VB us\_PRP from\_IN fears\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP marry\_VBP him\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP now\_RB what\_WP I\_PRP would\_MD do\_VB if\_IN I\_PRP were\_VBD a\_DT man\_NN and\_CC wanted\_VBD to\_TO make\_VB a\_DT girl\_NN love\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

No\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB ,\_, for\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP telling\_VBG us\_PRP his\_PRP$ stories\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC Arthur\_NNP never\_RB told\_VBD any\_DT ,\_, and\_CC yet\_RB --\_: --\_: My\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP somewhat\_RB previous\_JJ .\_.

Mr.\_NNP Quincey\_NNP P.\_NNP Morris\_NNP found\_VBD me\_PRP alone\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP seems\_VBZ that\_IN a\_DT man\_NN always\_RB does\_VBZ find\_VB a\_DT girl\_NN alone\_RB .\_.

No\_RB ,\_, he\_PRP does\_VBZ n't\_RB ,\_, for\_IN Arthur\_NNP tried\_VBD twice\_RB to\_TO make\_VB a\_DT chance\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP helping\_VBG him\_PRP all\_DT I\_PRP could\_MD ;\_: I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB ashamed\_JJ to\_TO say\_VB it\_PRP now\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD tell\_VB you\_PRP beforehand\_RB that\_IN Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP does\_VBZ n't\_RB always\_RB speak\_VB slang\_NN --\_: that\_WDT is\_VBZ to\_TO say\_VB ,\_, he\_PRP never\_RB does\_VBZ so\_RB to\_TO strangers\_NNS or\_CC before\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ really\_RB well\_RB educated\_VBN and\_CC has\_VBZ exquisite\_JJ manners\_NNS --\_: but\_CC he\_PRP found\_VBD out\_RP that\_IN it\_PRP amused\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO hear\_VB him\_PRP talk\_VB American\_JJ slang\_NN ,\_, and\_CC whenever\_WRB I\_PRP was\_VBD present\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT one\_NN to\_TO be\_VB shocked\_VBN ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD such\_JJ funny\_JJ things\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP afraid\_JJ ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, he\_PRP has\_VBZ to\_TO invent\_VB it\_PRP all\_DT ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP fits\_VBZ exactly\_RB into\_IN whatever\_WDT else\_RB he\_PRP has\_VBZ to\_TO say\_VB .\_.

But\_CC this\_DT is\_VBZ a\_DT way\_NN slang\_NN has\_VBZ .\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB know\_VB myself\_PRP if\_IN I\_PRP shall\_MD ever\_RB speak\_VB slang\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB know\_VB if\_IN Arthur\_NNP likes\_VBZ it\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP never\_RB heard\_VBN him\_PRP use\_VB any\_DT as\_RB yet\_RB .\_.

Well\_RB ,\_, Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP sat\_VBD down\_RB beside\_IN me\_PRP and\_CC looked\_VBD as\_IN happy\_JJ and\_CC jolly\_RB as\_IN he\_PRP could\_MD ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB all\_PDT the\_DT same\_JJ that\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD very\_RB nervous\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP took\_VBD my\_PRP$ hand\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD ever\_RB so\_RB sweetly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` `\_`` Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP know\_VBP I\_PRP ai\_VBP n't\_RB good\_JJ enough\_RB to\_TO regulate\_VB the\_DT fixin\_NN 's\_POS of\_IN your\_PRP$ little\_JJ shoes\_NNS ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP guess\_VBP if\_IN you\_PRP wait\_VBP till\_IN you\_PRP find\_VBP a\_DT man\_NN that\_WDT is\_VBZ you\_PRP will\_MD go\_VB join\_VB them\_PRP seven\_CD young\_JJ women\_NNS with\_IN the\_DT lamps\_NNS when\_WRB you\_PRP quit\_VBP .\_.

Wo\_MD n't\_RB you\_PRP just\_RB hitch\_NN up\_RP alongside\_IN of\_IN me\_PRP and\_CC let\_VB us\_PRP go\_VB down\_RP the\_DT long\_JJ road\_NN together\_RB ,\_, driving\_VBG in\_IN double\_JJ harness\_NN ?\_. '\_''

``\_`` Well\_UH ,\_, he\_PRP did\_VBD look\_VB so\_RB good-humoured\_JJ and\_CC so\_RB jolly\_RB that\_IN it\_PRP did\_VBD n't\_RB seem\_VB half\_RB so\_RB hard\_JJ to\_TO refuse\_VB him\_PRP as\_IN it\_PRP did\_VBD poor\_JJ Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP ;\_: so\_IN I\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, as\_RB lightly\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB know\_VB anything\_NN of\_IN hitching\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD n't\_RB broken\_VBN to\_TO harness\_NN at\_IN all\_DT yet\_RB .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP said\_VBD that\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD spoken\_VBN in\_IN a\_DT light\_JJ manner\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP hoped\_VBD that\_IN if\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD made\_VBN a\_DT mistake\_NN in\_IN doing\_VBG so\_RB on\_IN so\_RB grave\_JJ ,\_, so\_RB momentous\_JJ ,\_, an\_DT occasion\_NN for\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP would\_MD forgive\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP really\_RB did\_VBD look\_VB serious\_JJ when\_WRB he\_PRP was\_VBD saying\_VBG it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD n't\_RB help\_VB feeling\_VBG a\_DT bit\_NN serious\_JJ too\_RB --\_: I\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, Mina\_NNP ,\_, you\_PRP will\_MD think\_VB me\_PRP a\_DT horrid\_JJ flirt\_NN --\_: though\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD n't\_RB help\_VB feeling\_VBG a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN exultation\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD number\_NN two\_CD in\_IN one\_CD day\_NN .\_.

And\_CC then\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, before\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD say\_VB a\_DT word\_NN he\_PRP began\_VBD pouring\_VBG out\_RP a\_DT perfect\_JJ torrent\_NN of\_IN love-making\_NN ,\_, laying\_VBG his\_PRP$ very\_JJ heart\_NN and\_CC soul\_NN at\_IN my\_PRP$ feet\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP looked\_VBD so\_RB earnest\_JJ over\_IN it\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP shall\_MD never\_RB again\_RB think\_VB that\_IN a\_DT man\_NN must\_MD be\_VB playful\_JJ always\_RB ,\_, and\_CC never\_RB earnest\_JJ ,\_, because\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ merry\_JJ at\_IN times\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP suppose\_VBP he\_PRP saw\_VBD something\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ face\_NN which\_WDT checked\_VBD him\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP suddenly\_RB stopped\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD with\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN manly\_JJ fervour\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD have\_VB loved\_VBN him\_PRP for\_IN if\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN free\_JJ :\_: --\_: ``\_`` `\_`` Lucy\_NNP ,\_, you\_PRP are\_VBP an\_DT honest-hearted\_JJ girl\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP know\_VBP .\_.

I\_PRP should\_MD not\_RB be\_VB here\_RB speaking\_VBG to\_TO you\_PRP as\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP now\_RB if\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB believe\_VB you\_PRP clean\_JJ grit\_NN ,\_, right\_RB through\_IN to\_TO the\_DT very\_JJ depths\_NNS of\_IN your\_PRP$ soul\_NN .\_.

Tell\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, like\_IN one\_CD good\_JJ fellow\_NN to\_TO another\_DT ,\_, is\_VBZ there\_RB any\_DT one\_CD else\_NN that\_IN you\_PRP care\_VB for\_IN ?\_.

And\_CC if\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ I\_PRP 'll\_MD never\_RB trouble\_NN you\_PRP a\_DT hair\_NN 's\_POS breadth\_NN again\_RB ,\_, but\_CC will\_MD be\_VB ,\_, if\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD let\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, a\_DT very\_RB faithful\_JJ friend\_NN .\_. '\_''

``\_`` My\_PRP$ dear\_RB Mina\_NNP ,\_, why\_WRB are\_VBP men\_NNS so\_RB noble\_JJ when\_WRB we\_PRP women\_NNS are\_VBP so\_RB little\_RB worthy\_JJ of\_IN them\_PRP ?\_.

Here\_RB was\_VBD I\_PRP almost\_RB making\_VBG fun\_NN of\_IN this\_DT great-hearted\_JJ ,\_, true\_JJ gentleman\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP burst\_VBP into\_IN tears\_NNS --\_: I\_PRP am\_VBP afraid\_JJ ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, you\_PRP will\_MD think\_VB this\_DT a\_DT very\_RB sloppy\_JJ letter\_NN in\_IN more\_JJR ways\_NNS than\_IN one\_CD --\_: and\_CC I\_PRP really\_RB felt\_VBD very\_RB badly\_RB .\_.

Why\_WRB ca\_MD n't\_RB they\_PRP let\_VB a\_DT girl\_NN marry\_VB three\_CD men\_NNS ,\_, or\_CC as\_RB many\_JJ as\_IN want\_VB her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC save\_VB all\_PDT this\_DT trouble\_NN ?\_.

But\_CC this\_DT is\_VBZ heresy\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB say\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP glad\_JJ to\_TO say\_VB that\_IN ,\_, though\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD crying\_VBG ,\_, I\_PRP was\_VBD able\_JJ to\_TO look\_VB into\_IN Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP 's\_POS brave\_VBP eyes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP told\_VBD him\_PRP out\_RP straight\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` `\_`` Yes\_UH ,\_, there\_EX is\_VBZ some\_DT one\_CD I\_NN love\_NN ,\_, though\_IN he\_PRP has\_VBZ not\_RB told\_VBN me\_PRP yet\_RB that\_IN he\_PRP even\_RB loves\_VBZ me\_PRP .\_. '\_''

I\_PRP was\_VBD right\_JJ to\_TO speak\_VB to\_TO him\_PRP so\_RB frankly\_RB ,\_, for\_IN quite\_RB a\_DT light\_NN came\_VBD into\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP put\_VBD out\_RP both\_DT his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS and\_CC took\_VBD mine\_NN --\_: I\_PRP think\_VBP I\_PRP put\_VBP them\_PRP into\_IN his\_PRP$ --\_: and\_CC said\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT hearty\_JJ way\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` `\_`` That\_DT 's\_VBZ my\_PRP$ brave\_VB girl\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP 's\_VBZ better\_JJR worth\_NN being\_VBG late\_JJ for\_IN a\_DT chance\_NN of\_IN winning\_VBG you\_PRP than\_IN being\_VBG in\_IN time\_NN for\_IN any\_DT other\_JJ girl\_NN in\_IN the\_DT world\_NN .\_.

Do\_VBP n't\_RB cry\_VB ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB .\_.

If\_IN it\_PRP 's\_VBZ for\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP 'm\_VBP a\_DT hard\_JJ nut\_NN to\_TO crack\_VB ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP take\_VBP it\_PRP standing\_VBG up\_RP .\_.

If\_IN that\_DT other\_JJ fellow\_NN does\_VBZ n't\_RB know\_VB his\_PRP$ happiness\_NN ,\_, well\_RB ,\_, he\_PRP 'd\_MD better\_RB look\_VB for\_IN it\_PRP soon\_RB ,\_, or\_CC he\_PRP 'll\_MD have\_VB to\_TO deal\_VB with\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

Little\_JJ girl\_NN ,\_, your\_PRP$ honesty\_NN and\_CC pluck\_VB have\_VBP made\_VBN me\_PRP a\_DT friend\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_DT 's\_VBZ rarer\_JJR than\_IN a\_DT lover\_NN ;\_: it\_PRP 's\_VBZ more\_RBR unselfish\_JJ anyhow\_NN .\_.

My\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP 'm\_VBP going\_VBG to\_TO have\_VB a\_DT pretty\_RB lonely\_JJ walk\_NN between\_IN this\_DT and\_CC Kingdom\_NNP Come\_VBP .\_.

Wo\_MD n't\_RB you\_PRP give\_VB me\_PRP one\_CD kiss\_NN ?\_.

It\_PRP 'll\_MD be\_VB something\_NN to\_TO keep\_VB off\_RP the\_DT darkness\_NN now\_RB and\_CC then\_RB .\_.

You\_PRP can\_MD ,\_, you\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, if\_IN you\_PRP like\_VBP ,\_, for\_IN that\_DT other\_JJ good\_JJ fellow\_NN --\_: he\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB a\_DT good\_JJ fellow\_NN ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT fine\_JJ fellow\_NN ,\_, or\_CC you\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB love\_VB him\_PRP --\_: has\_VBZ n't\_RB spoken\_VBN yet\_RB .\_. '\_''

That\_DT quite\_RB won\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, Mina\_NNP ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD brave\_VB and\_CC sweet\_JJ of\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC noble\_JJ ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, to\_TO a\_DT rival\_NN --\_: was\_VBD n't\_RB it\_PRP ?\_.

--\_: and\_CC he\_PRP so\_RB sad\_JJ ;\_: so\_IN I\_PRP leant\_VBD over\_RB and\_CC kissed\_VBD him\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP stood\_VBD up\_RP with\_IN my\_PRP$ two\_CD hands\_NNS in\_IN his\_PRP$ ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN he\_PRP looked\_VBD down\_RB into\_IN my\_PRP$ face\_NN --\_: I\_PRP am\_VBP afraid\_JJ I\_PRP was\_VBD blushing\_VBG very\_RB much\_RB --\_: he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` `\_`` Little\_JJ girl\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP hold\_VBP your\_PRP$ hand\_NN ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP 've\_VBP kissed\_VBN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC if\_IN these\_DT things\_NNS do\_VBP n't\_RB make\_VB us\_PRP friends\_NNS nothing\_NN ever\_RB will\_MD .\_.

Thank\_VB you\_PRP for\_IN your\_PRP$ sweet\_JJ honesty\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC good-bye\_NN .\_. '\_''

He\_PRP wrung\_VBD my\_PRP$ hand\_NN ,\_, and\_CC taking\_VBG up\_RP his\_PRP$ hat\_NN ,\_, went\_VBD straight\_RB out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT room\_NN without\_IN looking\_VBG back\_RB ,\_, without\_IN a\_DT tear\_VB or\_CC a\_DT quiver\_NN or\_CC a\_DT pause\_NN ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP crying\_VBG like\_IN a\_DT baby\_NN .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, why\_WRB must\_MD a\_DT man\_NN like\_IN that\_DT be\_VB made\_VBN unhappy\_JJ when\_WRB there\_EX are\_VBP lots\_NNS of\_IN girls\_NNS about\_IN who\_WP would\_MD worship\_NN the\_DT very\_JJ ground\_NN he\_PRP trod\_VBD on\_IN ?\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP I\_PRP would\_MD if\_IN I\_PRP were\_VBD free\_JJ --\_: only\_RB I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB want\_VB to\_TO be\_VB free\_JJ .\_.

My\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, this\_DT quite\_RB upset\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP feel\_VBP I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB write\_VB of\_IN happiness\_NN just\_RB at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, after\_IN telling\_VBG you\_PRP of\_IN it\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB wish\_VB to\_TO tell\_VB of\_IN the\_DT number\_NN three\_CD until\_IN it\_PRP can\_MD be\_VB all\_DT happy\_JJ .\_.

``\_`` Ever\_RB your\_PRP$ loving\_JJ ``\_`` Lucy\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` P.S.\_NNP --\_: Oh\_UH ,\_, about\_IN number\_NN Three\_NNP --\_: I\_PRP need\_VBP n't\_RB tell\_VB you\_PRP of\_IN number\_NN Three\_NNP ,\_, need\_VB I\_PRP ?\_.

Besides\_IN ,\_, it\_PRP was\_VBD all\_RB so\_RB confused\_JJ ;\_: it\_PRP seemed\_VBD only\_RB a\_DT moment\_NN from\_IN his\_PRP$ coming\_VBG into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN till\_IN both\_CC his\_PRP$ arms\_NNS were\_VBD round\_JJ me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP was\_VBD kissing\_VBG me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP very\_RB ,\_, very\_RB happy\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB know\_VB what\_WP I\_PRP have\_VBP done\_VBN to\_TO deserve\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD only\_RB try\_VB in\_IN the\_DT future\_NN to\_TO show\_VB that\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB ungrateful\_JJ to\_TO God\_NNP for\_IN all\_DT His\_PRP$ goodness\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP in\_IN sending\_VBG to\_TO me\_PRP such\_PDT a\_DT lover\_NN ,\_, such\_PDT a\_DT husband\_NN ,\_, and\_CC such\_PDT a\_DT friend\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Good-bye\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

-LRB-\_-LRB- Kept\_NN in\_IN phonograph\_NN -RRB-\_-RRB- 25\_CD May\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Ebb\_NN tide\_NN in\_IN appetite\_NN to-day\_NN .\_.

Can\_MD not\_RB eat\_VB ,\_, can\_MD not\_RB rest\_VB ,\_, so\_RB diary\_NN instead\_RB .\_.

Since\_IN my\_PRP$ rebuff\_NN of\_IN yesterday\_NN I\_PRP have\_VBP a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN empty\_JJ feeling\_NN ;\_: nothing\_NN in\_IN the\_DT world\_NN seems\_VBZ of\_IN sufficient\_JJ importance\_NN to\_TO be\_VB worth\_JJ the\_DT doing\_VBG ...\_: .\_.

As\_IN I\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT only\_JJ cure\_NN for\_IN this\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN thing\_NN was\_VBD work\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP went\_VBD down\_RB amongst\_IN the\_DT patients\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP picked\_VBD out\_RP one\_CD who\_WP has\_VBZ afforded\_VBN me\_PRP a\_DT study\_NN of\_IN much\_JJ interest\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ so\_RB quaint\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP determined\_VBN to\_TO understand\_VB him\_PRP as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD .\_.

To-day\_VB I\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO get\_VB nearer\_IN than\_IN ever\_RB before\_IN to\_TO the\_DT heart\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ mystery\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP questioned\_VBD him\_PRP more\_RBR fully\_RB than\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD ever\_RB done\_VBN ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT view\_NN to\_TO making\_VBG myself\_PRP master\_NN of\_IN the\_DT facts\_NNS of\_IN his\_PRP$ hallucination\_NN .\_.

In\_IN my\_PRP$ manner\_NN of\_IN doing\_VBG it\_PRP there\_EX was\_VBD ,\_, I\_PRP now\_RB see\_VBP ,\_, something\_NN of\_IN cruelty\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO wish\_VB to\_TO keep\_VB him\_PRP to\_TO the\_DT point\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ madness\_NN --\_: a\_DT thing\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP avoid\_VBP with\_IN the\_DT patients\_NNS as\_IN I\_PRP would\_MD the\_DT mouth\_NN of\_IN hell\_NN .\_.

-LRB-\_-LRB- Mem.\_NNP ,\_, under\_IN what\_WP circumstances\_NNS would\_MD I\_PRP not\_RB avoid\_VB the\_DT pit\_NN of\_IN hell\_NN ?\_. -RRB-\_-RRB-

Omnia\_NNP Romæ\_NNP venalia\_NN sunt\_NN .\_.

Hell\_NNP has\_VBZ its\_PRP$ price\_NN !\_.

verb\_VB .\_.

sap\_VB .\_.

If\_IN there\_EX be\_VB anything\_NN behind\_IN this\_DT instinct\_NN it\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB valuable\_JJ to\_TO trace\_VB it\_PRP afterwards\_RB accurately\_RB ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD better\_JJR commence\_NN to\_TO do\_VB so\_RB ,\_, therefore\_RB --\_: R.\_NNP M.\_NNP Renfield\_NNP ,\_, ætat\_NN 59\_CD .\_.

--\_: Sanguine\_JJ temperament\_NN ;\_: great\_JJ physical\_JJ strength\_NN ;\_: morbidly\_RB excitable\_JJ ;\_: periods\_NNS of\_IN gloom\_NN ,\_, ending\_VBG in\_IN some\_DT fixed\_JJ idea\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB make\_VB out\_RP .\_.

I\_PRP presume\_VBP that\_IN the\_DT sanguine\_JJ temperament\_NN itself\_PRP and\_CC the\_DT disturbing\_JJ influence\_NN end\_NN in\_IN a\_DT mentally-accomplished\_JJ finish\_NN ;\_: a\_DT possibly\_RB dangerous\_JJ man\_NN ,\_, probably\_RB dangerous\_JJ if\_IN unselfish\_JJ .\_.

In\_IN selfish\_JJ men\_NNS caution\_NN is\_VBZ as\_RB secure\_JJ an\_DT armour\_NN for\_IN their\_PRP$ foes\_NNS as\_IN for\_IN themselves\_PRP .\_.

What\_WP I\_PRP think\_VBP of\_IN on\_IN this\_DT point\_NN is\_VBZ ,\_, when\_WRB self\_NN is\_VBZ the\_DT fixed\_JJ point\_NN the\_DT centripetal\_JJ force\_NN is\_VBZ balanced\_VBN with\_IN the\_DT centrifugal\_JJ ;\_: when\_WRB duty\_NN ,\_, a\_DT cause\_NN ,\_, etc.\_NN ,\_, is\_VBZ the\_DT fixed\_JJ point\_NN ,\_, the\_DT latter\_JJ force\_NN is\_VBZ paramount\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC only\_RB accident\_NN or\_CC a\_DT series\_NN of\_IN accidents\_NNS can\_MD balance\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

Letter\_NNP ,\_, Quincey\_NNP P.\_NNP Morris\_NNP to\_TO Hon.\_NNP Arthur\_NNP Holmwood\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` 25\_CD May\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` My\_PRP$ dear\_RB Art\_NNP ,\_, --\_: ``\_`` We\_PRP 've\_VBP told\_VBN yarns\_NNS by\_IN the\_DT camp-fire\_NN in\_IN the\_DT prairies\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC dressed\_VBD one\_CD another\_DT 's\_POS wounds\_NNS after\_IN trying\_VBG a\_DT landing\_NN at\_IN the\_DT Marquesas\_NNP ;\_: and\_CC drunk\_JJ healths\_NNS on\_IN the\_DT shore\_NN of\_IN Titicaca\_NNP .\_.

There\_EX are\_VBP more\_JJR yarns\_NNS to\_TO be\_VB told\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC other\_JJ wounds\_NNS to\_TO be\_VB healed\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC another\_DT health\_NN to\_TO be\_VB drunk\_JJ .\_.

Wo\_MD n't\_RB you\_PRP let\_VB this\_DT be\_VB at\_IN my\_PRP$ camp-fire\_JJ to-morrow\_JJ night\_NN ?\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP no\_DT hesitation\_NN in\_IN asking\_VBG you\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP know\_VBP a\_DT certain\_JJ lady\_NN is\_VBZ engaged\_VBN to\_TO a\_DT certain\_JJ dinner-party\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN you\_PRP are\_VBP free\_JJ .\_.

There\_EX will\_MD only\_RB be\_VB one\_CD other\_JJ ,\_, our\_PRP$ old\_JJ pal\_NN at\_IN the\_DT Korea\_NNP ,\_, Jack\_NNP Seward\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP 's\_VBZ coming\_VBG ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP both\_DT want\_VBP to\_TO mingle\_VB our\_PRP$ weeps\_NNS over\_IN the\_DT wine-cup\_NN ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO drink\_VB a\_DT health\_NN with\_IN all\_DT our\_PRP$ hearts\_NNS to\_TO the\_DT happiest\_JJS man\_NN in\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT wide\_JJ world\_NN ,\_, who\_WP has\_VBZ won\_VBN the\_DT noblest\_JJS heart\_NN that\_IN God\_NNP has\_VBZ made\_VBN and\_CC the\_DT best\_JJS worth\_JJ winning\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP promise\_VBP you\_PRP a\_DT hearty\_JJ welcome\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT loving\_JJ greeting\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT health\_NN as\_RB true\_JJ as\_IN your\_PRP$ own\_JJ right\_JJ hand\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP shall\_MD both\_DT swear\_VBP to\_TO leave\_VB you\_PRP at\_IN home\_NN if\_IN you\_PRP drink\_VBP too\_RB deep\_JJ to\_TO a\_DT certain\_JJ pair\_NN of\_IN eyes\_NNS .\_.

Come\_VB !\_.

``\_`` Yours\_NNP ,\_, as\_IN ever\_RB and\_CC always\_RB ,\_, ``\_`` Quincey\_NNP P.\_NNP Morris\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

Telegram\_NN from\_IN Arthur\_NNP Holmwood\_NNP to\_TO Quincey\_NNP P.\_NNP Morris\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` 26\_CD May\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` Count\_VB me\_PRP in\_IN every\_DT time\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP bear\_VBP messages\_NNS which\_WDT will\_MD make\_VB both\_DT your\_PRP$ ears\_NNS tingle\_VBP .\_.

``\_`` Art\_NN .\_. ''\_''

CHAPTER\_NNP VI\_NNP MINA\_NNP MURRAY\_NNP 'S\_POS JOURNAL\_NN 24\_CD July\_NNP .\_.

Whitby\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Lucy\_NNP met\_VBD me\_PRP at\_IN the\_DT station\_NN ,\_, looking\_VBG sweeter\_JJR and\_CC lovelier\_JJR than\_IN ever\_RB ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP drove\_VBD up\_IN to\_TO the\_DT house\_NN at\_IN the\_DT Crescent\_NNP in\_IN which\_WDT they\_PRP have\_VBP rooms\_NNS .\_.

This\_DT is\_VBZ a\_DT lovely\_JJ place\_NN .\_.

The\_DT little\_JJ river\_NN ,\_, the\_DT Esk\_NN ,\_, runs\_VBZ through\_IN a\_DT deep\_JJ valley\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT broadens\_VBZ out\_RP as\_IN it\_PRP comes\_VBZ near\_IN the\_DT harbour\_NN .\_.

A\_DT great\_JJ viaduct\_NN runs\_VBZ across\_IN ,\_, with\_IN high\_JJ piers\_NNS ,\_, through\_IN which\_WDT the\_DT view\_NN seems\_VBZ somehow\_RB further\_RBR away\_RB than\_IN it\_PRP really\_RB is\_VBZ .\_.

The\_DT valley\_NN is\_VBZ beautifully\_RB green\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ so\_RB steep\_JJ that\_IN when\_WRB you\_PRP are\_VBP on\_IN the\_DT high\_JJ land\_NN on\_IN either\_DT side\_NN you\_PRP look\_VBP right\_RB across\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, unless\_IN you\_PRP are\_VBP near\_RB enough\_JJ to\_TO see\_VB down\_RP .\_.

The\_DT houses\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT old\_JJ town\_NN --\_: the\_DT side\_NN away\_RB from\_IN us\_PRP --\_: are\_VBP all\_DT red-roofed\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC seem\_VBP piled\_VBN up\_IN one\_CD over\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ anyhow\_NN ,\_, like\_IN the\_DT pictures\_NNS we\_PRP see\_VBP of\_IN Nuremberg\_NNP .\_.

Right\_RB over\_IN the\_DT town\_NN is\_VBZ the\_DT ruin\_VB of\_IN Whitby\_NNP Abbey\_NNP ,\_, which\_WDT was\_VBD sacked\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT Danes\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC which\_WDT is\_VBZ the\_DT scene\_NN of\_IN part\_NN of\_IN ``\_`` Marmion\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' where\_WRB the\_DT girl\_NN was\_VBD built\_VBN up\_RP in\_IN the\_DT wall\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT most\_RBS noble\_JJ ruin\_VBP ,\_, of\_IN immense\_JJ size\_NN ,\_, and\_CC full\_JJ of\_IN beautiful\_JJ and\_CC romantic\_JJ bits\_NNS ;\_: there\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT legend\_NN that\_IN a\_DT white\_JJ lady\_NN is\_VBZ seen\_VBN in\_IN one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT windows\_NNS .\_.

Between\_IN it\_PRP and\_CC the\_DT town\_NN there\_EX is\_VBZ another\_DT church\_NN ,\_, the\_DT parish\_NN one\_CD ,\_, round\_NN which\_WDT is\_VBZ a\_DT big\_JJ graveyard\_NN ,\_, all\_DT full\_JJ of\_IN tombstones\_NNS .\_.

This\_DT is\_VBZ to\_TO my\_PRP$ mind\_NN the\_DT nicest\_JJS spot\_NN in\_IN Whitby\_NNP ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP lies\_VBZ right\_RB over\_IN the\_DT town\_NN ,\_, and\_CC has\_VBZ a\_DT full\_JJ view\_NN of\_IN the\_DT harbour\_NN and\_CC all\_DT up\_RP the\_DT bay\_NN to\_TO where\_WRB the\_DT headland\_NN called\_VBN Kettleness\_NNP stretches\_VBZ out\_RP into\_IN the\_DT sea\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP descends\_VBZ so\_RB steeply\_RB over\_IN the\_DT harbour\_NN that\_IN part\_NN of\_IN the\_DT bank\_NN has\_VBZ fallen\_VBN away\_RB ,\_, and\_CC some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT graves\_NNS have\_VBP been\_VBN destroyed\_VBN .\_.

In\_IN one\_CD place\_NN part\_NN of\_IN the\_DT stonework\_NN of\_IN the\_DT graves\_NNS stretches\_VBZ out\_RP over\_IN the\_DT sandy\_JJ pathway\_NN far\_RB below\_IN .\_.

There\_EX are\_VBP walks\_VBZ ,\_, with\_IN seats\_NNS beside\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, through\_IN the\_DT churchyard\_NN ;\_: and\_CC people\_NNS go\_VB and\_CC sit\_VB there\_RB all\_DT day\_NN long\_RB looking\_VBG at\_IN the\_DT beautiful\_JJ view\_NN and\_CC enjoying\_VBG the\_DT breeze\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD come\_VB and\_CC sit\_VB here\_RB very\_RB often\_RB myself\_PRP and\_CC work\_NN .\_.

Indeed\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP writing\_VBG now\_RB ,\_, with\_IN my\_PRP$ book\_NN on\_IN my\_PRP$ knee\_NN ,\_, and\_CC listening\_VBG to\_TO the\_DT talk\_NN of\_IN three\_CD old\_JJ men\_NNS who\_WP are\_VBP sitting\_VBG beside\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

They\_PRP seem\_VBP to\_TO do\_VB nothing\_NN all\_DT day\_NN but\_CC sit\_VB up\_RP here\_RB and\_CC talk\_NN .\_.

The\_DT harbour\_NN lies\_VBZ below\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, with\_IN ,\_, on\_IN the\_DT far\_JJ side\_NN ,\_, one\_CD long\_JJ granite\_NN wall\_NN stretching\_VBG out\_RP into\_IN the\_DT sea\_NN ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT curve\_NN outwards\_RB at\_IN the\_DT end\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, in\_IN the\_DT middle\_NN of\_IN which\_WDT is\_VBZ a\_DT lighthouse\_NNP .\_.

A\_DT heavy\_JJ sea-wall\_NN runs\_VBZ along\_RB outside\_JJ of\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

On\_IN the\_DT near\_JJ side\_NN ,\_, the\_DT sea-wall\_NN makes\_VBZ an\_DT elbow\_NN crooked\_JJ inversely\_RB ,\_, and\_CC its\_PRP$ end\_NN too\_RB has\_VBZ a\_DT lighthouse\_NNP .\_.

Between\_IN the\_DT two\_CD piers\_NNS there\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT narrow\_JJ opening\_NN into\_IN the\_DT harbour\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT then\_RB suddenly\_RB widens\_VBZ .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ nice\_JJ at\_IN high\_JJ water\_NN ;\_: but\_CC when\_WRB the\_DT tide\_NN is\_VBZ out\_IN it\_PRP shoals\_VBZ away\_RB to\_TO nothing\_NN ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX is\_VBZ merely\_RB the\_DT stream\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Esk\_NN ,\_, running\_VBG between\_IN banks\_NNS of\_IN sand\_NN ,\_, with\_IN rocks\_NNS here\_RB and\_CC there\_RB .\_.

Outside\_IN the\_DT harbour\_NN on\_IN this\_DT side\_NN there\_RB rises\_VBZ for\_IN about\_IN half\_PDT a\_DT mile\_NN a\_DT great\_JJ reef\_NN ,\_, the\_DT sharp\_JJ edge\_NN of\_IN which\_WDT runs\_VBZ straight\_RB out\_RB from\_IN behind\_IN the\_DT south\_JJ lighthouse\_NNP .\_.

At\_IN the\_DT end\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT buoy\_VB with\_IN a\_DT bell\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT swings\_VBZ in\_IN bad\_JJ weather\_NN ,\_, and\_CC sends\_VBZ in\_IN a\_DT mournful\_JJ sound\_NN on\_IN the\_DT wind\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP have\_VBP a\_DT legend\_NN here\_RB that\_IN when\_WRB a\_DT ship\_NN is\_VBZ lost\_VBN bells\_NNS are\_VBP heard\_VBN out\_RP at\_IN sea\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD ask\_VB the\_DT old\_JJ man\_NN about\_IN this\_DT ;\_: he\_PRP is\_VBZ coming\_VBG this\_DT way\_NN ...\_: .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT funny\_JJ old\_JJ man\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB awfully\_RB old\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN is\_VBZ all\_DT gnarled\_VBN and\_CC twisted\_VBN like\_IN the\_DT bark\_NN of\_IN a\_DT tree\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP tells\_VBZ me\_PRP that\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ nearly\_RB a\_DT hundred\_CD ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT sailor\_NN in\_IN the\_DT Greenland\_NNP fishing\_NN fleet\_NN when\_WRB Waterloo\_NNP was\_VBD fought\_VBN .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP afraid\_JJ ,\_, a\_DT very\_RB sceptical\_JJ person\_NN ,\_, for\_IN when\_WRB I\_PRP asked\_VBD him\_PRP about\_IN the\_DT bells\_NNS at\_IN sea\_NN and\_CC the\_DT White\_NNP Lady\_NNP at\_IN the\_DT abbey\_NN he\_PRP said\_VBD very\_RB brusquely\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP would\_MD n't\_RB fash\_VB masel\_NN '\_'' about\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, miss\_VB .\_.

Them\_NN things\_NNS be\_VB all\_DT wore\_VBN out\_RP .\_.

Mind\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB say\_VB that\_IN they\_PRP never\_RB was\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP do\_VBP say\_VB that\_IN they\_PRP was\_VBD n't\_RB in\_IN my\_PRP$ time\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP be\_VB all\_DT very\_RB well\_RB for\_IN comers\_NNS and\_CC trippers\_NNS ,\_, an\_DT '\_'' the\_DT like\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC not\_RB for\_IN a\_DT nice\_JJ young\_JJ lady\_NN like\_IN you\_PRP .\_.

Them\_NN feet-folks\_NNS from\_IN York\_NNP and\_CC Leeds\_NNP that\_IN be\_VB always\_RB eatin\_VBN '\_'' cured\_VBN herrin\_NN 's\_VBZ an\_DT '\_POS drinkin\_NN '\_'' tea\_NN an\_DT '\_POS lookin\_NN '\_'' out\_RP to\_TO buy\_VB cheap\_JJ jet\_NN would\_MD creed\_NN aught\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP wonder\_VBP masel\_NN '\_'' who\_WP 'd\_MD be\_VB bothered\_VBN tellin\_NN '\_'' lies\_VBZ to\_TO them\_PRP --\_: even\_RB the\_DT newspapers\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT is\_VBZ full\_JJ of\_IN fool-talk\_NN .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP thought\_VBD he\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB a\_DT good\_JJ person\_NN to\_TO learn\_VB interesting\_JJ things\_NNS from\_IN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP asked\_VBD him\_PRP if\_IN he\_PRP would\_MD mind\_VB telling\_VBG me\_PRP something\_NN about\_IN the\_DT whale-fishing\_NN in\_IN the\_DT old\_JJ days\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD just\_RB settling\_VBG himself\_PRP to\_TO begin\_VB when\_WRB the\_DT clock\_NN struck\_VBD six\_CD ,\_, whereupon\_NN he\_PRP laboured\_VBD to\_TO get\_VB up\_RP ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP must\_MD gang\_NN ageeanwards\_NNS home\_NN now\_RB ,\_, miss\_VBP .\_.

My\_PRP$ grand-daughter\_NN does\_VBZ n't\_RB like\_VB to\_TO be\_VB kept\_VBN waitin\_NN '\_'' when\_WRB the\_DT tea\_NN is\_VBZ ready\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP takes\_VBZ me\_PRP time\_NN to\_TO crammle\_RB aboon\_VB the\_DT grees\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN there\_EX be\_VB a\_DT many\_JJ of\_IN 'em\_PRP ;\_: an\_DT '\_'' ,\_, miss\_VB ,\_, I\_PRP lack\_VBP belly-timber\_JJ sairly\_NN by\_IN the\_DT clock\_NN .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP hobbled\_VBD away\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB him\_PRP hurrying\_VBG ,\_, as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN he\_PRP could\_MD ,\_, down\_IN the\_DT steps\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT steps\_NNS are\_VBP a\_DT great\_JJ feature\_NN on\_IN the\_DT place\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP lead\_VBP from\_IN the\_DT town\_NN up\_IN to\_TO the\_DT church\_NN ,\_, there\_EX are\_VBP hundreds\_NNS of\_IN them\_PRP --\_: I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB know\_VB how\_WRB many\_JJ --\_: and\_CC they\_PRP wind\_VBP up\_RP in\_IN a\_DT delicate\_JJ curve\_NN ;\_: the\_DT slope\_NN is\_VBZ so\_RB gentle\_JJ that\_IN a\_DT horse\_NN could\_MD easily\_RB walk\_VB up\_IN and\_CC down\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP think\_VBP they\_PRP must\_MD originally\_RB have\_VB had\_VBN something\_NN to\_TO do\_VB with\_IN the\_DT abbey\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD go\_VB home\_NN too\_RB .\_.

Lucy\_NNP went\_VBD out\_RP visiting\_VBG with\_IN her\_PRP$ mother\_NN ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN they\_PRP were\_VBD only\_RB duty\_NN calls\_NNS ,\_, I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB go\_VB .\_.

They\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB home\_NN by\_IN this\_DT .\_.

1\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP came\_VBD up\_RP here\_RB an\_DT hour\_NN ago\_RB with\_IN Lucy\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT most\_RBS interesting\_JJ talk\_NN with\_IN my\_PRP$ old\_JJ friend\_NN and\_CC the\_DT two\_CD others\_NNS who\_WP always\_RB come\_VBP and\_CC join\_VBP him\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ evidently\_RB the\_DT Sir\_NNP Oracle\_NNP of\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP should\_MD think\_VB must\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN in\_IN his\_PRP$ time\_NN a\_DT most\_RBS dictatorial\_JJ person\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB admit\_VB anything\_NN ,\_, and\_CC downfaces\_NNS everybody\_NN .\_.

If\_IN he\_PRP ca\_MD n't\_RB out-argue\_VB them\_PRP he\_PRP bullies\_VBZ them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB takes\_VBZ their\_PRP$ silence\_NN for\_IN agreement\_NN with\_IN his\_PRP$ views\_NNS .\_.

Lucy\_NNP was\_VBD looking\_VBG sweetly\_RB pretty\_RB in\_IN her\_PRP$ white\_JJ lawn\_NN frock\_NN ;\_: she\_PRP has\_VBZ got\_VBN a\_DT beautiful\_JJ colour\_NN since\_IN she\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN here\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP noticed\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT old\_JJ men\_NNS did\_VBD not\_RB lose\_VB any\_DT time\_NN in\_IN coming\_VBG up\_RP and\_CC sitting\_VBG near\_IN her\_PRP when\_WRB we\_PRP sat\_VBD down\_RB .\_.

She\_PRP is\_VBZ so\_RB sweet\_JJ with\_IN old\_JJ people\_NNS ;\_: I\_PRP think\_VBP they\_PRP all\_DT fell\_VBD in\_IN love\_NN with\_IN her\_PRP on\_IN the\_DT spot\_NN .\_.

Even\_RB my\_PRP$ old\_JJ man\_NN succumbed\_VBD and\_CC did\_VBD not\_RB contradict\_VB her\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC gave\_VBD me\_PRP double\_JJ share\_NN instead\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP got\_VBD him\_PRP on\_IN the\_DT subject\_NN of\_IN the\_DT legends\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP went\_VBD off\_RP at\_IN once\_RB into\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN sermon\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD try\_VB to\_TO remember\_VB it\_PRP and\_CC put\_VBD it\_PRP down\_RP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` It\_PRP be\_VB all\_DT fool-talk\_NN ,\_, lock\_NN ,\_, stock\_NN ,\_, and\_CC barrel\_NN ;\_: that\_DT 's\_VBZ what\_WP it\_PRP be\_VB ,\_, an\_DT '\_'' nowt\_NN else\_RB .\_.

These\_DT bans\_NNS an\_DT '\_'' wafts\_VBZ an\_DT '\_POS boh-ghosts\_NNS an\_DT '\_'' barguests\_VBZ an\_DT '\_'' bogles\_VBZ an\_DT '\_'' all\_DT anent\_NN them\_PRP is\_VBZ only\_RB fit\_JJ to\_TO set\_VB bairns\_NNS an\_DT '\_POS dizzy\_JJ women\_NNS a-belderin\_NN '\_'' .\_.

They\_PRP be\_VB nowt\_JJ but\_CC air-blebs\_NNS .\_.

They\_PRP ,\_, an\_DT '\_'' all\_DT grims\_NNS an\_DT '\_POS signs\_NNS an\_DT '\_POS warnin\_NN 's\_POS ,\_, be\_VB all\_DT invented\_VBN by\_IN parsons\_NNS an\_DT '\_'' illsome\_JJ beuk-bodies\_NNS an\_DT '\_POS railway\_NN touters\_NNS to\_TO skeer\_VB an\_DT '\_POS scunner\_NN hafflin\_NN 's\_POS ,\_, an\_DT '\_'' to\_TO get\_VB folks\_NNS to\_TO do\_VB somethin'\_NN that\_IN they\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB other\_JJ incline\_NN to\_TO .\_.

It\_PRP makes\_VBZ me\_PRP ireful\_JJ to\_TO think\_VB o\_NN '\_'' them\_PRP .\_.

Why\_WRB ,\_, it\_PRP 's\_VBZ them\_PRP that\_IN ,\_, not\_RB content\_NN with\_IN printin\_NN '\_'' lies\_VBZ on\_IN paper\_NN an\_DT '\_POS preachin\_NN '\_'' them\_PRP out\_IN of\_IN pulpits\_NNS ,\_, does\_VBZ want\_VB to\_TO be\_VB cuttin\_VBN '\_'' them\_PRP on\_IN the\_DT tombstones\_NNS .\_.

Look\_VB here\_RB all\_DT around\_IN you\_PRP in\_IN what\_WDT airt\_NN ye\_PRP will\_MD ;\_: all\_DT them\_PRP steans\_NNS ,\_, holdin\_NN '\_'' up\_RP their\_PRP$ heads\_NNS as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN they\_PRP can\_MD out\_IN of\_IN their\_PRP$ pride\_NN ,\_, is\_VBZ acant\_JJ --\_: simply\_RB tumblin\_NN '\_'' down\_RP with\_IN the\_DT weight\_NN o\_NN '\_'' the\_DT lies\_NNS wrote\_VBD on\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, `\_`` Here\_RB lies\_VBZ the\_DT body\_NN '\_'' or\_CC `\_`` Sacred\_JJ to\_TO the\_DT memory\_NN '\_'' wrote\_VBD on\_IN all\_DT of\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, an\_DT '\_'' yet\_RB in\_IN nigh\_JJ half\_NN of\_IN them\_PRP there\_RB bea\_VBD n't\_RB no\_DT bodies\_NNS at\_IN all\_DT ;\_: an\_DT '\_'' the\_DT memories\_NNS of\_IN them\_PRP bea\_VBP n't\_RB cared\_VBD a\_DT pinch\_NN of\_IN snuff\_NN about\_IN ,\_, much\_RB less\_RBR sacred\_JJ .\_.

Lies\_VBZ all\_DT of\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, nothin\_NN '\_'' but\_CC lies\_VBZ of\_IN one\_CD kind\_NN or\_CC another\_DT !\_.

My\_PRP$ gog\_NN ,\_, but\_CC it\_PRP 'll\_MD be\_VB a\_DT quare\_JJ scowderment\_NN at\_IN the\_DT Day\_NN of\_IN Judgment\_NN when\_WRB they\_PRP come\_VBP tumblin\_NN '\_'' up\_RB in\_IN their\_PRP$ death-sarks\_NNS ,\_, all\_DT jouped\_VBD together\_RB an\_DT '\_POS tryin\_NN '\_'' to\_TO drag\_VB their\_PRP$ tombsteans\_NNS with\_IN them\_PRP to\_TO prove\_VB how\_WRB good\_JJ they\_PRP was\_VBD ;\_: some\_DT of\_IN them\_PRP trimmlin\_NN '\_'' and\_CC ditherin\_NN '\_'' ,\_, with\_IN their\_PRP$ hands\_NNS that\_WDT dozzened\_VBD an\_DT '\_POS slippy\_NN from\_IN lyin\_NN '\_'' in\_IN the\_DT sea\_NN that\_IN they\_PRP ca\_MD n't\_RB even\_RB keep\_VB their\_PRP$ grup\_NN o\_NN '\_'' them\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB from\_IN the\_DT old\_JJ fellow\_NN 's\_POS self-satisfied\_JJ air\_NN and\_CC the\_DT way\_NN in\_IN which\_WDT he\_PRP looked\_VBD round\_NN for\_IN the\_DT approval\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ cronies\_NNS that\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD ``\_`` showing\_VBG off\_RP ,\_, ''\_'' so\_IN I\_PRP put\_VBD in\_RP a\_DT word\_NN to\_TO keep\_VB him\_PRP going\_VBG :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, Mr.\_NNP Swales\_NNP ,\_, you\_PRP ca\_MD n't\_RB be\_VB serious\_JJ .\_.

Surely\_RB these\_DT tombstones\_NNS are\_VBP not\_RB all\_RB wrong\_JJ ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Yabblins\_NNS !\_.

There\_EX may\_MD be\_VB a\_DT poorish\_JJ few\_JJ not\_RB wrong\_JJ ,\_, savin\_NN '\_'' where\_WRB they\_PRP make\_VBP out\_RP the\_DT people\_NNS too\_RB good\_JJ ;\_: for\_IN there\_EX be\_VB folk\_NN that\_WDT do\_VBP think\_VB a\_DT balm-bowl\_NN be\_VB like\_IN the\_DT sea\_NN ,\_, if\_IN only\_RB it\_PRP be\_VB their\_PRP$ own\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT whole\_JJ thing\_NN be\_VB only\_JJ lies\_NNS .\_.

Now\_RB look\_VB you\_PRP here\_RB ;\_: you\_PRP come\_VBP here\_RB a\_DT stranger\_NN ,\_, an\_DT '\_'' you\_PRP see\_VBP this\_DT kirk-garth\_NN .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP nodded\_VBD ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP thought\_VBD it\_PRP better\_JJR to\_TO assent\_NN ,\_, though\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB quite\_RB understand\_VB his\_PRP$ dialect\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP knew\_VBD it\_PRP had\_VBD something\_NN to\_TO do\_VB with\_IN the\_DT church\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: ``\_`` And\_CC you\_PRP consate\_VBP that\_IN all\_PDT these\_DT steans\_NNS be\_VB aboon\_JJ folk\_NN that\_WDT be\_VB happed\_VBN here\_RB ,\_, snod\_VBD an\_DT '\_'' snog\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP assented\_VBD again\_RB .\_.

``\_`` Then\_RB that\_IN be\_VB just\_RB where\_WRB the\_DT lie\_NN comes\_VBZ in\_IN .\_.

Why\_WRB ,\_, there\_EX be\_VB scores\_NNS of\_IN these\_DT lay-beds\_NNS that\_WDT be\_VB toom\_VBN as\_IN old\_JJ Dun\_NNP 's\_POS '\_POS bacca-box\_NN on\_IN Friday\_NNP night\_NN .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP nudged\_VBD one\_CD of\_IN his\_PRP$ companions\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC they\_PRP all\_DT laughed\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` And\_CC my\_PRP$ gog\_NN !\_.

how\_WRB could\_MD they\_PRP be\_VB otherwise\_RB ?\_.

Look\_VB at\_IN that\_DT one\_CD ,\_, the\_DT aftest\_FW abaft\_FW the\_DT bier-bank\_NN :\_: read\_VB it\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP went\_VBD over\_RB and\_CC read\_VB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Edward\_NNP Spencelagh\_NNP ,\_, master\_NN mariner\_NN ,\_, murdered\_VBN by\_IN pirates\_NNS off\_IN the\_DT coast\_NN of\_IN Andres\_NNP ,\_, April\_NNP ,\_, 1854\_CD ,\_, æt\_NN .\_.

30\_CD .\_. ''\_''

When\_WRB I\_PRP came\_VBD back\_RP Mr.\_NNP Swales\_NNP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Who\_WP brought\_VBD him\_PRP home\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP wonder\_VBP ,\_, to\_TO hap\_VB him\_PRP here\_RB ?\_.

Murdered\_VBN off\_IN the\_DT coast\_NN of\_IN Andres\_NNP !\_.

an\_DT '\_'' you\_PRP consated\_VBD his\_PRP$ body\_NN lay\_VB under\_IN !\_.

Why\_WRB ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD name\_VB ye\_PRP a\_DT dozen\_NN whose\_WP$ bones\_NNS lie\_VBP in\_IN the\_DT Greenland\_NNP seas\_NNS above\_IN ''\_'' --\_: he\_PRP pointed\_VBD northwards\_RB --\_: ``\_`` or\_CC where\_WRB the\_DT currents\_NNS may\_MD have\_VB drifted\_VBN them\_PRP .\_.

There\_EX be\_VB the\_DT steans\_NNS around\_IN ye\_PRP .\_.

Ye\_PRP can\_MD ,\_, with\_IN your\_PRP$ young\_JJ eyes\_NNS ,\_, read\_VBD the\_DT small-print\_NN of\_IN the\_DT lies\_NNS from\_IN here\_RB .\_.

This\_DT Braithwaite\_NNP Lowrey\_NNP --\_: I\_PRP knew\_VBD his\_PRP$ father\_NN ,\_, lost\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT Lively\_NNP off\_IN Greenland\_NNP in\_IN '\_'' 20\_CD ;\_: or\_CC Andrew\_NNP Woodhouse\_NNP ,\_, drowned\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ seas\_NNS in\_IN 1777\_CD ;\_: or\_CC John\_NNP Paxton\_NNP ,\_, drowned\_VBD off\_RP Cape\_NNP Farewell\_NNP a\_DT year\_NN later\_RB ;\_: or\_CC old\_JJ John\_NNP Rawlings\_NNP ,\_, whose\_WP$ grandfather\_NN sailed\_VBD with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, drowned\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT Gulf\_NNP of\_IN Finland\_NNP in\_IN '\_'' 50\_CD .\_.

Do\_VBP ye\_PRP think\_VB that\_IN all\_PDT these\_DT men\_NNS will\_MD have\_VB to\_TO make\_VB a\_DT rush\_NN to\_TO Whitby\_NNP when\_WRB the\_DT trumpet\_NN sounds\_NNS ?\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP me\_PRP antherums\_NNS aboot\_VBP it\_PRP !\_.

I\_PRP tell\_VBP ye\_PRP that\_IN when\_WRB they\_PRP got\_VBD here\_RB they\_PRP 'd\_MD be\_VB jommlin\_NN '\_'' an\_DT '\_POS jostlin\_NN '\_'' one\_CD another\_DT that\_DT way\_NN that\_IN it\_PRP '\_'' ud\_RB be\_VB like\_IN a\_DT fight\_NN up\_RP on\_IN the\_DT ice\_NN in\_IN the\_DT old\_JJ days\_NNS ,\_, when\_WRB we\_PRP 'd\_MD be\_VB at\_IN one\_CD another\_DT from\_IN daylight\_NN to\_TO dark\_NN ,\_, an\_DT '\_POS tryin\_NN '\_'' to\_TO tie\_VB up\_RP our\_PRP$ cuts\_NNS by\_IN the\_DT light\_NN of\_IN the\_DT aurora\_FW borealis\_FW .\_. ''\_''

This\_DT was\_VBD evidently\_RB local\_JJ pleasantry\_NN ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT old\_JJ man\_NN cackled\_VBD over\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ cronies\_NNS joined\_VBD in\_RP with\_IN gusto\_NN .\_.

``\_`` But\_CC ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` surely\_RB you\_PRP are\_VBP not\_RB quite\_RB correct\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN you\_PRP start\_VBP on\_IN the\_DT assumption\_NN that\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT poor\_JJ people\_NNS ,\_, or\_CC their\_PRP$ spirits\_NNS ,\_, will\_MD have\_VB to\_TO take\_VB their\_PRP$ tombstones\_NNS with\_IN them\_PRP on\_IN the\_DT Day\_NN of\_IN Judgment\_NN .\_.

Do\_VBP you\_PRP think\_VB that\_DT will\_MD be\_VB really\_RB necessary\_JJ ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Well\_UH ,\_, what\_WP else\_RB be\_VB they\_PRP tombstones\_NNS for\_IN ?\_.

Answer\_VB me\_PRP that\_IN ,\_, miss\_VB !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` To\_TO please\_VB their\_PRP$ relatives\_NNS ,\_, I\_PRP suppose\_VBP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` To\_TO please\_VB their\_PRP$ relatives\_NNS ,\_, you\_PRP suppose\_VBP !\_. ''\_''

This\_DT he\_PRP said\_VBD with\_IN intense\_JJ scorn\_VBP .\_.

``\_`` How\_WRB will\_MD it\_PRP pleasure\_NN their\_PRP$ relatives\_NNS to\_TO know\_VB that\_IN lies\_NNS is\_VBZ wrote\_VBN over\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN everybody\_NN in\_IN the\_DT place\_NN knows\_VBZ that\_IN they\_PRP be\_VB lies\_NNS ?\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP pointed\_VBD to\_TO a\_DT stone\_NN at\_IN our\_PRP$ feet\_NNS which\_WDT had\_VBD been\_VBN laid\_VBN down\_RP as\_IN a\_DT slab\_NN ,\_, on\_IN which\_WDT the\_DT seat\_NN was\_VBD rested\_VBN ,\_, close\_RB to\_TO the\_DT edge\_NN of\_IN the\_DT cliff\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Read\_VB the\_DT lies\_NNS on\_IN that\_DT thruff-stean\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

The\_DT letters\_NNS were\_VBD upside\_RB down\_RB to\_TO me\_PRP from\_IN where\_WRB I\_PRP sat\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC Lucy\_NNP was\_VBD more\_RBR opposite\_JJ to\_TO them\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN she\_PRP leant\_VBD over\_RB and\_CC read\_VB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Sacred\_JJ to\_TO the\_DT memory\_NN of\_IN George\_NNP Canon\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP died\_VBD ,\_, in\_IN the\_DT hope\_NN of\_IN a\_DT glorious\_JJ resurrection\_NN ,\_, on\_IN July\_NNP ,\_, 29\_CD ,\_, 1873\_NNP ,\_, falling\_VBG from\_IN the\_DT rocks\_NNS at\_IN Kettleness\_NNP .\_.

This\_DT tomb\_NN was\_VBD erected\_VBN by\_IN his\_PRP$ sorrowing\_JJ mother\_NN to\_TO her\_PRP$ dearly\_RB beloved\_JJ son\_NN .\_.

`\_`` He\_PRP was\_VBD the\_DT only\_JJ son\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ mother\_NN ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT widow\_NN .\_. '\_''

Really\_RB ,\_, Mr.\_NNP Swales\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB see\_VB anything\_NN very\_RB funny\_JJ in\_IN that\_DT !\_. ''\_''

She\_PRP spoke\_VBD her\_PRP$ comment\_NN very\_RB gravely\_RB and\_CC somewhat\_RB severely\_RB .\_.

``\_`` Ye\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB see\_VB aught\_RB funny\_JJ !\_.

Ha\_NN !\_.

ha\_FW !\_.

But\_CC that\_DT 's\_VBZ because\_IN ye\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB gawm\_VB the\_DT sorrowin\_NN '\_POS mother\_NN was\_VBD a\_DT hell-cat\_NN that\_WDT hated\_VBD him\_PRP because\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD acrewk\_NNP 'd\_NNP --\_: a\_DT regular\_JJ lamiter\_NN he\_PRP was\_VBD --\_: an\_DT '\_'' he\_PRP hated\_VBD her\_PRP so\_IN that\_IN he\_PRP committed\_VBD suicide\_NN in\_IN order\_NN that\_IN she\_PRP might\_MD n't\_RB get\_VB an\_DT insurance\_NN she\_PRP put\_VBD on\_IN his\_PRP$ life\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP blew\_VBD nigh\_RB the\_DT top\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ head\_NN off\_RP with\_IN an\_DT old\_JJ musket\_NN that\_IN they\_PRP had\_VBD for\_IN scarin\_NN '\_'' the\_DT crows\_NNS with\_IN .\_. '\_''

Twar\_VB n't\_RB for\_IN crows\_NNS then\_RB ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP brought\_VBD the\_DT clegs\_NNS and\_CC the\_DT dowps\_NNS to\_TO him\_PRP .\_.

That\_DT 's\_VBZ the\_DT way\_NN he\_PRP fell\_VBD off\_RP the\_DT rocks\_NNS .\_.

And\_CC ,\_, as\_IN to\_TO hopes\_NNS of\_IN a\_DT glorious\_JJ resurrection\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP 've\_VBP often\_RB heard\_VBN him\_PRP say\_VBP masel\_NN '\_'' that\_IN he\_PRP hoped\_VBD he\_PRP 'd\_MD go\_VB to\_TO hell\_NN ,\_, for\_IN his\_PRP$ mother\_NN was\_VBD so\_RB pious\_JJ that\_IN she\_PRP 'd\_MD be\_VB sure\_JJ to\_TO go\_VB to\_TO heaven\_NN ,\_, an\_DT '\_'' he\_PRP did\_VBD n't\_RB want\_VB to\_TO addle\_VB where\_WRB she\_PRP was\_VBD .\_.

Now\_RB is\_VBZ n't\_RB that\_DT stean\_NN at\_IN any\_DT rate\_NN ''\_'' --\_: he\_PRP hammered\_VBD it\_PRP with\_IN his\_PRP$ stick\_NN as\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD --\_: ``\_`` a\_DT pack\_NN of\_IN lies\_NNS ?\_.

and\_CC wo\_MD n't\_RB it\_PRP make\_VB Gabriel\_NNP keckle\_VB when\_WRB Geordie\_NNP comes\_VBZ pantin\_NN '\_'' up\_RP the\_DT grees\_NNS with\_IN the\_DT tombstean\_NN balanced\_VBN on\_IN his\_PRP$ hump\_NN ,\_, and\_CC asks\_VBZ it\_PRP to\_TO be\_VB took\_VBN as\_IN evidence\_NN !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB know\_VB what\_WP to\_TO say\_VB ,\_, but\_CC Lucy\_NNP turned\_VBD the\_DT conversation\_NN as\_IN she\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, rising\_VBG up\_RP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, why\_WRB did\_VBD you\_PRP tell\_VB us\_PRP of\_IN this\_DT ?\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ my\_PRP$ favourite\_JJ seat\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB leave\_VB it\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC now\_RB I\_PRP find\_VBP I\_PRP must\_MD go\_VB on\_IN sitting\_VBG over\_IN the\_DT grave\_NN of\_IN a\_DT suicide\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` That\_DT wo\_MD n't\_RB harm\_VB ye\_PRP ,\_, my\_PRP$ pretty\_RB ;\_: an\_DT '\_'' it\_PRP may\_MD make\_VB poor\_JJ Geordie\_NNP gladsome\_NN to\_TO have\_VB so\_RB trim\_VB a\_DT lass\_NN sittin\_NN '\_'' on\_IN his\_PRP$ lap\_NN .\_.

That\_DT wo\_MD n't\_RB hurt\_VB ye\_PRP .\_.

Why\_WRB ,\_, I\_PRP 've\_VBP sat\_VBN here\_RB off\_IN an\_DT '\_'' on\_IN for\_IN nigh\_NN twenty\_CD years\_NNS past\_NN ,\_, an\_DT '\_'' it\_PRP has\_VBZ n't\_RB done\_VBN me\_PRP no\_DT harm\_NN .\_.

Do\_VB n't\_RB ye\_PRP fash\_JJ about\_IN them\_PRP as\_IN lies\_NNS under\_IN ye\_PRP ,\_, or\_CC that\_DT doesn\_NN '\_POS lie\_NN there\_RB either\_RB !\_.

It\_PRP 'll\_MD be\_VB time\_NN for\_IN ye\_PRP to\_TO be\_VB getting\_VBG scart\_NN when\_WRB ye\_PRP see\_VBP the\_DT tombsteans\_NNS all\_DT run\_VBP away\_RB with\_IN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT place\_NN as\_RB bare\_JJ as\_IN a\_DT stubble-field\_NN .\_.

There\_EX 's\_VBZ the\_DT clock\_NN ,\_, an\_DT '\_'' I\_PRP must\_MD gang\_NN .\_.

My\_PRP$ service\_NN to\_TO ye\_PRP ,\_, ladies\_NNS !\_. ''\_''

And\_CC off\_IN he\_PRP hobbled\_VBD .\_.

Lucy\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP sat\_VBD awhile\_RB ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP was\_VBD all\_RB so\_RB beautiful\_JJ before\_IN us\_PRP that\_IN we\_PRP took\_VBD hands\_NNS as\_IN we\_PRP sat\_VBD ;\_: and\_CC she\_PRP told\_VBD me\_PRP all\_RB over\_RB again\_RB about\_IN Arthur\_NNP and\_CC their\_PRP$ coming\_JJ marriage\_NN .\_.

That\_DT made\_VBD me\_PRP just\_RB a\_DT little\_JJ heart-sick\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP n't\_RB heard\_VBN from\_IN Jonathan\_NNP for\_IN a\_DT whole\_JJ month\_NN .\_.

The\_DT same\_JJ day\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP came\_VBD up\_RP here\_RB alone\_RB ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP very\_RB sad\_JJ .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT letter\_NN for\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP hope\_VBP there\_EX can\_MD not\_RB be\_VB anything\_NN the\_DT matter\_NN with\_IN Jonathan\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT clock\_NN has\_VBZ just\_RB struck\_VBN nine\_CD .\_.

I\_PRP see\_VBP the\_DT lights\_NNS scattered\_VBD all\_DT over\_IN the\_DT town\_NN ,\_, sometimes\_RB in\_IN rows\_NNS where\_WRB the\_DT streets\_NNS are\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC sometimes\_RB singly\_RB ;\_: they\_PRP run\_VBP right\_RB up\_RB the\_DT Esk\_NN and\_CC die\_VB away\_RB in\_IN the\_DT curve\_NN of\_IN the\_DT valley\_NN .\_.

To\_TO my\_PRP$ left\_VBD the\_DT view\_NN is\_VBZ cut\_VBN off\_RP by\_IN a\_DT black\_JJ line\_NN of\_IN roof\_NN of\_IN the\_DT old\_JJ house\_NN next\_IN the\_DT abbey\_NN .\_.

The\_DT sheep\_NN and\_CC lambs\_NNS are\_VBP bleating\_VBG in\_IN the\_DT fields\_NNS away\_RB behind\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT clatter\_NN of\_IN a\_DT donkey\_NN 's\_POS hoofs\_NNS up\_IN the\_DT paved\_JJ road\_NN below\_IN .\_.

The\_DT band\_NN on\_IN the\_DT pier\_NN is\_VBZ playing\_VBG a\_DT harsh\_JJ waltz\_NN in\_IN good\_JJ time\_NN ,\_, and\_CC further\_RBR along\_IN the\_DT quay\_NN there\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT Salvation\_NNP Army\_NNP meeting\_NN in\_IN a\_DT back\_JJ street\_NN .\_.

Neither\_DT of\_IN the\_DT bands\_NNS hears\_VBZ the\_DT other\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC up\_RB here\_RB I\_PRP hear\_VBP and\_CC see\_VBP them\_PRP both\_DT .\_.

I\_PRP wonder\_VBP where\_WRB Jonathan\_NNP is\_VBZ and\_CC if\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ thinking\_VBG of\_IN me\_PRP !\_.

I\_PRP wish\_VBP he\_PRP were\_VBD here\_RB .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

5\_CD June\_NNP .\_.

--\_: The\_DT case\_NN of\_IN Renfield\_NNP grows\_VBZ more\_RBR interesting\_JJ the\_DT more\_JJR I\_PRP get\_VBP to\_TO understand\_VB the\_DT man\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ certain\_JJ qualities\_NNS very\_RB largely\_RB developed\_VBN ;\_: selfishness\_NN ,\_, secrecy\_NN ,\_, and\_CC purpose\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP wish\_VBP I\_PRP could\_MD get\_VB at\_IN what\_WP is\_VBZ the\_DT object\_NN of\_IN the\_DT latter\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP seems\_VBZ to\_TO have\_VB some\_DT settled\_VBN scheme\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC what\_WP it\_PRP is\_VBZ I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB yet\_RB know\_VB .\_.

His\_PRP$ redeeming\_JJ quality\_NN is\_VBZ a\_DT love\_NN of\_IN animals\_NNS ,\_, though\_RB ,\_, indeed\_RB ,\_, he\_PRP has\_VBZ such\_JJ curious\_JJ turns\_NNS in\_IN it\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP sometimes\_RB imagine\_VBP he\_PRP is\_VBZ only\_RB abnormally\_RB cruel\_JJ .\_.

His\_PRP$ pets\_NNS are\_VBP of\_IN odd\_JJ sorts\_NNS .\_.

Just\_RB now\_RB his\_PRP$ hobby\_NN is\_VBZ catching\_VBG flies\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ at\_IN present\_JJ such\_JJ a\_DT quantity\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP had\_VBN myself\_PRP to\_TO expostulate\_VB .\_.

To\_TO my\_PRP$ astonishment\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB break\_VB out\_RP into\_IN a\_DT fury\_NN ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP expected\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC took\_VBD the\_DT matter\_NN in\_IN simple\_JJ seriousness\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP thought\_VBD for\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB said\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` May\_NNP I\_PRP have\_VBP three\_CD days\_NNS ?\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD clear\_VB them\_PRP away\_RB .\_. ''\_''

Of\_IN course\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP said\_VBD that\_DT would\_MD do\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD watch\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

18\_CD June\_NNP .\_.

--\_: He\_PRP has\_VBZ turned\_VBN his\_PRP$ mind\_NN now\_RB to\_TO spiders\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC has\_VBZ got\_VBN several\_JJ very\_RB big\_JJ fellows\_NNS in\_IN a\_DT box\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP keeps\_VBZ feeding\_VBG them\_PRP with\_IN his\_PRP$ flies\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT number\_NN of\_IN the\_DT latter\_JJ is\_VBZ becoming\_VBG sensibly\_RB diminished\_VBN ,\_, although\_IN he\_PRP has\_VBZ used\_VBN half\_PDT his\_PRP$ food\_NN in\_IN attracting\_VBG more\_JJR flies\_NNS from\_IN outside\_JJ to\_TO his\_PRP$ room\_NN .\_.

1\_CD July\_NNP .\_.

--\_: His\_PRP$ spiders\_NNS are\_VBP now\_RB becoming\_VBG as\_RB great\_JJ a\_DT nuisance\_NN as\_IN his\_PRP$ flies\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC to-day\_NN I\_PRP told\_VBD him\_PRP that\_IN he\_PRP must\_MD get\_VB rid\_JJ of\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP looked\_VBD very\_RB sad\_JJ at\_IN this\_DT ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP said\_VBD that\_IN he\_PRP must\_MD clear\_VB out\_RP some\_DT of\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, at\_IN all\_DT events\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP cheerfully\_RB acquiesced\_VBD in\_IN this\_DT ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP gave\_VBD him\_PRP the\_DT same\_JJ time\_NN as\_RB before\_RB for\_IN reduction\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP disgusted\_VBD me\_PRP much\_RB while\_IN with\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN when\_WRB a\_DT horrid\_JJ blow-fly\_JJ ,\_, bloated\_JJ with\_IN some\_DT carrion\_NN food\_NN ,\_, buzzed\_VBN into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP caught\_VBD it\_PRP ,\_, held\_VBD it\_PRP exultantly\_RB for\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ moments\_NNS between\_IN his\_PRP$ finger\_NN and\_CC thumb\_NN ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, before\_IN I\_PRP knew\_VBD what\_WP he\_PRP was\_VBD going\_VBG to\_TO do\_VB ,\_, put\_VB it\_PRP in\_IN his\_PRP$ mouth\_NN and\_CC ate\_VBD it\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP scolded\_VBD him\_PRP for\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC he\_PRP argued\_VBD quietly\_RB that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD very\_RB good\_JJ and\_CC very\_RB wholesome\_JJ ;\_: that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD life\_NN ,\_, strong\_JJ life\_NN ,\_, and\_CC gave\_VBD life\_NN to\_TO him\_PRP .\_.

This\_DT gave\_VBD me\_PRP an\_DT idea\_NN ,\_, or\_CC the\_DT rudiment\_NN of\_IN one\_CD .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD watch\_VB how\_WRB he\_PRP gets\_VBZ rid\_JJ of\_IN his\_PRP$ spiders\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ evidently\_RB some\_DT deep\_JJ problem\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ mind\_NN ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP keeps\_VBZ a\_DT little\_JJ note-book\_NN in\_IN which\_WDT he\_PRP is\_VBZ always\_RB jotting\_VBG down\_RP something\_NN .\_.

Whole\_JJ pages\_NNS of\_IN it\_PRP are\_VBP filled\_VBN with\_IN masses\_NNS of\_IN figures\_NNS ,\_, generally\_RB single\_JJ numbers\_NNS added\_VBD up\_RP in\_IN batches\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB the\_DT totals\_NNS added\_VBD in\_IN batches\_NNS again\_RB ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN he\_PRP were\_VBD ``\_`` focussing\_VBG ''\_'' some\_DT account\_NN ,\_, as\_IN the\_DT auditors\_NNS put\_VBD it\_PRP .\_.

8\_CD July\_NNP .\_.

--\_: There\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT method\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ madness\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT rudimentary\_JJ idea\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ mind\_NN is\_VBZ growing\_VBG .\_.

It\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB a\_DT whole\_JJ idea\_NN soon\_RB ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB ,\_, oh\_UH ,\_, unconscious\_JJ cerebration\_NN !\_.

you\_PRP will\_MD have\_VB to\_TO give\_VB the\_DT wall\_NN to\_TO your\_PRP$ conscious\_JJ brother\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP kept\_VBD away\_RB from\_IN my\_PRP$ friend\_NN for\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ days\_NNS ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP might\_MD notice\_VB if\_IN there\_EX were\_VBD any\_DT change\_NN .\_.

Things\_NNS remain\_VBP as\_IN they\_PRP were\_VBD except\_IN that\_IN he\_PRP has\_VBZ parted\_VBN with\_IN some\_DT of\_IN his\_PRP$ pets\_NNS and\_CC got\_VBD a\_DT new\_JJ one\_CD .\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ managed\_VBN to\_TO get\_VB a\_DT sparrow\_NN ,\_, and\_CC has\_VBZ already\_RB partially\_RB tamed\_VBD it\_PRP .\_.

His\_PRP$ means\_NNS of\_IN taming\_VBG is\_VBZ simple\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN already\_RB the\_DT spiders\_NNS have\_VBP diminished\_VBN .\_.

Those\_DT that\_WDT do\_VBP remain\_VB ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, are\_VBP well\_RB fed\_VBN ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP still\_RB brings\_VBZ in\_IN the\_DT flies\_NNS by\_IN tempting\_JJ them\_PRP with\_IN his\_PRP$ food\_NN .\_.

19\_CD July\_NNP .\_.

--\_: We\_PRP are\_VBP progressing\_VBG .\_.

My\_PRP$ friend\_NN has\_VBZ now\_RB a\_DT whole\_JJ colony\_NN of\_IN sparrows\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ flies\_NNS and\_CC spiders\_NNS are\_VBP almost\_RB obliterated\_VBN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP came\_VBD in\_IN he\_PRP ran\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP and\_CC said\_VBD he\_PRP wanted\_VBD to\_TO ask\_VB me\_PRP a\_DT great\_JJ favour\_NN --\_: a\_DT very\_RB ,\_, very\_RB great\_JJ favour\_NN ;\_: and\_CC as\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD he\_PRP fawned\_VBD on\_IN me\_PRP like\_IN a\_DT dog\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP asked\_VBD him\_PRP what\_WP it\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN rapture\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ voice\_NN and\_CC bearing\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` A\_DT kitten\_NN ,\_, a\_DT nice\_JJ little\_JJ ,\_, sleek\_JJ playful\_JJ kitten\_NN ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD play\_VB with\_IN ,\_, and\_CC teach\_VB ,\_, and\_CC feed\_NN --\_: and\_CC feed\_NN --\_: and\_CC feed\_NN !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB unprepared\_JJ for\_IN this\_DT request\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD noticed\_VBN how\_WRB his\_PRP$ pets\_NNS went\_VBD on\_IN increasing\_VBG in\_IN size\_NN and\_CC vivacity\_NN ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB care\_VB that\_IN his\_PRP$ pretty\_JJ family\_NN of\_IN tame\_JJ sparrows\_NNS should\_MD be\_VB wiped\_VBN out\_RP in\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ manner\_NN as\_IN the\_DT flies\_NNS and\_CC the\_DT spiders\_NNS ;\_: so\_IN I\_PRP said\_VBD I\_PRP would\_MD see\_VB about\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC asked\_VBD him\_PRP if\_IN he\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB rather\_RB have\_VB a\_DT cat\_NN than\_IN a\_DT kitten\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ eagerness\_NN betrayed\_VBD him\_PRP as\_IN he\_PRP answered\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, yes\_UH ,\_, I\_PRP would\_MD like\_VB a\_DT cat\_NN !\_.

I\_PRP only\_RB asked\_VBD for\_IN a\_DT kitten\_NN lest\_IN you\_PRP should\_MD refuse\_VB me\_PRP a\_DT cat\_NN .\_.

No\_DT one\_NN would\_MD refuse\_VB me\_PRP a\_DT kitten\_NN ,\_, would\_MD they\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP shook\_VBD my\_PRP$ head\_NN ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD that\_IN at\_IN present\_JJ I\_PRP feared\_VBD it\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB be\_VB possible\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC that\_IN I\_PRP would\_MD see\_VB about\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

His\_PRP$ face\_NN fell\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB a\_DT warning\_NN of\_IN danger\_NN in\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT sudden\_JJ fierce\_JJ ,\_, sidelong\_JJ look\_NN which\_WDT meant\_VBD killing\_NN .\_.

The\_DT man\_NN is\_VBZ an\_DT undeveloped\_JJ homicidal\_JJ maniac\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD test\_VB him\_PRP with\_IN his\_PRP$ present\_JJ craving\_NN and\_CC see\_VB how\_WRB it\_PRP will\_MD work\_VB out\_RP ;\_: then\_RB I\_PRP shall\_MD know\_VB more\_JJR .\_.

10\_CD p.\_NN m.\_NN --\_: I\_PRP have\_VBP visited\_VBN him\_PRP again\_RB and\_CC found\_VBD him\_PRP sitting\_VBG in\_IN a\_DT corner\_NN brooding\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP came\_VBD in\_IN he\_PRP threw\_VBD himself\_PRP on\_IN his\_PRP$ knees\_NNS before\_IN me\_PRP and\_CC implored\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO let\_VB him\_PRP have\_VB a\_DT cat\_NN ;\_: that\_IN his\_PRP$ salvation\_NN depended\_VBD upon\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD firm\_JJ ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, and\_CC told\_VBD him\_PRP that\_IN he\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB have\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, whereupon\_NN he\_PRP went\_VBD without\_IN a\_DT word\_NN ,\_, and\_CC sat\_VBD down\_RB ,\_, gnawing\_NN his\_PRP$ fingers\_NNS ,\_, in\_IN the\_DT corner\_NN where\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD found\_VBN him\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD see\_VB him\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN early\_RB .\_.

20\_CD July\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Visited\_NNP Renfield\_NNP very\_RB early\_RB ,\_, before\_IN the\_DT attendant\_NN went\_VBD his\_PRP$ rounds\_NNS .\_.

Found\_VB him\_PRP up\_RP and\_CC humming\_VBG a\_DT tune\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD spreading\_VBG out\_RP his\_PRP$ sugar\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT he\_PRP had\_VBD saved\_VBN ,\_, in\_IN the\_DT window\_NN ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD manifestly\_RB beginning\_VBG his\_PRP$ fly-catching\_NN again\_RB ;\_: and\_CC beginning\_VBG it\_PRP cheerfully\_RB and\_CC with\_IN a\_DT good\_JJ grace\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP looked\_VBD around\_RP for\_IN his\_PRP$ birds\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC not\_RB seeing\_VBG them\_PRP ,\_, asked\_VBD him\_PRP where\_WRB they\_PRP were\_VBD .\_.

He\_PRP replied\_VBD ,\_, without\_IN turning\_VBG round\_NN ,\_, that\_IN they\_PRP had\_VBD all\_DT flown\_VBN away\_RB .\_.

There\_EX were\_VBD a\_DT few\_JJ feathers\_NNS about\_IN the\_DT room\_NN and\_CC on\_IN his\_PRP$ pillow\_NN a\_DT drop\_NN of\_IN blood\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP said\_VBD nothing\_NN ,\_, but\_CC went\_VBD and\_CC told\_VBD the\_DT keeper\_NN to\_TO report\_VB to\_TO me\_PRP if\_IN there\_EX were\_VBD anything\_NN odd\_JJ about\_IN him\_PRP during\_IN the\_DT day\_NN .\_.

11\_CD a.\_FW m.\_FW --\_: The\_DT attendant\_NN has\_VBZ just\_RB been\_VBN to\_TO me\_PRP to\_TO say\_VB that\_IN Renfield\_NNP has\_VBZ been\_VBN very\_RB sick\_JJ and\_CC has\_VBZ disgorged\_VBN a\_DT whole\_JJ lot\_NN of\_IN feathers\_NNS .\_.

``\_`` My\_PRP$ belief\_NN is\_VBZ ,\_, doctor\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` that\_IN he\_PRP has\_VBZ eaten\_VBN his\_PRP$ birds\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN he\_PRP just\_RB took\_VBD and\_CC ate\_VBD them\_PRP raw\_JJ !\_. ''\_''

11\_CD p.\_NN m.\_NN --\_: I\_PRP gave\_VBD Renfield\_NNP a\_DT strong\_JJ opiate\_JJ to-night\_NN ,\_, enough\_JJ to\_TO make\_VB even\_RB him\_PRP sleep\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC took\_VBD away\_RP his\_PRP$ pocket-book\_NN to\_TO look\_VB at\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT thought\_NN that\_WDT has\_VBZ been\_VBN buzzing\_VBG about\_IN my\_PRP$ brain\_NN lately\_RB is\_VBZ complete\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT theory\_NN proved\_VBD .\_.

My\_PRP$ homicidal\_JJ maniac\_NN is\_VBZ of\_IN a\_DT peculiar\_JJ kind\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD have\_VB to\_TO invent\_VB a\_DT new\_JJ classification\_NN for\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC call\_VB him\_PRP a\_DT zoöphagous\_JJ -LRB-\_-LRB- life-eating\_JJ -RRB-\_-RRB- maniac\_NN ;\_: what\_WP he\_PRP desires\_NNS is\_VBZ to\_TO absorb\_VB as\_IN many\_JJ lives\_NNS as\_IN he\_PRP can\_MD ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP has\_VBZ laid\_VBN himself\_PRP out\_RP to\_TO achieve\_VB it\_PRP in\_IN a\_DT cumulative\_JJ way\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP gave\_VBD many\_JJ flies\_NNS to\_TO one\_CD spider\_NN and\_CC many\_JJ spiders\_NNS to\_TO one\_CD bird\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB wanted\_VBD a\_DT cat\_NN to\_TO eat\_VB the\_DT many\_JJ birds\_NNS .\_.

What\_WP would\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN his\_PRP$ later\_JJ steps\_NNS ?\_.

It\_PRP would\_MD almost\_RB be\_VB worth\_JJ while\_IN to\_TO complete\_VB the\_DT experiment\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP might\_MD be\_VB done\_VBN if\_IN there\_EX were\_VBD only\_RB a\_DT sufficient\_JJ cause\_NN .\_.

Men\_NN sneered\_VBD at\_IN vivisection\_NN ,\_, and\_CC yet\_RB look\_VB at\_IN its\_PRP$ results\_NNS to-day\_JJ !\_.

Why\_WRB not\_RB advance\_NN science\_NN in\_IN its\_PRP$ most\_RBS difficult\_JJ and\_CC vital\_JJ aspect\_NN --\_: the\_DT knowledge\_NN of\_IN the\_DT brain\_NN ?\_.

Had\_VBD I\_PRP even\_RB the\_DT secret\_NN of\_IN one\_CD such\_JJ mind\_NN --\_: did\_VBD I\_PRP hold\_VB the\_DT key\_NN to\_TO the\_DT fancy\_NN of\_IN even\_RB one\_CD lunatic\_JJ --\_: I\_PRP might\_MD advance\_VB my\_PRP$ own\_JJ branch\_NN of\_IN science\_NN to\_TO a\_DT pitch\_NN compared\_VBN with\_IN which\_WDT Burdon-Sanderson\_NNP 's\_POS physiology\_NN or\_CC Ferrier\_NNP 's\_POS brain-knowledge\_NN would\_MD be\_VB as\_IN nothing\_NN .\_.

If\_IN only\_RB there\_EX were\_VBD a\_DT sufficient\_JJ cause\_NN !\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB think\_VB too\_RB much\_JJ of\_IN this\_DT ,\_, or\_CC I\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB tempted\_VBN ;\_: a\_DT good\_JJ cause\_NN might\_MD turn\_VB the\_DT scale\_NN with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN may\_MD not\_RB I\_PRP too\_RB be\_VB of\_IN an\_DT exceptional\_JJ brain\_NN ,\_, congenitally\_RB ?\_.

How\_WRB well\_RB the\_DT man\_NN reasoned\_VBN ;\_: lunatics\_NNS always\_RB do\_VBP within\_IN their\_PRP$ own\_JJ scope\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP wonder\_VBP at\_IN how\_WRB many\_JJ lives\_NNS he\_PRP values\_VBZ a\_DT man\_NN ,\_, or\_CC if\_IN at\_IN only\_RB one\_CD .\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ closed\_VBN the\_DT account\_NN most\_RBS accurately\_RB ,\_, and\_CC to-day\_NN begun\_VBD a\_DT new\_JJ record\_NN .\_.

How\_WRB many\_JJ of\_IN us\_PRP begin\_VB a\_DT new\_JJ record\_NN with\_IN each\_DT day\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ lives\_NNS ?\_.

To\_TO me\_PRP it\_PRP seems\_VBZ only\_RB yesterday\_NN that\_IN my\_PRP$ whole\_JJ life\_NN ended\_VBD with\_IN my\_PRP$ new\_JJ hope\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN truly\_RB I\_PRP began\_VBD a\_DT new\_JJ record\_NN .\_.

So\_RB it\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB until\_IN the\_DT Great\_JJ Recorder\_NN sums\_VBZ me\_PRP up\_RP and\_CC closes\_VBZ my\_PRP$ ledger\_NN account\_NN with\_IN a\_DT balance\_NN to\_TO profit\_NN or\_CC loss\_NN .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, Lucy\_NNP ,\_, Lucy\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB be\_VB angry\_JJ with\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, nor\_CC can\_MD I\_PRP be\_VB angry\_JJ with\_IN my\_PRP$ friend\_NN whose\_WP$ happiness\_NN is\_VBZ yours\_PRP$ ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP must\_MD only\_RB wait\_VB on\_IN hopeless\_JJ and\_CC work\_NN .\_.

Work\_NN !\_.

work\_NN !\_.

If\_IN I\_PRP only\_RB could\_MD have\_VB as\_RB strong\_JJ a\_DT cause\_NN as\_IN my\_PRP$ poor\_JJ mad\_JJ friend\_NN there\_EX --\_: a\_DT good\_JJ ,\_, unselfish\_JJ cause\_NN to\_TO make\_VB me\_PRP work\_VB --\_: that\_WDT would\_MD be\_VB indeed\_RB happiness\_NN .\_.

Mina\_NNP Murray\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP .\_.

26\_CD July\_NNP .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP am\_VBP anxious\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP soothes\_VBZ me\_PRP to\_TO express\_VB myself\_PRP here\_RB ;\_: it\_PRP is\_VBZ like\_IN whispering\_VBG to\_TO one\_NN 's\_POS self\_NN and\_CC listening\_NN at\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ time\_NN .\_.

And\_CC there\_EX is\_VBZ also\_RB something\_NN about\_IN the\_DT shorthand\_NN symbols\_NNS that\_WDT makes\_VBZ it\_PRP different\_JJ from\_IN writing\_VBG .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP unhappy\_JJ about\_IN Lucy\_NNP and\_CC about\_IN Jonathan\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB heard\_VBN from\_IN Jonathan\_NNP for\_IN some\_DT time\_NN ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD very\_RB concerned\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC yesterday\_NN dear\_RB Mr.\_NNP Hawkins\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP is\_VBZ always\_RB so\_RB kind\_JJ ,\_, sent\_VBD me\_PRP a\_DT letter\_NN from\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD written\_VBN asking\_VBG him\_PRP if\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD heard\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP said\_VBD the\_DT enclosed\_VBN had\_VBD just\_RB been\_VBN received\_VBN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ only\_RB a\_DT line\_NN dated\_VBN from\_IN Castle\_NNP Dracula\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC says\_VBZ that\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ just\_RB starting\_VBG for\_IN home\_NN .\_.

That\_DT is\_VBZ not\_RB like\_IN Jonathan\_NNP ;\_: I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB understand\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP makes\_VBZ me\_PRP uneasy\_JJ .\_.

Then\_RB ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, Lucy\_NNP ,\_, although\_IN she\_PRP is\_VBZ so\_RB well\_RB ,\_, has\_VBZ lately\_RB taken\_VBN to\_TO her\_PRP$ old\_JJ habit\_NN of\_IN walking\_VBG in\_IN her\_PRP$ sleep\_NN .\_.

Her\_PRP$ mother\_NN has\_VBZ spoken\_VBN to\_TO me\_PRP about\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP have\_VBP decided\_VBN that\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP to\_TO lock\_VB the\_DT door\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ room\_NN every\_DT night\_NN .\_.

Mrs.\_NNP Westenra\_NNP has\_VBZ got\_VBN an\_DT idea\_NN that\_IN sleep-walkers\_NNS always\_RB go\_VBP out\_RP on\_IN roofs\_NNS of\_IN houses\_NNS and\_CC along\_IN the\_DT edges\_NNS of\_IN cliffs\_NNS and\_CC then\_RB get\_VB suddenly\_RB wakened\_VBN and\_CC fall\_VB over\_RP with\_IN a\_DT despairing\_JJ cry\_NN that\_IN echoes\_NNS all\_DT over\_IN the\_DT place\_NN .\_.

Poor\_NNP dear\_RB ,\_, she\_PRP is\_VBZ naturally\_RB anxious\_JJ about\_IN Lucy\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP tells\_VBZ me\_PRP that\_IN her\_PRP$ husband\_NN ,\_, Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS father\_NN ,\_, had\_VBD the\_DT same\_JJ habit\_NN ;\_: that\_IN he\_PRP would\_MD get\_VB up\_RP in\_IN the\_DT night\_NN and\_CC dress\_VB himself\_PRP and\_CC go\_VB out\_RP ,\_, if\_IN he\_PRP were\_VBD not\_RB stopped\_VBN .\_.

Lucy\_NNP is\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB married\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT autumn\_NN ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP is\_VBZ already\_RB planning\_VBG out\_RP her\_PRP$ dresses\_NNS and\_CC how\_WRB her\_PRP$ house\_NN is\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB arranged\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP sympathise\_VBP with\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP do\_VBP the\_DT same\_JJ ,\_, only\_RB Jonathan\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP will\_MD start\_VB in\_IN life\_NN in\_IN a\_DT very\_RB simple\_JJ way\_NN ,\_, and\_CC shall\_MD have\_VB to\_TO try\_VB to\_TO make\_VB both\_DT ends\_NNS meet\_VBP .\_.

Mr.\_NNP Holmwood\_NNP --\_: he\_PRP is\_VBZ the\_DT Hon.\_NNP Arthur\_NNP Holmwood\_NNP ,\_, only\_RB son\_NN of\_IN Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP --\_: is\_VBZ coming\_VBG up\_RP here\_RB very\_RB shortly\_RB --\_: as\_RB soon\_RB as\_IN he\_PRP can\_MD leave\_VB town\_NN ,\_, for\_IN his\_PRP$ father\_NN is\_VBZ not\_RB very\_RB well\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP think\_VBP dear\_RB Lucy\_NNP is\_VBZ counting\_VBG the\_DT moments\_NNS till\_IN he\_PRP comes\_VBZ .\_.

She\_PRP wants\_VBZ to\_TO take\_VB him\_PRP up\_RP to\_TO the\_DT seat\_NN on\_IN the\_DT churchyard\_NN cliff\_NN and\_CC show\_VB him\_PRP the\_DT beauty\_NN of\_IN Whitby\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP daresay\_VBP it\_PRP is\_VBZ the\_DT waiting\_NN which\_WDT disturbs\_VBZ her\_PRP ;\_: she\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB all\_RB right\_RB when\_WRB he\_PRP arrives\_VBZ .\_.

27\_CD July\_NNP .\_.

--\_: No\_DT news\_NN from\_IN Jonathan\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP getting\_VBG quite\_RB uneasy\_JJ about\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, though\_IN why\_WRB I\_PRP should\_MD I\_PRP do\_VB not\_RB know\_VB ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP do\_VBP wish\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP would\_MD write\_VB ,\_, if\_IN it\_PRP were\_VBD only\_RB a\_DT single\_JJ line\_NN .\_.

Lucy\_NNP walks\_VBZ more\_RBR than\_IN ever\_RB ,\_, and\_CC each\_DT night\_NN I\_PRP am\_VBP awakened\_VBN by\_IN her\_PRP$ moving\_NN about\_IN the\_DT room\_NN .\_.

Fortunately\_RB ,\_, the\_DT weather\_NN is\_VBZ so\_RB hot\_JJ that\_IN she\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB get\_VB cold\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC still\_RB the\_DT anxiety\_NN and\_CC the\_DT perpetually\_RB being\_VBG wakened\_VBN is\_VBZ beginning\_VBG to\_TO tell\_VB on\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP getting\_VBG nervous\_JJ and\_CC wakeful\_JJ myself\_PRP .\_.

Thank\_VB God\_NNP ,\_, Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS health\_NN keeps\_VBZ up\_RP .\_.

Mr.\_NNP Holmwood\_NNP has\_VBZ been\_VBN suddenly\_RB called\_VBN to\_TO Ring\_NN to\_TO see\_VB his\_PRP$ father\_NN ,\_, who\_WP has\_VBZ been\_VBN taken\_VBN seriously\_RB ill\_JJ .\_.

Lucy\_NNP frets\_VBZ at\_IN the\_DT postponement\_NN of\_IN seeing\_VBG him\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC it\_PRP does\_VBZ not\_RB touch\_VB her\_PRP$ looks\_NNS ;\_: she\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT trifle\_RB stouter\_JJR ,\_, and\_CC her\_PRP$ cheeks\_NNS are\_VBP a\_DT lovely\_JJ rose-pink\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP has\_VBZ lost\_VBN that\_IN anæmic\_JJ look\_NN which\_WDT she\_PRP had\_VBD .\_.

I\_PRP pray\_VBP it\_PRP will\_MD all\_DT last\_JJ .\_.

3\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Another\_DT week\_NN gone\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC no\_DT news\_NN from\_IN Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, not\_RB even\_RB to\_TO Mr.\_NNP Hawkins\_NNP ,\_, from\_IN whom\_WP I\_PRP have\_VBP heard\_VBN .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, I\_PRP do\_VBP hope\_VB he\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB ill\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP surely\_RB would\_MD have\_VB written\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP look\_VBP at\_IN that\_DT last\_JJ letter\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ ,\_, but\_CC somehow\_RB it\_PRP does\_VBZ not\_RB satisfy\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP does\_VBZ not\_RB read\_VB like\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC yet\_RB it\_PRP is\_VBZ his\_PRP$ writing\_NN .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT mistake\_NN of\_IN that\_DT .\_.

Lucy\_NNP has\_VBZ not\_RB walked\_VBN much\_RB in\_IN her\_PRP$ sleep\_NN the\_DT last\_JJ week\_NN ,\_, but\_CC there\_EX is\_VBZ an\_DT odd\_JJ concentration\_NN about\_IN her\_PRP which\_WDT I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB understand\_VB ;\_: even\_RB in\_IN her\_PRP$ sleep\_NN she\_PRP seems\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB watching\_VBG me\_PRP .\_.

She\_PRP tries\_VBZ the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, and\_CC finding\_VBG it\_PRP locked\_VBD ,\_, goes\_VBZ about\_IN the\_DT room\_NN searching\_VBG for\_IN the\_DT key\_NN .\_.

6\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Another\_DT three\_CD days\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC no\_DT news\_NN .\_.

This\_DT suspense\_NN is\_VBZ getting\_VBG dreadful\_JJ .\_.

If\_IN I\_PRP only\_RB knew\_VBD where\_WRB to\_TO write\_VB to\_TO or\_CC where\_WRB to\_TO go\_VB to\_TO ,\_, I\_PRP should\_MD feel\_VB easier\_JJR ;\_: but\_CC no\_DT one\_NN has\_VBZ heard\_VBN a\_DT word\_NN of\_IN Jonathan\_NNP since\_IN that\_DT last\_JJ letter\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD only\_RB pray\_VB to\_TO God\_NNP for\_IN patience\_NN .\_.

Lucy\_NNP is\_VBZ more\_RBR excitable\_JJ than\_IN ever\_RB ,\_, but\_CC is\_VBZ otherwise\_RB well\_RB .\_.

Last\_JJ night\_NN was\_VBD very\_RB threatening\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT fishermen\_NNS say\_VBP that\_IN we\_PRP are\_VBP in\_IN for\_IN a\_DT storm\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD try\_VB to\_TO watch\_VB it\_PRP and\_CC learn\_VB the\_DT weather\_NN signs\_NNS .\_.

To-day\_JJ is\_VBZ a\_DT grey\_JJ day\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT sun\_NN as\_IN I\_PRP write\_VBP is\_VBZ hidden\_VBN in\_IN thick\_JJ clouds\_NNS ,\_, high\_RB over\_IN Kettleness\_NNP .\_.

Everything\_NNP is\_VBZ grey\_JJ --\_: except\_IN the\_DT green\_JJ grass\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT seems\_VBZ like\_IN emerald\_JJ amongst\_IN it\_PRP ;\_: grey\_JJ earthy\_JJ rock\_NN ;\_: grey\_JJ clouds\_NNS ,\_, tinged\_VBN with\_IN the\_DT sunburst\_NN at\_IN the\_DT far\_JJ edge\_NN ,\_, hang\_VBP over\_IN the\_DT grey\_JJ sea\_NN ,\_, into\_IN which\_WDT the\_DT sand-points\_JJ stretch\_NN like\_IN grey\_JJ fingers\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT sea\_NN is\_VBZ tumbling\_VBG in\_RP over\_IN the\_DT shallows\_NNS and\_CC the\_DT sandy\_JJ flats\_NNS with\_IN a\_DT roar\_NN ,\_, muffled\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT sea-mists\_NNS drifting\_VBG inland\_RB .\_.

The\_DT horizon\_NN is\_VBZ lost\_VBN in\_IN a\_DT grey\_JJ mist\_NN .\_.

All\_DT is\_VBZ vastness\_NN ;\_: the\_DT clouds\_NNS are\_VBP piled\_VBN up\_RP like\_IN giant\_JJ rocks\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT ``\_`` brool\_NN ''\_'' over\_IN the\_DT sea\_NN that\_WDT sounds\_VBZ like\_IN some\_DT presage\_VBP of\_IN doom\_NN .\_.

Dark\_JJ figures\_NNS are\_VBP on\_IN the\_DT beach\_NN here\_RB and\_CC there\_RB ,\_, sometimes\_RB half\_NN shrouded\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT mist\_NN ,\_, and\_CC seem\_VBP ``\_`` men\_NNS like\_IN trees\_NNS walking\_VBG .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT fishing-boats\_NNS are\_VBP racing\_VBG for\_IN home\_NN ,\_, and\_CC rise\_NN and\_CC dip\_NN in\_IN the\_DT ground\_NN swell\_NN as\_IN they\_PRP sweep\_NN into\_IN the\_DT harbour\_NN ,\_, bending\_VBG to\_TO the\_DT scuppers\_NNS .\_.

Here\_RB comes\_VBZ old\_JJ Mr.\_NNP Swales\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ making\_VBG straight\_RB for\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP can\_MD see\_VB ,\_, by\_IN the\_DT way\_NN he\_PRP lifts\_VBZ his\_PRP$ hat\_NN ,\_, that\_IN he\_PRP wants\_VBZ to\_TO talk\_VB ...\_: .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN quite\_RB touched\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT change\_NN in\_IN the\_DT poor\_JJ old\_JJ man\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB he\_PRP sat\_VBD down\_RB beside\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT very\_RB gentle\_JJ way\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP want\_VBP to\_TO say\_VB something\_NN to\_TO you\_PRP ,\_, miss\_VB .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB he\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB at\_IN ease\_NN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP took\_VBD his\_PRP$ poor\_JJ old\_JJ wrinkled\_JJ hand\_NN in\_IN mine\_NN and\_CC asked\_VBD him\_PRP to\_TO speak\_VB fully\_RB ;\_: so\_IN he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, leaving\_VBG his\_PRP$ hand\_NN in\_IN mine\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP 'm\_VBP afraid\_JJ ,\_, my\_PRP$ deary\_NN ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB shocked\_VBN you\_PRP by\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT wicked\_JJ things\_NNS I\_PRP 've\_VBP been\_VBN sayin\_NN '\_'' about\_IN the\_DT dead\_NN ,\_, and\_CC such\_JJ like\_IN ,\_, for\_IN weeks\_NNS past\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP did\_VBD n't\_RB mean\_VB them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP want\_VBP ye\_PRP to\_TO remember\_VB that\_IN when\_WRB I\_PRP 'm\_VBP gone\_VBN .\_.

We\_PRP aud\_VBD folks\_NNS that\_WDT be\_VB daffled\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN one\_CD foot\_NN abaft\_NN the\_DT krok-hooal\_JJ ,\_, do\_VBP n't\_RB altogether\_RB like\_VB to\_TO think\_VB of\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB want\_VB to\_TO feel\_VB scart\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP ;\_: an\_DT '\_'' that\_DT 's\_VBZ why\_WRB I\_PRP 've\_VBP took\_VBD to\_TO makin\_VB '\_POS light\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP 'd\_MD cheer\_VB up\_RP my\_PRP$ own\_JJ heart\_NN a\_DT bit\_NN .\_.

But\_CC ,\_, Lord\_NNP love\_VBP ye\_PRP ,\_, miss\_VB ,\_, I\_PRP ai\_VBP n't\_RB afraid\_JJ of\_IN dyin\_NN '\_'' ,\_, not\_RB a\_DT bit\_NN ;\_: only\_RB I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB want\_VB to\_TO die\_VB if\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD help\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

My\_PRP$ time\_NN must\_MD be\_VB nigh\_JJ at\_IN hand\_NN now\_RB ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP be\_VB aud\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT hundred\_CD years\_NNS is\_VBZ too\_RB much\_JJ for\_IN any\_DT man\_NN to\_TO expect\_VB ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP 'm\_VBP so\_RB nigh\_JJ it\_PRP that\_IN the\_DT Aud\_NNP Man\_NNP is\_VBZ already\_RB whettin\_NN '\_'' his\_PRP$ scythe\_NN .\_.

Ye\_PRP see\_VBP ,\_, I\_PRP ca\_MD n't\_RB get\_VB out\_RP o\_NN '\_'' the\_DT habit\_NN of\_IN caffin\_NN '\_'' about\_IN it\_PRP all\_DT at\_IN once\_RB ;\_: the\_DT chafts\_NNS will\_MD wag\_NN as\_IN they\_PRP be\_VB used\_VBN to\_TO .\_.

Some\_DT day\_NN soon\_RB the\_DT Angel\_NNP of\_IN Death\_NNP will\_MD sound\_VB his\_PRP$ trumpet\_NN for\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

But\_CC do\_VBP n't\_RB ye\_PRP dooal\_VB an\_DT '\_'' greet\_NN ,\_, my\_PRP$ deary\_NN !\_. ''\_''

--\_: for\_IN he\_PRP saw\_VBD that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD crying\_VBG --\_: ``\_`` if\_IN he\_PRP should\_MD come\_VB this\_DT very\_JJ night\_NN I\_PRP 'd\_MD not\_RB refuse\_VB to\_TO answer\_VB his\_PRP$ call\_NN .\_.

For\_IN life\_NN be\_VB ,\_, after\_IN all\_DT ,\_, only\_RB a\_DT waitin\_NN '\_'' for\_IN somethin'\_NN else\_RB than\_IN what\_WP we\_PRP 're\_VBP doin\_NN '\_'' ;\_: and\_CC death\_NN be\_VB all\_DT that\_IN we\_PRP can\_MD rightly\_RB depend\_VB on\_IN .\_.

But\_CC I\_PRP 'm\_VBP content\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP 's\_VBZ comin\_NN '\_'' to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, my\_PRP$ deary\_NN ,\_, and\_CC comin\_NN '\_'' quick\_JJ .\_.

It\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB comin\_NN '\_'' while\_IN we\_PRP be\_VB lookin\_VBN '\_'' and\_CC wonderin\_NN '\_'' .\_.

Maybe\_RB it\_PRP 's\_VBZ in\_IN that\_DT wind\_NN out\_IN over\_IN the\_DT sea\_NN that\_WDT 's\_VBZ bringin\_NN '\_'' with\_IN it\_PRP loss\_NN and\_CC wreck\_NN ,\_, and\_CC sore\_JJ distress\_NN ,\_, and\_CC sad\_JJ hearts\_NNS .\_.

Look\_VB !\_.

look\_VB !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP cried\_VBD suddenly\_RB .\_.

``\_`` There\_EX 's\_VBZ something\_NN in\_IN that\_DT wind\_NN and\_CC in\_IN the\_DT hoast\_NN beyont\_NN that\_WDT sounds\_VBZ ,\_, and\_CC looks\_VBZ ,\_, and\_CC tastes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC smells\_VBZ like\_IN death\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP 's\_VBZ in\_IN the\_DT air\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP feel\_VBP it\_PRP comin\_NN '\_'' .\_.

Lord\_NNP ,\_, make\_VB me\_PRP answer\_VB cheerful\_JJ when\_WRB my\_PRP$ call\_NN comes\_VBZ !\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP held\_VBD up\_RP his\_PRP$ arms\_NNS devoutly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC raised\_VBD his\_PRP$ hat\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ mouth\_NN moved\_VBD as\_IN though\_IN he\_PRP were\_VBD praying\_VBG .\_.

After\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ minutes\_NNS '\_POS silence\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP got\_VBD up\_RP ,\_, shook\_VBD hands\_NNS with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC blessed\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD good-bye\_NN ,\_, and\_CC hobbled\_VBD off\_RP .\_.

It\_PRP all\_DT touched\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC upset\_VB me\_PRP very\_RB much\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD glad\_JJ when\_WRB the\_DT coastguard\_NN came\_VBD along\_RB ,\_, with\_IN his\_PRP$ spy-glass\_NN under\_IN his\_PRP$ arm\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP stopped\_VBD to\_TO talk\_VB with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP always\_RB does\_VBZ ,\_, but\_CC all\_PDT the\_DT time\_NN kept\_VBD looking\_VBG at\_IN a\_DT strange\_JJ ship\_NN .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP ca\_MD n't\_RB make\_VB her\_PRP out\_RP ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ;\_: ``\_`` she\_PRP 's\_VBZ a\_DT Russian\_NNP ,\_, by\_IN the\_DT look\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ ;\_: but\_CC she\_PRP 's\_VBZ knocking\_VBG about\_RB in\_IN the\_DT queerest\_JJS way\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP does\_VBZ n't\_RB know\_VB her\_PRP$ mind\_NN a\_DT bit\_NN ;\_: she\_PRP seems\_VBZ to\_TO see\_VB the\_DT storm\_NN coming\_VBG ,\_, but\_CC ca\_MD n't\_RB decide\_VB whether\_IN to\_TO run\_VB up\_RP north\_RB in\_IN the\_DT open\_JJ ,\_, or\_CC to\_TO put\_VB in\_RP here\_RB .\_.

Look\_VB there\_RB again\_RB !\_.

She\_PRP is\_VBZ steered\_VBN mighty\_RB strangely\_RB ,\_, for\_IN she\_PRP does\_VBZ n't\_RB mind\_VB the\_DT hand\_NN on\_IN the\_DT wheel\_NN ;\_: changes\_NNS about\_IN with\_IN every\_DT puff\_NN of\_IN wind\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP 'll\_MD hear\_VB more\_JJR of\_IN her\_PRP before\_IN this\_DT time\_NN to-morrow\_NN .\_. ''\_''

CHAPTER\_NNP VII\_NNP CUTTING\_NNP FROM\_NNP ``\_`` THE\_DT DAILYGRAPH\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' 8\_CD AUGUST\_NNP -LRB-\_-LRB- Pasted\_NNP in\_IN Mina\_NNP Murray\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP .\_. -RRB-\_-RRB-

From\_IN a\_DT Correspondent\_NN .\_.

Whitby\_NNP .\_.

ONE\_CD greatest\_JJS and\_CC suddenest\_JJ storms\_NNS on\_IN record\_NN has\_VBZ just\_RB been\_VBN experienced\_VBN here\_RB ,\_, with\_IN results\_NNS both\_CC strange\_JJ and\_CC unique\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT weather\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN somewhat\_RB sultry\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC not\_RB to\_TO any\_DT degree\_NN uncommon\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT month\_NN of\_IN August\_NNP .\_.

Saturday\_NNP evening\_NN was\_VBD as\_RB fine\_JJ as\_IN was\_VBD ever\_RB known\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT great\_JJ body\_NN of\_IN holiday-makers\_NNS laid\_VBN out\_RP yesterday\_NN for\_IN visits\_NNS to\_TO Mulgrave\_NNP Woods\_NNP ,\_, Robin\_NNP Hood\_NNP 's\_POS Bay\_NNP ,\_, Rig\_NNP Mill\_NNP ,\_, Runswick\_NNP ,\_, Staithes\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT various\_JJ trips\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT neighbourhood\_NN of\_IN Whitby\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT steamers\_NNS Emma\_NNP and\_CC Scarborough\_NNP made\_VBD trips\_NNS up\_IN and\_CC down\_IN the\_DT coast\_NN ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD an\_DT unusual\_JJ amount\_NN of\_IN ``\_`` tripping\_VBG ''\_'' both\_DT to\_TO and\_CC from\_IN Whitby\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT day\_NN was\_VBD unusually\_RB fine\_JJ till\_IN the\_DT afternoon\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT gossips\_NNS who\_WP frequent\_JJ the\_DT East\_NNP Cliff\_NNP churchyard\_NN ,\_, and\_CC from\_IN that\_DT commanding\_JJ eminence\_NN watch\_VBP the\_DT wide\_JJ sweep\_NN of\_IN sea\_NN visible\_JJ to\_TO the\_DT north\_NN and\_CC east\_JJ ,\_, called\_VBN attention\_NN to\_TO a\_DT sudden\_JJ show\_NN of\_IN ``\_`` mares\_NNS '\_POS -\_: tails\_NNS ''\_'' high\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT sky\_NN to\_TO the\_DT north-west\_NN .\_.

The\_DT wind\_NN was\_VBD then\_RB blowing\_VBG from\_IN the\_DT south-west\_NN in\_IN the\_DT mild\_JJ degree\_NN which\_WDT in\_IN barometrical\_JJ language\_NN is\_VBZ ranked\_VBN ``\_`` No.\_NN 2\_CD :\_: light\_JJ breeze\_NN .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT coastguard\_NN on\_IN duty\_NN at\_IN once\_RB made\_VBN report\_NN ,\_, and\_CC one\_CD old\_JJ fisherman\_NN ,\_, who\_WP for\_IN more\_JJR than\_IN half\_PDT a\_DT century\_NN has\_VBZ kept\_VBN watch\_NN on\_IN weather\_NN signs\_NNS from\_IN the\_DT East\_NNP Cliff\_NNP ,\_, foretold\_VBN in\_IN an\_DT emphatic\_JJ manner\_NN the\_DT coming\_VBG of\_IN a\_DT sudden\_JJ storm\_NN .\_.

The\_DT approach\_NN of\_IN sunset\_NN was\_VBD so\_RB very\_RB beautiful\_JJ ,\_, so\_RB grand\_JJ in\_IN its\_PRP$ masses\_NNS of\_IN splendidly-coloured\_JJ clouds\_NNS ,\_, that\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD quite\_RB an\_DT assemblage\_NN on\_IN the\_DT walk\_NN along\_IN the\_DT cliff\_NN in\_IN the\_DT old\_JJ churchyard\_NN to\_TO enjoy\_VB the\_DT beauty\_NN .\_.

Before\_IN the\_DT sun\_NN dipped\_VBN below\_IN the\_DT black\_JJ mass\_NN of\_IN Kettleness\_NN ,\_, standing\_NN boldly\_RB athwart\_VBD the\_DT western\_JJ sky\_NN ,\_, its\_PRP$ downward\_JJ way\_NN was\_VBD marked\_VBN by\_IN myriad\_JJ clouds\_NNS of\_IN every\_DT sunset-colour\_NN --\_: flame\_NN ,\_, purple\_JJ ,\_, pink\_JJ ,\_, green\_JJ ,\_, violet\_NN ,\_, and\_CC all\_PDT the\_DT tints\_NNS of\_IN gold\_NN ;\_: with\_IN here\_RB and\_CC there\_RB masses\_NNS not\_RB large\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC of\_IN seemingly\_RB absolute\_JJ blackness\_NN ,\_, in\_IN all\_DT sorts\_NNS of\_IN shapes\_NNS ,\_, as\_RB well\_RB outlined\_VBN as\_IN colossal\_JJ silhouettes\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT experience\_NN was\_VBD not\_RB lost\_VBN on\_IN the\_DT painters\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC doubtless\_VBZ some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT sketches\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT ``\_`` Prelude\_NN to\_TO the\_DT Great\_JJ Storm\_NN ''\_'' will\_NN grace\_NN the\_DT R.\_NNP A.\_NNP and\_CC R.\_NNP I.\_NNP walls\_NNS in\_IN May\_NNP next\_JJ .\_.

More\_JJR than\_IN one\_CD captain\_NN made\_VBD up\_RP his\_PRP$ mind\_NN then\_RB and\_CC there\_RB that\_IN his\_PRP$ ``\_`` cobble\_NN ''\_'' or\_CC his\_PRP$ ``\_`` mule\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' as\_IN they\_PRP term\_VBP the\_DT different\_JJ classes\_NNS of\_IN boats\_NNS ,\_, would\_MD remain\_VB in\_IN the\_DT harbour\_NN till\_IN the\_DT storm\_NN had\_VBD passed\_VBN .\_.

The\_DT wind\_NN fell\_VBD away\_RB entirely\_RB during\_IN the\_DT evening\_NN ,\_, and\_CC at\_IN midnight\_NN there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT dead\_JJ calm\_NN ,\_, a\_DT sultry\_JJ heat\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN prevailing\_VBG intensity\_NN which\_WDT ,\_, on\_IN the\_DT approach\_NN of\_IN thunder\_NN ,\_, affects\_VBZ persons\_NNS of\_IN a\_DT sensitive\_JJ nature\_NN .\_.

There\_EX were\_VBD but\_CC few\_JJ lights\_NNS in\_IN sight\_NN at\_IN sea\_NN ,\_, for\_IN even\_RB the\_DT coasting\_VBG steamers\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT usually\_RB ``\_`` hug\_NN ''\_'' the\_DT shore\_NN so\_RB closely\_RB ,\_, kept\_VBD well\_RB to\_TO seaward\_NN ,\_, and\_CC but\_CC few\_JJ fishing-boats\_NNS were\_VBD in\_IN sight\_NN .\_.

The\_DT only\_JJ sail\_NN noticeable\_JJ was\_VBD a\_DT foreign\_JJ schooner\_NN with\_IN all\_DT sails\_NNS set\_VBN ,\_, which\_WDT was\_VBD seemingly\_RB going\_VBG westwards\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT foolhardiness\_NN or\_CC ignorance\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ officers\_NNS was\_VBD a\_DT prolific\_JJ theme\_NN for\_IN comment\_NN whilst\_IN she\_PRP remained\_VBD in\_IN sight\_NN ,\_, and\_CC efforts\_NNS were\_VBD made\_VBN to\_TO signal\_VB her\_PRP to\_TO reduce\_VB sail\_NN in\_IN face\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ danger\_NN .\_.

Before\_IN the\_DT night\_NN shut\_VBD down\_RB she\_PRP was\_VBD seen\_VBN with\_IN sails\_NNS idly\_RB flapping\_VBG as\_IN she\_PRP gently\_RB rolled\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT undulating\_JJ swell\_NN of\_IN the\_DT sea\_NN ,\_, ``\_`` As\_RB idle\_JJ as\_IN a\_DT painted\_JJ ship\_NN upon\_IN a\_DT painted\_JJ ocean\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Shortly\_RB before\_IN ten\_CD o'clock\_RB the\_DT stillness\_NN of\_IN the\_DT air\_NN grew\_VBD quite\_RB oppressive\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT silence\_NN was\_VBD so\_RB marked\_JJ that\_IN the\_DT bleating\_NN of\_IN a\_DT sheep\_NN inland\_RB or\_CC the\_DT barking\_VBG of\_IN a\_DT dog\_NN in\_IN the\_DT town\_NN was\_VBD distinctly\_RB heard\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT band\_NN on\_IN the\_DT pier\_NN ,\_, with\_IN its\_PRP$ lively\_JJ French\_JJ air\_NN ,\_, was\_VBD like\_IN a\_DT discord\_NN in\_IN the\_DT great\_JJ harmony\_NN of\_IN nature\_NN 's\_POS silence\_NN .\_.

A\_DT little\_JJ after\_IN midnight\_NN came\_VBD a\_DT strange\_JJ sound\_NN from\_IN over\_IN the\_DT sea\_NN ,\_, and\_CC high\_JJ overhead\_NN the\_DT air\_NN began\_VBD to\_TO carry\_VB a\_DT strange\_JJ ,\_, faint\_JJ ,\_, hollow\_JJ booming\_VBG .\_.

Then\_RB without\_IN warning\_VBG the\_DT tempest\_NN broke\_VBD .\_.

With\_IN a\_DT rapidity\_NN which\_WDT ,\_, at\_IN the\_DT time\_NN ,\_, seemed\_VBD incredible\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC even\_RB afterwards\_RB is\_VBZ impossible\_JJ to\_TO realize\_VB ,\_, the\_DT whole\_JJ aspect\_NN of\_IN nature\_NN at\_IN once\_RB became\_VBD convulsed\_VBN .\_.

The\_DT waves\_NNS rose\_VBD in\_IN growing\_VBG fury\_NN ,\_, each\_DT overtopping\_VBG its\_PRP$ fellow\_NN ,\_, till\_IN in\_IN a\_DT very\_RB few\_JJ minutes\_NNS the\_DT lately\_RB glassy\_JJ sea\_NN was\_VBD like\_IN a\_DT roaring\_VBG and\_CC devouring\_VBG monster\_NN .\_.

White-crested\_JJ waves\_NNS beat\_VBP madly\_RB on\_IN the\_DT level\_NN sands\_NNS and\_CC rushed\_VBD up\_RP the\_DT shelving\_VBG cliffs\_NNS ;\_: others\_NNS broke\_VBD over\_IN the\_DT piers\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN their\_PRP$ spume\_NN swept\_VBD the\_DT lanthorns\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT lighthouses\_NNS which\_WDT rise\_VBP from\_IN the\_DT end\_NN of\_IN either\_DT pier\_NN of\_IN Whitby\_NNP Harbour\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT wind\_NN roared\_VBD like\_IN thunder\_NN ,\_, and\_CC blew\_VBD with\_IN such\_JJ force\_NN that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD with\_IN difficulty\_NN that\_IN even\_RB strong\_JJ men\_NNS kept\_VBD their\_PRP$ feet\_NNS ,\_, or\_CC clung\_NN with\_IN grim\_JJ clasp\_NN to\_TO the\_DT iron\_NN stanchions\_NNS .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD found\_VBN necessary\_JJ to\_TO clear\_VB the\_DT entire\_JJ piers\_NNS from\_IN the\_DT mass\_NN of\_IN onlookers\_NNS ,\_, or\_CC else\_RB the\_DT fatalities\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT night\_NN would\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN increased\_VBN manifold\_RB .\_.

To\_TO add\_VB to\_TO the\_DT difficulties\_NNS and\_CC dangers\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT time\_NN ,\_, masses\_NNS of\_IN sea-fog\_NN came\_VBD drifting\_VBG inland\_RB --\_: white\_JJ ,\_, wet\_JJ clouds\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT swept\_VBD by\_IN in\_IN ghostly\_JJ fashion\_NN ,\_, so\_RB dank\_JJ and\_CC damp\_JJ and\_CC cold\_JJ that\_IN it\_PRP needed\_VBD but\_CC little\_JJ effort\_NN of\_IN imagination\_NN to\_TO think\_VB that\_IN the\_DT spirits\_NNS of\_IN those\_DT lost\_VBN at\_IN sea\_NN were\_VBD touching\_VBG their\_PRP$ living\_NN brethren\_NNS with\_IN the\_DT clammy\_JJ hands\_NNS of\_IN death\_NN ,\_, and\_CC many\_JJ a\_DT one\_CD shuddered\_VBD as\_IN the\_DT wreaths\_NNS of\_IN sea-mist\_NN swept\_VBN by\_IN .\_.

At\_IN times\_NNS the\_DT mist\_NN cleared\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT sea\_NN for\_IN some\_DT distance\_NN could\_MD be\_VB seen\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT glare\_NN of\_IN the\_DT lightning\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT now\_RB came\_VBD thick\_JJ and\_CC fast\_JJ ,\_, followed\_VBN by\_IN such\_JJ sudden\_JJ peals\_NNS of\_IN thunder\_NN that\_IN the\_DT whole\_JJ sky\_NN overhead\_NN seemed\_VBD trembling\_VBG under\_IN the\_DT shock\_NN of\_IN the\_DT footsteps\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT storm\_NN .\_.

Some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT scenes\_NNS thus\_RB revealed\_VBN were\_VBD of\_IN immeasurable\_JJ grandeur\_NN and\_CC of\_IN absorbing\_VBG interest\_NN --\_: the\_DT sea\_NN ,\_, running\_VBG mountains\_NNS high\_JJ ,\_, threw\_VBD skywards\_NNS with\_IN each\_DT wave\_NN mighty\_JJ masses\_NNS of\_IN white\_JJ foam\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT the\_DT tempest\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO snatch\_VB at\_IN and\_CC whirl\_NN away\_RB into\_IN space\_NN ;\_: here\_RB and\_CC there\_RB a\_DT fishing-boat\_NN ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT rag\_NN of\_IN sail\_NN ,\_, running\_VBG madly\_RB for\_IN shelter\_NN before\_IN the\_DT blast\_NN ;\_: now\_RB and\_CC again\_RB the\_DT white\_JJ wings\_NNS of\_IN a\_DT storm-tossed\_JJ sea-bird\_NN .\_.

On\_IN the\_DT summit\_NN of\_IN the\_DT East\_NNP Cliff\_NNP the\_DT new\_JJ searchlight\_NN was\_VBD ready\_JJ for\_IN experiment\_NN ,\_, but\_CC had\_VBD not\_RB yet\_RB been\_VBN tried\_VBN .\_.

The\_DT officers\_NNS in\_IN charge\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP got\_VBD it\_PRP into\_IN working\_VBG order\_NN ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN the\_DT pauses\_VBZ of\_IN the\_DT inrushing\_VBG mist\_NN swept\_VBD with\_IN it\_PRP the\_DT surface\_NN of\_IN the\_DT sea\_NN .\_.

Once\_RB or\_CC twice\_RB its\_PRP$ service\_NN was\_VBD most\_RBS effective\_JJ ,\_, as\_IN when\_WRB a\_DT fishing-boat\_NN ,\_, with\_IN gunwale\_NN under\_IN water\_NN ,\_, rushed\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT harbour\_NN ,\_, able\_JJ ,\_, by\_IN the\_DT guidance\_NN of\_IN the\_DT sheltering\_VBG light\_NN ,\_, to\_TO avoid\_VB the\_DT danger\_NN of\_IN dashing\_VBG against\_IN the\_DT piers\_NNS .\_.

As\_IN each\_DT boat\_NN achieved\_VBD the\_DT safety\_NN of\_IN the\_DT port\_NN there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT shout\_NN of\_IN joy\_NN from\_IN the\_DT mass\_NN of\_IN people\_NNS on\_IN shore\_NN ,\_, a\_DT shout\_NN which\_WDT for\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO cleave\_VB the\_DT gale\_NN and\_CC was\_VBD then\_RB swept\_VBN away\_RB in\_IN its\_PRP$ rush\_NN .\_.

Before\_IN long\_RB the\_DT searchlight\_NN discovered\_VBD some\_DT distance\_NN away\_RB a\_DT schooner\_NN with\_IN all\_DT sails\_NNS set\_VBN ,\_, apparently\_RB the\_DT same\_JJ vessel\_NN which\_WDT had\_VBD been\_VBN noticed\_VBN earlier\_RBR in\_IN the\_DT evening\_NN .\_.

The\_DT wind\_NN had\_VBD by\_IN this\_DT time\_NN backed\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT east\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT shudder\_NN amongst\_IN the\_DT watchers\_NNS on\_IN the\_DT cliff\_NN as\_IN they\_PRP realized\_VBD the\_DT terrible\_JJ danger\_NN in\_IN which\_WDT she\_PRP now\_RB was\_VBD .\_.

Between\_IN her\_PRP and\_CC the\_DT port\_NN lay\_VBD the\_DT great\_JJ flat\_JJ reef\_NN on\_IN which\_WDT so\_RB many\_JJ good\_JJ ships\_NNS have\_VBP from\_IN time\_NN to\_TO time\_NN suffered\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, with\_IN the\_DT wind\_NN blowing\_VBG from\_IN its\_PRP$ present\_JJ quarter\_NN ,\_, it\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB quite\_RB impossible\_JJ that\_IN she\_PRP should\_MD fetch\_VB the\_DT entrance\_NN of\_IN the\_DT harbour\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD now\_RB nearly\_RB the\_DT hour\_NN of\_IN high\_JJ tide\_NN ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT waves\_NNS were\_VBD so\_RB great\_JJ that\_IN in\_IN their\_PRP$ troughs\_NNS the\_DT shallows\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT shore\_NN were\_VBD almost\_RB visible\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT schooner\_NN ,\_, with\_IN all\_DT sails\_NNS set\_VBN ,\_, was\_VBD rushing\_VBG with\_IN such\_JJ speed\_NN that\_IN ,\_, in\_IN the\_DT words\_NNS of\_IN one\_CD old\_JJ salt\_NN ,\_, ``\_`` she\_PRP must\_MD fetch\_VB up\_RP somewhere\_RB ,\_, if\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD only\_RB in\_IN hell\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Then\_RB came\_VBD another\_DT rush\_NN of\_IN sea-fog\_NN ,\_, greater\_JJR than\_IN any\_DT hitherto\_RB --\_: a\_DT mass\_NN of\_IN dank\_JJ mist\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT seemed\_VBD to\_TO close\_VB on\_IN all\_DT things\_NNS like\_IN a\_DT grey\_JJ pall\_NN ,\_, and\_CC left\_VBD available\_JJ to\_TO men\_NNS only\_RB the\_DT organ\_NN of\_IN hearing\_NN ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT roar\_NN of\_IN the\_DT tempest\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT crash\_NN of\_IN the\_DT thunder\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT booming\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT mighty\_JJ billows\_NNS came\_VBD through\_IN the\_DT damp\_JJ oblivion\_NN even\_RB louder\_RBR than\_IN before\_RB .\_.

The\_DT rays\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT searchlight\_NN were\_VBD kept\_VBN fixed\_VBN on\_IN the\_DT harbour\_NN mouth\_NN across\_IN the\_DT East\_NNP Pier\_NNP ,\_, where\_WRB the\_DT shock\_NN was\_VBD expected\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC men\_NNS waited\_VBD breathless\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT wind\_NN suddenly\_RB shifted\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT north-east\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT remnant\_NN of\_IN the\_DT sea-fog\_NN melted\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT blast\_NN ;\_: and\_CC then\_RB ,\_, mirabile\_FW dictu\_FW ,\_, between\_IN the\_DT piers\_NNS ,\_, leaping\_VBG from\_IN wave\_NN to\_TO wave\_VB as\_IN it\_PRP rushed\_VBD at\_IN headlong\_RB speed\_NN ,\_, swept\_VBD the\_DT strange\_JJ schooner\_NN before\_IN the\_DT blast\_NN ,\_, with\_IN all\_DT sail\_JJ set\_NN ,\_, and\_CC gained\_VBD the\_DT safety\_NN of\_IN the\_DT harbour\_NN .\_.

The\_DT searchlight\_NN followed\_VBD her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT shudder\_NN ran\_VBD through\_IN all\_DT who\_WP saw\_VBD her\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN lashed\_VBN to\_TO the\_DT helm\_NN was\_VBD a\_DT corpse\_NN ,\_, with\_IN drooping\_JJ head\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT swung\_VBD horribly\_RB to\_TO and\_CC fro\_NN at\_IN each\_DT motion\_NN of\_IN the\_DT ship\_NN .\_.

No\_DT other\_JJ form\_NN could\_MD be\_VB seen\_VBN on\_IN deck\_NN at\_IN all\_DT .\_.

A\_DT great\_JJ awe\_NN came\_VBD on\_IN all\_DT as\_IN they\_PRP realised\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT ship\_NN ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN by\_IN a\_DT miracle\_NN ,\_, had\_VBD found\_VBN the\_DT harbour\_NN ,\_, unsteered\_JJ save\_VBP by\_IN the\_DT hand\_NN of\_IN a\_DT dead\_JJ man\_NN !\_.

However\_RB ,\_, all\_DT took\_VBD place\_NN more\_RBR quickly\_RB than\_IN it\_PRP takes\_VBZ to\_TO write\_VB these\_DT words\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT schooner\_NN paused\_VBD not\_RB ,\_, but\_CC rushing\_VBG across\_IN the\_DT harbour\_NN ,\_, pitched\_VBD herself\_PRP on\_IN that\_DT accumulation\_NN of\_IN sand\_NN and\_CC gravel\_NN washed\_VBN by\_IN many\_JJ tides\_NNS and\_CC many\_JJ storms\_NNS into\_IN the\_DT south-east\_JJ corner\_NN of\_IN the\_DT pier\_NN jutting\_VBG under\_IN the\_DT East\_NNP Cliff\_NNP ,\_, known\_VBN locally\_RB as\_IN Tate\_NNP Hill\_NNP Pier\_NNP .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD of\_IN course\_NN a\_DT considerable\_JJ concussion\_NN as\_IN the\_DT vessel\_NN drove\_VBD up\_RP on\_IN the\_DT sand\_NN heap\_NN .\_.

Every\_DT spar\_NN ,\_, rope\_NN ,\_, and\_CC stay\_NN was\_VBD strained\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT ``\_`` top-hammer\_NN ''\_'' came\_VBD crashing\_VBG down\_RP .\_.

But\_CC ,\_, strangest\_JJS of\_IN all\_DT ,\_, the\_DT very\_RB instant\_JJ the\_DT shore\_NN was\_VBD touched\_VBN ,\_, an\_DT immense\_JJ dog\_NN sprang\_VBD up\_RP on\_IN deck\_NN from\_IN below\_RB ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN shot\_VBN up\_RP by\_IN the\_DT concussion\_NN ,\_, and\_CC running\_VBG forward\_RB ,\_, jumped\_VBD from\_IN the\_DT bow\_NN on\_IN the\_DT sand\_NN .\_.

Making\_VBG straight\_RB for\_IN the\_DT steep\_JJ cliff\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB the\_DT churchyard\_NN hangs\_VBZ over\_IN the\_DT laneway\_NN to\_TO the\_DT East\_NNP Pier\_NNP so\_RB steeply\_RB that\_IN some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT flat\_JJ tombstones\_NNS --\_: ``\_`` thruff-steans\_NNS ''\_'' or\_CC ``\_`` through-stones\_NNS ,\_, ''\_'' as\_IN they\_PRP call\_VBP them\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT Whitby\_NNP vernacular\_NN --\_: actually\_RB project\_NN over\_IN where\_WRB the\_DT sustaining\_VBG cliff\_NN has\_VBZ fallen\_VBN away\_RB ,\_, it\_PRP disappeared\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT darkness\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT seemed\_VBD intensified\_VBN just\_RB beyond\_IN the\_DT focus\_NN of\_IN the\_DT searchlight\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP so\_RB happened\_VBD that\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT one\_NN at\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN on\_IN Tate\_NNP Hill\_NNP Pier\_NNP ,\_, as\_IN all\_PDT those\_DT whose\_WP$ houses\_NNS are\_VBP in\_IN close\_JJ proximity\_NN were\_VBD either\_CC in\_IN bed\_NN or\_CC were\_VBD out\_RP on\_IN the\_DT heights\_NNS above\_IN .\_.

Thus\_RB the\_DT coastguard\_NN on\_IN duty\_NN on\_IN the\_DT eastern\_JJ side\_NN of\_IN the\_DT harbour\_NN ,\_, who\_WP at\_IN once\_RB ran\_VBD down\_RB to\_TO the\_DT little\_JJ pier\_NN ,\_, was\_VBD the\_DT first\_JJ to\_TO climb\_VB on\_IN board\_NN .\_.

The\_DT men\_NNS working\_VBG the\_DT searchlight\_NN ,\_, after\_IN scouring\_VBG the\_DT entrance\_NN of\_IN the\_DT harbour\_NN without\_IN seeing\_VBG anything\_NN ,\_, then\_RB turned\_VBD the\_DT light\_NN on\_IN the\_DT derelict\_NN and\_CC kept\_VBD it\_PRP there\_RB .\_.

The\_DT coastguard\_NN ran\_VBD aft\_NN ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB he\_PRP came\_VBD beside\_IN the\_DT wheel\_NN ,\_, bent\_JJ over\_RP to\_TO examine\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC recoiled\_VBD at\_IN once\_RB as\_IN though\_IN under\_IN some\_DT sudden\_JJ emotion\_NN .\_.

This\_DT seemed\_VBD to\_TO pique\_VB general\_JJ curiosity\_NN ,\_, and\_CC quite\_RB a\_DT number\_NN of\_IN people\_NNS began\_VBD to\_TO run\_VB .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT good\_JJ way\_NN round\_NN from\_IN the\_DT West\_NNP Cliff\_NNP by\_IN the\_DT Drawbridge\_NN to\_TO Tate\_NNP Hill\_NNP Pier\_NNP ,\_, but\_CC your\_PRP$ correspondent\_NN is\_VBZ a\_DT fairly\_RB good\_JJ runner\_NN ,\_, and\_CC came\_VBD well\_RB ahead\_RB of\_IN the\_DT crowd\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP arrived\_VBD ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP found\_VBD already\_RB assembled\_VBN on\_IN the\_DT pier\_NN a\_DT crowd\_NN ,\_, whom\_WP the\_DT coastguard\_NN and\_CC police\_NN refused\_VBD to\_TO allow\_VB to\_TO come\_VB on\_IN board\_NN .\_.

By\_IN the\_DT courtesy\_NN of\_IN the\_DT chief\_JJ boatman\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, as\_IN your\_PRP$ correspondent\_NN ,\_, permitted\_VBD to\_TO climb\_VB on\_IN deck\_NN ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD one\_CD of\_IN a\_DT small\_JJ group\_NN who\_WP saw\_VBD the\_DT dead\_JJ seaman\_NN whilst\_IN actually\_RB lashed\_VBN to\_TO the\_DT wheel\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD no\_DT wonder\_NN that\_IN the\_DT coastguard\_NN was\_VBD surprised\_VBN ,\_, or\_CC even\_RB awed\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN not\_RB often\_RB can\_MD such\_PDT a\_DT sight\_NN have\_VBP been\_VBN seen\_VBN .\_.

The\_DT man\_NN was\_VBD simply\_RB fastened\_VBN by\_IN his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS ,\_, tied\_VBD one\_CD over\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ ,\_, to\_TO a\_DT spoke\_VBN of\_IN the\_DT wheel\_NN .\_.

Between\_IN the\_DT inner\_JJ hand\_NN and\_CC the\_DT wood\_NN was\_VBD a\_DT crucifix\_NN ,\_, the\_DT set\_NN of\_IN beads\_NNS on\_IN which\_WDT it\_PRP was\_VBD fastened\_VBN being\_VBG around\_IN both\_DT wrists\_NNS and\_CC wheel\_NN ,\_, and\_CC all\_DT kept\_VBD fast\_RB by\_IN the\_DT binding\_VBG cords\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT poor\_JJ fellow\_NN may\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN seated\_VBN at\_IN one\_CD time\_NN ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT flapping\_VBG and\_CC buffeting\_VBG of\_IN the\_DT sails\_NNS had\_VBD worked\_VBN through\_IN the\_DT rudder\_NN of\_IN the\_DT wheel\_NN and\_CC dragged\_VBD him\_PRP to\_TO and\_CC fro\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN the\_DT cords\_NNS with\_IN which\_WDT he\_PRP was\_VBD tied\_VBN had\_VBD cut\_VBN the\_DT flesh\_NN to\_TO the\_DT bone\_NN .\_.

Accurate\_JJ note\_NN was\_VBD made\_VBN of\_IN the\_DT state\_NN of\_IN things\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT doctor\_NN --\_: Surgeon\_NNP J.\_NNP M.\_NNP Caffyn\_NNP ,\_, of\_IN 33\_CD ,\_, East\_NNP Elliot\_NNP Place\_NNP --\_: who\_WP came\_VBD immediately\_RB after\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, declared\_VBD ,\_, after\_IN making\_VBG examination\_NN ,\_, that\_IN the\_DT man\_NN must\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN dead\_JJ for\_IN quite\_RB two\_CD days\_NNS .\_.

In\_IN his\_PRP$ pocket\_NN was\_VBD a\_DT bottle\_NN ,\_, carefully\_RB corked\_JJ ,\_, empty\_JJ save\_VB for\_IN a\_DT little\_JJ roll\_NN of\_IN paper\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT proved\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB the\_DT addendum\_NN to\_TO the\_DT log\_NN .\_.

The\_DT coastguard\_NN said\_VBD the\_DT man\_NN must\_MD have\_VB tied\_VBN up\_RP his\_PRP$ own\_JJ hands\_NNS ,\_, fastening\_VBG the\_DT knots\_NNS with\_IN his\_PRP$ teeth\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT fact\_NN that\_IN a\_DT coastguard\_NN was\_VBD the\_DT first\_JJ on\_IN board\_NN may\_MD save\_VB some\_DT complications\_NNS ,\_, later\_RB on\_IN ,\_, in\_IN the\_DT Admiralty\_NNP Court\_NNP ;\_: for\_IN coastguards\_NNS can\_MD not\_RB claim\_VB the\_DT salvage\_NN which\_WDT is\_VBZ the\_DT right\_NN of\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ civilian\_JJ entering\_VBG on\_IN a\_DT derelict\_NN .\_.

Already\_RB ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, the\_DT legal\_JJ tongues\_NNS are\_VBP wagging\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC one\_CD young\_JJ law\_NN student\_NN is\_VBZ loudly\_RB asserting\_VBG that\_IN the\_DT rights\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT owner\_NN are\_VBP already\_RB completely\_RB sacrificed\_VBN ,\_, his\_PRP$ property\_NN being\_VBG held\_VBN in\_IN contravention\_NN of\_IN the\_DT statutes\_NNS of\_IN mortmain\_NN ,\_, since\_IN the\_DT tiller\_NN ,\_, as\_IN emblemship\_NN ,\_, if\_IN not\_RB proof\_NN ,\_, of\_IN delegated\_VBN possession\_NN ,\_, is\_VBZ held\_VBN in\_IN a\_DT dead\_JJ hand\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ needless\_JJ to\_TO say\_VB that\_IN the\_DT dead\_JJ steersman\_NN has\_VBZ been\_VBN reverently\_RB removed\_VBN from\_IN the\_DT place\_NN where\_WRB he\_PRP held\_VBD his\_PRP$ honourable\_JJ watch\_NN and\_CC ward\_NN till\_IN death\_NN --\_: a\_DT steadfastness\_NN as\_RB noble\_JJ as\_IN that\_DT of\_IN the\_DT young\_JJ Casabianca\_NNP --\_: and\_CC placed\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT mortuary\_NN to\_TO await\_VB inquest\_NN .\_.

Already\_RB the\_DT sudden\_JJ storm\_NN is\_VBZ passing\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC its\_PRP$ fierceness\_NN is\_VBZ abating\_VBG ;\_: crowds\_NNS are\_VBP scattering\_VBG homeward\_RB ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT sky\_NN is\_VBZ beginning\_VBG to\_TO redden\_VB over\_IN the\_DT Yorkshire\_NNP wolds\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD send\_VB ,\_, in\_IN time\_NN for\_IN your\_PRP$ next\_JJ issue\_NN ,\_, further\_JJ details\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT derelict\_JJ ship\_NN which\_WDT found\_VBD her\_PRP$ way\_NN so\_RB miraculously\_RB into\_IN harbour\_NN in\_IN the\_DT storm\_NN .\_.

Whitby\_NNP 9\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

--\_: The\_DT sequel\_NN to\_TO the\_DT strange\_JJ arrival\_NN of\_IN the\_DT derelict\_NN in\_IN the\_DT storm\_NN last\_JJ night\_NN is\_VBZ almost\_RB more\_RBR startling\_JJ than\_IN the\_DT thing\_NN itself\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP turns\_VBZ out\_RP that\_IN the\_DT schooner\_NN is\_VBZ a\_DT Russian\_NNP from\_IN Varna\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC is\_VBZ called\_VBN the\_DT Demeter\_NNP .\_.

She\_PRP is\_VBZ almost\_RB entirely\_RB in\_IN ballast\_NN of\_IN silver\_NN sand\_NN ,\_, with\_IN only\_RB a\_DT small\_JJ amount\_NN of\_IN cargo\_NN --\_: a\_DT number\_NN of\_IN great\_JJ wooden\_JJ boxes\_NNS filled\_VBN with\_IN mould\_NN .\_.

This\_DT cargo\_NN was\_VBD consigned\_VBN to\_TO a\_DT Whitby\_NNP solicitor\_NN ,\_, Mr.\_NNP S.\_NNP F.\_NNP Billington\_NNP ,\_, of\_IN 7\_CD ,\_, The\_DT Crescent\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP this\_DT morning\_NN went\_VBD aboard\_RB and\_CC formally\_RB took\_VBD possession\_NN of\_IN the\_DT goods\_NNS consigned\_VBN to\_TO him\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT Russian\_JJ consul\_NN ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, acting\_VBG for\_IN the\_DT charter-party\_NN ,\_, took\_VBD formal\_JJ possession\_NN of\_IN the\_DT ship\_NN ,\_, and\_CC paid\_VBD all\_DT harbour\_NN dues\_NNS ,\_, etc.\_FW .\_.

Nothing\_NN is\_VBZ talked\_VBN about\_IN here\_RB to-day\_JJ except\_IN the\_DT strange\_JJ coincidence\_NN ;\_: the\_DT officials\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT Board\_NNP of\_IN Trade\_NNP have\_VBP been\_VBN most\_RBS exacting\_JJ in\_IN seeing\_VBG that\_IN every\_DT compliance\_NN has\_VBZ been\_VBN made\_VBN with\_IN existing\_JJ regulations\_NNS .\_.

As\_IN the\_DT matter\_NN is\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB a\_DT ``\_`` nine\_CD days\_NNS '\_POS wonder\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' they\_PRP are\_VBP evidently\_RB determined\_VBN that\_IN there\_EX shall\_MD be\_VB no\_DT cause\_NN of\_IN after\_IN complaint\_NN .\_.

A\_DT good\_JJ deal\_NN of\_IN interest\_NN was\_VBD abroad\_RB concerning\_VBG the\_DT dog\_NN which\_WDT landed\_VBD when\_WRB the\_DT ship\_NN struck\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC more\_JJR than\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT members\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT S.\_NNP P.\_NNP C.\_NNP A.\_NNP ,\_, which\_WDT is\_VBZ very\_RB strong\_JJ in\_IN Whitby\_NNP ,\_, have\_VBP tried\_VBN to\_TO befriend\_VB the\_DT animal\_NN .\_.

To\_TO the\_DT general\_JJ disappointment\_NN ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, it\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB to\_TO be\_VB found\_VBN ;\_: it\_PRP seems\_VBZ to\_TO have\_VB disappeared\_VBN entirely\_RB from\_IN the\_DT town\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD frightened\_VBN and\_CC made\_VBN its\_PRP$ way\_NN on\_IN to\_TO the\_DT moors\_NNS ,\_, where\_WRB it\_PRP is\_VBZ still\_RB hiding\_VBG in\_IN terror\_NN .\_.

There\_EX are\_VBP some\_DT who\_WP look\_VBP with\_IN dread\_NN on\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT possibility\_NN ,\_, lest\_IN later\_RB on\_IN it\_PRP should\_MD in\_IN itself\_PRP become\_VBP a\_DT danger\_NN ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ evidently\_RB a\_DT fierce\_JJ brute\_JJ .\_.

Early\_RB this\_DT morning\_NN a\_DT large\_JJ dog\_NN ,\_, a\_DT half-bred\_JJ mastiff\_NN belonging\_VBG to\_TO a\_DT coal\_NN merchant\_NN close\_RB to\_TO Tate\_NNP Hill\_NNP Pier\_NNP ,\_, was\_VBD found\_VBN dead\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT roadway\_NN opposite\_JJ to\_TO its\_PRP$ master\_NN 's\_POS yard\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN fighting\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC manifestly\_RB had\_VBD had\_VBN a\_DT savage\_JJ opponent\_NN ,\_, for\_IN its\_PRP$ throat\_NN was\_VBD torn\_VBN away\_RB ,\_, and\_CC its\_PRP$ belly\_NN was\_VBD slit\_NN open\_JJ as\_IN if\_IN with\_IN a\_DT savage\_JJ claw\_NN .\_.

Later\_RB .\_.

--\_: By\_IN the\_DT kindness\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Board\_NNP of\_IN Trade\_NNP inspector\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN permitted\_VBN to\_TO look\_VB over\_IN the\_DT log-book\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Demeter\_NNP ,\_, which\_WDT was\_VBD in\_IN order\_NN up\_IN to\_TO within\_IN three\_CD days\_NNS ,\_, but\_CC contained\_VBD nothing\_NN of\_IN special\_JJ interest\_NN except\_IN as\_IN to\_TO facts\_NNS of\_IN missing\_VBG men\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT greatest\_JJS interest\_NN ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, is\_VBZ with\_IN regard\_NN to\_TO the\_DT paper\_NN found\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT bottle\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT was\_VBD to-day\_RB produced\_VBN at\_IN the\_DT inquest\_NN ;\_: and\_CC a\_DT more\_RBR strange\_JJ narrative\_NN than\_IN the\_DT two\_CD between\_IN them\_PRP unfold\_VBP it\_PRP has\_VBZ not\_RB been\_VBN my\_PRP$ lot\_NN to\_TO come\_VB across\_RB .\_.

As\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT motive\_NN for\_IN concealment\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP permitted\_VBN to\_TO use\_VB them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC accordingly\_RB send\_VB you\_PRP a\_DT rescript\_NN ,\_, simply\_RB omitting\_VBG technical\_JJ details\_NNS of\_IN seamanship\_NN and\_CC supercargo\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP almost\_RB seems\_VBZ as\_IN though\_IN the\_DT captain\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN seized\_VBN with\_IN some\_DT kind\_NN of\_IN mania\_NN before\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD got\_VBN well\_RB into\_IN blue\_JJ water\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN this\_DT had\_VBD developed\_VBN persistently\_RB throughout\_IN the\_DT voyage\_NN .\_.

Of\_IN course\_NN my\_PRP$ statement\_NN must\_MD be\_VB taken\_VBN cum\_NN grano\_NN ,\_, since\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP writing\_VBG from\_IN the\_DT dictation\_NN of\_IN a\_DT clerk\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Russian\_JJ consul\_NN ,\_, who\_WP kindly\_RB translated\_VBN for\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, time\_NN being\_VBG short\_JJ .\_.

LOG\_VB OF\_IN THE\_DT ``\_`` DEMETER\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

Varna\_NNP to\_TO Whitby\_NNP .\_.

Written\_VBN 18\_CD July\_NNP ,\_, things\_NNS so\_RB strange\_JJ happening\_VBG ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP shall\_MD keep\_VB accurate\_JJ note\_NN henceforth\_NN till\_IN we\_PRP land\_VBP .\_.

On\_IN 6\_CD July\_NNP we\_PRP finished\_VBD taking\_VBG in\_IN cargo\_NN ,\_, silver\_NN sand\_NN and\_CC boxes\_NNS of\_IN earth\_NN .\_.

At\_IN noon\_NN set\_NN sail\_NN .\_.

East\_JJ wind\_NN ,\_, fresh\_JJ .\_.

Crew\_NNP ,\_, five\_CD hands\_NNS ...\_: two\_CD mates\_NNS ,\_, cook\_NN ,\_, and\_CC myself\_PRP -LRB-\_-LRB- captain\_NN -RRB-\_-RRB- .\_.

On\_IN 11\_CD July\_NNP at\_IN dawn\_NN entered\_VBD Bosphorus\_NNP .\_.

Boarded\_VBN by\_IN Turkish\_JJ Customs\_NNP officers\_NNS .\_.

Backsheesh\_NNP .\_.

All\_DT correct\_JJ .\_.

Under\_IN way\_NN at\_IN 4\_CD p.\_NN m.\_NN On\_IN 12\_CD July\_NNP through\_IN Dardanelles\_NNP .\_.

More\_JJR Customs\_NNP officers\_NNS and\_CC flagboat\_NN of\_IN guarding\_VBG squadron\_NN .\_.

Backsheesh\_NNP again\_RB .\_.

Work\_NN of\_IN officers\_NNS thorough\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC quick\_JJ .\_.

Want\_VB us\_PRP off\_RB soon\_RB .\_.

At\_IN dark\_NN passed\_VBN into\_IN Archipelago\_NNP .\_.

On\_IN 13\_CD July\_NNP passed\_VBD Cape\_NNP Matapan\_NNP .\_.

Crew\_NNP dissatisfied\_VBD about\_IN something\_NN .\_.

Seemed\_NNP scared\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC would\_MD not\_RB speak\_VB out\_IN .\_.

On\_IN 14\_CD July\_NNP was\_VBD somewhat\_RB anxious\_JJ about\_IN crew\_NN .\_.

Men\_NN all\_DT steady\_JJ fellows\_NNS ,\_, who\_WP sailed\_VBD with\_IN me\_PRP before\_RB .\_.

Mate\_NN could\_MD not\_RB make\_VB out\_RP what\_WP was\_VBD wrong\_JJ ;\_: they\_PRP only\_RB told\_VBD him\_PRP there\_EX was\_VBD something\_NN ,\_, and\_CC crossed\_VBD themselves\_PRP .\_.

Mate\_NN lost\_VBD temper\_NN with\_IN one\_CD of\_IN them\_PRP that\_DT day\_NN and\_CC struck\_VBD him\_PRP .\_.

Expected\_VBN fierce\_JJ quarrel\_VBP ,\_, but\_CC all\_DT was\_VBD quiet\_JJ .\_.

On\_IN 16\_CD July\_NNP mate\_NN reported\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN that\_IN one\_CD of\_IN crew\_NN ,\_, Petrofsky\_NNP ,\_, was\_VBD missing\_VBG .\_.

Could\_MD not\_RB account\_VB for\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

Took\_FW larboard\_FW watch\_NN eight\_CD bells\_NNS last\_JJ night\_NN ;\_: was\_VBD relieved\_VBN by\_IN Abramoff\_NNP ,\_, but\_CC did\_VBD not\_RB go\_VB to\_TO bunk\_NN .\_.

Men\_NN more\_RBR downcast\_JJ than\_IN ever\_RB .\_.

All\_DT said\_VBD they\_PRP expected\_VBD something\_NN of\_IN the\_DT kind\_NN ,\_, but\_CC would\_MD not\_RB say\_VB more\_JJR than\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD something\_NN aboard\_RB .\_.

Mate\_VB getting\_VBG very\_RB impatient\_JJ with\_IN them\_PRP ;\_: feared\_VBD some\_DT trouble\_NN ahead\_RB .\_.

On\_IN 17\_CD July\_NNP ,\_, yesterday\_NN ,\_, one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT men\_NNS ,\_, Olgaren\_NNP ,\_, came\_VBD to\_TO my\_PRP$ cabin\_NN ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN an\_DT awestruck\_JJ way\_NN confided\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP that\_IN he\_PRP thought\_VBD there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT strange\_JJ man\_NN aboard\_IN the\_DT ship\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP said\_VBD that\_IN in\_IN his\_PRP$ watch\_NN he\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN sheltering\_VBG behind\_IN the\_DT deck-house\_NN ,\_, as\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT rain-storm\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB he\_PRP saw\_VBD a\_DT tall\_JJ ,\_, thin\_JJ man\_NN ,\_, who\_WP was\_VBD not\_RB like\_IN any\_DT of\_IN the\_DT crew\_NN ,\_, come\_VB up\_RP the\_DT companion-way\_NN ,\_, and\_CC go\_VB along\_IN the\_DT deck\_NN forward\_RB ,\_, and\_CC disappear\_VB .\_.

He\_PRP followed\_VBD cautiously\_RB ,\_, but\_CC when\_WRB he\_PRP got\_VBD to\_TO bows\_NNS found\_VBD no\_DT one\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT hatchways\_NNS were\_VBD all\_DT closed\_VBD .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT panic\_NN of\_IN superstitious\_JJ fear\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP afraid\_JJ the\_DT panic\_NN may\_MD spread\_VB .\_.

To\_TO allay\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP shall\_MD to-day\_RB search\_VB entire\_JJ ship\_NN carefully\_RB from\_IN stem\_NN to\_TO stern\_JJ .\_.

Later\_RB in\_IN the\_DT day\_NN I\_PRP got\_VBD together\_RB the\_DT whole\_JJ crew\_NN ,\_, and\_CC told\_VBD them\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN they\_PRP evidently\_RB thought\_VBD there\_EX was\_VBD some\_DT one\_CD in\_IN the\_DT ship\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP would\_MD search\_VB from\_IN stem\_NN to\_TO stern\_JJ .\_.

First\_JJ mate\_NN angry\_JJ ;\_: said\_VBD it\_PRP was\_VBD folly\_NN ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO yield\_VB to\_TO such\_JJ foolish\_JJ ideas\_NNS would\_MD demoralise\_VB the\_DT men\_NNS ;\_: said\_VBD he\_PRP would\_MD engage\_VB to\_TO keep\_VB them\_PRP out\_IN of\_IN trouble\_NN with\_IN a\_DT handspike\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP let\_VBD him\_PRP take\_VB the\_DT helm\_NN ,\_, while\_IN the\_DT rest\_NN began\_VBD thorough\_JJ search\_NN ,\_, all\_DT keeping\_VBG abreast\_NN ,\_, with\_IN lanterns\_NNS :\_: we\_PRP left\_VBD no\_DT corner\_NN unsearched\_JJ .\_.

As\_IN there\_EX were\_VBD only\_RB the\_DT big\_JJ wooden\_JJ boxes\_NNS ,\_, there\_EX were\_VBD no\_DT odd\_JJ corners\_NNS where\_WRB a\_DT man\_NN could\_MD hide\_VB .\_.

Men\_NN much\_RB relieved\_VBD when\_WRB search\_NN over\_IN ,\_, and\_CC went\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO work\_VB cheerfully\_RB .\_.

First\_JJ mate\_NN scowled\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC said\_VBD nothing\_NN .\_.

22\_CD July\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Rough\_JJ weather\_NN last\_JJ three\_CD days\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC all\_DT hands\_NNS busy\_JJ with\_IN sails\_NNS --\_: no\_DT time\_NN to\_TO be\_VB frightened\_VBN .\_.

Men\_NNS seem\_VBP to\_TO have\_VB forgotten\_VBN their\_PRP$ dread\_NN .\_.

Mate\_RB cheerful\_JJ again\_RB ,\_, and\_CC all\_DT on\_IN good\_JJ terms\_NNS .\_.

Praised\_VBN men\_NNS for\_IN work\_NN in\_IN bad\_JJ weather\_NN .\_.

Passed\_VBN Gibralter\_NNP and\_CC out\_IN through\_IN Straits\_NNP .\_.

All\_DT well\_RB .\_.

24\_CD July\_NNP .\_.

--\_: There\_EX seems\_VBZ some\_DT doom\_NN over\_IN this\_DT ship\_NN .\_.

Already\_RB a\_DT hand\_NN short\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC entering\_VBG on\_IN the\_DT Bay\_NNP of\_IN Biscay\_NNP with\_IN wild\_JJ weather\_NN ahead\_RB ,\_, and\_CC yet\_RB last\_JJ night\_NN another\_DT man\_NN lost\_VBN --\_: disappeared\_VBD .\_.

Like\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ ,\_, he\_PRP came\_VBD off\_RP his\_PRP$ watch\_NN and\_CC was\_VBD not\_RB seen\_VBN again\_RB .\_.

Men\_NN all\_DT in\_IN a\_DT panic\_NN of\_IN fear\_NN ;\_: sent\_VBD a\_DT round\_JJ robin\_NN ,\_, asking\_VBG to\_TO have\_VB double\_JJ watch\_NN ,\_, as\_IN they\_PRP fear\_VBP to\_TO be\_VB alone\_RB .\_.

Mate\_NN angry\_JJ .\_.

Fear\_NN there\_EX will\_MD be\_VB some\_DT trouble\_NN ,\_, as\_IN either\_CC he\_PRP or\_CC the\_DT men\_NNS will\_MD do\_VB some\_DT violence\_NN .\_.

28\_CD July\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Four\_CD days\_NNS in\_IN hell\_NN ,\_, knocking\_VBG about\_IN in\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN maelstrom\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT wind\_NN a\_DT tempest\_NN .\_.

No\_DT sleep\_NN for\_IN any\_DT one\_CD .\_.

Men\_NN all\_DT worn\_VBN out\_RP .\_.

Hardly\_RB know\_VB how\_WRB to\_TO set\_VB a\_DT watch\_NN ,\_, since\_IN no\_DT one\_CD fit\_NN to\_TO go\_VB on\_RP .\_.

Second\_JJ mate\_NN volunteered\_VBD to\_TO steer\_VB and\_CC watch\_VB ,\_, and\_CC let\_VB men\_NNS snatch\_VB a\_DT few\_JJ hours\_NNS '\_POS sleep\_NN .\_.

Wind\_NN abating\_VBG ;\_: seas\_NNS still\_RB terrific\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC feel\_VBP them\_PRP less\_JJR ,\_, as\_IN ship\_NN is\_VBZ steadier\_JJR .\_.

29\_CD July\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Another\_DT tragedy\_NN .\_.

Had\_VBD single\_JJ watch\_NN to-night\_NN ,\_, as\_IN crew\_NN too\_RB tired\_VBD to\_TO double\_VB .\_.

When\_WRB morning\_NN watch\_NN came\_VBD on\_IN deck\_NN could\_MD find\_VB no\_DT one\_NN except\_IN steersman\_NN .\_.

Raised\_VBN outcry\_NN ,\_, and\_CC all\_DT came\_VBD on\_IN deck\_NN .\_.

Thorough\_JJ search\_NN ,\_, but\_CC no\_DT one\_CD found\_VBN .\_.

Are\_VBP now\_RB without\_IN second\_JJ mate\_NN ,\_, and\_CC crew\_NN in\_IN a\_DT panic\_NN .\_.

Mate\_NN and\_CC I\_PRP agreed\_VBD to\_TO go\_VB armed\_JJ henceforth\_NN and\_CC wait\_VB for\_IN any\_DT sign\_NN of\_IN cause\_NN .\_.

30\_CD July\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Last\_JJ night\_NN .\_.

Rejoiced\_VBN we\_PRP are\_VBP nearing\_VBG England\_NNP .\_.

Weather\_NN fine\_NN ,\_, all\_DT sails\_NNS set\_VBN .\_.

Retired\_NNP worn\_VBD out\_RP ;\_: slept\_VBD soundly\_RB ;\_: awaked\_VBN by\_IN mate\_NN telling\_VBG me\_PRP that\_IN both\_CC man\_NN of\_IN watch\_NN and\_CC steersman\_NN missing\_VBG .\_.

Only\_RB self\_NN and\_CC mate\_NN and\_CC two\_CD hands\_NNS left\_VBD to\_TO work\_VB ship\_NN .\_.

1\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Two\_CD days\_NNS of\_IN fog\_NN ,\_, and\_CC not\_RB a\_DT sail\_NN sighted\_VBN .\_.

Had\_VBD hoped\_VBN when\_WRB in\_IN the\_DT English\_NNP Channel\_NNP to\_TO be\_VB able\_JJ to\_TO signal\_VB for\_IN help\_NN or\_CC get\_VB in\_IN somewhere\_RB .\_.

Not\_RB having\_VBG power\_NN to\_TO work\_VB sails\_NNS ,\_, have\_VBP to\_TO run\_VB before\_IN wind\_NN .\_.

Dare\_VB not\_RB lower\_JJR ,\_, as\_IN could\_MD not\_RB raise\_VB them\_PRP again\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP seem\_VBP to\_TO be\_VB drifting\_VBG to\_TO some\_DT terrible\_JJ doom\_NN .\_.

Mate\_VB now\_RB more\_RBR demoralised\_JJ than\_IN either\_DT of\_IN men\_NNS .\_.

His\_PRP$ stronger\_JJR nature\_NN seems\_VBZ to\_TO have\_VB worked\_VBN inwardly\_RB against\_IN himself\_PRP .\_.

Men\_NNS are\_VBP beyond\_IN fear\_NN ,\_, working\_VBG stolidly\_RB and\_CC patiently\_RB ,\_, with\_IN minds\_NNS made\_VBN up\_RP to\_TO worst\_JJS .\_.

They\_PRP are\_VBP Russian\_JJ ,\_, he\_PRP Roumanian\_NNP .\_.

2\_CD August\_NNP ,\_, midnight\_NN .\_.

--\_: Woke\_VBD up\_RP from\_IN few\_JJ minutes\_NNS '\_POS sleep\_NN by\_IN hearing\_VBG a\_DT cry\_NN ,\_, seemingly\_RB outside\_IN my\_PRP$ port\_NN .\_.

Could\_MD see\_VB nothing\_NN in\_IN fog\_NN .\_.

Rushed\_VBN on\_IN deck\_NN ,\_, and\_CC ran\_VBD against\_IN mate\_NN .\_.

Tells\_VBZ me\_PRP heard\_VBD cry\_NN and\_CC ran\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC no\_DT sign\_NN of\_IN man\_NN on\_IN watch\_NN .\_.

One\_CD more\_RBR gone\_VBN .\_.

Lord\_NNP ,\_, help\_VB us\_PRP !\_.

Mate\_NN says\_VBZ we\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB past\_IN Straits\_NNP of\_IN Dover\_NNP ,\_, as\_IN in\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN of\_IN fog\_NN lifting\_NN he\_PRP saw\_VBD North\_NNP Foreland\_NNP ,\_, just\_RB as\_IN he\_PRP heard\_VBD the\_DT man\_NN cry\_NN out\_RB .\_.

If\_IN so\_RB we\_PRP are\_VBP now\_RB off\_RB in\_IN the\_DT North\_NNP Sea\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC only\_RB God\_NNP can\_MD guide\_VB us\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT fog\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT seems\_VBZ to\_TO move\_VB with\_IN us\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC God\_NNP seems\_VBZ to\_TO have\_VB deserted\_VBN us\_PRP .\_.

3\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

--\_: At\_IN midnight\_NN I\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO relieve\_VB the\_DT man\_NN at\_IN the\_DT wheel\_NN ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB I\_PRP got\_VBD to\_TO it\_PRP found\_VBD no\_DT one\_NN there\_RB .\_.

The\_DT wind\_NN was\_VBD steady\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN we\_PRP ran\_VBD before\_IN it\_PRP there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT yawing\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP dared\_VBD not\_RB leave\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, so\_RB shouted\_VBD for\_IN the\_DT mate\_NN .\_.

After\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ seconds\_NNS he\_PRP rushed\_VBD up\_RP on\_IN deck\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ flannels\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP looked\_VBD wild-eyed\_JJ and\_CC haggard\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP greatly\_RB fear\_VBP his\_PRP$ reason\_NN has\_VBZ given\_VBN way\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP came\_VBD close\_RB to\_TO me\_PRP and\_CC whispered\_VBD hoarsely\_RB ,\_, with\_IN his\_PRP$ mouth\_NN to\_TO my\_PRP$ ear\_NN ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN fearing\_VBG the\_DT very\_JJ air\_NN might\_MD hear\_VB :\_: ``\_`` It\_PRP is\_VBZ here\_RB ;\_: I\_PRP know\_VBP it\_PRP ,\_, now\_RB .\_.

On\_IN the\_DT watch\_NN last\_JJ night\_NN I\_PRP saw\_VBD It\_PRP ,\_, like\_IN a\_DT man\_NN ,\_, tall\_JJ and\_CC thin\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC ghastly\_JJ pale\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT bows\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC looking\_VBG out\_RP .\_.

I\_PRP crept\_VBD behind\_IN It\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC gave\_VBD It\_PRP my\_PRP$ knife\_NN ;\_: but\_CC the\_DT knife\_NN went\_VBD through\_IN It\_PRP ,\_, empty\_JJ as\_IN the\_DT air\_NN .\_. ''\_''

And\_CC as\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD he\_PRP took\_VBD his\_PRP$ knife\_NN and\_CC drove\_VBD it\_PRP savagely\_RB into\_IN space\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: ``\_`` But\_CC It\_PRP is\_VBZ here\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP 'll\_MD find\_VB It\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ in\_IN the\_DT hold\_NN ,\_, perhaps\_RB in\_IN one\_CD of\_IN those\_DT boxes\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP 'll\_MD unscrew\_VB them\_PRP one\_CD by\_IN one\_CD and\_CC see\_VB .\_.

You\_PRP work\_VBP the\_DT helm\_NN .\_. ''\_''

And\_CC ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT warning\_NN look\_NN and\_CC his\_PRP$ finger\_NN on\_IN his\_PRP$ lip\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP went\_VBD below\_IN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD springing\_VBG up\_RP a\_DT choppy\_JJ wind\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB leave\_VB the\_DT helm\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP saw\_VBD him\_PRP come\_VB out\_RP on\_IN deck\_NN again\_RB with\_IN a\_DT tool-chest\_NN and\_CC a\_DT lantern\_NN ,\_, and\_CC go\_VB down\_RP the\_DT forward\_JJ hatchway\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ mad\_JJ ,\_, stark\_JJ ,\_, raving\_VBG mad\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP 's\_VBZ no\_DT use\_NN my\_PRP$ trying\_VBG to\_TO stop\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP ca\_MD n't\_RB hurt\_VB those\_DT big\_JJ boxes\_NNS :\_: they\_PRP are\_VBP invoiced\_VBN as\_IN ``\_`` clay\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' and\_CC to\_TO pull\_VB them\_PRP about\_RB is\_VBZ as\_RB harmless\_JJ a\_DT thing\_NN as\_IN he\_PRP can\_MD do\_VB .\_.

So\_IN here\_RB I\_PRP stay\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC mind\_VB the\_DT helm\_NN ,\_, and\_CC write\_VB these\_DT notes\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP can\_MD only\_RB trust\_VB in\_IN God\_NNP and\_CC wait\_VB till\_IN the\_DT fog\_NN clears\_VBZ .\_.

Then\_RB ,\_, if\_IN I\_PRP ca\_MD n't\_RB steer\_VB to\_TO any\_DT harbour\_NN with\_IN the\_DT wind\_NN that\_WDT is\_VBZ ,\_, I\_PRP shall\_MD cut\_VB down\_RP sails\_NNS and\_CC lie\_NN by\_IN ,\_, and\_CC signal\_NN for\_IN help\_NN ...\_: .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ nearly\_RB all\_DT over\_IN now\_RB .\_.

Just\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD beginning\_VBG to\_TO hope\_VB that\_IN the\_DT mate\_NN would\_MD come\_VB out\_RP calmer\_JJR --\_: for\_IN I\_PRP heard\_VBD him\_PRP knocking\_VBG away\_RB at\_IN something\_NN in\_IN the\_DT hold\_NN ,\_, and\_CC work\_NN is\_VBZ good\_JJ for\_IN him\_PRP --\_: there\_EX came\_VBD up\_RP the\_DT hatchway\_NN a\_DT sudden\_JJ ,\_, startled\_JJ scream\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT made\_VBD my\_PRP$ blood\_NN run\_NN cold\_NN ,\_, and\_CC up\_RB on\_IN the\_DT deck\_NN he\_PRP came\_VBD as\_IN if\_IN shot\_NN from\_IN a\_DT gun\_NN --\_: a\_DT raging\_VBG madman\_NN ,\_, with\_IN his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS rolling\_VBG and\_CC his\_PRP$ face\_NN convulsed\_VBN with\_IN fear\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Save\_VB me\_PRP !\_.

save\_VB me\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP cried\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB looked\_VBD round\_NN on\_IN the\_DT blanket\_NN of\_IN fog\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ horror\_NN turned\_VBD to\_TO despair\_NN ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN a\_DT steady\_JJ voice\_NN he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP had\_VBD better\_RBR come\_VBN too\_RB ,\_, captain\_NN ,\_, before\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ too\_RB late\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ there\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP the\_DT secret\_NN now\_RB .\_.

The\_DT sea\_NN will\_MD save\_VB me\_PRP from\_IN Him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ all\_DT that\_WDT is\_VBZ left\_VBN !\_. ''\_''

Before\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD say\_VB a\_DT word\_NN ,\_, or\_CC move\_VB forward\_RB to\_TO seize\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP sprang\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT bulwark\_NN and\_CC deliberately\_RB threw\_VBD himself\_PRP into\_IN the\_DT sea\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP suppose\_VBP I\_PRP know\_VBP the\_DT secret\_NN too\_RB ,\_, now\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD this\_DT madman\_NN who\_WP had\_VBD got\_VBN rid\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT men\_NNS one\_CD by\_IN one\_CD ,\_, and\_CC now\_RB he\_PRP has\_VBZ followed\_VBN them\_PRP himself\_PRP .\_.

God\_NNP help\_VB me\_PRP !\_.

How\_WRB am\_VBP I\_PRP to\_TO account\_VB for\_IN all\_PDT these\_DT horrors\_NNS when\_WRB I\_PRP get\_VBP to\_TO port\_NN ?\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP get\_VBP to\_TO port\_NN !\_.

Will\_MD that\_VB ever\_RB be\_VB ?\_.

4\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Still\_RB fog\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT the\_DT sunrise\_NN can\_MD not\_RB pierce\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP there\_EX is\_VBZ sunrise\_NN because\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP a\_DT sailor\_NN ,\_, why\_WRB else\_RB I\_PRP know\_VBP not\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP dared\_VBD not\_RB go\_VB below\_IN ,\_, I\_PRP dared\_VBD not\_RB leave\_VB the\_DT helm\_NN ;\_: so\_RB here\_RB all\_DT night\_NN I\_PRP stayed\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN the\_DT dimness\_NN of\_IN the\_DT night\_NN I\_PRP saw\_VBD It\_PRP --\_: Him\_PRP !\_.

God\_NNP forgive\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT mate\_NN was\_VBD right\_JJ to\_TO jump\_VB overboard\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD better\_JJR to\_TO die\_VB like\_IN a\_DT man\_NN ;\_: to\_TO die\_VB like\_IN a\_DT sailor\_NN in\_IN blue\_JJ water\_NN no\_DT man\_NN can\_MD object\_VB .\_.

But\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP captain\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB leave\_VB my\_PRP$ ship\_NN .\_.

But\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD baffle\_VB this\_DT fiend\_NN or\_CC monster\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP shall\_MD tie\_VB my\_PRP$ hands\_NNS to\_TO the\_DT wheel\_NN when\_WRB my\_PRP$ strength\_NN begins\_VBZ to\_TO fail\_VB ,\_, and\_CC along\_IN with\_IN them\_PRP I\_PRP shall\_MD tie\_VB that\_IN which\_WDT He\_PRP --\_: It\_PRP !\_.

--\_: dare\_MD not\_RB touch\_VB ;\_: and\_CC then\_RB ,\_, come\_VB good\_JJ wind\_NN or\_CC foul\_JJ ,\_, I\_PRP shall\_MD save\_VB my\_PRP$ soul\_NN ,\_, and\_CC my\_PRP$ honour\_NN as\_IN a\_DT captain\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP growing\_VBG weaker\_JJR ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT night\_NN is\_VBZ coming\_VBG on\_RP .\_.

If\_IN He\_PRP can\_MD look\_VB me\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT face\_NN again\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB have\_VB time\_NN to\_TO act\_VB ...\_: .\_.

If\_IN we\_PRP are\_VBP wrecked\_VBN ,\_, mayhap\_VB this\_DT bottle\_NN may\_MD be\_VB found\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC those\_DT who\_WP find\_VBP it\_PRP may\_MD understand\_VB ;\_: if\_IN not\_RB ,\_, ...\_: well\_RB ,\_, then\_RB all\_DT men\_NNS shall\_MD know\_VB that\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN true\_JJ to\_TO my\_PRP$ trust\_NN .\_.

God\_NNP and\_CC the\_DT Blessed\_NNP Virgin\_NNP and\_CC the\_DT saints\_NNS help\_VBP a\_DT poor\_JJ ignorant\_JJ soul\_NN trying\_VBG to\_TO do\_VB his\_PRP$ duty\_NN ...\_: .\_.

Of\_IN course\_NN the\_DT verdict\_NN was\_VBD an\_DT open\_JJ one\_CD .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT evidence\_NN to\_TO adduce\_VB ;\_: and\_CC whether\_IN or\_CC not\_RB the\_DT man\_NN himself\_PRP committed\_VBD the\_DT murders\_NNS there\_EX is\_VBZ now\_RB none\_NN to\_TO say\_VB .\_.

The\_DT folk\_NN here\_RB hold\_VBP almost\_RB universally\_RB that\_IN the\_DT captain\_NN is\_VBZ simply\_RB a\_DT hero\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP is\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB given\_VBN a\_DT public\_JJ funeral\_NN .\_.

Already\_RB it\_PRP is\_VBZ arranged\_VBN that\_IN his\_PRP$ body\_NN is\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB taken\_VBN with\_IN a\_DT train\_NN of\_IN boats\_NNS up\_IN the\_DT Esk\_NN for\_IN a\_DT piece\_NN and\_CC then\_RB brought\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO Tate\_NNP Hill\_NNP Pier\_NNP and\_CC up\_IN the\_DT abbey\_JJ steps\_NNS ;\_: for\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB buried\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT churchyard\_NN on\_IN the\_DT cliff\_NN .\_.

The\_DT owners\_NNS of\_IN more\_JJR than\_IN a\_DT hundred\_CD boats\_NNS have\_VBP already\_RB given\_VBN in\_IN their\_PRP$ names\_NNS as\_IN wishing\_VBG to\_TO follow\_VB him\_PRP to\_TO the\_DT grave\_NN .\_.

No\_DT trace\_NN has\_VBZ ever\_RB been\_VBN found\_VBN of\_IN the\_DT great\_JJ dog\_NN ;\_: at\_IN which\_WDT there\_EX is\_VBZ much\_JJ mourning\_NN ,\_, for\_IN ,\_, with\_IN public\_JJ opinion\_NN in\_IN its\_PRP$ present\_JJ state\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP would\_MD ,\_, I\_PRP believe\_VBP ,\_, be\_VB adopted\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT town\_NN .\_.

To-morrow\_NN will\_MD see\_VB the\_DT funeral\_NN ;\_: and\_CC so\_RB will\_MD end\_VB this\_DT one\_CD more\_JJR ``\_`` mystery\_NN of\_IN the\_DT sea\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Mina\_NNP Murray\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP .\_.

8\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Lucy\_NNP was\_VBD very\_RB restless\_JJ all\_DT night\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, could\_MD not\_RB sleep\_VB .\_.

The\_DT storm\_NN was\_VBD fearful\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN it\_PRP boomed\_VBD loudly\_RB among\_IN the\_DT chimney-pots\_NNS ,\_, it\_PRP made\_VBD me\_PRP shudder\_JJR .\_.

When\_WRB a\_DT sharp\_JJ puff\_NN came\_VBD it\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB like\_IN a\_DT distant\_JJ gun\_NN .\_.

Strangely\_RB enough\_RB ,\_, Lucy\_NNP did\_VBD not\_RB wake\_VB ;\_: but\_CC she\_PRP got\_VBD up\_RP twice\_RB and\_CC dressed\_VBD herself\_PRP .\_.

Fortunately\_RB ,\_, each\_DT time\_NN I\_PRP awoke\_VBD in\_IN time\_NN and\_CC managed\_VBD to\_TO undress\_NN her\_PRP without\_IN waking\_VBG her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC got\_VBD her\_PRP back\_RB to\_TO bed\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT very\_RB strange\_JJ thing\_NN ,\_, this\_DT sleep-walking\_NN ,\_, for\_IN as\_RB soon\_RB as\_IN her\_PRP$ will\_NN is\_VBZ thwarted\_VBN in\_IN any\_DT physical\_JJ way\_NN ,\_, her\_PRP$ intention\_NN ,\_, if\_IN there\_EX be\_VB any\_DT ,\_, disappears\_VBZ ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP yields\_VBZ herself\_PRP almost\_RB exactly\_RB to\_TO the\_DT routine\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ life\_NN .\_.

Early\_RB in\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN we\_PRP both\_DT got\_VBD up\_RB and\_CC went\_VBD down\_RB to\_TO the\_DT harbour\_NN to\_TO see\_VB if\_IN anything\_NN had\_VBD happened\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT night\_NN .\_.

There\_EX were\_VBD very\_RB few\_JJ people\_NNS about\_IN ,\_, and\_CC though\_IN the\_DT sun\_NN was\_VBD bright\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT air\_NN clear\_JJ and\_CC fresh\_JJ ,\_, the\_DT big\_JJ ,\_, grim-looking\_JJ waves\_NNS ,\_, that\_WDT seemed\_VBD dark\_JJ themselves\_PRP because\_IN the\_DT foam\_NN that\_WDT topped\_VBD them\_PRP was\_VBD like\_IN snow\_NN ,\_, forced\_VBD themselves\_PRP in\_IN through\_IN the\_DT narrow\_JJ mouth\_NN of\_IN the\_DT harbour\_NN --\_: like\_IN a\_DT bullying\_VBG man\_NN going\_VBG through\_IN a\_DT crowd\_NN .\_.

Somehow\_RB I\_PRP felt\_VBD glad\_JJ that\_IN Jonathan\_NNP was\_VBD not\_RB on\_IN the\_DT sea\_NN last\_JJ night\_NN ,\_, but\_CC on\_IN land\_NN .\_.

But\_CC ,\_, oh\_UH ,\_, is\_VBZ he\_PRP on\_IN land\_NN or\_CC sea\_NN ?\_.

Where\_WRB is\_VBZ he\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC how\_WRB ?\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP getting\_VBG fearfully\_RB anxious\_JJ about\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

If\_IN I\_PRP only\_RB knew\_VBD what\_WP to\_TO do\_VB ,\_, and\_CC could\_MD do\_VB anything\_NN !\_.

10\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

--\_: The\_DT funeral\_NN of\_IN the\_DT poor\_JJ sea-captain\_JJ to-day\_NN was\_VBD most\_RBS touching\_JJ .\_.

Every\_DT boat\_NN in\_IN the\_DT harbour\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB there\_RB ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT coffin\_NN was\_VBD carried\_VBN by\_IN captains\_NNS all\_PDT the\_DT way\_NN from\_IN Tate\_NNP Hill\_NNP Pier\_NNP up\_IN to\_TO the\_DT churchyard\_NN .\_.

Lucy\_NNP came\_VBD with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP went\_VBD early\_JJ to\_TO our\_PRP$ old\_JJ seat\_NN ,\_, whilst\_IN the\_DT cortège\_NN of\_IN boats\_NNS went\_VBD up\_RP the\_DT river\_NN to\_TO the\_DT Viaduct\_NN and\_CC came\_VBD down\_RB again\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT lovely\_JJ view\_NN ,\_, and\_CC saw\_VBD the\_DT procession\_NN nearly\_RB all\_PDT the\_DT way\_NN .\_.

The\_DT poor\_JJ fellow\_NN was\_VBD laid\_VBN to\_TO rest\_VB quite\_RB near\_IN our\_PRP$ seat\_NN so\_IN that\_IN we\_PRP stood\_VBD on\_IN it\_PRP when\_WRB the\_DT time\_NN came\_VBD and\_CC saw\_VBD everything\_NN .\_.

Poor\_NNP Lucy\_NNP seemed\_VBD much\_JJ upset\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP was\_VBD restless\_JJ and\_CC uneasy\_JJ all\_PDT the\_DT time\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB but\_CC think\_VB that\_IN her\_PRP dreaming\_VBG at\_IN night\_NN is\_VBZ telling\_VBG on\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

She\_PRP is\_VBZ quite\_RB odd\_JJ in\_IN one\_CD thing\_NN :\_: she\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB admit\_VB to\_TO me\_PRP that\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ any\_DT cause\_NN for\_IN restlessness\_NN ;\_: or\_CC if\_IN there\_RB be\_VB ,\_, she\_PRP does\_VBZ not\_RB understand\_VB it\_PRP herself\_PRP .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ an\_DT additional\_JJ cause\_NN in\_IN that\_DT poor\_JJ old\_JJ Mr.\_NNP Swales\_NNP was\_VBD found\_VBN dead\_JJ this\_DT morning\_NN on\_IN our\_PRP$ seat\_NN ,\_, his\_PRP$ neck\_NN being\_VBG broken\_VBN .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD evidently\_RB ,\_, as\_IN the\_DT doctor\_NN said\_VBD ,\_, fallen\_VBD back\_RB in\_IN the\_DT seat\_NN in\_IN some\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN fright\_NN ,\_, for\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT look\_NN of\_IN fear\_NN and\_CC horror\_NN on\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN that\_IN the\_DT men\_NNS said\_VBD made\_VBN them\_PRP shudder\_JJR .\_.

Poor\_NNP dear\_RB old\_JJ man\_NN !\_.

Perhaps\_RB he\_PRP had\_VBD seen\_VBN Death\_NNP with\_IN his\_PRP$ dying\_VBG eyes\_NNS !\_.

Lucy\_NNP is\_VBZ so\_RB sweet\_JJ and\_CC sensitive\_JJ that\_IN she\_PRP feels\_VBZ influences\_NNS more\_RBR acutely\_RB than\_IN other\_JJ people\_NNS do\_VBP .\_.

Just\_RB now\_RB she\_PRP was\_VBD quite\_RB upset\_VBN by\_IN a\_DT little\_JJ thing\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB much\_RB heed\_VB ,\_, though\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP myself\_PRP very\_RB fond\_JJ of\_IN animals\_NNS .\_.

One\_CD of\_IN the\_DT men\_NNS who\_WP came\_VBD up\_RP here\_RB often\_RB to\_TO look\_VB for\_IN the\_DT boats\_NNS was\_VBD followed\_VBN by\_IN his\_PRP$ dog\_NN .\_.

The\_DT dog\_NN is\_VBZ always\_RB with\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

They\_PRP are\_VBP both\_DT quiet\_JJ persons\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP never\_RB saw\_VBD the\_DT man\_NN angry\_JJ ,\_, nor\_CC heard\_VBD the\_DT dog\_NN bark\_NN .\_.

During\_IN the\_DT service\_NN the\_DT dog\_NN would\_MD not\_RB come\_VB to\_TO its\_PRP$ master\_NN ,\_, who\_WP was\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT seat\_NN with\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC kept\_VBD a\_DT few\_JJ yards\_NNS off\_RB ,\_, barking\_VBG and\_CC howling\_VBG .\_.

Its\_PRP$ master\_NN spoke\_VBD to\_TO it\_PRP gently\_RB ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB harshly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB angrily\_RB ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP would\_MD neither\_RB come\_VB nor\_CC cease\_VB to\_TO make\_VB a\_DT noise\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN fury\_NN ,\_, with\_IN its\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS savage\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC all\_DT its\_PRP$ hairs\_NNS bristling\_VBG out\_RP like\_IN a\_DT cat\_NN 's\_POS tail\_NN when\_WRB puss\_NN is\_VBZ on\_IN the\_DT war-path\_NN .\_.

Finally\_RB the\_DT man\_NN ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, got\_VBD angry\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC jumped\_VBD down\_RB and\_CC kicked\_VBD the\_DT dog\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB took\_VBD it\_PRP by\_IN the\_DT scruff\_NN of\_IN the\_DT neck\_NN and\_CC half\_NN dragged\_VBD and\_CC half\_NN threw\_VBD it\_PRP on\_IN the\_DT tombstone\_NN on\_IN which\_WDT the\_DT seat\_NN is\_VBZ fixed\_VBN .\_.

The\_DT moment\_NN it\_PRP touched\_VBD the\_DT stone\_NN the\_DT poor\_JJ thing\_NN became\_VBD quiet\_JJ and\_CC fell\_VBD all\_DT into\_IN a\_DT tremble\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB try\_VB to\_TO get\_VB away\_RB ,\_, but\_CC crouched\_VBD down\_RB ,\_, quivering\_VBG and\_CC cowering\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD in\_IN such\_JJ a\_DT pitiable\_JJ state\_NN of\_IN terror\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP tried\_VBD ,\_, though\_IN without\_IN effect\_NN ,\_, to\_TO comfort\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

Lucy\_NNP was\_VBD full\_JJ of\_IN pity\_NN ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, but\_CC she\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB attempt\_VB to\_TO touch\_VB the\_DT dog\_NN ,\_, but\_CC looked\_VBD at\_IN it\_PRP in\_IN an\_DT agonised\_JJ sort\_NN of\_IN way\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP greatly\_RB fear\_VBP that\_IN she\_PRP is\_VBZ of\_IN too\_RB super-sensitive\_JJ a\_DT nature\_NN to\_TO go\_VB through\_IN the\_DT world\_NN without\_IN trouble\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB dreaming\_VBG of\_IN this\_DT to-night\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP sure\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT whole\_JJ agglomeration\_NN of\_IN things\_NNS --\_: the\_DT ship\_NN steered\_VBD into\_IN port\_NN by\_IN a\_DT dead\_JJ man\_NN ;\_: his\_PRP$ attitude\_NN ,\_, tied\_VBN to\_TO the\_DT wheel\_NN with\_IN a\_DT crucifix\_NN and\_CC beads\_NNS ;\_: the\_DT touching\_VBG funeral\_NN ;\_: the\_DT dog\_NN ,\_, now\_RB furious\_JJ and\_CC now\_RB in\_IN terror\_NN --\_: will\_MD all\_DT afford\_VB material\_NN for\_IN her\_PRP$ dreams\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP think\_VBP it\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB best\_JJS for\_IN her\_PRP to\_TO go\_VB to\_TO bed\_NN tired\_VBN out\_RP physically\_RB ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP shall\_MD take\_VB her\_PRP for\_IN a\_DT long\_JJ walk\_NN by\_IN the\_DT cliffs\_NNS to\_TO Robin\_NNP Hood\_NNP 's\_POS Bay\_NN and\_CC back\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP ought\_MD not\_RB to\_TO have\_VB much\_JJ inclination\_NN for\_IN sleep-walking\_VBG then\_RB .\_.

CHAPTER\_NNP VIII\_NNP MINA\_NNP MURRAY\_NNP 'S\_POS JOURNAL\_NN Same\_JJ day\_NN ,\_, 11\_CD o'clock\_RB p.\_NN m.\_NN --\_: Oh\_UH ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP tired\_JJ !\_.

If\_IN it\_PRP were\_VBD not\_RB that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD made\_VBN my\_PRP$ diary\_NN a\_DT duty\_NN I\_PRP should\_MD not\_RB open\_VB it\_PRP to-night\_JJ .\_.

We\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT lovely\_JJ walk\_NN .\_.

Lucy\_NNP ,\_, after\_IN a\_DT while\_NN ,\_, was\_VBD in\_IN gay\_JJ spirits\_NNS ,\_, owing\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP think\_VBP ,\_, to\_TO some\_DT dear\_RB cows\_NNS who\_WP came\_VBD nosing\_VBG towards\_IN us\_PRP in\_IN a\_DT field\_NN close\_RB to\_TO the\_DT lighthouse\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC frightened\_VBD the\_DT wits\_NNS out\_IN of\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP believe\_VBP we\_PRP forgot\_VBD everything\_NN except\_IN ,\_, of\_IN course\_NN ,\_, personal\_JJ fear\_NN ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO wipe\_VB the\_DT slate\_NN clean\_JJ and\_CC give\_VB us\_PRP a\_DT fresh\_JJ start\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT capital\_NN ``\_`` severe\_JJ tea\_NN ''\_'' at\_IN Robin\_NNP Hood\_NNP 's\_POS Bay\_NN in\_IN a\_DT sweet\_JJ little\_JJ old-fashioned\_JJ inn\_NN ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT bow-window\_JJ right\_NN over\_IN the\_DT seaweed-covered\_JJ rocks\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT strand\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP believe\_VBP we\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB shocked\_VBN the\_DT ``\_`` New\_NNP Woman\_NNP ''\_'' with\_IN our\_PRP$ appetites\_NNS .\_.

Men\_NNS are\_VBP more\_RBR tolerant\_JJ ,\_, bless\_VB them\_PRP !\_.

Then\_RB we\_PRP walked\_VBD home\_NN with\_IN some\_DT ,\_, or\_CC rather\_RB many\_JJ ,\_, stoppages\_NNS to\_TO rest\_VB ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN our\_PRP$ hearts\_NNS full\_JJ of\_IN a\_DT constant\_JJ dread\_NN of\_IN wild\_JJ bulls\_NNS .\_.

Lucy\_NNP was\_VBD really\_RB tired\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP intended\_VBD to\_TO creep\_VB off\_RP to\_TO bed\_NN as\_RB soon\_RB as\_IN we\_PRP could\_MD .\_.

The\_DT young\_JJ curate\_NN came\_VBD in\_IN ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, and\_CC Mrs.\_NNP Westenra\_NNP asked\_VBD him\_PRP to\_TO stay\_VB for\_IN supper\_NN .\_.

Lucy\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP had\_VBD both\_CC a\_DT fight\_NN for\_IN it\_PRP with\_IN the\_DT dusty\_JJ miller\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP know\_VBP it\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT hard\_JJ fight\_NN on\_IN my\_PRP$ part\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP quite\_RB heroic\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP think\_VBP that\_IN some\_DT day\_NN the\_DT bishops\_NNS must\_MD get\_VB together\_RB and\_CC see\_VB about\_IN breeding\_VBG up\_RP a\_DT new\_JJ class\_NN of\_IN curates\_NNS ,\_, who\_WP do\_VBP n't\_RB take\_VB supper\_NN ,\_, no\_DT matter\_NN how\_WRB they\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB pressed\_VBN to\_TO ,\_, and\_CC who\_WP will\_MD know\_VB when\_WRB girls\_NNS are\_VBP tired\_VBN .\_.

Lucy\_NNP is\_VBZ asleep\_RB and\_CC breathing\_VBG softly\_RB .\_.

She\_PRP has\_VBZ more\_JJR colour\_NN in\_IN her\_PRP$ cheeks\_NNS than\_IN usual\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC looks\_VBZ ,\_, oh\_UH ,\_, so\_RB sweet\_JJ .\_.

If\_IN Mr.\_NNP Holmwood\_NNP fell\_VBD in\_IN love\_NN with\_IN her\_PRP$ seeing\_VBG her\_PRP only\_RB in\_IN the\_DT drawing-room\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP wonder\_VBP what\_WP he\_PRP would\_MD say\_VB if\_IN he\_PRP saw\_VBD her\_PRP now\_RB .\_.

Some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT ``\_`` New\_NNP Women\_NNP ''\_'' writers\_NNS will\_MD some\_DT day\_NN start\_VB an\_DT idea\_NN that\_IN men\_NNS and\_CC women\_NNS should\_MD be\_VB allowed\_VBN to\_TO see\_VB each\_DT other\_JJ asleep\_RB before\_IN proposing\_VBG or\_CC accepting\_VBG .\_.

But\_CC I\_PRP suppose\_VBP the\_DT New\_NNP Woman\_NNP wo\_MD n't\_RB condescend\_VB in\_IN future\_NN to\_TO accept\_VB ;\_: she\_PRP will\_MD do\_VB the\_DT proposing\_VBG herself\_PRP .\_.

And\_CC a\_DT nice\_JJ job\_NN she\_PRP will\_MD make\_VB of\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, too\_RB !\_.

There\_EX 's\_VBZ some\_DT consolation\_NN in\_IN that\_DT .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP so\_RB happy\_JJ to-night\_NN ,\_, because\_IN dear\_RB Lucy\_NNP seems\_VBZ better\_RBR .\_.

I\_PRP really\_RB believe\_VBP she\_PRP has\_VBZ turned\_VBN the\_DT corner\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN we\_PRP are\_VBP over\_IN her\_PRP$ troubles\_NNS with\_IN dreaming\_VBG .\_.

I\_PRP should\_MD be\_VB quite\_RB happy\_JJ if\_IN I\_PRP only\_RB knew\_VBD if\_IN Jonathan\_NNP ...\_: .\_.

God\_NNP bless\_VB and\_CC keep\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

11\_CD August\_NNP ,\_, 3\_CD a.\_FW m.\_FW --\_: Diary\_NNP again\_RB .\_.

No\_DT sleep\_NN now\_RB ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD as\_RB well\_RB write\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP too\_RB agitated\_VBN to\_TO sleep\_VB .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP had\_VBN such\_JJ an\_DT adventure\_NN ,\_, such\_JJ an\_DT agonising\_JJ experience\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP fell\_VBD asleep\_RB as\_RB soon\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD closed\_VBN my\_PRP$ diary\_NN ...\_: .\_.

Suddenly\_RB I\_PRP became\_VBD broad\_JJ awake\_RB ,\_, and\_CC sat\_VBD up\_RP ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT horrible\_JJ sense\_NN of\_IN fear\_NN upon\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC of\_IN some\_DT feeling\_NN of\_IN emptiness\_NN around\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT room\_NN was\_VBD dark\_JJ ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB see\_VB Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS bed\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP stole\_VBD across\_IN and\_CC felt\_VBD for\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT bed\_NN was\_VBD empty\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP lit\_VBD a\_DT match\_NN and\_CC found\_VBD that\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB in\_IN the\_DT room\_NN .\_.

The\_DT door\_NN was\_VBD shut\_VBN ,\_, but\_CC not\_RB locked\_VBN ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD left\_VBN it\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP feared\_VBD to\_TO wake\_VB her\_PRP$ mother\_NN ,\_, who\_WP has\_VBZ been\_VBN more\_JJR than\_IN usually\_RB ill\_JJ lately\_RB ,\_, so\_RB threw\_VBN on\_IN some\_DT clothes\_NNS and\_CC got\_VBD ready\_JJ to\_TO look\_VB for\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

As\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD leaving\_VBG the\_DT room\_NN it\_PRP struck\_VBD me\_PRP that\_IN the\_DT clothes\_NNS she\_PRP wore\_VBD might\_MD give\_VB me\_PRP some\_DT clue\_NN to\_TO her\_PRP$ dreaming\_VBG intention\_NN .\_.

Dressing-gown\_NN would\_MD mean\_VB house\_NN ;\_: dress\_NN ,\_, outside\_NN .\_.

Dressing-gown\_NN and\_CC dress\_NN were\_VBD both\_CC in\_IN their\_PRP$ places\_NNS .\_.

``\_`` Thank\_VB God\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO myself\_PRP ,\_, ``\_`` she\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB be\_VB far\_RB ,\_, as\_IN she\_PRP is\_VBZ only\_RB in\_IN her\_PRP$ nightdress\_NN .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP ran\_VBD downstairs\_NNS and\_CC looked\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT sitting-room\_NN .\_.

Not\_RB there\_RB !\_.

Then\_RB I\_PRP looked\_VBD in\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT other\_JJ open\_JJ rooms\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT house\_NN ,\_, with\_IN an\_DT ever-growing\_JJ fear\_NN chilling\_VBG my\_PRP$ heart\_NN .\_.

Finally\_RB I\_PRP came\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT hall\_NN door\_NN and\_CC found\_VBD it\_PRP open\_JJ .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB wide\_JJ open\_NN ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT catch\_NN of\_IN the\_DT lock\_NN had\_VBD not\_RB caught\_VBN .\_.

The\_DT people\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT house\_NN are\_VBP careful\_JJ to\_TO lock\_VB the\_DT door\_NN every\_DT night\_NN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP feared\_VBD that\_IN Lucy\_NNP must\_MD have\_VB gone\_VBN out\_RP as\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT time\_NN to\_TO think\_VB of\_IN what\_WP might\_MD happen\_VB ;\_: a\_DT vague\_JJ ,\_, overmastering\_VBG fear\_NN obscured\_VBD all\_DT details\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP took\_VBD a\_DT big\_JJ ,\_, heavy\_JJ shawl\_NN and\_CC ran\_VBD out\_RP .\_.

The\_DT clock\_NN was\_VBD striking\_VBG one\_CD as\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT Crescent\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD not\_RB a\_DT soul\_NN in\_IN sight\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP ran\_VBD along\_IN the\_DT North\_NNP Terrace\_NNP ,\_, but\_CC could\_MD see\_VB no\_DT sign\_NN of\_IN the\_DT white\_JJ figure\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP expected\_VBD .\_.

At\_IN the\_DT edge\_NN of\_IN the\_DT West\_NNP Cliff\_NNP above\_IN the\_DT pier\_NN I\_PRP looked\_VBD across\_IN the\_DT harbour\_NN to\_TO the\_DT East\_NNP Cliff\_NNP ,\_, in\_IN the\_DT hope\_NN or\_CC fear\_NN --\_: I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB know\_VB which\_WDT --\_: of\_IN seeing\_VBG Lucy\_NNP in\_IN our\_PRP$ favourite\_JJ seat\_NN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT bright\_JJ full\_JJ moon\_NN ,\_, with\_IN heavy\_JJ black\_JJ ,\_, driving\_JJ clouds\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT threw\_VBD the\_DT whole\_JJ scene\_NN into\_IN a\_DT fleeting\_JJ diorama\_NN of\_IN light\_NN and\_CC shade\_NN as\_IN they\_PRP sailed\_VBD across\_IN .\_.

For\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN or\_CC two\_CD I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB nothing\_NN ,\_, as\_IN the\_DT shadow\_NN of\_IN a\_DT cloud\_NN obscured\_VBD St.\_NNP Mary\_NNP 's\_POS Church\_NNP and\_CC all\_DT around\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

Then\_RB as\_IN the\_DT cloud\_NN passed\_VBD I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB the\_DT ruins\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT abbey\_NN coming\_VBG into\_IN view\_NN ;\_: and\_CC as\_IN the\_DT edge\_NN of\_IN a\_DT narrow\_JJ band\_NN of\_IN light\_NN as\_RB sharp\_JJ as\_IN a\_DT sword-cut\_NN moved\_VBN along\_RB ,\_, the\_DT church\_NN and\_CC the\_DT churchyard\_NN became\_VBD gradually\_RB visible\_JJ .\_.

Whatever\_WDT my\_PRP$ expectation\_NN was\_VBD ,\_, it\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB disappointed\_VBN ,\_, for\_IN there\_RB ,\_, on\_IN our\_PRP$ favourite\_JJ seat\_NN ,\_, the\_DT silver\_JJ light\_NN of\_IN the\_DT moon\_NN struck\_VBD a\_DT half-reclining\_JJ figure\_NN ,\_, snowy\_JJ white\_NN .\_.

The\_DT coming\_VBG of\_IN the\_DT cloud\_NN was\_VBD too\_RB quick\_JJ for\_IN me\_PRP to\_TO see\_VB much\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN shadow\_NN shut\_VBD down\_RP on\_IN light\_NN almost\_RB immediately\_RB ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP as\_IN though\_IN something\_NN dark\_NN stood\_VBD behind\_IN the\_DT seat\_NN where\_WRB the\_DT white\_JJ figure\_NN shone\_NN ,\_, and\_CC bent\_NN over\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

What\_WP it\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, whether\_IN man\_NN or\_CC beast\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB tell\_VB ;\_: I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB wait\_VB to\_TO catch\_VB another\_DT glance\_NN ,\_, but\_CC flew\_VBD down\_RP the\_DT steep\_JJ steps\_NNS to\_TO the\_DT pier\_NN and\_CC along\_RB by\_IN the\_DT fish-market\_NN to\_TO the\_DT bridge\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT was\_VBD the\_DT only\_JJ way\_NN to\_TO reach\_VB the\_DT East\_NNP Cliff\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT town\_NN seemed\_VBD as\_RB dead\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN not\_RB a\_DT soul\_NN did\_VBD I\_PRP see\_VB ;\_: I\_PRP rejoiced\_VBD that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD so\_RB ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP wanted\_VBD no\_DT witness\_NN of\_IN poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS condition\_NN .\_.

The\_DT time\_NN and\_CC distance\_NN seemed\_VBD endless\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC my\_PRP$ knees\_NNS trembled\_VBD and\_CC my\_PRP$ breath\_NN came\_VBD laboured\_VBD as\_IN I\_PRP toiled\_VBD up\_RP the\_DT endless\_JJ steps\_NNS to\_TO the\_DT abbey\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB gone\_VBN fast\_RB ,\_, and\_CC yet\_RB it\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP as\_IN if\_IN my\_PRP$ feet\_NNS were\_VBD weighted\_VBN with\_IN lead\_NN ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN though\_IN every\_DT joint\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ body\_NN were\_VBD rusty\_JJ .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP got\_VBD almost\_RB to\_TO the\_DT top\_NN I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB the\_DT seat\_NN and\_CC the\_DT white\_JJ figure\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD now\_RB close\_JJ enough\_RB to\_TO distinguish\_VB it\_PRP even\_RB through\_IN the\_DT spells\_NNS of\_IN shadow\_NN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD undoubtedly\_RB something\_NN ,\_, long\_JJ and\_CC black\_JJ ,\_, bending\_VBG over\_IN the\_DT half-reclining\_JJ white\_JJ figure\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP called\_VBD in\_IN fright\_NN ,\_, ``\_`` Lucy\_NNP !\_.

Lucy\_NNP !\_. ''\_''

and\_CC something\_NN raised\_VBD a\_DT head\_NN ,\_, and\_CC from\_IN where\_WRB I\_PRP was\_VBD I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB a\_DT white\_JJ face\_NN and\_CC red\_JJ ,\_, gleaming\_JJ eyes\_NNS .\_.

Lucy\_NNP did\_VBD not\_RB answer\_VB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP ran\_VBD on\_RP to\_TO the\_DT entrance\_NN of\_IN the\_DT churchyard\_NN .\_.

As\_IN I\_PRP entered\_VBD ,\_, the\_DT church\_NN was\_VBD between\_IN me\_PRP and\_CC the\_DT seat\_NN ,\_, and\_CC for\_IN a\_DT minute\_NN or\_CC so\_RB I\_PRP lost\_VBD sight\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP came\_VBD in\_IN view\_NN again\_RB the\_DT cloud\_NN had\_VBD passed\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT moonlight\_NN struck\_VBD so\_RB brilliantly\_RB that\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB Lucy\_NNP half\_NN reclining\_VBG with\_IN her\_PRP$ head\_NN lying\_VBG over\_IN the\_DT back\_NN of\_IN the\_DT seat\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP was\_VBD quite\_RB alone\_RB ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD not\_RB a\_DT sign\_NN of\_IN any\_DT living\_VBG thing\_NN about\_IN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP bent\_JJ over\_IN her\_PRP I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB that\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD still\_RB asleep\_JJ .\_.

Her\_PRP$ lips\_NNS were\_VBD parted\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP was\_VBD breathing\_VBG --\_: not\_RB softly\_RB as\_IN usual\_JJ with\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC in\_IN long\_JJ ,\_, heavy\_JJ gasps\_NNS ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN striving\_VBG to\_TO get\_VB her\_PRP$ lungs\_NNS full\_JJ at\_IN every\_DT breath\_NN .\_.

As\_IN I\_PRP came\_VBD close\_JJ ,\_, she\_PRP put\_VBD up\_RP her\_PRP$ hand\_NN in\_IN her\_PRP$ sleep\_NN and\_CC pulled\_VBD the\_DT collar\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ nightdress\_JJ close\_NN around\_IN her\_PRP$ throat\_NN .\_.

Whilst\_IN she\_PRP did\_VBD so\_RB there\_RB came\_VBD a\_DT little\_JJ shudder\_NN through\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN she\_PRP felt\_VBD the\_DT cold\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP flung\_VBD the\_DT warm\_JJ shawl\_NN over\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC drew\_VBD the\_DT edges\_NNS tight\_RB round\_VBP her\_PRP$ neck\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP dreaded\_VBD lest\_IN she\_PRP should\_MD get\_VB some\_DT deadly\_JJ chill\_NN from\_IN the\_DT night\_NN air\_NN ,\_, unclad\_JJ as\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD .\_.

I\_PRP feared\_VBD to\_TO wake\_VB her\_PRP all\_DT at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, so\_RB ,\_, in\_IN order\_NN to\_TO have\_VB my\_PRP$ hands\_NNS free\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP might\_MD help\_VB her\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP fastened\_VBD the\_DT shawl\_NN at\_IN her\_PRP$ throat\_NN with\_IN a\_DT big\_JJ safety-pin\_NN ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN clumsy\_JJ in\_IN my\_PRP$ anxiety\_NN and\_CC pinched\_VBD or\_CC pricked\_VBD her\_PRP with\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN by-and-by\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB her\_PRP$ breathing\_NN became\_VBD quieter\_JJR ,\_, she\_PRP put\_VBD her\_PRP$ hand\_NN to\_TO her\_PRP$ throat\_NN again\_RB and\_CC moaned\_VBN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD her\_PRP carefully\_RB wrapped\_VBD up\_RP I\_PRP put\_VBP my\_PRP$ shoes\_NNS on\_IN her\_PRP$ feet\_NNS and\_CC then\_RB began\_VBD very\_RB gently\_RB to\_TO wake\_VB her\_PRP .\_.

At\_IN first\_RB she\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB respond\_VB ;\_: but\_CC gradually\_RB she\_PRP became\_VBD more\_RBR and\_CC more\_RBR uneasy\_JJ in\_IN her\_PRP$ sleep\_NN ,\_, moaning\_VBG and\_CC sighing\_VBG occasionally\_RB .\_.

At\_IN last\_JJ ,\_, as\_IN time\_NN was\_VBD passing\_VBG fast\_RB ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, for\_IN many\_JJ other\_JJ reasons\_NNS ,\_, I\_PRP wished\_VBD to\_TO get\_VB her\_PRP$ home\_NN at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP shook\_VBD her\_PRP more\_RBR forcibly\_RB ,\_, till\_IN finally\_RB she\_PRP opened\_VBD her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS and\_CC awoke\_VBD .\_.

She\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB seem\_VB surprised\_JJ to\_TO see\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN ,\_, of\_IN course\_NN ,\_, she\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB realise\_VB all\_DT at\_IN once\_RB where\_WRB she\_PRP was\_VBD .\_.

Lucy\_NNP always\_RB wakes\_VBZ prettily\_RB ,\_, and\_CC even\_RB at\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT time\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB her\_PRP$ body\_NN must\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN chilled\_VBN with\_IN cold\_NN ,\_, and\_CC her\_PRP$ mind\_NN somewhat\_RB appalled\_VBD at\_IN waking\_VBG unclad\_JJ in\_IN a\_DT churchyard\_NN at\_IN night\_NN ,\_, she\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB lose\_VB her\_PRP$ grace\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP trembled\_VBD a\_DT little\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC clung\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP ;\_: when\_WRB I\_PRP told\_VBD her\_PRP to\_TO come\_VB at\_IN once\_RB with\_IN me\_PRP home\_NN she\_PRP rose\_VBD without\_IN a\_DT word\_NN ,\_, with\_IN the\_DT obedience\_NN of\_IN a\_DT child\_NN .\_.

As\_IN we\_PRP passed\_VBD along\_RB ,\_, the\_DT gravel\_NN hurt\_VB my\_PRP$ feet\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC Lucy\_NNP noticed\_VBD me\_PRP wince\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP stopped\_VBD and\_CC wanted\_VBD to\_TO insist\_VB upon\_IN my\_PRP$ taking\_VBG my\_PRP$ shoes\_NNS ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB .\_.

However\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB we\_PRP got\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT pathway\_NN outside\_IN the\_DT churchyard\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT puddle\_NN of\_IN water\_NN ,\_, remaining\_VBG from\_IN the\_DT storm\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP daubed\_VBD my\_PRP$ feet\_NNS with\_IN mud\_NN ,\_, using\_VBG each\_DT foot\_NN in\_IN turn\_NN on\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ ,\_, so\_RB that\_IN as\_IN we\_PRP went\_VBD home\_NN ,\_, no\_DT one\_NN ,\_, in\_IN case\_NN we\_PRP should\_MD meet\_VB any\_DT one\_CD ,\_, should\_MD notice\_VB my\_PRP$ bare\_JJ feet\_NNS .\_.

Fortune\_NN favoured\_VBD us\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP got\_VBD home\_NN without\_IN meeting\_VBG a\_DT soul\_NN .\_.

Once\_RB we\_PRP saw\_VBD a\_DT man\_NN ,\_, who\_WP seemed\_VBD not\_RB quite\_RB sober\_JJ ,\_, passing\_VBG along\_IN a\_DT street\_NN in\_IN front\_NN of\_IN us\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC we\_PRP hid\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT door\_NN till\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD disappeared\_VBN up\_RP an\_DT opening\_NN such\_JJ as\_IN there\_EX are\_VBP here\_RB ,\_, steep\_JJ little\_JJ closes\_NNS ,\_, or\_CC ``\_`` wynds\_NNS ,\_, ''\_'' as\_IN they\_PRP call\_VBP them\_PRP in\_IN Scotland\_NNP .\_.

My\_PRP$ heart\_NN beat\_NN so\_RB loud\_RB all\_PDT the\_DT time\_NN that\_IN sometimes\_RB I\_PRP thought\_VBD I\_PRP should\_MD faint\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD filled\_VBN with\_IN anxiety\_NN about\_IN Lucy\_NNP ,\_, not\_RB only\_RB for\_IN her\_PRP$ health\_NN ,\_, lest\_IN she\_PRP should\_MD suffer\_VB from\_IN the\_DT exposure\_NN ,\_, but\_CC for\_IN her\_PRP$ reputation\_NN in\_IN case\_NN the\_DT story\_NN should\_MD get\_VB wind\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP got\_VBD in\_IN ,\_, and\_CC had\_VBD washed\_VBN our\_PRP$ feet\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC had\_VBD said\_VBD a\_DT prayer\_NN of\_IN thankfulness\_NN together\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP tucked\_VBD her\_PRP into\_IN bed\_NN .\_.

Before\_IN falling\_VBG asleep\_RB she\_PRP asked\_VBD --\_: even\_RB implored\_VBN --\_: me\_PRP not\_RB to\_TO say\_VB a\_DT word\_NN to\_TO any\_DT one\_CD ,\_, even\_RB her\_PRP$ mother\_NN ,\_, about\_IN her\_PRP$ sleep-walking\_JJ adventure\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP hesitated\_VBD at\_IN first\_JJ to\_TO promise\_NN ;\_: but\_CC on\_IN thinking\_NN of\_IN the\_DT state\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ mother\_NN 's\_POS health\_NN ,\_, and\_CC how\_WRB the\_DT knowledge\_NN of\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT thing\_NN would\_MD fret\_VB her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC thinking\_NN ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, of\_IN how\_WRB such\_JJ a\_DT story\_NN might\_MD become\_VB distorted\_JJ --\_: nay\_NN ,\_, infallibly\_RB would\_MD --\_: in\_IN case\_NN it\_PRP should\_MD leak\_NN out\_IN ,\_, I\_PRP thought\_VBD it\_PRP wiser\_JJR to\_TO do\_VB so\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP hope\_VBP I\_PRP did\_VBD right\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP locked\_VBN the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT key\_NN is\_VBZ tied\_VBN to\_TO my\_PRP$ wrist\_NN ,\_, so\_RB perhaps\_RB I\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB be\_VB again\_RB disturbed\_VBN .\_.

Lucy\_NNP is\_VBZ sleeping\_VBG soundly\_RB ;\_: the\_DT reflex\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT dawn\_NN is\_VBZ high\_JJ and\_CC far\_RB over\_IN the\_DT sea\_NN ...\_: .\_.

Same\_JJ day\_NN ,\_, noon\_NN .\_.

--\_: All\_DT goes\_VBZ well\_RB .\_.

Lucy\_NNP slept\_VBD till\_IN I\_PRP woke\_VBD her\_PRP and\_CC seemed\_VBD not\_RB to\_TO have\_VB even\_RB changed\_VBN her\_PRP$ side\_NN .\_.

The\_DT adventure\_NN of\_IN the\_DT night\_NN does\_VBZ not\_RB seem\_VB to\_TO have\_VB harmed\_VBN her\_PRP ;\_: on\_IN the\_DT contrary\_NN ,\_, it\_PRP has\_VBZ benefited\_VBN her\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN she\_PRP looks\_VBZ better\_RBR this\_DT morning\_NN than\_IN she\_PRP has\_VBZ done\_VBN for\_IN weeks\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD sorry\_JJ to\_TO notice\_VB that\_DT my\_PRP$ clumsiness\_NN with\_IN the\_DT safety-pin\_JJ hurt\_NN her\_PRP .\_.

Indeed\_RB ,\_, it\_PRP might\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN serious\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT skin\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ throat\_NN was\_VBD pierced\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB pinched\_VBN up\_RP a\_DT piece\_NN of\_IN loose\_JJ skin\_NN and\_CC have\_VBP transfixed\_VBN it\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN there\_EX are\_VBP two\_CD little\_JJ red\_JJ points\_NNS like\_IN pin-pricks\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC on\_IN the\_DT band\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ nightdress\_NN was\_VBD a\_DT drop\_NN of\_IN blood\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP apologised\_VBD and\_CC was\_VBD concerned\_VBN about\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, she\_PRP laughed\_VBD and\_CC petted\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD she\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB even\_RB feel\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

Fortunately\_RB it\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB leave\_VB a\_DT scar\_NN ,\_, as\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ so\_RB tiny\_JJ .\_.

Same\_JJ day\_NN ,\_, night\_NN .\_.

--\_: We\_PRP passed\_VBD a\_DT happy\_JJ day\_NN .\_.

The\_DT air\_NN was\_VBD clear\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT sun\_NN bright\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT cool\_JJ breeze\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP took\_VBD our\_PRP$ lunch\_NN to\_TO Mulgrave\_NNP Woods\_NNP ,\_, Mrs.\_NNP Westenra\_NNP driving\_NN by\_IN the\_DT road\_NN and\_CC Lucy\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP walking\_VBG by\_IN the\_DT cliff-path\_NN and\_CC joining\_VBG her\_PRP at\_IN the\_DT gate\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP felt\_VBD a\_DT little\_RB sad\_JJ myself\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB but\_CC feel\_VB how\_WRB absolutely\_RB happy\_JJ it\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN had\_VBN Jonathan\_NNP been\_VBN with\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

But\_CC there\_RB !\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD only\_RB be\_VB patient\_JJ .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT evening\_NN we\_PRP strolled\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT Casino\_NNP Terrace\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC heard\_VBD some\_DT good\_JJ music\_NN by\_IN Spohr\_NNP and\_CC Mackenzie\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC went\_VBD to\_TO bed\_NN early\_RB .\_.

Lucy\_NNP seems\_VBZ more\_RBR restful\_JJ than\_IN she\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN for\_IN some\_DT time\_NN ,\_, and\_CC fell\_VBD asleep\_RB at\_IN once\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD lock\_VB the\_DT door\_NN and\_CC secure\_VB the\_DT key\_NN the\_DT same\_JJ as\_IN before\_RB ,\_, though\_IN I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB expect\_VB any\_DT trouble\_NN to-night\_NN .\_.

12\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

--\_: My\_PRP$ expectations\_NNS were\_VBD wrong\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN twice\_RB during\_IN the\_DT night\_NN I\_PRP was\_VBD wakened\_VBN by\_IN Lucy\_NNP trying\_VBG to\_TO get\_VB out\_RP .\_.

She\_PRP seemed\_VBD ,\_, even\_RB in\_IN her\_PRP$ sleep\_NN ,\_, to\_TO be\_VB a\_DT little\_JJ impatient\_NN at\_IN finding\_VBG the\_DT door\_NN shut\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC went\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO bed\_NN under\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN protest\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP woke\_VBD with\_IN the\_DT dawn\_NN ,\_, and\_CC heard\_VBD the\_DT birds\_NNS chirping\_VBG outside\_NN of\_IN the\_DT window\_NN .\_.

Lucy\_NNP woke\_VBD ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, I\_PRP was\_VBD glad\_JJ to\_TO see\_VB ,\_, was\_VBD even\_RB better\_JJR than\_IN on\_IN the\_DT previous\_JJ morning\_NN .\_.

All\_DT her\_PRP$ old\_JJ gaiety\_NN of\_IN manner\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO have\_VB come\_VBN back\_RB ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP came\_VBD and\_CC snuggled\_VBD in\_RP beside\_IN me\_PRP and\_CC told\_VBD me\_PRP all\_DT about\_IN Arthur\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP told\_VBD her\_PRP how\_WRB anxious\_JJ I\_PRP was\_VBD about\_IN Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB she\_PRP tried\_VBD to\_TO comfort\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

Well\_RB ,\_, she\_PRP succeeded\_VBD somewhat\_RB ,\_, for\_IN ,\_, though\_IN sympathy\_NN ca\_MD n't\_RB alter\_VB facts\_NNS ,\_, it\_PRP can\_MD help\_VB to\_TO make\_VB them\_PRP more\_RBR bearable\_JJ .\_.

13\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Another\_DT quiet\_JJ day\_NN ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO bed\_NN with\_IN the\_DT key\_NN on\_IN my\_PRP$ wrist\_NN as\_RB before\_RB .\_.

Again\_RB I\_PRP awoke\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT night\_NN ,\_, and\_CC found\_VBD Lucy\_NNP sitting\_VBG up\_RP in\_IN bed\_NN ,\_, still\_RB asleep\_RB ,\_, pointing\_VBG to\_TO the\_DT window\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP got\_VBD up\_RP quietly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC pulling\_VBG aside\_RB the\_DT blind\_JJ ,\_, looked\_VBD out\_RP .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD brilliant\_JJ moonlight\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT soft\_JJ effect\_NN of\_IN the\_DT light\_NN over\_IN the\_DT sea\_NN and\_CC sky\_NN --\_: merged\_VBN together\_RB in\_IN one\_CD great\_JJ ,\_, silent\_JJ mystery\_NN --\_: was\_VBD beautiful\_JJ beyond\_IN words\_NNS .\_.

Between\_IN me\_PRP and\_CC the\_DT moonlight\_NN flitted\_VBD a\_DT great\_JJ bat\_NN ,\_, coming\_VBG and\_CC going\_VBG in\_IN great\_JJ whirling\_JJ circles\_NNS .\_.

Once\_RB or\_CC twice\_RB it\_PRP came\_VBD quite\_RB close\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC was\_VBD ,\_, I\_PRP suppose\_VBP ,\_, frightened\_VBN at\_IN seeing\_VBG me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC flitted\_VBD away\_RB across\_IN the\_DT harbour\_NN towards\_IN the\_DT abbey\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP came\_VBD back\_RB from\_IN the\_DT window\_NN Lucy\_NNP had\_VBD lain\_VBN down\_RB again\_RB ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD sleeping\_VBG peacefully\_RB .\_.

She\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB stir\_VB again\_RB all\_DT night\_NN .\_.

14\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

--\_: On\_IN the\_DT East\_NNP Cliff\_NNP ,\_, reading\_VBG and\_CC writing\_VBG all\_DT day\_NN .\_.

Lucy\_NNP seems\_VBZ to\_TO have\_VB become\_VBN as\_RB much\_JJ in\_IN love\_NN with\_IN the\_DT spot\_NN as\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ hard\_JJ to\_TO get\_VB her\_PRP away\_RB from\_IN it\_PRP when\_WRB it\_PRP is\_VBZ time\_NN to\_TO come\_VB home\_NN for\_IN lunch\_NN or\_CC tea\_NN or\_CC dinner\_NN .\_.

This\_DT afternoon\_NN she\_PRP made\_VBD a\_DT funny\_JJ remark\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP were\_VBD coming\_VBG home\_NN for\_IN dinner\_NN ,\_, and\_CC had\_VBD come\_VBN to\_TO the\_DT top\_NN of\_IN the\_DT steps\_NNS up\_RB from\_IN the\_DT West\_NNP Pier\_NNP and\_CC stopped\_VBD to\_TO look\_VB at\_IN the\_DT view\_NN ,\_, as\_IN we\_PRP generally\_RB do\_VBP .\_.

The\_DT setting\_VBG sun\_NN ,\_, low\_JJ down\_RB in\_IN the\_DT sky\_NN ,\_, was\_VBD just\_RB dropping\_VBG behind\_IN Kettleness\_NN ;\_: the\_DT red\_JJ light\_NN was\_VBD thrown\_VBN over\_RP on\_IN the\_DT East\_NNP Cliff\_NNP and\_CC the\_DT old\_JJ abbey\_NN ,\_, and\_CC seemed\_VBD to\_TO bathe\_VB everything\_NN in\_IN a\_DT beautiful\_JJ rosy\_JJ glow\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP were\_VBD silent\_JJ for\_IN a\_DT while\_NN ,\_, and\_CC suddenly\_RB Lucy\_NNP murmured\_VBD as\_IN if\_IN to\_TO herself\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` His\_PRP$ red\_JJ eyes\_NNS again\_RB !\_.

They\_PRP are\_VBP just\_RB the\_DT same\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

It\_PRP was\_VBD such\_JJ an\_DT odd\_JJ expression\_NN ,\_, coming\_VBG apropos\_NNS of\_IN nothing\_NN ,\_, that\_IN it\_PRP quite\_RB startled\_VBD me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP slewed\_VBD round\_NN a\_DT little\_JJ ,\_, so\_RB as\_IN to\_TO see\_VB Lucy\_NNP well\_RB without\_IN seeming\_VBG to\_TO stare\_VB at\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC saw\_VBD that\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT half-dreamy\_JJ state\_NN ,\_, with\_IN an\_DT odd\_JJ look\_NN on\_IN her\_PRP$ face\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB quite\_RB make\_VB out\_RP ;\_: so\_IN I\_PRP said\_VBD nothing\_NN ,\_, but\_CC followed\_VBD her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS .\_.

She\_PRP appeared\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB looking\_VBG over\_RP at\_IN our\_PRP$ own\_JJ seat\_NN ,\_, whereon\_NN was\_VBD a\_DT dark\_JJ figure\_NN seated\_VBN alone\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT little\_RB startled\_VBN myself\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP seemed\_VBD for\_IN an\_DT instant\_NN as\_IN if\_IN the\_DT stranger\_NN had\_VBD great\_JJ eyes\_NNS like\_IN burning\_NN flames\_NNS ;\_: but\_CC a\_DT second\_JJ look\_NN dispelled\_VBD the\_DT illusion\_NN .\_.

The\_DT red\_JJ sunlight\_NN was\_VBD shining\_VBG on\_IN the\_DT windows\_NNS of\_IN St.\_NNP Mary\_NNP 's\_POS Church\_NNP behind\_IN our\_PRP$ seat\_NN ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN the\_DT sun\_NN dipped\_VBD there\_EX was\_VBD just\_RB sufficient\_JJ change\_NN in\_IN the\_DT refraction\_NN and\_CC reflection\_NN to\_TO make\_VB it\_PRP appear\_VB as\_IN if\_IN the\_DT light\_NN moved\_VBD .\_.

I\_PRP called\_VBD Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS attention\_NN to\_TO the\_DT peculiar\_JJ effect\_NN ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP became\_VBD herself\_PRP with\_IN a\_DT start\_NN ,\_, but\_CC she\_PRP looked\_VBD sad\_JJ all\_PDT the\_DT same\_JJ ;\_: it\_PRP may\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN that\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD thinking\_VBG of\_IN that\_DT terrible\_JJ night\_NN up\_RB there\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP never\_RB refer\_VBP to\_TO it\_PRP ;\_: so\_IN I\_PRP said\_VBD nothing\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP went\_VBD home\_NN to\_TO dinner\_NN .\_.

Lucy\_NNP had\_VBD a\_DT headache\_NN and\_CC went\_VBD early\_JJ to\_TO bed\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP saw\_VBD her\_PRP asleep\_RB ,\_, and\_CC went\_VBD out\_RP for\_IN a\_DT little\_JJ stroll\_VB myself\_PRP ;\_: I\_PRP walked\_VBD along\_IN the\_DT cliffs\_NNS to\_TO the\_DT westward\_RB ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD full\_JJ of\_IN sweet\_JJ sadness\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD thinking\_VBG of\_IN Jonathan\_NNP .\_.

When\_WRB coming\_VBG home\_NN --\_: it\_PRP was\_VBD then\_RB bright\_JJ moonlight\_NN ,\_, so\_RB bright\_JJ that\_IN ,\_, though\_IN the\_DT front\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ part\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Crescent\_NNP was\_VBD in\_IN shadow\_NN ,\_, everything\_NN could\_MD be\_VB well\_RB seen\_VBN --\_: I\_PRP threw\_VBD a\_DT glance\_NN up\_RP at\_IN our\_PRP$ window\_NN ,\_, and\_CC saw\_VBD Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS head\_NN leaning\_VBG out\_RP .\_.

I\_PRP thought\_VBD that\_IN perhaps\_RB she\_PRP was\_VBD looking\_VBG out\_RP for\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP opened\_VBD my\_PRP$ handkerchief\_NN and\_CC waved\_VBD it\_PRP .\_.

She\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB notice\_VB or\_CC make\_VB any\_DT movement\_NN whatever\_WDT .\_.

Just\_RB then\_RB ,\_, the\_DT moonlight\_NN crept\_VBD round\_NN an\_DT angle\_NN of\_IN the\_DT building\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT light\_NN fell\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT window\_NN .\_.

There\_EX distinctly\_RB was\_VBD Lucy\_NNP with\_IN her\_PRP$ head\_NN lying\_VBG up\_RP against\_IN the\_DT side\_NN of\_IN the\_DT window-sill\_NN and\_CC her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS shut\_VBP .\_.

She\_PRP was\_VBD fast\_RB asleep\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC by\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, seated\_VBN on\_IN the\_DT window-sill\_NN ,\_, was\_VBD something\_NN that\_WDT looked\_VBD like\_IN a\_DT good-sized\_JJ bird\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD afraid\_JJ she\_PRP might\_MD get\_VB a\_DT chill\_NN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP ran\_VBD upstairs\_RB ,\_, but\_CC as\_IN I\_PRP came\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN she\_PRP was\_VBD moving\_VBG back\_RB to\_TO her\_PRP$ bed\_NN ,\_, fast\_RB asleep\_RB ,\_, and\_CC breathing\_VBG heavily\_RB ;\_: she\_PRP was\_VBD holding\_VBG her\_PRP$ hand\_NN to\_TO her\_PRP$ throat\_NN ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN to\_TO protect\_VB it\_PRP from\_IN cold\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB wake\_VB her\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC tucked\_VBD her\_PRP up\_RP warmly\_RB ;\_: I\_PRP have\_VBP taken\_VBN care\_NN that\_IN the\_DT door\_NN is\_VBZ locked\_VBN and\_CC the\_DT window\_NN securely\_RB fastened\_VBN .\_.

She\_PRP looks\_VBZ so\_RB sweet\_JJ as\_IN she\_PRP sleeps\_VBZ ;\_: but\_CC she\_PRP is\_VBZ paler\_JJR than\_IN is\_VBZ her\_PRP$ wont\_NN ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT drawn\_VBN ,\_, haggard\_JJ look\_NN under\_IN her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS which\_WDT I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB like\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP fear\_VBP she\_PRP is\_VBZ fretting\_VBG about\_IN something\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP wish\_VBP I\_PRP could\_MD find\_VB out\_RP what\_WP it\_PRP is\_VBZ .\_.

15\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Rose\_NNP later\_RBR than\_IN usual\_JJ .\_.

Lucy\_NNP was\_VBD languid\_JJ and\_CC tired\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC slept\_VBD on\_RP after\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN called\_VBN .\_.

We\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT happy\_JJ surprise\_NN at\_IN breakfast\_NN .\_.

Arthur\_NNP 's\_POS father\_NN is\_VBZ better\_JJR ,\_, and\_CC wants\_VBZ the\_DT marriage\_NN to\_TO come\_VB off\_RP soon\_RB .\_.

Lucy\_NNP is\_VBZ full\_JJ of\_IN quiet\_JJ joy\_NN ,\_, and\_CC her\_PRP$ mother\_NN is\_VBZ glad\_JJ and\_CC sorry\_JJ at\_IN once\_RB .\_.

Later\_RB on\_IN in\_IN the\_DT day\_NN she\_PRP told\_VBD me\_PRP the\_DT cause\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP is\_VBZ grieved\_VBN to\_TO lose\_VB Lucy\_NNP as\_IN her\_PRP very\_RB own\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC she\_PRP is\_VBZ rejoiced\_VBN that\_IN she\_PRP is\_VBZ soon\_RB to\_TO have\_VB some\_DT one\_CD to\_TO protect\_VB her\_PRP .\_.

Poor\_NNP dear\_RB ,\_, sweet\_JJ lady\_NN !\_.

She\_PRP confided\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP that\_IN she\_PRP has\_VBZ got\_VBD her\_PRP death-warrant\_JJ .\_.

She\_PRP has\_VBZ not\_RB told\_VBN Lucy\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC made\_VBD me\_PRP promise\_NN secrecy\_NN ;\_: her\_PRP$ doctor\_NN told\_VBD her\_PRP that\_IN within\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ months\_NNS ,\_, at\_IN most\_JJS ,\_, she\_PRP must\_MD die\_VB ,\_, for\_IN her\_PRP$ heart\_NN is\_VBZ weakening\_VBG .\_.

At\_IN any\_DT time\_NN ,\_, even\_RB now\_RB ,\_, a\_DT sudden\_JJ shock\_NN would\_MD be\_VB almost\_RB sure\_JJ to\_TO kill\_VB her\_PRP .\_.

Ah\_UH ,\_, we\_PRP were\_VBD wise\_JJ to\_TO keep\_VB from\_IN her\_PRP the\_DT affair\_NN of\_IN the\_DT dreadful\_JJ night\_NN of\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS sleep-walking\_NN .\_.

17\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

--\_: No\_DT diary\_NN for\_IN two\_CD whole\_JJ days\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB had\_VBN the\_DT heart\_NN to\_TO write\_VB .\_.

Some\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN shadowy\_JJ pall\_NN seems\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB coming\_VBG over\_IN our\_PRP$ happiness\_NN .\_.

No\_DT news\_NN from\_IN Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC Lucy\_NNP seems\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB growing\_VBG weaker\_JJR ,\_, whilst\_IN her\_PRP$ mother\_NN 's\_POS hours\_NNS are\_VBP numbering\_NN to\_TO a\_DT close\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB understand\_VB Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS fading\_JJ away\_RB as\_IN she\_PRP is\_VBZ doing\_VBG .\_.

She\_PRP eats\_VBZ well\_RB and\_CC sleeps\_VBZ well\_RB ,\_, and\_CC enjoys\_VBZ the\_DT fresh\_JJ air\_NN ;\_: but\_CC all\_PDT the\_DT time\_NN the\_DT roses\_NNS in\_IN her\_PRP$ cheeks\_NNS are\_VBP fading\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP gets\_VBZ weaker\_JJR and\_CC more\_RBR languid\_JJ day\_NN by\_IN day\_NN ;\_: at\_IN night\_NN I\_PRP hear\_VBP her\_PRP$ gasping\_NN as\_IN if\_IN for\_IN air\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP keep\_VBP the\_DT key\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ door\_NN always\_RB fastened\_VBD to\_TO my\_PRP$ wrist\_NN at\_IN night\_NN ,\_, but\_CC she\_PRP gets\_VBZ up\_RB and\_CC walks\_VBZ about\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, and\_CC sits\_VBZ at\_IN the\_DT open\_JJ window\_NN .\_.

Last\_JJ night\_NN I\_PRP found\_VBD her\_PRP leaning\_VBG out\_RP when\_WRB I\_PRP woke\_VBD up\_RP ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB I\_PRP tried\_VBD to\_TO wake\_VB her\_PRP I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB ;\_: she\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT faint\_JJ .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP managed\_VBD to\_TO restore\_VB her\_PRP she\_PRP was\_VBD as\_RB weak\_JJ as\_IN water\_NN ,\_, and\_CC cried\_VBD silently\_RB between\_IN long\_JJ ,\_, painful\_JJ struggles\_NNS for\_IN breath\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP asked\_VBD her\_PRP how\_WRB she\_PRP came\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB at\_IN the\_DT window\_NN she\_PRP shook\_VBD her\_PRP$ head\_NN and\_CC turned\_VBD away\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP trust\_VBP her\_PRP$ feeling\_NN ill\_RB may\_MD not\_RB be\_VB from\_IN that\_DT unlucky\_JJ prick\_NN of\_IN the\_DT safety-pin\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP looked\_VBD at\_IN her\_PRP$ throat\_NN just\_RB now\_RB as\_IN she\_PRP lay\_VBD asleep\_RB ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT tiny\_JJ wounds\_NNS seem\_VBP not\_RB to\_TO have\_VB healed\_VBN .\_.

They\_PRP are\_VBP still\_RB open\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, if\_IN anything\_NN ,\_, larger\_JJR than\_IN before\_RB ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT edges\_NNS of\_IN them\_PRP are\_VBP faintly\_RB white\_JJ .\_.

They\_PRP are\_VBP like\_IN little\_JJ white\_JJ dots\_NNS with\_IN red\_JJ centres\_NNS .\_.

Unless\_IN they\_PRP heal\_VBP within\_IN a\_DT day\_NN or\_CC two\_CD ,\_, I\_PRP shall\_MD insist\_VB on\_IN the\_DT doctor\_NN seeing\_VBG about\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

Letter\_NNP ,\_, Samuel\_NNP F.\_NNP Billington\_NNP &\_CC Son\_NNP ,\_, Solicitors\_NNP ,\_, Whitby\_NNP ,\_, to\_TO Messrs.\_NNP Carter\_NNP ,\_, Paterson\_NNP &\_CC Co.\_NNP ,\_, London\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` 17\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` Dear\_NNP Sirs\_NNP ,\_, --\_: ``\_`` Herewith\_NNP please\_VBP receive\_VB invoice\_NN of\_IN goods\_NNS sent\_VBN by\_IN Great\_NNP Northern\_NNP Railway\_NNP .\_.

Same\_JJ are\_VBP to\_TO be\_VB delivered\_VBN at\_IN Carfax\_NNP ,\_, near\_IN Purfleet\_NNP ,\_, immediately\_RB on\_IN receipt\_NN at\_IN goods\_NNS station\_NN King\_NNP 's\_POS Cross\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT house\_NN is\_VBZ at\_IN present\_JJ empty\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC enclosed\_VBN please\_VBP find\_VB keys\_NNS ,\_, all\_DT of\_IN which\_WDT are\_VBP labelled\_VBN .\_.

``\_`` You\_PRP will\_MD please\_VB deposit\_VB the\_DT boxes\_NNS ,\_, fifty\_CD in\_IN number\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT form\_VBP the\_DT consignment\_NN ,\_, in\_IN the\_DT partially\_RB ruined\_VBN building\_NN forming\_VBG part\_NN of\_IN the\_DT house\_NN and\_CC marked\_JJ `\_`` A\_NN '\_'' on\_IN rough\_JJ diagram\_NN enclosed\_VBN .\_.

Your\_PRP$ agent\_NN will\_MD easily\_RB recognise\_VB the\_DT locality\_NN ,\_, as\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ the\_DT ancient\_JJ chapel\_NN of\_IN the\_DT mansion\_NN .\_.

The\_DT goods\_NNS leave\_VBP by\_IN the\_DT train\_NN at\_IN 9:30\_CD to-night\_NN ,\_, and\_CC will\_MD be\_VB due\_JJ at\_IN King\_NNP 's\_POS Cross\_NNP at\_IN 4:30\_CD to-morrow\_NN afternoon\_NN .\_.

As\_IN our\_PRP$ client\_NN wishes\_VBZ the\_DT delivery\_NN made\_VBD as\_RB soon\_RB as\_IN possible\_JJ ,\_, we\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB obliged\_VBN by\_IN your\_PRP$ having\_VBG teams\_NNS ready\_JJ at\_IN King\_NNP 's\_POS Cross\_NNP at\_IN the\_DT time\_NN named\_VBN and\_CC forthwith\_RB conveying\_VBG the\_DT goods\_NNS to\_TO destination\_NN .\_.

In\_IN order\_NN to\_TO obviate\_VB any\_DT delays\_NNS possible\_JJ through\_IN any\_DT routine\_JJ requirements\_NNS as\_IN to\_TO payment\_NN in\_IN your\_PRP$ departments\_NNS ,\_, we\_PRP enclose\_VBP cheque\_NN herewith\_NN for\_IN ten\_CD pounds\_NNS -LRB-\_-LRB- #\_# 10\_CD -RRB-\_-RRB- ,\_, receipt\_NN of\_IN which\_WDT please\_VBP acknowledge\_VB .\_.

Should\_MD the\_DT charge\_NN be\_VB less\_JJR than\_IN this\_DT amount\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP can\_MD return\_VB balance\_NN ;\_: if\_IN greater\_JJR ,\_, we\_PRP shall\_MD at\_IN once\_RB send\_VB cheque\_NN for\_IN difference\_NN on\_IN hearing\_NN from\_IN you\_PRP .\_.

You\_PRP are\_VBP to\_TO leave\_VB the\_DT keys\_NNS on\_IN coming\_VBG away\_RB in\_IN the\_DT main\_JJ hall\_NN of\_IN the\_DT house\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB the\_DT proprietor\_NN may\_MD get\_VB them\_PRP on\_IN his\_PRP$ entering\_VBG the\_DT house\_NN by\_IN means\_NNS of\_IN his\_PRP$ duplicate\_VB key\_JJ .\_.

``\_`` Pray\_VB do\_VBP not\_RB take\_VB us\_PRP as\_IN exceeding\_VBG the\_DT bounds\_NNS of\_IN business\_NN courtesy\_NN in\_IN pressing\_VBG you\_PRP in\_IN all\_DT ways\_NNS to\_TO use\_VB the\_DT utmost\_JJ expedition\_NN .\_.

``\_`` We\_PRP are\_VBP ,\_, dear\_RB Sirs\_NNP ,\_, ``\_`` Faithfully\_RB yours\_PRP$ ,\_, ``\_`` Samuel\_NNP F.\_NNP Billington\_NNP &\_CC Son\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

Letter\_NNP ,\_, Messrs.\_NNP Carter\_NNP ,\_, Paterson\_NNP &\_CC Co.\_NNP ,\_, London\_NNP ,\_, to\_TO Messrs.\_NNP Billington\_NNP &\_CC Son\_NNP ,\_, Whitby\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` 21\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` Dear\_NNP Sirs\_NNP ,\_, --\_: ``\_`` We\_PRP beg\_VBP to\_TO acknowledge\_VB #\_# 10\_CD received\_VBD and\_CC to\_TO return\_VB cheque\_NN #\_# 1\_CD 17s\_NNS .\_.

9d\_NN ,\_, amount\_NN of\_IN overplus\_NN ,\_, as\_IN shown\_VBN in\_IN receipted\_JJ account\_NN herewith\_NN .\_.

Goods\_NNP are\_VBP delivered\_VBN in\_IN exact\_JJ accordance\_NN with\_IN instructions\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC keys\_NNS left\_VBN in\_IN parcel\_NN in\_IN main\_JJ hall\_NN ,\_, as\_IN directed\_VBN .\_.

``\_`` We\_PRP are\_VBP ,\_, dear\_RB Sirs\_NNP ,\_, ``\_`` Yours\_NNPS respectfully\_RB .\_.

``\_`` Pro\_FW Carter\_NNP ,\_, Paterson\_NNP &\_CC Co.\_NNP ''\_'' Mina\_NNP Murray\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP .\_.

18\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP am\_VBP happy\_JJ to-day\_NN ,\_, and\_CC write\_VB sitting\_VBG on\_IN the\_DT seat\_NN in\_IN the\_DT churchyard\_NN .\_.

Lucy\_NNP is\_VBZ ever\_RB so\_RB much\_RB better\_JJR .\_.

Last\_JJ night\_NN she\_PRP slept\_VBD well\_RB all\_DT night\_NN ,\_, and\_CC did\_VBD not\_RB disturb\_VB me\_PRP once\_RB .\_.

The\_DT roses\_NNS seem\_VBP coming\_VBG back\_RB already\_RB to\_TO her\_PRP$ cheeks\_NNS ,\_, though\_IN she\_PRP is\_VBZ still\_RB sadly\_RB pale\_JJ and\_CC wan-looking\_JJ .\_.

If\_IN she\_PRP were\_VBD in\_IN any\_DT way\_NN anæmic\_JJ I\_PRP could\_MD understand\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC she\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB .\_.

She\_PRP is\_VBZ in\_IN gay\_JJ spirits\_NNS and\_CC full\_JJ of\_IN life\_NN and\_CC cheerfulness\_NN .\_.

All\_PDT the\_DT morbid\_JJ reticence\_NN seems\_VBZ to\_TO have\_VB passed\_VBN from\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP has\_VBZ just\_RB reminded\_VBN me\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN I\_PRP needed\_VBD any\_DT reminding\_VBG ,\_, of\_IN that\_DT night\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD here\_RB ,\_, on\_IN this\_DT very\_JJ seat\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP found\_VBD her\_PRP asleep\_RB .\_.

As\_IN she\_PRP told\_VBD me\_PRP she\_PRP tapped\_VBD playfully\_RB with\_IN the\_DT heel\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ boot\_NN on\_IN the\_DT stone\_NN slab\_NN and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` My\_PRP$ poor\_JJ little\_JJ feet\_NNS did\_VBD n't\_RB make\_VB much\_JJ noise\_NN then\_RB !\_.

I\_PRP daresay\_VBP poor\_JJ old\_JJ Mr.\_NNP Swales\_NNP would\_MD have\_VB told\_VBN me\_PRP that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD because\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD n't\_RB want\_VB to\_TO wake\_VB up\_RP Geordie\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

As\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN such\_JJ a\_DT communicative\_JJ humour\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP asked\_VBD her\_PRP if\_IN she\_PRP had\_VBD dreamed\_VBN at\_IN all\_DT that\_DT night\_NN .\_.

Before\_IN she\_PRP answered\_VBD ,\_, that\_IN sweet\_JJ ,\_, puckered\_JJ look\_NN came\_VBD into\_IN her\_PRP$ forehead\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT Arthur\_NNP --\_: I\_PRP call\_VBP him\_PRP Arthur\_NNP from\_IN her\_PRP$ habit\_NN --\_: says\_VBZ he\_PRP loves\_VBZ ;\_: and\_CC ,\_, indeed\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB wonder\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP does\_VBZ .\_.

Then\_RB she\_PRP went\_VBD on\_RP in\_IN a\_DT half-dreaming\_JJ kind\_NN of\_IN way\_NN ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN trying\_VBG to\_TO recall\_VB it\_PRP to\_TO herself\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP did\_VBD n't\_RB quite\_RB dream\_VB ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP all\_DT seemed\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB real\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP only\_RB wanted\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB here\_RB in\_IN this\_DT spot\_NN --\_: I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB know\_VB why\_WRB ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD afraid\_JJ of\_IN something\_NN --\_: I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB know\_VB what\_WP .\_.

I\_PRP remember\_VBP ,\_, though\_IN I\_PRP suppose\_VBP I\_PRP was\_VBD asleep\_JJ ,\_, passing\_VBG through\_IN the\_DT streets\_NNS and\_CC over\_IN the\_DT bridge\_NN .\_.

A\_DT fish\_NN leaped\_VBD as\_IN I\_PRP went\_VBD by\_IN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP leaned\_VBD over\_RP to\_TO look\_VB at\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP heard\_VBD a\_DT lot\_NN of\_IN dogs\_NNS howling\_VBG --\_: the\_DT whole\_JJ town\_NN seemed\_VBD as\_IN if\_IN it\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB full\_JJ of\_IN dogs\_NNS all\_DT howling\_VBG at\_IN once\_RB --\_: as\_IN I\_PRP went\_VBD up\_RP the\_DT steps\_NNS .\_.

Then\_RB I\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT vague\_JJ memory\_NN of\_IN something\_NN long\_JJ and\_CC dark\_JJ with\_IN red\_JJ eyes\_NNS ,\_, just\_RB as\_IN we\_PRP saw\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT sunset\_NN ,\_, and\_CC something\_NN very\_RB sweet\_JJ and\_CC very\_RB bitter\_JJ all\_DT around\_IN me\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB ;\_: and\_CC then\_RB I\_PRP seemed\_VBD sinking\_VBG into\_IN deep\_JJ green\_JJ water\_NN ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT singing\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ ears\_NNS ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP heard\_VBN there\_EX is\_VBZ to\_TO drowning\_VBG men\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC then\_RB everything\_NN seemed\_VBD passing\_VBG away\_RB from\_IN me\_PRP ;\_: my\_PRP$ soul\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO go\_VB out\_RP from\_IN my\_PRP$ body\_NN and\_CC float\_NN about\_IN the\_DT air\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP seem\_VBP to\_TO remember\_VB that\_IN once\_RB the\_DT West\_NNP Lighthouse\_NNP was\_VBD right\_RB under\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN agonising\_JJ feeling\_NN ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN I\_PRP were\_VBD in\_IN an\_DT earthquake\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP came\_VBD back\_RB and\_CC found\_VBD you\_PRP shaking\_VBG my\_PRP$ body\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP saw\_VBD you\_PRP do\_VBP it\_PRP before\_IN I\_PRP felt\_VBD you\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

Then\_RB she\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO laugh\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP seemed\_VBD a\_DT little\_RB uncanny\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP listened\_VBD to\_TO her\_PRP breathlessly\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB quite\_RB like\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC thought\_VBD it\_PRP better\_JJR not\_RB to\_TO keep\_VB her\_PRP$ mind\_NN on\_IN the\_DT subject\_NN ,\_, so\_IN we\_PRP drifted\_VBD on\_RP to\_TO other\_JJ subjects\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC Lucy\_NNP was\_VBD like\_IN her\_PRP$ old\_JJ self\_NN again\_RB .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP got\_VBD home\_NN the\_DT fresh\_JJ breeze\_NN had\_VBD braced\_VBN her\_PRP up\_RP ,\_, and\_CC her\_PRP$ pale\_NN cheeks\_NNS were\_VBD really\_RB more\_RBR rosy\_JJ .\_.

Her\_PRP$ mother\_NN rejoiced\_VBD when\_WRB she\_PRP saw\_VBD her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP all\_DT spent\_VBD a\_DT very\_RB happy\_JJ evening\_NN together\_RB .\_.

19\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Joy\_NNP ,\_, joy\_NN ,\_, joy\_NN !\_.

although\_IN not\_RB all\_DT joy\_NN .\_.

At\_IN last\_JJ ,\_, news\_NN of\_IN Jonathan\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT dear\_RB fellow\_JJ has\_VBZ been\_VBN ill\_JJ ;\_: that\_DT is\_VBZ why\_WRB he\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB write\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB afraid\_JJ to\_TO think\_VB it\_PRP or\_CC say\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, now\_RB that\_IN I\_PRP know\_VBP .\_.

Mr.\_NNP Hawkins\_NNP sent\_VBD me\_PRP on\_IN the\_DT letter\_NN ,\_, and\_CC wrote\_VBD himself\_PRP ,\_, oh\_UH ,\_, so\_RB kindly\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP to\_TO leave\_VB in\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN and\_CC go\_VB over\_RP to\_TO Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO help\_VB to\_TO nurse\_NN him\_PRP if\_IN necessary\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO bring\_VB him\_PRP home\_NN .\_.

Mr.\_NNP Hawkins\_NNP says\_VBZ it\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB be\_VB a\_DT bad\_JJ thing\_NN if\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB married\_VBN out\_RP there\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP cried\_VBN over\_IN the\_DT good\_JJ Sister\_NN 's\_POS letter\_NN till\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD feel\_VB it\_PRP wet\_JJ against\_IN my\_PRP$ bosom\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB it\_PRP lies\_VBZ .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ of\_IN Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC must\_MD be\_VB next\_JJ my\_PRP$ heart\_NN ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ in\_IN my\_PRP$ heart\_NN .\_.

My\_PRP$ journey\_NN is\_VBZ all\_DT mapped\_VBN out\_RP ,\_, and\_CC my\_PRP$ luggage\_NN ready\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP only\_RB taking\_VBG one\_CD change\_NN of\_IN dress\_NN ;\_: Lucy\_NNP will\_MD bring\_VB my\_PRP$ trunk\_NN to\_TO London\_NNP and\_CC keep\_VB it\_PRP till\_IN I\_PRP send\_VBP for\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB that\_IN ...\_: I\_PRP must\_MD write\_VB no\_DT more\_RBR ;\_: I\_PRP must\_MD keep\_VB it\_PRP to\_TO say\_VB to\_TO Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, my\_PRP$ husband\_NN .\_.

The\_DT letter\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP has\_VBZ seen\_VBN and\_CC touched\_VBN must\_MD comfort\_VB me\_PRP till\_IN we\_PRP meet\_VBP .\_.

Letter\_NNP ,\_, Sister\_NNP Agatha\_NNP ,\_, Hospital\_NNP of\_IN St.\_NNP Joseph\_NNP and\_CC Ste.\_NNP Mary\_NNP ,\_, Buda-Pesth\_NNP ,\_, to\_TO Miss\_NNP Wilhelmina\_NNP Murray\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` 12\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` Dear\_NNP Madam\_NNP ,\_, --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP write\_VBP by\_IN desire\_NN of\_IN Mr.\_NNP Jonathan\_NNP Harker\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP is\_VBZ himself\_PRP not\_RB strong\_JJ enough\_RB to\_TO write\_VB ,\_, though\_IN progressing\_VBG well\_RB ,\_, thanks\_NNS to\_TO God\_NNP and\_CC St.\_NNP Joseph\_NNP and\_CC Ste.\_NNP Mary\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN under\_IN our\_PRP$ care\_NN for\_IN nearly\_RB six\_CD weeks\_NNS ,\_, suffering\_VBG from\_IN a\_DT violent\_JJ brain\_NN fever\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP wishes\_VBZ me\_PRP to\_TO convey\_VB his\_PRP$ love\_NN ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO say\_VB that\_IN by\_IN this\_DT post\_NN I\_PRP write\_VBP for\_IN him\_PRP to\_TO Mr.\_NNP Peter\_NNP Hawkins\_NNP ,\_, Exeter\_NNP ,\_, to\_TO say\_VB ,\_, with\_IN his\_PRP$ dutiful\_JJ respects\_NNS ,\_, that\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ sorry\_JJ for\_IN his\_PRP$ delay\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN all\_DT of\_IN his\_PRP$ work\_NN is\_VBZ completed\_VBN .\_.

He\_PRP will\_MD require\_VB some\_DT few\_JJ weeks\_NNS '\_POS rest\_NN in\_IN our\_PRP$ sanatorium\_NN in\_IN the\_DT hills\_NNS ,\_, but\_CC will\_MD then\_RB return\_VB .\_.

He\_PRP wishes\_VBZ me\_PRP to\_TO say\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP has\_VBZ not\_RB sufficient\_JJ money\_NN with\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN he\_PRP would\_MD like\_VB to\_TO pay\_VB for\_IN his\_PRP$ staying\_NN here\_RB ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN others\_NNS who\_WP need\_VBP shall\_MD not\_RB be\_VB wanting\_VBG for\_IN help\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Believe\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, ``\_`` Yours\_NNP ,\_, with\_IN sympathy\_NN and\_CC all\_DT blessings\_NNS ,\_, ``\_`` Sister\_NNP Agatha\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` P.\_NNP S.\_NNP --\_: My\_PRP$ patient\_NN being\_VBG asleep\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP open\_VBP this\_DT to\_TO let\_VB you\_PRP know\_VB something\_NN more\_JJR .\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ told\_VBN me\_PRP all\_DT about\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN you\_PRP are\_VBP shortly\_RB to\_TO be\_VB his\_PRP$ wife\_NN .\_.

All\_DT blessings\_NNS to\_TO you\_PRP both\_DT !\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ had\_VBN some\_DT fearful\_JJ shock\_NN --\_: so\_RB says\_VBZ our\_PRP$ doctor\_NN --\_: and\_CC in\_IN his\_PRP$ delirium\_NN his\_PRP$ ravings\_NNS have\_VBP been\_VBN dreadful\_JJ ;\_: of\_IN wolves\_NNS and\_CC poison\_NN and\_CC blood\_NN ;\_: of\_IN ghosts\_NNS and\_CC demons\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP fear\_VBP to\_TO say\_VB of\_IN what\_WP .\_.

Be\_VB careful\_JJ with\_IN him\_PRP always\_RB that\_IN there\_EX may\_MD be\_VB nothing\_NN to\_TO excite\_VB him\_PRP of\_IN this\_DT kind\_NN for\_IN a\_DT long\_JJ time\_NN to\_TO come\_VB ;\_: the\_DT traces\_NNS of\_IN such\_PDT an\_DT illness\_NN as\_IN his\_PRP$ do\_VBP not\_RB lightly\_RB die\_VB away\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB written\_VBN long\_RB ago\_RB ,\_, but\_CC we\_PRP knew\_VBD nothing\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ friends\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD on\_IN him\_PRP nothing\_NN that\_IN any\_DT one\_NN could\_MD understand\_VB .\_.

He\_PRP came\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT train\_NN from\_IN Klausenburg\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT guard\_NN was\_VBD told\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT station-master\_NN there\_RB that\_IN he\_PRP rushed\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT station\_NN shouting\_NN for\_IN a\_DT ticket\_NN for\_IN home\_NN .\_.

Seeing\_VBG from\_IN his\_PRP$ violent\_JJ demeanour\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD English\_NNP ,\_, they\_PRP gave\_VBD him\_PRP a\_DT ticket\_NN for\_IN the\_DT furthest\_JJS station\_NN on\_IN the\_DT way\_NN thither\_RB that\_IN the\_DT train\_NN reached\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Be\_VB assured\_VBN that\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ well\_RB cared\_VBN for\_IN .\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ won\_VBN all\_DT hearts\_NNS by\_IN his\_PRP$ sweetness\_NN and\_CC gentleness\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ truly\_RB getting\_VBG on\_IN well\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP no\_DT doubt\_NN will\_MD in\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ weeks\_NNS be\_VB all\_DT himself\_PRP .\_.

But\_CC be\_VB careful\_JJ of\_IN him\_PRP for\_IN safety\_NN 's\_POS sake\_NN .\_.

There\_EX are\_VBP ,\_, I\_PRP pray\_VBP God\_NNP and\_CC St.\_NNP Joseph\_NNP and\_CC Ste.\_NNP Mary\_NNP ,\_, many\_JJ ,\_, many\_JJ ,\_, happy\_JJ years\_NNS for\_IN you\_PRP both\_DT .\_. ''\_''

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

19\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Strange\_JJ and\_CC sudden\_JJ change\_NN in\_IN Renfield\_NNP last\_JJ night\_NN .\_.

About\_IN eight\_CD o'clock\_RB he\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO get\_VB excited\_JJ and\_CC sniff\_VBP about\_IN as\_IN a\_DT dog\_NN does\_VBZ when\_WRB setting\_NN .\_.

The\_DT attendant\_NN was\_VBD struck\_VBN by\_IN his\_PRP$ manner\_NN ,\_, and\_CC knowing\_VBG my\_PRP$ interest\_NN in\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, encouraged\_VBD him\_PRP to\_TO talk\_VB .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ usually\_RB respectful\_JJ to\_TO the\_DT attendant\_NN and\_CC at\_IN times\_NNS servile\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC to-night\_JJ ,\_, the\_DT man\_NN tells\_VBZ me\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP was\_VBD quite\_RB haughty\_JJ .\_.

Would\_MD not\_RB condescend\_VB to\_TO talk\_VB with\_IN him\_PRP at\_IN all\_DT .\_.

All\_DT he\_PRP would\_MD say\_VB was\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB want\_VB to\_TO talk\_VB to\_TO you\_PRP :\_: you\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB count\_VB now\_RB ;\_: the\_DT Master\_NNP is\_VBZ at\_IN hand\_NN .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT attendant\_NN thinks\_VBZ it\_PRP is\_VBZ some\_DT sudden\_JJ form\_NN of\_IN religious\_JJ mania\_NN which\_WDT has\_VBZ seized\_VBN him\_PRP .\_.

If\_IN so\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP must\_MD look\_VB out\_RP for\_IN squalls\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN a\_DT strong\_JJ man\_NN with\_IN homicidal\_JJ and\_CC religious\_JJ mania\_NN at\_IN once\_RB might\_MD be\_VB dangerous\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT combination\_NN is\_VBZ a\_DT dreadful\_JJ one\_CD .\_.

At\_IN nine\_CD o'clock\_RB I\_PRP visited\_VBD him\_PRP myself\_PRP .\_.

His\_PRP$ attitude\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP was\_VBD the\_DT same\_JJ as\_IN that\_DT to\_TO the\_DT attendant\_NN ;\_: in\_IN his\_PRP$ sublime\_JJ self-feeling\_NN the\_DT difference\_NN between\_IN myself\_PRP and\_CC attendant\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP as\_IN nothing\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP looks\_VBZ like\_IN religious\_JJ mania\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP will\_MD soon\_RB think\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP himself\_PRP is\_VBZ God\_NNP .\_.

These\_DT infinitesimal\_JJ distinctions\_NNS between\_IN man\_NN and\_CC man\_NN are\_VBP too\_RB paltry\_JJ for\_IN an\_DT Omnipotent\_JJ Being\_VBG .\_.

How\_WRB these\_DT madmen\_NNS give\_VBP themselves\_PRP away\_RB !\_.

The\_DT real\_JJ God\_NNP taketh\_VBP heed\_VB lest\_IN a\_DT sparrow\_NN fall\_NN ;\_: but\_CC the\_DT God\_NNP created\_VBN from\_IN human\_JJ vanity\_NN sees\_VBZ no\_DT difference\_NN between\_IN an\_DT eagle\_NN and\_CC a\_DT sparrow\_NN .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, if\_IN men\_NNS only\_RB knew\_VBD !\_.

For\_IN half\_PDT an\_DT hour\_NN or\_CC more\_JJR Renfield\_NNP kept\_VBD getting\_VBG excited\_VBN in\_IN greater\_JJR and\_CC greater\_JJR degree\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB pretend\_VB to\_TO be\_VB watching\_VBG him\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP kept\_VBD strict\_JJ observation\_NN all\_PDT the\_DT same\_JJ .\_.

All\_DT at\_IN once\_RB that\_IN shifty\_JJ look\_NN came\_VBD into\_IN his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS which\_WDT we\_PRP always\_RB see\_VBP when\_WRB a\_DT madman\_NN has\_VBZ seized\_VBN an\_DT idea\_NN ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN it\_PRP the\_DT shifty\_JJ movement\_NN of\_IN the\_DT head\_NN and\_CC back\_RB which\_WDT asylum\_NN attendants\_NNS come\_VBP to\_TO know\_VB so\_RB well\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP became\_VBD quite\_RB quiet\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC went\_VBD and\_CC sat\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT edge\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ bed\_NN resignedly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC looked\_VBD into\_IN space\_NN with\_IN lack-lustre\_JJ eyes\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP thought\_VBD I\_PRP would\_MD find\_VB out\_RP if\_IN his\_PRP$ apathy\_NN were\_VBD real\_JJ or\_CC only\_RB assumed\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC tried\_VBD to\_TO lead\_VB him\_PRP to\_TO talk\_VB of\_IN his\_PRP$ pets\_NNS ,\_, a\_DT theme\_NN which\_WDT had\_VBD never\_RB failed\_VBN to\_TO excite\_VB his\_PRP$ attention\_NN .\_.

At\_IN first\_RB he\_PRP made\_VBD no\_DT reply\_NN ,\_, but\_CC at\_IN length\_NN said\_VBD testily\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Bother\_VB them\_PRP all\_DT !\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB care\_VB a\_DT pin\_NN about\_IN them\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` What\_WP ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` You\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB mean\_VB to\_TO tell\_VB me\_PRP you\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB care\_VB about\_IN spiders\_NNS ?\_. ''\_''

-LRB-\_-LRB- Spiders\_NNS at\_IN present\_NN are\_VBP his\_PRP$ hobby\_NN and\_CC the\_DT note-book\_NN is\_VBZ filling\_VBG up\_RP with\_IN columns\_NNS of\_IN small\_JJ figures\_NNS .\_. -RRB-\_-RRB-

To\_TO this\_DT he\_PRP answered\_VBD enigmatically\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` The\_DT bride-maidens\_NNS rejoice\_VBP the\_DT eyes\_NNS that\_WDT wait\_VBP the\_DT coming\_VBG of\_IN the\_DT bride\_NN ;\_: but\_CC when\_WRB the\_DT bride\_NN draweth\_FW nigh\_FW ,\_, then\_RB the\_DT maidens\_NNS shine\_VBP not\_RB to\_TO the\_DT eyes\_NNS that\_WDT are\_VBP filled\_VBN .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB explain\_VB himself\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC remained\_VBD obstinately\_RB seated\_VBN on\_IN his\_PRP$ bed\_NN all\_PDT the\_DT time\_NN I\_PRP remained\_VBD with\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP weary\_JJ to-night\_JJ and\_CC low\_JJ in\_IN spirits\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB but\_CC think\_VB of\_IN Lucy\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC how\_WRB different\_JJ things\_NNS might\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN .\_.

If\_IN I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB sleep\_VB at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, chloral\_NN ,\_, the\_DT modern\_JJ Morpheus\_NNP --\_: C2HCl3O\_NN .\_.

H2O\_NN !\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB careful\_JJ not\_RB to\_TO let\_VB it\_PRP grow\_VB into\_IN a\_DT habit\_NN .\_.

No\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP shall\_MD take\_VB none\_NN to-night\_NN !\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP thought\_VBN of\_IN Lucy\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB dishonour\_VB her\_PRP by\_IN mixing\_VBG the\_DT two\_CD .\_.

If\_IN need\_MD be\_VB ,\_, to-night\_JJ shall\_MD be\_VB sleepless\_JJ ...\_: .\_.

Later\_RB .\_.

--\_: Glad\_NN I\_PRP made\_VBD the\_DT resolution\_NN ;\_: gladder\_JJR that\_IN I\_PRP kept\_VBD to\_TO it\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD lain\_NN tossing\_VBG about\_IN ,\_, and\_CC had\_VBD heard\_VBN the\_DT clock\_NN strike\_NN only\_RB twice\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB the\_DT night-watchman\_NN came\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, sent\_VBD up\_RP from\_IN the\_DT ward\_NN ,\_, to\_TO say\_VB that\_IN Renfield\_NNP had\_VBD escaped\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP threw\_VBD on\_IN my\_PRP$ clothes\_NNS and\_CC ran\_VBD down\_RB at\_IN once\_RB ;\_: my\_PRP$ patient\_NN is\_VBZ too\_RB dangerous\_JJ a\_DT person\_NN to\_TO be\_VB roaming\_VBG about\_IN .\_.

Those\_DT ideas\_NNS of\_IN his\_PRP$ might\_MD work\_VB out\_RP dangerously\_RB with\_IN strangers\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT attendant\_NN was\_VBD waiting\_VBG for\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP said\_VBD he\_PRP had\_VBD seen\_VBN him\_PRP not\_RB ten\_CD minutes\_NNS before\_RB ,\_, seemingly\_RB asleep\_RB in\_IN his\_PRP$ bed\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB he\_PRP had\_VBD looked\_VBN through\_IN the\_DT observation-trap\_NN in\_IN the\_DT door\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ attention\_NN was\_VBD called\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT sound\_NN of\_IN the\_DT window\_NN being\_VBG wrenched\_VBN out\_RP .\_.

He\_PRP ran\_VBD back\_RB and\_CC saw\_VBD his\_PRP$ feet\_NNS disappear\_VBP through\_IN the\_DT window\_NN ,\_, and\_CC had\_VBD at\_IN once\_RB sent\_VBN up\_RP for\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD only\_RB in\_IN his\_PRP$ night-gear\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC can\_MD not\_RB be\_VB far\_RB off\_RB .\_.

The\_DT attendant\_NN thought\_VBD it\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB more\_RBR useful\_JJ to\_TO watch\_VB where\_WRB he\_PRP should\_MD go\_VB than\_IN to\_TO follow\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP might\_MD lose\_VB sight\_NN of\_IN him\_PRP whilst\_IN getting\_VBG out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT building\_NN by\_IN the\_DT door\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT bulky\_JJ man\_NN ,\_, and\_CC could\_MD n't\_RB get\_VB through\_IN the\_DT window\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP thin\_JJ ,\_, so\_RB ,\_, with\_IN his\_PRP$ aid\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP got\_VBD out\_RB ,\_, but\_CC feet\_NNS foremost\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, as\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD only\_RB a\_DT few\_JJ feet\_NNS above\_IN ground\_NN ,\_, landed\_VBD unhurt\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT attendant\_NN told\_VBD me\_PRP the\_DT patient\_NN had\_VBD gone\_VBN to\_TO the\_DT left\_NN ,\_, and\_CC had\_VBD taken\_VBN a\_DT straight\_JJ line\_NN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP ran\_VBD as\_RB quickly\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD .\_.

As\_IN I\_PRP got\_VBD through\_IN the\_DT belt\_NN of\_IN trees\_NNS I\_PRP saw\_VBD a\_DT white\_JJ figure\_NN scale\_NN the\_DT high\_JJ wall\_NN which\_WDT separates\_VBZ our\_PRP$ grounds\_NNS from\_IN those\_DT of\_IN the\_DT deserted\_VBN house\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP ran\_VBD back\_RB at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, told\_VBD the\_DT watchman\_NN to\_TO get\_VB three\_CD or\_CC four\_CD men\_NNS immediately\_RB and\_CC follow\_VB me\_PRP into\_IN the\_DT grounds\_NNS of\_IN Carfax\_NNP ,\_, in\_IN case\_NN our\_PRP$ friend\_NN might\_MD be\_VB dangerous\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP got\_VBD a\_DT ladder\_NN myself\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC crossing\_VBG the\_DT wall\_NN ,\_, dropped\_VBD down\_RP on\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ side\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB Renfield\_NNP 's\_POS figure\_NN just\_RB disappearing\_VBG behind\_IN the\_DT angle\_NN of\_IN the\_DT house\_NN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP ran\_VBD after\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

On\_IN the\_DT far\_JJ side\_NN of\_IN the\_DT house\_NN I\_PRP found\_VBD him\_PRP pressed\_VBN close\_RB against\_IN the\_DT old\_JJ ironbound\_JJ oak\_NN door\_NN of\_IN the\_DT chapel\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD talking\_VBG ,\_, apparently\_RB to\_TO some\_DT one\_CD ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP was\_VBD afraid\_JJ to\_TO go\_VB near\_RB enough\_RB to\_TO hear\_VB what\_WP he\_PRP was\_VBD saying\_VBG ,\_, lest\_IN I\_PRP might\_MD frighten\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP should\_MD run\_VB off\_RP .\_.

Chasing\_VBG an\_DT errant\_JJ swarm\_NN of\_IN bees\_NNS is\_VBZ nothing\_NN to\_TO following\_VBG a\_DT naked\_JJ lunatic\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB the\_DT fit\_NN of\_IN escaping\_VBG is\_VBZ upon\_IN him\_PRP !\_.

After\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ minutes\_NNS ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB take\_VB note\_NN of\_IN anything\_NN around\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB ventured\_VBD to\_TO draw\_VB nearer\_IN to\_TO him\_PRP --\_: the\_DT more\_RBR so\_RB as\_IN my\_PRP$ men\_NNS had\_VBD now\_RB crossed\_VBN the\_DT wall\_NN and\_CC were\_VBD closing\_VBG him\_PRP in\_IN .\_.

I\_PRP heard\_VBD him\_PRP say\_VB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP am\_VBP here\_RB to\_TO do\_VB Your\_PRP$ bidding\_NN ,\_, Master\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP Your\_PRP$ slave\_NN ,\_, and\_CC You\_PRP will\_MD reward\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB faithful\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP worshipped\_VBN You\_PRP long\_RB and\_CC afar\_VB off\_RP .\_.

Now\_RB that\_IN You\_PRP are\_VBP near\_IN ,\_, I\_PRP await\_VBP Your\_PRP$ commands\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC You\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB pass\_VB me\_PRP by\_IN ,\_, will\_MD You\_PRP ,\_, dear\_RB Master\_NNP ,\_, in\_IN Your\_PRP$ distribution\_NN of\_IN good\_JJ things\_NNS ?\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT selfish\_JJ old\_JJ beggar\_NN anyhow\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP thinks\_VBZ of\_IN the\_DT loaves\_NNS and\_CC fishes\_NNS even\_RB when\_WRB he\_PRP believes\_VBZ he\_PRP is\_VBZ in\_IN a\_DT Real\_JJ Presence\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ manias\_NNS make\_VBP a\_DT startling\_JJ combination\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP closed\_VBD in\_RP on\_IN him\_PRP he\_PRP fought\_VBD like\_IN a\_DT tiger\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ immensely\_RB strong\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD more\_JJR like\_IN a\_DT wild\_JJ beast\_NN than\_IN a\_DT man\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP never\_RB saw\_VBD a\_DT lunatic\_NN in\_IN such\_JJ a\_DT paroxysm\_NN of\_IN rage\_NN before\_IN ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP hope\_VBP I\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB again\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT mercy\_NN that\_IN we\_PRP have\_VBP found\_VBN out\_RP his\_PRP$ strength\_NN and\_CC his\_PRP$ danger\_NN in\_IN good\_JJ time\_NN .\_.

With\_IN strength\_NN and\_CC determination\_NN like\_IN his\_PRP$ ,\_, he\_PRP might\_MD have\_VB done\_VBN wild\_JJ work\_NN before\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD caged\_VBN .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ safe\_JJ now\_RB at\_IN any\_DT rate\_NN .\_.

Jack\_NNP Sheppard\_NNP himself\_PRP could\_MD n't\_RB get\_VB free\_JJ from\_IN the\_DT strait-waistcoat\_NN that\_WDT keeps\_VBZ him\_PRP restrained\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP 's\_VBZ chained\_JJ to\_TO the\_DT wall\_NN in\_IN the\_DT padded\_JJ room\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ cries\_VBZ are\_VBP at\_IN times\_NNS awful\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT silences\_NNS that\_WDT follow\_VBP are\_VBP more\_RBR deadly\_JJ still\_RB ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP means\_VBZ murder\_NN in\_IN every\_DT turn\_NN and\_CC movement\_NN .\_.

Just\_RB now\_RB he\_PRP spoke\_VBD coherent\_JJ words\_NNS for\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ time\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB patient\_NN ,\_, Master\_NNP .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ coming\_VBG --\_: coming\_VBG --\_: coming\_VBG !\_. ''\_''

So\_RB I\_PRP took\_VBD the\_DT hint\_NN ,\_, and\_CC came\_VBD too\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD too\_RB excited\_JJ to\_TO sleep\_VB ,\_, but\_CC this\_DT diary\_NN has\_VBZ quieted\_VBN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP feel\_VBP I\_PRP shall\_MD get\_VB some\_DT sleep\_NN to-night\_NN .\_.

CHAPTER\_NN IX\_CD Letter\_NNP ,\_, Mina\_NNP Harker\_NNP to\_TO Lucy\_NNP Westenra\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` Buda-Pesth\_NNP ,\_, 24\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` My\_PRP$ dearest\_JJ Lucy\_NNP ,\_, --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP know\_VBP you\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB anxious\_JJ to\_TO hear\_VB all\_DT that\_WDT has\_VBZ happened\_VBN since\_IN we\_PRP parted\_VBD at\_IN the\_DT railway\_NN station\_NN at\_IN Whitby\_NNP .\_.

Well\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP got\_VBD to\_TO Hull\_NNP all\_RB right\_RB ,\_, and\_CC caught\_VBD the\_DT boat\_NN to\_TO Hamburg\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB the\_DT train\_NN on\_IN here\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP feel\_VBP that\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD hardly\_RB recall\_VB anything\_NN of\_IN the\_DT journey\_NN ,\_, except\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP knew\_VBD I\_PRP was\_VBD coming\_VBG to\_TO Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, that\_IN as\_IN I\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB to\_TO do\_VB some\_DT nursing\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP had\_VBD better\_RBR get\_VB all\_PDT the\_DT sleep\_NN I\_PRP could\_MD ...\_: .\_.

I\_PRP found\_VBD my\_PRP$ dear\_RB one\_CD ,\_, oh\_UH ,\_, so\_RB thin\_JJ and\_CC pale\_JJ and\_CC weak-looking\_JJ .\_.

All\_PDT the\_DT resolution\_NN has\_VBZ gone\_VBN out\_IN of\_IN his\_PRP$ dear\_RB eyes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN quiet\_JJ dignity\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP told\_VBD you\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN has\_VBZ vanished\_VBN .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ only\_RB a\_DT wreck\_NN of\_IN himself\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP does\_VBZ not\_RB remember\_VB anything\_NN that\_WDT has\_VBZ happened\_VBN to\_TO him\_PRP for\_IN a\_DT long\_JJ time\_NN past\_NN .\_.

At\_IN least\_JJS ,\_, he\_PRP wants\_VBZ me\_PRP to\_TO believe\_VB so\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD never\_RB ask\_VB .\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ had\_VBN some\_DT terrible\_JJ shock\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP fear\_VBP it\_PRP might\_MD tax\_VB his\_PRP$ poor\_JJ brain\_NN if\_IN he\_PRP were\_VBD to\_TO try\_VB to\_TO recall\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

Sister\_NNP Agatha\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP is\_VBZ a\_DT good\_JJ creature\_NN and\_CC a\_DT born\_JJ nurse\_NN ,\_, tells\_VBZ me\_PRP that\_IN he\_PRP raved\_VBD of\_IN dreadful\_JJ things\_NNS whilst\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD off\_RP his\_PRP$ head\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP wanted\_VBD her\_PRP to\_TO tell\_VB me\_PRP what\_WP they\_PRP were\_VBD ;\_: but\_CC she\_PRP would\_MD only\_RB cross\_VB herself\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC say\_VB she\_PRP would\_MD never\_RB tell\_VB ;\_: that\_IN the\_DT ravings\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT sick\_JJ were\_VBD the\_DT secrets\_NNS of\_IN God\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN if\_IN a\_DT nurse\_NN through\_IN her\_PRP$ vocation\_NN should\_MD hear\_VB them\_PRP ,\_, she\_PRP should\_MD respect\_VB her\_PRP$ trust\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT sweet\_JJ ,\_, good\_JJ soul\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT next\_JJ day\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB she\_PRP saw\_VBD I\_PRP was\_VBD troubled\_VBN ,\_, she\_PRP opened\_VBD up\_RP the\_DT subject\_NN again\_RB ,\_, and\_CC after\_IN saying\_VBG that\_IN she\_PRP could\_MD never\_RB mention\_VB what\_WP my\_PRP$ poor\_NN dear\_RB raved\_VBD about\_IN ,\_, added\_VBD :\_: `\_`` I\_PRP can\_MD tell\_VB you\_PRP this\_DT much\_JJ ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB :\_: that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB about\_IN anything\_NN which\_WDT he\_PRP has\_VBZ done\_VBN wrong\_JJ himself\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC you\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN his\_PRP$ wife\_NN to\_TO be\_VB ,\_, have\_VBP no\_DT cause\_NN to\_TO be\_VB concerned\_VBN .\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ not\_RB forgotten\_VBN you\_PRP or\_CC what\_WP he\_PRP owes\_VBZ to\_TO you\_PRP .\_.

His\_PRP$ fear\_NN was\_VBD of\_IN great\_JJ and\_CC terrible\_JJ things\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT no\_DT mortal\_JJ can\_NN treat\_NN of\_IN .\_. '\_''

I\_PRP do\_VBP believe\_VB the\_DT dear\_RB soul\_NN thought\_VBD I\_PRP might\_MD be\_VB jealous\_JJ lest\_IN my\_PRP$ poor\_NN dear\_RB should\_MD have\_VB fallen\_VBN in\_IN love\_NN with\_IN any\_DT other\_JJ girl\_NN .\_.

The\_DT idea\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ being\_VBG jealous\_JJ about\_IN Jonathan\_NNP !\_.

And\_CC yet\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, let\_VB me\_PRP whisper\_VB ,\_, I\_PRP felt\_VBD a\_DT thrill\_NN of\_IN joy\_NN through\_IN me\_PRP when\_WRB I\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN no\_DT other\_JJ woman\_NN was\_VBD a\_DT cause\_NN of\_IN trouble\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP now\_RB sitting\_VBG by\_IN his\_PRP$ bedside\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB I\_PRP can\_MD see\_VB his\_PRP$ face\_NN while\_IN he\_PRP sleeps\_VBZ .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ waking\_VBG !\_.

...\_: ``\_`` When\_WRB he\_PRP woke\_VBD he\_PRP asked\_VBD me\_PRP for\_IN his\_PRP$ coat\_NN ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP wanted\_VBD to\_TO get\_VB something\_NN from\_IN the\_DT pocket\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP asked\_VBD Sister\_NNP Agatha\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP brought\_VBD all\_PDT his\_PRP$ things\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP saw\_VBD that\_IN amongst\_IN them\_PRP was\_VBD his\_PRP$ note-book\_NN ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD going\_VBG to\_TO ask\_VB him\_PRP to\_TO let\_VB me\_PRP look\_VB at\_IN it\_PRP --\_: for\_IN I\_PRP knew\_VBD then\_RB that\_IN I\_PRP might\_MD find\_VB some\_DT clue\_NN to\_TO his\_PRP$ trouble\_NN --\_: but\_CC I\_PRP suppose\_VBP he\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB seen\_VBN my\_PRP$ wish\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP sent\_VBD me\_PRP over\_RP to\_TO the\_DT window\_NN ,\_, saying\_VBG he\_PRP wanted\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB quite\_RB alone\_RB for\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP called\_VBD me\_PRP back\_RB ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB I\_PRP came\_VBD he\_PRP had\_VBD his\_PRP$ hand\_NN over\_IN the\_DT note-book\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP very\_RB solemnly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` `\_`` Wilhelmina\_NNP '\_'' --\_: I\_PRP knew\_VBD then\_RB that\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN deadly\_JJ earnest\_NN ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP has\_VBZ never\_RB called\_VBN me\_PRP by\_IN that\_DT name\_NN since\_IN he\_PRP asked\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO marry\_VB him\_PRP --\_: `\_`` you\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, dear\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ ideas\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT trust\_NN between\_IN husband\_NN and\_CC wife\_NN :\_: there\_EX should\_MD be\_VB no\_DT secret\_NN ,\_, no\_DT concealment\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP had\_VBN a\_DT great\_JJ shock\_NN ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB I\_PRP try\_VBP to\_TO think\_VB of\_IN what\_WP it\_PRP is\_VBZ I\_PRP feel\_VBP my\_PRP$ head\_NN spin\_NN round\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB know\_VB if\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD all\_DT real\_JJ or\_CC the\_DT dreaming\_VBG of\_IN a\_DT madman\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP know\_VBP I\_PRP have\_VBP had\_VBN brain\_NN fever\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_DT is\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB mad\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT secret\_NN is\_VBZ here\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB want\_VB to\_TO know\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP want\_VBP to\_TO take\_VB up\_RP my\_PRP$ life\_NN here\_RB ,\_, with\_IN our\_PRP$ marriage\_NN .\_. '\_''

For\_IN ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP had\_VBD decided\_VBN to\_TO be\_VB married\_VBN as\_RB soon\_RB as\_IN the\_DT formalities\_NNS are\_VBP complete\_JJ .\_.

`\_`` Are\_VBP you\_PRP willing\_JJ ,\_, Wilhelmina\_NNP ,\_, to\_TO share\_VB my\_PRP$ ignorance\_NN ?\_.

Here\_RB is\_VBZ the\_DT book\_NN .\_.

Take\_VB it\_PRP and\_CC keep\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, read\_VB it\_PRP if\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD ,\_, but\_CC never\_RB let\_VB me\_PRP know\_VB ;\_: unless\_IN ,\_, indeed\_RB ,\_, some\_DT solemn\_JJ duty\_NN should\_MD come\_VB upon\_IN me\_PRP to\_TO go\_VB back\_RB to\_TO the\_DT bitter\_JJ hours\_NNS ,\_, asleep\_JJ or\_CC awake\_JJ ,\_, sane\_JJ or\_CC mad\_JJ ,\_, recorded\_VBN here\_RB .\_. '\_''

He\_PRP fell\_VBD back\_RB exhausted\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP put\_VBD the\_DT book\_NN under\_IN his\_PRP$ pillow\_NN ,\_, and\_CC kissed\_VBD him\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP asked\_VBN Sister\_NNP Agatha\_NNP to\_TO beg\_VB the\_DT Superior\_NNP to\_TO let\_VB our\_PRP$ wedding\_NN be\_VB this\_DT afternoon\_NN ,\_, and\_CC am\_RB waiting\_VBG her\_PRP$ reply\_NN ...\_: ``\_`` She\_PRP has\_VBZ come\_VBN and\_CC told\_VBD me\_PRP that\_IN the\_DT chaplain\_NN of\_IN the\_DT English\_JJ mission\_NN church\_NN has\_VBZ been\_VBN sent\_VBN for\_IN .\_.

We\_PRP are\_VBP to\_TO be\_VB married\_VBN in\_IN an\_DT hour\_NN ,\_, or\_CC as\_RB soon\_RB after\_IN as\_IN Jonathan\_NNP awakes\_VBZ ...\_: ``\_`` Lucy\_NNP ,\_, the\_DT time\_NN has\_VBZ come\_VBN and\_CC gone\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP feel\_VBP very\_RB solemn\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC very\_RB ,\_, very\_RB happy\_JJ .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP woke\_VBD a\_DT little\_JJ after\_IN the\_DT hour\_NN ,\_, and\_CC all\_DT was\_VBD ready\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP sat\_VBD up\_RP in\_IN bed\_NN ,\_, propped\_VBD up\_RP with\_IN pillows\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP answered\_VBD his\_PRP$ `\_`` I\_PRP will\_MD '\_'' firmly\_RB and\_CC strongly\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD hardly\_RB speak\_VB ;\_: my\_PRP$ heart\_NN was\_VBD so\_RB full\_JJ that\_IN even\_RB those\_DT words\_NNS seemed\_VBD to\_TO choke\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT dear\_RB sisters\_NNS were\_VBD so\_RB kind\_JJ .\_.

Please\_VB God\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP shall\_MD never\_RB ,\_, never\_RB forget\_VB them\_PRP ,\_, nor\_CC the\_DT grave\_JJ and\_CC sweet\_JJ responsibilities\_NNS I\_PRP have\_VBP taken\_VBN upon\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD tell\_VB you\_PRP of\_IN my\_PRP$ wedding\_NN present\_JJ .\_.

When\_WRB the\_DT chaplain\_NN and\_CC the\_DT sisters\_NNS had\_VBD left\_VBN me\_PRP alone\_RB with\_IN my\_PRP$ husband\_NN --\_: oh\_UH ,\_, Lucy\_NNP ,\_, it\_PRP is\_VBZ the\_DT first\_JJ time\_NN I\_PRP have\_VBP written\_VBN the\_DT words\_NNS `\_`` my\_PRP$ husband\_NN '\_'' --\_: left\_VBD me\_PRP alone\_RB with\_IN my\_PRP$ husband\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP took\_VBD the\_DT book\_NN from\_IN under\_IN his\_PRP$ pillow\_NN ,\_, and\_CC wrapped\_VBD it\_PRP up\_RP in\_IN white\_JJ paper\_NN ,\_, and\_CC tied\_VBD it\_PRP with\_IN a\_DT little\_JJ bit\_NN of\_IN pale\_JJ blue\_JJ ribbon\_NN which\_WDT was\_VBD round\_JJ my\_PRP$ neck\_NN ,\_, and\_CC sealed\_VBD it\_PRP over\_IN the\_DT knot\_NN with\_IN sealing-wax\_NN ,\_, and\_CC for\_IN my\_PRP$ seal\_NN I\_PRP used\_VBD my\_PRP$ wedding\_NN ring\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB I\_PRP kissed\_VBD it\_PRP and\_CC showed\_VBD it\_PRP to\_TO my\_PRP$ husband\_NN ,\_, and\_CC told\_VBD him\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP would\_MD keep\_VB it\_PRP so\_RB ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB it\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB an\_DT outward\_JJ and\_CC visible\_JJ sign\_NN for\_IN us\_PRP all\_PDT our\_PRP$ lives\_NNS that\_IN we\_PRP trusted\_VBD each\_DT other\_JJ ;\_: that\_IN I\_PRP would\_MD never\_RB open\_VB it\_PRP unless\_IN it\_PRP were\_VBD for\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ dear\_RB sake\_NN or\_CC for\_IN the\_DT sake\_NN of\_IN some\_DT stern\_JJ duty\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP took\_VBD my\_PRP$ hand\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ ,\_, and\_CC oh\_UH ,\_, Lucy\_NNP ,\_, it\_PRP was\_VBD the\_DT first\_JJ time\_NN he\_PRP took\_VBD his\_PRP$ wife\_NN 's\_POS hand\_NN ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD the\_DT dearest\_JJS thing\_NN in\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT wide\_JJ world\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN he\_PRP would\_MD go\_VB through\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT past\_NN again\_RB to\_TO win\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, if\_IN need\_NN be\_VB .\_.

The\_DT poor\_NN dear\_RB meant\_VBD to\_TO have\_VB said\_VBD a\_DT part\_NN of\_IN the\_DT past\_NN ,\_, but\_CC he\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB think\_VB of\_IN time\_NN yet\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB wonder\_VB if\_IN at\_IN first\_JJ he\_PRP mixes\_VBZ up\_RP not\_RB only\_RB the\_DT month\_NN ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT year\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Well\_UH ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, what\_WP could\_MD I\_PRP say\_VB ?\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD only\_RB tell\_VB him\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD the\_DT happiest\_JJS woman\_NN in\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT wide\_JJ world\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD nothing\_NN to\_TO give\_VB him\_PRP except\_IN myself\_PRP ,\_, my\_PRP$ life\_NN ,\_, and\_CC my\_PRP$ trust\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN with\_IN these\_DT went\_VBD my\_PRP$ love\_NN and\_CC duty\_NN for\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT days\_NNS of\_IN my\_PRP$ life\_NN .\_.

And\_CC ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB he\_PRP kissed\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC drew\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO him\_PRP with\_IN his\_PRP$ poor\_JJ weak\_JJ hands\_NNS ,\_, it\_PRP was\_VBD like\_IN a\_DT very\_RB solemn\_JJ pledge\_NN between\_IN us\_PRP ...\_: ``\_`` Lucy\_NNP dear\_RB ,\_, do\_VBP you\_PRP know\_VB why\_WRB I\_PRP tell\_VBP you\_PRP all\_PDT this\_DT ?\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB only\_RB because\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ all\_DT sweet\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC because\_IN you\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC are\_VBP ,\_, very\_RB dear\_RB to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD my\_PRP$ privilege\_NN to\_TO be\_VB your\_PRP$ friend\_NN and\_CC guide\_NN when\_WRB you\_PRP came\_VBD from\_IN the\_DT schoolroom\_NN to\_TO prepare\_VB for\_IN the\_DT world\_NN of\_IN life\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP want\_VBP you\_PRP to\_TO see\_VB now\_RB ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN the\_DT eyes\_NNS of\_IN a\_DT very\_RB happy\_JJ wife\_NN ,\_, whither\_NN duty\_NN has\_VBZ led\_VBN me\_PRP ;\_: so\_RB that\_IN in\_IN your\_PRP$ own\_JJ married\_JJ life\_NN you\_PRP too\_RB may\_MD be\_VB all\_DT happy\_JJ as\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP .\_.

My\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, please\_VB Almighty\_NNP God\_NNP ,\_, your\_PRP$ life\_NN may\_MD be\_VB all\_DT it\_PRP promises\_VBZ :\_: a\_DT long\_JJ day\_NN of\_IN sunshine\_NN ,\_, with\_IN no\_DT harsh\_JJ wind\_NN ,\_, no\_DT forgetting\_VBG duty\_NN ,\_, no\_DT distrust\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB wish\_VB you\_PRP no\_DT pain\_NN ,\_, for\_IN that\_DT can\_MD never\_RB be\_VB ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP do\_VBP hope\_VB you\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB always\_RB as\_RB happy\_JJ as\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP now\_RB .\_.

Good-bye\_JJ ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD post\_VB this\_DT at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, perhaps\_RB ,\_, write\_VB you\_PRP very\_RB soon\_RB again\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD stop\_VB ,\_, for\_IN Jonathan\_NNP is\_VBZ waking\_VBG --\_: I\_PRP must\_MD attend\_VB to\_TO my\_PRP$ husband\_NN !\_.

``\_`` Your\_PRP$ ever-loving\_JJ ``\_`` Mina\_NNP Harker\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

Letter\_NNP ,\_, Lucy\_NNP Westenra\_NNP to\_TO Mina\_NNP Harker\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` Whitby\_NNP ,\_, 30\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` My\_PRP$ dearest\_JJ Mina\_NNP ,\_, --\_: ``\_`` Oceans\_NNS of\_IN love\_NN and\_CC millions\_NNS of\_IN kisses\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC may\_MD you\_PRP soon\_RB be\_VB in\_IN your\_PRP$ own\_JJ home\_NN with\_IN your\_PRP$ husband\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP wish\_VBP you\_PRP could\_MD be\_VB coming\_VBG home\_RB soon\_RB enough\_JJ to\_TO stay\_VB with\_IN us\_PRP here\_RB .\_.

The\_DT strong\_JJ air\_NN would\_MD soon\_RB restore\_VB Jonathan\_NNP ;\_: it\_PRP has\_VBZ quite\_RB restored\_VBN me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP an\_DT appetite\_NN like\_IN a\_DT cormorant\_NN ,\_, am\_VBP full\_JJ of\_IN life\_NN ,\_, and\_CC sleep\_VB well\_RB .\_.

You\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB glad\_JJ to\_TO know\_VB that\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP quite\_RB given\_VBN up\_RP walking\_VBG in\_IN my\_PRP$ sleep\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP think\_VBP I\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB stirred\_VBN out\_IN of\_IN my\_PRP$ bed\_NN for\_IN a\_DT week\_NN ,\_, that\_WDT is\_VBZ when\_WRB I\_PRP once\_RB got\_VBD into\_IN it\_PRP at\_IN night\_NN .\_.

Arthur\_NNP says\_VBZ I\_PRP am\_VBP getting\_VBG fat\_NN .\_.

By\_IN the\_DT way\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP forgot\_VBD to\_TO tell\_VB you\_PRP that\_IN Arthur\_NNP is\_VBZ here\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP such\_JJ walks\_VBZ and\_CC drives\_VBZ ,\_, and\_CC rides\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC rowing\_NN ,\_, and\_CC tennis\_NN ,\_, and\_CC fishing\_NN together\_RB ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP love\_VBP him\_PRP more\_RBR than\_IN ever\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP tells\_VBZ me\_PRP that\_IN he\_PRP loves\_VBZ me\_PRP more\_JJR ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP doubt\_VBP that\_IN ,\_, for\_IN at\_IN first\_RB he\_PRP told\_VBD me\_PRP that\_IN he\_PRP could\_MD n't\_RB love\_VB me\_PRP more\_RBR than\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD then\_RB .\_.

But\_CC this\_DT is\_VBZ nonsense\_NN .\_.

There\_EX he\_PRP is\_VBZ ,\_, calling\_VBG to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

So\_RB no\_DT more\_RBR just\_RB at\_IN present\_JJ from\_IN your\_PRP$ loving\_JJ ``\_`` Lucy\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` P.\_NNP S.\_NNP --\_: Mother\_NNP sends\_VBZ her\_PRP$ love\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP seems\_VBZ better\_JJR ,\_, poor\_JJ dear\_RB .\_.

``\_`` P.\_NNP P.\_NNP S.\_NNP --\_: We\_PRP are\_VBP to\_TO be\_VB married\_VBN on\_IN 28\_CD September\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

20\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

--\_: The\_DT case\_NN of\_IN Renfield\_NNP grows\_VBZ even\_RB more\_RBR interesting\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ now\_RB so\_RB far\_RB quieted\_VBN that\_IN there\_EX are\_VBP spells\_NNS of\_IN cessation\_NN from\_IN his\_PRP$ passion\_NN .\_.

For\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ week\_NN after\_IN his\_PRP$ attack\_NN he\_PRP was\_VBD perpetually\_RB violent\_JJ .\_.

Then\_RB one\_CD night\_NN ,\_, just\_RB as\_IN the\_DT moon\_NN rose\_VBD ,\_, he\_PRP grew\_VBD quiet\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC kept\_VBD murmuring\_VBG to\_TO himself\_PRP :\_: ``\_`` Now\_RB I\_PRP can\_MD wait\_VB ;\_: now\_RB I\_PRP can\_MD wait\_VB .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT attendant\_NN came\_VBD to\_TO tell\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP ran\_VBD down\_RB at\_IN once\_RB to\_TO have\_VB a\_DT look\_NN at\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD still\_RB in\_IN the\_DT strait-waistcoat\_NN and\_CC in\_IN the\_DT padded\_JJ room\_NN ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT suffused\_JJ look\_NN had\_VBD gone\_VBN from\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS had\_VBD something\_NN of\_IN their\_PRP$ old\_JJ pleading\_VBG --\_: I\_PRP might\_MD almost\_RB say\_VB ,\_, ``\_`` cringing\_VBG ''\_'' --\_: softness\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD satisfied\_VBN with\_IN his\_PRP$ present\_JJ condition\_NN ,\_, and\_CC directed\_VBD him\_PRP to\_TO be\_VB relieved\_VBN .\_.

The\_DT attendants\_NNS hesitated\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC finally\_RB carried\_VBD out\_RP my\_PRP$ wishes\_NNS without\_IN protest\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT strange\_JJ thing\_NN that\_IN the\_DT patient\_NN had\_VBD humour\_NN enough\_JJ to\_TO see\_VB their\_PRP$ distrust\_VB ,\_, for\_IN ,\_, coming\_VBG close\_RB to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT whisper\_NN ,\_, all\_PDT the\_DT while\_NN looking\_VBG furtively\_RB at\_IN them\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` They\_PRP think\_VBP I\_PRP could\_MD hurt\_VB you\_PRP !\_.

Fancy\_VB me\_PRP hurting\_VBG you\_PRP !\_.

The\_DT fools\_NNS !\_. ''\_''

It\_PRP was\_VBD soothing\_JJ ,\_, somehow\_RB ,\_, to\_TO the\_DT feelings\_NNS to\_TO find\_VB myself\_PRP dissociated\_VBD even\_RB in\_IN the\_DT mind\_NN of\_IN this\_DT poor\_JJ madman\_NN from\_IN the\_DT others\_NNS ;\_: but\_CC all\_PDT the\_DT same\_JJ I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB follow\_VB his\_PRP$ thought\_NN .\_.

Am\_VBP I\_PRP to\_TO take\_VB it\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP anything\_NN in\_IN common\_JJ with\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN we\_PRP are\_VBP ,\_, as\_IN it\_PRP were\_VBD ,\_, to\_TO stand\_VB together\_RB ;\_: or\_CC has\_VBZ he\_PRP to\_TO gain\_VB from\_IN me\_PRP some\_DT good\_JJ so\_RB stupendous\_JJ that\_IN my\_PRP$ well-being\_NN is\_VBZ needful\_JJ to\_TO him\_PRP ?\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD find\_VB out\_RP later\_RB on\_RB .\_.

To-night\_JJ he\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB speak\_VB .\_.

Even\_RB the\_DT offer\_NN of\_IN a\_DT kitten\_NN or\_CC even\_RB a\_DT full-grown\_JJ cat\_NN will\_MD not\_RB tempt\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP will\_MD only\_RB say\_VB :\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB take\_VB any\_DT stock\_NN in\_IN cats\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP more\_JJR to\_TO think\_VB of\_IN now\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP can\_MD wait\_VB ;\_: I\_PRP can\_MD wait\_VB .\_. ''\_''

After\_IN a\_DT while\_NN I\_PRP left\_VBD him\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT attendant\_NN tells\_VBZ me\_PRP that\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD quiet\_JJ until\_IN just\_RB before\_IN dawn\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN then\_RB he\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO get\_VB uneasy\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC at\_IN length\_NN violent\_JJ ,\_, until\_IN at\_IN last\_JJ he\_PRP fell\_VBD into\_IN a\_DT paroxysm\_NN which\_WDT exhausted\_VBD him\_PRP so\_RB that\_IN he\_PRP swooned\_VBD into\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN coma\_NN .\_.

...\_: Three\_CD nights\_NNS has\_VBZ the\_DT same\_JJ thing\_NN happened\_VBD --\_: violent\_JJ all\_DT day\_NN then\_RB quiet\_JJ from\_IN moonrise\_NN to\_TO sunrise\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP wish\_VBP I\_PRP could\_MD get\_VB some\_DT clue\_NN to\_TO the\_DT cause\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP would\_MD almost\_RB seem\_VB as\_IN if\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD some\_DT influence\_NN which\_WDT came\_VBD and\_CC went\_VBD .\_.

Happy\_JJ thought\_NN !\_.

We\_PRP shall\_MD to-night\_RB play\_VB sane\_JJ wits\_NNS against\_IN mad\_JJ ones\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP escaped\_VBD before\_RB without\_IN our\_PRP$ help\_NN ;\_: to-night\_NN he\_PRP shall\_MD escape\_VB with\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

We\_PRP shall\_MD give\_VB him\_PRP a\_DT chance\_NN ,\_, and\_CC have\_VBP the\_DT men\_NNS ready\_JJ to\_TO follow\_VB in\_IN case\_NN they\_PRP are\_VBP required\_VBN ...\_: 23\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

--\_: ``\_`` The\_DT unexpected\_JJ always\_RB happens\_VBZ .\_. ''\_''

How\_WRB well\_RB Disraeli\_NNP knew\_VBD life\_NN .\_.

Our\_PRP$ bird\_NN when\_WRB he\_PRP found\_VBD the\_DT cage\_NN open\_JJ would\_MD not\_RB fly\_VB ,\_, so\_RB all\_PDT our\_PRP$ subtle\_JJ arrangements\_NNS were\_VBD for\_IN nought\_NN .\_.

At\_IN any\_DT rate\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP have\_VBP proved\_VBN one\_CD thing\_NN ;\_: that\_IN the\_DT spells\_NNS of\_IN quietness\_NN last\_VBP a\_DT reasonable\_JJ time\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP shall\_MD in\_IN future\_NN be\_VB able\_JJ to\_TO ease\_VB his\_PRP$ bonds\_NNS for\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ hours\_NNS each\_DT day\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP given\_VBN orders\_NNS to\_TO the\_DT night\_NN attendant\_NN merely\_RB to\_TO shut\_VB him\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT padded\_JJ room\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB once\_RB he\_PRP is\_VBZ quiet\_JJ ,\_, until\_IN an\_DT hour\_NN before\_IN sunrise\_NN .\_.

The\_DT poor\_JJ soul\_NN 's\_POS body\_NN will\_MD enjoy\_VB the\_DT relief\_NN even\_RB if\_IN his\_PRP$ mind\_NN can\_MD not\_RB appreciate\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

Hark\_NN !\_.

The\_DT unexpected\_JJ again\_RB !\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP called\_VBN ;\_: the\_DT patient\_NN has\_VBZ once\_RB more\_RBR escaped\_VBN .\_.

Later\_RB .\_.

--\_: Another\_DT night\_NN adventure\_NN .\_.

Renfield\_NNP artfully\_RB waited\_VBD until\_IN the\_DT attendant\_NN was\_VBD entering\_VBG the\_DT room\_NN to\_TO inspect\_VB .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP dashed\_VBD out\_RP past\_IN him\_PRP and\_CC flew\_VBD down\_RP the\_DT passage\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP sent\_VBD word\_NN for\_IN the\_DT attendants\_NNS to\_TO follow\_VB .\_.

Again\_RB he\_PRP went\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT grounds\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT deserted\_VBN house\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP found\_VBD him\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ place\_NN ,\_, pressed\_VBN against\_IN the\_DT old\_JJ chapel\_NN door\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB he\_PRP saw\_VBD me\_PRP he\_PRP became\_VBD furious\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC had\_VBD not\_RB the\_DT attendants\_NNS seized\_VBD him\_PRP in\_IN time\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB tried\_VBN to\_TO kill\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

As\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD holding\_VBG him\_PRP a\_DT strange\_JJ thing\_NN happened\_VBD .\_.

He\_PRP suddenly\_RB redoubled\_VBD his\_PRP$ efforts\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB as\_RB suddenly\_RB grew\_VBD calm\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP looked\_VBD round\_NN instinctively\_RB ,\_, but\_CC could\_MD see\_VB nothing\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB I\_PRP caught\_VBD the\_DT patient\_NN 's\_POS eye\_NN and\_CC followed\_VBD it\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC could\_MD trace\_VB nothing\_NN as\_IN it\_PRP looked\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT moonlit\_JJ sky\_NN except\_IN a\_DT big\_JJ bat\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT was\_VBD flapping\_VBG its\_PRP$ silent\_JJ and\_CC ghostly\_JJ way\_NN to\_TO the\_DT west\_NN .\_.

Bats\_NNS usually\_RB wheel\_NN and\_CC flit\_NN about\_IN ,\_, but\_CC this\_DT one\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO go\_VB straight\_RB on\_RB ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN it\_PRP knew\_VBD where\_WRB it\_PRP was\_VBD bound\_VBN for\_IN or\_CC had\_VBD some\_DT intention\_NN of\_IN its\_PRP$ own\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT patient\_NN grew\_VBD calmer\_JJR every\_DT instant\_NN ,\_, and\_CC presently\_RB said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP need\_VBP n't\_RB tie\_VB me\_PRP ;\_: I\_PRP shall\_MD go\_VB quietly\_RB !\_. ''\_''

Without\_IN trouble\_NN we\_PRP came\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO the\_DT house\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP feel\_VBP there\_EX is\_VBZ something\_NN ominous\_JJ in\_IN his\_PRP$ calm\_NN ,\_, and\_CC shall\_MD not\_RB forget\_VB this\_DT night\_NN ...\_: .\_.

Lucy\_NNP Westenra\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP Hillingham\_NNP ,\_, 24\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP must\_MD imitate\_VB Mina\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC keep\_VB writing\_VBG things\_NNS down\_RP .\_.

Then\_RB we\_PRP can\_MD have\_VB long\_JJ talks\_NNS when\_WRB we\_PRP do\_VBP meet\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP wonder\_VBP when\_WRB it\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP wish\_VBP she\_PRP were\_VBD with\_IN me\_PRP again\_RB ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP feel\_VBP so\_RB unhappy\_JJ .\_.

Last\_JJ night\_NN I\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB dreaming\_VBG again\_RB just\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD at\_IN Whitby\_NNP .\_.

Perhaps\_RB it\_PRP is\_VBZ the\_DT change\_NN of\_IN air\_NN ,\_, or\_CC getting\_VBG home\_NN again\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ all\_DT dark\_JJ and\_CC horrid\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD remember\_VB nothing\_NN ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP full\_JJ of\_IN vague\_JJ fear\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP feel\_VBP so\_RB weak\_JJ and\_CC worn\_VBN out\_RP .\_.

When\_WRB Arthur\_NNP came\_VBD to\_TO lunch\_VB he\_PRP looked\_VBD quite\_RB grieved\_VBN when\_WRB he\_PRP saw\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP had\_VBD n't\_RB the\_DT spirit\_NN to\_TO try\_VB to\_TO be\_VB cheerful\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP wonder\_VBP if\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD sleep\_VB in\_IN mother\_NN 's\_POS room\_NN to-night\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD make\_VB an\_DT excuse\_NN and\_CC try\_NN .\_.

25\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Another\_DT bad\_JJ night\_NN .\_.

Mother\_NNP did\_VBD not\_RB seem\_VB to\_TO take\_VB to\_TO my\_PRP$ proposal\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP seems\_VBZ not\_RB too\_RB well\_RB herself\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC doubtless\_VBZ she\_PRP fears\_VBZ to\_TO worry\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP tried\_VBD to\_TO keep\_VB awake\_RB ,\_, and\_CC succeeded\_VBD for\_IN a\_DT while\_NN ;\_: but\_CC when\_WRB the\_DT clock\_NN struck\_VBD twelve\_CD it\_PRP waked\_VBD me\_PRP from\_IN a\_DT doze\_NN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN falling\_VBG asleep\_RB .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN scratching\_VBG or\_CC flapping\_VBG at\_IN the\_DT window\_NN ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB mind\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN I\_PRP remember\_VBP no\_DT more\_JJR ,\_, I\_PRP suppose\_VBP I\_PRP must\_MD then\_RB have\_VB fallen\_VBN asleep\_RB .\_.

More\_JJR bad\_JJ dreams\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP wish\_VBP I\_PRP could\_MD remember\_VB them\_PRP .\_.

This\_DT morning\_NN I\_PRP am\_VBP horribly\_RB weak\_JJ .\_.

My\_PRP$ face\_NN is\_VBZ ghastly\_JJ pale\_NN ,\_, and\_CC my\_PRP$ throat\_NN pains\_NNS me\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB something\_NN wrong\_JJ with\_IN my\_PRP$ lungs\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB seem\_VB ever\_RB to\_TO get\_VB air\_NN enough\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD try\_VB to\_TO cheer\_VB up\_RP when\_WRB Arthur\_NNP comes\_VBZ ,\_, or\_CC else\_RB I\_PRP know\_VBP he\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB miserable\_JJ to\_TO see\_VB me\_PRP so\_RB .\_.

Letter\_NNP ,\_, Arthur\_NNP Holmwood\_NNP to\_TO Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` Albemarle\_NNP Hotel\_NNP ,\_, 31\_CD August\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` My\_PRP$ dear\_RB Jack\_NNP ,\_, --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP want\_VBP you\_PRP to\_TO do\_VB me\_PRP a\_DT favour\_NN .\_.

Lucy\_NNP is\_VBZ ill\_JJ ;\_: that\_DT is\_VBZ ,\_, she\_PRP has\_VBZ no\_DT special\_JJ disease\_NN ,\_, but\_CC she\_PRP looks\_VBZ awful\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC is\_VBZ getting\_VBG worse\_JJR every\_DT day\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP asked\_VBN her\_PRP if\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ any\_DT cause\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB dare\_VB to\_TO ask\_VB her\_PRP$ mother\_NN ,\_, for\_IN to\_TO disturb\_VB the\_DT poor\_JJ lady\_NN 's\_POS mind\_NN about\_IN her\_PRP$ daughter\_NN in\_IN her\_PRP$ present\_JJ state\_NN of\_IN health\_NN would\_MD be\_VB fatal\_JJ .\_.

Mrs.\_NNP Westenra\_NNP has\_VBZ confided\_VBN to\_TO me\_PRP that\_IN her\_PRP$ doom\_NN is\_VBZ spoken\_VBN --\_: disease\_NN of\_IN the\_DT heart\_NN --\_: though\_IN poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP does\_VBZ not\_RB know\_VB it\_PRP yet\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP sure\_JJ that\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ something\_NN preying\_VBG on\_IN my\_PRP$ dear\_RB girl\_NN 's\_POS mind\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP almost\_RB distracted\_VBN when\_WRB I\_PRP think\_VBP of\_IN her\_PRP ;\_: to\_TO look\_VB at\_IN her\_PRP gives\_VBZ me\_PRP a\_DT pang\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP told\_VBD her\_PRP I\_PRP should\_MD ask\_VB you\_PRP to\_TO see\_VB her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC though\_IN she\_PRP demurred\_VBD at\_IN first\_JJ --\_: I\_PRP know\_VBP why\_WRB ,\_, old\_JJ fellow\_NN --\_: she\_PRP finally\_RB consented\_VBD .\_.

It\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB a\_DT painful\_JJ task\_NN for\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, old\_JJ friend\_NN ,\_, but\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ for\_IN her\_PRP$ sake\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB hesitate\_VB to\_TO ask\_VB ,\_, or\_CC you\_PRP to\_TO act\_VB .\_.

You\_PRP are\_VBP to\_TO come\_VB to\_TO lunch\_NN at\_IN Hillingham\_NNP to-morrow\_NN ,\_, two\_CD o'clock\_RB ,\_, so\_RB as\_RB not\_RB to\_TO arouse\_VB any\_DT suspicion\_NN in\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Westenra\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC after\_IN lunch\_NN Lucy\_NNP will\_MD take\_VB an\_DT opportunity\_NN of\_IN being\_VBG alone\_RB with\_IN you\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD come\_VB in\_RP for\_IN tea\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP can\_MD go\_VB away\_RB together\_RB ;\_: I\_PRP am\_VBP filled\_VBN with\_IN anxiety\_NN ,\_, and\_CC want\_VBP to\_TO consult\_VB with\_IN you\_PRP alone\_RB as\_RB soon\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD after\_IN you\_PRP have\_VBP seen\_VBN her\_PRP .\_.

Do\_VBP not\_RB fail\_VB !\_.

``\_`` Arthur\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

Telegram\_NN ,\_, Arthur\_NNP Holmwood\_NNP to\_TO Seward\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` 1\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` Am\_VBP summoned\_VBN to\_TO see\_VB my\_PRP$ father\_NN ,\_, who\_WP is\_VBZ worse\_JJR .\_.

Am\_VBP writing\_NN .\_.

Write\_VB me\_PRP fully\_RB by\_IN to-night\_NN 's\_POS post\_NN to\_TO Ring\_NN .\_.

Wire\_VB me\_PRP if\_IN necessary\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

Letter\_NNP from\_IN Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP to\_TO Arthur\_NNP Holmwood\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` 2\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` My\_PRP$ dear\_RB old\_JJ fellow\_NN ,\_, --\_: ``\_`` With\_IN regard\_NN to\_TO Miss\_NNP Westenra\_NNP 's\_POS health\_NN I\_PRP hasten\_VBP to\_TO let\_VB you\_PRP know\_VB at\_IN once\_RB that\_IN in\_IN my\_PRP$ opinion\_NN there\_EX is\_VBZ not\_RB any\_DT functional\_JJ disturbance\_NN or\_CC any\_DT malady\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP know\_VBP of\_IN .\_.

At\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ time\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB by\_IN any\_DT means\_NNS satisfied\_VBN with\_IN her\_PRP$ appearance\_NN ;\_: she\_PRP is\_VBZ woefully\_RB different\_JJ from\_IN what\_WP she\_PRP was\_VBD when\_WRB I\_PRP saw\_VBD her\_PRP last\_JJ .\_.

Of\_IN course\_NN you\_PRP must\_MD bear\_VB in\_IN mind\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB have\_VB full\_JJ opportunity\_NN of\_IN examination\_NN such\_JJ as\_IN I\_PRP should\_MD wish\_VB ;\_: our\_PRP$ very\_JJ friendship\_NN makes\_VBZ a\_DT little\_JJ difficulty\_NN which\_WDT not\_RB even\_RB medical\_JJ science\_NN or\_CC custom\_NN can\_MD bridge\_VB over\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD better\_RBR tell\_VB you\_PRP exactly\_RB what\_WP happened\_VBD ,\_, leaving\_VBG you\_PRP to\_TO draw\_VB ,\_, in\_IN a\_DT measure\_NN ,\_, your\_PRP$ own\_JJ conclusions\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD then\_RB say\_VB what\_WP I\_PRP have\_VBP done\_VBN and\_CC propose\_VBP doing\_VBG .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP found\_VBD Miss\_NNP Westenra\_NNP in\_IN seemingly\_RB gay\_JJ spirits\_NNS .\_.

Her\_PRP$ mother\_NN was\_VBD present\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ seconds\_NNS I\_PRP made\_VBD up\_RP my\_PRP$ mind\_NN that\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD trying\_VBG all\_DT she\_PRP knew\_VBD to\_TO mislead\_VB her\_PRP$ mother\_NN and\_CC prevent\_VB her\_PRP from\_IN being\_VBG anxious\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP no\_DT doubt\_NN she\_PRP guesses\_VBZ ,\_, if\_IN she\_PRP does\_VBZ not\_RB know\_VB ,\_, what\_WDT need\_NN of\_IN caution\_NN there\_EX is\_VBZ .\_.

We\_PRP lunched\_VBD alone\_RB ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN we\_PRP all\_DT exerted\_VBD ourselves\_PRP to\_TO be\_VB cheerful\_JJ ,\_, we\_PRP got\_VBD ,\_, as\_IN some\_DT kind\_NN of\_IN reward\_NN for\_IN our\_PRP$ labours\_NNS ,\_, some\_DT real\_JJ cheerfulness\_NN amongst\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

Then\_RB Mrs.\_NNP Westenra\_NNP went\_VBD to\_TO lie\_VB down\_RP ,\_, and\_CC Lucy\_NNP was\_VBD left\_VBN with\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

We\_PRP went\_VBD into\_IN her\_PRP$ boudoir\_NN ,\_, and\_CC till\_IN we\_PRP got\_VBD there\_EX her\_PRP$ gaiety\_NN remained\_VBD ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT servants\_NNS were\_VBD coming\_VBG and\_CC going\_VBG .\_.

As\_RB soon\_RB as\_IN the\_DT door\_NN was\_VBD closed\_VBN ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, the\_DT mask\_NN fell\_VBD from\_IN her\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP sank\_VBD down\_RP into\_IN a\_DT chair\_NN with\_IN a\_DT great\_JJ sigh\_NN ,\_, and\_CC hid\_VBD her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS with\_IN her\_PRP$ hand\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP saw\_VBD that\_IN her\_PRP$ high\_JJ spirits\_NNS had\_VBD failed\_VBN ,\_, I\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB took\_VBD advantage\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ reaction\_NN to\_TO make\_VB a\_DT diagnosis\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP very\_RB sweetly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` `\_`` I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB tell\_VB you\_PRP how\_WRB I\_PRP loathe\_VBP talking\_VBG about\_IN myself\_PRP .\_. '\_''

I\_PRP reminded\_VBD her\_PRP that\_IN a\_DT doctor\_NN 's\_POS confidence\_NN was\_VBD sacred\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC that\_IN you\_PRP were\_VBD grievously\_RB anxious\_JJ about\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

She\_PRP caught\_VBD on\_RP to\_TO my\_PRP$ meaning\_NN at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, and\_CC settled\_VBD that\_IN matter\_NN in\_IN a\_DT word\_NN .\_.

`\_`` Tell\_VB Arthur\_NNP everything\_NN you\_PRP choose\_VBP .\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB care\_VB for\_IN myself\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC all\_DT for\_IN him\_PRP !\_. '\_''

So\_RB I\_PRP am\_VBP quite\_RB free\_JJ .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP could\_MD easily\_RB see\_VB that\_IN she\_PRP is\_VBZ somewhat\_RB bloodless\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB see\_VB the\_DT usual\_JJ anæmic\_JJ signs\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC by\_IN a\_DT chance\_NN I\_PRP was\_VBD actually\_RB able\_JJ to\_TO test\_VB the\_DT quality\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ blood\_NN ,\_, for\_IN in\_IN opening\_VBG a\_DT window\_NN which\_WDT was\_VBD stiff\_JJ a\_DT cord\_NN gave\_VBD way\_NN ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP cut\_VBD her\_PRP$ hand\_NN slightly\_RB with\_IN broken\_JJ glass\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT slight\_JJ matter\_NN in\_IN itself\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC it\_PRP gave\_VBD me\_PRP an\_DT evident\_JJ chance\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP secured\_VBD a\_DT few\_JJ drops\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT blood\_NN and\_CC have\_VBP analysed\_VBN them\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT qualitative\_JJ analysis\_NN gives\_VBZ a\_DT quite\_RB normal\_JJ condition\_NN ,\_, and\_CC shows\_VBZ ,\_, I\_PRP should\_MD infer\_VB ,\_, in\_IN itself\_PRP a\_DT vigorous\_JJ state\_NN of\_IN health\_NN .\_.

In\_IN other\_JJ physical\_JJ matters\_NNS I\_PRP was\_VBD quite\_RB satisfied\_JJ that\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT need\_NN for\_IN anxiety\_NN ;\_: but\_CC as\_IN there\_EX must\_MD be\_VB a\_DT cause\_NN somewhere\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP have\_VBP come\_VBN to\_TO the\_DT conclusion\_NN that\_IN it\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB something\_NN mental\_JJ .\_.

She\_PRP complains\_VBZ of\_IN difficulty\_NN in\_IN breathing\_VBG satisfactorily\_RB at\_IN times\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC of\_IN heavy\_JJ ,\_, lethargic\_JJ sleep\_NN ,\_, with\_IN dreams\_NNS that\_WDT frighten\_VBP her\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC regarding\_VBG which\_WDT she\_PRP can\_MD remember\_VB nothing\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP says\_VBZ that\_IN as\_IN a\_DT child\_NN she\_PRP used\_VBD to\_TO walk\_VB in\_IN her\_PRP$ sleep\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN when\_WRB in\_IN Whitby\_NNP the\_DT habit\_NN came\_VBD back\_RB ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN once\_RB she\_PRP walked\_VBD out\_RP in\_IN the\_DT night\_NN and\_CC went\_VBD to\_TO East\_NNP Cliff\_NNP ,\_, where\_WRB Miss\_NNP Murray\_NNP found\_VBD her\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC she\_PRP assures\_VBZ me\_PRP that\_DT of\_IN late\_RB the\_DT habit\_NN has\_VBZ not\_RB returned\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP in\_IN doubt\_NN ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB have\_VB done\_VBN the\_DT best\_JJS thing\_NN I\_PRP know\_VBP of\_IN ;\_: I\_PRP have\_VBP written\_VBN to\_TO my\_PRP$ old\_JJ friend\_NN and\_CC master\_NN ,\_, Professor\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, of\_IN Amsterdam\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP knows\_VBZ as\_RB much\_JJ about\_IN obscure\_JJ diseases\_NNS as\_IN any\_DT one\_CD in\_IN the\_DT world\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP asked\_VBN him\_PRP to\_TO come\_VB over\_RB ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN you\_PRP told\_VBD me\_PRP that\_IN all\_DT things\_NNS were\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB at\_IN your\_PRP$ charge\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP have\_VBP mentioned\_VBN to\_TO him\_PRP who\_WP you\_PRP are\_VBP and\_CC your\_PRP$ relations\_NNS to\_TO Miss\_NNP Westenra\_NNP .\_.

This\_DT ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB fellow\_JJ ,\_, is\_VBZ in\_IN obedience\_NN to\_TO your\_PRP$ wishes\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP only\_RB too\_RB proud\_JJ and\_CC happy\_JJ to\_TO do\_VB anything\_NN I\_PRP can\_MD for\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP would\_MD ,\_, I\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, do\_VBP anything\_NN for\_IN me\_PRP for\_IN a\_DT personal\_JJ reason\_NN ,\_, so\_RB ,\_, no\_DT matter\_NN on\_IN what\_WDT ground\_NN he\_PRP comes\_VBZ ,\_, we\_PRP must\_MD accept\_VB his\_PRP$ wishes\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT seemingly\_RB arbitrary\_JJ man\_NN ,\_, but\_CC this\_DT is\_VBZ because\_IN he\_PRP knows\_VBZ what\_WP he\_PRP is\_VBZ talking\_VBG about\_IN better\_RBR than\_IN any\_DT one\_CD else\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT philosopher\_NN and\_CC a\_DT metaphysician\_NN ,\_, and\_CC one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT most\_RBS advanced\_JJ scientists\_NNS of\_IN his\_PRP$ day\_NN ;\_: and\_CC he\_PRP has\_VBZ ,\_, I\_PRP believe\_VBP ,\_, an\_DT absolutely\_RB open\_JJ mind\_NN .\_.

This\_DT ,\_, with\_IN an\_DT iron\_NN nerve\_NN ,\_, a\_DT temper\_NN of\_IN the\_DT ice-brook\_NN ,\_, an\_DT indomitable\_JJ resolution\_NN ,\_, self-command\_NN ,\_, and\_CC toleration\_NN exalted\_VBN from\_IN virtues\_NNS to\_TO blessings\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT kindliest\_JJS and\_CC truest\_JJS heart\_NN that\_WDT beats\_VBZ --\_: these\_DT form\_VBP his\_PRP$ equipment\_NN for\_IN the\_DT noble\_JJ work\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ doing\_VBG for\_IN mankind\_NN --\_: work\_NN both\_CC in\_IN theory\_NN and\_CC practice\_NN ,\_, for\_IN his\_PRP$ views\_NNS are\_VBP as\_RB wide\_JJ as\_IN his\_PRP$ all-embracing\_JJ sympathy\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP tell\_VBP you\_PRP these\_DT facts\_NNS that\_IN you\_PRP may\_MD know\_VB why\_WRB I\_PRP have\_VBP such\_JJ confidence\_NN in\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP asked\_VBN him\_PRP to\_TO come\_VB at\_IN once\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD see\_VB Miss\_NNP Westenra\_NNP to-morrow\_NN again\_RB .\_.

She\_PRP is\_VBZ to\_TO meet\_VB me\_PRP at\_IN the\_DT Stores\_NNP ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB alarm\_NN her\_PRP$ mother\_NN by\_IN too\_RB early\_RB a\_DT repetition\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ call\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Yours\_NNS always\_RB ,\_, ``\_`` John\_NNP Seward\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

Letter\_NNP ,\_, Abraham\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, M.\_NNP D.\_NNP ,\_, D.\_NNP Ph.\_NNP ,\_, D.\_NNP Lit.\_NNP ,\_, etc.\_NN ,\_, etc.\_NN ,\_, to\_TO Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` 2\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` My\_PRP$ good\_JJ Friend\_NN ,\_, --\_: ``\_`` When\_WRB I\_PRP have\_VBP received\_VBN your\_PRP$ letter\_NN I\_PRP am\_VBP already\_RB coming\_VBG to\_TO you\_PRP .\_.

By\_IN good\_JJ fortune\_NN I\_PRP can\_MD leave\_VB just\_RB at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, without\_IN wrong\_JJ to\_TO any\_DT of\_IN those\_DT who\_WP have\_VBP trusted\_VBN me\_PRP .\_.

Were\_VBD fortune\_NN other\_JJ ,\_, then\_RB it\_PRP were\_VBD bad\_JJ for\_IN those\_DT who\_WP have\_VBP trusted\_VBN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP come\_VBP to\_TO my\_PRP$ friend\_NN when\_WRB he\_PRP call\_VB me\_PRP to\_TO aid\_VB those\_DT he\_PRP holds\_VBZ dear\_RB .\_.

Tell\_VB your\_PRP$ friend\_NN that\_IN when\_WRB that\_DT time\_NN you\_PRP suck\_VBP from\_IN my\_PRP$ wound\_NN so\_RB swiftly\_RB the\_DT poison\_NN of\_IN the\_DT gangrene\_NN from\_IN that\_DT knife\_NN that\_IN our\_PRP$ other\_JJ friend\_NN ,\_, too\_RB nervous\_JJ ,\_, let\_VB slip\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP did\_VBD more\_JJR for\_IN him\_PRP when\_WRB he\_PRP wants\_VBZ my\_PRP$ aids\_NNS and\_CC you\_PRP call\_VBP for\_IN them\_PRP than\_IN all\_PDT his\_PRP$ great\_JJ fortune\_NN could\_MD do\_VB .\_.

But\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ pleasure\_NN added\_VBN to\_TO do\_VB for\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, your\_PRP$ friend\_NN ;\_: it\_PRP is\_VBZ to\_TO you\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP come\_VBP .\_.

Have\_VBP then\_RB rooms\_NNS for\_IN me\_PRP at\_IN the\_DT Great\_NNP Eastern\_NNP Hotel\_NNP ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB near\_JJ to\_TO hand\_NN ,\_, and\_CC please\_VB it\_PRP so\_RB arrange\_VB that\_IN we\_PRP may\_MD see\_VB the\_DT young\_JJ lady\_NN not\_RB too\_RB late\_JJ on\_IN to-morrow\_NN ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ likely\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD have\_VB to\_TO return\_VB here\_RB that\_IN night\_NN .\_.

But\_CC if\_IN need\_MD be\_VB I\_PRP shall\_MD come\_VB again\_RB in\_IN three\_CD days\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC stay\_VB longer\_RBR if\_IN it\_PRP must\_MD .\_.

Till\_IN then\_RB good-bye\_JJ ,\_, my\_PRP$ friend\_NN John\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

Letter\_NNP ,\_, Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP to\_TO Hon.\_NNP Arthur\_NNP Holmwood\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` 3\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` My\_PRP$ dear\_RB Art\_NNP ,\_, --\_: ``\_`` Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP has\_VBZ come\_VBN and\_CC gone\_VBN .\_.

He\_PRP came\_VBD on\_RP with\_IN me\_PRP to\_TO Hillingham\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC found\_VBD that\_IN ,\_, by\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS discretion\_NN ,\_, her\_PRP$ mother\_NN was\_VBD lunching\_VBG out\_RP ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD alone\_RB with\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP made\_VBD a\_DT very\_RB careful\_JJ examination\_NN of\_IN the\_DT patient\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ to\_TO report\_VB to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD advise\_VB you\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN of\_IN course\_NN I\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB present\_JJ all\_PDT the\_DT time\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ ,\_, I\_PRP fear\_VBP ,\_, much\_RB concerned\_VBN ,\_, but\_CC says\_VBZ he\_PRP must\_MD think\_VB .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP told\_VBD him\_PRP of\_IN our\_PRP$ friendship\_NN and\_CC how\_WRB you\_PRP trust\_VBP to\_TO me\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT matter\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: `\_`` You\_PRP must\_MD tell\_VB him\_PRP all\_DT you\_PRP think\_VBP .\_.

Tell\_VB him\_PRP what\_WP I\_PRP think\_VBP ,\_, if\_IN you\_PRP can\_MD guess\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, if\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD .\_.

Nay\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB jesting\_VBG .\_.

This\_DT is\_VBZ no\_DT jest\_NN ,\_, but\_CC life\_NN and\_CC death\_NN ,\_, perhaps\_RB more\_JJR .\_. '\_''

I\_PRP asked\_VBD what\_WP he\_PRP meant\_VBD by\_IN that\_DT ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD very\_RB serious\_JJ .\_.

This\_DT was\_VBD when\_WRB we\_PRP had\_VBD come\_VBN back\_RB to\_TO town\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP was\_VBD having\_VBG a\_DT cup\_NN of\_IN tea\_NN before\_IN starting\_VBG on\_IN his\_PRP$ return\_NN to\_TO Amsterdam\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB give\_VB me\_PRP any\_DT further\_JJ clue\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB be\_VB angry\_JJ with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, Art\_NNP ,\_, because\_IN his\_PRP$ very\_JJ reticence\_NN means\_VBZ that\_IN all\_PDT his\_PRP$ brains\_NNS are\_VBP working\_VBG for\_IN her\_PRP$ good\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP will\_MD speak\_VB plainly\_RB enough\_RB when\_WRB the\_DT time\_NN comes\_VBZ ,\_, be\_VB sure\_JJ .\_.

So\_RB I\_PRP told\_VBD him\_PRP I\_PRP would\_MD simply\_RB write\_VB an\_DT account\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ visit\_NN ,\_, just\_RB as\_IN if\_IN I\_PRP were\_VBD doing\_VBG a\_DT descriptive\_JJ special\_JJ article\_NN for\_IN The\_DT Daily\_NNP Telegraph\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP seemed\_VBD not\_RB to\_TO notice\_VB ,\_, but\_CC remarked\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT smuts\_NNS in\_IN London\_NNP were\_VBD not\_RB quite\_RB so\_RB bad\_JJ as\_IN they\_PRP used\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB when\_WRB he\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT student\_NN here\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP to\_TO get\_VB his\_PRP$ report\_NN to-morrow\_NN if\_IN he\_PRP can\_MD possibly\_RB make\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

In\_IN any\_DT case\_NN I\_PRP am\_VBP to\_TO have\_VB a\_DT letter\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Well\_RB ,\_, as\_IN to\_TO the\_DT visit\_NN .\_.

Lucy\_NNP was\_VBD more\_RBR cheerful\_JJ than\_IN on\_IN the\_DT day\_NN I\_PRP first\_RB saw\_VBD her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC certainly\_RB looked\_VBD better\_RBR .\_.

She\_PRP had\_VBD lost\_VBN something\_NN of\_IN the\_DT ghastly\_JJ look\_NN that\_WDT so\_RB upset\_VB you\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC her\_PRP$ breathing\_NN was\_VBD normal\_JJ .\_.

She\_PRP was\_VBD very\_RB sweet\_JJ to\_TO the\_DT professor\_NN -LRB-\_-LRB- as\_IN she\_PRP always\_RB is\_VBZ -RRB-\_-RRB- ,\_, and\_CC tried\_VBD to\_TO make\_VB him\_PRP feel\_VB at\_IN ease\_NN ;\_: though\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB that\_IN the\_DT poor\_JJ girl\_NN was\_VBD making\_VBG a\_DT hard\_JJ struggle\_NN for\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP believe\_VBP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP saw\_VBD it\_PRP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP saw\_VBD the\_DT quick\_JJ look\_NN under\_IN his\_PRP$ bushy\_JJ brows\_NNS that\_IN I\_PRP knew\_VBD of\_IN old\_JJ .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO chat\_VB of\_IN all\_DT things\_NNS except\_IN ourselves\_PRP and\_CC diseases\_NNS and\_CC with\_IN such\_JJ an\_DT infinite\_JJ geniality\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS pretense\_NN of\_IN animation\_NN merge\_VBP into\_IN reality\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB ,\_, without\_IN any\_DT seeming\_JJ change\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP brought\_VBD the\_DT conversation\_NN gently\_RB round\_JJ to\_TO his\_PRP$ visit\_NN ,\_, and\_CC suavely\_RB said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` `\_`` My\_PRP$ dear\_RB young\_JJ miss\_VBP ,\_, I\_PRP have\_VBP the\_DT so\_RB great\_JJ pleasure\_NN because\_IN you\_PRP are\_VBP so\_RB much\_RB beloved\_JJ .\_.

That\_DT is\_VBZ much\_JJ ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, ever\_RB were\_VBD there\_EX that\_IN which\_WDT I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB see\_VB .\_.

They\_PRP told\_VBD me\_PRP you\_PRP were\_VBD down\_RB in\_IN the\_DT spirit\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN you\_PRP were\_VBD of\_IN a\_DT ghastly\_JJ pale\_NN .\_.

To\_TO them\_PRP I\_PRP say\_VBP :\_: ``\_`` Pouf\_NN !\_. ''\_'' '\_''

And\_CC he\_PRP snapped\_VBD his\_PRP$ fingers\_NNS at\_IN me\_PRP and\_CC went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: `\_`` But\_CC you\_PRP and\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD show\_VB them\_PRP how\_WRB wrong\_JJ they\_PRP are\_VBP .\_.

How\_WRB can\_MD he\_PRP '\_'' --\_: and\_CC he\_PRP pointed\_VBD at\_IN me\_PRP with\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ look\_NN and\_CC gesture\_NN as\_IN that\_DT with\_IN which\_WDT once\_RB he\_PRP pointed\_VBD me\_PRP out\_RP to\_TO his\_PRP$ class\_NN ,\_, on\_IN ,\_, or\_CC rather\_RB after\_IN ,\_, a\_DT particular\_JJ occasion\_NN which\_WDT he\_PRP never\_RB fails\_VBZ to\_TO remind\_VB me\_PRP of\_IN --\_: `\_`` know\_VB anything\_NN of\_IN a\_DT young\_JJ ladies\_NNS ?\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ his\_PRP$ madams\_NNS to\_TO play\_VB with\_IN ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO bring\_VB them\_PRP back\_RB to\_TO happiness\_NN ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO those\_DT that\_WDT love\_VBP them\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ much\_JJ to\_TO do\_VB ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, oh\_UH ,\_, but\_CC there\_EX are\_VBP rewards\_NNS ,\_, in\_IN that\_IN we\_PRP can\_MD bestow\_VB such\_JJ happiness\_NN .\_.

But\_CC the\_DT young\_JJ ladies\_NNS !\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ no\_DT wife\_NN nor\_CC daughter\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT young\_JJ do\_VBP not\_RB tell\_VB themselves\_PRP to\_TO the\_DT young\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC to\_TO the\_DT old\_JJ ,\_, like\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, who\_WP have\_VBP known\_VBN so\_RB many\_JJ sorrows\_NNS and\_CC the\_DT causes\_NNS of\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

So\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP will\_MD send\_VB him\_PRP away\_RB to\_TO smoke\_VB the\_DT cigarette\_NN in\_IN the\_DT garden\_NN ,\_, whiles\_VBZ you\_PRP and\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP little\_JJ talk\_NN all\_DT to\_TO ourselves\_PRP .\_. '\_''

I\_PRP took\_VBD the\_DT hint\_NN ,\_, and\_CC strolled\_VBD about\_IN ,\_, and\_CC presently\_RB the\_DT professor\_NN came\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT window\_NN and\_CC called\_VBD me\_PRP in\_IN .\_.

He\_PRP looked\_VBD grave\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC said\_VBD :\_: `\_`` I\_PRP have\_VBP made\_VBN careful\_JJ examination\_NN ,\_, but\_CC there\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT functional\_JJ cause\_NN .\_.

With\_IN you\_PRP I\_PRP agree\_VBP that\_IN there\_EX has\_VBZ been\_VBN much\_JJ blood\_NN lost\_VBD ;\_: it\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN ,\_, but\_CC is\_VBZ not\_RB .\_.

But\_CC the\_DT conditions\_NNS of\_IN her\_PRP are\_VBP in\_IN no\_DT way\_NN anæmic\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP asked\_VBN her\_PRP to\_TO send\_VB me\_PRP her\_PRP$ maid\_NN ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD ask\_VB just\_RB one\_CD or\_CC two\_CD question\_NN ,\_, that\_IN so\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB chance\_VB to\_TO miss\_VB nothing\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP well\_RB what\_WP she\_PRP will\_MD say\_VB .\_.

And\_CC yet\_RB there\_EX is\_VBZ cause\_NN ;\_: there\_EX is\_VBZ always\_RB cause\_NN for\_IN everything\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD go\_VB back\_RB home\_NN and\_CC think\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP must\_MD send\_VB to\_TO me\_PRP the\_DT telegram\_NN every\_DT day\_NN ;\_: and\_CC if\_IN there\_RB be\_VB cause\_NN I\_PRP shall\_MD come\_VB again\_RB .\_.

The\_DT disease\_NN --\_: for\_IN not\_RB to\_TO be\_VB all\_RB well\_RB is\_VBZ a\_DT disease\_NN --\_: interest\_NN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT sweet\_JJ young\_JJ dear\_RB ,\_, she\_PRP interest\_VBP me\_PRP too\_RB .\_.

She\_PRP charm\_NN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC for\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, if\_IN not\_RB for\_IN you\_PRP or\_CC disease\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP come\_VBP .\_. '\_''

``\_`` As\_IN I\_PRP tell\_VBP you\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB say\_VB a\_DT word\_NN more\_JJR ,\_, even\_RB when\_WRB we\_PRP were\_VBD alone\_RB .\_.

And\_CC so\_RB now\_RB ,\_, Art\_NNP ,\_, you\_PRP know\_VBP all\_DT I\_PRP know\_VBP .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD keep\_VB stern\_JJ watch\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP trust\_VBP your\_PRP$ poor\_JJ father\_NN is\_VBZ rallying\_VBG .\_.

It\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB a\_DT terrible\_JJ thing\_NN to\_TO you\_PRP ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB old\_JJ fellow\_NN ,\_, to\_TO be\_VB placed\_VBN in\_IN such\_JJ a\_DT position\_NN between\_IN two\_CD people\_NNS who\_WP are\_VBP both\_DT so\_RB dear\_RB to\_TO you\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP your\_PRP$ idea\_NN of\_IN duty\_NN to\_TO your\_PRP$ father\_NN ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP are\_VBP right\_JJ to\_TO stick\_VB to\_TO it\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC ,\_, if\_IN need\_NN be\_VB ,\_, I\_PRP shall\_MD send\_VB you\_PRP word\_NN to\_TO come\_VB at\_IN once\_RB to\_TO Lucy\_NNP ;\_: so\_RB do\_VBP not\_RB be\_VB over-anxious\_JJ unless\_IN you\_PRP hear\_VBP from\_IN me\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

4\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Zoöphagous\_JJ patient\_NN still\_RB keeps\_VBZ up\_RP our\_PRP$ interest\_NN in\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD only\_RB one\_CD outburst\_NN and\_CC that\_DT was\_VBD yesterday\_NN at\_IN an\_DT unusual\_JJ time\_NN .\_.

Just\_RB before\_IN the\_DT stroke\_NN of\_IN noon\_NN he\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO grow\_VB restless\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT attendant\_NN knew\_VBD the\_DT symptoms\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC at\_IN once\_RB summoned\_VBN aid\_NN .\_.

Fortunately\_RB the\_DT men\_NNS came\_VBD at\_IN a\_DT run\_NN ,\_, and\_CC were\_VBD just\_RB in\_IN time\_NN ,\_, for\_IN at\_IN the\_DT stroke\_NN of\_IN noon\_NN he\_PRP became\_VBD so\_RB violent\_JJ that\_IN it\_PRP took\_VBD all\_DT their\_PRP$ strength\_NN to\_TO hold\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

In\_IN about\_RB five\_CD minutes\_NNS ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, he\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO get\_VB more\_JJR and\_CC more\_RBR quiet\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC finally\_RB sank\_VBD into\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN melancholy\_JJ ,\_, in\_IN which\_WDT state\_NN he\_PRP has\_VBZ remained\_VBN up\_RP to\_TO now\_RB .\_.

The\_DT attendant\_NN tells\_VBZ me\_PRP that\_IN his\_PRP$ screams\_NNS whilst\_IN in\_IN the\_DT paroxysm\_NN were\_VBD really\_RB appalling\_JJ ;\_: I\_PRP found\_VBD my\_PRP$ hands\_NNS full\_JJ when\_WRB I\_PRP got\_VBD in\_IN ,\_, attending\_VBG to\_TO some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ patients\_NNS who\_WP were\_VBD frightened\_VBN by\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

Indeed\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP can\_MD quite\_RB understand\_VB the\_DT effect\_NN ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT sounds\_NNS disturbed\_VBD even\_RB me\_PRP ,\_, though\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD some\_DT distance\_NN away\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ now\_RB after\_IN the\_DT dinner-hour\_NN of\_IN the\_DT asylum\_NN ,\_, and\_CC as\_RB yet\_RB my\_PRP$ patient\_NN sits\_VBZ in\_IN a\_DT corner\_NN brooding\_NN ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT dull\_JJ ,\_, sullen\_JJ ,\_, woe-begone\_JJ look\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT seems\_VBZ rather\_RB to\_TO indicate\_VB than\_IN to\_TO show\_VB something\_NN directly\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB quite\_RB understand\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

Later\_RB .\_.

--\_: Another\_DT change\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ patient\_NN .\_.

At\_IN five\_CD o'clock\_RB I\_PRP looked\_VBD in\_RP on\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC found\_VBD him\_PRP seemingly\_RB as\_IN happy\_JJ and\_CC contented\_JJ as\_IN he\_PRP used\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD catching\_VBG flies\_NNS and\_CC eating\_VBG them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD keeping\_VBG note\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ capture\_NN by\_IN making\_VBG nail-marks\_NNS on\_IN the\_DT edge\_NN of\_IN the\_DT door\_NN between\_IN the\_DT ridges\_NNS of\_IN padding\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB he\_PRP saw\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP came\_VBD over\_RB and\_CC apologised\_VBD for\_IN his\_PRP$ bad\_JJ conduct\_NN ,\_, and\_CC asked\_VBD me\_PRP in\_IN a\_DT very\_RB humble\_JJ ,\_, cringing\_VBG way\_NN to\_TO be\_VB led\_VBN back\_RB to\_TO his\_PRP$ own\_JJ room\_NN and\_CC to\_TO have\_VB his\_PRP$ note-book\_NN again\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP thought\_VBD it\_PRP well\_RB to\_TO humour\_NN him\_PRP :\_: so\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ back\_RB in\_IN his\_PRP$ room\_NN with\_IN the\_DT window\_NN open\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ the\_DT sugar\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ tea\_NN spread\_VBN out\_RP on\_IN the\_DT window-sill\_NN ,\_, and\_CC is\_VBZ reaping\_VBG quite\_RB a\_DT harvest\_NN of\_IN flies\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB now\_RB eating\_VBG them\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC putting\_VBG them\_PRP into\_IN a\_DT box\_NN ,\_, as\_IN of\_IN old\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC is\_VBZ already\_RB examining\_VBG the\_DT corners\_NNS of\_IN his\_PRP$ room\_NN to\_TO find\_VB a\_DT spider\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP tried\_VBD to\_TO get\_VB him\_PRP to\_TO talk\_VB about\_IN the\_DT past\_JJ few\_JJ days\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN any\_DT clue\_NN to\_TO his\_PRP$ thoughts\_NNS would\_MD be\_VB of\_IN immense\_JJ help\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC he\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB rise\_VB .\_.

For\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN or\_CC two\_CD he\_PRP looked\_VBD very\_RB sad\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN far-away\_JJ voice\_NN ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN saying\_VBG it\_PRP rather\_RB to\_TO himself\_PRP than\_IN to\_TO me\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` All\_DT over\_IN !\_.

all\_DT over\_IN !\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ deserted\_VBN me\_PRP .\_.

No\_DT hope\_NN for\_IN me\_PRP now\_RB unless\_IN I\_PRP do\_VBP it\_PRP for\_IN myself\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

Then\_RB suddenly\_RB turning\_VBG to\_TO me\_PRP in\_IN a\_DT resolute\_JJ way\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` Doctor\_NN ,\_, wo\_MD n't\_RB you\_PRP be\_VB very\_RB good\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP and\_CC let\_VB me\_PRP have\_VB a\_DT little\_RB more\_JJR sugar\_NN ?\_.

I\_PRP think\_VBP it\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB good\_JJ for\_IN me\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` And\_CC the\_DT flies\_NNS ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Yes\_UH !\_.

The\_DT flies\_NNS like\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP like\_VBP the\_DT flies\_NNS ;\_: therefore\_RB I\_PRP like\_VBP it\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

And\_CC there\_EX are\_VBP people\_NNS who\_WP know\_VBP so\_RB little\_JJ as\_IN to\_TO think\_VB that\_IN madmen\_NNS do\_VBP not\_RB argue\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP procured\_VBD him\_PRP a\_DT double\_JJ supply\_NN ,\_, and\_CC left\_VBD him\_PRP as\_IN happy\_JJ a\_DT man\_NN as\_IN ,\_, I\_PRP suppose\_VBP ,\_, any\_DT in\_IN the\_DT world\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP wish\_VBP I\_PRP could\_MD fathom\_NN his\_PRP$ mind\_NN .\_.

Midnight\_NN .\_.

--\_: Another\_DT change\_NN in\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN to\_TO see\_VB Miss\_NNP Westenra\_NNP ,\_, whom\_WP I\_PRP found\_VBD much\_RB better\_JJR ,\_, and\_CC had\_VBD just\_RB returned\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD standing\_VBG at\_IN our\_PRP$ own\_JJ gate\_NN looking\_VBG at\_IN the\_DT sunset\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB once\_RB more\_JJR I\_PRP heard\_VBD him\_PRP yelling\_VBG .\_.

As\_IN his\_PRP$ room\_NN is\_VBZ on\_IN this\_DT side\_NN of\_IN the\_DT house\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD hear\_VB it\_PRP better\_RBR than\_IN in\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT shock\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP to\_TO turn\_VB from\_IN the\_DT wonderful\_JJ smoky\_JJ beauty\_NN of\_IN a\_DT sunset\_NN over\_IN London\_NNP ,\_, with\_IN its\_PRP$ lurid\_JJ lights\_NNS and\_CC inky\_JJ shadows\_NNS and\_CC all\_PDT the\_DT marvellous\_JJ tints\_NNS that\_WDT come\_VBP on\_IN foul\_JJ clouds\_NNS even\_RB as\_IN on\_IN foul\_JJ water\_NN ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO realise\_VB all\_PDT the\_DT grim\_JJ sternness\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ cold\_JJ stone\_NN building\_NN ,\_, with\_IN its\_PRP$ wealth\_NN of\_IN breathing\_NN misery\_NN ,\_, and\_CC my\_PRP$ own\_JJ desolate\_JJ heart\_NN to\_TO endure\_VB it\_PRP all\_DT .\_.

I\_PRP reached\_VBD him\_PRP just\_RB as\_IN the\_DT sun\_NN was\_VBD going\_VBG down\_RB ,\_, and\_CC from\_IN his\_PRP$ window\_NN saw\_VBD the\_DT red\_JJ disc\_NN sink\_NN .\_.

As\_IN it\_PRP sank\_VBD he\_PRP became\_VBD less\_RBR and\_CC less\_RBR frenzied\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC just\_RB as\_IN it\_PRP dipped\_VBD he\_PRP slid\_VBD from\_IN the\_DT hands\_NNS that\_WDT held\_VBD him\_PRP ,\_, an\_DT inert\_JJ mass\_NN ,\_, on\_IN the\_DT floor\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ wonderful\_JJ ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, what\_WP intellectual\_JJ recuperative\_JJ power\_NN lunatics\_NNS have\_VBP ,\_, for\_IN within\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ minutes\_NNS he\_PRP stood\_VBD up\_RP quite\_RB calmly\_RB and\_CC looked\_VBD around\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP signalled\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT attendants\_NNS not\_RB to\_TO hold\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD anxious\_JJ to\_TO see\_VB what\_WP he\_PRP would\_MD do\_VB .\_.

He\_PRP went\_VBD straight\_RB over\_IN to\_TO the\_DT window\_NN and\_CC brushed\_VBD out\_RP the\_DT crumbs\_NNS of\_IN sugar\_NN ;\_: then\_RB he\_PRP took\_VBD his\_PRP$ fly-box\_NN ,\_, and\_CC emptied\_VBD it\_PRP outside\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC threw\_VBD away\_RB the\_DT box\_NN ;\_: then\_RB he\_PRP shut\_VBD the\_DT window\_NN ,\_, and\_CC crossing\_VBG over\_RP ,\_, sat\_VBD down\_RP on\_IN his\_PRP$ bed\_NN .\_.

All\_PDT this\_DT surprised\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP asked\_VBD him\_PRP :\_: ``\_`` Are\_VBP you\_PRP not\_RB going\_VBG to\_TO keep\_VB flies\_NNS any\_DT more\_JJR ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` No\_UH ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD he\_PRP ;\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP am\_VBP sick\_JJ of\_IN all\_PDT that\_DT rubbish\_JJ !\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP certainly\_RB is\_VBZ a\_DT wonderfully\_RB interesting\_JJ study\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP wish\_VBP I\_PRP could\_MD get\_VB some\_DT glimpse\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ mind\_NN or\_CC of\_IN the\_DT cause\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ sudden\_JJ passion\_NN .\_.

Stop\_NNP ;\_: there\_EX may\_MD be\_VB a\_DT clue\_NN after\_IN all\_DT ,\_, if\_IN we\_PRP can\_MD find\_VB why\_WRB to-day\_JJ his\_PRP$ paroxysms\_NNS came\_VBD on\_RP at\_IN high\_JJ noon\_NN and\_CC at\_IN sunset\_NN .\_.

Can\_MD it\_PRP be\_VB that\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT malign\_JJ influence\_NN of\_IN the\_DT sun\_NN at\_IN periods\_NNS which\_WDT affects\_VBZ certain\_JJ natures\_NNS --\_: as\_IN at\_IN times\_NNS the\_DT moon\_NN does\_VBZ others\_NNS ?\_.

We\_PRP shall\_MD see\_VB .\_.

Telegram\_NN ,\_, Seward\_NNP ,\_, London\_NNP ,\_, to\_TO Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, Amsterdam\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` 4\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Patient\_NN still\_RB better\_JJR to-day\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Telegram\_NN ,\_, Seward\_NNP ,\_, London\_NNP ,\_, to\_TO Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, Amsterdam\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` 5\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Patient\_NN greatly\_RB improved\_VBD .\_.

Good\_JJ appetite\_NN ;\_: sleeps\_NNS naturally\_RB ;\_: good\_JJ spirits\_NNS ;\_: colour\_NN coming\_VBG back\_RB .\_. ''\_''

Telegram\_NN ,\_, Seward\_NNP ,\_, London\_NNP ,\_, to\_TO Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, Amsterdam\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` 6\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Terrible\_JJ change\_NN for\_IN the\_DT worse\_JJR .\_.

Come\_VB at\_IN once\_RB ;\_: do\_VBP not\_RB lose\_VB an\_DT hour\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP hold\_VBP over\_IN telegram\_NN to\_TO Holmwood\_NNP till\_IN have\_VBP seen\_VBN you\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

CHAPTER\_NNP X\_NNP Letter\_NNP ,\_, Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP to\_TO Hon.\_NNP Arthur\_NNP Holmwood\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` 6\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` My\_PRP$ dear\_RB Art\_NNP ,\_, --\_: ``\_`` My\_PRP$ news\_NN to-day\_NN is\_VBZ not\_RB so\_RB good\_JJ .\_.

Lucy\_NNP this\_DT morning\_NN had\_VBD gone\_VBN back\_RB a\_DT bit\_NN .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, one\_CD good\_JJ thing\_NN which\_WDT has\_VBZ arisen\_VBN from\_IN it\_PRP ;\_: Mrs.\_NNP Westenra\_NNP was\_VBD naturally\_RB anxious\_JJ concerning\_VBG Lucy\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC has\_VBZ consulted\_VBN me\_PRP professionally\_RB about\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP took\_VBD advantage\_NN of\_IN the\_DT opportunity\_NN ,\_, and\_CC told\_VBD her\_PRP that\_IN my\_PRP$ old\_JJ master\_NN ,\_, Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, the\_DT great\_JJ specialist\_NN ,\_, was\_VBD coming\_VBG to\_TO stay\_VB with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN I\_PRP would\_MD put\_VB her\_PRP in\_IN his\_PRP$ charge\_NN conjointly\_RB with\_IN myself\_PRP ;\_: so\_RB now\_RB we\_PRP can\_MD come\_VB and\_CC go\_VB without\_IN alarming\_JJ her\_PRP unduly\_RB ,\_, for\_IN a\_DT shock\_NN to\_TO her\_PRP would\_MD mean\_VB sudden\_JJ death\_NN ,\_, and\_CC this\_DT ,\_, in\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS weak\_JJ condition\_NN ,\_, might\_MD be\_VB disastrous\_JJ to\_TO her\_PRP .\_.

We\_PRP are\_VBP hedged\_VBN in\_RP with\_IN difficulties\_NNS ,\_, all\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, my\_PRP$ poor\_JJ old\_JJ fellow\_NN ;\_: but\_CC ,\_, please\_VB God\_NNP ,\_, we\_PRP shall\_MD come\_VB through\_IN them\_PRP all\_DT right\_NN .\_.

If\_IN any\_DT need\_NN I\_PRP shall\_MD write\_VB ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN ,\_, if\_IN you\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB hear\_VB from\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, take\_VB it\_PRP for\_IN granted\_VBN that\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP simply\_RB waiting\_VBG for\_IN news\_NN .\_.

In\_IN haste\_NN Yours\_NNP ever\_RB ,\_, ``\_`` John\_NNP Seward\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

7\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: The\_DT first\_JJ thing\_NN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP when\_WRB we\_PRP met\_VBD at\_IN Liverpool\_NNP Street\_NNP was\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Have\_VBP you\_PRP said\_VBD anything\_NN to\_TO our\_PRP$ young\_JJ friend\_NN the\_DT lover\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` No\_UH ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP waited\_VBD till\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD seen\_VBN you\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP said\_VBD in\_IN my\_PRP$ telegram\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP wrote\_VBD him\_PRP a\_DT letter\_NN simply\_RB telling\_VBG him\_PRP that\_IN you\_PRP were\_VBD coming\_VBG ,\_, as\_IN Miss\_NNP Westenra\_NNP was\_VBD not\_RB so\_RB well\_RB ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN I\_PRP should\_MD let\_VB him\_PRP know\_VB if\_IN need\_NN be\_VB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Right\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ friend\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` quite\_RB right\_JJ !\_.

Better\_NNP he\_PRP not\_RB know\_VB as\_IN yet\_RB ;\_: perhaps\_RB he\_PRP shall\_MD never\_RB know\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP pray\_VBP so\_RB ;\_: but\_CC if\_IN it\_PRP be\_VB needed\_VBN ,\_, then\_RB he\_PRP shall\_MD know\_VB all\_DT .\_.

And\_CC ,\_, my\_PRP$ good\_JJ friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, let\_VB me\_PRP caution\_VB you\_PRP .\_.

You\_PRP deal\_VBP with\_IN the\_DT madmen\_NNS .\_.

All\_DT men\_NNS are\_VBP mad\_JJ in\_IN some\_DT way\_NN or\_CC the\_DT other\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC inasmuch\_RB as\_IN you\_PRP deal\_VBP discreetly\_RB with\_IN your\_PRP$ madmen\_NNS ,\_, so\_IN deal\_NN with\_IN God\_NNP 's\_POS madmen\_NNS ,\_, too\_RB --\_: the\_DT rest\_NN of\_IN the\_DT world\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP tell\_VBP not\_RB your\_PRP$ madmen\_NNS what\_WP you\_PRP do\_VBP nor\_CC why\_WRB you\_PRP do\_VBP it\_PRP ;\_: you\_PRP tell\_VBP them\_PRP not\_RB what\_WP you\_PRP think\_VBP .\_.

So\_RB you\_PRP shall\_MD keep\_VB knowledge\_NN in\_IN its\_PRP$ place\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB it\_PRP may\_MD rest\_VB --\_: where\_WRB it\_PRP may\_MD gather\_VB its\_PRP$ kind\_NN around\_IN it\_PRP and\_CC breed\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP and\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD keep\_VB as\_RB yet\_RB what\_WP we\_PRP know\_VBP here\_RB ,\_, and\_CC here\_RB .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP touched\_VBD me\_PRP on\_IN the\_DT heart\_NN and\_CC on\_IN the\_DT forehead\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB touched\_VBD himself\_PRP the\_DT same\_JJ way\_NN .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP have\_VBP for\_IN myself\_PRP thoughts\_NNS at\_IN the\_DT present\_JJ .\_.

Later\_RB I\_PRP shall\_MD unfold\_VB to\_TO you\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Why\_WRB not\_RB now\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP asked\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` It\_PRP may\_MD do\_VB some\_DT good\_JJ ;\_: we\_PRP may\_MD arrive\_VB at\_IN some\_DT decision\_NN .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP stopped\_VBD and\_CC looked\_VBD at\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` My\_PRP$ friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, when\_WRB the\_DT corn\_NN is\_VBZ grown\_VBN ,\_, even\_RB before\_IN it\_PRP has\_VBZ ripened\_VBN --\_: while\_IN the\_DT milk\_NN of\_IN its\_PRP$ mother-earth\_NN is\_VBZ in\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT sunshine\_NN has\_VBZ not\_RB yet\_RB begun\_VBN to\_TO paint\_VB him\_PRP with\_IN his\_PRP$ gold\_NN ,\_, the\_DT husbandman\_NN he\_PRP pull\_VB the\_DT ear\_NN and\_CC rub\_VB him\_PRP between\_IN his\_PRP$ rough\_JJ hands\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC blow\_VB away\_RP the\_DT green\_JJ chaff\_NN ,\_, and\_CC say\_VB to\_TO you\_PRP :\_: `\_`` Look\_VB !\_.

he\_PRP 's\_VBZ good\_JJ corn\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP will\_MD make\_VB good\_JJ crop\_NN when\_WRB the\_DT time\_NN comes\_VBZ .\_. '\_'' ''\_''

I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB see\_VB the\_DT application\_NN ,\_, and\_CC told\_VBD him\_PRP so\_RB .\_.

For\_IN reply\_NN he\_PRP reached\_VBD over\_RB and\_CC took\_VBD my\_PRP$ ear\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ hand\_NN and\_CC pulled\_VBD it\_PRP playfully\_RB ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP used\_VBD long\_RB ago\_RB to\_TO do\_VB at\_IN lectures\_VBZ ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` The\_DT good\_JJ husbandman\_NN tell\_VBP you\_PRP so\_RB then\_RB because\_IN he\_PRP knows\_VBZ ,\_, but\_CC not\_RB till\_IN then\_RB .\_.

But\_CC you\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB find\_VB the\_DT good\_JJ husbandman\_NN dig\_VB up\_RP his\_PRP$ planted\_VBN corn\_NN to\_TO see\_VB if\_IN he\_PRP grow\_VB ;\_: that\_DT is\_VBZ for\_IN the\_DT children\_NNS who\_WP play\_VBP at\_IN husbandry\_NN ,\_, and\_CC not\_RB for\_IN those\_DT who\_WP take\_VBP it\_PRP as\_IN of\_IN the\_DT work\_NN of\_IN their\_PRP$ life\_NN .\_.

See\_VB you\_PRP now\_RB ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP ?\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP sown\_VBN my\_PRP$ corn\_NN ,\_, and\_CC Nature\_NNP has\_VBZ her\_PRP$ work\_NN to\_TO do\_VB in\_IN making\_VBG it\_PRP sprout\_VB ;\_: if\_IN he\_PRP sprout\_VBP at\_IN all\_DT ,\_, there\_EX 's\_VBZ some\_DT promise\_NN ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP wait\_VBP till\_IN the\_DT ear\_NN begins\_VBZ to\_TO swell\_VB .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP broke\_VBD off\_RP ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP evidently\_RB saw\_VBD that\_IN I\_PRP understood\_VBD .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN ,\_, and\_CC very\_RB gravely\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP were\_VBD always\_RB a\_DT careful\_JJ student\_NN ,\_, and\_CC your\_PRP$ case-book\_NN was\_VBD ever\_RB more\_RBR full\_JJ than\_IN the\_DT rest\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP were\_VBD only\_RB student\_NN then\_RB ;\_: now\_RB you\_PRP are\_VBP master\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP trust\_VBP that\_IN good\_JJ habit\_NN have\_VBP not\_RB fail\_VB .\_.

Remember\_VB ,\_, my\_PRP$ friend\_NN ,\_, that\_IN knowledge\_NN is\_VBZ stronger\_JJR than\_IN memory\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP should\_MD not\_RB trust\_VB the\_DT weaker\_JJR .\_.

Even\_RB if\_IN you\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB kept\_VBN the\_DT good\_JJ practise\_NN ,\_, let\_VB me\_PRP tell\_VB you\_PRP that\_IN this\_DT case\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ dear\_RB miss\_VBP is\_VBZ one\_CD that\_WDT may\_MD be\_VB --\_: mind\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP say\_VBP may\_MD be\_VB --\_: of\_IN such\_JJ interest\_NN to\_TO us\_PRP and\_CC others\_NNS that\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT rest\_NN may\_MD not\_RB make\_VB him\_PRP kick\_VB the\_DT beam\_NN ,\_, as\_IN your\_PRP$ peoples\_NNS say\_VBP .\_.

Take\_VB then\_RB good\_JJ note\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

Nothing\_NN is\_VBZ too\_RB small\_JJ .\_.

I\_NN counsel\_NN you\_PRP ,\_, put\_VBD down\_RP in\_IN record\_NN even\_RB your\_PRP$ doubts\_NNS and\_CC surmises\_NNS .\_.

Hereafter\_NNP it\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB of\_IN interest\_NN to\_TO you\_PRP to\_TO see\_VB how\_WRB true\_JJ you\_PRP guess\_VBP .\_.

We\_PRP learn\_VBP from\_IN failure\_NN ,\_, not\_RB from\_IN success\_NN !\_. ''\_''

When\_WRB I\_PRP described\_VBD Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS symptoms\_NNS --\_: the\_DT same\_JJ as\_IN before\_RB ,\_, but\_CC infinitely\_RB more\_RBR marked\_JJ --\_: he\_PRP looked\_VBD very\_RB grave\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC said\_VBD nothing\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP took\_VBD with\_IN him\_PRP a\_DT bag\_NN in\_IN which\_WDT were\_VBD many\_JJ instruments\_NNS and\_CC drugs\_NNS ,\_, ``\_`` the\_DT ghastly\_JJ paraphernalia\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ beneficial\_JJ trade\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' as\_IN he\_PRP once\_RB called\_VBD ,\_, in\_IN one\_CD of\_IN his\_PRP$ lectures\_VBZ ,\_, the\_DT equipment\_NN of\_IN a\_DT professor\_NN of\_IN the\_DT healing\_NN craft\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP were\_VBD shown\_VBN in\_IN ,\_, Mrs.\_NNP Westenra\_NNP met\_VBD us\_PRP .\_.

She\_PRP was\_VBD alarmed\_VBN ,\_, but\_CC not\_RB nearly\_RB so\_RB much\_JJ as\_IN I\_PRP expected\_VBD to\_TO find\_VB her\_PRP .\_.

Nature\_NN in\_IN one\_CD of\_IN her\_PRP$ beneficent\_JJ moods\_NNS has\_VBZ ordained\_VBN that\_IN even\_RB death\_NN has\_VBZ some\_DT antidote\_NN to\_TO its\_PRP$ own\_JJ terrors\_NNS .\_.

Here\_RB ,\_, in\_IN a\_DT case\_NN where\_WRB any\_DT shock\_NN may\_MD prove\_VB fatal\_JJ ,\_, matters\_NNS are\_VBP so\_RB ordered\_VBN that\_IN ,\_, from\_IN some\_DT cause\_NN or\_CC other\_JJ ,\_, the\_DT things\_NNS not\_RB personal\_JJ --\_: even\_RB the\_DT terrible\_JJ change\_NN in\_IN her\_PRP$ daughter\_NN to\_TO whom\_WP she\_PRP is\_VBZ so\_RB attached\_JJ --\_: do\_VBP not\_RB seem\_VB to\_TO reach\_VB her\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ something\_NN like\_IN the\_DT way\_NN Dame\_NNP Nature\_NNP gathers\_NNS round\_VBP a\_DT foreign\_JJ body\_NN an\_DT envelope\_NN of\_IN some\_DT insensitive\_JJ tissue\_NN which\_WDT can\_MD protect\_VB from\_IN evil\_NN that\_IN which\_WDT it\_PRP would\_MD otherwise\_RB harm\_VB by\_IN contact\_NN .\_.

If\_IN this\_DT be\_VB an\_DT ordered\_VBN selfishness\_NN ,\_, then\_RB we\_PRP should\_MD pause\_VB before\_IN we\_PRP condemn\_VBP any\_DT one\_CD for\_IN the\_DT vice\_NN of\_IN egoism\_NN ,\_, for\_IN there\_EX may\_MD be\_VB deeper\_JJR root\_NN for\_IN its\_PRP$ causes\_NNS than\_IN we\_PRP have\_VBP knowledge\_NN of\_IN .\_.

I\_PRP used\_VBD my\_PRP$ knowledge\_NN of\_IN this\_DT phase\_NN of\_IN spiritual\_JJ pathology\_NN ,\_, and\_CC laid\_VBD down\_RP a\_DT rule\_NN that\_IN she\_PRP should\_MD not\_RB be\_VB present\_JJ with\_IN Lucy\_NNP or\_CC think\_VB of\_IN her\_PRP$ illness\_NN more\_JJR than\_IN was\_VBD absolutely\_RB required\_VBN .\_.

She\_PRP assented\_VBD readily\_RB ,\_, so\_RB readily\_RB that\_IN I\_PRP saw\_VBD again\_RB the\_DT hand\_NN of\_IN Nature\_NNP fighting\_VBG for\_IN life\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP were\_VBD shown\_VBN up\_IN to\_TO Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS room\_NN .\_.

If\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD shocked\_VBN when\_WRB I\_PRP saw\_VBD her\_PRP$ yesterday\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP was\_VBD horrified\_VBN when\_WRB I\_PRP saw\_VBD her\_PRP$ to-day\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP was\_VBD ghastly\_JJ ,\_, chalkily\_JJ pale\_NN ;\_: the\_DT red\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO have\_VB gone\_VBN even\_RB from\_IN her\_PRP$ lips\_NNS and\_CC gums\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT bones\_NNS of\_IN her\_PRP$ face\_NN stood\_VBD out\_RP prominently\_RB ;\_: her\_PRP$ breathing\_NN was\_VBD painful\_JJ to\_TO see\_VB or\_CC hear\_VB .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP 's\_POS face\_NN grew\_VBD set\_VBN as\_IN marble\_NN ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ eyebrows\_NNS converged\_VBN till\_IN they\_PRP almost\_RB touched\_VBD over\_IN his\_PRP$ nose\_NN .\_.

Lucy\_NNP lay\_VBD motionless\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC did\_VBD not\_RB seem\_VB to\_TO have\_VB strength\_NN to\_TO speak\_VB ,\_, so\_RB for\_IN a\_DT while\_NN we\_PRP were\_VBD all\_DT silent\_JJ .\_.

Then\_RB Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP beckoned\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP went\_VBD gently\_RB out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT room\_NN .\_.

The\_DT instant\_NN we\_PRP had\_VBD closed\_VBN the\_DT door\_NN he\_PRP stepped\_VBD quickly\_RB along\_IN the\_DT passage\_NN to\_TO the\_DT next\_JJ door\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT was\_VBD open\_JJ .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP pulled\_VBD me\_PRP quickly\_RB in\_IN with\_IN him\_PRP and\_CC closed\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN .\_.

``\_`` My\_PRP$ God\_NN !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD ;\_: ``\_`` this\_DT is\_VBZ dreadful\_JJ .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT time\_NN to\_TO be\_VB lost\_VBN .\_.

She\_PRP will\_MD die\_VB for\_IN sheer\_NN want\_VBP of\_IN blood\_NN to\_TO keep\_VB the\_DT heart\_NN 's\_POS action\_NN as\_IN it\_PRP should\_MD be\_VB .\_.

There\_EX must\_MD be\_VB transfusion\_NN of\_IN blood\_NN at\_IN once\_RB .\_.

Is\_VBZ it\_PRP you\_PRP or\_CC me\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP am\_VBP younger\_JJR and\_CC stronger\_JJR ,\_, Professor\_NNP .\_.

It\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB me\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Then\_RB get\_VB ready\_JJ at\_IN once\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP will\_MD bring\_VB up\_RP my\_PRP$ bag\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP prepared\_VBN .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP went\_VBD downstairs\_NNS with\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD going\_VBG there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT knock\_VB at\_IN the\_DT hall-door\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP reached\_VBD the\_DT hall\_NN the\_DT maid\_NN had\_VBD just\_RB opened\_VBN the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, and\_CC Arthur\_NNP was\_VBD stepping\_VBG quickly\_RB in\_IN .\_.

He\_PRP rushed\_VBD up\_RP to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, saying\_VBG in\_IN an\_DT eager\_JJ whisper\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Jack\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP was\_VBD so\_RB anxious\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP read\_VBP between\_IN the\_DT lines\_NNS of\_IN your\_PRP$ letter\_NN ,\_, and\_CC have\_VBP been\_VBN in\_IN an\_DT agony\_NN .\_.

The\_DT dad\_NN was\_VBD better\_JJR ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP ran\_VBD down\_RB here\_RB to\_TO see\_VB for\_IN myself\_PRP .\_.

Is\_VBZ not\_RB that\_DT gentleman\_NN Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ?\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP so\_RB thankful\_JJ to\_TO you\_PRP ,\_, sir\_NN ,\_, for\_IN coming\_VBG .\_. ''\_''

When\_WRB first\_RB the\_DT Professor\_NNP 's\_POS eye\_NN had\_VBD lit\_VBN upon\_IN him\_PRP he\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN angry\_JJ at\_IN his\_PRP$ interruption\_NN at\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT time\_NN ;\_: but\_CC now\_RB ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP took\_VBD in\_IN his\_PRP$ stalwart\_NN proportions\_NNS and\_CC recognised\_VBD the\_DT strong\_JJ young\_JJ manhood\_NN which\_WDT seemed\_VBD to\_TO emanate\_VB from\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS gleamed\_VBD .\_.

Without\_IN a\_DT pause\_NN he\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP gravely\_RB as\_IN he\_PRP held\_VBD out\_RP his\_PRP$ hand\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Sir\_NNP ,\_, you\_PRP have\_VBP come\_VBN in\_IN time\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP are\_VBP the\_DT lover\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ dear\_RB miss\_VB .\_.

She\_PRP is\_VBZ bad\_JJ ,\_, very\_RB ,\_, very\_RB bad\_JJ .\_.

Nay\_NNP ,\_, my\_PRP$ child\_NN ,\_, do\_VBP not\_RB go\_VB like\_IN that\_DT .\_. ''\_''

For\_IN he\_PRP suddenly\_RB grew\_VBD pale\_NN and\_CC sat\_VBD down\_RP in\_IN a\_DT chair\_NN almost\_RB fainting\_VBG .\_.

``\_`` You\_PRP are\_VBP to\_TO help\_VB her\_PRP .\_.

You\_PRP can\_MD do\_VB more\_JJR than\_IN any\_DT that\_WDT live\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC your\_PRP$ courage\_NN is\_VBZ your\_PRP$ best\_JJS help\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` What\_WP can\_MD I\_PRP do\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

asked\_VBD Arthur\_NNP hoarsely\_RB .\_.

``\_`` Tell\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD do\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

My\_PRP$ life\_NN is\_VBZ hers\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP would\_MD give\_VB the\_DT last\_JJ drop\_NN of\_IN blood\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ body\_NN for\_IN her\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT Professor\_NNP has\_VBZ a\_DT strongly\_RB humorous\_JJ side\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD from\_IN old\_JJ knowledge\_NN detect\_VB a\_DT trace\_NN of\_IN its\_PRP$ origin\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ answer\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` My\_PRP$ young\_JJ sir\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB ask\_VB so\_RB much\_RB as\_IN that\_DT --\_: not\_RB the\_DT last\_JJ !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` What\_WP shall\_MD I\_PRP do\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

There\_EX was\_VBD fire\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ open\_JJ nostril\_NN quivered\_VBD with\_IN intent\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP slapped\_VBD him\_PRP on\_IN the\_DT shoulder\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Come\_VB !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` You\_PRP are\_VBP a\_DT man\_NN ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT man\_NN we\_PRP want\_VBP .\_.

You\_PRP are\_VBP better\_JJR than\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, better\_JJR than\_IN my\_PRP$ friend\_NN John\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

Arthur\_NNP looked\_VBD bewildered\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT Professor\_NNP went\_VBD on\_RP by\_IN explaining\_VBG in\_IN a\_DT kindly\_RB way\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Young\_NNP miss\_VBP is\_VBZ bad\_JJ ,\_, very\_RB bad\_JJ .\_.

She\_PRP wants\_VBZ blood\_NN ,\_, and\_CC blood\_NN she\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB or\_CC die\_VB .\_.

My\_PRP$ friend\_NN John\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP consulted\_VBN ;\_: and\_CC we\_PRP are\_VBP about\_IN to\_TO perform\_VB what\_WP we\_PRP call\_VBP transfusion\_NN of\_IN blood\_NN --\_: to\_TO transfer\_VB from\_IN full\_JJ veins\_NNS of\_IN one\_CD to\_TO the\_DT empty\_JJ veins\_NNS which\_WDT pine\_VBP for\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

John\_NNP was\_VBD to\_TO give\_VB his\_PRP$ blood\_NN ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ the\_DT more\_RBR young\_JJ and\_CC strong\_JJ than\_IN me\_PRP ''\_'' --\_: here\_RB Arthur\_NNP took\_VBD my\_PRP$ hand\_NN and\_CC wrung\_VBD it\_PRP hard\_RB in\_IN silence\_NN --\_: ``\_`` but\_CC ,\_, now\_RB you\_PRP are\_VBP here\_RB ,\_, you\_PRP are\_VBP more\_RBR good\_JJ than\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, old\_JJ or\_CC young\_JJ ,\_, who\_WP toil\_VBP much\_RB in\_IN the\_DT world\_NN of\_IN thought\_NN .\_.

Our\_PRP$ nerves\_NNS are\_VBP not\_RB so\_RB calm\_JJ and\_CC our\_PRP$ blood\_NN not\_RB so\_RB bright\_JJ than\_IN yours\_PRP$ !\_. ''\_''

Arthur\_NNP turned\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` If\_IN you\_PRP only\_RB knew\_VBD how\_WRB gladly\_RB I\_PRP would\_MD die\_VB for\_IN her\_PRP you\_PRP would\_MD understand\_VB --\_: --\_: ''\_'' He\_PRP stopped\_VBD ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN choke\_VB in\_IN his\_PRP$ voice\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Good\_JJ boy\_NN !\_. ''\_''

said\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` In\_IN the\_DT not-so-far-off\_NN you\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB happy\_JJ that\_IN you\_PRP have\_VBP done\_VBN all\_DT for\_IN her\_PRP$ you\_NN love\_NN .\_.

Come\_VB now\_RB and\_CC be\_VB silent\_JJ .\_.

You\_PRP shall\_MD kiss\_NN her\_PRP once\_RB before\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ done\_VBN ,\_, but\_CC then\_RB you\_PRP must\_MD go\_VB ;\_: and\_CC you\_PRP must\_MD leave\_VB at\_IN my\_PRP$ sign\_NN .\_.

Say\_VB no\_DT word\_NN to\_TO Madame\_NNP ;\_: you\_PRP know\_VBP how\_WRB it\_PRP is\_VBZ with\_IN her\_PRP !\_.

There\_EX must\_MD be\_VB no\_DT shock\_NN ;\_: any\_DT knowledge\_NN of\_IN this\_DT would\_MD be\_VB one\_CD .\_.

Come\_VB !\_. ''\_''

We\_PRP all\_DT went\_VBD up\_RB to\_TO Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS room\_NN .\_.

Arthur\_NNP by\_IN direction\_NN remained\_VBD outside\_JJ .\_.

Lucy\_NNP turned\_VBD her\_PRP$ head\_NN and\_CC looked\_VBD at\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC said\_VBD nothing\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB asleep\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC she\_PRP was\_VBD simply\_RB too\_RB weak\_JJ to\_TO make\_VB the\_DT effort\_NN .\_.

Her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS spoke\_VBD to\_TO us\_PRP ;\_: that\_WDT was\_VBD all\_DT .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP took\_VBD some\_DT things\_NNS from\_IN his\_PRP$ bag\_NN and\_CC laid\_VBD them\_PRP on\_IN a\_DT little\_JJ table\_NN out\_IN of\_IN sight\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP mixed\_VBD a\_DT narcotic\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC coming\_VBG over\_RP to\_TO the\_DT bed\_NN ,\_, said\_VBD cheerily\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Now\_RB ,\_, little\_RB miss\_VB ,\_, here\_RB is\_VBZ your\_PRP$ medicine\_NN .\_.

Drink\_VB it\_PRP off\_RP ,\_, like\_IN a\_DT good\_JJ child\_NN .\_.

See\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP lift\_VBP you\_PRP so\_IN that\_DT to\_TO swallow\_VB is\_VBZ easy\_JJ .\_.

Yes\_UH .\_. ''\_''

She\_PRP had\_VBD made\_VBN the\_DT effort\_NN with\_IN success\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP astonished\_VBD me\_PRP how\_WRB long\_JJ the\_DT drug\_NN took\_VBD to\_TO act\_VB .\_.

This\_DT ,\_, in\_IN fact\_NN ,\_, marked\_VBD the\_DT extent\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ weakness\_NN .\_.

The\_DT time\_NN seemed\_VBD endless\_JJ until\_IN sleep\_NN began\_VBD to\_TO flicker\_VB in\_IN her\_PRP$ eyelids\_NNS .\_.

At\_IN last\_JJ ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, the\_DT narcotic\_NN began\_VBD to\_TO manifest\_VB its\_PRP$ potency\_NN ;\_: and\_CC she\_PRP fell\_VBD into\_IN a\_DT deep\_JJ sleep\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB the\_DT Professor\_NNP was\_VBD satisfied\_VBN he\_PRP called\_VBD Arthur\_NNP into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, and\_CC bade\_VBD him\_PRP strip\_VB off\_RP his\_PRP$ coat\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP added\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP may\_MD take\_VB that\_DT one\_CD little\_JJ kiss\_NN whiles\_VBZ I\_PRP bring\_VBP over\_IN the\_DT table\_NN .\_.

Friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, help\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

So\_IN neither\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP looked\_VBD whilst\_IN he\_PRP bent\_JJ over\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP turning\_VBG to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, said\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` He\_PRP is\_VBZ so\_RB young\_JJ and\_CC strong\_JJ and\_CC of\_IN blood\_NN so\_RB pure\_JJ that\_IN we\_PRP need\_VBP not\_RB defibrinate\_VB it\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

Then\_RB with\_IN swiftness\_NN ,\_, but\_CC with\_IN absolute\_JJ method\_NN ,\_, Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP performed\_VBD the\_DT operation\_NN .\_.

As\_IN the\_DT transfusion\_NN went\_VBD on\_IN something\_NN like\_IN life\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO come\_VB back\_RB to\_TO poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS cheeks\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC through\_IN Arthur\_NNP 's\_POS growing\_VBG pallor\_NN the\_DT joy\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN seemed\_VBD absolutely\_RB to\_TO shine\_VB .\_.

After\_IN a\_DT bit\_NN I\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO grow\_VB anxious\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT loss\_NN of\_IN blood\_NN was\_VBD telling\_VBG on\_IN Arthur\_NNP ,\_, strong\_JJ man\_NN as\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD .\_.

It\_PRP gave\_VBD me\_PRP an\_DT idea\_NN of\_IN what\_WP a\_DT terrible\_JJ strain\_NN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS system\_NN must\_MD have\_VB undergone\_VBN that\_IN what\_WP weakened\_VBD Arthur\_NNP only\_RB partially\_RB restored\_VBD her\_PRP .\_.

But\_CC the\_DT Professor\_NNP 's\_POS face\_NN was\_VBD set\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP stood\_VBD watch\_NN in\_IN hand\_NN and\_CC with\_IN his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS fixed\_VBN now\_RB on\_IN the\_DT patient\_NN and\_CC now\_RB on\_IN Arthur\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD hear\_VB my\_PRP$ own\_JJ heart\_NN beat\_NN .\_.

Presently\_RB he\_PRP said\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT soft\_JJ voice\_NN :\_: ``\_`` Do\_VBP not\_RB stir\_VB an\_DT instant\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ enough\_JJ .\_.

You\_PRP attend\_VBP him\_PRP ;\_: I\_PRP will\_MD look\_VB to\_TO her\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

When\_WRB all\_DT was\_VBD over\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB how\_WRB much\_JJ Arthur\_NNP was\_VBD weakened\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP dressed\_VBD the\_DT wound\_NN and\_CC took\_VBD his\_PRP$ arm\_NN to\_TO bring\_VB him\_PRP away\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP spoke\_VBD without\_IN turning\_VBG round\_NN --\_: the\_DT man\_NN seems\_VBZ to\_TO have\_VB eyes\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT back\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ head\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` The\_DT brave\_VBP lover\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP think\_VBP ,\_, deserve\_VBP another\_DT kiss\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT he\_PRP shall\_MD have\_VB presently\_RB .\_. ''\_''

And\_CC as\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD now\_RB finished\_VBN his\_PRP$ operation\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP adjusted\_VBD the\_DT pillow\_NN to\_TO the\_DT patient\_NN 's\_POS head\_NN .\_.

As\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD so\_RB the\_DT narrow\_JJ black\_JJ velvet\_NN band\_NN which\_WDT she\_PRP seems\_VBZ always\_RB to\_TO wear\_VB round\_NN her\_PRP$ throat\_NN ,\_, buckled\_VBN with\_IN an\_DT old\_JJ diamond\_NN buckle\_NN which\_WDT her\_PRP$ lover\_NN had\_VBD given\_VBN her\_PRP ,\_, was\_VBD dragged\_VBN a\_DT little\_JJ up\_NN ,\_, and\_CC showed\_VBD a\_DT red\_JJ mark\_NN on\_IN her\_PRP$ throat\_NN .\_.

Arthur\_NNP did\_VBD not\_RB notice\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD hear\_VB the\_DT deep\_JJ hiss\_NN of\_IN indrawn\_JJ breath\_NN which\_WDT is\_VBZ one\_CD of\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP 's\_POS ways\_NNS of\_IN betraying\_VBG emotion\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP said\_VBD nothing\_NN at\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN ,\_, but\_CC turned\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, saying\_VBG :\_: ``\_`` Now\_RB take\_VB down\_RP our\_PRP$ brave\_VB young\_JJ lover\_NN ,\_, give\_VB him\_PRP of\_IN the\_DT port\_NN wine\_NN ,\_, and\_CC let\_VB him\_PRP lie\_VB down\_RP a\_DT while\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP must\_MD then\_RB go\_VB home\_NN and\_CC rest\_NN ,\_, sleep\_VB much\_RB and\_CC eat\_VB much\_JJ ,\_, that\_IN he\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB recruited\_VBN of\_IN what\_WP he\_PRP has\_VBZ so\_RB given\_VBN to\_TO his\_PRP$ love\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB stay\_VB here\_RB .\_.

Hold\_VB !\_.

a\_DT moment\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP may\_MD take\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, sir\_NN ,\_, that\_IN you\_PRP are\_VBP anxious\_JJ of\_IN result\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB bring\_VB it\_PRP with\_IN you\_PRP that\_IN in\_IN all\_DT ways\_NNS the\_DT operation\_NN is\_VBZ successful\_JJ .\_.

You\_PRP have\_VBP saved\_VBN her\_PRP$ life\_NN this\_DT time\_NN ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP can\_MD go\_VB home\_NN and\_CC rest\_NN easy\_JJ in\_IN mind\_NN that\_IN all\_DT that\_WDT can\_MD be\_VB is\_VBZ .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD tell\_VB her\_PRP all\_DT when\_WRB she\_PRP is\_VBZ well\_RB ;\_: she\_PRP shall\_MD love\_VB you\_PRP none\_NN the\_DT less\_JJR for\_IN what\_WP you\_PRP have\_VBP done\_VBN .\_.

Good-bye\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

When\_WRB Arthur\_NNP had\_VBD gone\_VBN I\_PRP went\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO the\_DT room\_NN .\_.

Lucy\_NNP was\_VBD sleeping\_VBG gently\_RB ,\_, but\_CC her\_PRP$ breathing\_NN was\_VBD stronger\_JJR ;\_: I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB the\_DT counterpane\_NN move\_NN as\_IN her\_PRP$ breast\_NN heaved\_VBD .\_.

By\_IN the\_DT bedside\_NN sat\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, looking\_VBG at\_IN her\_PRP intently\_RB .\_.

The\_DT velvet\_NN band\_NN again\_RB covered\_VBD the\_DT red\_JJ mark\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP asked\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP in\_IN a\_DT whisper\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` What\_WP do\_VBP you\_PRP make\_VB of\_IN that\_DT mark\_NN on\_IN her\_PRP$ throat\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` What\_WP do\_VBP you\_PRP make\_VB of\_IN it\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB examined\_VBN it\_PRP yet\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP answered\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB and\_CC there\_RB proceeded\_VBD to\_TO loose\_VB the\_DT band\_NN .\_.

Just\_RB over\_IN the\_DT external\_JJ jugular\_JJ vein\_NN there\_EX were\_VBD two\_CD punctures\_NNS ,\_, not\_RB large\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC not\_RB wholesome-looking\_JJ .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT sign\_NN of\_IN disease\_NN ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT edges\_NNS were\_VBD white\_JJ and\_CC worn-looking\_JJ ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN by\_IN some\_DT trituration\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB occurred\_VBN to\_TO me\_PRP that\_IN this\_DT wound\_NN ,\_, or\_CC whatever\_WDT it\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, might\_MD be\_VB the\_DT means\_NNS of\_IN that\_DT manifest\_JJ loss\_NN of\_IN blood\_NN ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP abandoned\_VBD the\_DT idea\_NN as\_RB soon\_RB as\_IN formed\_VBN ,\_, for\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT thing\_NN could\_MD not\_RB be\_VB .\_.

The\_DT whole\_JJ bed\_NN would\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN drenched\_VBN to\_TO a\_DT scarlet\_JJ with\_IN the\_DT blood\_NN which\_WDT the\_DT girl\_NN must\_MD have\_VB lost\_VBN to\_TO leave\_VB such\_PDT a\_DT pallor\_NN as\_IN she\_PRP had\_VBD before\_IN the\_DT transfusion\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Well\_NNP ?\_. ''\_''

said\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` Well\_UH ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD I\_PRP ,\_, ``\_`` I\_PRP can\_MD make\_VB nothing\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT Professor\_NNP stood\_VBD up\_RP .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP must\_MD go\_VB back\_RB to\_TO Amsterdam\_NNP to-night\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` There\_EX are\_VBP books\_NNS and\_CC things\_NNS there\_RB which\_WDT I\_PRP want\_VBP .\_.

You\_PRP must\_MD remain\_VB here\_RB all\_PDT the\_DT night\_NN ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB let\_VB your\_PRP$ sight\_NN pass\_NN from\_IN her\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Shall\_NNP I\_PRP have\_VBP a\_DT nurse\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP asked\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` We\_PRP are\_VBP the\_DT best\_JJS nurses\_NNS ,\_, you\_PRP and\_CC I\_PRP .\_.

You\_PRP keep\_VBP watch\_VB all\_DT night\_NN ;\_: see\_VB that\_IN she\_PRP is\_VBZ well\_RB fed\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN nothing\_NN disturbs\_VBZ her\_PRP .\_.

You\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB sleep\_VB all\_PDT the\_DT night\_NN .\_.

Later\_RB on\_IN we\_PRP can\_MD sleep\_VB ,\_, you\_PRP and\_CC I.\_NN I\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB back\_RB as\_RB soon\_RB as\_IN possible\_JJ .\_.

And\_CC then\_RB we\_PRP may\_MD begin\_VB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` May\_NNP begin\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` What\_WP on\_IN earth\_NN do\_VBP you\_PRP mean\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` We\_PRP shall\_MD see\_VB !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP answered\_VBD ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP hurried\_VBD out\_RP .\_.

He\_PRP came\_VBD back\_RP a\_DT moment\_NN later\_RB and\_CC put\_VB his\_PRP$ head\_NN inside\_IN the\_DT door\_NN and\_CC said\_VBD with\_IN warning\_NN finger\_NN held\_VBD up\_RP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Remember\_VB ,\_, she\_PRP is\_VBZ your\_PRP$ charge\_NN .\_.

If\_IN you\_PRP leave\_VBP her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC harm\_NN befall\_VBP ,\_, you\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB sleep\_VB easy\_JJ hereafter\_RB !\_. ''\_''

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP --\_: continued\_VBD .\_.

8\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP sat\_VBD up\_RP all\_DT night\_NN with\_IN Lucy\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT opiate\_NN worked\_VBD itself\_PRP off\_RP towards\_IN dusk\_NN ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP waked\_VBD naturally\_RB ;\_: she\_PRP looked\_VBD a\_DT different\_JJ being\_VBG from\_IN what\_WP she\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN before\_IN the\_DT operation\_NN .\_.

Her\_PRP$ spirits\_NNS even\_RB were\_VBD good\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP was\_VBD full\_JJ of\_IN a\_DT happy\_JJ vivacity\_NN ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB evidences\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT absolute\_JJ prostration\_NN which\_WDT she\_PRP had\_VBD undergone\_VBN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP told\_VBD Mrs.\_NNP Westenra\_NNP that\_IN Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP had\_VBD directed\_VBN that\_IN I\_PRP should\_MD sit\_VB up\_RP with\_IN her\_PRP she\_PRP almost\_RB pooh-poohed\_VBD the\_DT idea\_NN ,\_, pointing\_VBG out\_RP her\_PRP$ daughter\_NN 's\_POS renewed\_VBN strength\_NN and\_CC excellent\_JJ spirits\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD firm\_JJ ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, and\_CC made\_VBD preparations\_NNS for\_IN my\_PRP$ long\_JJ vigil\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB her\_PRP$ maid\_NN had\_VBD prepared\_VBN her\_PRP for\_IN the\_DT night\_NN I\_PRP came\_VBD in\_IN ,\_, having\_VBG in\_IN the\_DT meantime\_NN had\_VBD supper\_NN ,\_, and\_CC took\_VBD a\_DT seat\_NN by\_IN the\_DT bedside\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB in\_IN any\_DT way\_NN make\_NN objection\_NN ,\_, but\_CC looked\_VBD at\_IN me\_PRP gratefully\_RB whenever\_WRB I\_PRP caught\_VBD her\_PRP$ eye\_NN .\_.

After\_IN a\_DT long\_JJ spell\_NN she\_PRP seemed\_VBD sinking\_VBG off\_RP to\_TO sleep\_VB ,\_, but\_CC with\_IN an\_DT effort\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO pull\_VB herself\_PRP together\_RB and\_CC shook\_VBD it\_PRP off\_RP .\_.

This\_DT was\_VBD repeated\_VBN several\_JJ times\_NNS ,\_, with\_IN greater\_JJR effort\_NN and\_CC with\_IN shorter\_JJR pauses\_VBZ as\_IN the\_DT time\_NN moved\_VBD on\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD apparent\_JJ that\_IN she\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB want\_VB to\_TO sleep\_VB ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP tackled\_VBD the\_DT subject\_NN at\_IN once\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB want\_VB to\_TO go\_VB to\_TO sleep\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` No\_DT ;\_: I\_PRP am\_VBP afraid\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Afraid\_JJ to\_TO go\_VB to\_TO sleep\_VB !\_.

Why\_WRB so\_RB ?\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ the\_DT boon\_NN we\_PRP all\_DT crave\_VBP for\_IN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Ah\_UH ,\_, not\_RB if\_IN you\_PRP were\_VBD like\_IN me\_PRP --\_: if\_IN sleep\_NN was\_VBD to\_TO you\_PRP a\_DT presage\_VB of\_IN horror\_NN !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` A\_DT presage\_VBP of\_IN horror\_NN !\_.

What\_WP on\_IN earth\_NN do\_VBP you\_PRP mean\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB know\_VB ;\_: oh\_UH ,\_, I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB know\_VB .\_.

And\_CC that\_DT is\_VBZ what\_WP is\_VBZ so\_RB terrible\_JJ .\_.

All\_PDT this\_DT weakness\_NN comes\_VBZ to\_TO me\_PRP in\_IN sleep\_NN ;\_: until\_IN I\_NN dread\_NN the\_DT very\_JJ thought\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` But\_CC ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB girl\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP may\_MD sleep\_VB to-night\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP here\_RB watching\_VBG you\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP can\_MD promise\_VB that\_DT nothing\_NN will\_MD happen\_VB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Ah\_UH ,\_, I\_PRP can\_MD trust\_VB you\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP seized\_VBD the\_DT opportunity\_NN ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP promise\_VBP you\_PRP that\_IN if\_IN I\_PRP see\_VBP any\_DT evidence\_NN of\_IN bad\_JJ dreams\_NNS I\_PRP will\_MD wake\_VB you\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` You\_PRP will\_MD ?\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, will\_MD you\_PRP really\_RB ?\_.

How\_WRB good\_JJ you\_PRP are\_VBP to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

Then\_RB I\_PRP will\_MD sleep\_VB !\_. ''\_''

And\_CC almost\_RB at\_IN the\_DT word\_NN she\_PRP gave\_VBD a\_DT deep\_JJ sigh\_NN of\_IN relief\_NN ,\_, and\_CC sank\_VBD back\_RB ,\_, asleep\_RB .\_.

All\_DT night\_NN long\_RB I\_PRP watched\_VBD by\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

She\_PRP never\_RB stirred\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC slept\_VBD on\_IN and\_CC on\_IN in\_IN a\_DT deep\_JJ ,\_, tranquil\_JJ ,\_, life-giving\_JJ ,\_, health-giving\_JJ sleep\_NN .\_.

Her\_PRP$ lips\_NNS were\_VBD slightly\_RB parted\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC her\_PRP$ breast\_NN rose\_VBD and\_CC fell\_VBD with\_IN the\_DT regularity\_NN of\_IN a\_DT pendulum\_NN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT smile\_NN on\_IN her\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP was\_VBD evident\_JJ that\_IN no\_DT bad\_JJ dreams\_NNS had\_VBD come\_VBN to\_TO disturb\_VB her\_PRP$ peace\_NN of\_IN mind\_NN .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT early\_JJ morning\_NN her\_PRP$ maid\_NN came\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP left\_VBD her\_PRP in\_IN her\_PRP$ care\_NN and\_CC took\_VBD myself\_PRP back\_RB home\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD anxious\_JJ about\_IN many\_JJ things\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP sent\_VBD a\_DT short\_JJ wire\_NN to\_TO Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP and\_CC to\_TO Arthur\_NNP ,\_, telling\_VBG them\_PRP of\_IN the\_DT excellent\_JJ result\_NN of\_IN the\_DT operation\_NN .\_.

My\_PRP$ own\_JJ work\_NN ,\_, with\_IN its\_PRP$ manifold\_NN arrears\_NNS ,\_, took\_VBD me\_PRP all\_DT day\_NN to\_TO clear\_VB off\_RP ;\_: it\_PRP was\_VBD dark\_JJ when\_WRB I\_PRP was\_VBD able\_JJ to\_TO inquire\_VB about\_IN my\_PRP$ zoöphagous\_JJ patient\_NN .\_.

The\_DT report\_NN was\_VBD good\_JJ ;\_: he\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN quite\_RB quiet\_JJ for\_IN the\_DT past\_JJ day\_NN and\_CC night\_NN .\_.

A\_DT telegram\_NN came\_VBD from\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP at\_IN Amsterdam\_NNP whilst\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD at\_IN dinner\_NN ,\_, suggesting\_VBG that\_IN I\_PRP should\_MD be\_VB at\_IN Hillingham\_FW to-night\_FW ,\_, as\_IN it\_PRP might\_MD be\_VB well\_RB to\_TO be\_VB at\_IN hand\_NN ,\_, and\_CC stating\_VBG that\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD leaving\_VBG by\_IN the\_DT night\_NN mail\_NN and\_CC would\_MD join\_VB me\_PRP early\_RB in\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN .\_.

9\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP was\_VBD pretty\_RB tired\_VBN and\_CC worn\_VBN out\_RP when\_WRB I\_PRP got\_VBD to\_TO Hillingham\_NNP .\_.

For\_IN two\_CD nights\_NNS I\_PRP had\_VBD hardly\_RB had\_VBN a\_DT wink\_NN of\_IN sleep\_NN ,\_, and\_CC my\_PRP$ brain\_NN was\_VBD beginning\_VBG to\_TO feel\_VB that\_DT numbness\_NN which\_WDT marks\_VBZ cerebral\_JJ exhaustion\_NN .\_.

Lucy\_NNP was\_VBD up\_IN and\_CC in\_IN cheerful\_JJ spirits\_NNS .\_.

When\_WRB she\_PRP shook\_VBD hands\_NNS with\_IN me\_PRP she\_PRP looked\_VBD sharply\_RB in\_IN my\_PRP$ face\_NN and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` No\_DT sitting\_VBG up\_RP to-night\_NN for\_IN you\_PRP .\_.

You\_PRP are\_VBP worn\_VBN out\_RP .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP quite\_RB well\_RB again\_RB ;\_: indeed\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP ;\_: and\_CC if\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB any\_DT sitting\_VBG up\_RP ,\_, it\_PRP is\_VBZ I\_PRP who\_WP will\_MD sit\_VB up\_RP with\_IN you\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB argue\_VB the\_DT point\_NN ,\_, but\_CC went\_VBD and\_CC had\_VBD my\_PRP$ supper\_NN .\_.

Lucy\_NNP came\_VBD with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, enlivened\_VBN by\_IN her\_PRP$ charming\_JJ presence\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP made\_VBD an\_DT excellent\_JJ meal\_NN ,\_, and\_CC had\_VBD a\_DT couple\_NN of\_IN glasses\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT more\_JJR than\_IN excellent\_JJ port\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB Lucy\_NNP took\_VBD me\_PRP upstairs\_RB ,\_, and\_CC showed\_VBD me\_PRP a\_DT room\_NN next\_IN her\_PRP$ own\_JJ ,\_, where\_WRB a\_DT cozy\_JJ fire\_NN was\_VBD burning\_VBG .\_.

``\_`` Now\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' she\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` you\_PRP must\_MD stay\_VB here\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD leave\_VB this\_DT door\_NN open\_JJ and\_CC my\_PRP$ door\_NN too\_RB .\_.

You\_PRP can\_MD lie\_VB on\_IN the\_DT sofa\_NN for\_IN I\_PRP know\_VBP that\_DT nothing\_NN would\_MD induce\_VB any\_DT of\_IN you\_PRP doctors\_NNS to\_TO go\_VB to\_TO bed\_NN whilst\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT patient\_NN above\_IN the\_DT horizon\_NN .\_.

If\_IN I\_PRP want\_VBP anything\_NN I\_PRP shall\_MD call\_VB out\_RP ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP can\_MD come\_VB to\_TO me\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB but\_CC acquiesce\_RB ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD ``\_`` dog-tired\_JJ ,\_, ''\_'' and\_CC could\_MD not\_RB have\_VB sat\_VBN up\_RP had\_VBD I\_PRP tried\_VBD .\_.

So\_RB ,\_, on\_IN her\_PRP$ renewing\_VBG her\_PRP$ promise\_NN to\_TO call\_VB me\_PRP if\_IN she\_PRP should\_MD want\_VB anything\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP lay\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT sofa\_NN ,\_, and\_CC forgot\_VBD all\_DT about\_IN everything\_NN .\_.

Lucy\_NNP Westenra\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

9\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP feel\_VBP so\_RB happy\_JJ to-night\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN so\_RB miserably\_RB weak\_JJ ,\_, that\_DT to\_TO be\_VB able\_JJ to\_TO think\_VB and\_CC move\_VB about\_IN is\_VBZ like\_IN feeling\_VBG sunshine\_NN after\_IN a\_DT long\_JJ spell\_NN of\_IN east\_JJ wind\_NN out\_IN of\_IN a\_DT steel\_NN sky\_NN .\_.

Somehow\_RB Arthur\_NNP feels\_VBZ very\_RB ,\_, very\_RB close\_RB to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP seem\_VBP to\_TO feel\_VB his\_PRP$ presence\_NN warm\_JJ about\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP suppose\_VBP it\_PRP is\_VBZ that\_IN sickness\_NN and\_CC weakness\_NN are\_VBP selfish\_JJ things\_NNS and\_CC turn\_VB our\_PRP$ inner\_JJ eyes\_NNS and\_CC sympathy\_NN on\_IN ourselves\_PRP ,\_, whilst\_IN health\_NN and\_CC strength\_NN give\_VBP Love\_NNP rein\_NN ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN thought\_NN and\_CC feeling\_NN he\_PRP can\_MD wander\_VB where\_WRB he\_PRP wills\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP where\_WRB my\_PRP$ thoughts\_NNS are\_VBP .\_.

If\_IN Arthur\_NNP only\_RB knew\_VBD !\_.

My\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, your\_PRP$ ears\_NNS must\_MD tingle\_VB as\_IN you\_PRP sleep\_VBP ,\_, as\_IN mine\_NN do\_VBP waking\_VBG .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, the\_DT blissful\_JJ rest\_NN of\_IN last\_JJ night\_NN !\_.

How\_WRB I\_PRP slept\_VBD ,\_, with\_IN that\_DT dear\_RB ,\_, good\_JJ Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP watching\_VBG me\_PRP .\_.

And\_CC to-night\_NN I\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB fear\_VB to\_TO sleep\_VB ,\_, since\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ close\_JJ at\_IN hand\_NN and\_CC within\_IN call\_NN .\_.

Thank\_VB everybody\_NN for\_IN being\_VBG so\_RB good\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP !\_.

Thank\_VB God\_NNP !\_.

Good-night\_JJ ,\_, Arthur\_NNP .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

10\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP was\_VBD conscious\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP 's\_POS hand\_NN on\_IN my\_PRP$ head\_NN ,\_, and\_CC started\_VBD awake\_RB all\_DT in\_IN a\_DT second\_NN .\_.

That\_DT is\_VBZ one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT things\_NNS that\_IN we\_PRP learn\_VBP in\_IN an\_DT asylum\_NN ,\_, at\_IN any\_DT rate\_NN .\_.

``\_`` And\_CC how\_WRB is\_VBZ our\_PRP$ patient\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Well\_UH ,\_, when\_WRB I\_PRP left\_VBD her\_PRP ,\_, or\_CC rather\_RB when\_WRB she\_PRP left\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP answered\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Come\_VB ,\_, let\_VB us\_PRP see\_VB ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

And\_CC together\_RB we\_PRP went\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN .\_.

The\_DT blind\_JJ was\_VBD down\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP went\_VBD over\_RP to\_TO raise\_VB it\_PRP gently\_RB ,\_, whilst\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP stepped\_VBD ,\_, with\_IN his\_PRP$ soft\_JJ ,\_, cat-like\_JJ tread\_VB ,\_, over\_IN to\_TO the\_DT bed\_NN .\_.

As\_IN I\_PRP raised\_VBD the\_DT blind\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT morning\_NN sunlight\_NN flooded\_VBD the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP heard\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP 's\_POS low\_JJ hiss\_NN of\_IN inspiration\_NN ,\_, and\_CC knowing\_VBG its\_PRP$ rarity\_NN ,\_, a\_DT deadly\_JJ fear\_NN shot\_NN through\_IN my\_PRP$ heart\_NN .\_.

As\_IN I\_PRP passed\_VBD over\_IN he\_PRP moved\_VBD back\_RB ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ exclamation\_NN of\_IN horror\_NN ,\_, ``\_`` Gott\_NNP in\_IN Himmel\_NNP !\_. ''\_''

needed\_VBN no\_DT enforcement\_NN from\_IN his\_PRP$ agonised\_JJ face\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP raised\_VBD his\_PRP$ hand\_NN and\_CC pointed\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT bed\_NN ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ iron\_NN face\_NN was\_VBD drawn\_VBN and\_CC ashen\_JJ white\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP felt\_VBD my\_PRP$ knees\_NNS begin\_VBP to\_TO tremble\_VB .\_.

There\_EX on\_IN the\_DT bed\_NN ,\_, seemingly\_RB in\_IN a\_DT swoon\_NN ,\_, lay\_VBD poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP ,\_, more\_RBR horribly\_RB white\_JJ and\_CC wan-looking\_JJ than\_IN ever\_RB .\_.

Even\_RB the\_DT lips\_NNS were\_VBD white\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT gums\_NNS seemed\_VBD to\_TO have\_VB shrunken\_VBN back\_RB from\_IN the\_DT teeth\_NNS ,\_, as\_IN we\_PRP sometimes\_RB see\_VBP in\_IN a\_DT corpse\_NN after\_IN a\_DT prolonged\_JJ illness\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP raised\_VBD his\_PRP$ foot\_NN to\_TO stamp\_VB in\_IN anger\_NN ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT instinct\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ life\_NN and\_CC all\_PDT the\_DT long\_JJ years\_NNS of\_IN habit\_NN stood\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP put\_VBD it\_PRP down\_RP again\_RB softly\_RB .\_.

``\_`` Quick\_RB !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Bring\_VB the\_DT brandy\_NN .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP flew\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT dining-room\_NN ,\_, and\_CC returned\_VBD with\_IN the\_DT decanter\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP wetted\_VBD the\_DT poor\_JJ white\_JJ lips\_NNS with\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC together\_RB we\_PRP rubbed\_VBD palm\_NN and\_CC wrist\_NN and\_CC heart\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP felt\_VBD her\_PRP$ heart\_NN ,\_, and\_CC after\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ moments\_NNS of\_IN agonising\_JJ suspense\_NN said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` It\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB too\_RB late\_JJ .\_.

It\_PRP beats\_VBZ ,\_, though\_IN but\_CC feebly\_RB .\_.

All\_DT our\_PRP$ work\_NN is\_VBZ undone\_VBN ;\_: we\_PRP must\_MD begin\_VB again\_RB .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT young\_JJ Arthur\_NNP here\_RB now\_RB ;\_: I\_PRP have\_VBP to\_TO call\_VB on\_IN you\_PRP yourself\_PRP this\_DT time\_NN ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

As\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD ,\_, he\_PRP was\_VBD dipping\_VBG into\_IN his\_PRP$ bag\_NN and\_CC producing\_VBG the\_DT instruments\_NNS for\_IN transfusion\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP had\_VBD taken\_VBN off\_RP my\_PRP$ coat\_NN and\_CC rolled\_VBD up\_RP my\_PRP$ shirt-sleeve\_JJ .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT possibility\_NN of\_IN an\_DT opiate\_NN just\_RB at\_IN present\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC no\_DT need\_NN of\_IN one\_CD ;\_: and\_CC so\_RB ,\_, without\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN 's\_POS delay\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP began\_VBD the\_DT operation\_NN .\_.

After\_IN a\_DT time\_NN --\_: it\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB seem\_VB a\_DT short\_JJ time\_NN either\_RB ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT draining\_VBG away\_RB of\_IN one\_NN 's\_POS blood\_NN ,\_, no\_DT matter\_NN how\_WRB willingly\_RB it\_PRP be\_VB given\_VBN ,\_, is\_VBZ a\_DT terrible\_JJ feeling\_NN --\_: Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP held\_VBD up\_RP a\_DT warning\_NN finger\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Do\_VBP not\_RB stir\_VB ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` but\_CC I\_PRP fear\_VBP that\_IN with\_IN growing\_VBG strength\_NN she\_PRP may\_MD wake\_VB ;\_: and\_CC that\_WDT would\_MD make\_VB danger\_NN ,\_, oh\_UH ,\_, so\_RB much\_JJ danger\_NN .\_.

But\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD precaution\_NN take\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD give\_VB hypodermic\_JJ injection\_NN of\_IN morphia\_NN .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP proceeded\_VBD then\_RB ,\_, swiftly\_RB and\_CC deftly\_RB ,\_, to\_TO carry\_VB out\_RP his\_PRP$ intent\_NN .\_.

The\_DT effect\_NN on\_IN Lucy\_NNP was\_VBD not\_RB bad\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT faint\_JJ seemed\_VBD to\_TO merge\_VB subtly\_RB into\_IN the\_DT narcotic\_JJ sleep\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD with\_IN a\_DT feeling\_NN of\_IN personal\_JJ pride\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB a\_DT faint\_JJ tinge\_NN of\_IN colour\_NN steal\_VBP back\_RB into\_IN the\_DT pallid\_JJ cheeks\_NNS and\_CC lips\_NNS .\_.

No\_DT man\_NN knows\_VBZ ,\_, till\_IN he\_PRP experiences\_VBZ it\_PRP ,\_, what\_WP it\_PRP is\_VBZ to\_TO feel\_VB his\_PRP$ own\_JJ life-blood\_NN drawn\_VBN away\_RB into\_IN the\_DT veins\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT woman\_NN he\_PRP loves\_VBZ .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP watched\_VBD me\_PRP critically\_RB .\_.

``\_`` That\_DT will\_MD do\_VB ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Already\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP remonstrated\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` You\_PRP took\_VBD a\_DT great\_JJ deal\_NN more\_RBR from\_IN Art\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

To\_TO which\_WDT he\_PRP smiled\_VBD a\_DT sad\_JJ sort\_NN of\_IN smile\_NN as\_IN he\_PRP replied\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` He\_PRP is\_VBZ her\_PRP$ lover\_NN ,\_, her\_PRP$ fiancé\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP have\_VBP work\_NN ,\_, much\_JJ work\_NN ,\_, to\_TO do\_VB for\_IN her\_PRP and\_CC for\_IN others\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC the\_DT present\_JJ will\_NN suffice\_NN .\_. ''\_''

When\_WRB we\_PRP stopped\_VBD the\_DT operation\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP attended\_VBD to\_TO Lucy\_NNP ,\_, whilst\_IN I\_PRP applied\_VBD digital\_JJ pressure\_NN to\_TO my\_PRP$ own\_JJ incision\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP laid\_VBD down\_RB ,\_, whilst\_IN I\_PRP waited\_VBD his\_PRP$ leisure\_NN to\_TO attend\_VB to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP felt\_VBD faint\_JJ and\_CC a\_DT little\_RB sick\_JJ .\_.

By-and-by\_JJ he\_PRP bound\_VBD up\_RP my\_PRP$ wound\_NN ,\_, and\_CC sent\_VBD me\_PRP downstairs\_VBZ to\_TO get\_VB a\_DT glass\_NN of\_IN wine\_NN for\_IN myself\_PRP .\_.

As\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD leaving\_VBG the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP came\_VBD after\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC half\_NN whispered\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Mind\_NN ,\_, nothing\_NN must\_MD be\_VB said\_VBN of\_IN this\_DT .\_.

If\_IN our\_PRP$ young\_JJ lover\_NN should\_MD turn\_VB up\_RP unexpected\_JJ ,\_, as\_IN before\_RB ,\_, no\_DT word\_NN to\_TO him\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP would\_MD at\_IN once\_RB frighten\_VB him\_PRP and\_CC enjealous\_VBZ him\_PRP ,\_, too\_RB .\_.

There\_EX must\_MD be\_VB none\_NN .\_.

So\_RB !\_. ''\_''

When\_WRB I\_PRP came\_VBD back\_RB he\_PRP looked\_VBD at\_IN me\_PRP carefully\_RB ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP are\_VBP not\_RB much\_RB the\_DT worse\_JJR .\_.

Go\_VB into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, and\_CC lie\_VB on\_IN your\_PRP$ sofa\_NN ,\_, and\_CC rest\_NN awhile\_RB ;\_: then\_RB have\_VBP much\_JJ breakfast\_NN ,\_, and\_CC come\_VBN here\_RB to\_TO me\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP followed\_VBD out\_RP his\_PRP$ orders\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP knew\_VBD how\_WRB right\_JJ and\_CC wise\_JJ they\_PRP were\_VBD .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD done\_VBN my\_PRP$ part\_NN ,\_, and\_CC now\_RB my\_PRP$ next\_JJ duty\_NN was\_VBD to\_TO keep\_VB up\_RP my\_PRP$ strength\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP felt\_VBD very\_RB weak\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN the\_DT weakness\_NN lost\_VBD something\_NN of\_IN the\_DT amazement\_NN at\_IN what\_WP had\_VBD occurred\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP fell\_VBD asleep\_RB on\_IN the\_DT sofa\_NN ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, wondering\_VBG over\_IN and\_CC over\_IN again\_RB how\_WRB Lucy\_NNP had\_VBD made\_VBN such\_JJ a\_DT retrograde\_JJ movement\_NN ,\_, and\_CC how\_WRB she\_PRP could\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN drained\_VBN of\_IN so\_RB much\_JJ blood\_NN with\_IN no\_DT sign\_NN anywhere\_RB to\_TO show\_VB for\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP think\_VBP I\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB continued\_VBN my\_PRP$ wonder\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ dreams\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN ,\_, sleeping\_VBG and\_CC waking\_VBG ,\_, my\_PRP$ thoughts\_NNS always\_RB came\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO the\_DT little\_JJ punctures\_NNS in\_IN her\_PRP$ throat\_NN and\_CC the\_DT ragged\_JJ ,\_, exhausted\_VBN appearance\_NN of\_IN their\_PRP$ edges\_NNS --\_: tiny\_JJ though\_IN they\_PRP were\_VBD .\_.

Lucy\_NNP slept\_VBD well\_RB into\_IN the\_DT day\_NN ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB she\_PRP woke\_VBD she\_PRP was\_VBD fairly\_RB well\_RB and\_CC strong\_JJ ,\_, though\_IN not\_RB nearly\_RB so\_RB much\_JJ so\_RB as\_IN the\_DT day\_NN before\_RB .\_.

When\_WRB Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP had\_VBD seen\_VBN her\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP went\_VBD out\_RP for\_IN a\_DT walk\_NN ,\_, leaving\_VBG me\_PRP in\_IN charge\_NN ,\_, with\_IN strict\_JJ injunctions\_NNS that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB to\_TO leave\_VB her\_PRP for\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD hear\_VB his\_PRP$ voice\_NN in\_IN the\_DT hall\_NN ,\_, asking\_VBG the\_DT way\_NN to\_TO the\_DT nearest\_JJS telegraph\_NN office\_NN .\_.

Lucy\_NNP chatted\_VBD with\_IN me\_PRP freely\_RB ,\_, and\_CC seemed\_VBD quite\_RB unconscious\_JJ that\_IN anything\_NN had\_VBD happened\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP tried\_VBD to\_TO keep\_VB her\_PRP amused\_VBN and\_CC interested\_VBN .\_.

When\_WRB her\_PRP$ mother\_NN came\_VBD up\_RP to\_TO see\_VB her\_PRP ,\_, she\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB seem\_VB to\_TO notice\_VB any\_DT change\_NN whatever\_WDT ,\_, but\_CC said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP gratefully\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` We\_PRP owe\_VBP you\_PRP so\_RB much\_RB ,\_, Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP ,\_, for\_IN all\_DT you\_PRP have\_VBP done\_VBN ,\_, but\_CC you\_PRP really\_RB must\_MD now\_RB take\_VB care\_NN not\_RB to\_TO overwork\_VB yourself\_PRP .\_.

You\_PRP are\_VBP looking\_VBG pale\_NN yourself\_PRP .\_.

You\_PRP want\_VBP a\_DT wife\_NN to\_TO nurse\_NN and\_CC look\_VB after\_IN you\_PRP a\_DT bit\_NN ;\_: that\_IN you\_PRP do\_VBP !\_. ''\_''

As\_IN she\_PRP spoke\_VBD ,\_, Lucy\_NNP turned\_VBD crimson\_JJ ,\_, though\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD only\_RB momentarily\_RB ,\_, for\_IN her\_PRP$ poor\_JJ wasted\_VBN veins\_NNS could\_MD not\_RB stand\_VB for\_IN long\_RB such\_JJ an\_DT unwonted\_JJ drain\_NN to\_TO the\_DT head\_NN .\_.

The\_DT reaction\_NN came\_VBD in\_IN excessive\_JJ pallor\_NN as\_IN she\_PRP turned\_VBD imploring\_VBG eyes\_NNS on\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP smiled\_VBD and\_CC nodded\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC laid\_VBD my\_PRP$ finger\_NN on\_IN my\_PRP$ lips\_NNS ;\_: with\_IN a\_DT sigh\_NN ,\_, she\_PRP sank\_VBD back\_RB amid\_IN her\_PRP$ pillows\_NNS .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP returned\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT couple\_NN of\_IN hours\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC presently\_RB said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP :\_: ``\_`` Now\_RB you\_PRP go\_VBP home\_NN ,\_, and\_CC eat\_VB much\_JJ and\_CC drink\_NN enough\_RB .\_.

Make\_VB yourself\_PRP strong\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP stay\_VBP here\_RB to-night\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD sit\_VB up\_RP with\_IN little\_RB miss\_VB myself\_PRP .\_.

You\_PRP and\_CC I\_PRP must\_MD watch\_VB the\_DT case\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB none\_NN other\_JJ to\_TO know\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP grave\_JJ reasons\_NNS .\_.

No\_RB ,\_, do\_VBP not\_RB ask\_VB them\_PRP ;\_: think\_VB what\_WP you\_PRP will\_MD .\_.

Do\_VBP not\_RB fear\_VB to\_TO think\_VB even\_RB the\_DT most\_RBS not-probable\_JJ .\_.

Good-night\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

In\_IN the\_DT hall\_NN two\_CD of\_IN the\_DT maids\_NNS came\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC asked\_VBD if\_IN they\_PRP or\_CC either\_DT of\_IN them\_PRP might\_MD not\_RB sit\_VB up\_RP with\_IN Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP .\_.

They\_PRP implored\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO let\_VB them\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC when\_WRB I\_PRP said\_VBD it\_PRP was\_VBD Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP 's\_POS wish\_NN that\_IN either\_CC he\_PRP or\_CC I\_PRP should\_MD sit\_VB up\_RP ,\_, they\_PRP asked\_VBD me\_PRP quite\_RB piteously\_RB to\_TO intercede\_VB with\_IN the\_DT ``\_`` foreign\_JJ gentleman\_NN .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP was\_VBD much\_RB touched\_VBN by\_IN their\_PRP$ kindness\_NN .\_.

Perhaps\_RB it\_PRP is\_VBZ because\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP weak\_JJ at\_IN present\_NN ,\_, and\_CC perhaps\_RB because\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD on\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS account\_NN ,\_, that\_IN their\_PRP$ devotion\_NN was\_VBD manifested\_VBN ;\_: for\_IN over\_IN and\_CC over\_IN again\_RB have\_VBP I\_PRP seen\_VBN similar\_JJ instances\_NNS of\_IN woman\_NN 's\_POS kindness\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP got\_VBD back\_RB here\_RB in\_IN time\_NN for\_IN a\_DT late\_JJ dinner\_NN ;\_: went\_VBD my\_PRP$ rounds\_NNS --\_: all\_RB well\_RB ;\_: and\_CC set\_VB this\_DT down\_RP whilst\_IN waiting\_VBG for\_IN sleep\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ coming\_VBG .\_.

11\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: This\_DT afternoon\_NN I\_PRP went\_VBD over\_RP to\_TO Hillingham\_NNP .\_.

Found\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP in\_IN excellent\_JJ spirits\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC Lucy\_NNP much\_RB better\_RBR .\_.

Shortly\_RB after\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD arrived\_VBN ,\_, a\_DT big\_JJ parcel\_NN from\_IN abroad\_RB came\_VBD for\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP opened\_VBD it\_PRP with\_IN much\_JJ impressment\_NN --\_: assumed\_VBN ,\_, of\_IN course\_NN --\_: and\_CC showed\_VBD a\_DT great\_JJ bundle\_NN of\_IN white\_JJ flowers\_NNS .\_.

``\_`` These\_DT are\_VBP for\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` For\_IN me\_PRP ?\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Yes\_UH ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, but\_CC not\_RB for\_IN you\_PRP to\_TO play\_VB with\_IN .\_.

These\_DT are\_VBP medicines\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

Here\_RB Lucy\_NNP made\_VBD a\_DT wry\_JJ face\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Nay\_NN ,\_, but\_CC they\_PRP are\_VBP not\_RB to\_TO take\_VB in\_IN a\_DT decoction\_NN or\_CC in\_IN nauseous\_JJ form\_NN ,\_, so\_IN you\_PRP need\_MD not\_RB snub\_VB that\_IN so\_RB charming\_JJ nose\_NN ,\_, or\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD point\_VB out\_RP to\_TO my\_PRP$ friend\_NN Arthur\_NNP what\_WP woes\_NNS he\_PRP may\_MD have\_VB to\_TO endure\_VB in\_IN seeing\_VBG so\_RB much\_JJ beauty\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP so\_RB loves\_VBZ so\_RB much\_RB distort\_VB .\_.

Aha\_NNP ,\_, my\_PRP$ pretty\_RB miss\_VBP ,\_, that\_WDT bring\_VBP the\_DT so\_RB nice\_JJ nose\_NN all\_RB straight\_RB again\_RB .\_.

This\_DT is\_VBZ medicinal\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC you\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB know\_VB how\_WRB .\_.

I\_PRP put\_VBD him\_PRP in\_IN your\_PRP$ window\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP make\_VBP pretty\_JJ wreath\_NN ,\_, and\_CC hang\_VB him\_PRP round\_VB your\_PRP$ neck\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN you\_PRP sleep\_VBP well\_RB .\_.

Oh\_UH yes\_UH !\_.

they\_PRP ,\_, like\_IN the\_DT lotus\_NN flower\_NN ,\_, make\_VB your\_PRP$ trouble\_NN forgotten\_VBD .\_.

It\_PRP smell\_VBP so\_RB like\_IN the\_DT waters\_NNS of\_IN Lethe\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC of\_IN that\_DT fountain\_NN of\_IN youth\_NN that\_IN the\_DT Conquistadores\_NNPS sought\_VBD for\_IN in\_IN the\_DT Floridas\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC find\_VB him\_PRP all\_RB too\_RB late\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

Whilst\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD speaking\_VBG ,\_, Lucy\_NNP had\_VBD been\_VBN examining\_VBG the\_DT flowers\_NNS and\_CC smelling\_VBG them\_PRP .\_.

Now\_RB she\_PRP threw\_VBD them\_PRP down\_RP ,\_, saying\_VBG ,\_, with\_IN half-laughter\_NN ,\_, and\_CC half-disgust\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, Professor\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP believe\_VBP you\_PRP are\_VBP only\_RB putting\_VBG up\_RP a\_DT joke\_NN on\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

Why\_WRB ,\_, these\_DT flowers\_NNS are\_VBP only\_RB common\_JJ garlic\_NN .\_. ''\_''

To\_TO my\_PRP$ surprise\_NN ,\_, Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP rose\_VBD up\_RB and\_CC said\_VBD with\_IN all\_DT his\_PRP$ sternness\_NN ,\_, his\_PRP$ iron\_NN jaw\_NN set\_NN and\_CC his\_PRP$ bushy\_JJ eyebrows\_NNS meeting\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` No\_DT trifling\_NN with\_IN me\_PRP !\_.

I\_PRP never\_RB jest\_VBD !\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ grim\_JJ purpose\_NN in\_IN all\_DT I\_PRP do\_VBP ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP warn\_VBP you\_PRP that\_IN you\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB thwart\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

Take\_VB care\_NN ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT sake\_NN of\_IN others\_NNS if\_IN not\_RB for\_IN your\_PRP$ own\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

Then\_RB seeing\_VBG poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP scared\_VBD ,\_, as\_IN she\_PRP might\_MD well\_RB be\_VB ,\_, he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN more\_RBR gently\_RB :\_: ``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, little\_RB miss\_VBP ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, do\_VBP not\_RB fear\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP only\_RB do\_VBP for\_IN your\_PRP$ good\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC there\_EX is\_VBZ much\_JJ virtue\_NN to\_TO you\_PRP in\_IN those\_DT so\_RB common\_JJ flowers\_NNS .\_.

See\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP place\_VBP them\_PRP myself\_PRP in\_IN your\_PRP$ room\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP make\_VBP myself\_PRP the\_DT wreath\_NN that\_IN you\_PRP are\_VBP to\_TO wear\_VB .\_.

But\_CC hush\_JJ !\_.

no\_DT telling\_VBG to\_TO others\_NNS that\_WDT make\_VBP so\_RB inquisitive\_JJ questions\_NNS .\_.

We\_PRP must\_MD obey\_VB ,\_, and\_CC silence\_NN is\_VBZ a\_DT part\_NN of\_IN obedience\_NN ;\_: and\_CC obedience\_NN is\_VBZ to\_TO bring\_VB you\_PRP strong\_JJ and\_CC well\_RB into\_IN loving\_JJ arms\_NNS that\_WDT wait\_VBP for\_IN you\_PRP .\_.

Now\_RB sit\_VB still\_RB awhile\_RB .\_.

Come\_VB with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP shall\_MD help\_VB me\_PRP deck\_NN the\_DT room\_NN with\_IN my\_PRP$ garlic\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT is\_VBZ all\_PDT the\_DT way\_NN from\_IN Haarlem\_NNP ,\_, where\_WRB my\_PRP$ friend\_NN Vanderpool\_NNP raise\_VB herb\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ glass-houses\_NNS all\_PDT the\_DT year\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO telegraph\_VB yesterday\_NN ,\_, or\_CC they\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB have\_VB been\_VBN here\_RB .\_. ''\_''

We\_PRP went\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, taking\_VBG the\_DT flowers\_NNS with\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP 's\_POS actions\_NNS were\_VBD certainly\_RB odd\_JJ and\_CC not\_RB to\_TO be\_VB found\_VBN in\_IN any\_DT pharmacopœia\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP ever\_RB heard\_VBD of\_IN .\_.

First\_RB he\_PRP fastened\_VBD up\_RP the\_DT windows\_NNS and\_CC latched\_VBD them\_PRP securely\_RB ;\_: next\_JJ ,\_, taking\_VBG a\_DT handful\_NN of\_IN the\_DT flowers\_NNS ,\_, he\_PRP rubbed\_VBD them\_PRP all\_DT over\_IN the\_DT sashes\_NNS ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN to\_TO ensure\_VB that\_IN every\_DT whiff\_NN of\_IN air\_NN that\_WDT might\_MD get\_VB in\_IN would\_MD be\_VB laden\_JJ with\_IN the\_DT garlic\_JJ smell\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB with\_IN the\_DT wisp\_NN he\_PRP rubbed\_VBD all\_DT over\_IN the\_DT jamb\_NN of\_IN the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, above\_RB ,\_, below\_RB ,\_, and\_CC at\_IN each\_DT side\_NN ,\_, and\_CC round\_VB the\_DT fireplace\_NN in\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ way\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP all\_DT seemed\_VBD grotesque\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC presently\_RB I\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Well\_NNP ,\_, Professor\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP know\_VBP you\_PRP always\_RB have\_VBP a\_DT reason\_NN for\_IN what\_WP you\_PRP do\_VBP ,\_, but\_CC this\_DT certainly\_RB puzzles\_NNS me\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ well\_RB we\_PRP have\_VBP no\_DT sceptic\_NN here\_RB ,\_, or\_CC he\_PRP would\_MD say\_VB that\_IN you\_PRP were\_VBD working\_VBG some\_DT spell\_NN to\_TO keep\_VB out\_RP an\_DT evil\_JJ spirit\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Perhaps\_RB I\_PRP am\_VBP !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP answered\_VBD quietly\_RB as\_IN he\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO make\_VB the\_DT wreath\_NN which\_WDT Lucy\_NNP was\_VBD to\_TO wear\_VB round\_VB her\_PRP$ neck\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP then\_RB waited\_VBD whilst\_IN Lucy\_NNP made\_VBD her\_PRP$ toilet\_NN for\_IN the\_DT night\_NN ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB she\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN bed\_NN he\_PRP came\_VBD and\_CC himself\_PRP fixed\_VBD the\_DT wreath\_NN of\_IN garlic\_JJ round\_NN her\_PRP$ neck\_NN .\_.

The\_DT last\_JJ words\_NNS he\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO her\_PRP were\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Take\_VB care\_NN you\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB disturb\_VB it\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC even\_RB if\_IN the\_DT room\_NN feel\_NN close\_NN ,\_, do\_VBP not\_RB to-night\_JJ open\_NN the\_DT window\_NN or\_CC the\_DT door\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP promise\_VBP ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD Lucy\_NNP ,\_, ``\_`` and\_CC thank\_VB you\_PRP both\_CC a\_DT thousand\_CD times\_NNS for\_IN all\_DT your\_PRP$ kindness\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP !\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, what\_WP have\_VBP I\_PRP done\_VBN to\_TO be\_VB blessed\_VBN with\_IN such\_JJ friends\_NNS ?\_. ''\_''

As\_IN we\_PRP left\_VBD the\_DT house\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ fly\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT was\_VBD waiting\_VBG ,\_, Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` To-night\_JJ I\_PRP can\_MD sleep\_VB in\_IN peace\_NN ,\_, and\_CC sleep\_VB I\_PRP want\_VBP --\_: two\_CD nights\_NNS of\_IN travel\_NN ,\_, much\_JJ reading\_NN in\_IN the\_DT day\_NN between\_IN ,\_, and\_CC much\_JJ anxiety\_NN on\_IN the\_DT day\_NN to\_TO follow\_VB ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT night\_NN to\_TO sit\_VB up\_RP ,\_, without\_IN to\_TO wink\_NN .\_.

To-morrow\_NN in\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN early\_RB you\_PRP call\_VBP for\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP come\_VBP together\_RB to\_TO see\_VB our\_PRP$ pretty\_RB miss\_VB ,\_, so\_RB much\_RB more\_RBR strong\_JJ for\_IN my\_PRP$ `\_`` spell\_NN '\_'' which\_WDT I\_PRP have\_VBP work\_NN .\_.

Ho\_NNP !\_.

ho\_FW !\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP seemed\_VBD so\_RB confident\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP ,\_, remembering\_VBG my\_PRP$ own\_JJ confidence\_NN two\_CD nights\_NNS before\_IN and\_CC with\_IN the\_DT baneful\_JJ result\_NN ,\_, felt\_VBD awe\_JJ and\_CC vague\_JJ terror\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN my\_PRP$ weakness\_NN that\_WDT made\_VBD me\_PRP hesitate\_VB to\_TO tell\_VB it\_PRP to\_TO my\_PRP$ friend\_NN ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP felt\_VBD it\_PRP all\_PDT the\_DT more\_JJR ,\_, like\_IN unshed\_JJ tears\_NNS .\_.

CHAPTER\_NNP XI\_NNP Lucy\_NNP Westenra\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

12\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: How\_WRB good\_JJ they\_PRP all\_DT are\_VBP to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP quite\_RB love\_VBP that\_IN dear\_RB Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP wonder\_VBP why\_WRB he\_PRP was\_VBD so\_RB anxious\_JJ about\_IN these\_DT flowers\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP positively\_RB frightened\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP was\_VBD so\_RB fierce\_JJ .\_.

And\_CC yet\_RB he\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN right\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP feel\_VBP comfort\_NN from\_IN them\_PRP already\_RB .\_.

Somehow\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB dread\_NN being\_VBG alone\_RB to-night\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP can\_MD go\_VB to\_TO sleep\_VB without\_IN fear\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB mind\_VB any\_DT flapping\_VBG outside\_IN the\_DT window\_NN .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, the\_DT terrible\_JJ struggle\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP had\_VBN against\_IN sleep\_NN so\_RB often\_RB of\_IN late\_RB ;\_: the\_DT pain\_NN of\_IN the\_DT sleeplessness\_NN ,\_, or\_CC the\_DT pain\_NN of\_IN the\_DT fear\_NN of\_IN sleep\_NN ,\_, with\_IN such\_JJ unknown\_JJ horrors\_NNS as\_IN it\_PRP has\_VBZ for\_IN me\_PRP !\_.

How\_WRB blessed\_VBN are\_VBP some\_DT people\_NNS ,\_, whose\_WP$ lives\_NNS have\_VBP no\_DT fears\_NNS ,\_, no\_DT dreads\_NNS ;\_: to\_TO whom\_WP sleep\_NN is\_VBZ a\_DT blessing\_NN that\_WDT comes\_VBZ nightly\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC brings\_VBZ nothing\_NN but\_CC sweet\_JJ dreams\_NNS .\_.

Well\_RB ,\_, here\_RB I\_PRP am\_VBP to-night\_JJ ,\_, hoping\_VBG for\_IN sleep\_NN ,\_, and\_CC lying\_VBG like\_IN Ophelia\_NNP in\_IN the\_DT play\_NN ,\_, with\_IN ``\_`` virgin\_JJ crants\_NNS and\_CC maiden\_NN strewments\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP never\_RB liked\_VBD garlic\_NN before\_RB ,\_, but\_CC to-night\_JJ it\_PRP is\_VBZ delightful\_JJ !\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ peace\_NN in\_IN its\_PRP$ smell\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP feel\_VBP sleep\_NN coming\_VBG already\_RB .\_.

Good-night\_JJ ,\_, everybody\_NN .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

13\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Called\_VBN at\_IN the\_DT Berkeley\_NNP and\_CC found\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, as\_IN usual\_JJ ,\_, up\_RB to\_TO time\_NN .\_.

The\_DT carriage\_NN ordered\_VBD from\_IN the\_DT hotel\_NN was\_VBD waiting\_VBG .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP took\_VBD his\_PRP$ bag\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT he\_PRP always\_RB brings\_VBZ with\_IN him\_PRP now\_RB .\_.

Let\_VB all\_DT be\_VB put\_VBN down\_RP exactly\_RB .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP arrived\_VBD at\_IN Hillingham\_NNP at\_IN eight\_CD o'clock\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT lovely\_JJ morning\_NN ;\_: the\_DT bright\_JJ sunshine\_NN and\_CC all\_PDT the\_DT fresh\_JJ feeling\_NN of\_IN early\_JJ autumn\_NN seemed\_VBD like\_IN the\_DT completion\_NN of\_IN nature\_NN 's\_POS annual\_JJ work\_NN .\_.

The\_DT leaves\_NNS were\_VBD turning\_VBG to\_TO all\_DT kinds\_NNS of\_IN beautiful\_JJ colours\_NNS ,\_, but\_CC had\_VBD not\_RB yet\_RB begun\_VBN to\_TO drop\_VB from\_IN the\_DT trees\_NNS .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP entered\_VBD we\_PRP met\_VBD Mrs.\_NNP Westenra\_NNP coming\_VBG out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN room\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP is\_VBZ always\_RB an\_DT early\_JJ riser\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP greeted\_VBD us\_PRP warmly\_RB and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB glad\_JJ to\_TO know\_VB that\_IN Lucy\_NNP is\_VBZ better\_JJR .\_.

The\_DT dear\_RB child\_NN is\_VBZ still\_RB asleep\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP looked\_VBD into\_IN her\_PRP$ room\_NN and\_CC saw\_VBD her\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC did\_VBD not\_RB go\_VB in\_IN ,\_, lest\_IN I\_PRP should\_MD disturb\_VB her\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT Professor\_NNP smiled\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC looked\_VBD quite\_RB jubilant\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP rubbed\_VBD his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS together\_RB ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Aha\_NN !\_.

I\_PRP thought\_VBD I\_PRP had\_VBD diagnosed\_VBN the\_DT case\_NN .\_.

My\_PRP$ treatment\_NN is\_VBZ working\_VBG ,\_, ''\_'' to\_TO which\_WDT she\_PRP answered\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB take\_VB all\_PDT the\_DT credit\_NN to\_TO yourself\_PRP ,\_, doctor\_NN .\_.

Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS state\_NN this\_DT morning\_NN is\_VBZ due\_JJ in\_IN part\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` How\_WRB you\_PRP do\_VBP mean\_VB ,\_, ma'am\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

asked\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` Well\_UH ,\_, I\_PRP was\_VBD anxious\_JJ about\_IN the\_DT dear\_RB child\_NN in\_IN the\_DT night\_NN ,\_, and\_CC went\_VBD into\_IN her\_PRP$ room\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP was\_VBD sleeping\_VBG soundly\_RB --\_: so\_RB soundly\_RB that\_IN even\_RB my\_PRP$ coming\_VBG did\_VBD not\_RB wake\_VB her\_PRP .\_.

But\_CC the\_DT room\_NN was\_VBD awfully\_RB stuffy\_JJ .\_.

There\_EX were\_VBD a\_DT lot\_NN of\_IN those\_DT horrible\_JJ ,\_, strong-smelling\_JJ flowers\_NNS about\_IN everywhere\_RB ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP had\_VBD actually\_RB a\_DT bunch\_NN of\_IN them\_PRP round\_VBP her\_PRP$ neck\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP feared\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT heavy\_JJ odour\_NN would\_MD be\_VB too\_RB much\_JJ for\_IN the\_DT dear\_RB child\_NN in\_IN her\_PRP$ weak\_JJ state\_NN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP took\_VBD them\_PRP all\_DT away\_RB and\_CC opened\_VBD a\_DT bit\_NN of\_IN the\_DT window\_NN to\_TO let\_VB in\_IN a\_DT little\_JJ fresh\_JJ air\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB pleased\_VBN with\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP sure\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

She\_PRP moved\_VBD off\_RP into\_IN her\_PRP$ boudoir\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB she\_PRP usually\_RB breakfasted\_VBD early\_JJ .\_.

As\_IN she\_PRP had\_VBD spoken\_VBN ,\_, I\_PRP watched\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP 's\_POS face\_NN ,\_, and\_CC saw\_VBD it\_PRP turn\_VB ashen\_RB grey\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN able\_JJ to\_TO retain\_VB his\_PRP$ self-command\_NN whilst\_IN the\_DT poor\_JJ lady\_NN was\_VBD present\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP knew\_VBD her\_PRP$ state\_NN and\_CC how\_WRB mischievous\_JJ a\_DT shock\_NN would\_MD be\_VB ;\_: he\_PRP actually\_RB smiled\_VBD on\_IN her\_PRP as\_IN he\_PRP held\_VBD open\_VB the\_DT door\_NN for\_IN her\_PRP to\_TO pass\_VB into\_IN her\_PRP$ room\_NN .\_.

But\_CC the\_DT instant\_NN she\_PRP had\_VBD disappeared\_VBN he\_PRP pulled\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, suddenly\_RB and\_CC forcibly\_RB ,\_, into\_IN the\_DT dining-room\_NN and\_CC closed\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ time\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ life\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP saw\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP break\_VB down\_RP .\_.

He\_PRP raised\_VBD his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS over\_IN his\_PRP$ head\_NN in\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN mute\_JJ despair\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB beat\_VB his\_PRP$ palms\_NNS together\_RB in\_IN a\_DT helpless\_JJ way\_NN ;\_: finally\_RB he\_PRP sat\_VBD down\_RP on\_IN a\_DT chair\_NN ,\_, and\_CC putting\_VBG his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS before\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, began\_VBD to\_TO sob\_VB ,\_, with\_IN loud\_JJ ,\_, dry\_JJ sobs\_NNS that\_WDT seemed\_VBD to\_TO come\_VB from\_IN the\_DT very\_RB racking\_VBG of\_IN his\_PRP$ heart\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP raised\_VBD his\_PRP$ arms\_NNS again\_RB ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN appealing\_VBG to\_TO the\_DT whole\_JJ universe\_NN .\_.

``\_`` God\_NNP !\_.

God\_NN !\_.

God\_NN !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` What\_WP have\_VBP we\_PRP done\_VBN ,\_, what\_WP has\_VBZ this\_DT poor\_JJ thing\_NN done\_VBN ,\_, that\_IN we\_PRP are\_VBP so\_RB sore\_JJ beset\_VBN ?\_.

Is\_VBZ there\_EX fate\_NN amongst\_IN us\_PRP still\_RB ,\_, sent\_VBD down\_RB from\_IN the\_DT pagan\_JJ world\_NN of\_IN old\_JJ ,\_, that\_IN such\_JJ things\_NNS must\_MD be\_VB ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN such\_JJ way\_NN ?\_.

This\_DT poor\_JJ mother\_NN ,\_, all\_DT unknowing\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC all\_DT for\_IN the\_DT best\_JJS as\_IN she\_PRP think\_VBP ,\_, does\_VBZ such\_JJ thing\_NN as\_IN lose\_VB her\_PRP$ daughter\_NN body\_NN and\_CC soul\_NN ;\_: and\_CC we\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB tell\_VB her\_PRP ,\_, we\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB even\_RB warn\_VB her\_PRP ,\_, or\_CC she\_PRP die\_VB ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB both\_DT die\_NN .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, how\_WRB we\_PRP are\_VBP beset\_VBN !\_.

How\_WRB are\_VBP all\_PDT the\_DT powers\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT devils\_NNS against\_IN us\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

Suddenly\_RB he\_PRP jumped\_VBD to\_TO his\_PRP$ feet\_NNS .\_.

``\_`` Come\_VB ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` come\_VB ,\_, we\_PRP must\_MD see\_VB and\_CC act\_VB .\_.

Devils\_NNS or\_CC no\_DT devils\_NNS ,\_, or\_CC all\_PDT the\_DT devils\_NNS at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, it\_PRP matters\_VBZ not\_RB ;\_: we\_PRP fight\_VBP him\_PRP all\_PDT the\_DT same\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT hall-door\_NN for\_IN his\_PRP$ bag\_NN ;\_: and\_CC together\_RB we\_PRP went\_VBD up\_RB to\_TO Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS room\_NN .\_.

Once\_RB again\_RB I\_PRP drew\_VBD up\_RP the\_DT blind\_JJ ,\_, whilst\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP went\_VBD towards\_IN the\_DT bed\_NN .\_.

This\_DT time\_NN he\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB start\_VB as\_IN he\_PRP looked\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT poor\_JJ face\_NN with\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ awful\_JJ ,\_, waxen\_JJ pallor\_NN as\_RB before\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP wore\_VBD a\_DT look\_NN of\_IN stern\_JJ sadness\_NN and\_CC infinite\_JJ pity\_NN .\_.

``\_`` As\_IN I\_PRP expected\_VBD ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP murmured\_VBD ,\_, with\_IN that\_DT hissing\_JJ inspiration\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ which\_WDT meant\_VBD so\_RB much\_JJ .\_.

Without\_IN a\_DT word\_NN he\_PRP went\_VBD and\_CC locked\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB began\_VBD to\_TO set\_VB out\_RP on\_IN the\_DT little\_JJ table\_NN the\_DT instruments\_NNS for\_IN yet\_RB another\_DT operation\_NN of\_IN transfusion\_NN of\_IN blood\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD long\_RB ago\_RB recognised\_VBD the\_DT necessity\_NN ,\_, and\_CC begun\_VBN to\_TO take\_VB off\_RP my\_PRP$ coat\_NN ,\_, but\_CC he\_PRP stopped\_VBD me\_PRP with\_IN a\_DT warning\_NN hand\_NN .\_.

``\_`` No\_UH !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` To-day\_VB you\_PRP must\_MD operate\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD provide\_VB .\_.

You\_PRP are\_VBP weakened\_VBN already\_RB .\_. ''\_''

As\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD he\_PRP took\_VBD off\_RP his\_PRP$ coat\_NN and\_CC rolled\_VBD up\_RP his\_PRP$ shirt-sleeve\_JJ .\_.

Again\_RB the\_DT operation\_NN ;\_: again\_RB the\_DT narcotic\_JJ ;\_: again\_RB some\_DT return\_NN of\_IN colour\_NN to\_TO the\_DT ashy\_NN cheeks\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT regular\_JJ breathing\_NN of\_IN healthy\_JJ sleep\_NN .\_.

This\_DT time\_NN I\_PRP watched\_VBD whilst\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP recruited\_VBD himself\_PRP and\_CC rested\_VBD .\_.

Presently\_RB he\_PRP took\_VBD an\_DT opportunity\_NN of\_IN telling\_VBG Mrs.\_NNP Westenra\_NNP that\_IN she\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB remove\_VB anything\_NN from\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS room\_NN without\_IN consulting\_VBG him\_PRP ;\_: that\_IN the\_DT flowers\_NNS were\_VBD of\_IN medicinal\_JJ value\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN the\_DT breathing\_NN of\_IN their\_PRP$ odour\_NN was\_VBD a\_DT part\_NN of\_IN the\_DT system\_NN of\_IN cure\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP took\_VBD over\_RP the\_DT care\_NN of\_IN the\_DT case\_NN himself\_PRP ,\_, saying\_VBG that\_IN he\_PRP would\_MD watch\_VB this\_DT night\_NN and\_CC the\_DT next\_JJ and\_CC would\_MD send\_VB me\_PRP word\_NN when\_WRB to\_TO come\_VB .\_.

After\_IN another\_DT hour\_NN Lucy\_NNP waked\_VBD from\_IN her\_PRP$ sleep\_NN ,\_, fresh\_JJ and\_CC bright\_JJ and\_CC seemingly\_RB not\_RB much\_RB the\_DT worse\_JJR for\_IN her\_PRP$ terrible\_JJ ordeal\_NN .\_.

What\_WP does\_VBZ it\_PRP all\_DT mean\_VB ?\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP beginning\_VBG to\_TO wonder\_VB if\_IN my\_PRP$ long\_JJ habit\_NN of\_IN life\_NN amongst\_IN the\_DT insane\_JJ is\_VBZ beginning\_VBG to\_TO tell\_VB upon\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ brain\_NN .\_.

Lucy\_NNP Westenra\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

17\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Four\_CD days\_NNS and\_CC nights\_NNS of\_IN peace\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP getting\_VBG so\_RB strong\_JJ again\_RB that\_IN I\_PRP hardly\_RB know\_VBP myself\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ as\_IN if\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD passed\_VBN through\_IN some\_DT long\_JJ nightmare\_NN ,\_, and\_CC had\_VBD just\_RB awakened\_VBN to\_TO see\_VB the\_DT beautiful\_JJ sunshine\_NN and\_CC feel\_VB the\_DT fresh\_JJ air\_NN of\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN around\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP a\_DT dim\_JJ half-remembrance\_NN of\_IN long\_JJ ,\_, anxious\_JJ times\_NNS of\_IN waiting\_VBG and\_CC fearing\_VBG ;\_: darkness\_NN in\_IN which\_WDT there\_EX was\_VBD not\_RB even\_RB the\_DT pain\_NN of\_IN hope\_NN to\_TO make\_VB present\_JJ distress\_NN more\_RBR poignant\_JJ :\_: and\_CC then\_RB long\_JJ spells\_NNS of\_IN oblivion\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT rising\_VBG back\_RB to\_TO life\_NN as\_IN a\_DT diver\_NN coming\_VBG up\_RP through\_IN a\_DT great\_JJ press\_NN of\_IN water\_NN .\_.

Since\_IN ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP has\_VBZ been\_VBN with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, all\_PDT this\_DT bad\_JJ dreaming\_VBG seems\_VBZ to\_TO have\_VB passed\_VBN away\_RB ;\_: the\_DT noises\_NNS that\_WDT used\_VBD to\_TO frighten\_VB me\_PRP out\_IN of\_IN my\_PRP$ wits\_NNS --\_: the\_DT flapping\_VBG against\_IN the\_DT windows\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT distant\_JJ voices\_NNS which\_WDT seemed\_VBD so\_RB close\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, the\_DT harsh\_JJ sounds\_NNS that\_WDT came\_VBD from\_IN I\_PRP know\_VBP not\_RB where\_WRB and\_CC commanded\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO do\_VB I\_PRP know\_VB not\_RB what\_WP --\_: have\_VBP all\_DT ceased\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP go\_VBP to\_TO bed\_NN now\_RB without\_IN any\_DT fear\_NN of\_IN sleep\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB even\_RB try\_VB to\_TO keep\_VB awake\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP grown\_VBN quite\_RB fond\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT garlic\_NN ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT boxful\_NN arrives\_VBZ for\_IN me\_PRP every\_DT day\_NN from\_IN Haarlem\_NNP .\_.

To-night\_JJ Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP is\_VBZ going\_VBG away\_RB ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP has\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB for\_IN a\_DT day\_NN in\_IN Amsterdam\_NNP .\_.

But\_CC I\_PRP need\_MD not\_RB be\_VB watched\_VBN ;\_: I\_PRP am\_VBP well\_RB enough\_JJ to\_TO be\_VB left\_VBN alone\_RB .\_.

Thank\_VB God\_NNP for\_IN mother\_NN 's\_POS sake\_NN ,\_, and\_CC dear\_RB Arthur\_NNP 's\_POS ,\_, and\_CC for\_IN all\_DT our\_PRP$ friends\_NNS who\_WP have\_VBP been\_VBN so\_RB kind\_JJ !\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB even\_RB feel\_VB the\_DT change\_NN ,\_, for\_IN last\_JJ night\_NN Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP slept\_VBD in\_IN his\_PRP$ chair\_NN a\_DT lot\_NN of\_IN the\_DT time\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP found\_VBD him\_PRP asleep\_RB twice\_RB when\_WRB I\_PRP awoke\_VBD ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB fear\_VB to\_TO go\_VB to\_TO sleep\_VB again\_RB ,\_, although\_IN the\_DT boughs\_NNS or\_CC bats\_NNS or\_CC something\_NN napped\_VBD almost\_RB angrily\_RB against\_IN the\_DT window-panes\_NNS .\_.

``\_`` The\_DT Pall\_NN Mall\_NN Gazette\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' 18\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

THE\_DT ESCAPED\_NNP WOLF\_NNP .\_.

PERILOUS\_JJ ADVENTURE\_NN OF\_IN OUR\_NNP INTERVIEWER\_NNP .\_.

Interview\_NN with\_IN the\_DT Keeper\_NNP in\_IN the\_DT Zoölogical\_NNP Gardens\_NNP .\_.

After\_IN many\_JJ inquiries\_NNS and\_CC almost\_RB as\_IN many\_JJ refusals\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC perpetually\_RB using\_VBG the\_DT words\_NNS ``\_`` Pall\_NN Mall\_NN Gazette\_NN ''\_'' as\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN talisman\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP managed\_VBD to\_TO find\_VB the\_DT keeper\_NN of\_IN the\_DT section\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Zoölogical\_NNP Gardens\_NNP in\_IN which\_WDT the\_DT wolf\_NN department\_NN is\_VBZ included\_VBN .\_.

Thomas\_NNP Bilder\_NNP lives\_VBZ in\_IN one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT cottages\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT enclosure\_NN behind\_IN the\_DT elephant-house\_NN ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD just\_RB sitting\_VBG down\_RP to\_TO his\_PRP$ tea\_NN when\_WRB I\_PRP found\_VBD him\_PRP .\_.

Thomas\_NNP and\_CC his\_PRP$ wife\_NN are\_VBP hospitable\_JJ folk\_NN ,\_, elderly\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC without\_IN children\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC if\_IN the\_DT specimen\_NN I\_PRP enjoyed\_VBD of\_IN their\_PRP$ hospitality\_NN be\_VB of\_IN the\_DT average\_JJ kind\_NN ,\_, their\_PRP$ lives\_NNS must\_MD be\_VB pretty\_RB comfortable\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT keeper\_NN would\_MD not\_RB enter\_VB on\_IN what\_WP he\_PRP called\_VBD ``\_`` business\_NN ''\_'' until\_IN the\_DT supper\_NN was\_VBD over\_RB ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP were\_VBD all\_DT satisfied\_JJ .\_.

Then\_RB when\_WRB the\_DT table\_NN was\_VBD cleared\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP had\_VBD lit\_VBN his\_PRP$ pipe\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Now\_RB ,\_, sir\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP can\_MD go\_VB on\_RB and\_CC arsk\_VB me\_PRP what\_WP you\_PRP want\_VBP .\_.

You\_PRP 'll\_MD excoose\_VB me\_PRP refoosin\_NN '\_'' to\_TO talk\_NN of\_IN perfeshunal\_JJ subjects\_NNS afore\_VBP meals\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP gives\_VBZ the\_DT wolves\_NNS and\_CC the\_DT jackals\_NNS and\_CC the\_DT hyenas\_NNS in\_IN all\_DT our\_PRP$ section\_NN their\_PRP$ tea\_NN afore\_NN I\_PRP begins\_VBZ to\_TO arsk\_VB them\_PRP questions\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` How\_WRB do\_VBP you\_PRP mean\_VB ,\_, ask\_VB them\_PRP questions\_NNS ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP queried\_VBD ,\_, wishful\_JJ to\_TO get\_VB him\_PRP into\_IN a\_DT talkative\_JJ humour\_NN .\_.

``\_`` '\_POS Ittin\_NN '\_'' of\_IN them\_PRP over\_IN the\_DT '\_POS ead\_NN with\_IN a\_DT pole\_NN is\_VBZ one\_CD way\_NN ;\_: scratchin\_NN '\_'' of\_IN their\_PRP$ hears\_VBZ is\_VBZ another\_DT ,\_, when\_WRB gents\_NNS as\_IN is\_VBZ flush\_NN wants\_VBZ a\_DT bit\_NN of\_IN a\_DT show-orf\_NN to\_TO their\_PRP$ gals\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB so\_RB much\_JJ mind\_NN the\_DT fust\_NN --\_: the\_DT '\_POS ittin\_NN '\_'' with\_IN a\_DT pole\_NN afore\_NN I\_CD chucks\_NNS in\_IN their\_PRP$ dinner\_NN ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP waits\_VBZ till\_IN they\_PRP 've\_VBP '\_'' ad\_NN their\_PRP$ sherry\_NN and\_CC kawffee\_NN ,\_, so\_RB to\_TO speak\_VB ,\_, afore\_VB I\_PRP tries\_VBZ on\_RP with\_IN the\_DT ear-scratchin\_NN '\_'' .\_.

Mind\_VB you\_PRP ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP added\_VBD philosophically\_RB ,\_, ``\_`` there\_EX 's\_VBZ a\_DT deal\_NN of\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ nature\_NN in\_IN us\_PRP as\_IN in\_IN them\_PRP theer\_FW animiles\_FW .\_.

Here\_RB 's\_POS you\_PRP a-comin\_NN '\_'' and\_CC arskin\_NN '\_'' of\_IN me\_PRP questions\_NNS about\_IN my\_PRP$ business\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP that\_VBP grumpy-like\_JJ that\_IN only\_RB for\_IN your\_PRP$ bloomin\_NN '\_'' '\_POS arf-quid\_NN I\_PRP 'd\_VBD '\_'' a\_DT '\_'' seen\_VBN you\_PRP blowed\_VBD fust\_NN '\_'' fore\_NN I\_PRP 'd\_MD answer\_VB .\_.

Not\_RB even\_RB when\_WRB you\_PRP arsked\_VBD me\_PRP sarcastic-like\_JJ if\_IN I\_PRP 'd\_MD like\_VB you\_PRP to\_TO arsk\_VB the\_DT Superintendent\_NNP if\_IN you\_PRP might\_MD arsk\_VB me\_PRP questions\_NNS .\_.

Without\_IN offence\_NN did\_VBD I\_PRP tell\_VB yer\_NN to\_TO go\_VB to\_TO '\_POS ell\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` You\_PRP did\_VBD .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` An\_DT '\_'' when\_WRB you\_PRP said\_VBD you\_PRP 'd\_MD report\_VB me\_PRP for\_IN usin\_NN '\_'' of\_IN obscene\_JJ language\_NN that\_WDT was\_VBD '\_POS ittin\_NN '\_'' me\_PRP over\_IN the\_DT '\_'' ead\_NN ;\_: but\_CC the\_DT '\_'' arf-quid\_NN made\_VBN that\_IN all\_DT right\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP were\_VBD n't\_RB a-goin\_NN '\_'' to\_TO fight\_VB ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP waited\_VBD for\_IN the\_DT food\_NN ,\_, and\_CC did\_VBD with\_IN my\_PRP$ '\_POS owl\_NN as\_IN the\_DT wolves\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC lions\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC tigers\_NNS does\_VBZ .\_.

But\_CC ,\_, Lor\_NNP '\_POS love\_NN yer\_NN '\_'' art\_NN ,\_, now\_RB that\_IN the\_DT old\_JJ '\_POS ooman\_NN has\_VBZ stuck\_VBN a\_DT chunk\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ tea-cake\_NN in\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, an\_DT '\_'' rinsed\_VBD me\_PRP out\_RP with\_IN her\_PRP$ bloomin\_NN '\_'' old\_JJ teapot\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP 've\_VBP lit\_VBN hup\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP may\_MD scratch\_VB my\_PRP$ ears\_NNS for\_IN all\_DT you\_PRP 're\_VBP worth\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC wo\_MD n't\_RB git\_VB even\_RB a\_DT growl\_NN out\_IN of\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

Drive\_VB along\_IN with\_IN your\_PRP$ questions\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP what\_WP yer\_FW a-comin\_FW '\_'' at\_IN ,\_, that\_IN '\_POS ere\_NN escaped\_VBD wolf\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Exactly\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP want\_VBP you\_PRP to\_TO give\_VB me\_PRP your\_PRP$ view\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

Just\_RB tell\_VB me\_PRP how\_WRB it\_PRP happened\_VBD ;\_: and\_CC when\_WRB I\_PRP know\_VBP the\_DT facts\_NNS I\_PRP 'll\_MD get\_VB you\_PRP to\_TO say\_VB what\_WP you\_PRP consider\_VBP was\_VBD the\_DT cause\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC how\_WRB you\_PRP think\_VBP the\_DT whole\_JJ affair\_NN will\_MD end\_VB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` All\_DT right\_NN ,\_, guv\_NN '\_'' nor\_CC .\_.

This\_DT '\_POS ere\_NN is\_VBZ about\_IN the\_DT '\_POS ole\_NN story\_NN .\_.

That\_DT '\_'' ere\_FW wolf\_FW what\_WP we\_PRP called\_VBD Bersicker\_NNP was\_VBD one\_CD of\_IN three\_CD grey\_JJ ones\_NNS that\_WDT came\_VBD from\_IN Norway\_NNP to\_TO Jamrach\_NNP 's\_POS ,\_, which\_WDT we\_PRP bought\_VBD off\_RP him\_PRP four\_CD years\_NNS ago\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT nice\_JJ well-behaved\_JJ wolf\_NN ,\_, that\_WDT never\_RB gave\_VBD no\_DT trouble\_NN to\_TO talk\_VB of\_IN .\_.

I\_PRP 'm\_VBP more\_RBR surprised\_JJ at\_IN '\_'' im\_NN for\_IN wantin\_NN '\_'' to\_TO get\_VB out\_RP nor\_CC any\_DT other\_JJ animile\_NN in\_IN the\_DT place\_NN .\_.

But\_CC ,\_, there\_RB ,\_, you\_PRP ca\_MD n't\_RB trust\_VB wolves\_NNS no\_RB more\_JJR nor\_CC women\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Do\_VBP n't\_RB you\_PRP mind\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, sir\_NN !\_. ''\_''

broke\_VBD in\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Tom\_NNP ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT cheery\_JJ laugh\_NN .\_.

``\_`` '\_POS E\_NN 's\_POS got\_VBD mindin\_NN '\_'' the\_DT animiles\_NNS so\_RB long\_RB that\_WDT blest\_VBP if\_IN he\_PRP ai\_VBP n't\_RB like\_IN a\_DT old\_JJ wolf\_NN '\_'' isself\_NN !\_.

But\_CC there\_EX ai\_VBP n't\_RB no\_RB '\_POS arm\_NN in\_IN '\_'' im\_FW .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Well\_UH ,\_, sir\_NN ,\_, it\_PRP was\_VBD about\_IN two\_CD hours\_NNS after\_IN feedin\_NN '\_'' yesterday\_NN when\_WRB I\_PRP first\_RB hear\_VB my\_PRP$ disturbance\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD makin\_NN '\_'' up\_RP a\_DT litter\_NN in\_IN the\_DT monkey-house\_NN for\_IN a\_DT young\_JJ puma\_NN which\_WDT is\_VBZ ill\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC when\_WRB I\_PRP heard\_VBD the\_DT yelpin\_NN '\_'' and\_CC '\_POS owlin\_NN '\_'' I\_PRP kem\_VBP away\_RB straight\_JJ .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD Bersicker\_NNP a-tearin\_NN '\_'' like\_IN a\_DT mad\_JJ thing\_NN at\_IN the\_DT bars\_NNS as\_IN if\_IN he\_PRP wanted\_VBD to\_TO get\_VB out\_RP .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD n't\_RB much\_JJ people\_NNS about\_IN that\_DT day\_NN ,\_, and\_CC close\_NN at\_IN hand\_NN was\_VBD only\_RB one\_CD man\_NN ,\_, a\_DT tall\_JJ ,\_, thin\_JJ chap\_NN ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT '\_POS ook\_NN nose\_NN and\_CC a\_DT pointed\_JJ beard\_NN ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ white\_JJ hairs\_NNS runnin\_NN '\_'' through\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT '\_'' ard\_NN ,\_, cold\_JJ look\_NN and\_CC red\_JJ eyes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP took\_VBD a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN mislike\_JJ to\_TO him\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP seemed\_VBD as\_IN if\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD '\_POS im\_NN as\_IN they\_PRP was\_VBD hirritated\_VBN at\_IN .\_.

He\_PRP '\_POS ad\_NN white\_JJ kid\_NN gloves\_NNS on\_IN '\_'' is\_VBZ '\_'' ands\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP pointed\_VBD out\_RP the\_DT animiles\_NNS to\_TO me\_PRP and\_CC says\_VBZ :\_: `\_`` Keeper\_NNP ,\_, these\_DT wolves\_NNS seem\_VBP upset\_JJ at\_IN something\_NN .\_. '\_''

``\_`` `\_`` Maybe\_RB it\_PRP 's\_VBZ you\_PRP ,\_, '\_'' says\_VBZ I\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB like\_VB the\_DT airs\_NNS as\_IN he\_PRP give\_VBP '\_POS isself\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP did\_VBD n't\_RB git\_VB angry\_JJ ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP '\_'' oped\_VBD he\_PRP would\_MD ,\_, but\_CC he\_PRP smiled\_VBD a\_DT kind\_NN of\_IN insolent\_JJ smile\_NN ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT mouth\_NN full\_JJ of\_IN white\_JJ ,\_, sharp\_JJ teeth\_NNS .\_.

`\_`` Oh\_UH no\_DT ,\_, they\_PRP would\_MD n't\_RB like\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, '\_'' '\_'' e\_LS says\_VBZ .\_.

``\_`` `\_`` Ow\_NN yes\_UH ,\_, they\_PRP would\_MD ,\_, '\_'' says\_VBZ I\_NN ,\_, a-imitatin\_NN '\_'' of\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

`\_`` They\_PRP always\_RB likes\_VBZ a\_DT bone\_NN or\_CC two\_CD to\_TO clean\_VB their\_PRP$ teeth\_NNS on\_IN about\_IN tea-time\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT you\_PRP '\_'' as\_IN a\_DT bagful\_NN .\_. '\_''

``\_`` Well\_UH ,\_, it\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT odd\_JJ thing\_NN ,\_, but\_CC when\_WRB the\_DT animiles\_NNS see\_VBP us\_PRP a-talkin\_NN '\_'' they\_PRP lay\_VBD down\_RB ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB I\_PRP went\_VBD over\_RP to\_TO Bersicker\_NNP he\_PRP let\_VB me\_PRP stroke\_NN his\_PRP$ ears\_NNS same\_JJ as\_IN ever\_RB .\_.

That\_IN there\_EX man\_NN kem\_NN over\_IN ,\_, and\_CC blessed\_VBN but\_CC if\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD n't\_RB put\_VB in\_RP his\_PRP$ hand\_NN and\_CC stroke\_NN the\_DT old\_JJ wolf\_NN 's\_POS ears\_NNS too\_RB !\_.

``\_`` `\_`` Tyke\_NN care\_NN ,\_, '\_'' says\_VBZ I.\_NNP `\_`` Bersicker\_NNP is\_VBZ quick\_JJ .\_. '\_''

``\_`` `\_`` Never\_NNP mind\_NN ,\_, '\_'' he\_PRP says\_VBZ .\_.

`\_`` I\_PRP 'm\_VBP used\_VBN to\_TO 'em\_PRP !\_. '\_''

``\_`` `\_`` Are\_VBP you\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT business\_NN yourself\_PRP ?\_. '\_''

I\_PRP says\_VBZ ,\_, tyking\_VBG off\_RP my\_PRP$ '\_'' at\_IN ,\_, for\_IN a\_DT man\_NN what\_WP trades\_VBZ in\_IN wolves\_NNS ,\_, anceterer\_NN ,\_, is\_VBZ a\_DT good\_JJ friend\_NN to\_TO keepers\_NNS .\_.

``\_`` `\_`` No\_UH '\_'' says\_VBZ he\_PRP ,\_, `\_`` not\_RB exactly\_RB in\_IN the\_DT business\_NN ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP '\_'' ave\_NN made\_VBD pets\_NNS of\_IN several\_JJ .\_. '\_''

And\_CC with\_IN that\_IN he\_PRP lifts\_VBZ his\_PRP$ '\_'' at\_IN as\_IN perlite\_NN as\_IN a\_DT lord\_NN ,\_, and\_CC walks\_VBZ away\_RB .\_.

Old\_NNP Bersicker\_NNP kep\_NN '\_'' a-lookin\_NN '\_'' arter\_NN '\_'' im\_NN till\_IN '\_'' e\_LS was\_VBD out\_IN of\_IN sight\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB went\_VBD and\_CC lay\_VBD down\_RP in\_IN a\_DT corner\_NN and\_CC would\_MD n't\_RB come\_VB hout\_VB the\_DT '\_'' ole\_FW hevening\_FW .\_.

Well\_RB ,\_, larst\_JJ night\_NN ,\_, so\_RB soon\_RB as\_IN the\_DT moon\_NN was\_VBD hup\_JJ ,\_, the\_DT wolves\_NNS here\_RB all\_DT began\_VBD a\_DT -\_: '\_POS owling\_NN .\_.

There\_EX war\_NN n't\_RB nothing\_NN for\_IN them\_PRP to\_TO '\_POS owl\_NN at\_IN .\_.

There\_EX war\_NN n't\_RB no\_DT one\_NN near\_IN ,\_, except\_IN some\_DT one\_NN that\_WDT was\_VBD evidently\_RB a-callin\_NN '\_'' a\_DT dog\_NN somewheres\_VBZ out\_RP back\_RB of\_IN the\_DT gardings\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT Park\_NNP road\_NN .\_.

Once\_RB or\_CC twice\_RB I\_PRP went\_VBD out\_RP to\_TO see\_VB that\_IN all\_DT was\_VBD right\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB the\_DT '\_POS owling\_NN stopped\_VBD .\_.

Just\_RB before\_IN twelve\_CD o'clock\_RB I\_PRP just\_RB took\_VBD a\_DT look\_NN round\_NN afore\_FW turnin\_FW '\_'' in\_IN ,\_, an\_DT '\_'' ,\_, bust\_NN me\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC when\_WRB I\_PRP kem\_VBP opposite\_JJ to\_TO old\_JJ Bersicker\_NNP 's\_POS cage\_NN I\_PRP see\_VBP the\_DT rails\_NNS broken\_VBN and\_CC twisted\_VBN about\_IN and\_CC the\_DT cage\_NN empty\_JJ .\_.

And\_CC that\_DT 's\_VBZ all\_DT I\_PRP know\_VBP for\_IN certing\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Did\_VBD any\_DT one\_NN else\_RB see\_VB anything\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` One\_CD of\_IN our\_PRP$ gard\_NN '\_'' ners\_NNS was\_VBD a-comin\_NN '\_'' '\_POS ome\_NN about\_IN that\_DT time\_NN from\_IN a\_DT '\_'' armony\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB he\_PRP sees\_VBZ a\_DT big\_JJ grey\_JJ dog\_NN comin\_NN '\_'' out\_IN through\_IN the\_DT garding\_NN '\_POS edges\_NNS .\_.

At\_IN least\_JJS ,\_, so\_IN he\_PRP says\_VBZ ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB give\_VB much\_RB for\_IN it\_PRP myself\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN if\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD '\_'' e\_LS never\_RB said\_VBD a\_DT word\_NN about\_IN it\_PRP to\_TO his\_PRP$ missis\_NN when\_WRB '\_'' e\_LS got\_VBD '\_'' ome\_NN ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP was\_VBD only\_RB after\_IN the\_DT escape\_NN of\_IN the\_DT wolf\_NN was\_VBD made\_VBN known\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN up\_RP all\_DT night-a-huntin\_NN '\_'' of\_IN the\_DT Park\_NNP for\_IN Bersicker\_NNP ,\_, that\_IN he\_PRP remembered\_VBD seein\_NN '\_POS anything\_NN .\_.

My\_PRP$ own\_JJ belief\_NN was\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT '\_POS armony\_NN '\_'' ad\_NN got\_VBD into\_IN his\_PRP$ '\_POS ead\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Now\_RB ,\_, Mr.\_NNP Bilder\_NNP ,\_, can\_MD you\_PRP account\_VB in\_IN any\_DT way\_NN for\_IN the\_DT escape\_NN of\_IN the\_DT wolf\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Well\_UH ,\_, sir\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT suspicious\_JJ sort\_NN of\_IN modesty\_NN ,\_, ``\_`` I\_PRP think\_VBP I\_PRP can\_MD ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB know\_VB as\_IN '\_'' ow\_IN you\_PRP 'd\_MD be\_VB satisfied\_VBN with\_IN the\_DT theory\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Certainly\_RB I\_PRP shall\_MD .\_.

If\_IN a\_DT man\_NN like\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, who\_WP knows\_VBZ the\_DT animals\_NNS from\_IN experience\_NN ,\_, ca\_MD n't\_RB hazard\_NN a\_DT good\_JJ guess\_NN at\_IN any\_DT rate\_NN ,\_, who\_WP is\_VBZ even\_RB to\_TO try\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Well\_RB then\_RB ,\_, sir\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP accounts\_VBZ for\_IN it\_PRP this\_DT way\_NN ;\_: it\_PRP seems\_VBZ to\_TO me\_PRP that\_IN '\_'' ere\_FW wolf\_FW escaped\_VBN --\_: simply\_RB because\_IN he\_PRP wanted\_VBD to\_TO get\_VB out\_RP .\_. ''\_''

From\_IN the\_DT hearty\_JJ way\_NN that\_IN both\_DT Thomas\_NNP and\_CC his\_PRP$ wife\_NN laughed\_VBD at\_IN the\_DT joke\_NN I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB that\_IN it\_PRP had\_VBD done\_VBN service\_NN before\_RB ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN the\_DT whole\_JJ explanation\_NN was\_VBD simply\_RB an\_DT elaborate\_JJ sell\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD n't\_RB cope\_VB in\_IN badinage\_NN with\_IN the\_DT worthy\_JJ Thomas\_NNP ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP thought\_VBD I\_PRP knew\_VBD a\_DT surer\_JJR way\_NN to\_TO his\_PRP$ heart\_NN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Now\_RB ,\_, Mr.\_NNP Bilder\_NNP ,\_, we\_PRP 'll\_MD consider\_VB that\_DT first\_JJ half-sovereign\_NN worked\_VBD off\_RP ,\_, and\_CC this\_DT brother\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ is\_VBZ waiting\_VBG to\_TO be\_VB claimed\_VBN when\_WRB you\_PRP 've\_VBP told\_VBN me\_PRP what\_WP you\_PRP think\_VBP will\_MD happen\_VB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Right\_NNP y’\_NNP are\_VBP ,\_, sir\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD briskly\_RB .\_.

``\_`` Ye\_PRP 'll\_MD excoose\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, for\_IN a-chaffin\_NN '\_'' of\_IN ye\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT old\_JJ woman\_NN here\_RB winked\_VBD at\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, which\_WDT was\_VBD as\_RB much\_JJ as\_IN telling\_VBG me\_PRP to\_TO go\_VB on\_RP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Well\_UH ,\_, I\_PRP never\_RB !\_. ''\_''

said\_VBD the\_DT old\_JJ lady\_NN .\_.

``\_`` My\_PRP$ opinion\_NN is\_VBZ this\_DT :\_: that\_IN '\_'' ere\_FW wolf\_FW is\_VBZ a\_DT -\_: '\_POS idin\_NN '\_'' of\_IN ,\_, somewheres\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT gard\_NN '\_'' ner\_FW wot\_FW did\_VBD n't\_RB remember\_VB said\_VBD he\_PRP was\_VBD a-gallopin\_NN '\_'' northward\_RB faster\_RBR than\_IN a\_DT horse\_NN could\_MD go\_VB ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB believe\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN ,\_, yer\_RB see\_VB ,\_, sir\_NN ,\_, wolves\_NNS do\_VBP n't\_RB gallop\_VB no\_DT more\_RBR nor\_CC dogs\_NNS does\_VBZ ,\_, they\_PRP not\_RB bein\_NN '\_'' built\_VBD that\_DT way\_NN .\_.

Wolves\_NNS is\_VBZ fine\_JJ things\_NNS in\_IN a\_DT storybook\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP dessay\_VBP when\_WRB they\_PRP gets\_VBZ in\_IN packs\_NNS and\_CC does\_VBZ be\_VB chivyin\_NN '\_'' somethin'\_NN that\_WDT 's\_VBZ more\_RBR afeared\_JJ than\_IN they\_PRP is\_VBZ they\_PRP can\_MD make\_VB a\_DT devil\_NNP of\_IN a\_DT noise\_NN and\_CC chop\_VB it\_PRP up\_RP ,\_, whatever\_WDT it\_PRP is\_VBZ .\_.

But\_CC ,\_, Lor\_NNP '\_POS bless\_VBP you\_PRP ,\_, in\_IN real\_JJ life\_NN a\_DT wolf\_NN is\_VBZ only\_RB a\_DT low\_JJ creature\_NN ,\_, not\_RB half\_NN so\_RB clever\_JJ or\_CC bold\_JJ as\_IN a\_DT good\_JJ dog\_NN ;\_: and\_CC not\_RB half\_PDT a\_DT quarter\_NN so\_RB much\_JJ fight\_NN in\_IN '\_'' im\_NN .\_.

This\_DT one\_CD ai\_VBP n't\_RB been\_VBN used\_VBN to\_TO fightin\_VB '\_'' or\_CC even\_RB to\_TO providin\_NN '\_'' for\_IN hisself\_NN ,\_, and\_CC more\_RBR like\_IN he\_PRP 's\_VBZ somewhere\_RB round\_JJ the\_DT Park\_NNP a\_DT -\_: '\_POS idin\_NN '\_'' an\_DT '\_POS a-shiverin\_NN '\_'' of\_IN ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, if\_IN he\_PRP thinks\_VBZ at\_IN all\_DT ,\_, wonderin\_NN '\_'' where\_WRB he\_PRP is\_VBZ to\_TO get\_VB his\_PRP$ breakfast\_NN from\_IN ;\_: or\_CC maybe\_RB he\_PRP 's\_VBZ got\_VBD down\_RB some\_DT area\_NN and\_CC is\_VBZ in\_IN a\_DT coal-cellar\_NN .\_.

My\_PRP$ eye\_NN ,\_, wo\_MD n't\_RB some\_DT cook\_NN get\_VB a\_DT rum\_NN start\_NN when\_WRB she\_PRP sees\_VBZ his\_PRP$ green\_JJ eyes\_NNS a-shining\_NN at\_IN her\_PRP out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT dark\_NN !\_.

If\_IN he\_PRP ca\_MD n't\_RB get\_VB food\_NN he\_PRP 's\_VBZ bound\_VBN to\_TO look\_VB for\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC mayhap\_NN he\_PRP may\_MD chance\_VB to\_TO light\_NN on\_IN a\_DT butcher\_NN 's\_POS shop\_NN in\_IN time\_NN .\_.

If\_IN he\_PRP does\_VBZ n't\_RB ,\_, and\_CC some\_DT nursemaid\_NN goes\_VBZ a-walkin\_NN '\_'' orf\_NN with\_IN a\_DT soldier\_NN ,\_, leavin\_NN '\_'' of\_IN the\_DT hinfant\_NN in\_IN the\_DT perambulator\_NN --\_: well\_RB ,\_, then\_RB I\_PRP should\_MD n't\_RB be\_VB surprised\_VBN if\_IN the\_DT census\_NN is\_VBZ one\_CD babby\_NN the\_DT less\_JJR .\_.

That\_DT 's\_VBZ all\_DT .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP was\_VBD handing\_VBG him\_PRP the\_DT half-sovereign\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB something\_NN came\_VBD bobbing\_VBG up\_RP against\_IN the\_DT window\_NN ,\_, and\_CC Mr.\_NNP Bilder\_NNP 's\_POS face\_NN doubled\_VBD its\_PRP$ natural\_JJ length\_NN with\_IN surprise\_NN .\_.

``\_`` God\_NNP bless\_VB me\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` If\_IN there\_EX ai\_VBP n't\_RB old\_JJ Bersicker\_NNP come\_VBN back\_RB by\_IN '\_POS isself\_NN !\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT door\_NN and\_CC opened\_VBD it\_PRP ;\_: a\_DT most\_RBS unnecessary\_JJ proceeding\_NN it\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP always\_RB thought\_VBN that\_IN a\_DT wild\_JJ animal\_NN never\_RB looks\_VBZ so\_RB well\_RB as\_IN when\_WRB some\_DT obstacle\_NN of\_IN pronounced\_JJ durability\_NN is\_VBZ between\_IN us\_PRP ;\_: a\_DT personal\_JJ experience\_NN has\_VBZ intensified\_VBN rather\_RB than\_IN diminished\_VBD that\_DT idea\_NN .\_.

After\_IN all\_DT ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, there\_EX is\_VBZ nothing\_NN like\_IN custom\_NN ,\_, for\_IN neither\_DT Bilder\_NNP nor\_CC his\_PRP$ wife\_NN thought\_VBD any\_DT more\_JJR of\_IN the\_DT wolf\_NN than\_IN I\_PRP should\_MD of\_IN a\_DT dog\_NN .\_.

The\_DT animal\_NN itself\_PRP was\_VBD as\_IN peaceful\_JJ and\_CC well-behaved\_JJ as\_IN that\_DT father\_NN of\_IN all\_DT picture-wolves\_NNS --\_: Red\_NNP Riding\_NNP Hood\_NNP 's\_POS quondam\_JJ friend\_NN ,\_, whilst\_IN moving\_VBG her\_PRP$ confidence\_NN in\_IN masquerade\_VB .\_.

The\_DT whole\_JJ scene\_NN was\_VBD an\_DT unutterable\_JJ mixture\_NN of\_IN comedy\_NN and\_CC pathos\_NN .\_.

The\_DT wicked\_JJ wolf\_NN that\_IN for\_IN half\_PDT a\_DT day\_NN had\_VBD paralysed\_VBN London\_NNP and\_CC set\_VB all\_PDT the\_DT children\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT town\_NN shivering\_VBG in\_IN their\_PRP$ shoes\_NNS ,\_, was\_VBD there\_EX in\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN penitent\_JJ mood\_NN ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD received\_VBN and\_CC petted\_VBN like\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN vulpine\_JJ prodigal\_JJ son\_NN .\_.

Old\_NNP Bilder\_NNP examined\_VBD him\_PRP all\_DT over\_RP with\_IN most\_JJS tender\_NN solicitude\_NN ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB he\_PRP had\_VBD finished\_VBN with\_IN his\_PRP$ penitent\_NN said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` There\_EX ,\_, I\_PRP knew\_VBD the\_DT poor\_JJ old\_JJ chap\_NN would\_MD get\_VB into\_IN some\_DT kind\_NN of\_IN trouble\_NN ;\_: did\_VBD n't\_RB I\_PRP say\_VBP it\_PRP all\_DT along\_IN ?\_.

Here\_RB 's\_POS his\_PRP$ head\_NN all\_DT cut\_NN and\_CC full\_JJ of\_IN broken\_JJ glass\_NN .\_. '\_''

E\_NN 's\_POS been\_VBN a-gettin\_NN '\_'' over\_IN some\_DT bloomin\_NN '\_'' wall\_NN or\_CC other\_JJ .\_.

It\_PRP 's\_VBZ a\_DT shyme\_NN that\_IN people\_NNS are\_VBP allowed\_VBN to\_TO top\_VB their\_PRP$ walls\_NNS with\_IN broken\_JJ bottles\_NNS .\_.

This\_DT '\_POS ere\_NN 's\_POS what\_WP comes\_VBZ of\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

Come\_VB along\_RB ,\_, Bersicker\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP took\_VBD the\_DT wolf\_NN and\_CC locked\_VBD him\_PRP up\_RP in\_IN a\_DT cage\_NN ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT piece\_NN of\_IN meat\_NN that\_WDT satisfied\_VBD ,\_, in\_IN quantity\_NN at\_IN any\_DT rate\_NN ,\_, the\_DT elementary\_JJ conditions\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT fatted\_VBN calf\_NN ,\_, and\_CC went\_VBD off\_RP to\_TO report\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP came\_VBD off\_RP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, to\_TO report\_VB the\_DT only\_JJ exclusive\_JJ information\_NN that\_WDT is\_VBZ given\_VBN to-day\_NN regarding\_VBG the\_DT strange\_JJ escapade\_NN at\_IN the\_DT Zoo\_NN .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

17\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP was\_VBD engaged\_VBN after\_IN dinner\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ study\_NN posting\_VBG up\_RP my\_PRP$ books\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT ,\_, through\_IN press\_NN of\_IN other\_JJ work\_NN and\_CC the\_DT many\_JJ visits\_NNS to\_TO Lucy\_NNP ,\_, had\_VBD fallen\_VBN sadly\_RB into\_IN arrear\_NN .\_.

Suddenly\_RB the\_DT door\_NN was\_VBD burst\_NN open\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN rushed\_VBN my\_PRP$ patient\_NN ,\_, with\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN distorted\_VBN with\_IN passion\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD thunderstruck\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT thing\_NN as\_IN a\_DT patient\_NN getting\_VBG of\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ accord\_NN into\_IN the\_DT Superintendent\_NNP 's\_POS study\_NN is\_VBZ almost\_RB unknown\_JJ .\_.

Without\_IN an\_DT instant\_NN 's\_POS pause\_NN he\_PRP made\_VBD straight\_RB at\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT dinner-knife\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ hand\_NN ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP saw\_VBD he\_PRP was\_VBD dangerous\_JJ ,\_, I\_PRP tried\_VBD to\_TO keep\_VB the\_DT table\_NN between\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD too\_RB quick\_JJ and\_CC too\_RB strong\_JJ for\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, however\_RB ;\_: for\_IN before\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD get\_VB my\_PRP$ balance\_NN he\_PRP had\_VBD struck\_VBN at\_IN me\_PRP and\_CC cut\_VB my\_PRP$ left\_JJ wrist\_NN rather\_RB severely\_RB .\_.

Before\_IN he\_PRP could\_MD strike\_VB again\_RB ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP got\_VBD in\_IN my\_PRP$ right\_NN and\_CC he\_PRP was\_VBD sprawling\_VBG on\_IN his\_PRP$ back\_NN on\_IN the\_DT floor\_NN .\_.

My\_PRP$ wrist\_NN bled\_VBD freely\_RB ,\_, and\_CC quite\_RB a\_DT little\_JJ pool\_NN trickled\_VBD on\_RP to\_TO the\_DT carpet\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP saw\_VBD that\_DT my\_PRP$ friend\_NN was\_VBD not\_RB intent\_JJ on\_IN further\_JJ effort\_NN ,\_, and\_CC occupied\_VBD myself\_PRP binding\_VBG up\_RP my\_PRP$ wrist\_NN ,\_, keeping\_VBG a\_DT wary\_JJ eye\_NN on\_IN the\_DT prostrate\_JJ figure\_NN all\_PDT the\_DT time\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB the\_DT attendants\_NNS rushed\_VBN in\_IN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP turned\_VBD our\_PRP$ attention\_NN to\_TO him\_PRP ,\_, his\_PRP$ employment\_NN positively\_RB sickened\_VBD me\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD lying\_VBG on\_IN his\_PRP$ belly\_NN on\_IN the\_DT floor\_NN licking\_VBG up\_RP ,\_, like\_IN a\_DT dog\_NN ,\_, the\_DT blood\_NN which\_WDT had\_VBD fallen\_VBN from\_IN my\_PRP$ wounded\_VBN wrist\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD easily\_RB secured\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, to\_TO my\_PRP$ surprise\_NN ,\_, went\_VBD with\_IN the\_DT attendants\_NNS quite\_RB placidly\_RB ,\_, simply\_RB repeating\_VBG over\_IN and\_CC over\_IN again\_RB :\_: ``\_`` The\_DT blood\_NN is\_VBZ the\_DT life\_NN !\_.

The\_DT blood\_NN is\_VBZ the\_DT life\_NN !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB afford\_VB to\_TO lose\_VB blood\_NN just\_RB at\_IN present\_JJ ;\_: I\_PRP have\_VBP lost\_VBN too\_RB much\_JJ of\_IN late\_RB for\_IN my\_PRP$ physical\_JJ good\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB the\_DT prolonged\_JJ strain\_NN of\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS illness\_NN and\_CC its\_PRP$ horrible\_JJ phases\_NNS is\_VBZ telling\_VBG on\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP over-excited\_JJ and\_CC weary\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP need\_VBP rest\_NN ,\_, rest\_NN ,\_, rest\_NN .\_.

Happily\_RB Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP has\_VBZ not\_RB summoned\_VBN me\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP need\_VBP not\_RB forego\_VB my\_PRP$ sleep\_NN ;\_: to-night\_NN I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB well\_RB do\_VB without\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

Telegram\_NN ,\_, Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, Antwerp\_NNP ,\_, to\_TO Seward\_NNP ,\_, Carfax\_NNP .\_.

-LRB-\_-LRB- Sent\_JJ to\_TO Carfax\_NNP ,\_, Sussex\_NNP ,\_, as\_IN no\_DT county\_NN given\_VBN ;\_: delivered\_VBN late\_RB by\_IN twenty-two\_CD hours\_NNS .\_. -RRB-\_-RRB-

``\_`` 17\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Do\_VBP not\_RB fail\_VB to\_TO be\_VB at\_IN Hillingham\_FW to-night\_FW .\_.

If\_IN not\_RB watching\_VBG all\_PDT the\_DT time\_NN frequently\_RB ,\_, visit\_NN and\_CC see\_VBP that\_IN flowers\_NNS are\_VBP as\_IN placed\_JJ ;\_: very\_RB important\_JJ ;\_: do\_VBP not\_RB fail\_VB .\_.

Shall\_NNP be\_VB with\_IN you\_PRP as\_RB soon\_RB as\_IN possible\_JJ after\_IN arrival\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

18\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Just\_RB off\_RP for\_IN train\_NN to\_TO London\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT arrival\_NN of\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP 's\_POS telegram\_NN filled\_VBD me\_PRP with\_IN dismay\_NN .\_.

A\_DT whole\_JJ night\_NN lost\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP know\_VBP by\_IN bitter\_JJ experience\_NN what\_WP may\_MD happen\_VB in\_IN a\_DT night\_NN .\_.

Of\_IN course\_NN it\_PRP is\_VBZ possible\_JJ that\_IN all\_DT may\_MD be\_VB well\_RB ,\_, but\_CC what\_WP may\_MD have\_VB happened\_VBN ?\_.

Surely\_RB there\_EX is\_VBZ some\_DT horrible\_JJ doom\_NN hanging\_NN over\_IN us\_PRP that\_IN every\_DT possible\_JJ accident\_NN should\_MD thwart\_VB us\_PRP in\_IN all\_DT we\_PRP try\_VBP to\_TO do\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD take\_VB this\_DT cylinder\_NN with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB I\_PRP can\_MD complete\_VB my\_PRP$ entry\_NN on\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS phonograph\_NN .\_.

Memorandum\_NN left\_VBN by\_IN Lucy\_NNP Westenra\_NNP .\_.

17\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

Night\_NN .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP write\_VBP this\_DT and\_CC leave\_VB it\_PRP to\_TO be\_VB seen\_VBN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN no\_DT one\_NN may\_MD by\_IN any\_DT chance\_NN get\_VB into\_IN trouble\_NN through\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

This\_DT is\_VBZ an\_DT exact\_JJ record\_NN of\_IN what\_WP took\_VBD place\_NN to-night\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP feel\_VBP I\_PRP am\_VBP dying\_VBG of\_IN weakness\_NN ,\_, and\_CC have\_VBP barely\_RB strength\_NN to\_TO write\_VB ,\_, but\_CC it\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB done\_VBN if\_IN I\_PRP die\_VBP in\_IN the\_DT doing\_VBG .\_.

I\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO bed\_NN as\_IN usual\_JJ ,\_, taking\_VBG care\_NN that\_IN the\_DT flowers\_NNS were\_VBD placed\_VBN as\_IN Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP directed\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC soon\_RB fell\_VBD asleep\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD waked\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT flapping\_VBG at\_IN the\_DT window\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT had\_VBD begun\_VBN after\_IN that\_DT sleep-walking\_NN on\_IN the\_DT cliff\_NN at\_IN Whitby\_NNP when\_WRB Mina\_NNP saved\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC which\_WDT now\_RB I\_PRP know\_VBP so\_RB well\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB afraid\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP did\_VBD wish\_VB that\_IN Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP was\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT next\_JJ room\_NN --\_: as\_IN Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP said\_VBD he\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB --\_: so\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP might\_MD have\_VB called\_VBN him\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP tried\_VBD to\_TO go\_VB to\_TO sleep\_VB ,\_, but\_CC could\_MD not\_RB .\_.

Then\_RB there\_RB came\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP the\_DT old\_JJ fear\_NN of\_IN sleep\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP determined\_VBD to\_TO keep\_VB awake\_RB .\_.

Perversely\_RB sleep\_NN would\_MD try\_VB to\_TO come\_VB then\_RB when\_WRB I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB want\_VB it\_PRP ;\_: so\_RB ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP feared\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB alone\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP opened\_VBD my\_PRP$ door\_NN and\_CC called\_VBD out\_RP :\_: ``\_`` Is\_VBZ there\_RB anybody\_NN there\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

There\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT answer\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD afraid\_JJ to\_TO wake\_VB mother\_NN ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB closed\_VBD my\_PRP$ door\_NN again\_RB .\_.

Then\_RB outside\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT shrubbery\_NN I\_PRP heard\_VBD a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN howl\_NN like\_IN a\_DT dog\_NN 's\_POS ,\_, but\_CC more\_RBR fierce\_JJ and\_CC deeper\_JJR .\_.

I\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT window\_NN and\_CC looked\_VBD out\_RP ,\_, but\_CC could\_MD see\_VB nothing\_NN ,\_, except\_IN a\_DT big\_JJ bat\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT had\_VBD evidently\_RB been\_VBN buffeting\_VBG its\_PRP$ wings\_NNS against\_IN the\_DT window\_NN .\_.

So\_RB I\_PRP went\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO bed\_NN again\_RB ,\_, but\_CC determined\_VBD not\_RB to\_TO go\_VB to\_TO sleep\_VB .\_.

Presently\_RB the\_DT door\_NN opened\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC mother\_NN looked\_VBD in\_IN ;\_: seeing\_VBG by\_IN my\_PRP$ moving\_VBG that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB asleep\_RB ,\_, came\_VBD in\_IN ,\_, and\_CC sat\_VBD by\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

She\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP even\_RB more\_RBR sweetly\_RB and\_CC softly\_RB than\_IN her\_PRP$ wont\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP was\_VBD uneasy\_JJ about\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, darling\_NN ,\_, and\_CC came\_VBD in\_RP to\_TO see\_VB that\_IN you\_PRP were\_VBD all\_DT right\_NN .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP feared\_VBD she\_PRP might\_MD catch\_VB cold\_JJ sitting\_VBG there\_RB ,\_, and\_CC asked\_VBD her\_PRP to\_TO come\_VB in\_IN and\_CC sleep\_NN with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN she\_PRP came\_VBD into\_IN bed\_NN ,\_, and\_CC lay\_VBD down\_RP beside\_IN me\_PRP ;\_: she\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB take\_VB off\_RP her\_PRP$ dressing\_VBG gown\_NN ,\_, for\_IN she\_PRP said\_VBD she\_PRP would\_MD only\_RB stay\_VB a\_DT while\_NN and\_CC then\_RB go\_VB back\_RB to\_TO her\_PRP$ own\_JJ bed\_NN .\_.

As\_IN she\_PRP lay\_VBD there\_RB in\_IN my\_PRP$ arms\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP in\_IN hers\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT flapping\_VBG and\_CC buffeting\_VBG came\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT window\_NN again\_RB .\_.

She\_PRP was\_VBD startled\_VBN and\_CC a\_DT little\_RB frightened\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC cried\_VBD out\_RP :\_: ``\_`` What\_WP is\_VBZ that\_IN ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP tried\_VBD to\_TO pacify\_VB her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC at\_IN last\_RB succeeded\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP lay\_VBD quiet\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD hear\_VB her\_PRP$ poor\_NN dear\_RB heart\_NN still\_RB beating\_VBG terribly\_RB .\_.

After\_IN a\_DT while\_NN there\_EX was\_VBD the\_DT low\_JJ howl\_NN again\_RB out\_IN in\_IN the\_DT shrubbery\_NN ,\_, and\_CC shortly\_RB after\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT crash\_NN at\_IN the\_DT window\_NN ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT lot\_NN of\_IN broken\_JJ glass\_NN was\_VBD hurled\_VBN on\_IN the\_DT floor\_NN .\_.

The\_DT window\_NN blind\_JJ blew\_VBD back\_RB with\_IN the\_DT wind\_NN that\_WDT rushed\_VBD in\_IN ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN the\_DT aperture\_NN of\_IN the\_DT broken\_JJ panes\_NNS there\_EX was\_VBD the\_DT head\_NN of\_IN a\_DT great\_JJ ,\_, gaunt\_JJ grey\_JJ wolf\_NN .\_.

Mother\_NNP cried\_VBD out\_RP in\_IN a\_DT fright\_NN ,\_, and\_CC struggled\_VBD up\_RP into\_IN a\_DT sitting\_VBG posture\_NN ,\_, and\_CC clutched\_VBD wildly\_RB at\_IN anything\_NN that\_WDT would\_MD help\_VB her\_PRP .\_.

Amongst\_IN other\_JJ things\_NNS ,\_, she\_PRP clutched\_VBD the\_DT wreath\_NN of\_IN flowers\_NNS that\_IN Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP insisted\_VBD on\_IN my\_PRP$ wearing\_VBG round\_NN my\_PRP$ neck\_NN ,\_, and\_CC tore\_VBD it\_PRP away\_RB from\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

For\_IN a\_DT second\_JJ or\_CC two\_CD she\_PRP sat\_VBD up\_RB ,\_, pointing\_VBG at\_IN the\_DT wolf\_NN ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT strange\_JJ and\_CC horrible\_JJ gurgling\_NN in\_IN her\_PRP$ throat\_NN ;\_: then\_RB she\_PRP fell\_VBD over\_RB --\_: as\_IN if\_IN struck\_VBN with\_IN lightning\_NN ,\_, and\_CC her\_PRP$ head\_NN hit\_VBD my\_PRP$ forehead\_NN and\_CC made\_VBD me\_PRP dizzy\_JJ for\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN or\_CC two\_CD .\_.

The\_DT room\_NN and\_CC all\_DT round\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO spin\_VB round\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP kept\_VBD my\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS fixed\_VBN on\_IN the\_DT window\_NN ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT wolf\_NN drew\_VBD his\_PRP$ head\_NN back\_RB ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT whole\_JJ myriad\_JJ of\_IN little\_JJ specks\_NNS seemed\_VBD to\_TO come\_VB blowing\_NN in\_IN through\_IN the\_DT broken\_JJ window\_NN ,\_, and\_CC wheeling\_NN and\_CC circling\_VBG round\_NN like\_IN the\_DT pillar\_NN of\_IN dust\_NN that\_IN travellers\_NNS describe\_VBP when\_WRB there\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT simoon\_NN in\_IN the\_DT desert\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP tried\_VBD to\_TO stir\_VB ,\_, but\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD some\_DT spell\_NN upon\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC dear\_RB mother\_NN 's\_POS poor\_JJ body\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT seemed\_VBD to\_TO grow\_VB cold\_JJ already\_RB --\_: for\_IN her\_PRP dear\_RB heart\_NN had\_VBD ceased\_VBN to\_TO beat\_VB --\_: weighed\_VBD me\_PRP down\_RB ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP remembered\_VBD no\_DT more\_JJR for\_IN a\_DT while\_NN .\_.

The\_DT time\_NN did\_VBD not\_RB seem\_VB long\_RB ,\_, but\_CC very\_RB ,\_, very\_RB awful\_JJ ,\_, till\_IN I\_PRP recovered\_VBD consciousness\_NN again\_RB .\_.

Somewhere\_RB near\_IN ,\_, a\_DT passing\_NN bell\_NN was\_VBD tolling\_VBG ;\_: the\_DT dogs\_NNS all\_DT round\_VBP the\_DT neighbourhood\_NN were\_VBD howling\_VBG ;\_: and\_CC in\_IN our\_PRP$ shrubbery\_NN ,\_, seemingly\_RB just\_RB outside\_JJ ,\_, a\_DT nightingale\_NN was\_VBD singing\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD dazed\_JJ and\_CC stupid\_JJ with\_IN pain\_NN and\_CC terror\_NN and\_CC weakness\_NN ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT sound\_NN of\_IN the\_DT nightingale\_NN seemed\_VBD like\_IN the\_DT voice\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ dead\_JJ mother\_NN come\_VBN back\_RB to\_TO comfort\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT sounds\_NNS seemed\_VBD to\_TO have\_VB awakened\_VBN the\_DT maids\_NNS ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD hear\_VB their\_PRP$ bare\_JJ feet\_NNS pattering\_VBG outside\_IN my\_PRP$ door\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP called\_VBD to\_TO them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC they\_PRP came\_VBD in\_IN ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB they\_PRP saw\_VBD what\_WP had\_VBD happened\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC what\_WP it\_PRP was\_VBD that\_WDT lay\_VBD over\_IN me\_PRP on\_IN the\_DT bed\_NN ,\_, they\_PRP screamed\_VBD out\_RP .\_.

The\_DT wind\_NN rushed\_VBD in\_RP through\_IN the\_DT broken\_JJ window\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT door\_NN slammed\_VBD to\_TO .\_.

They\_PRP lifted\_VBD off\_RP the\_DT body\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ dear\_RB mother\_NN ,\_, and\_CC laid\_VBD her\_PRP ,\_, covered\_VBD up\_RP with\_IN a\_DT sheet\_NN ,\_, on\_IN the\_DT bed\_NN after\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD got\_VBN up\_RP .\_.

They\_PRP were\_VBD all\_DT so\_RB frightened\_JJ and\_CC nervous\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP directed\_VBD them\_PRP to\_TO go\_VB to\_TO the\_DT dining-room\_NN and\_CC have\_VBP each\_DT a\_DT glass\_NN of\_IN wine\_NN .\_.

The\_DT door\_NN flew\_VBD open\_JJ for\_IN an\_DT instant\_NN and\_CC closed\_VBD again\_RB .\_.

The\_DT maids\_NNS shrieked\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB went\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT body\_NN to\_TO the\_DT dining-room\_NN ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP laid\_VBD what\_WP flowers\_NNS I\_PRP had\_VBD on\_IN my\_PRP$ dear\_RB mother\_NN 's\_POS breast\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB they\_PRP were\_VBD there\_EX I\_PRP remembered\_VBD what\_WP Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP had\_VBD told\_VBN me\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP did\_VBD n't\_RB like\_VB to\_TO remove\_VB them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, besides\_IN ,\_, I\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT servants\_NNS to\_TO sit\_VB up\_RP with\_IN me\_PRP now\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD surprised\_VBN that\_IN the\_DT maids\_NNS did\_VBD not\_RB come\_VB back\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP called\_VBD them\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC got\_VBD no\_DT answer\_NN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT dining-room\_NN to\_TO look\_VB for\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

My\_PRP$ heart\_NN sank\_VBD when\_WRB I\_PRP saw\_VBD what\_WP had\_VBD happened\_VBN .\_.

They\_PRP all\_DT four\_CD lay\_VBD helpless\_JJ on\_IN the\_DT floor\_NN ,\_, breathing\_VBG heavily\_RB .\_.

The\_DT decanter\_NN of\_IN sherry\_NN was\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT table\_NN half\_NN full\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT queer\_NN ,\_, acrid\_JJ smell\_NN about\_IN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD suspicious\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC examined\_VBD the\_DT decanter\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP smelt\_VBD of\_IN laudanum\_NN ,\_, and\_CC looking\_VBG on\_IN the\_DT sideboard\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP found\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT bottle\_NN which\_WDT mother\_NN 's\_POS doctor\_NN uses\_VBZ for\_IN her\_PRP --\_: oh\_UH !\_.

did\_VBD use\_VB --\_: was\_VBD empty\_JJ .\_.

What\_WP am\_VBP I\_PRP to\_TO do\_VB ?\_.

what\_WP am\_VBP I\_PRP to\_TO do\_VB ?\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP back\_RB in\_IN the\_DT room\_NN with\_IN mother\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB leave\_VB her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP alone\_RB ,\_, save\_VB for\_IN the\_DT sleeping\_VBG servants\_NNS ,\_, whom\_WP some\_DT one\_NN has\_VBZ drugged\_VBN .\_.

Alone\_RB with\_IN the\_DT dead\_NN !\_.

I\_PRP dare\_VBP not\_RB go\_VB out\_RB ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD hear\_VB the\_DT low\_JJ howl\_NN of\_IN the\_DT wolf\_NN through\_IN the\_DT broken\_JJ window\_NN .\_.

The\_DT air\_NN seems\_VBZ full\_JJ of\_IN specks\_NNS ,\_, floating\_VBG and\_CC circling\_VBG in\_IN the\_DT draught\_NN from\_IN the\_DT window\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT lights\_NNS burn\_VBP blue\_JJ and\_CC dim\_JJ .\_.

What\_WP am\_VBP I\_PRP to\_TO do\_VB ?\_.

God\_NNP shield\_VB me\_PRP from\_IN harm\_NN this\_DT night\_NN !\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD hide\_VB this\_DT paper\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ breast\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB they\_PRP shall\_MD find\_VB it\_PRP when\_WRB they\_PRP come\_VBP to\_TO lay\_VB me\_PRP out\_RP .\_.

My\_PRP$ dear\_RB mother\_NN gone\_VBN !\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ time\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP go\_VBP too\_RB .\_.

Good-bye\_JJ ,\_, dear\_RB Arthur\_NNP ,\_, if\_IN I\_PRP should\_MD not\_RB survive\_VB this\_DT night\_NN .\_.

God\_NNP keep\_VB you\_PRP ,\_, dear\_RB ,\_, and\_CC God\_NNP help\_VB me\_PRP !\_.

CHAPTER\_NNP XII\_NNP DR.\_NNP SEWARD\_NNP 'S\_POS DIARY\_NN 18\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP drove\_VBD at\_IN once\_RB to\_TO Hillingham\_NNP and\_CC arrived\_VBD early\_JJ .\_.

Keeping\_VBG my\_PRP$ cab\_NN at\_IN the\_DT gate\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP went\_VBD up\_RP the\_DT avenue\_NN alone\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP knocked\_VBD gently\_RB and\_CC rang\_VBD as\_RB quietly\_RB as\_IN possible\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP feared\_VBD to\_TO disturb\_VB Lucy\_NNP or\_CC her\_PRP$ mother\_NN ,\_, and\_CC hoped\_VBD to\_TO only\_RB bring\_VB a\_DT servant\_NN to\_TO the\_DT door\_NN .\_.

After\_IN a\_DT while\_NN ,\_, finding\_VBG no\_DT response\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP knocked\_VBD and\_CC rang\_VBD again\_RB ;\_: still\_RB no\_DT answer\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP cursed\_VBD the\_DT laziness\_NN of\_IN the\_DT servants\_NNS that\_IN they\_PRP should\_MD lie\_VB abed\_VBD at\_IN such\_PDT an\_DT hour\_NN --\_: for\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD now\_RB ten\_CD o'clock\_RB --\_: and\_CC so\_RB rang\_VBD and\_CC knocked\_VBD again\_RB ,\_, but\_CC more\_RBR impatiently\_RB ,\_, but\_CC still\_RB without\_IN response\_NN .\_.

Hitherto\_RB I\_PRP had\_VBD blamed\_VBN only\_RB the\_DT servants\_NNS ,\_, but\_CC now\_RB a\_DT terrible\_JJ fear\_NN began\_VBD to\_TO assail\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

Was\_VBD this\_DT desolation\_NN but\_CC another\_DT link\_NN in\_IN the\_DT chain\_NN of\_IN doom\_NN which\_WDT seemed\_VBD drawing\_NN tight\_JJ around\_IN us\_PRP ?\_.

Was\_VBD it\_PRP indeed\_RB a\_DT house\_NN of\_IN death\_NN to\_TO which\_WDT I\_PRP had\_VBD come\_VBN ,\_, too\_RB late\_JJ ?\_.

I\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN minutes\_NNS ,\_, even\_RB seconds\_NNS of\_IN delay\_NN ,\_, might\_MD mean\_VB hours\_NNS of\_IN danger\_NN to\_TO Lucy\_NNP ,\_, if\_IN she\_PRP had\_VBD had\_VBN again\_RB one\_CD of\_IN those\_DT frightful\_JJ relapses\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP went\_VBD round\_NN the\_DT house\_NN to\_TO try\_VB if\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD find\_VB by\_IN chance\_NN an\_DT entry\_NN anywhere\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD find\_VB no\_DT means\_NNS of\_IN ingress\_NN .\_.

Every\_DT window\_NN and\_CC door\_NN was\_VBD fastened\_VBN and\_CC locked\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP returned\_VBD baffled\_VBN to\_TO the\_DT porch\_NN .\_.

As\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD so\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP heard\_VBD the\_DT rapid\_JJ pit-pat\_NN of\_IN a\_DT swiftly\_RB driven\_VBN horse\_NN 's\_POS feet\_NNS .\_.

They\_PRP stopped\_VBD at\_IN the\_DT gate\_NN ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT few\_JJ seconds\_NNS later\_RB I\_PRP met\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP running\_VBG up\_RP the\_DT avenue\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB he\_PRP saw\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP gasped\_VBD out\_RP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Then\_RB it\_PRP was\_VBD you\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC just\_RB arrived\_VBN .\_.

How\_WRB is\_VBZ she\_PRP ?\_.

Are\_VBP we\_PRP too\_RB late\_JJ ?\_.

Did\_VBD you\_PRP not\_RB get\_VB my\_PRP$ telegram\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP answered\_VBD as\_RB quickly\_RB and\_CC coherently\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD only\_RB got\_VBN his\_PRP$ telegram\_NN early\_RB in\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN ,\_, and\_CC had\_VBD not\_RB lost\_VBN a\_DT minute\_NN in\_IN coming\_VBG here\_RB ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB make\_VB any\_DT one\_CD in\_IN the\_DT house\_NN hear\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP paused\_VBD and\_CC raised\_VBD his\_PRP$ hat\_NN as\_IN he\_PRP said\_VBD solemnly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Then\_RB I\_PRP fear\_VBP we\_PRP are\_VBP too\_RB late\_JJ .\_.

God\_NNP 's\_POS will\_MD be\_VB done\_VBN !\_. ''\_''

With\_IN his\_PRP$ usual\_JJ recuperative\_JJ energy\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: ``\_`` Come\_VB .\_.

If\_IN there\_EX be\_VB no\_DT way\_NN open\_JJ to\_TO get\_VB in\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP must\_MD make\_VB one\_CD .\_.

Time\_NNP is\_VBZ all\_DT in\_IN all\_DT to\_TO us\_PRP now\_RB .\_. ''\_''

We\_PRP went\_VBD round\_JJ to\_TO the\_DT back\_NN of\_IN the\_DT house\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT kitchen\_NN window\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP took\_VBD a\_DT small\_JJ surgical\_JJ saw\_NN from\_IN his\_PRP$ case\_NN ,\_, and\_CC handing\_VBG it\_PRP to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, pointed\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT iron\_NN bars\_NNS which\_WDT guarded\_VBD the\_DT window\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP attacked\_VBD them\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB and\_CC had\_VBD very\_RB soon\_RB cut\_VBN through\_IN three\_CD of\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

Then\_RB with\_IN a\_DT long\_JJ ,\_, thin\_JJ knife\_NN we\_PRP pushed\_VBD back\_RP the\_DT fastening\_NN of\_IN the\_DT sashes\_NNS and\_CC opened\_VBD the\_DT window\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP helped\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP in\_IN ,\_, and\_CC followed\_VBD him\_PRP .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT one\_NN in\_IN the\_DT kitchen\_NN or\_CC in\_IN the\_DT servants\_NNS '\_POS rooms\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT were\_VBD close\_JJ at\_IN hand\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP tried\_VBD all\_PDT the\_DT rooms\_NNS as\_IN we\_PRP went\_VBD along\_RB ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN the\_DT dining-room\_NN ,\_, dimly\_RB lit\_VBN by\_IN rays\_NNS of\_IN light\_NN through\_IN the\_DT shutters\_NNS ,\_, found\_VBD four\_CD servant-women\_NNS lying\_VBG on\_IN the\_DT floor\_NN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT need\_NN to\_TO think\_VB them\_PRP dead\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN their\_PRP$ stertorous\_JJ breathing\_NN and\_CC the\_DT acrid\_JJ smell\_NN of\_IN laudanum\_NN in\_IN the\_DT room\_NN left\_VBD no\_DT doubt\_NN as\_IN to\_TO their\_PRP$ condition\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP looked\_VBD at\_IN each\_DT other\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN we\_PRP moved\_VBD away\_RB he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` We\_PRP can\_MD attend\_VB to\_TO them\_PRP later\_RB .\_. ''\_''

Then\_RB we\_PRP ascended\_VBD to\_TO Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS room\_NN .\_.

For\_IN an\_DT instant\_NN or\_CC two\_CD we\_PRP paused\_VBD at\_IN the\_DT door\_NN to\_TO listen\_VB ,\_, but\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT sound\_NN that\_IN we\_PRP could\_MD hear\_VB .\_.

With\_IN white\_JJ faces\_NNS and\_CC trembling\_VBG hands\_NNS ,\_, we\_PRP opened\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN gently\_RB ,\_, and\_CC entered\_VBD the\_DT room\_NN .\_.

How\_WRB shall\_MD I\_PRP describe\_VBP what\_WP we\_PRP saw\_VBD ?\_.

On\_IN the\_DT bed\_NN lay\_VBD two\_CD women\_NNS ,\_, Lucy\_NNP and\_CC her\_PRP$ mother\_NN .\_.

The\_DT latter\_NN lay\_VBD farthest\_JJS in\_IN ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP was\_VBD covered\_VBN with\_IN a\_DT white\_JJ sheet\_NN ,\_, the\_DT edge\_NN of\_IN which\_WDT had\_VBD been\_VBN blown\_VBN back\_RB by\_IN the\_DT draught\_NN through\_IN the\_DT broken\_JJ window\_NN ,\_, showing\_VBG the\_DT drawn\_VBN ,\_, white\_JJ face\_NN ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT look\_NN of\_IN terror\_NN fixed\_VBN upon\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

By\_IN her\_PRP$ side\_NN lay\_VBD Lucy\_NNP ,\_, with\_IN face\_NN white\_JJ and\_CC still\_RB more\_RBR drawn\_VBN .\_.

The\_DT flowers\_NNS which\_WDT had\_VBD been\_VBN round\_JJ her\_PRP$ neck\_NN we\_PRP found\_VBD upon\_IN her\_PRP$ mother\_NN 's\_POS bosom\_NN ,\_, and\_CC her\_PRP$ throat\_NN was\_VBD bare\_JJ ,\_, showing\_VBG the\_DT two\_CD little\_JJ wounds\_NNS which\_WDT we\_PRP had\_VBD noticed\_VBN before\_RB ,\_, but\_CC looking\_VBG horribly\_RB white\_JJ and\_CC mangled\_JJ .\_.

Without\_IN a\_DT word\_NN the\_DT Professor\_NNP bent\_NN over\_IN the\_DT bed\_NN ,\_, his\_PRP$ head\_NN almost\_RB touching\_VBG poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS breast\_NN ;\_: then\_RB he\_PRP gave\_VBD a\_DT quick\_JJ turn\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ head\_NN ,\_, as\_IN of\_IN one\_CD who\_WP listens\_VBZ ,\_, and\_CC leaping\_VBG to\_TO his\_PRP$ feet\_NNS ,\_, he\_PRP cried\_VBD out\_RP to\_TO me\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` It\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB yet\_RB too\_RB late\_JJ !\_.

Quick\_RB !\_.

quick\_JJ !\_.

Bring\_VB the\_DT brandy\_NN !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP flew\_VBD downstairs\_NNS and\_CC returned\_VBD with\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, taking\_VBG care\_NN to\_TO smell\_VB and\_CC taste\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, lest\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, were\_VBD drugged\_VBN like\_IN the\_DT decanter\_NN of\_IN sherry\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP found\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT table\_NN .\_.

The\_DT maids\_NNS were\_VBD still\_RB breathing\_VBG ,\_, but\_CC more\_RBR restlessly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP fancied\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT narcotic\_NN was\_VBD wearing\_VBG off\_RP .\_.

I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB stay\_VB to\_TO make\_VB sure\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC returned\_VBD to\_TO Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP rubbed\_VBD the\_DT brandy\_NN ,\_, as\_IN on\_IN another\_DT occasion\_NN ,\_, on\_IN her\_PRP$ lips\_NNS and\_CC gums\_NNS and\_CC on\_IN her\_PRP$ wrists\_NNS and\_CC the\_DT palms\_NNS of\_IN her\_PRP$ hands\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP can\_MD do\_VB this\_DT ,\_, all\_DT that\_WDT can\_MD be\_VB at\_IN the\_DT present\_JJ .\_.

You\_PRP go\_VBP wake\_VB those\_DT maids\_NNS .\_.

Flick\_NN them\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT face\_NN with\_IN a\_DT wet\_JJ towel\_NN ,\_, and\_CC flick\_VB them\_PRP hard\_RB .\_.

Make\_VB them\_PRP get\_VB heat\_NN and\_CC fire\_NN and\_CC a\_DT warm\_JJ bath\_NN .\_.

This\_DT poor\_JJ soul\_NN is\_VBZ nearly\_RB as\_RB cold\_JJ as\_IN that\_DT beside\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

She\_PRP will\_MD need\_VB be\_VB heated\_VBN before\_IN we\_PRP can\_MD do\_VB anything\_NN more\_JJR .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP went\_VBD at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, and\_CC found\_VBD little\_JJ difficulty\_NN in\_IN waking\_VBG three\_CD of\_IN the\_DT women\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT fourth\_JJ was\_VBD only\_RB a\_DT young\_JJ girl\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT drug\_NN had\_VBD evidently\_RB affected\_VBN her\_PRP more\_RBR strongly\_RB ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP lifted\_VBD her\_PRP on\_IN the\_DT sofa\_NN and\_CC let\_VB her\_PRP$ sleep\_NN .\_.

The\_DT others\_NNS were\_VBD dazed\_VBN at\_IN first\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC as\_IN remembrance\_NN came\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO them\_PRP they\_PRP cried\_VBD and\_CC sobbed\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT hysterical\_JJ manner\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD stern\_JJ with\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, and\_CC would\_MD not\_RB let\_VB them\_PRP talk\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP told\_VBD them\_PRP that\_IN one\_CD life\_NN was\_VBD bad\_JJ enough\_RB to\_TO lose\_VB ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN if\_IN they\_PRP delayed\_VBD they\_PRP would\_MD sacrifice\_VB Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP .\_.

So\_RB ,\_, sobbing\_VBG and\_CC crying\_VBG ,\_, they\_PRP went\_VBD about\_IN their\_PRP$ way\_NN ,\_, half\_NN clad\_VBD as\_IN they\_PRP were\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC prepared\_JJ fire\_NN and\_CC water\_NN .\_.

Fortunately\_RB ,\_, the\_DT kitchen\_NN and\_CC boiler\_NN fires\_NNS were\_VBD still\_RB alive\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT lack\_NN of\_IN hot\_JJ water\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP got\_VBD a\_DT bath\_NN and\_CC carried\_VBD Lucy\_NNP out\_RP as\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD and\_CC placed\_VBD her\_PRP in\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

Whilst\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD busy\_JJ chafing\_VBG her\_PRP$ limbs\_NNS there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT knock\_VB at\_IN the\_DT hall\_NN door\_NN .\_.

One\_CD of\_IN the\_DT maids\_NNS ran\_VBD off\_RP ,\_, hurried\_VBN on\_IN some\_DT more\_JJR clothes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC opened\_VBD it\_PRP .\_.

Then\_RB she\_PRP returned\_VBD and\_CC whispered\_VBD to\_TO us\_PRP that\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT gentleman\_NN who\_WP had\_VBD come\_VBN with\_IN a\_DT message\_NN from\_IN Mr.\_NNP Holmwood\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP bade\_VBD her\_PRP simply\_RB tell\_VB him\_PRP that\_IN he\_PRP must\_MD wait\_VB ,\_, for\_IN we\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB no\_DT one\_NN now\_RB .\_.

She\_PRP went\_VBD away\_RB with\_IN the\_DT message\_NN ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, engrossed\_VBN with\_IN our\_PRP$ work\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP clean\_VBP forgot\_VBN all\_DT about\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP never\_RB saw\_VBD in\_IN all\_DT my\_PRP$ experience\_NN the\_DT Professor\_NNP work\_NN in\_IN such\_JJ deadly\_JJ earnest\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP knew\_VBD --\_: as\_IN he\_PRP knew\_VBD --\_: that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT stand-up\_JJ fight\_NN with\_IN death\_NN ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN a\_DT pause\_NN told\_VBD him\_PRP so\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP answered\_VBD me\_PRP in\_IN a\_DT way\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB understand\_VB ,\_, but\_CC with\_IN the\_DT sternest\_JJS look\_NN that\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN could\_MD wear\_VB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` If\_IN that\_DT were\_VBD all\_DT ,\_, I\_PRP would\_MD stop\_VB here\_RB where\_WRB we\_PRP are\_VBP now\_RB ,\_, and\_CC let\_VB her\_PRP fade\_VB away\_RB into\_IN peace\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP see\_VBP no\_DT light\_NN in\_IN life\_NN over\_IN her\_PRP$ horizon\_NN .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP went\_VBD on\_RP with\_IN his\_PRP$ work\_NN with\_IN ,\_, if\_IN possible\_JJ ,\_, renewed\_JJ and\_CC more\_RBR frenzied\_JJ vigour\_NN .\_.

Presently\_RB we\_PRP both\_DT began\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB conscious\_JJ that\_IN the\_DT heat\_NN was\_VBD beginning\_VBG to\_TO be\_VB of\_IN some\_DT effect\_NN .\_.

Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS heart\_NN beat\_VBD a\_DT trifle\_RB more\_RBR audibly\_RB to\_TO the\_DT stethoscope\_NN ,\_, and\_CC her\_PRP$ lungs\_NNS had\_VBD a\_DT perceptible\_JJ movement\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP 's\_POS face\_NN almost\_RB beamed\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN we\_PRP lifted\_VBD her\_PRP from\_IN the\_DT bath\_NN and\_CC rolled\_VBD her\_PRP in\_IN a\_DT hot\_JJ sheet\_NN to\_TO dry\_VB her\_PRP he\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` The\_DT first\_JJ gain\_NN is\_VBZ ours\_PRP !\_.

Check\_VB to\_TO the\_DT King\_NN !\_. ''\_''

We\_PRP took\_VBD Lucy\_NNP into\_IN another\_DT room\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT had\_VBD by\_IN now\_RB been\_VBN prepared\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC laid\_VBD her\_PRP in\_IN bed\_NN and\_CC forced\_VBD a\_DT few\_JJ drops\_NNS of\_IN brandy\_NN down\_IN her\_PRP$ throat\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP noticed\_VBD that\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP tied\_VBD a\_DT soft\_JJ silk\_NN handkerchief\_NN round\_VB her\_PRP$ throat\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP was\_VBD still\_RB unconscious\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD quite\_RB as\_RB bad\_JJ as\_IN ,\_, if\_IN not\_RB worse\_JJR than\_IN ,\_, we\_PRP had\_VBD ever\_RB seen\_VBN her\_PRP .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP called\_VBD in\_IN one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT women\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC told\_VBD her\_PRP to\_TO stay\_VB with\_IN her\_PRP and\_CC not\_RB to\_TO take\_VB her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS off\_IN her\_PRP till\_IN we\_PRP returned\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB beckoned\_VBD me\_PRP out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT room\_NN .\_.

``\_`` We\_PRP must\_MD consult\_VB as\_IN to\_TO what\_WP is\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB done\_VBN ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD as\_IN we\_PRP descended\_VBD the\_DT stairs\_NNS .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT hall\_NN he\_PRP opened\_VBD the\_DT dining-room\_JJ door\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP passed\_VBD in\_IN ,\_, he\_PRP closing\_VBG the\_DT door\_NN carefully\_RB behind\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT shutters\_NNS had\_VBD been\_VBN opened\_VBN ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT blinds\_NNS were\_VBD already\_RB down\_RB ,\_, with\_IN that\_DT obedience\_NN to\_TO the\_DT etiquette\_NN of\_IN death\_NN which\_WDT the\_DT British\_JJ woman\_NN of\_IN the\_DT lower\_JJR classes\_NNS always\_RB rigidly\_RB observes\_VBZ .\_.

The\_DT room\_NN was\_VBD ,\_, therefore\_RB ,\_, dimly\_RB dark\_JJ .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, light\_JJ enough\_RB for\_IN our\_PRP$ purposes\_NNS .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP 's\_POS sternness\_NN was\_VBD somewhat\_RB relieved\_VBN by\_IN a\_DT look\_NN of\_IN perplexity\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD evidently\_RB torturing\_VBG his\_PRP$ mind\_NN about\_IN something\_NN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP waited\_VBD for\_IN an\_DT instant\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP spoke\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` What\_WP are\_VBP we\_PRP to\_TO do\_VB now\_RB ?\_.

Where\_WRB are\_VBP we\_PRP to\_TO turn\_VB for\_IN help\_NN ?\_.

We\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB another\_DT transfusion\_NN of\_IN blood\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN soon\_RB ,\_, or\_CC that\_IN poor\_JJ girl\_NN 's\_POS life\_NN wo\_MD n't\_RB be\_VB worth\_JJ an\_DT hour\_NN 's\_POS purchase\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP are\_VBP exhausted\_VBN already\_RB ;\_: I\_PRP am\_VBP exhausted\_VBN too\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP fear\_VBP to\_TO trust\_VB those\_DT women\_NNS ,\_, even\_RB if\_IN they\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB courage\_NN to\_TO submit\_VB .\_.

What\_WP are\_VBP we\_PRP to\_TO do\_VB for\_IN some\_DT one\_CD who\_WP will\_MD open\_VB his\_PRP$ veins\_NNS for\_IN her\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` What\_WP 's\_VBZ the\_DT matter\_NN with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, anyhow\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

The\_DT voice\_NN came\_VBD from\_IN the\_DT sofa\_NN across\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, and\_CC its\_PRP$ tones\_NNS brought\_VBD relief\_NN and\_CC joy\_NN to\_TO my\_PRP$ heart\_NN ,\_, for\_IN they\_PRP were\_VBD those\_DT of\_IN Quincey\_NNP Morris\_NNP .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP started\_VBD angrily\_RB at\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ sound\_NN ,\_, but\_CC his\_PRP$ face\_NN softened\_VBD and\_CC a\_DT glad\_JJ look\_NN came\_VBD into\_IN his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS as\_IN I\_PRP cried\_VBD out\_RP :\_: ``\_`` Quincey\_NNP Morris\_NNP !\_. ''\_''

and\_CC rushed\_VBN towards\_IN him\_PRP with\_IN outstretched\_VBN hands\_NNS .\_.

``\_`` What\_WP brought\_VBD you\_PRP here\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP cried\_VBD as\_IN our\_PRP$ hands\_NNS met\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP guess\_VBP Art\_NNP is\_VBZ the\_DT cause\_NN .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP handed\_VBD me\_PRP a\_DT telegram\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Have\_VBP not\_RB heard\_VBN from\_IN Seward\_NNP for\_IN three\_CD days\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC am\_RB terribly\_RB anxious\_JJ .\_.

Can\_MD not\_RB leave\_VB .\_.

Father\_NNP still\_RB in\_IN same\_JJ condition\_NN .\_.

Send\_VB me\_PRP word\_NN how\_WRB Lucy\_NNP is\_VBZ .\_.

Do\_VBP not\_RB delay\_VB .\_.

--\_: Holmwood\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP think\_VBP I\_PRP came\_VBD just\_RB in\_IN the\_DT nick\_NN of\_IN time\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP know\_VBP you\_PRP have\_VBP only\_RB to\_TO tell\_VB me\_PRP what\_WP to\_TO do\_VB .\_. ''\_''

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP strode\_VBD forward\_RB ,\_, and\_CC took\_VBD his\_PRP$ hand\_NN ,\_, looking\_VBG him\_PRP straight\_RB in\_IN the\_DT eyes\_NNS as\_IN he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` A\_DT brave\_VBP man\_NN 's\_POS blood\_NN is\_VBZ the\_DT best\_JJS thing\_NN on\_IN this\_DT earth\_NN when\_WRB a\_DT woman\_NN is\_VBZ in\_IN trouble\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP 're\_VBP a\_DT man\_NN and\_CC no\_DT mistake\_NN .\_.

Well\_RB ,\_, the\_DT devil\_NNP may\_MD work\_VB against\_IN us\_PRP for\_IN all\_DT he\_PRP 's\_VBZ worth\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC God\_NNP sends\_VBZ us\_PRP men\_NNS when\_WRB we\_PRP want\_VBP them\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

Once\_RB again\_RB we\_PRP went\_VBD through\_IN that\_DT ghastly\_JJ operation\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB the\_DT heart\_NN to\_TO go\_VB through\_RP with\_IN the\_DT details\_NNS .\_.

Lucy\_NNP had\_VBD got\_VBN a\_DT terrible\_JJ shock\_NN and\_CC it\_PRP told\_VBD on\_IN her\_PRP$ more\_JJR than\_IN before\_RB ,\_, for\_IN though\_IN plenty\_NN of\_IN blood\_NN went\_VBD into\_IN her\_PRP$ veins\_NNS ,\_, her\_PRP$ body\_NN did\_VBD not\_RB respond\_VB to\_TO the\_DT treatment\_NN as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN on\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ occasions\_NNS .\_.

Her\_PRP$ struggle\_NN back\_RB into\_IN life\_NN was\_VBD something\_NN frightful\_JJ to\_TO see\_VB and\_CC hear\_VB .\_.

However\_RB ,\_, the\_DT action\_NN of\_IN both\_CC heart\_NN and\_CC lungs\_NNS improved\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP made\_VBD a\_DT subcutaneous\_JJ injection\_NN of\_IN morphia\_NN ,\_, as\_IN before\_RB ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN good\_JJ effect\_NN .\_.

Her\_PRP$ faint\_JJ became\_VBD a\_DT profound\_JJ slumber\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP watched\_VBD whilst\_IN I\_PRP went\_VBD downstairs\_NNS with\_IN Quincey\_NNP Morris\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC sent\_VBD one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT maids\_NNS to\_TO pay\_VB off\_RP one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT cabmen\_NN who\_WP were\_VBD waiting\_VBG .\_.

I\_PRP left\_VBD Quincey\_NNP lying\_VBG down\_RP after\_IN having\_VBG a\_DT glass\_NN of\_IN wine\_NN ,\_, and\_CC told\_VBD the\_DT cook\_NN to\_TO get\_VB ready\_JJ a\_DT good\_JJ breakfast\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB a\_DT thought\_NN struck\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP went\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO the\_DT room\_NN where\_WRB Lucy\_NNP now\_RB was\_VBD .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP came\_VBD softly\_RB in\_IN ,\_, I\_PRP found\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP with\_IN a\_DT sheet\_NN or\_CC two\_CD of\_IN note-paper\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ hand\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD evidently\_RB read\_VBN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD thinking\_VBG it\_PRP over\_RP as\_IN he\_PRP sat\_VBD with\_IN his\_PRP$ hand\_NN to\_TO his\_PRP$ brow\_NN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT look\_NN of\_IN grim\_JJ satisfaction\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, as\_IN of\_IN one\_CD who\_WP has\_VBZ had\_VBD a\_DT doubt\_NN solved\_VBN .\_.

He\_PRP handed\_VBD me\_PRP the\_DT paper\_NN saying\_VBG only\_RB :\_: ``\_`` It\_PRP dropped\_VBD from\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS breast\_NN when\_WRB we\_PRP carried\_VBD her\_PRP to\_TO the\_DT bath\_NN .\_. ''\_''

When\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD read\_VBN it\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP stood\_VBD looking\_VBG at\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC after\_IN a\_DT pause\_NN asked\_VBD him\_PRP :\_: ``\_`` In\_IN God\_NNP 's\_POS name\_NN ,\_, what\_WP does\_VBZ it\_PRP all\_DT mean\_VB ?\_.

Was\_VBD she\_PRP ,\_, or\_CC is\_VBZ she\_PRP ,\_, mad\_JJ ;\_: or\_CC what\_WDT sort\_NN of\_IN horrible\_JJ danger\_NN is\_VBZ it\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP was\_VBD so\_RB bewildered\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB know\_VB what\_WP to\_TO say\_VB more\_JJR .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP put\_VBD out\_RP his\_PRP$ hand\_NN and\_CC took\_VBD the\_DT paper\_NN ,\_, saying\_VBG :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Do\_VBP not\_RB trouble\_NN about\_IN it\_PRP now\_RB .\_.

Forget\_VB it\_PRP for\_IN the\_DT present\_JJ .\_.

You\_PRP shall\_MD know\_VB and\_CC understand\_VB it\_PRP all\_DT in\_IN good\_JJ time\_NN ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB later\_RB .\_.

And\_CC now\_RB what\_WP is\_VBZ it\_PRP that\_IN you\_PRP came\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP to\_TO say\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

This\_DT brought\_VBD me\_PRP back\_RB to\_TO fact\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP was\_VBD all\_DT myself\_PRP again\_RB .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP came\_VBD to\_TO speak\_VB about\_IN the\_DT certificate\_NN of\_IN death\_NN .\_.

If\_IN we\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB act\_VB properly\_RB and\_CC wisely\_RB ,\_, there\_EX may\_MD be\_VB an\_DT inquest\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_DT paper\_NN would\_MD have\_VB to\_TO be\_VB produced\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP in\_IN hopes\_NNS that\_IN we\_PRP need\_VBP have\_VBP no\_DT inquest\_NN ,\_, for\_IN if\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD it\_PRP would\_MD surely\_RB kill\_VB poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP ,\_, if\_IN nothing\_NN else\_RB did\_VBD .\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT other\_JJ doctor\_NN who\_WP attended\_VBD her\_PRP knows\_VBZ ,\_, that\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Westenra\_NNP had\_VBD disease\_NN of\_IN the\_DT heart\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP can\_MD certify\_VB that\_IN she\_PRP died\_VBD of\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

Let\_VB us\_PRP fill\_VB up\_RP the\_DT certificate\_NN at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD take\_VB it\_PRP myself\_PRP to\_TO the\_DT registrar\_NN and\_CC go\_VB on\_RP to\_TO the\_DT undertaker\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Good\_NNP ,\_, oh\_UH my\_PRP$ friend\_NN John\_NNP !\_.

Well\_NNP thought\_VBD of\_IN !\_.

Truly\_RB Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP ,\_, if\_IN she\_PRP be\_VB sad\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT foes\_NNS that\_WDT beset\_VBD her\_PRP ,\_, is\_VBZ at\_IN least\_JJS happy\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT friends\_NNS that\_WDT love\_VBP her\_PRP .\_.

One\_CD ,\_, two\_CD ,\_, three\_CD ,\_, all\_DT open\_VBP their\_PRP$ veins\_NNS for\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, besides\_IN one\_CD old\_JJ man\_NN .\_.

Ah\_NN yes\_UH ,\_, I\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP ;\_: I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB blind\_JJ !\_.

I\_PRP love\_VBP you\_PRP all\_PDT the\_DT more\_JJR for\_IN it\_PRP !\_.

Now\_RB go\_VB .\_. ''\_''

In\_IN the\_DT hall\_NN I\_PRP met\_VBD Quincey\_NNP Morris\_NNP ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT telegram\_NN for\_IN Arthur\_NNP telling\_VBG him\_PRP that\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Westenra\_NNP was\_VBD dead\_JJ ;\_: that\_IN Lucy\_NNP also\_RB had\_VBD been\_VBN ill\_RB ,\_, but\_CC was\_VBD now\_RB going\_VBG on\_IN better\_JJR ;\_: and\_CC that\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP were\_VBD with\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP told\_VBD him\_PRP where\_WRB I\_PRP was\_VBD going\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP hurried\_VBD me\_PRP out\_RP ,\_, but\_CC as\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD going\_VBG said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` When\_WRB you\_PRP come\_VBP back\_RB ,\_, Jack\_NNP ,\_, may\_MD I\_PRP have\_VB two\_CD words\_NNS with\_IN you\_PRP all\_DT to\_TO ourselves\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP nodded\_VBD in\_IN reply\_NN and\_CC went\_VBD out\_RP .\_.

I\_PRP found\_VBD no\_DT difficulty\_NN about\_IN the\_DT registration\_NN ,\_, and\_CC arranged\_VBN with\_IN the\_DT local\_JJ undertaker\_NN to\_TO come\_VB up\_RP in\_IN the\_DT evening\_NN to\_TO measure\_VB for\_IN the\_DT coffin\_NN and\_CC to\_TO make\_VB arrangements\_NNS .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP got\_VBD back\_RB Quincey\_NNP was\_VBD waiting\_VBG for\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP told\_VBD him\_PRP I\_PRP would\_MD see\_VB him\_PRP as\_RB soon\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP knew\_VBD about\_IN Lucy\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC went\_VBD up\_RB to\_TO her\_PRP$ room\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP was\_VBD still\_RB sleeping\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT Professor\_NNP seemingly\_RB had\_VBD not\_RB moved\_VBN from\_IN his\_PRP$ seat\_NN at\_IN her\_PRP$ side\_NN .\_.

From\_IN his\_PRP$ putting\_VBG his\_PRP$ finger\_NN to\_TO his\_PRP$ lips\_NNS ,\_, I\_PRP gathered\_VBD that\_IN he\_PRP expected\_VBD her\_PRP to\_TO wake\_VB before\_IN long\_JJ and\_CC was\_VBD afraid\_JJ of\_IN forestalling\_VBG nature\_NN .\_.

So\_RB I\_PRP went\_VBD down\_RB to\_TO Quincey\_NNP and\_CC took\_VBD him\_PRP into\_IN the\_DT breakfast-room\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB the\_DT blinds\_NNS were\_VBD not\_RB drawn\_VBN down\_IN ,\_, and\_CC which\_WDT was\_VBD a\_DT little\_RB more\_RBR cheerful\_JJ ,\_, or\_CC rather\_RB less\_RBR cheerless\_JJ ,\_, than\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ rooms\_NNS .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP were\_VBD alone\_RB ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Jack\_NNP Seward\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB want\_VB to\_TO shove\_VB myself\_PRP in\_IN anywhere\_RB where\_WRB I\_PRP 've\_VBP no\_DT right\_NN to\_TO be\_VB ;\_: but\_CC this\_DT is\_VBZ no\_DT ordinary\_JJ case\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP know\_VBP I\_PRP loved\_VBD that\_IN girl\_NN and\_CC wanted\_VBD to\_TO marry\_VB her\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC ,\_, although\_IN that\_DT 's\_VBZ all\_DT past\_JJ and\_CC gone\_VBN ,\_, I\_PRP ca\_MD n't\_RB help\_VB feeling\_NN anxious\_JJ about\_IN her\_PRP all\_PDT the\_DT same\_JJ .\_.

What\_WP is\_VBZ it\_PRP that\_DT 's\_VBZ wrong\_JJ with\_IN her\_PRP ?\_.

The\_DT Dutchman\_NNP --\_: and\_CC a\_DT fine\_JJ old\_JJ fellow\_NN he\_PRP is\_VBZ ;\_: I\_PRP can\_MD see\_VB that\_DT --\_: said\_VBD ,\_, that\_WDT time\_VBP you\_PRP two\_CD came\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, that\_IN you\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB another\_DT transfusion\_NN of\_IN blood\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN both\_CC you\_PRP and\_CC he\_PRP were\_VBD exhausted\_VBN .\_.

Now\_RB I\_PRP know\_VBP well\_RB that\_IN you\_PRP medical\_JJ men\_NNS speak\_VBP in\_IN camera\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN a\_DT man\_NN must\_MD not\_RB expect\_VB to\_TO know\_VB what\_WP they\_PRP consult\_VBP about\_IN in\_IN private\_JJ .\_.

But\_CC this\_DT is\_VBZ no\_DT common\_JJ matter\_NN ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, whatever\_WDT it\_PRP is\_VBZ ,\_, I\_PRP have\_VBP done\_VBN my\_PRP$ part\_NN .\_.

Is\_VBZ not\_RB that\_RB so\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` That\_DT 's\_VBZ so\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP take\_VBP it\_PRP that\_IN both\_CC you\_PRP and\_CC Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP had\_VBD done\_VBN already\_RB what\_WP I\_PRP did\_VBD to-day\_JJ .\_.

Is\_VBZ not\_RB that\_RB so\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` That\_DT 's\_VBZ so\_RB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` And\_CC I\_PRP guess\_VBP Art\_NNP was\_VBD in\_IN it\_PRP too\_RB .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP saw\_VBD him\_PRP four\_CD days\_NNS ago\_RB down\_RB at\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ place\_NN he\_PRP looked\_VBD queer\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB seen\_VBN anything\_NN pulled\_VBD down\_RB so\_RB quick\_JJ since\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT Pampas\_NNPS and\_CC had\_VBD a\_DT mare\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD fond\_JJ of\_IN go\_NN to\_TO grass\_NN all\_DT in\_IN a\_DT night\_NN .\_.

One\_CD of\_IN those\_DT big\_JJ bats\_NNS that\_IN they\_PRP call\_VBP vampires\_NNS had\_VBD got\_VBN at\_IN her\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT night\_NN ,\_, and\_CC what\_WP with\_IN his\_PRP$ gorge\_NN and\_CC the\_DT vein\_NN left\_VBD open\_JJ ,\_, there\_EX was\_VBD n't\_RB enough\_JJ blood\_NN in\_IN her\_PRP to\_TO let\_VB her\_PRP stand\_VB up\_RP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO put\_VB a\_DT bullet\_NN through\_IN her\_PRP as\_IN she\_PRP lay\_VBD .\_.

Jack\_NNP ,\_, if\_IN you\_PRP may\_MD tell\_VB me\_PRP without\_IN betraying\_VBG confidence\_NN ,\_, Arthur\_NNP was\_VBD the\_DT first\_JJ ,\_, is\_VBZ not\_RB that\_RB so\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

As\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD the\_DT poor\_JJ fellow\_NN looked\_VBD terribly\_RB anxious\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT torture\_VB of\_IN suspense\_NN regarding\_VBG the\_DT woman\_NN he\_PRP loved\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ utter\_JJ ignorance\_NN of\_IN the\_DT terrible\_JJ mystery\_NN which\_WDT seemed\_VBD to\_TO surround\_VB her\_PRP intensified\_VBD his\_PRP$ pain\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ very\_JJ heart\_NN was\_VBD bleeding\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP took\_VBD all\_PDT the\_DT manhood\_NN of\_IN him\_PRP --\_: and\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT royal\_JJ lot\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, too\_RB --\_: to\_TO keep\_VB him\_PRP from\_IN breaking\_VBG down\_RP .\_.

I\_PRP paused\_VBD before\_IN answering\_VBG ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP felt\_VBD that\_IN I\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB betray\_VB anything\_NN which\_WDT the\_DT Professor\_NNP wished\_VBD kept\_VBN secret\_NN ;\_: but\_CC already\_RB he\_PRP knew\_VBD so\_RB much\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC guessed\_VBD so\_RB much\_JJ ,\_, that\_IN there\_EX could\_MD be\_VB no\_DT reason\_NN for\_IN not\_RB answering\_VBG ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP answered\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ phrase\_NN :\_: ``\_`` That\_DT 's\_VBZ so\_RB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` And\_CC how\_WRB long\_RB has\_VBZ this\_DT been\_VBN going\_VBG on\_IN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` About\_IN ten\_CD days\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Ten\_CD days\_NNS !\_.

Then\_RB I\_PRP guess\_VBP ,\_, Jack\_NNP Seward\_NNP ,\_, that\_IN that\_DT poor\_JJ pretty\_JJ creature\_NN that\_IN we\_PRP all\_DT love\_NN has\_VBZ had\_VBD put\_VBN into\_IN her\_PRP$ veins\_NNS within\_IN that\_DT time\_NN the\_DT blood\_NN of\_IN four\_CD strong\_JJ men\_NNS .\_.

Man\_NN alive\_JJ ,\_, her\_PRP$ whole\_JJ body\_NN would\_MD n't\_RB hold\_VB it\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

Then\_RB ,\_, coming\_VBG close\_RB to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP spoke\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT fierce\_JJ half-whisper\_NN :\_: ``\_`` What\_WP took\_VBD it\_PRP out\_RP ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP shook\_VBD my\_PRP$ head\_NN .\_.

``\_`` That\_DT ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` is\_VBZ the\_DT crux\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP is\_VBZ simply\_RB frantic\_JJ about\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP at\_IN my\_PRP$ wits\_NNS '\_POS end\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP ca\_MD n't\_RB even\_VB hazard\_NN a\_DT guess\_NN .\_.

There\_EX has\_VBZ been\_VBN a\_DT series\_NN of\_IN little\_JJ circumstances\_NNS which\_WDT have\_VBP thrown\_VBN out\_RP all\_DT our\_PRP$ calculations\_NNS as\_IN to\_TO Lucy\_NNP being\_VBG properly\_RB watched\_VBN .\_.

But\_CC these\_DT shall\_MD not\_RB occur\_VB again\_RB .\_.

Here\_RB we\_PRP stay\_VBP until\_IN all\_DT be\_VB well\_RB --\_: or\_CC ill\_RB .\_. ''\_''

Quincey\_NNP held\_VBD out\_RP his\_PRP$ hand\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Count\_VB me\_PRP in\_IN ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` You\_PRP and\_CC the\_DT Dutchman\_NNP will\_MD tell\_VB me\_PRP what\_WP to\_TO do\_VB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP 'll\_MD do\_VB it\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

When\_WRB she\_PRP woke\_VBD late\_RB in\_IN the\_DT afternoon\_NN ,\_, Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS first\_JJ movement\_NN was\_VBD to\_TO feel\_VB in\_IN her\_PRP$ breast\_NN ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, to\_TO my\_PRP$ surprise\_NN ,\_, produced\_VBD the\_DT paper\_NN which\_WDT Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP had\_VBD given\_VBN me\_PRP to\_TO read\_VB .\_.

The\_DT careful\_JJ Professor\_NNP had\_VBD replaced\_VBN it\_PRP where\_WRB it\_PRP had\_VBD come\_VBN from\_IN ,\_, lest\_IN on\_IN waking\_VBG she\_PRP should\_MD be\_VB alarmed\_VBN .\_.

Her\_PRP$ eye\_NN then\_RB lit\_VBD on\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP and\_CC on\_IN me\_PRP too\_RB ,\_, and\_CC gladdened\_VBN .\_.

Then\_RB she\_PRP looked\_VBD around\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, and\_CC seeing\_VBG where\_WRB she\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, shuddered\_VBD ;\_: she\_PRP gave\_VBD a\_DT loud\_JJ cry\_NN ,\_, and\_CC put\_VBD her\_PRP poor\_JJ thin\_JJ hands\_NNS before\_IN her\_PRP$ pale\_JJ face\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP both\_DT understood\_VBD what\_WP that\_WDT meant\_VBD --\_: that\_IN she\_PRP had\_VBD realised\_VBN to\_TO the\_DT full\_JJ her\_PRP$ mother\_NN 's\_POS death\_NN ;\_: so\_IN we\_PRP tried\_VBD what\_WP we\_PRP could\_MD to\_TO comfort\_VB her\_PRP .\_.

Doubtless\_JJ sympathy\_NN eased\_VBD her\_PRP somewhat\_RB ,\_, but\_CC she\_PRP was\_VBD very\_RB low\_JJ in\_IN thought\_NN and\_CC spirit\_NN ,\_, and\_CC wept\_VBD silently\_RB and\_CC weakly\_RB for\_IN a\_DT long\_JJ time\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP told\_VBD her\_PRP that\_IN either\_DT or\_CC both\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP would\_MD now\_RB remain\_VB with\_IN her\_PRP all\_PDT the\_DT time\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_DT seemed\_VBD to\_TO comfort\_VB her\_PRP .\_.

Towards\_IN dusk\_NN she\_PRP fell\_VBD into\_IN a\_DT doze\_NN .\_.

Here\_RB a\_DT very\_RB odd\_JJ thing\_NN occurred\_VBD .\_.

Whilst\_IN still\_RB asleep\_RB she\_PRP took\_VBD the\_DT paper\_NN from\_IN her\_PRP$ breast\_NN and\_CC tore\_VBD it\_PRP in\_IN two\_CD .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP stepped\_VBD over\_RB and\_CC took\_VBD the\_DT pieces\_NNS from\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

All\_PDT the\_DT same\_JJ ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, she\_PRP went\_VBD on\_RP with\_IN the\_DT action\_NN of\_IN tearing\_VBG ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN the\_DT material\_NN were\_VBD still\_RB in\_IN her\_PRP$ hands\_NNS ;\_: finally\_RB she\_PRP lifted\_VBD her\_PRP$ hands\_NNS and\_CC opened\_VBD them\_PRP as\_IN though\_IN scattering\_VBG the\_DT fragments\_NNS .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP seemed\_VBD surprised\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ brows\_NNS gathered\_VBN as\_IN if\_IN in\_IN thought\_NN ,\_, but\_CC he\_PRP said\_VBD nothing\_NN .\_.

19\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: All\_DT last\_JJ night\_NN she\_PRP slept\_VBD fitfully\_RB ,\_, being\_VBG always\_RB afraid\_JJ to\_TO sleep\_VB ,\_, and\_CC something\_NN weaker\_JJR when\_WRB she\_PRP woke\_VBD from\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP took\_VBD it\_PRP in\_IN turns\_NNS to\_TO watch\_VB ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP never\_RB left\_VBD her\_PRP for\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN unattended\_JJ .\_.

Quincey\_NNP Morris\_NNP said\_VBD nothing\_NN about\_IN his\_PRP$ intention\_NN ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN all\_DT night\_NN long\_RB he\_PRP patrolled\_VBD round\_NN and\_CC round\_VB the\_DT house\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB the\_DT day\_NN came\_VBD ,\_, its\_PRP$ searching\_VBG light\_NN showed\_VBD the\_DT ravages\_NNS in\_IN poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS strength\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP was\_VBD hardly\_RB able\_JJ to\_TO turn\_VB her\_PRP$ head\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT little\_JJ nourishment\_NN which\_WDT she\_PRP could\_MD take\_VB seemed\_VBD to\_TO do\_VB her\_PRP no\_DT good\_NN .\_.

At\_IN times\_NNS she\_PRP slept\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC both\_DT Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP noticed\_VBD the\_DT difference\_NN in\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, between\_IN sleeping\_VBG and\_CC waking\_VBG .\_.

Whilst\_IN asleep\_RB she\_PRP looked\_VBD stronger\_JJR ,\_, although\_IN more\_JJR haggard\_NN ,\_, and\_CC her\_PRP$ breathing\_NN was\_VBD softer\_JJR ;\_: her\_PRP$ open\_JJ mouth\_NN showed\_VBD the\_DT pale\_JJ gums\_NNS drawn\_VBN back\_RB from\_IN the\_DT teeth\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT thus\_RB looked\_VBD positively\_RB longer\_JJR and\_CC sharper\_JJR than\_IN usual\_JJ ;\_: when\_WRB she\_PRP woke\_VBD the\_DT softness\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS evidently\_RB changed\_VBD the\_DT expression\_NN ,\_, for\_IN she\_PRP looked\_VBD her\_PRP$ own\_JJ self\_NN ,\_, although\_IN a\_DT dying\_VBG one\_CD .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT afternoon\_NN she\_PRP asked\_VBD for\_IN Arthur\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP telegraphed\_VBD for\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

Quincey\_NNP went\_VBD off\_RP to\_TO meet\_VB him\_PRP at\_IN the\_DT station\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB he\_PRP arrived\_VBD it\_PRP was\_VBD nearly\_RB six\_CD o'clock\_RB ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT sun\_NN was\_VBD setting\_VBG full\_JJ and\_CC warm\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT red\_JJ light\_NN streamed\_VBN in\_IN through\_IN the\_DT window\_NN and\_CC gave\_VBD more\_JJR colour\_NN to\_TO the\_DT pale\_JJ cheeks\_NNS .\_.

When\_WRB he\_PRP saw\_VBD her\_PRP ,\_, Arthur\_NNP was\_VBD simply\_RB choking\_VBG with\_IN emotion\_NN ,\_, and\_CC none\_NN of\_IN us\_PRP could\_MD speak\_VB .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT hours\_NNS that\_WDT had\_VBD passed\_VBN ,\_, the\_DT fits\_NNS of\_IN sleep\_NN ,\_, or\_CC the\_DT comatose\_JJ condition\_NN that\_WDT passed\_VBD for\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, had\_VBD grown\_VBN more\_RBR frequent\_JJ ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN the\_DT pauses\_VBZ when\_WRB conversation\_NN was\_VBD possible\_JJ were\_VBD shortened\_VBN .\_.

Arthur\_NNP 's\_POS presence\_NN ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, seemed\_VBD to\_TO act\_VB as\_IN a\_DT stimulant\_NN ;\_: she\_PRP rallied\_VBD a\_DT little\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC spoke\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP more\_RBR brightly\_RB than\_IN she\_PRP had\_VBD done\_VBN since\_IN we\_PRP arrived\_VBD .\_.

He\_PRP too\_RB pulled\_VBD himself\_PRP together\_RB ,\_, and\_CC spoke\_VBD as\_RB cheerily\_RB as\_IN he\_PRP could\_MD ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN the\_DT best\_JJS was\_VBD made\_VBN of\_IN everything\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD now\_RB nearly\_RB one\_CD o'clock\_RB ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP and\_CC Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP are\_VBP sitting\_VBG with\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP to\_TO relieve\_VB them\_PRP in\_IN a\_DT quarter\_NN of\_IN an\_DT hour\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP entering\_VBG this\_DT on\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS phonograph\_NN .\_.

Until\_IN six\_CD o'clock\_RB they\_PRP are\_VBP to\_TO try\_VB to\_TO rest\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP fear\_VBP that\_DT to-morrow\_NN will\_MD end\_VB our\_PRP$ watching\_NN ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT shock\_NN has\_VBZ been\_VBN too\_RB great\_JJ ;\_: the\_DT poor\_JJ child\_NN can\_MD not\_RB rally\_VB .\_.

God\_NNP help\_VB us\_PRP all\_DT .\_.

Letter\_NNP ,\_, Mina\_NNP Harker\_NNP to\_TO Lucy\_NNP Westenra\_NNP .\_.

-LRB-\_-LRB- Unopened\_JJ by\_IN her\_PRP .\_. -RRB-\_-RRB-

``\_`` 17\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` My\_PRP$ dearest\_JJ Lucy\_NNP ,\_, --\_: ``\_`` It\_PRP seems\_VBZ an\_DT age\_NN since\_IN I\_PRP heard\_VBD from\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, or\_CC indeed\_RB since\_IN I\_PRP wrote\_VBD .\_.

You\_PRP will\_MD pardon\_NN me\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, for\_IN all\_DT my\_PRP$ faults\_NNS when\_WRB you\_PRP have\_VBP read\_VBN all\_DT my\_PRP$ budget\_NN of\_IN news\_NN .\_.

Well\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP got\_VBD my\_PRP$ husband\_NN back\_RB all\_DT right\_NN ;\_: when\_WRB we\_PRP arrived\_VBD at\_IN Exeter\_NNP there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT carriage\_NN waiting\_VBG for\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, though\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD an\_DT attack\_NN of\_IN gout\_NN ,\_, Mr.\_NNP Hawkins\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP took\_VBD us\_PRP to\_TO his\_PRP$ house\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB there\_EX were\_VBD rooms\_NNS for\_IN us\_PRP all\_DT nice\_JJ and\_CC comfortable\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP dined\_VBD together\_RB .\_.

After\_IN dinner\_NN Mr.\_NNP Hawkins\_NNP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` `\_`` My\_PRP$ dears\_NNS ,\_, I\_PRP want\_VBP to\_TO drink\_VB your\_PRP$ health\_NN and\_CC prosperity\_NN ;\_: and\_CC may\_MD every\_DT blessing\_NN attend\_VBP you\_PRP both\_DT .\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP you\_PRP both\_DT from\_IN children\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC have\_VBP ,\_, with\_IN love\_NN and\_CC pride\_NN ,\_, seen\_VBN you\_PRP grow\_VBP up\_RP .\_.

Now\_RB I\_PRP want\_VBP you\_PRP to\_TO make\_VB your\_PRP$ home\_NN here\_RB with\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP left\_VBN to\_TO me\_PRP neither\_CC chick\_NN nor\_CC child\_NN ;\_: all\_DT are\_VBP gone\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN my\_PRP$ will\_NN I\_PRP have\_VBP left\_VBN you\_PRP everything\_NN .\_. '\_''

I\_PRP cried\_VBD ,\_, Lucy\_NNP dear\_RB ,\_, as\_IN Jonathan\_NNP and\_CC the\_DT old\_JJ man\_NN clasped\_VBD hands\_NNS .\_.

Our\_PRP$ evening\_NN was\_VBD a\_DT very\_RB ,\_, very\_RB happy\_JJ one\_CD .\_.

``\_`` So\_RB here\_RB we\_PRP are\_VBP ,\_, installed\_VBN in\_IN this\_DT beautiful\_JJ old\_JJ house\_NN ,\_, and\_CC from\_IN both\_DT my\_PRP$ bedroom\_NN and\_CC the\_DT drawing-room\_NN I\_PRP can\_MD see\_VB the\_DT great\_JJ elms\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT cathedral\_NN close\_NN ,\_, with\_IN their\_PRP$ great\_JJ black\_NN stems\_VBZ standing\_VBG out\_RP against\_IN the\_DT old\_JJ yellow\_JJ stone\_NN of\_IN the\_DT cathedral\_NN and\_CC I\_PRP can\_MD hear\_VB the\_DT rooks\_NNS overhead\_RB cawing\_VBG and\_CC cawing\_VBG and\_CC chattering\_VBG and\_CC gossiping\_VBG all\_DT day\_NN ,\_, after\_IN the\_DT manner\_NN of\_IN rooks\_NNS --\_: and\_CC humans\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP busy\_JJ ,\_, I\_PRP need\_VBP not\_RB tell\_VB you\_PRP ,\_, arranging\_VBG things\_NNS and\_CC housekeeping\_NN .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP and\_CC Mr.\_NNP Hawkins\_NNP are\_VBP busy\_JJ all\_DT day\_NN ;\_: for\_IN ,\_, now\_RB that\_IN Jonathan\_NNP is\_VBZ a\_DT partner\_NN ,\_, Mr.\_NNP Hawkins\_NNP wants\_VBZ to\_TO tell\_VB him\_PRP all\_DT about\_IN the\_DT clients\_NNS .\_.

``\_`` How\_WRB is\_VBZ your\_PRP$ dear\_RB mother\_NN getting\_VBG on\_IN ?\_.

I\_PRP wish\_VBP I\_PRP could\_MD run\_VB up\_RB to\_TO town\_NN for\_IN a\_DT day\_NN or\_CC two\_CD to\_TO see\_VB you\_PRP ,\_, dear\_RB ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP dare\_VBP not\_RB go\_VB yet\_RB ,\_, with\_IN so\_RB much\_JJ on\_IN my\_PRP$ shoulders\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC Jonathan\_NNP wants\_VBZ looking\_VBG after\_IN still\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ beginning\_VBG to\_TO put\_VB some\_DT flesh\_NN on\_IN his\_PRP$ bones\_NNS again\_RB ,\_, but\_CC he\_PRP was\_VBD terribly\_RB weakened\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT long\_JJ illness\_NN ;\_: even\_RB now\_RB he\_PRP sometimes\_RB starts\_VBZ out\_IN of\_IN his\_PRP$ sleep\_NN in\_IN a\_DT sudden\_JJ way\_NN and\_CC awakes\_VBZ all\_DT trembling\_VBG until\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD coax\_VB him\_PRP back\_RB to\_TO his\_PRP$ usual\_JJ placidity\_NN .\_.

However\_RB ,\_, thank\_VB God\_NNP ,\_, these\_DT occasions\_NNS grow\_VBP less\_RBR frequent\_JJ as\_IN the\_DT days\_NNS go\_VBP on\_RP ,\_, and\_CC they\_PRP will\_MD in\_IN time\_NN pass\_NN away\_RB altogether\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP trust\_VBP .\_.

And\_CC now\_RB I\_PRP have\_VBP told\_VBN you\_PRP my\_PRP$ news\_NN ,\_, let\_VB me\_PRP ask\_VB yours\_PRP$ .\_.

When\_WRB are\_VBP you\_PRP to\_TO be\_VB married\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC where\_WRB ,\_, and\_CC who\_WP is\_VBZ to\_TO perform\_VB the\_DT ceremony\_NN ,\_, and\_CC what\_WP are\_VBP you\_PRP to\_TO wear\_VB ,\_, and\_CC is\_VBZ it\_PRP to\_TO be\_VB a\_DT public\_NN or\_CC a\_DT private\_JJ wedding\_NN ?\_.

Tell\_VB me\_PRP all\_DT about\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, dear\_RB ;\_: tell\_VB me\_PRP all\_DT about\_IN everything\_NN ,\_, for\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ nothing\_NN which\_WDT interests\_VBZ you\_PRP which\_WDT will\_MD not\_RB be\_VB dear\_RB to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP asks\_VBZ me\_PRP to\_TO send\_VB his\_PRP$ `\_`` respectful\_JJ duty\_NN ,\_, '\_'' but\_CC I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB think\_VB that\_DT is\_VBZ good\_JJ enough\_RB from\_IN the\_DT junior\_JJ partner\_NN of\_IN the\_DT important\_JJ firm\_NN Hawkins\_NNP &\_CC Harker\_NNP ;\_: and\_CC so\_RB ,\_, as\_IN you\_PRP love\_VBP me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP loves\_VBZ me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP love\_VBP you\_PRP with\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT moods\_NNS and\_CC tenses\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT verb\_VBP ,\_, I\_PRP send\_VBP you\_PRP simply\_RB his\_PRP$ `\_`` love\_NN '\_'' instead\_RB .\_.

Good-bye\_JJ ,\_, my\_PRP$ dearest\_JJ Lucy\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC all\_DT blessings\_NNS on\_IN you\_PRP .\_.

``\_`` Yours\_NNP ,\_, ``\_`` Mina\_NNP Harker\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

Report\_NNP from\_IN Patrick\_NNP Hennessey\_NNP ,\_, M.\_NNP D.\_NNP ,\_, M.\_NNP R.\_NNP C.\_NNP S.\_NNP L.\_NNP K.\_NNP Q.\_NNP C.\_NNP P.\_NNP I.\_NNP ,\_, etc.\_NN ,\_, etc.\_NN ,\_, to\_TO John\_NNP Seward\_NNP ,\_, M.\_NNP D.\_NNP ``\_`` 20\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` My\_PRP$ dear\_RB Sir\_NNP ,\_, --\_: ``\_`` In\_IN accordance\_NN with\_IN your\_PRP$ wishes\_NNS ,\_, I\_PRP enclose\_VBP report\_NN of\_IN the\_DT conditions\_NNS of\_IN everything\_NN left\_VBN in\_IN my\_PRP$ charge\_NN ...\_: .\_.

With\_IN regard\_NN to\_TO patient\_NN ,\_, Renfield\_NNP ,\_, there\_EX is\_VBZ more\_JJR to\_TO say\_VB .\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ had\_VBN another\_DT outbreak\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT might\_MD have\_VB had\_VBD a\_DT dreadful\_JJ ending\_NN ,\_, but\_CC which\_WDT ,\_, as\_IN it\_PRP fortunately\_RB happened\_VBD ,\_, was\_VBD unattended\_JJ with\_IN any\_DT unhappy\_JJ results\_NNS .\_.

This\_DT afternoon\_NN a\_DT carrier\_NN 's\_POS cart\_NN with\_IN two\_CD men\_NNS made\_VBD a\_DT call\_NN at\_IN the\_DT empty\_JJ house\_NN whose\_WP$ grounds\_NNS abut\_VBP on\_IN ours\_PRP --\_: the\_DT house\_NN to\_TO which\_WDT ,\_, you\_PRP will\_MD remember\_VB ,\_, the\_DT patient\_NN twice\_RB ran\_VBD away\_RB .\_.

The\_DT men\_NNS stopped\_VBD at\_IN our\_PRP$ gate\_NN to\_TO ask\_VB the\_DT porter\_NN their\_PRP$ way\_NN ,\_, as\_IN they\_PRP were\_VBD strangers\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD myself\_PRP looking\_VBG out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT study\_NN window\_NN ,\_, having\_VBG a\_DT smoke\_NN after\_IN dinner\_NN ,\_, and\_CC saw\_VBD one\_CD of\_IN them\_PRP come\_VBP up\_RB to\_TO the\_DT house\_NN .\_.

As\_IN he\_PRP passed\_VBD the\_DT window\_NN of\_IN Renfield\_NNP 's\_POS room\_NN ,\_, the\_DT patient\_NN began\_VBD to\_TO rate\_VB him\_PRP from\_IN within\_IN ,\_, and\_CC called\_VBD him\_PRP all\_PDT the\_DT foul\_JJ names\_NNS he\_PRP could\_MD lay\_VB his\_PRP$ tongue\_NN to\_TO .\_.

The\_DT man\_NN ,\_, who\_WP seemed\_VBD a\_DT decent\_JJ fellow\_NN enough\_RB ,\_, contented\_JJ himself\_PRP by\_IN telling\_VBG him\_PRP to\_TO ``\_`` shut\_VB up\_RP for\_IN a\_DT foul-mouthed\_JJ beggar\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' whereon\_NN our\_PRP$ man\_NN accused\_VBD him\_PRP of\_IN robbing\_VBG him\_PRP and\_CC wanting\_VBG to\_TO murder\_NN him\_PRP and\_CC said\_VBD that\_IN he\_PRP would\_MD hinder\_VB him\_PRP if\_IN he\_PRP were\_VBD to\_TO swing\_VB for\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP opened\_VBD the\_DT window\_NN and\_CC signed\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT man\_NN not\_RB to\_TO notice\_VB ,\_, so\_IN he\_PRP contented\_JJ himself\_PRP after\_IN looking\_VBG the\_DT place\_NN over\_IN and\_CC making\_VBG up\_RP his\_PRP$ mind\_NN as\_IN to\_TO what\_WP kind\_NN of\_IN a\_DT place\_NN he\_PRP had\_VBD got\_VBN to\_TO by\_IN saying\_VBG :\_: `\_`` Lor\_NNP '\_'' bless\_VBP yer\_NN ,\_, sir\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP would\_MD n't\_RB mind\_VB what\_WP was\_VBD said\_VBN to\_TO me\_PRP in\_IN a\_DT bloomin\_NN '\_POS madhouse\_NN .\_.

I\_NN pity\_NN ye\_PRP and\_CC the\_DT guv\_NN '\_'' nor\_CC for\_IN havin\_NN '\_'' to\_TO live\_VB in\_IN the\_DT house\_NN with\_IN a\_DT wild\_JJ beast\_NN like\_IN that\_DT .\_. '\_''

Then\_RB he\_PRP asked\_VBD his\_PRP$ way\_NN civilly\_RB enough\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP told\_VBD him\_PRP where\_WRB the\_DT gate\_NN of\_IN the\_DT empty\_JJ house\_NN was\_VBD ;\_: he\_PRP went\_VBD away\_RB ,\_, followed\_VBN by\_IN threats\_NNS and\_CC curses\_NNS and\_CC revilings\_NNS from\_IN our\_PRP$ man\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP went\_VBD down\_RB to\_TO see\_VB if\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD make\_VB out\_RP any\_DT cause\_NN for\_IN his\_PRP$ anger\_NN ,\_, since\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ usually\_RB such\_JJ a\_DT well-behaved\_JJ man\_NN ,\_, and\_CC except\_IN his\_PRP$ violent\_JJ fits\_NNS nothing\_NN of\_IN the\_DT kind\_NN had\_VBD ever\_RB occurred\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP found\_VBD him\_PRP ,\_, to\_TO my\_PRP$ astonishment\_NN ,\_, quite\_RB composed\_VBN and\_CC most\_RBS genial\_JJ in\_IN his\_PRP$ manner\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP tried\_VBD to\_TO get\_VB him\_PRP to\_TO talk\_VB of\_IN the\_DT incident\_NN ,\_, but\_CC he\_PRP blandly\_RB asked\_VBD me\_PRP questions\_NNS as\_IN to\_TO what\_WP I\_PRP meant\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC led\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO believe\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD completely\_RB oblivious\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT affair\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP sorry\_JJ to\_TO say\_VB ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, only\_RB another\_DT instance\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ cunning\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN within\_IN half\_PDT an\_DT hour\_NN I\_PRP heard\_VBD of\_IN him\_PRP again\_RB .\_.

This\_DT time\_NN he\_PRP had\_VBD broken\_VBN out\_RP through\_IN the\_DT window\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ room\_NN ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD running\_VBG down\_RP the\_DT avenue\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP called\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT attendants\_NNS to\_TO follow\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC ran\_VBD after\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP feared\_VBD he\_PRP was\_VBD intent\_JJ on\_IN some\_DT mischief\_NN .\_.

My\_PRP$ fear\_NN was\_VBD justified\_VBN when\_WRB I\_PRP saw\_VBD the\_DT same\_JJ cart\_NN which\_WDT had\_VBD passed\_VBN before\_IN coming\_VBG down\_RP the\_DT road\_NN ,\_, having\_VBG on\_IN it\_PRP some\_DT great\_JJ wooden\_JJ boxes\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT men\_NNS were\_VBD wiping\_VBG their\_PRP$ foreheads\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC were\_VBD flushed\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT face\_NN ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN with\_IN violent\_JJ exercise\_NN .\_.

Before\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD get\_VB up\_RB to\_TO him\_PRP the\_DT patient\_NN rushed\_VBD at\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC pulling\_VBG one\_CD of\_IN them\_PRP off\_IN the\_DT cart\_NN ,\_, began\_VBD to\_TO knock\_VB his\_PRP$ head\_NN against\_IN the\_DT ground\_NN .\_.

If\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB seized\_VBN him\_PRP just\_RB at\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN I\_PRP believe\_VBP he\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB killed\_VBN the\_DT man\_NN there\_RB and\_CC then\_RB .\_.

The\_DT other\_JJ fellow\_NN jumped\_VBD down\_RB and\_CC struck\_VBD him\_PRP over\_IN the\_DT head\_NN with\_IN the\_DT butt-end\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ heavy\_JJ whip\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT terrible\_JJ blow\_NN ;\_: but\_CC he\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB seem\_VB to\_TO mind\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC seized\_VBD him\_PRP also\_RB ,\_, and\_CC struggled\_VBD with\_IN the\_DT three\_CD of\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, pulling\_VBG us\_PRP to\_TO and\_CC fro\_NN as\_IN if\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD kittens\_NNS .\_.

You\_PRP know\_VBP I\_PRP am\_VBP no\_DT light\_JJ weight\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT others\_NNS were\_VBD both\_DT burly\_JJ men\_NNS .\_.

At\_IN first\_RB he\_PRP was\_VBD silent\_JJ in\_IN his\_PRP$ fighting\_NN ;\_: but\_CC as\_IN we\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO master\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT attendants\_NNS were\_VBD putting\_VBG a\_DT strait-waistcoat\_NN on\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO shout\_VB :\_: `\_`` I\_PRP 'll\_MD frustrate\_VB them\_PRP !\_.

They\_PRP sha\_VBP n't\_RB rob\_VB me\_PRP !\_.

they\_PRP sha\_VBP n't\_RB murder\_NN me\_PRP by\_IN inches\_NNS !\_.

I\_PRP 'll\_MD fight\_VB for\_IN my\_PRP$ Lord\_NNP and\_CC Master\_NNP !\_. '\_''

and\_CC all\_DT sorts\_NNS of\_IN similar\_JJ incoherent\_JJ ravings\_NNS .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD with\_IN very\_RB considerable\_JJ difficulty\_NN that\_IN they\_PRP got\_VBD him\_PRP back\_RB to\_TO the\_DT house\_NN and\_CC put\_VBD him\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT padded\_JJ room\_NN .\_.

One\_CD of\_IN the\_DT attendants\_NNS ,\_, Hardy\_NNP ,\_, had\_VBD a\_DT finger\_NN broken\_VBN .\_.

However\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP set\_VBD it\_PRP all\_DT right\_NN ;\_: and\_CC he\_PRP is\_VBZ going\_VBG on\_RP well\_RB .\_.

``\_`` The\_DT two\_CD carriers\_NNS were\_VBD at\_IN first\_RB loud\_JJ in\_IN their\_PRP$ threats\_NNS of\_IN actions\_NNS for\_IN damages\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC promised\_VBD to\_TO rain\_VB all\_PDT the\_DT penalties\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT law\_NN on\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

Their\_PRP$ threats\_NNS were\_VBD ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, mingled\_VBN with\_IN some\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN indirect\_JJ apology\_NN for\_IN the\_DT defeat\_NN of\_IN the\_DT two\_CD of\_IN them\_PRP by\_IN a\_DT feeble\_JJ madman\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP said\_VBD that\_IN if\_IN it\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB been\_VBN for\_IN the\_DT way\_NN their\_PRP$ strength\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN spent\_VBN in\_IN carrying\_VBG and\_CC raising\_VBG the\_DT heavy\_JJ boxes\_NNS to\_TO the\_DT cart\_NN they\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB made\_VBN short\_JJ work\_NN of\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

They\_PRP gave\_VBD as\_IN another\_DT reason\_NN for\_IN their\_PRP$ defeat\_NN the\_DT extraordinary\_JJ state\_NN of\_IN drouth\_NN to\_TO which\_WDT they\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN reduced\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT dusty\_JJ nature\_NN of\_IN their\_PRP$ occupation\_NN and\_CC the\_DT reprehensible\_JJ distance\_NN from\_IN the\_DT scene\_NN of\_IN their\_PRP$ labours\_NNS of\_IN any\_DT place\_NN of\_IN public\_JJ entertainment\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP quite\_RB understood\_VBD their\_PRP$ drift\_NN ,\_, and\_CC after\_IN a\_DT stiff\_JJ glass\_NN of\_IN grog\_NN ,\_, or\_CC rather\_RB more\_JJR of\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN each\_DT a\_DT sovereign\_JJ in\_IN hand\_NN ,\_, they\_PRP made\_VBD light\_NN of\_IN the\_DT attack\_NN ,\_, and\_CC swore\_VBD that\_IN they\_PRP would\_MD encounter\_VB a\_DT worse\_JJR madman\_NN any\_DT day\_NN for\_IN the\_DT pleasure\_NN of\_IN meeting\_NN so\_IN `\_`` bloomin\_NN '\_'' good\_JJ a\_DT bloke\_NN '\_'' as\_IN your\_PRP$ correspondent\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP took\_VBD their\_PRP$ names\_NNS and\_CC addresses\_NNS ,\_, in\_IN case\_NN they\_PRP might\_MD be\_VB needed\_VBN .\_.

They\_PRP are\_VBP as\_IN follows\_VBZ :\_: --\_: Jack\_NNP Smollet\_NNP ,\_, of\_IN Dudding\_NNP 's\_POS Rents\_NNS ,\_, King\_NNP George\_NNP 's\_POS Road\_NNP ,\_, Great\_NNP Walworth\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC Thomas\_NNP Snelling\_NNP ,\_, Peter\_NNP Farley\_NNP 's\_POS Row\_NNP ,\_, Guide\_NNP Court\_NNP ,\_, Bethnal\_NNP Green\_NNP .\_.

They\_PRP are\_VBP both\_DT in\_IN the\_DT employment\_NN of\_IN Harris\_NNP &\_CC Sons\_NNP ,\_, Moving\_VBG and\_CC Shipment\_NNP Company\_NNP ,\_, Orange\_NNP Master\_NNP 's\_POS Yard\_NNP ,\_, Soho\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP shall\_MD report\_VB to\_TO you\_PRP any\_DT matter\_NN of\_IN interest\_NN occurring\_VBG here\_RB ,\_, and\_CC shall\_MD wire\_VB you\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB if\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ anything\_NN of\_IN importance\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Believe\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, dear\_RB Sir\_NNP ,\_, ``\_`` Yours\_NNPS faithfully\_RB ,\_, ``\_`` Patrick\_NNP Hennessey\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

Letter\_NNP ,\_, Mina\_NNP Harker\_NNP to\_TO Lucy\_NNP Westenra\_NNP .\_.

-LRB-\_-LRB- Unopened\_JJ by\_IN her\_PRP .\_. -RRB-\_-RRB-

``\_`` 18\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` My\_PRP$ dearest\_JJ Lucy\_NNP ,\_, --\_: ``\_`` Such\_PDT a\_DT sad\_JJ blow\_NN has\_VBZ befallen\_VBN us\_PRP .\_.

Mr.\_NNP Hawkins\_NNP has\_VBZ died\_VBN very\_RB suddenly\_RB .\_.

Some\_DT may\_MD not\_RB think\_VB it\_PRP so\_RB sad\_JJ for\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC we\_PRP had\_VBD both\_DT come\_VBN to\_TO so\_RB love\_VB him\_PRP that\_IN it\_PRP really\_RB seems\_VBZ as\_IN though\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD lost\_VBN a\_DT father\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP never\_RB knew\_VBD either\_CC father\_NN or\_CC mother\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN the\_DT dear\_RB old\_JJ man\_NN 's\_POS death\_NN is\_VBZ a\_DT real\_JJ blow\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP is\_VBZ greatly\_RB distressed\_JJ .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB only\_RB that\_IN he\_PRP feels\_VBZ sorrow\_NN ,\_, deep\_JJ sorrow\_NN ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT dear\_RB ,\_, good\_JJ man\_NN who\_WP has\_VBZ befriended\_VBN him\_PRP all\_PDT his\_PRP$ life\_NN ,\_, and\_CC now\_RB at\_IN the\_DT end\_NN has\_VBZ treated\_VBN him\_PRP like\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ son\_NN and\_CC left\_VBD him\_PRP a\_DT fortune\_NN which\_WDT to\_TO people\_NNS of\_IN our\_PRP$ modest\_JJ bringing\_VBG up\_RP is\_VBZ wealth\_NN beyond\_IN the\_DT dream\_NN of\_IN avarice\_NN ,\_, but\_CC Jonathan\_NNP feels\_VBZ it\_PRP on\_IN another\_DT account\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP says\_VBZ the\_DT amount\_NN of\_IN responsibility\_NN which\_WDT it\_PRP puts\_VBZ upon\_IN him\_PRP makes\_VBZ him\_PRP nervous\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP begins\_VBZ to\_TO doubt\_VB himself\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP try\_VBP to\_TO cheer\_VB him\_PRP up\_RP ,\_, and\_CC my\_PRP$ belief\_NN in\_IN him\_PRP helps\_VBZ him\_PRP to\_TO have\_VB a\_DT belief\_NN in\_IN himself\_PRP .\_.

But\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ here\_RB that\_IN the\_DT grave\_JJ shock\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP experienced\_VBD tells\_VBZ upon\_IN him\_PRP the\_DT most\_JJS .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, it\_PRP is\_VBZ too\_RB hard\_JJ that\_IN a\_DT sweet\_JJ ,\_, simple\_JJ ,\_, noble\_JJ ,\_, strong\_JJ nature\_NN such\_JJ as\_IN his\_PRP$ --\_: a\_DT nature\_NN which\_WDT enabled\_VBD him\_PRP by\_IN our\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, good\_JJ friend\_NN 's\_POS aid\_NN to\_TO rise\_VB from\_IN clerk\_NN to\_TO master\_VB in\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ years\_NNS --\_: should\_MD be\_VB so\_RB injured\_JJ that\_IN the\_DT very\_JJ essence\_NN of\_IN its\_PRP$ strength\_NN is\_VBZ gone\_VBN .\_.

Forgive\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, dear\_RB ,\_, if\_IN I\_PRP worry\_VBP you\_PRP with\_IN my\_PRP$ troubles\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT midst\_NN of\_IN your\_PRP$ own\_JJ happiness\_NN ;\_: but\_CC ,\_, Lucy\_NNP dear\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP must\_MD tell\_VB some\_DT one\_CD ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT strain\_NN of\_IN keeping\_VBG up\_RP a\_DT brave\_VBP and\_CC cheerful\_JJ appearance\_NN to\_TO Jonathan\_NNP tries\_VBZ me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP no\_DT one\_NN here\_RB that\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD confide\_VB in\_IN .\_.

I\_NN dread\_NN coming\_VBG up\_RP to\_TO London\_NNP ,\_, as\_IN we\_PRP must\_MD do\_VB the\_DT day\_NN after\_IN to-morrow\_NN ;\_: for\_IN poor\_JJ Mr.\_NNP Hawkins\_NNP left\_VBD in\_IN his\_PRP$ will\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB buried\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT grave\_NN with\_IN his\_PRP$ father\_NN .\_.

As\_IN there\_EX are\_VBP no\_DT relations\_NNS at\_IN all\_DT ,\_, Jonathan\_NNP will\_MD have\_VB to\_TO be\_VB chief\_JJ mourner\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD try\_VB to\_TO run\_VB over\_RP to\_TO see\_VB you\_PRP ,\_, dearest\_NN ,\_, if\_IN only\_RB for\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ minutes\_NNS .\_.

Forgive\_VB me\_PRP for\_IN troubling\_VBG you\_PRP .\_.

With\_IN all\_DT blessings\_NNS ,\_, ``\_`` Your\_PRP$ loving\_JJ ``\_`` Mina\_NNP Harker\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

20\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Only\_RB resolution\_NN and\_CC habit\_NN can\_MD let\_VB me\_PRP make\_VB an\_DT entry\_NN to-night\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP too\_RB miserable\_JJ ,\_, too\_RB low-spirited\_JJ ,\_, too\_RB sick\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT world\_NN and\_CC all\_DT in\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, including\_VBG life\_NN itself\_PRP ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB care\_VB if\_IN I\_PRP heard\_VBD this\_DT moment\_NN the\_DT flapping\_VBG of\_IN the\_DT wings\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT angel\_NN of\_IN death\_NN .\_.

And\_CC he\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN flapping\_VBG those\_DT grim\_JJ wings\_NNS to\_TO some\_DT purpose\_NN of\_IN late\_RB --\_: Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS mother\_NN and\_CC Arthur\_NNP 's\_POS father\_NN ,\_, and\_CC now\_RB ...\_: .\_.

Let\_VB me\_PRP get\_VB on\_RP with\_IN my\_PRP$ work\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP duly\_RB relieved\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP in\_IN his\_PRP$ watch\_NN over\_IN Lucy\_NNP .\_.

We\_PRP wanted\_VBD Arthur\_NNP to\_TO go\_VB to\_TO rest\_VB also\_RB ,\_, but\_CC he\_PRP refused\_VBD at\_IN first\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD only\_RB when\_WRB I\_PRP told\_VBD him\_PRP that\_IN we\_PRP should\_MD want\_VB him\_PRP to\_TO help\_VB us\_PRP during\_IN the\_DT day\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN we\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB all\_DT break\_VB down\_RP for\_IN want\_VBP of\_IN rest\_NN ,\_, lest\_IN Lucy\_NNP should\_MD suffer\_VB ,\_, that\_IN he\_PRP agreed\_VBD to\_TO go\_VB .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP was\_VBD very\_RB kind\_JJ to\_TO him\_PRP .\_.

``\_`` Come\_VB ,\_, my\_PRP$ child\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ;\_: ``\_`` come\_VB with\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

You\_PRP are\_VBP sick\_JJ and\_CC weak\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC have\_VBP had\_VBN much\_JJ sorrow\_NN and\_CC much\_JJ mental\_JJ pain\_NN ,\_, as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN that\_DT tax\_NN on\_IN your\_PRP$ strength\_NN that\_IN we\_PRP know\_VBP of\_IN .\_.

You\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB be\_VB alone\_RB ;\_: for\_IN to\_TO be\_VB alone\_RB is\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB full\_JJ of\_IN fears\_NNS and\_CC alarms\_NNS .\_.

Come\_VB to\_TO the\_DT drawing-room\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB there\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT big\_JJ fire\_NN ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX are\_VBP two\_CD sofas\_NNS .\_.

You\_PRP shall\_MD lie\_VB on\_IN one\_CD ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP on\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC our\_PRP$ sympathy\_NN will\_MD be\_VB comfort\_NN to\_TO each\_DT other\_JJ ,\_, even\_RB though\_IN we\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB speak\_VB ,\_, and\_CC even\_RB if\_IN we\_PRP sleep\_VBP .\_. ''\_''

Arthur\_NNP went\_VBD off\_RP with\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, casting\_VBG back\_RP a\_DT longing\_NN look\_NN on\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS face\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT lay\_VBD in\_IN her\_PRP$ pillow\_NN ,\_, almost\_RB whiter\_JJR than\_IN the\_DT lawn\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP lay\_VBD quite\_RB still\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP looked\_VBD round\_NN the\_DT room\_NN to\_TO see\_VB that\_IN all\_DT was\_VBD as\_IN it\_PRP should\_MD be\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB that\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP had\_VBD carried\_VBN out\_RP in\_IN this\_DT room\_NN ,\_, as\_IN in\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ ,\_, his\_PRP$ purpose\_NN of\_IN using\_VBG the\_DT garlic\_NN ;\_: the\_DT whole\_NN of\_IN the\_DT window-sashes\_NNS reeked\_VBN with\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC round\_VB Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS neck\_NN ,\_, over\_IN the\_DT silk\_NN handkerchief\_NN which\_WDT Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP made\_VBD her\_PRP keep\_VB on\_RB ,\_, was\_VBD a\_DT rough\_JJ chaplet\_NN of\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ odorous\_JJ flowers\_NNS .\_.

Lucy\_NNP was\_VBD breathing\_VBG somewhat\_RB stertorously\_RB ,\_, and\_CC her\_PRP$ face\_NN was\_VBD at\_IN its\_PRP$ worst\_JJS ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT open\_JJ mouth\_NN showed\_VBD the\_DT pale\_JJ gums\_NNS .\_.

Her\_PRP$ teeth\_NNS ,\_, in\_IN the\_DT dim\_JJ ,\_, uncertain\_JJ light\_NN ,\_, seemed\_VBD longer\_JJR and\_CC sharper\_JJR than\_IN they\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN .\_.

In\_IN particular\_JJ ,\_, by\_IN some\_DT trick\_NN of\_IN the\_DT light\_NN ,\_, the\_DT canine\_NN teeth\_NNS looked\_VBD longer\_JJR and\_CC sharper\_JJR than\_IN the\_DT rest\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP sat\_VBD down\_RB by\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC presently\_RB she\_PRP moved\_VBD uneasily\_RB .\_.

At\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ moment\_NN there\_EX came\_VBD a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN dull\_JJ flapping\_VBG or\_CC buffeting\_VBG at\_IN the\_DT window\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP went\_VBD over\_RP to\_TO it\_PRP softly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC peeped\_VBD out\_RP by\_IN the\_DT corner\_NN of\_IN the\_DT blind\_JJ .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT full\_JJ moonlight\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB that\_IN the\_DT noise\_NN was\_VBD made\_VBN by\_IN a\_DT great\_JJ bat\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT wheeled\_VBD round\_NN --\_: doubtless\_NN attracted\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT light\_NN ,\_, although\_IN so\_RB dim\_JJ --\_: and\_CC every\_DT now\_RB and\_CC again\_RB struck\_VBD the\_DT window\_NN with\_IN its\_PRP$ wings\_NNS .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP came\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO my\_PRP$ seat\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP found\_VBD that\_IN Lucy\_NNP had\_VBD moved\_VBN slightly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC had\_VBD torn\_VBN away\_RB the\_DT garlic\_JJ flowers\_NNS from\_IN her\_PRP$ throat\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP replaced\_VBD them\_PRP as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD ,\_, and\_CC sat\_VBD watching\_VBG her\_PRP .\_.

Presently\_RB she\_PRP woke\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP gave\_VBD her\_PRP$ food\_NN ,\_, as\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP had\_VBD prescribed\_VBN .\_.

She\_PRP took\_VBD but\_CC a\_DT little\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN languidly\_RB .\_.

There\_EX did\_VBD not\_RB seem\_VB to\_TO be\_VB with\_IN her\_PRP now\_RB the\_DT unconscious\_JJ struggle\_NN for\_IN life\_NN and\_CC strength\_NN that\_WDT had\_VBD hitherto\_RB so\_RB marked\_JJ her\_PRP$ illness\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP struck\_VBD me\_PRP as\_RB curious\_JJ that\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN she\_PRP became\_VBD conscious\_JJ she\_PRP pressed\_VBD the\_DT garlic\_JJ flowers\_NNS close\_RB to\_TO her\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD certainly\_RB odd\_JJ that\_IN whenever\_WRB she\_PRP got\_VBD into\_IN that\_DT lethargic\_JJ state\_NN ,\_, with\_IN the\_DT stertorous\_JJ breathing\_NN ,\_, she\_PRP put\_VBD the\_DT flowers\_NNS from\_IN her\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC that\_IN when\_WRB she\_PRP waked\_VBD she\_PRP clutched\_VBD them\_PRP close\_RB .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT possibility\_NN of\_IN making\_VBG any\_DT mistake\_NN about\_IN this\_DT ,\_, for\_IN in\_IN the\_DT long\_JJ hours\_NNS that\_WDT followed\_VBD ,\_, she\_PRP had\_VBD many\_JJ spells\_NNS of\_IN sleeping\_VBG and\_CC waking\_VBG and\_CC repeated\_VBD both\_DT actions\_NNS many\_JJ times\_NNS .\_.

At\_IN six\_CD o'clock\_RB Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP came\_VBD to\_TO relieve\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

Arthur\_NNP had\_VBD then\_RB fallen\_VBN into\_IN a\_DT doze\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP mercifully\_RB let\_VBD him\_PRP sleep\_VB on\_IN .\_.

When\_WRB he\_PRP saw\_VBD Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS face\_NN I\_PRP could\_MD hear\_VB the\_DT sissing\_JJ indraw\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ breath\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP in\_IN a\_DT sharp\_JJ whisper\_NN :\_: ``\_`` Draw\_VB up\_RP the\_DT blind\_JJ ;\_: I\_PRP want\_VBP light\_JJ !\_. ''\_''

Then\_RB he\_PRP bent\_JJ down\_RB ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, with\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN almost\_RB touching\_VBG Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS ,\_, examined\_VBD her\_PRP carefully\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP removed\_VBD the\_DT flowers\_NNS and\_CC lifted\_VBD the\_DT silk\_NN handkerchief\_NN from\_IN her\_PRP$ throat\_NN .\_.

As\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD so\_RB he\_PRP started\_VBD back\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD hear\_VB his\_PRP$ ejaculation\_NN ,\_, ``\_`` Mein\_NNP Gott\_NNP !\_. ''\_''

as\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD smothered\_VBN in\_IN his\_PRP$ throat\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP bent\_JJ over\_IN and\_CC looked\_VBD ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN I\_PRP noticed\_VBD some\_DT queer\_NN chill\_NN came\_VBD over\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT wounds\_NNS on\_IN the\_DT throat\_NN had\_VBD absolutely\_RB disappeared\_VBN .\_.

For\_IN fully\_RB five\_CD minutes\_NNS Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP stood\_VBD looking\_VBG at\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, with\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN at\_IN its\_PRP$ sternest\_JJS .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP turned\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP and\_CC said\_VBD calmly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` She\_PRP is\_VBZ dying\_VBG .\_.

It\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB be\_VB long\_RB now\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB much\_JJ difference\_NN ,\_, mark\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, whether\_IN she\_PRP dies\_VBZ conscious\_JJ or\_CC in\_IN her\_PRP$ sleep\_NN .\_.

Wake\_VB that\_DT poor\_JJ boy\_NN ,\_, and\_CC let\_VB him\_PRP come\_VB and\_CC see\_VB the\_DT last\_JJ ;\_: he\_PRP trusts\_NNS us\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP have\_VBP promised\_VBN him\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT dining-room\_NN and\_CC waked\_VBD him\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD dazed\_VBN for\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN ,\_, but\_CC when\_WRB he\_PRP saw\_VBD the\_DT sunlight\_NN streaming\_NN in\_IN through\_IN the\_DT edges\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT shutters\_NNS he\_PRP thought\_VBD he\_PRP was\_VBD late\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC expressed\_VBD his\_PRP$ fear\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP assured\_VBD him\_PRP that\_IN Lucy\_NNP was\_VBD still\_RB asleep\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC told\_VBD him\_PRP as\_RB gently\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD that\_IN both\_DT Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP feared\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT end\_NN was\_VBD near\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP covered\_VBD his\_PRP$ face\_NN with\_IN his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC slid\_VBD down\_RP on\_IN his\_PRP$ knees\_NNS by\_IN the\_DT sofa\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB he\_PRP remained\_VBD ,\_, perhaps\_RB a\_DT minute\_NN ,\_, with\_IN his\_PRP$ head\_NN buried\_VBN ,\_, praying\_VBG ,\_, whilst\_IN his\_PRP$ shoulders\_NNS shook\_VBD with\_IN grief\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP took\_VBD him\_PRP by\_IN the\_DT hand\_NN and\_CC raised\_VBD him\_PRP up\_RP .\_.

``\_`` Come\_VB ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` my\_PRP$ dear\_RB old\_JJ fellow\_NN ,\_, summon\_VB all\_DT your\_PRP$ fortitude\_NN :\_: it\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB best\_JJS and\_CC easiest\_JJS for\_IN her\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

When\_WRB we\_PRP came\_VBD into\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS room\_NN I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB that\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP had\_VBD ,\_, with\_IN his\_PRP$ usual\_JJ forethought\_NN ,\_, been\_VBN putting\_VBG matters\_NNS straight\_RB and\_CC making\_VBG everything\_NN look\_NN as\_IN pleasing\_NN as\_IN possible\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD even\_RB brushed\_VBN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS hair\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN it\_PRP lay\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT pillow\_NN in\_IN its\_PRP$ usual\_JJ sunny\_JJ ripples\_NNS .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP came\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN she\_PRP opened\_VBD her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC seeing\_VBG him\_PRP ,\_, whispered\_VBD softly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Arthur\_NNP !\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, my\_PRP$ love\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP so\_RB glad\_JJ you\_PRP have\_VBP come\_VBN !\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP was\_VBD stooping\_VBG to\_TO kiss\_NN her\_PRP ,\_, when\_WRB Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP motioned\_VBD him\_PRP back\_RB .\_.

``\_`` No\_UH ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP whispered\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` not\_RB yet\_RB !\_.

Hold\_VB her\_PRP$ hand\_NN ;\_: it\_PRP will\_MD comfort\_VB her\_PRP more\_JJR .\_. ''\_''

So\_IN Arthur\_NNP took\_VBD her\_PRP$ hand\_NN and\_CC knelt\_NN beside\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP looked\_VBD her\_PRP best\_JJS ,\_, with\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT soft\_JJ lines\_NNS matching\_VBG the\_DT angelic\_JJ beauty\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS .\_.

Then\_RB gradually\_RB her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS closed\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP sank\_VBD to\_TO sleep\_VB .\_.

For\_IN a\_DT little\_JJ bit\_NN her\_PRP$ breast\_NN heaved\_VBD softly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC her\_PRP$ breath\_NN came\_VBD and\_CC went\_VBD like\_IN a\_DT tired\_JJ child\_NN 's\_POS .\_.

And\_CC then\_RB insensibly\_RB there\_EX came\_VBD the\_DT strange\_JJ change\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP had\_VBD noticed\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT night\_NN .\_.

Her\_PRP$ breathing\_NN grew\_VBD stertorous\_JJ ,\_, the\_DT mouth\_NN opened\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT pale\_JJ gums\_NNS ,\_, drawn\_VBN back\_RB ,\_, made\_VBD the\_DT teeth\_NNS look\_VBP longer\_JJR and\_CC sharper\_JJR than\_IN ever\_RB .\_.

In\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN sleep-waking\_JJ ,\_, vague\_JJ ,\_, unconscious\_JJ way\_NN she\_PRP opened\_VBD her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT were\_VBD now\_RB dull\_JJ and\_CC hard\_JJ at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT soft\_JJ ,\_, voluptuous\_JJ voice\_NN ,\_, such\_JJ as\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD never\_RB heard\_VBN from\_IN her\_PRP$ lips\_NNS :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Arthur\_NNP !\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, my\_PRP$ love\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP so\_RB glad\_JJ you\_PRP have\_VBP come\_VBN !\_.

Kiss\_VB me\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

Arthur\_NNP bent\_JJ eagerly\_RB over\_IN to\_TO kiss\_NN her\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC at\_IN that\_DT instant\_JJ Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP ,\_, like\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, had\_VBD been\_VBN startled\_VBN by\_IN her\_PRP$ voice\_NN ,\_, swooped\_VBD upon\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC catching\_VBG him\_PRP by\_IN the\_DT neck\_NN with\_IN both\_DT hands\_NNS ,\_, dragged\_VBD him\_PRP back\_RB with\_IN a\_DT fury\_NN of\_IN strength\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP never\_RB thought\_VBD he\_PRP could\_MD have\_VB possessed\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC actually\_RB hurled\_VBD him\_PRP almost\_RB across\_IN the\_DT room\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Not\_RB for\_IN your\_PRP$ life\_NN !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD ;\_: ``\_`` not\_RB for\_IN your\_PRP$ living\_NN soul\_NN and\_CC hers\_NNS !\_. ''\_''

And\_CC he\_PRP stood\_VBD between\_IN them\_PRP like\_IN a\_DT lion\_NN at\_IN bay\_NN .\_.

Arthur\_NNP was\_VBD so\_RB taken\_VBN aback\_RB that\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB for\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN know\_VB what\_WP to\_TO do\_VB or\_CC say\_VB ;\_: and\_CC before\_IN any\_DT impulse\_NN of\_IN violence\_NN could\_MD seize\_VB him\_PRP he\_PRP realised\_VBD the\_DT place\_NN and\_CC the\_DT occasion\_NN ,\_, and\_CC stood\_VBD silent\_JJ ,\_, waiting\_VBG .\_.

I\_PRP kept\_VBD my\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS fixed\_VBN on\_IN Lucy\_NNP ,\_, as\_IN did\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP saw\_VBD a\_DT spasm\_NN as\_IN of\_IN rage\_NN flit\_NN like\_IN a\_DT shadow\_NN over\_IN her\_PRP$ face\_NN ;\_: the\_DT sharp\_JJ teeth\_NNS champed\_VBN together\_RB .\_.

Then\_RB her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS closed\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP breathed\_VBD heavily\_RB .\_.

Very\_RB shortly\_RB after\_IN she\_PRP opened\_VBD her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS in\_IN all\_DT their\_PRP$ softness\_NN ,\_, and\_CC putting\_VBG out\_RP her\_PRP$ poor\_JJ ,\_, pale\_JJ ,\_, thin\_JJ hand\_NN ,\_, took\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP 's\_POS great\_JJ brown\_JJ one\_NN ;\_: drawing\_VBG it\_PRP to\_TO her\_PRP ,\_, she\_PRP kissed\_VBD it\_PRP .\_.

``\_`` My\_PRP$ true\_JJ friend\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' she\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, in\_IN a\_DT faint\_JJ voice\_NN ,\_, but\_CC with\_IN untellable\_JJ pathos\_NNS ,\_, ``\_`` My\_PRP$ true\_JJ friend\_NN ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ !\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, guard\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC give\_VB me\_PRP peace\_NN !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP swear\_VBP it\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD solemnly\_RB ,\_, kneeling\_VBG beside\_IN her\_PRP and\_CC holding\_VBG up\_RP his\_PRP$ hand\_NN ,\_, as\_IN one\_CD who\_WP registers\_VBZ an\_DT oath\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP turned\_VBD to\_TO Arthur\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP :\_: ``\_`` Come\_VB ,\_, my\_PRP$ child\_NN ,\_, take\_VB her\_PRP$ hand\_NN in\_IN yours\_PRP$ ,\_, and\_CC kiss\_NN her\_PRP on\_IN the\_DT forehead\_NN ,\_, and\_CC only\_RB once\_RB .\_. ''\_''

Their\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS met\_VBD instead\_RB of\_IN their\_PRP$ lips\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC so\_RB they\_PRP parted\_VBD .\_.

Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS eyes\_NNS closed\_VBD ;\_: and\_CC Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP had\_VBD been\_VBN watching\_VBG closely\_RB ,\_, took\_VBD Arthur\_NNP 's\_POS arm\_NN ,\_, and\_CC drew\_VBD him\_PRP away\_RB .\_.

And\_CC then\_RB Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS breathing\_NN became\_VBD stertorous\_JJ again\_RB ,\_, and\_CC all\_DT at\_IN once\_RB it\_PRP ceased\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` It\_PRP is\_VBZ all\_RB over\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` She\_PRP is\_VBZ dead\_JJ !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP took\_VBD Arthur\_NNP by\_IN the\_DT arm\_NN ,\_, and\_CC led\_VBD him\_PRP away\_RB to\_TO the\_DT drawing-room\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB he\_PRP sat\_VBD down\_RB ,\_, and\_CC covered\_VBD his\_PRP$ face\_NN with\_IN his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS ,\_, sobbing\_VBG in\_IN a\_DT way\_NN that\_WDT nearly\_RB broke\_VBD me\_PRP down\_RP to\_TO see\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP went\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, and\_CC found\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP looking\_VBG at\_IN poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ face\_NN was\_VBD sterner\_JJR than\_IN ever\_RB .\_.

Some\_DT change\_NN had\_VBD come\_VBN over\_IN her\_PRP$ body\_NN .\_.

Death\_NN had\_VBD given\_VBN back\_RB part\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ beauty\_NN ,\_, for\_IN her\_PRP$ brow\_NN and\_CC cheeks\_NNS had\_VBD recovered\_VBN some\_DT of\_IN their\_PRP$ flowing\_JJ lines\_NNS ;\_: even\_RB the\_DT lips\_NNS had\_VBD lost\_VBN their\_PRP$ deadly\_JJ pallor\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD as\_IN if\_IN the\_DT blood\_NN ,\_, no\_RB longer\_RB needed\_VBN for\_IN the\_DT working\_NN of\_IN the\_DT heart\_NN ,\_, had\_VBD gone\_VBN to\_TO make\_VB the\_DT harshness\_NN of\_IN death\_NN as\_RB little\_RB rude\_JJ as\_IN might\_MD be\_VB .\_.

``\_`` We\_PRP thought\_VBD her\_PRP dying\_VBG whilst\_IN she\_PRP slept\_VBD ,\_, And\_CC sleeping\_VBG when\_WRB she\_PRP died\_VBD .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP stood\_VBD beside\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Ah\_UH ,\_, well\_RB ,\_, poor\_JJ girl\_NN ,\_, there\_EX is\_VBZ peace\_NN for\_IN her\_PRP at\_IN last\_JJ .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ the\_DT end\_NN !\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP turned\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD with\_IN grave\_JJ solemnity\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Not\_RB so\_RB ;\_: alas\_UH !\_.

not\_RB so\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ only\_RB the\_DT beginning\_NN !\_. ''\_''

When\_WRB I\_PRP asked\_VBD him\_PRP what\_WP he\_PRP meant\_VBD ,\_, he\_PRP only\_RB shook\_VBD his\_PRP$ head\_NN and\_CC answered\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` We\_PRP can\_MD do\_VB nothing\_NN as\_RB yet\_RB .\_.

Wait\_VB and\_CC see\_VB .\_. ''\_''

CHAPTER\_NNP XIII\_NNP DR.\_NNP SEWARD\_NNP 'S\_POS DIARY\_NN --\_: continued\_VBN .\_.

THE\_DT funeral\_NN was\_VBD arranged\_VBN for\_IN the\_DT next\_JJ succeeding\_VBG day\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN Lucy\_NNP and\_CC her\_PRP$ mother\_NN might\_MD be\_VB buried\_VBN together\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP attended\_VBD to\_TO all\_PDT the\_DT ghastly\_JJ formalities\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT urbane\_JJ undertaker\_NN proved\_VBD that\_IN his\_PRP$ staff\_NN were\_VBD afflicted\_VBN --\_: or\_CC blessed\_VBN --\_: with\_IN something\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ obsequious\_JJ suavity\_NN .\_.

Even\_RB the\_DT woman\_NN who\_WP performed\_VBD the\_DT last\_JJ offices\_NNS for\_IN the\_DT dead\_NN remarked\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, in\_IN a\_DT confidential\_JJ ,\_, brother-professional\_JJ way\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB she\_PRP had\_VBD come\_VBN out\_RP from\_IN the\_DT death-chamber\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` She\_PRP makes\_VBZ a\_DT very\_RB beautiful\_JJ corpse\_NN ,\_, sir\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP 's\_VBZ quite\_RB a\_DT privilege\_NN to\_TO attend\_VB on\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP 's\_VBZ not\_RB too\_RB much\_JJ to\_TO say\_VB that\_IN she\_PRP will\_MD do\_VB credit\_NN to\_TO our\_PRP$ establishment\_NN !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP noticed\_VBD that\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP never\_RB kept\_VBD far\_RB away\_RB .\_.

This\_DT was\_VBD possible\_JJ from\_IN the\_DT disordered\_VBN state\_NN of\_IN things\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT household\_NN .\_.

There\_EX were\_VBD no\_DT relatives\_NNS at\_IN hand\_NN ;\_: and\_CC as\_IN Arthur\_NNP had\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB back\_RB the\_DT next\_JJ day\_NN to\_TO attend\_VB at\_IN his\_PRP$ father\_NN 's\_POS funeral\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP were\_VBD unable\_JJ to\_TO notify\_VB any\_DT one\_CD who\_WP should\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN bidden\_VBN .\_.

Under\_IN the\_DT circumstances\_NNS ,\_, Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP took\_VBD it\_PRP upon\_IN ourselves\_PRP to\_TO examine\_VB papers\_NNS ,\_, etc.\_FW .\_.

He\_PRP insisted\_VBD upon\_IN looking\_VBG over\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS papers\_NNS himself\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP asked\_VBD him\_PRP why\_WRB ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP feared\_VBD that\_IN he\_PRP ,\_, being\_VBG a\_DT foreigner\_NN ,\_, might\_MD not\_RB be\_VB quite\_RB aware\_JJ of\_IN English\_JJ legal\_JJ requirements\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB might\_MD in\_IN ignorance\_NN make\_VBP some\_DT unnecessary\_JJ trouble\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP answered\_VBD me\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP know\_VBP ;\_: I\_PRP know\_VBP .\_.

You\_PRP forget\_VBP that\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP a\_DT lawyer\_NN as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN a\_DT doctor\_NN .\_.

But\_CC this\_DT is\_VBZ not\_RB altogether\_RB for\_IN the\_DT law\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN ,\_, when\_WRB you\_PRP avoided\_VBD the\_DT coroner\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP more\_RBR than\_IN him\_PRP to\_TO avoid\_VB .\_.

There\_EX may\_MD be\_VB papers\_NNS more\_JJR --\_: such\_JJ as\_IN this\_DT .\_. ''\_''

As\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD he\_PRP took\_VBD from\_IN his\_PRP$ pocket-book\_NN the\_DT memorandum\_NN which\_WDT had\_VBD been\_VBN in\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS breast\_NN ,\_, and\_CC which\_WDT she\_PRP had\_VBD torn\_VBN in\_IN her\_PRP$ sleep\_NN .\_.

``\_`` When\_WRB you\_PRP find\_VBP anything\_NN of\_IN the\_DT solicitor\_NN who\_WP is\_VBZ for\_IN the\_DT late\_JJ Mrs.\_NNP Westenra\_NNP ,\_, seal\_VBP all\_DT her\_PRP$ papers\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC write\_VB him\_PRP to-night\_JJ .\_.

For\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP watch\_VBP here\_RB in\_IN the\_DT room\_NN and\_CC in\_IN Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS old\_JJ room\_NN all\_DT night\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP myself\_PRP search\_VBP for\_IN what\_WP may\_MD be\_VB .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB well\_RB that\_IN her\_PRP$ very\_JJ thoughts\_NNS go\_VBP into\_IN the\_DT hands\_NNS of\_IN strangers\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP went\_VBD on\_RP with\_IN my\_PRP$ part\_NN of\_IN the\_DT work\_NN ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN another\_DT half\_JJ hour\_NN had\_VBD found\_VBN the\_DT name\_NN and\_CC address\_NN of\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Westenra\_NNP 's\_POS solicitor\_NN and\_CC had\_VBD written\_VBN to\_TO him\_PRP .\_.

All\_PDT the\_DT poor\_JJ lady\_NN 's\_POS papers\_NNS were\_VBD in\_IN order\_NN ;\_: explicit\_JJ directions\_NNS regarding\_VBG the\_DT place\_NN of\_IN burial\_NN were\_VBD given\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD hardly\_RB sealed\_VBN the\_DT letter\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB ,\_, to\_TO my\_PRP$ surprise\_NN ,\_, Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP walked\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, saying\_VBG :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Can\_MD I\_PRP help\_VB you\_PRP ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP ?\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP free\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC if\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD ,\_, my\_PRP$ service\_NN is\_VBZ to\_TO you\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Have\_VBP you\_PRP got\_VBD what\_WP you\_PRP looked\_VBD for\_IN ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP asked\_VBD ,\_, to\_TO which\_WDT he\_PRP replied\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB look\_VB for\_IN any\_DT specific\_JJ thing\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP only\_RB hoped\_VBD to\_TO find\_VB ,\_, and\_CC find\_VB I\_PRP have\_VBP ,\_, all\_DT that\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD --\_: only\_RB some\_DT letters\_NNS and\_CC a\_DT few\_JJ memoranda\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT diary\_NN new\_JJ begun\_VBN .\_.

But\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP them\_PRP here\_RB ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP shall\_MD for\_IN the\_DT present\_JJ say\_NN nothing\_NN of\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD see\_VB that\_DT poor\_JJ lad\_NN to-morrow\_NN evening\_NN ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, with\_IN his\_PRP$ sanction\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP shall\_MD use\_VB some\_DT .\_. ''\_''

When\_WRB we\_PRP had\_VBD finished\_VBN the\_DT work\_NN in\_IN hand\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` And\_CC now\_RB ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP think\_VBP we\_PRP may\_MD to\_TO bed\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP want\_VBP sleep\_NN ,\_, both\_CC you\_PRP and\_CC I\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC rest\_NN to\_TO recuperate\_VB .\_.

To-morrow\_VB we\_PRP shall\_MD have\_VB much\_JJ to\_TO do\_VB ,\_, but\_CC for\_IN the\_DT to-night\_NN there\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT need\_NN of\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

Alas\_NNS !\_. ''\_''

Before\_IN turning\_VBG in\_IN we\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO look\_VB at\_IN poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT undertaker\_NN had\_VBD certainly\_RB done\_VBN his\_PRP$ work\_NN well\_RB ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT room\_NN was\_VBD turned\_VBN into\_IN a\_DT small\_JJ chapelle\_FW ardente\_FW .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT wilderness\_NN of\_IN beautiful\_JJ white\_JJ flowers\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC death\_NN was\_VBD made\_VBN as\_RB little\_RB repulsive\_JJ as\_IN might\_MD be\_VB .\_.

The\_DT end\_NN of\_IN the\_DT winding-sheet\_NN was\_VBD laid\_VBN over\_IN the\_DT face\_NN ;\_: when\_WRB the\_DT Professor\_NNP bent\_NN over\_IN and\_CC turned\_VBD it\_PRP gently\_RB back\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP both\_DT started\_VBD at\_IN the\_DT beauty\_NN before\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, the\_DT tall\_JJ wax\_NN candles\_NNS showing\_VBG a\_DT sufficient\_JJ light\_NN to\_TO note\_VB it\_PRP well\_RB .\_.

All\_DT Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS loveliness\_NN had\_VBD come\_VBN back\_RB to\_TO her\_PRP in\_IN death\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT hours\_NNS that\_WDT had\_VBD passed\_VBN ,\_, instead\_RB of\_IN leaving\_VBG traces\_NNS of\_IN ``\_`` decay\_NN 's\_POS effacing\_VBG fingers\_NNS ,\_, ''\_'' had\_VBD but\_CC restored\_VBD the\_DT beauty\_NN of\_IN life\_NN ,\_, till\_IN positively\_RB I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB believe\_VB my\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD looking\_VBG at\_IN a\_DT corpse\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP looked\_VBD sternly\_RB grave\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB loved\_VBN her\_PRP as\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT need\_NN for\_IN tears\_NNS in\_IN his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP :\_: ``\_`` Remain\_VB till\_IN I\_PRP return\_VBP ,\_, ''\_'' and\_CC left\_VBD the\_DT room\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP came\_VBD back\_RP with\_IN a\_DT handful\_NN of\_IN wild\_JJ garlic\_NN from\_IN the\_DT box\_NN waiting\_VBG in\_IN the\_DT hall\_NN ,\_, but\_CC which\_WDT had\_VBD not\_RB been\_VBN opened\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC placed\_VBD the\_DT flowers\_NNS amongst\_IN the\_DT others\_NNS on\_IN and\_CC around\_IN the\_DT bed\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP took\_VBD from\_IN his\_PRP$ neck\_NN ,\_, inside\_IN his\_PRP$ collar\_NN ,\_, a\_DT little\_JJ gold\_NN crucifix\_NN ,\_, and\_CC placed\_VBD it\_PRP over\_IN the\_DT mouth\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP restored\_VBD the\_DT sheet\_NN to\_TO its\_PRP$ place\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP came\_VBD away\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD undressing\_VBG in\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ room\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT premonitory\_JJ tap\_NN at\_IN the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP entered\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC at\_IN once\_RB began\_VBD to\_TO speak\_VB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` To-morrow\_NN I\_PRP want\_VBP you\_PRP to\_TO bring\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, before\_IN night\_NN ,\_, a\_DT set\_NN of\_IN post-mortem\_JJ knives\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Must\_MD we\_PRP make\_VB an\_DT autopsy\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP asked\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Yes\_RB and\_CC no\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP want\_VBP to\_TO operate\_VB ,\_, but\_CC not\_RB as\_IN you\_PRP think\_VBP .\_.

Let\_VB me\_PRP tell\_VB you\_PRP now\_RB ,\_, but\_CC not\_RB a\_DT word\_NN to\_TO another\_DT .\_.

I\_PRP want\_VBP to\_TO cut\_VB off\_RP her\_PRP$ head\_NN and\_CC take\_VB out\_RP her\_PRP$ heart\_NN .\_.

Ah\_UH !\_.

you\_PRP a\_DT surgeon\_NN ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB shocked\_JJ !\_.

You\_PRP ,\_, whom\_WP I\_PRP have\_VBP seen\_VBN with\_IN no\_DT tremble\_NN of\_IN hand\_NN or\_CC heart\_NN ,\_, do\_VBP operations\_NNS of\_IN life\_NN and\_CC death\_NN that\_WDT make\_VBP the\_DT rest\_NN shudder\_NN .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB forget\_VB ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, that\_IN you\_PRP loved\_VBD her\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB forgotten\_VBN it\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ I\_PRP that\_WDT shall\_MD operate\_VB ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP must\_MD only\_RB help\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP would\_MD like\_VB to\_TO do\_VB it\_PRP to-night\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC for\_IN Arthur\_NNP I\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB ;\_: he\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB free\_JJ after\_IN his\_PRP$ father\_NN 's\_POS funeral\_JJ to-morrow\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP will\_MD want\_VB to\_TO see\_VB her\_PRP --\_: to\_TO see\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

Then\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB she\_PRP is\_VBZ coffined\_VBN ready\_JJ for\_IN the\_DT next\_JJ day\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP and\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD come\_VB when\_WRB all\_DT sleep\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP shall\_MD unscrew\_VB the\_DT coffin-lid\_NN ,\_, and\_CC shall\_MD do\_VB our\_PRP$ operation\_NN :\_: and\_CC then\_RB replace\_VB all\_DT ,\_, so\_IN that\_DT none\_NN know\_VB ,\_, save\_VB we\_PRP alone\_RB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` But\_CC why\_WRB do\_VBP it\_PRP at\_IN all\_DT ?\_.

The\_DT girl\_NN is\_VBZ dead\_JJ .\_.

Why\_WRB mutilate\_VB her\_PRP$ poor\_JJ body\_NN without\_IN need\_NN ?\_.

And\_CC if\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT necessity\_NN for\_IN a\_DT post-mortem\_NN and\_CC nothing\_NN to\_TO gain\_VB by\_IN it\_PRP --\_: no\_DT good\_JJ to\_TO her\_PRP ,\_, to\_TO us\_PRP ,\_, to\_TO science\_NN ,\_, to\_TO human\_JJ knowledge\_NN --\_: why\_WRB do\_VBP it\_PRP ?\_.

Without\_IN such\_JJ it\_PRP is\_VBZ monstrous\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

For\_IN answer\_NN he\_PRP put\_VBD his\_PRP$ hand\_NN on\_IN my\_PRP$ shoulder\_NN ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD ,\_, with\_IN infinite\_JJ tenderness\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, I\_NN pity\_NN your\_PRP$ poor\_JJ bleeding\_NN heart\_NN ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP love\_VBP you\_PRP the\_DT more\_RBR because\_IN it\_PRP does\_VBZ so\_RB bleed\_VB .\_.

If\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD ,\_, I\_PRP would\_MD take\_VB on\_IN myself\_PRP the\_DT burden\_NN that\_IN you\_PRP do\_VBP bear\_VB .\_.

But\_CC there\_EX are\_VBP things\_NNS that\_IN you\_PRP know\_VBP not\_RB ,\_, but\_CC that\_IN you\_PRP shall\_MD know\_VB ,\_, and\_CC bless\_VB me\_PRP for\_IN knowing\_VBG ,\_, though\_IN they\_PRP are\_VBP not\_RB pleasant\_JJ things\_NNS .\_.

John\_NNP ,\_, my\_PRP$ child\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN my\_PRP$ friend\_NN now\_RB many\_JJ years\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC yet\_RB did\_VBD you\_PRP ever\_RB know\_VB me\_PRP to\_TO do\_VB any\_DT without\_IN good\_JJ cause\_NN ?\_.

I\_PRP may\_MD err\_VB --\_: I\_PRP am\_VBP but\_CC man\_VBP ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP believe\_VBP in\_IN all\_DT I\_PRP do\_VBP .\_.

Was\_VBD it\_PRP not\_RB for\_IN these\_DT causes\_NNS that\_IN you\_PRP send\_VBP for\_IN me\_PRP when\_WRB the\_DT great\_JJ trouble\_NN came\_VBD ?\_.

Yes\_UH !\_.

Were\_VBD you\_PRP not\_RB amazed\_VBD ,\_, nay\_NN horrified\_VBD ,\_, when\_WRB I\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB let\_VB Arthur\_NNP kiss\_NN his\_PRP$ love\_NN --\_: though\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD dying\_VBG --\_: and\_CC snatched\_VBD him\_PRP away\_RB by\_IN all\_DT my\_PRP$ strength\_NN ?\_.

Yes\_UH !\_.

And\_CC yet\_RB you\_PRP saw\_VBD how\_WRB she\_PRP thanked\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, with\_IN her\_PRP so\_RB beautiful\_JJ dying\_VBG eyes\_NNS ,\_, her\_PRP$ voice\_NN ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, so\_RB weak\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP kiss\_NN my\_PRP$ rough\_JJ old\_JJ hand\_NN and\_CC bless\_VB me\_PRP ?\_.

Yes\_UH !\_.

And\_CC did\_VBD you\_PRP not\_RB hear\_VB me\_PRP swear\_VB promise\_NN to\_TO her\_PRP ,\_, that\_IN so\_IN she\_PRP closed\_VBD her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS grateful\_JJ ?\_.

Yes\_UH !\_.

``\_`` Well\_UH ,\_, I\_PRP have\_VBP good\_JJ reason\_NN now\_RB for\_IN all\_DT I\_PRP want\_VBP to\_TO do\_VB .\_.

You\_PRP have\_VBP for\_IN many\_JJ years\_NNS trust\_VBP me\_PRP ;\_: you\_PRP have\_VBP believe\_VB me\_PRP weeks\_NNS past\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB there\_RB be\_VB things\_NNS so\_RB strange\_JJ that\_IN you\_PRP might\_MD have\_VB well\_RB doubt\_NN .\_.

Believe\_VB me\_PRP yet\_RB a\_DT little\_JJ ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP .\_.

If\_IN you\_PRP trust\_VBP me\_PRP not\_RB ,\_, then\_RB I\_PRP must\_MD tell\_VB what\_WP I\_PRP think\_VBP ;\_: and\_CC that\_DT is\_VBZ not\_RB perhaps\_RB well\_RB .\_.

And\_CC if\_IN I\_PRP work\_VBP --\_: as\_IN work\_NN I\_PRP shall\_MD ,\_, no\_DT matter\_NN trust\_NN or\_CC no\_DT trust\_NN --\_: without\_IN my\_PRP$ friend\_NN trust\_NN in\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP work\_VBP with\_IN heavy\_JJ heart\_NN and\_CC feel\_NN ,\_, oh\_UH !\_.

so\_RB lonely\_JJ when\_WRB I\_PRP want\_VBP all\_DT help\_NN and\_CC courage\_NN that\_WDT may\_MD be\_VB !\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP paused\_VBD a\_DT moment\_NN and\_CC went\_VBD on\_IN solemnly\_RB :\_: ``\_`` Friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, there\_EX are\_VBP strange\_JJ and\_CC terrible\_JJ days\_NNS before\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

Let\_VB us\_PRP not\_RB be\_VB two\_CD ,\_, but\_CC one\_CD ,\_, that\_IN so\_IN we\_PRP work\_VBP to\_TO a\_DT good\_JJ end\_NN .\_.

Will\_MD you\_PRP not\_RB have\_VB faith\_NN in\_IN me\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP took\_VBD his\_PRP$ hand\_NN ,\_, and\_CC promised\_VBD him\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP held\_VBD my\_PRP$ door\_NN open\_JJ as\_IN he\_PRP went\_VBD away\_RB ,\_, and\_CC watched\_VBD him\_PRP go\_VB into\_IN his\_PRP$ room\_NN and\_CC close\_VB the\_DT door\_NN .\_.

As\_IN I\_PRP stood\_VBD without\_IN moving\_VBG ,\_, I\_PRP saw\_VBD one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT maids\_NNS pass\_VBP silently\_RB along\_IN the\_DT passage\_NN --\_: she\_PRP had\_VBD her\_PRP$ back\_NN towards\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, so\_RB did\_VBD not\_RB see\_VB me\_PRP --\_: and\_CC go\_VB into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN where\_WRB Lucy\_NNP lay\_VBD .\_.

The\_DT sight\_NN touched\_VBD me\_PRP .\_.

Devotion\_NN is\_VBZ so\_RB rare\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP are\_VBP so\_RB grateful\_JJ to\_TO those\_DT who\_WP show\_VBP it\_PRP unasked\_JJ to\_TO those\_DT we\_PRP love\_VBP .\_.

Here\_RB was\_VBD a\_DT poor\_JJ girl\_NN putting\_VBG aside\_RP the\_DT terrors\_NNS which\_WDT she\_PRP naturally\_RB had\_VBD of\_IN death\_NN to\_TO go\_VB watch\_NN alone\_RB by\_IN the\_DT bier\_NN of\_IN the\_DT mistress\_NN whom\_WP she\_PRP loved\_VBD ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN the\_DT poor\_JJ clay\_NN might\_MD not\_RB be\_VB lonely\_JJ till\_IN laid\_VBN to\_TO eternal\_JJ rest\_NN ...\_: .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB slept\_VBN long\_RB and\_CC soundly\_RB ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD broad\_JJ daylight\_NN when\_WRB Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP waked\_VBD me\_PRP by\_IN coming\_VBG into\_IN my\_PRP$ room\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP came\_VBD over\_RP to\_TO my\_PRP$ bedside\_NN and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP need\_VBP not\_RB trouble\_NN about\_IN the\_DT knives\_NNS ;\_: we\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB do\_VB it\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Why\_WRB not\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP asked\_VBD .\_.

For\_IN his\_PRP$ solemnity\_NN of\_IN the\_DT night\_NN before\_RB had\_VBD greatly\_RB impressed\_VBN me\_PRP .\_.

``\_`` Because\_IN ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD sternly\_RB ,\_, ``\_`` it\_PRP is\_VBZ too\_RB late\_JJ --\_: or\_CC too\_RB early\_JJ .\_.

See\_VB !\_. ''\_''

Here\_RB he\_PRP held\_VBD up\_RP the\_DT little\_JJ golden\_JJ crucifix\_NN .\_.

``\_`` This\_DT was\_VBD stolen\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT night\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` How\_WRB ,\_, stolen\_VBN ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP asked\_VBD in\_IN wonder\_NN ,\_, ``\_`` since\_IN you\_PRP have\_VBP it\_PRP now\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Because\_IN I\_PRP get\_VBP it\_PRP back\_RB from\_IN the\_DT worthless\_JJ wretch\_NN who\_WP stole\_VBD it\_PRP ,\_, from\_IN the\_DT woman\_NN who\_WP robbed\_VBD the\_DT dead\_JJ and\_CC the\_DT living\_NN .\_.

Her\_PRP$ punishment\_NN will\_MD surely\_RB come\_VB ,\_, but\_CC not\_RB through\_IN me\_PRP ;\_: she\_PRP knew\_VBD not\_RB altogether\_RB what\_WP she\_PRP did\_VBD and\_CC thus\_RB unknowing\_JJ ,\_, she\_PRP only\_RB stole\_VBD .\_.

Now\_RB we\_PRP must\_MD wait\_VB .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP went\_VBD away\_RB on\_IN the\_DT word\_NN ,\_, leaving\_VBG me\_PRP with\_IN a\_DT new\_JJ mystery\_NN to\_TO think\_VB of\_IN ,\_, a\_DT new\_JJ puzzle\_NN to\_TO grapple\_VB with\_IN .\_.

The\_DT forenoon\_NN was\_VBD a\_DT dreary\_JJ time\_NN ,\_, but\_CC at\_IN noon\_NN the\_DT solicitor\_NN came\_VBD :\_: Mr.\_NNP Marquand\_NNP ,\_, of\_IN Wholeman\_NNP ,\_, Sons\_NNP ,\_, Marquand\_NNP &\_CC Lidderdale\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD very\_RB genial\_JJ and\_CC very\_RB appreciative\_JJ of\_IN what\_WP we\_PRP had\_VBD done\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC took\_VBD off\_RP our\_PRP$ hands\_NNS all\_DT cares\_VBZ as\_IN to\_TO details\_NNS .\_.

During\_IN lunch\_NN he\_PRP told\_VBD us\_PRP that\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Westenra\_NNP had\_VBD for\_IN some\_DT time\_NN expected\_VBD sudden\_JJ death\_NN from\_IN her\_PRP$ heart\_NN ,\_, and\_CC had\_VBD put\_VBN her\_PRP$ affairs\_NNS in\_IN absolute\_JJ order\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP informed\_VBD us\_PRP that\_IN ,\_, with\_IN the\_DT exception\_NN of\_IN a\_DT certain\_JJ entailed\_VBN property\_NN of\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS father\_NN 's\_POS which\_WDT now\_RB ,\_, in\_IN default\_NN of\_IN direct\_JJ issue\_NN ,\_, went\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO a\_DT distant\_JJ branch\_NN of\_IN the\_DT family\_NN ,\_, the\_DT whole\_JJ estate\_NN ,\_, real\_JJ and\_CC personal\_JJ ,\_, was\_VBD left\_VBN absolutely\_RB to\_TO Arthur\_NNP Holmwood\_NNP .\_.

When\_WRB he\_PRP had\_VBD told\_VBN us\_PRP so\_RB much\_RB he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Frankly\_NNP we\_PRP did\_VBD our\_PRP$ best\_JJS to\_TO prevent\_VB such\_PDT a\_DT testamentary\_JJ disposition\_NN ,\_, and\_CC pointed\_VBD out\_RP certain\_JJ contingencies\_NNS that\_WDT might\_MD leave\_VB her\_PRP$ daughter\_NN either\_CC penniless\_JJ or\_CC not\_RB so\_RB free\_JJ as\_IN she\_PRP should\_MD be\_VB to\_TO act\_VB regarding\_VBG a\_DT matrimonial\_JJ alliance\_NN .\_.

Indeed\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP pressed\_VBD the\_DT matter\_NN so\_RB far\_RB that\_IN we\_PRP almost\_RB came\_VBD into\_IN collision\_NN ,\_, for\_IN she\_PRP asked\_VBD us\_PRP if\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD or\_CC were\_VBD not\_RB prepared\_VBN to\_TO carry\_VB out\_RP her\_PRP$ wishes\_NNS .\_.

Of\_IN course\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP had\_VBD then\_RB no\_DT alternative\_NN but\_CC to\_TO accept\_VB .\_.

We\_PRP were\_VBD right\_RB in\_IN principle\_NN ,\_, and\_CC ninety-nine\_JJ times\_NNS out\_IN of\_IN a\_DT hundred\_CD we\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB proved\_VBN ,\_, by\_IN the\_DT logic\_NN of\_IN events\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT accuracy\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ judgment\_NN .\_.

Frankly\_RB ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP must\_MD admit\_VB that\_IN in\_IN this\_DT case\_NN any\_DT other\_JJ form\_NN of\_IN disposition\_NN would\_MD have\_VB rendered\_VBN impossible\_JJ the\_DT carrying\_NN out\_IN of\_IN her\_PRP$ wishes\_NNS .\_.

For\_IN by\_IN her\_PRP predeceasing\_VBG her\_PRP$ daughter\_NN the\_DT latter\_JJ would\_MD have\_VB come\_VBN into\_IN possession\_NN of\_IN the\_DT property\_NN ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, even\_RB had\_VBD she\_PRP only\_RB survived\_VBD her\_PRP$ mother\_NN by\_IN five\_CD minutes\_NNS ,\_, her\_PRP$ property\_NN would\_MD ,\_, in\_IN case\_NN there\_EX were\_VBD no\_DT will\_NN --\_: and\_CC a\_DT will\_NN was\_VBD a\_DT practical\_JJ impossibility\_NN in\_IN such\_JJ a\_DT case\_NN --\_: have\_VBP been\_VBN treated\_VBN at\_IN her\_PRP$ decease\_NN as\_IN under\_IN intestacy\_NN .\_.

In\_IN which\_WDT case\_NN Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP ,\_, though\_IN so\_RB dear\_RB a\_DT friend\_NN ,\_, would\_MD have\_VB had\_VBN no\_DT claim\_NN in\_IN the\_DT world\_NN ;\_: and\_CC the\_DT inheritors\_NNS ,\_, being\_VBG remote\_JJ ,\_, would\_MD not\_RB be\_VB likely\_JJ to\_TO abandon\_VB their\_PRP$ just\_JJ rights\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN sentimental\_JJ reasons\_NNS regarding\_VBG an\_DT entire\_JJ stranger\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP assure\_VBP you\_PRP ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB sirs\_VBZ ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP rejoiced\_VBN at\_IN the\_DT result\_NN ,\_, perfectly\_RB rejoiced\_VBD .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT good\_JJ fellow\_NN ,\_, but\_CC his\_PRP$ rejoicing\_NN at\_IN the\_DT one\_CD little\_JJ part\_NN --\_: in\_IN which\_WDT he\_PRP was\_VBD officially\_RB interested\_JJ --\_: of\_IN so\_RB great\_JJ a\_DT tragedy\_NN ,\_, was\_VBD an\_DT object-lesson\_NN in\_IN the\_DT limitations\_NNS of\_IN sympathetic\_JJ understanding\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB remain\_VB long\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC said\_VBD he\_PRP would\_MD look\_VB in\_IN later\_RB in\_IN the\_DT day\_NN and\_CC see\_VB Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP .\_.

His\_PRP$ coming\_VBG ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, had\_VBD been\_VBN a\_DT certain\_JJ comfort\_NN to\_TO us\_PRP ,\_, since\_IN it\_PRP assured\_VBD us\_PRP that\_IN we\_PRP should\_MD not\_RB have\_VB to\_TO dread\_NN hostile\_NN criticism\_NN as\_IN to\_TO any\_DT of\_IN our\_PRP$ acts\_NNS .\_.

Arthur\_NNP was\_VBD expected\_VBN at\_IN five\_CD o'clock\_RB ,\_, so\_IN a\_DT little\_JJ before\_IN that\_DT time\_NN we\_PRP visited\_VBD the\_DT death-chamber\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD so\_RB in\_IN very\_JJ truth\_NN ,\_, for\_IN now\_RB both\_DT mother\_NN and\_CC daughter\_NN lay\_VBP in\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT undertaker\_NN ,\_, true\_JJ to\_TO his\_PRP$ craft\_NN ,\_, had\_VBD made\_VBN the\_DT best\_JJS display\_NN he\_PRP could\_MD of\_IN his\_PRP$ goods\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT mortuary\_JJ air\_NN about\_IN the\_DT place\_NN that\_WDT lowered\_VBD our\_PRP$ spirits\_NNS at\_IN once\_RB .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ordered\_VBD the\_DT former\_JJ arrangement\_NN to\_TO be\_VB adhered\_JJ to\_TO ,\_, explaining\_VBG that\_IN ,\_, as\_IN Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP was\_VBD coming\_VBG very\_RB soon\_RB ,\_, it\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB less\_RBR harrowing\_JJ to\_TO his\_PRP$ feelings\_NNS to\_TO see\_VB all\_DT that\_WDT was\_VBD left\_VBN of\_IN his\_PRP$ fiancée\_NN quite\_RB alone\_RB .\_.

The\_DT undertaker\_NN seemed\_VBD shocked\_VBN at\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ stupidity\_NN and\_CC exerted\_VBD himself\_PRP to\_TO restore\_VB things\_NNS to\_TO the\_DT condition\_NN in\_IN which\_WDT we\_PRP left\_VBD them\_PRP the\_DT night\_NN before\_IN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN when\_WRB Arthur\_NNP came\_VBD such\_JJ shocks\_NNS to\_TO his\_PRP$ feelings\_NNS as\_IN we\_PRP could\_MD avoid\_VB were\_VBD saved\_VBN .\_.

Poor\_NNP fellow\_NN !\_.

He\_PRP looked\_VBD desperately\_RB sad\_JJ and\_CC broken\_JJ ;\_: even\_RB his\_PRP$ stalwart\_JJ manhood\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO have\_VB shrunk\_VBN somewhat\_RB under\_IN the\_DT strain\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ much-tried\_JJ emotions\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD ,\_, I\_PRP knew\_VBD ,\_, been\_VBN very\_RB genuinely\_RB and\_CC devotedly\_RB attached\_VBN to\_TO his\_PRP$ father\_NN ;\_: and\_CC to\_TO lose\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC at\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT time\_NN ,\_, was\_VBD a\_DT bitter\_JJ blow\_NN to\_TO him\_PRP .\_.

With\_IN me\_PRP he\_PRP was\_VBD warm\_JJ as\_IN ever\_RB ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP he\_PRP was\_VBD sweetly\_RB courteous\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB help\_VB seeing\_VBG that\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD some\_DT constraint\_NN with\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP noticed\_VBD it\_PRP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, and\_CC motioned\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO bring\_VB him\_PRP upstairs\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP did\_VBD so\_RB ,\_, and\_CC left\_VBD him\_PRP at\_IN the\_DT door\_NN of\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP felt\_VBD he\_PRP would\_MD like\_VB to\_TO be\_VB quite\_RB alone\_RB with\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC he\_PRP took\_VBD my\_PRP$ arm\_NN and\_CC led\_VBD me\_PRP in\_IN ,\_, saying\_VBG huskily\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP loved\_VBD her\_PRP too\_RB ,\_, old\_JJ fellow\_NN ;\_: she\_PRP told\_VBD me\_PRP all\_DT about\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT friend\_NN had\_VBD a\_DT closer\_JJR place\_NN in\_IN her\_PRP$ heart\_NN than\_IN you\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB know\_VB how\_WRB to\_TO thank\_VB you\_PRP for\_IN all\_DT you\_PRP have\_VBP done\_VBN for\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP ca\_MD n't\_RB think\_VB yet\_RB ...\_: ''\_'' Here\_RB he\_PRP suddenly\_RB broke\_VBD down\_RB ,\_, and\_CC threw\_VBD his\_PRP$ arms\_NNS round\_VBP my\_PRP$ shoulders\_NNS and\_CC laid\_VBD his\_PRP$ head\_NN on\_IN my\_PRP$ breast\_NN ,\_, crying\_VBG :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, Jack\_NNP !\_.

Jack\_NNP !\_.

What\_WP shall\_MD I\_PRP do\_VBP !\_.

The\_DT whole\_NN of\_IN life\_NN seems\_VBZ gone\_VBN from\_IN me\_PRP all\_DT at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX is\_VBZ nothing\_NN in\_IN the\_DT wide\_JJ world\_NN for\_IN me\_PRP to\_TO live\_VB for\_IN .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP comforted\_VBD him\_PRP as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD .\_.

In\_IN such\_JJ cases\_NNS men\_NNS do\_VBP not\_RB need\_VB much\_JJ expression\_NN .\_.

A\_DT grip\_NN of\_IN the\_DT hand\_NN ,\_, the\_DT tightening\_NN of\_IN an\_DT arm\_NN over\_IN the\_DT shoulder\_NN ,\_, a\_DT sob\_VBP in\_IN unison\_NN ,\_, are\_VBP expressions\_NNS of\_IN sympathy\_NN dear\_RB to\_TO a\_DT man\_NN 's\_POS heart\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP stood\_VBD still\_RB and\_CC silent\_JJ till\_IN his\_PRP$ sobs\_NNS died\_VBD away\_RB ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB I\_PRP said\_VBD softly\_RB to\_TO him\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Come\_VB and\_CC look\_VB at\_IN her\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

Together\_RB we\_PRP moved\_VBD over\_RP to\_TO the\_DT bed\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP lifted\_VBD the\_DT lawn\_NN from\_IN her\_PRP$ face\_NN .\_.

God\_NN !\_.

how\_WRB beautiful\_JJ she\_PRP was\_VBD .\_.

Every\_DT hour\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB enhancing\_VBG her\_PRP$ loveliness\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP frightened\_VBD and\_CC amazed\_VBD me\_PRP somewhat\_RB ;\_: and\_CC as\_IN for\_IN Arthur\_NNP ,\_, he\_PRP fell\_VBD a-trembling\_NN ,\_, and\_CC finally\_RB was\_VBD shaken\_VBN with\_IN doubt\_NN as\_IN with\_IN an\_DT ague\_NN .\_.

At\_IN last\_JJ ,\_, after\_IN a\_DT long\_JJ pause\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP in\_IN a\_DT faint\_JJ whisper\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Jack\_NNP ,\_, is\_VBZ she\_PRP really\_RB dead\_JJ ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP assured\_VBD him\_PRP sadly\_RB that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD so\_RB ,\_, and\_CC went\_VBD on\_RP to\_TO suggest\_VB --\_: for\_IN I\_PRP felt\_VBD that\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT horrible\_JJ doubt\_NN should\_MD not\_RB have\_VB life\_NN for\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN longer\_RBR than\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD help\_VB --\_: that\_IN it\_PRP often\_RB happened\_VBD that\_IN after\_IN death\_NN faces\_NNS became\_VBD softened\_JJ and\_CC even\_RB resolved\_VBN into\_IN their\_PRP$ youthful\_JJ beauty\_NN ;\_: that\_IN this\_DT was\_VBD especially\_RB so\_RB when\_WRB death\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN preceded\_VBN by\_IN any\_DT acute\_JJ or\_CC prolonged\_JJ suffering\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO quite\_RB do\_VB away\_RB with\_IN any\_DT doubt\_NN ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, after\_IN kneeling\_VBG beside\_IN the\_DT couch\_NN for\_IN a\_DT while\_NN and\_CC looking\_VBG at\_IN her\_PRP lovingly\_RB and\_CC long\_RB ,\_, he\_PRP turned\_VBD aside\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP told\_VBD him\_PRP that\_IN that\_DT must\_MD be\_VB good-bye\_JJ ,\_, as\_IN the\_DT coffin\_NN had\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB prepared\_VBN ;\_: so\_IN he\_PRP went\_VBD back\_RB and\_CC took\_VBD her\_PRP$ dead\_JJ hand\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ and\_CC kissed\_VBD it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC bent\_NN over\_IN and\_CC kissed\_VBD her\_PRP$ forehead\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP came\_VBD away\_RB ,\_, fondly\_RB looking\_VBG back\_RB over\_IN his\_PRP$ shoulder\_NN at\_IN her\_PRP as\_IN he\_PRP came\_VBD .\_.

I\_PRP left\_VBD him\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT drawing-room\_NN ,\_, and\_CC told\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP that\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD said\_VBN good-bye\_NN ;\_: so\_IN the\_DT latter\_JJ went\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT kitchen\_NN to\_TO tell\_VB the\_DT undertaker\_NN 's\_POS men\_NNS to\_TO proceed\_VB with\_IN the\_DT preparations\_NNS and\_CC to\_TO screw\_VB up\_RP the\_DT coffin\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB he\_PRP came\_VBD out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT room\_NN again\_RB I\_PRP told\_VBD him\_PRP of\_IN Arthur\_NNP 's\_POS question\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP replied\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB surprised\_VBN .\_.

Just\_RB now\_RB I\_PRP doubted\_VBD for\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN myself\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

We\_PRP all\_DT dined\_VBD together\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB that\_DT poor\_JJ Art\_NN was\_VBD trying\_VBG to\_TO make\_VB the\_DT best\_JJS of\_IN things\_NNS .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP had\_VBD been\_VBN silent\_JJ all\_DT dinner-time\_NN ;\_: but\_CC when\_WRB we\_PRP had\_VBD lit\_VBN our\_PRP$ cigars\_NNS he\_PRP said\_VBD --\_: ``\_`` Lord\_NNP --\_: --\_: ''\_'' ;\_: but\_CC Arthur\_NNP interrupted\_VBD him\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` No\_UH ,\_, no\_DT ,\_, not\_RB that\_IN ,\_, for\_IN God\_NNP 's\_POS sake\_NN !\_.

not\_RB yet\_RB at\_IN any\_DT rate\_NN .\_.

Forgive\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, sir\_NN :\_: I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB mean\_VB to\_TO speak\_VB offensively\_RB ;\_: it\_PRP is\_VBZ only\_RB because\_IN my\_PRP$ loss\_NN is\_VBZ so\_RB recent\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT Professor\_NNP answered\_VBD very\_RB sweetly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP only\_RB used\_VBD that\_DT name\_NN because\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN doubt\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB call\_VB you\_PRP `\_`` Mr.\_NNP ,\_, '\_'' and\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP grown\_VBN to\_TO love\_VB you\_PRP --\_: yes\_UH ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB boy\_NN ,\_, to\_TO love\_VB you\_PRP --\_: as\_IN Arthur\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

Arthur\_NNP held\_VBD out\_RP his\_PRP$ hand\_NN ,\_, and\_CC took\_VBD the\_DT old\_JJ man\_NN 's\_VBZ warmly\_RB .\_.

``\_`` Call\_VB me\_PRP what\_WP you\_PRP will\_MD ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP hope\_VBP I\_PRP may\_MD always\_RB have\_VB the\_DT title\_NN of\_IN a\_DT friend\_NN .\_.

And\_CC let\_VB me\_PRP say\_VB that\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP at\_IN a\_DT loss\_NN for\_IN words\_NNS to\_TO thank\_VB you\_PRP for\_IN your\_PRP$ goodness\_NN to\_TO my\_PRP$ poor\_NN dear\_RB .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP paused\_VBD a\_DT moment\_NN ,\_, and\_CC went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP know\_VBP that\_IN she\_PRP understood\_VBD your\_PRP$ goodness\_NN even\_RB better\_RBR than\_IN I\_PRP do\_VBP ;\_: and\_CC if\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD rude\_JJ or\_CC in\_IN any\_DT way\_NN wanting\_VBG at\_IN that\_DT time\_NN you\_PRP acted\_VBD so\_RB --\_: you\_PRP remember\_VBP ''\_'' --\_: the\_DT Professor\_NNP nodded\_VBD --\_: ``\_`` you\_PRP must\_MD forgive\_VB me\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP answered\_VBD with\_IN a\_DT grave\_JJ kindness\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP know\_VBP it\_PRP was\_VBD hard\_JJ for\_IN you\_PRP to\_TO quite\_RB trust\_VB me\_PRP then\_RB ,\_, for\_IN to\_TO trust\_VB such\_JJ violence\_NN needs\_VBZ to\_TO understand\_VB ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP take\_VBP it\_PRP that\_IN you\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB --\_: that\_IN you\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB --\_: trust\_VB me\_PRP now\_RB ,\_, for\_IN you\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB yet\_RB understand\_VB .\_.

And\_CC there\_EX may\_MD be\_VB more\_JJR times\_NNS when\_WRB I\_PRP shall\_MD want\_VB you\_PRP to\_TO trust\_VB when\_WRB you\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB --\_: and\_CC may\_MD not\_RB --\_: and\_CC must\_MD not\_RB yet\_RB understand\_VB .\_.

But\_CC the\_DT time\_NN will\_MD come\_VB when\_WRB your\_PRP$ trust\_NN shall\_MD be\_VB whole\_JJ and\_CC complete\_JJ in\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB you\_PRP shall\_MD understand\_VB as\_IN though\_IN the\_DT sunlight\_NN himself\_PRP shone\_VBD through\_IN .\_.

Then\_RB you\_PRP shall\_MD bless\_VB me\_PRP from\_IN first\_JJ to\_TO last\_VB for\_IN your\_PRP$ own\_JJ sake\_NN ,\_, and\_CC for\_IN the\_DT sake\_NN of\_IN others\_NNS and\_CC for\_IN her\_PRP dear\_RB sake\_NN to\_TO whom\_WP I\_PRP swore\_VBD to\_TO protect\_VB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` And\_CC ,\_, indeed\_RB ,\_, indeed\_RB ,\_, sir\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD Arthur\_NNP warmly\_RB ,\_, ``\_`` I\_PRP shall\_MD in\_IN all\_DT ways\_NNS trust\_VBP you\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP and\_CC believe\_VBP you\_PRP have\_VBP a\_DT very\_RB noble\_JJ heart\_NN ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP are\_VBP Jack\_NNP 's\_POS friend\_NN ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP were\_VBD hers\_NNS .\_.

You\_PRP shall\_MD do\_VB what\_WP you\_PRP like\_VBP .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT Professor\_NNP cleared\_VBD his\_PRP$ throat\_NN a\_DT couple\_NN of\_IN times\_NNS ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN about\_IN to\_TO speak\_VB ,\_, and\_CC finally\_RB said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` May\_MD I\_PRP ask\_VB you\_PRP something\_NN now\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Certainly\_RB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` You\_PRP know\_VBP that\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Westenra\_NNP left\_VBD you\_PRP all\_DT her\_PRP$ property\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` No\_UH ,\_, poor\_JJ dear\_RB ;\_: I\_PRP never\_RB thought\_VBD of\_IN it\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` And\_CC as\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ all\_DT yours\_PRP$ ,\_, you\_PRP have\_VBP a\_DT right\_NN to\_TO deal\_VB with\_IN it\_PRP as\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD .\_.

I\_PRP want\_VBP you\_PRP to\_TO give\_VB me\_PRP permission\_NN to\_TO read\_VB all\_DT Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS papers\_NNS and\_CC letters\_NNS .\_.

Believe\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, it\_PRP is\_VBZ no\_DT idle\_JJ curiosity\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP a\_DT motive\_NN of\_IN which\_WDT ,\_, be\_VB sure\_JJ ,\_, she\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB approved\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP them\_PRP all\_RB here\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP took\_VBD them\_PRP before\_IN we\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN all\_DT was\_VBD yours\_PRP$ ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN no\_DT strange\_JJ hand\_NN might\_MD touch\_VB them\_PRP --\_: no\_DT strange\_JJ eye\_NN look\_NN through\_IN words\_NNS into\_IN her\_PRP$ soul\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD keep\_VB them\_PRP ,\_, if\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD ;\_: even\_RB you\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB see\_VB them\_PRP yet\_RB ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD keep\_VB them\_PRP safe\_JJ .\_.

No\_DT word\_NN shall\_MD be\_VB lost\_VBN ;\_: and\_CC in\_IN the\_DT good\_JJ time\_NN I\_PRP shall\_MD give\_VB them\_PRP back\_RB to\_TO you\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP 's\_VBZ a\_DT hard\_JJ thing\_NN I\_PRP ask\_VBP ,\_, but\_CC you\_PRP will\_MD do\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, will\_MD you\_PRP not\_RB ,\_, for\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS sake\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

Arthur\_NNP spoke\_VBD out\_RP heartily\_RB ,\_, like\_IN his\_PRP$ old\_JJ self\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, you\_PRP may\_MD do\_VB what\_WP you\_PRP will\_MD .\_.

I\_PRP feel\_VBP that\_IN in\_IN saying\_VBG this\_DT I\_PRP am\_VBP doing\_VBG what\_WP my\_PRP$ dear\_RB one\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB approved\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB trouble\_NN you\_PRP with\_IN questions\_NNS till\_IN the\_DT time\_NN comes\_VBZ .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT old\_JJ Professor\_NNP stood\_VBD up\_RP as\_IN he\_PRP said\_VBD solemnly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` And\_CC you\_PRP are\_VBP right\_JJ .\_.

There\_EX will\_MD be\_VB pain\_NN for\_IN us\_PRP all\_DT ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB be\_VB all\_DT pain\_NN ,\_, nor\_CC will\_MD this\_DT pain\_NN be\_VB the\_DT last\_JJ .\_.

We\_PRP and\_CC you\_PRP too\_RB --\_: you\_PRP most\_JJS of\_IN all\_DT ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB boy\_NN --\_: will\_MD have\_VB to\_TO pass\_VB through\_IN the\_DT bitter\_JJ water\_NN before\_IN we\_PRP reach\_VBP the\_DT sweet\_JJ .\_.

But\_CC we\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB brave\_VB of\_IN heart\_NN and\_CC unselfish\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC do\_VB our\_PRP$ duty\_NN ,\_, and\_CC all\_DT will\_MD be\_VB well\_RB !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP slept\_VBD on\_IN a\_DT sofa\_NN in\_IN Arthur\_NNP 's\_POS room\_NN that\_IN night\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP did\_VBD not\_RB go\_VB to\_TO bed\_NN at\_IN all\_DT .\_.

He\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO and\_CC fro\_NN ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN patrolling\_NN the\_DT house\_NN ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD never\_RB out\_IN of\_IN sight\_NN of\_IN the\_DT room\_NN where\_WRB Lucy\_NNP lay\_VBD in\_IN her\_PRP$ coffin\_NN ,\_, strewn\_VBN with\_IN the\_DT wild\_JJ garlic\_JJ flowers\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT sent\_VBD ,\_, through\_IN the\_DT odour\_NN of\_IN lily\_NN and\_CC rose\_VBD ,\_, a\_DT heavy\_NN ,\_, overpowering\_VBG smell\_NN into\_IN the\_DT night\_NN .\_.

Mina\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP .\_.

22\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: In\_IN the\_DT train\_NN to\_TO Exeter\_NNP .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP sleeping\_VBG .\_.

It\_PRP seems\_VBZ only\_RB yesterday\_NN that\_IN the\_DT last\_JJ entry\_NN was\_VBD made\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC yet\_RB how\_WRB much\_RB between\_IN then\_RB ,\_, in\_IN Whitby\_NNP and\_CC all\_PDT the\_DT world\_NN before\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, Jonathan\_NNP away\_RB and\_CC no\_DT news\_NN of\_IN him\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC now\_RB ,\_, married\_VBN to\_TO Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, Jonathan\_NNP a\_DT solicitor\_NN ,\_, a\_DT partner\_NN ,\_, rich\_JJ ,\_, master\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ business\_NN ,\_, Mr.\_NNP Hawkins\_NNP dead\_VBD and\_CC buried\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC Jonathan\_NNP with\_IN another\_DT attack\_NN that\_WDT may\_MD harm\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

Some\_DT day\_NN he\_PRP may\_MD ask\_VB me\_PRP about\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

Down\_IN it\_PRP all\_DT goes\_VBZ .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP rusty\_JJ in\_IN my\_PRP$ shorthand\_NN --\_: see\_VBP what\_WP unexpected\_JJ prosperity\_NN does\_VBZ for\_IN us\_PRP --\_: so\_IN it\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB as\_RB well\_RB to\_TO freshen\_VB it\_PRP up\_RP again\_RB with\_IN an\_DT exercise\_NN anyhow\_NN ...\_: .\_.

The\_DT service\_NN was\_VBD very\_RB simple\_JJ and\_CC very\_RB solemn\_JJ .\_.

There\_EX were\_VBD only\_RB ourselves\_PRP and\_CC the\_DT servants\_NNS there\_RB ,\_, one\_CD or\_CC two\_CD old\_JJ friends\_NNS of\_IN his\_PRP$ from\_IN Exeter\_NNP ,\_, his\_PRP$ London\_NNP agent\_NN ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT gentleman\_NN representing\_VBG Sir\_NNP John\_NNP Paxton\_NNP ,\_, the\_DT President\_NNP of\_IN the\_DT Incorporated\_NNP Law\_NNP Society\_NNP .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP stood\_VBD hand\_NN in\_IN hand\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP felt\_VBD that\_IN our\_PRP$ best\_JJS and\_CC dearest\_JJS friend\_NN was\_VBD gone\_VBN from\_IN us\_PRP ...\_: .\_.

We\_PRP came\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO town\_NN quietly\_RB ,\_, taking\_VBG a\_DT '\_'' bus\_NN to\_TO Hyde\_NNP Park\_NNP Corner\_NN .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP thought\_VBD it\_PRP would\_MD interest\_VB me\_PRP to\_TO go\_VB into\_IN the\_DT Row\_NN for\_IN a\_DT while\_NN ,\_, so\_IN we\_PRP sat\_VBD down\_RB ;\_: but\_CC there\_EX were\_VBD very\_RB few\_JJ people\_NNS there\_RB ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP was\_VBD sad-looking\_JJ and\_CC desolate\_JJ to\_TO see\_VB so\_RB many\_JJ empty\_JJ chairs\_NNS .\_.

It\_PRP made\_VBD us\_PRP think\_VB of\_IN the\_DT empty\_JJ chair\_NN at\_IN home\_NN ;\_: so\_IN we\_PRP got\_VBD up\_RB and\_CC walked\_VBD down\_IN Piccadilly\_NNP .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP was\_VBD holding\_VBG me\_PRP by\_IN the\_DT arm\_NN ,\_, the\_DT way\_NN he\_PRP used\_VBD to\_TO in\_IN old\_JJ days\_NNS before\_IN I\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO school\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP felt\_VBD it\_PRP very\_RB improper\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN you\_PRP ca\_MD n't\_RB go\_VB on\_RP for\_IN some\_DT years\_NNS teaching\_NN etiquette\_NN and\_CC decorum\_NN to\_TO other\_JJ girls\_NNS without\_IN the\_DT pedantry\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP biting\_VBG into\_IN yourself\_PRP a\_DT bit\_NN ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP was\_VBD Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP was\_VBD my\_PRP$ husband\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP did\_VBD n't\_RB know\_VB anybody\_NN who\_WP saw\_VBD us\_PRP --\_: and\_CC we\_PRP did\_VBD n't\_RB care\_VB if\_IN they\_PRP did\_VBD --\_: so\_RB on\_IN we\_PRP walked\_VBD .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD looking\_VBG at\_IN a\_DT very\_RB beautiful\_JJ girl\_NN ,\_, in\_IN a\_DT big\_JJ cart-wheel\_JJ hat\_NN ,\_, sitting\_VBG in\_IN a\_DT victoria\_NN outside\_IN Guiliano\_NNP 's\_POS ,\_, when\_WRB I\_PRP felt\_VBD Jonathan\_NNP clutch\_VBP my\_PRP$ arm\_NN so\_RB tight\_JJ that\_IN he\_PRP hurt\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP said\_VBD under\_IN his\_PRP$ breath\_NN :\_: ``\_`` My\_PRP$ God\_NN !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP am\_VBP always\_RB anxious\_JJ about\_IN Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP fear\_VBP that\_IN some\_DT nervous\_JJ fit\_NN may\_MD upset\_VB him\_PRP again\_RB ;\_: so\_IN I\_PRP turned\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP quickly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC asked\_VBD him\_PRP what\_WP it\_PRP was\_VBD that\_WDT disturbed\_VBD him\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD very\_RB pale\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS seemed\_VBD bulging\_VBG out\_RP as\_RB ,\_, half\_NN in\_IN terror\_NN and\_CC half\_NN in\_IN amazement\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP gazed\_VBD at\_IN a\_DT tall\_JJ ,\_, thin\_JJ man\_NN ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT beaky\_JJ nose\_NN and\_CC black\_JJ moustache\_NN and\_CC pointed\_JJ beard\_NN ,\_, who\_WP was\_VBD also\_RB observing\_VBG the\_DT pretty\_JJ girl\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD looking\_VBG at\_IN her\_PRP so\_RB hard\_RB that\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB see\_VB either\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB I\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT good\_JJ view\_NN of\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

His\_PRP$ face\_NN was\_VBD not\_RB a\_DT good\_JJ face\_NN ;\_: it\_PRP was\_VBD hard\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC cruel\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC sensual\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ big\_JJ white\_JJ teeth\_NNS ,\_, that\_WDT looked\_VBD all\_PDT the\_DT whiter\_NN because\_IN his\_PRP$ lips\_NNS were\_VBD so\_RB red\_JJ ,\_, were\_VBD pointed\_VBN like\_IN an\_DT animal\_NN 's\_POS .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP kept\_VBD staring\_VBG at\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, till\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD afraid\_JJ he\_PRP would\_MD notice\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP feared\_VBD he\_PRP might\_MD take\_VB it\_PRP ill\_RB ,\_, he\_PRP looked\_VBD so\_RB fierce\_JJ and\_CC nasty\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP asked\_VBD Jonathan\_NNP why\_WRB he\_PRP was\_VBD disturbed\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP answered\_VBD ,\_, evidently\_RB thinking\_VBG that\_IN I\_PRP knew\_VBD as\_RB much\_JJ about\_IN it\_PRP as\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` Do\_VBP you\_PRP see\_VB who\_WP it\_PRP is\_VBZ ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` No\_UH ,\_, dear\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD ;\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB know\_VB him\_PRP ;\_: who\_WP is\_VBZ it\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

His\_PRP$ answer\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO shock\_VB and\_CC thrill\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD said\_VBD as\_IN if\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB know\_VB that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, Mina\_NNP ,\_, to\_TO whom\_WP he\_PRP was\_VBD speaking\_VBG :\_: --\_: ``\_`` It\_PRP is\_VBZ the\_DT man\_NN himself\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

The\_DT poor\_NN dear\_RB was\_VBD evidently\_RB terrified\_VBN at\_IN something\_NN --\_: very\_RB greatly\_RB terrified\_VBN ;\_: I\_PRP do\_VBP believe\_VB that\_IN if\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB had\_VBN me\_PRP to\_TO lean\_VB on\_IN and\_CC to\_TO support\_VB him\_PRP he\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB sunk\_VBN down\_RP .\_.

He\_PRP kept\_VBD staring\_VBG ;\_: a\_DT man\_NN came\_VBD out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT shop\_NN with\_IN a\_DT small\_JJ parcel\_NN ,\_, and\_CC gave\_VBD it\_PRP to\_TO the\_DT lady\_NN ,\_, who\_WP then\_RB drove\_VBD off\_RP .\_.

The\_DT dark\_JJ man\_NN kept\_VBD his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS fixed\_VBN on\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB the\_DT carriage\_NN moved\_VBD up\_RB Piccadilly\_RB he\_PRP followed\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ direction\_NN ,\_, and\_CC hailed\_VBD a\_DT hansom\_NN .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP kept\_VBD looking\_VBG after\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN to\_TO himself\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP believe\_VBP it\_PRP is\_VBZ the\_DT Count\_NN ,\_, but\_CC he\_PRP has\_VBZ grown\_VBN young\_JJ .\_.

My\_PRP$ God\_NNP ,\_, if\_IN this\_DT be\_VB so\_RB !\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, my\_PRP$ God\_NNP !\_.

my\_PRP$ God\_NNP !\_.

If\_IN I\_PRP only\_RB knew\_VBD !\_.

if\_IN I\_PRP only\_RB knew\_VBD !\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP was\_VBD distressing\_JJ himself\_PRP so\_RB much\_RB that\_IN I\_PRP feared\_VBD to\_TO keep\_VB his\_PRP$ mind\_NN on\_IN the\_DT subject\_NN by\_IN asking\_VBG him\_PRP any\_DT questions\_NNS ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP remained\_VBD silent\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP drew\_VBD him\_PRP away\_RB quietly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP ,\_, holding\_VBG my\_PRP$ arm\_NN ,\_, came\_VBD easily\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP walked\_VBD a\_DT little\_RB further\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB went\_VBD in\_IN and\_CC sat\_VBD for\_IN a\_DT while\_NN in\_IN the\_DT Green\_NNP Park\_NNP .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT hot\_JJ day\_NN for\_IN autumn\_NN ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT comfortable\_JJ seat\_NN in\_IN a\_DT shady\_JJ place\_NN .\_.

After\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ minutes\_NNS '\_POS staring\_VBG at\_IN nothing\_NN ,\_, Jonathan\_NNP 's\_POS eyes\_NNS closed\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP went\_VBD quietly\_RB into\_IN a\_DT sleep\_NN ,\_, with\_IN his\_PRP$ head\_NN on\_IN my\_PRP$ shoulder\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP thought\_VBD it\_PRP was\_VBD the\_DT best\_JJS thing\_NN for\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, so\_RB did\_VBD not\_RB disturb\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

In\_IN about\_RB twenty\_CD minutes\_NNS he\_PRP woke\_VBD up\_RP ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP quite\_RB cheerfully\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Why\_WRB ,\_, Mina\_NNP ,\_, have\_VBP I\_PRP been\_VBN asleep\_RB !\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, do\_VBP forgive\_VB me\_PRP for\_IN being\_VBG so\_RB rude\_JJ .\_.

Come\_VB ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP 'll\_MD have\_VB a\_DT cup\_NN of\_IN tea\_NN somewhere\_RB .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP had\_VBD evidently\_RB forgotten\_VBN all\_DT about\_IN the\_DT dark\_JJ stranger\_NN ,\_, as\_IN in\_IN his\_PRP$ illness\_NN he\_PRP had\_VBD forgotten\_VBN all\_DT that\_IN this\_DT episode\_NN had\_VBD reminded\_VBN him\_PRP of\_IN .\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB like\_VB this\_DT lapsing\_NN into\_IN forgetfulness\_NN ;\_: it\_PRP may\_MD make\_VB or\_CC continue\_VB some\_DT injury\_NN to\_TO the\_DT brain\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB ask\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN fear\_NN I\_PRP shall\_MD do\_VB more\_JJR harm\_NN than\_IN good\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP must\_MD somehow\_RB learn\_VB the\_DT facts\_NNS of\_IN his\_PRP$ journey\_NN abroad\_RB .\_.

The\_DT time\_NN is\_VBZ come\_VBN ,\_, I\_PRP fear\_VBP ,\_, when\_WRB I\_PRP must\_MD open\_VB that\_DT parcel\_NN ,\_, and\_CC know\_VB what\_WP is\_VBZ written\_VBN .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, you\_PRP will\_MD ,\_, I\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, forgive\_VBP me\_PRP if\_IN I\_PRP do\_VBP wrong\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ for\_IN your\_PRP$ own\_JJ dear\_RB sake\_NN .\_.

Later\_RB .\_.

--\_: A\_DT sad\_JJ home-coming\_NN in\_IN every\_DT way\_NN --\_: the\_DT house\_NN empty\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT dear\_RB soul\_NN who\_WP was\_VBD so\_RB good\_JJ to\_TO us\_PRP ;\_: Jonathan\_NNP still\_RB pale\_JJ and\_CC dizzy\_JJ under\_IN a\_DT slight\_JJ relapse\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ malady\_NN ;\_: and\_CC now\_RB a\_DT telegram\_NN from\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, whoever\_WP he\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB grieved\_VBN to\_TO hear\_VB that\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Westenra\_NNP died\_VBD five\_CD days\_NNS ago\_RB ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN Lucy\_NNP died\_VBD the\_DT day\_NN before\_IN yesterday\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP were\_VBD both\_DT buried\_VBN to-day\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Oh\_UH ,\_, what\_WP a\_DT wealth\_NN of\_IN sorrow\_NN in\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ words\_NNS !\_.

Poor\_NNP Mrs.\_NNP Westenra\_NNP !\_.

poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP !\_.

Gone\_VBN ,\_, gone\_VBN ,\_, never\_RB to\_TO return\_VB to\_TO us\_PRP !\_.

And\_CC poor\_JJ ,\_, poor\_JJ Arthur\_NNP ,\_, to\_TO have\_VB lost\_VBN such\_JJ sweetness\_NN out\_IN of\_IN his\_PRP$ life\_NN !\_.

God\_NNP help\_VB us\_PRP all\_DT to\_TO bear\_VB our\_PRP$ troubles\_NNS .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

22\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: It\_PRP is\_VBZ all\_RB over\_RB .\_.

Arthur\_NNP has\_VBZ gone\_VBN back\_RB to\_TO Ring\_NN ,\_, and\_CC has\_VBZ taken\_VBN Quincey\_NNP Morris\_NNP with\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

What\_WP a\_DT fine\_JJ fellow\_NN is\_VBZ Quincey\_NNP !\_.

I\_PRP believe\_VBP in\_IN my\_PRP$ heart\_NN of\_IN hearts\_NNS that\_IN he\_PRP suffered\_VBD as\_RB much\_JJ about\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS death\_NN as\_IN any\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC he\_PRP bore\_VBD himself\_PRP through\_IN it\_PRP like\_IN a\_DT moral\_JJ Viking\_JJ .\_.

If\_IN America\_NNP can\_MD go\_VB on\_IN breeding\_VBG men\_NNS like\_IN that\_DT ,\_, she\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB a\_DT power\_NN in\_IN the\_DT world\_NN indeed\_RB .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP is\_VBZ lying\_VBG down\_RP ,\_, having\_VBG a\_DT rest\_NN preparatory\_JJ to\_TO his\_PRP$ journey\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP goes\_VBZ over\_RP to\_TO Amsterdam\_NNP to-night\_NN ,\_, but\_CC says\_VBZ he\_PRP returns\_VBZ to-morrow\_JJ night\_NN ;\_: that\_IN he\_PRP only\_RB wants\_VBZ to\_TO make\_VB some\_DT arrangements\_NNS which\_WDT can\_MD only\_RB be\_VB made\_VBN personally\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ to\_TO stop\_VB with\_IN me\_PRP then\_RB ,\_, if\_IN he\_PRP can\_MD ;\_: he\_PRP says\_VBZ he\_PRP has\_VBZ work\_NN to\_TO do\_VB in\_IN London\_NNP which\_WDT may\_MD take\_VB him\_PRP some\_DT time\_NN .\_.

Poor\_NNP old\_JJ fellow\_NN !\_.

I\_PRP fear\_VBP that\_IN the\_DT strain\_NN of\_IN the\_DT past\_JJ week\_NN has\_VBZ broken\_VBN down\_RP even\_RB his\_PRP$ iron\_NN strength\_NN .\_.

All\_PDT the\_DT time\_NN of\_IN the\_DT burial\_NN he\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB ,\_, putting\_VBG some\_DT terrible\_JJ restraint\_NN on\_IN himself\_PRP .\_.

When\_WRB it\_PRP was\_VBD all\_RB over\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP were\_VBD standing\_VBG beside\_IN Arthur\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP ,\_, poor\_JJ fellow\_NN ,\_, was\_VBD speaking\_VBG of\_IN his\_PRP$ part\_NN in\_IN the\_DT operation\_NN where\_WRB his\_PRP$ blood\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN transfused\_VBN to\_TO his\_PRP$ Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS veins\_NNS ;\_: I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP 's\_POS face\_NN grow\_VBP white\_JJ and\_CC purple\_JJ by\_IN turns\_NNS .\_.

Arthur\_NNP was\_VBD saying\_VBG that\_IN he\_PRP felt\_VBD since\_IN then\_RB as\_IN if\_IN they\_PRP two\_CD had\_VBD been\_VBN really\_RB married\_VBN and\_CC that\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD his\_PRP$ wife\_NN in\_IN the\_DT sight\_NN of\_IN God\_NNP .\_.

None\_NN of\_IN us\_PRP said\_VBD a\_DT word\_NN of\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ operations\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC none\_NN of\_IN us\_PRP ever\_RB shall\_MD .\_.

Arthur\_NNP and\_CC Quincey\_NNP went\_VBD away\_RB together\_RB to\_TO the\_DT station\_NN ,\_, and\_CC Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP came\_VBD on\_IN here\_RB .\_.

The\_DT moment\_NN we\_PRP were\_VBD alone\_RB in\_IN the\_DT carriage\_NN he\_PRP gave\_VBD way\_NN to\_TO a\_DT regular\_JJ fit\_NN of\_IN hysterics\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ denied\_VBN to\_TO me\_PRP since\_IN that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD hysterics\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC insisted\_VBD that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD only\_RB his\_PRP$ sense\_NN of\_IN humour\_NN asserting\_VBG itself\_PRP under\_IN very\_RB terrible\_JJ conditions\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP laughed\_VBD till\_IN he\_PRP cried\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO draw\_VB down\_RP the\_DT blinds\_NNS lest\_IN any\_DT one\_NN should\_MD see\_VB us\_PRP and\_CC misjudge\_NN ;\_: and\_CC then\_RB he\_PRP cried\_VBD ,\_, till\_IN he\_PRP laughed\_VBD again\_RB ;\_: and\_CC laughed\_VBD and\_CC cried\_VBD together\_RB ,\_, just\_RB as\_IN a\_DT woman\_NN does\_VBZ .\_.

I\_PRP tried\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB stern\_JJ with\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN one\_CD is\_VBZ to\_TO a\_DT woman\_NN under\_IN the\_DT circumstances\_NNS ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP had\_VBD no\_DT effect\_NN .\_.

Men\_NN and\_CC women\_NNS are\_VBP so\_RB different\_JJ in\_IN manifestations\_NNS of\_IN nervous\_JJ strength\_NN or\_CC weakness\_NN !\_.

Then\_RB when\_WRB his\_PRP$ face\_NN grew\_VBD grave\_JJ and\_CC stern\_JJ again\_RB I\_PRP asked\_VBD him\_PRP why\_WRB his\_PRP$ mirth\_NN ,\_, and\_CC why\_WRB at\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT time\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ reply\_NN was\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT way\_NN characteristic\_JJ of\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD logical\_JJ and\_CC forceful\_JJ and\_CC mysterious\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Ah\_UH ,\_, you\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB comprehend\_VB ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP .\_.

Do\_VBP not\_RB think\_VB that\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB sad\_JJ ,\_, though\_IN I\_NN laugh\_NN .\_.

See\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP have\_VBP cried\_VBN even\_RB when\_WRB the\_DT laugh\_NN did\_VBD choke\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

But\_CC no\_DT more\_RBR think\_VB that\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP all\_DT sorry\_JJ when\_WRB I\_PRP cry\_VBP ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT laugh\_NN he\_PRP come\_VBD just\_RB the\_DT same\_JJ .\_.

Keep\_VB it\_PRP always\_RB with\_IN you\_PRP that\_DT laughter\_NN who\_WP knock\_VBP at\_IN your\_PRP$ door\_NN and\_CC say\_VB ,\_, `\_`` May\_MD I\_PRP come\_VB in\_IN ?\_. '\_''

is\_VBZ not\_RB the\_DT true\_JJ laughter\_NN .\_.

No\_DT !\_.

he\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT king\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP come\_VB when\_WRB and\_CC how\_WRB he\_PRP like\_IN .\_.

He\_PRP ask\_VBP no\_DT person\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP choose\_VB no\_DT time\_NN of\_IN suitability\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP say\_VBP ,\_, `\_`` I\_PRP am\_VBP here\_RB .\_. '\_''

Behold\_NNP ,\_, in\_IN example\_NN I\_PRP grieve\_VBP my\_PRP$ heart\_NN out\_RP for\_IN that\_DT so\_RB sweet\_JJ young\_JJ girl\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP give\_VBP my\_PRP$ blood\_NN for\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, though\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP old\_JJ and\_CC worn\_JJ ;\_: I\_PRP give\_VBP my\_PRP$ time\_NN ,\_, my\_PRP$ skill\_NN ,\_, my\_PRP$ sleep\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP let\_VBP my\_PRP$ other\_JJ sufferers\_NNS want\_VBP that\_IN so\_IN she\_PRP may\_MD have\_VB all\_DT .\_.

And\_CC yet\_RB I\_PRP can\_MD laugh\_NN at\_IN her\_PRP$ very\_JJ grave\_NN --\_: laugh\_NN when\_WRB the\_DT clay\_NN from\_IN the\_DT spade\_NN of\_IN the\_DT sexton\_NN drop\_NN upon\_IN her\_PRP$ coffin\_NN and\_CC say\_VB `\_`` Thud\_NNP !\_.

thud\_VB !\_. '\_''

to\_TO my\_PRP$ heart\_NN ,\_, till\_IN it\_PRP send\_VB back\_RP the\_DT blood\_NN from\_IN my\_PRP$ cheek\_NN .\_.

My\_PRP$ heart\_NN bleed\_VB for\_IN that\_DT poor\_JJ boy\_NN --\_: that\_IN dear\_RB boy\_NN ,\_, so\_RB of\_IN the\_DT age\_NN of\_IN mine\_JJ own\_JJ boy\_NN had\_VBD I\_PRP been\_VBN so\_RB blessed\_VBN that\_IN he\_PRP live\_VB ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN his\_PRP$ hair\_NN and\_CC eyes\_VBZ the\_DT same\_JJ .\_.

There\_RB ,\_, you\_PRP know\_VBP now\_RB why\_WRB I\_PRP love\_VBP him\_PRP so\_RB .\_.

And\_CC yet\_RB when\_WRB he\_PRP say\_VBP things\_NNS that\_WDT touch\_VBP my\_PRP$ husband-heart\_NN to\_TO the\_DT quick\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC make\_VB my\_PRP$ father-heart\_JJ yearn\_NN to\_TO him\_PRP as\_IN to\_TO no\_DT other\_JJ man\_NN --\_: not\_RB even\_RB to\_TO you\_PRP ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, for\_IN we\_PRP are\_VBP more\_JJR level\_NN in\_IN experiences\_NNS than\_IN father\_NN and\_CC son\_NN --\_: yet\_RB even\_RB at\_IN such\_JJ moment\_NN King\_NNP Laugh\_NNP he\_PRP come\_VB to\_TO me\_PRP and\_CC shout\_VB and\_CC bellow\_VB in\_IN my\_PRP$ ear\_NN ,\_, `\_`` Here\_RB I\_PRP am\_VBP !\_.

here\_RB I\_PRP am\_VBP !\_. '\_''

till\_IN the\_DT blood\_NN come\_VBP dance\_NN back\_RB and\_CC bring\_VB some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT sunshine\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP carry\_VBP with\_IN him\_PRP to\_TO my\_PRP$ cheek\_NN .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, it\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT strange\_JJ world\_NN ,\_, a\_DT sad\_JJ world\_NN ,\_, a\_DT world\_NN full\_JJ of\_IN miseries\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC woes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC troubles\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC yet\_RB when\_WRB King\_NNP Laugh\_NNP come\_VBP he\_PRP make\_VB them\_PRP all\_DT dance\_NN to\_TO the\_DT tune\_NN he\_PRP play\_VBP .\_.

Bleeding\_VBG hearts\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC dry\_JJ bones\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT churchyard\_NN ,\_, and\_CC tears\_NNS that\_WDT burn\_VBP as\_IN they\_PRP fall\_VBP --\_: all\_DT dance\_NN together\_RB to\_TO the\_DT music\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP make\_VB with\_IN that\_DT smileless\_JJ mouth\_NN of\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

And\_CC believe\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, that\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ good\_JJ to\_TO come\_VB ,\_, and\_CC kind\_NN .\_.

Ah\_UH ,\_, we\_PRP men\_NNS and\_CC women\_NNS are\_VBP like\_IN ropes\_NNS drawn\_VBN tight\_RB with\_IN strain\_NN that\_WDT pull\_VBP us\_PRP different\_JJ ways\_NNS .\_.

Then\_RB tears\_NNS come\_VBP ;\_: and\_CC ,\_, like\_IN the\_DT rain\_NN on\_IN the\_DT ropes\_NNS ,\_, they\_PRP brace\_VBP us\_PRP up\_IN ,\_, until\_IN perhaps\_RB the\_DT strain\_NN become\_VB too\_RB great\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP break\_VBP .\_.

But\_CC King\_NNP Laugh\_NNP he\_PRP come\_VBD like\_IN the\_DT sunshine\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP ease\_VB off\_RP the\_DT strain\_NN again\_RB ;\_: and\_CC we\_PRP bear\_VBP to\_TO go\_VB on\_RP with\_IN our\_PRP$ labour\_NN ,\_, what\_WP it\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB like\_VB to\_TO wound\_VB him\_PRP by\_IN pretending\_VBG not\_RB to\_TO see\_VB his\_PRP$ idea\_NN ;\_: but\_CC ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB yet\_RB understand\_VB the\_DT cause\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ laughter\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP asked\_VBD him\_PRP .\_.

As\_IN he\_PRP answered\_VBD me\_PRP his\_PRP$ face\_NN grew\_VBD stern\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP said\_VBD in\_IN quite\_RB a\_DT different\_JJ tone\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, it\_PRP was\_VBD the\_DT grim\_JJ irony\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP all\_DT --\_: this\_DT so\_RB lovely\_JJ lady\_NN garlanded\_VBN with\_IN flowers\_NNS ,\_, that\_WDT looked\_VBD so\_RB fair\_JJ as\_IN life\_NN ,\_, till\_IN one\_CD by\_IN one\_CD we\_PRP wondered\_VBD if\_IN she\_PRP were\_VBD truly\_RB dead\_JJ ;\_: she\_PRP laid\_VBD in\_IN that\_DT so\_RB fine\_JJ marble\_NN house\_NN in\_IN that\_DT lonely\_JJ churchyard\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB rest\_NN so\_RB many\_JJ of\_IN her\_PRP$ kin\_NN ,\_, laid\_VBN there\_RB with\_IN the\_DT mother\_NN who\_WP loved\_VBD her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC whom\_WP she\_PRP loved\_VBD ;\_: and\_CC that\_IN sacred\_JJ bell\_NN going\_VBG `\_`` Toll\_NN !\_.

toll\_NN !\_.

toll\_NN !\_. '\_''

so\_RB sad\_JJ and\_CC slow\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC those\_DT holy\_JJ men\_NNS ,\_, with\_IN the\_DT white\_JJ garments\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT angel\_NN ,\_, pretending\_VBG to\_TO read\_VB books\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC yet\_RB all\_PDT the\_DT time\_NN their\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS never\_RB on\_IN the\_DT page\_NN ;\_: and\_CC all\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP with\_IN the\_DT bowed\_VBN head\_NN .\_.

And\_CC all\_DT for\_IN what\_WP ?\_.

She\_PRP is\_VBZ dead\_JJ ;\_: so\_RB !\_.

Is\_VBZ it\_PRP not\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Well\_UH ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT life\_NN of\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, Professor\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` I\_PRP ca\_MD n't\_RB see\_VB anything\_NN to\_TO laugh\_NN at\_IN in\_IN all\_DT that\_DT .\_.

Why\_WRB ,\_, your\_PRP$ explanation\_NN makes\_VBZ it\_PRP a\_DT harder\_JJR puzzle\_NN than\_IN before\_RB .\_.

But\_CC even\_RB if\_IN the\_DT burial\_NN service\_NN was\_VBD comic\_JJ ,\_, what\_WP about\_IN poor\_JJ Art\_NN and\_CC his\_PRP$ trouble\_NN ?\_.

Why\_WRB ,\_, his\_PRP$ heart\_NN was\_VBD simply\_RB breaking\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Just\_RB so\_RB .\_.

Said\_VBD he\_PRP not\_RB that\_IN the\_DT transfusion\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ blood\_NN to\_TO her\_PRP$ veins\_NNS had\_VBD made\_VBN her\_PRP truly\_RB his\_PRP$ bride\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Yes\_UH ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT sweet\_JJ and\_CC comforting\_JJ idea\_NN for\_IN him\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Quite\_RB so\_RB .\_.

But\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT difficulty\_NN ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP .\_.

If\_IN so\_RB that\_IN ,\_, then\_RB what\_WP about\_IN the\_DT others\_NNS ?\_.

Ho\_NNP ,\_, ho\_NN !\_.

Then\_RB this\_DT so\_RB sweet\_JJ maid\_NN is\_VBZ a\_DT polyandrist\_NN ,\_, and\_CC me\_PRP ,\_, with\_IN my\_PRP$ poor\_JJ wife\_NN dead\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC alive\_JJ by\_IN Church\_NNP 's\_POS law\_NN ,\_, though\_IN no\_DT wits\_NNS ,\_, all\_DT gone\_VBN --\_: even\_RB I\_PRP ,\_, who\_WP am\_VBP faithful\_JJ husband\_NN to\_TO this\_DT now-no-wife\_NN ,\_, am\_VBP bigamist\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB see\_VB where\_WRB the\_DT joke\_NN comes\_VBZ in\_IN there\_EX either\_CC !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP said\_VBD ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB feel\_VB particularly\_RB pleased\_JJ with\_IN him\_PRP for\_IN saying\_VBG such\_JJ things\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP laid\_VBD his\_PRP$ hand\_NN on\_IN my\_PRP$ arm\_NN ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, forgive\_VB me\_PRP if\_IN I\_NN pain\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP showed\_VBD not\_RB my\_PRP$ feeling\_NN to\_TO others\_NNS when\_WRB it\_PRP would\_MD wound\_VB ,\_, but\_CC only\_RB to\_TO you\_PRP ,\_, my\_PRP$ old\_JJ friend\_NN ,\_, whom\_WP I\_PRP can\_MD trust\_VB .\_.

If\_IN you\_PRP could\_MD have\_VB looked\_VBN into\_IN my\_PRP$ very\_JJ heart\_NN then\_RB when\_WRB I\_PRP want\_VBP to\_TO laugh\_NN ;\_: if\_IN you\_PRP could\_MD have\_VB done\_VBN so\_RB when\_WRB the\_DT laugh\_NN arrived\_VBD ;\_: if\_IN you\_PRP could\_MD do\_VB so\_RB now\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB King\_NNP Laugh\_NNP have\_VBP pack\_VB up\_RP his\_PRP$ crown\_NN ,\_, and\_CC all\_PDT that\_DT is\_VBZ to\_TO him\_PRP --\_: for\_IN he\_PRP go\_VB far\_RB ,\_, far\_RB away\_RB from\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC for\_IN a\_DT long\_JJ ,\_, long\_JJ time\_NN --\_: maybe\_RB you\_PRP would\_MD perhaps\_RB pity\_NN me\_PRP the\_DT most\_JJS of\_IN all\_DT .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP was\_VBD touched\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT tenderness\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ tone\_NN ,\_, and\_CC asked\_VBD why\_WRB .\_.

``\_`` Because\_IN I\_PRP know\_VBP !\_. ''\_''

And\_CC now\_RB we\_PRP are\_VBP all\_DT scattered\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC for\_IN many\_JJ a\_DT long\_JJ day\_NN loneliness\_NN will\_MD sit\_VB over\_IN our\_PRP$ roofs\_NNS with\_IN brooding\_JJ wings\_NNS .\_.

Lucy\_NNP lies\_VBZ in\_IN the\_DT tomb\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ kin\_NN ,\_, a\_DT lordly\_JJ death-house\_NN in\_IN a\_DT lonely\_JJ churchyard\_NN ,\_, away\_RB from\_IN teeming\_VBG London\_NNP ;\_: where\_WRB the\_DT air\_NN is\_VBZ fresh\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT sun\_NN rises\_VBZ over\_IN Hampstead\_NNP Hill\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC where\_WRB wild\_JJ flowers\_NNS grow\_VBP of\_IN their\_PRP$ own\_JJ accord\_NN .\_.

So\_RB I\_PRP can\_MD finish\_VB this\_DT diary\_NN ;\_: and\_CC God\_NNP only\_RB knows\_VBZ if\_IN I\_PRP shall\_MD ever\_RB begin\_VB another\_DT .\_.

If\_IN I\_PRP do\_VBP ,\_, or\_CC if\_IN I\_PRP even\_RB open\_VBP this\_DT again\_RB ,\_, it\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB to\_TO deal\_VB with\_IN different\_JJ people\_NNS and\_CC different\_JJ themes\_NNS ;\_: for\_IN here\_RB at\_IN the\_DT end\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB the\_DT romance\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ life\_NN is\_VBZ told\_VBN ,\_, ere\_NN I\_PRP go\_VBP back\_RB to\_TO take\_VB up\_RP the\_DT thread\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ life-work\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP say\_VBP sadly\_RB and\_CC without\_IN hope\_NN ,\_, ``\_`` FINIS\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` The\_DT Westminster\_NNP Gazette\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' 25\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

A\_DT HAMPSTEAD\_NNP MYSTERY\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT neighbourhood\_NN of\_IN Hampstead\_NNP is\_VBZ just\_RB at\_IN present\_JJ exercised\_VBN with\_IN a\_DT series\_NN of\_IN events\_NNS which\_WDT seem\_VBP to\_TO run\_VB on\_IN lines\_NNS parallel\_JJ to\_TO those\_DT of\_IN what\_WP was\_VBD known\_VBN to\_TO the\_DT writers\_NNS of\_IN headlines\_NNS as\_IN ``\_`` The\_DT Kensington\_NNP Horror\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' or\_CC ``\_`` The\_DT Stabbing\_NNP Woman\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' or\_CC ``\_`` The\_DT Woman\_NNP in\_IN Black\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

During\_IN the\_DT past\_JJ two\_CD or\_CC three\_CD days\_NNS several\_JJ cases\_NNS have\_VBP occurred\_VBN of\_IN young\_JJ children\_NNS straying\_VBG from\_IN home\_NN or\_CC neglecting\_VBG to\_TO return\_VB from\_IN their\_PRP$ playing\_NN on\_IN the\_DT Heath\_NNP .\_.

In\_IN all\_PDT these\_DT cases\_NNS the\_DT children\_NNS were\_VBD too\_RB young\_JJ to\_TO give\_VB any\_DT properly\_RB intelligible\_JJ account\_NN of\_IN themselves\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT consensus\_NN of\_IN their\_PRP$ excuses\_NNS is\_VBZ that\_IN they\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN with\_IN a\_DT ``\_`` bloofer\_NN lady\_NN .\_. ''\_''

It\_PRP has\_VBZ always\_RB been\_VBN late\_RB in\_IN the\_DT evening\_NN when\_WRB they\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN missed\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC on\_IN two\_CD occasions\_NNS the\_DT children\_NNS have\_VBP not\_RB been\_VBN found\_VBN until\_IN early\_RB in\_IN the\_DT following\_JJ morning\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ generally\_RB supposed\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT neighbourhood\_NN that\_WDT ,\_, as\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ child\_NN missed\_VBN gave\_VBD as\_IN his\_PRP$ reason\_NN for\_IN being\_VBG away\_RB that\_IN a\_DT ``\_`` bloofer\_NN lady\_NN ''\_'' had\_VBD asked\_VBN him\_PRP to\_TO come\_VB for\_IN a\_DT walk\_NN ,\_, the\_DT others\_NNS had\_VBD picked\_VBN up\_RP the\_DT phrase\_NN and\_CC used\_VBD it\_PRP as\_IN occasion\_NN served\_VBD .\_.

This\_DT is\_VBZ the\_DT more\_RBR natural\_JJ as\_IN the\_DT favourite\_JJ game\_NN of\_IN the\_DT little\_JJ ones\_NNS at\_IN present\_NN is\_VBZ luring\_VBG each\_DT other\_JJ away\_RB by\_IN wiles\_NNS .\_.

A\_DT correspondent\_NN writes\_VBZ us\_PRP that\_DT to\_TO see\_VB some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT tiny\_JJ tots\_NNS pretending\_VBG to\_TO be\_VB the\_DT ``\_`` bloofer\_NN lady\_NN ''\_'' is\_VBZ supremely\_RB funny\_JJ .\_.

Some\_DT of\_IN our\_PRP$ caricaturists\_NNS might\_MD ,\_, he\_PRP says\_VBZ ,\_, take\_VB a\_DT lesson\_NN in\_IN the\_DT irony\_NN of\_IN grotesque\_JJ by\_IN comparing\_VBG the\_DT reality\_NN and\_CC the\_DT picture\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ only\_RB in\_IN accordance\_NN with\_IN general\_JJ principles\_NNS of\_IN human\_JJ nature\_NN that\_IN the\_DT ``\_`` bloofer\_NN lady\_NN ''\_'' should\_MD be\_VB the\_DT popular\_JJ rôle\_NN at\_IN these\_DT al\_NNP fresco\_NN performances\_NNS .\_.

Our\_PRP$ correspondent\_NN naïvely\_RB says\_VBZ that\_IN even\_RB Ellen\_NNP Terry\_NNP could\_MD not\_RB be\_VB so\_RB winningly\_RB attractive\_JJ as\_IN some\_DT of\_IN these\_DT grubby-faced\_JJ little\_JJ children\_NNS pretend\_VBP --\_: and\_CC even\_RB imagine\_VB themselves\_PRP --\_: to\_TO be\_VB .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, possibly\_RB a\_DT serious\_JJ side\_NN to\_TO the\_DT question\_NN ,\_, for\_IN some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT children\_NNS ,\_, indeed\_RB all\_DT who\_WP have\_VBP been\_VBN missed\_VBN at\_IN night\_NN ,\_, have\_VBP been\_VBN slightly\_RB torn\_VBN or\_CC wounded\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT throat\_NN .\_.

The\_DT wounds\_NNS seem\_VBP such\_JJ as\_IN might\_MD be\_VB made\_VBN by\_IN a\_DT rat\_NN or\_CC a\_DT small\_JJ dog\_NN ,\_, and\_CC although\_IN of\_IN not\_RB much\_JJ importance\_NN individually\_RB ,\_, would\_MD tend\_VB to\_TO show\_VB that\_IN whatever\_WDT animal\_NN inflicts\_VBZ them\_PRP has\_VBZ a\_DT system\_NN or\_CC method\_NN of\_IN its\_PRP$ own\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT police\_NN of\_IN the\_DT division\_NN have\_VBP been\_VBN instructed\_VBN to\_TO keep\_VB a\_DT sharp\_JJ look-out\_NN for\_IN straying\_VBG children\_NNS ,\_, especially\_RB when\_WRB very\_RB young\_JJ ,\_, in\_IN and\_CC around\_IN Hampstead\_NNP Heath\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC for\_IN any\_DT stray\_JJ dog\_NN which\_WDT may\_MD be\_VB about\_IN .\_.

``\_`` The\_DT Westminster\_NNP Gazette\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' 25\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

Extra\_JJ Special\_JJ .\_.

THE\_DT HAMPSTEAD\_NNP HORROR\_NN .\_.

ANOTHER\_NNP CHILD\_NNP INJURED\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT ``\_`` Bloofer\_NNP Lady\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

We\_PRP have\_VBP just\_RB received\_VBN intelligence\_NN that\_IN another\_DT child\_NN ,\_, missed\_VBN last\_JJ night\_NN ,\_, was\_VBD only\_RB discovered\_VBN late\_RB in\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN under\_IN a\_DT furze\_JJ bush\_NN at\_IN the\_DT Shooter\_NNP 's\_POS Hill\_NNP side\_NN of\_IN Hampstead\_NNP Heath\_NNP ,\_, which\_WDT is\_VBZ ,\_, perhaps\_RB ,\_, less\_RBR frequented\_JJ than\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ parts\_NNS .\_.

It\_PRP has\_VBZ the\_DT same\_JJ tiny\_JJ wound\_NN in\_IN the\_DT throat\_NN as\_IN has\_VBZ been\_VBN noticed\_VBN in\_IN other\_JJ cases\_NNS .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD terribly\_RB weak\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC looked\_VBD quite\_RB emaciated\_JJ .\_.

It\_PRP too\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB partially\_RB restored\_VBN ,\_, had\_VBD the\_DT common\_JJ story\_NN to\_TO tell\_VB of\_IN being\_VBG lured\_VBN away\_RB by\_IN the\_DT ``\_`` bloofer\_NN lady\_NN .\_. ''\_''

CHAPTER\_NNP XIV\_NNP MINA\_NNP HARKER\_NNP 'S\_POS JOURNAL\_NN 23\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Jonathan\_NNP is\_VBZ better\_JJR after\_IN a\_DT bad\_JJ night\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP so\_RB glad\_JJ that\_IN he\_PRP has\_VBZ plenty\_NN of\_IN work\_NN to\_TO do\_VB ,\_, for\_IN that\_DT keeps\_VBZ his\_PRP$ mind\_NN off\_IN the\_DT terrible\_JJ things\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC oh\_UH ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP rejoiced\_VBN that\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB now\_RB weighed\_VBN down\_RP with\_IN the\_DT responsibility\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ new\_JJ position\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP knew\_VBD he\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB true\_JJ to\_TO himself\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC now\_RB how\_WRB proud\_JJ I\_PRP am\_VBP to\_TO see\_VB my\_PRP$ Jonathan\_NNP rising\_VBG to\_TO the\_DT height\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ advancement\_NN and\_CC keeping\_VBG pace\_NN in\_IN all\_DT ways\_NNS with\_IN the\_DT duties\_NNS that\_WDT come\_VBP upon\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB away\_RB all\_DT day\_NN till\_IN late\_RB ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP said\_VBD he\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB lunch\_VB at\_IN home\_NN .\_.

My\_PRP$ household\_NN work\_NN is\_VBZ done\_VBN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP shall\_MD take\_VB his\_PRP$ foreign\_JJ journal\_NN ,\_, and\_CC lock\_VB myself\_PRP up\_RP in\_IN my\_PRP$ room\_NN and\_CC read\_VB it\_PRP ...\_: 24\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP had\_VBD n't\_RB the\_DT heart\_NN to\_TO write\_VB last\_JJ night\_NN ;\_: that\_IN terrible\_JJ record\_NN of\_IN Jonathan\_NNP 's\_POS upset\_NN me\_PRP so\_RB .\_.

Poor\_NNP dear\_RB !\_.

How\_WRB he\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB suffered\_VBN ,\_, whether\_IN it\_PRP be\_VB true\_JJ or\_CC only\_JJ imagination\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP wonder\_VBP if\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ any\_DT truth\_NN in\_IN it\_PRP at\_IN all\_DT .\_.

Did\_VBD he\_PRP get\_VB his\_PRP$ brain\_NN fever\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB write\_VB all\_PDT those\_DT terrible\_JJ things\_NNS ,\_, or\_CC had\_VBD he\_PRP some\_DT cause\_NN for\_IN it\_PRP all\_DT ?\_.

I\_PRP suppose\_VBP I\_PRP shall\_MD never\_RB know\_VB ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP dare\_VBP not\_RB open\_VB the\_DT subject\_NN to\_TO him\_PRP ...\_: .\_.

And\_CC yet\_RB that\_DT man\_NN we\_PRP saw\_VBD yesterday\_NN !\_.

He\_PRP seemed\_VBD quite\_RB certain\_JJ of\_IN him\_PRP ...\_: .\_.

Poor\_NNP fellow\_NN !\_.

I\_PRP suppose\_VBP it\_PRP was\_VBD the\_DT funeral\_JJ upset\_NN him\_PRP and\_CC sent\_VBD his\_PRP$ mind\_NN back\_RB on\_IN some\_DT train\_NN of\_IN thought\_NN ...\_: .\_.

He\_PRP believes\_VBZ it\_PRP all\_DT himself\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP remember\_VBP how\_WRB on\_IN our\_PRP$ wedding-day\_JJ he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` Unless\_IN some\_DT solemn\_JJ duty\_NN come\_VBN upon\_IN me\_PRP to\_TO go\_VB back\_RB to\_TO the\_DT bitter\_JJ hours\_NNS ,\_, asleep\_JJ or\_CC awake\_JJ ,\_, mad\_JJ or\_CC sane\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

There\_EX seems\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB through\_IN it\_PRP all\_PDT some\_DT thread\_NN of\_IN continuity\_NN ...\_: .\_.

That\_DT fearful\_JJ Count\_NN was\_VBD coming\_VBG to\_TO London\_NNP ...\_: .\_.

If\_IN it\_PRP should\_MD be\_VB ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP came\_VBD to\_TO London\_NNP ,\_, with\_IN his\_PRP$ teeming\_VBG millions\_NNS ...\_: .\_.

There\_EX may\_MD be\_VB a\_DT solemn\_JJ duty\_NN ;\_: and\_CC if\_IN it\_PRP come\_VBP we\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB shrink\_VB from\_IN it\_PRP ...\_: .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB prepared\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD get\_VB my\_PRP$ typewriter\_NN this\_DT very\_JJ hour\_NN and\_CC begin\_VB transcribing\_VBG .\_.

Then\_RB we\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB ready\_JJ for\_IN other\_JJ eyes\_NNS if\_IN required\_VBN .\_.

And\_CC if\_IN it\_PRP be\_VB wanted\_VBN ;\_: then\_RB ,\_, perhaps\_RB ,\_, if\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP ready\_JJ ,\_, poor\_JJ Jonathan\_NNP may\_MD not\_RB be\_VB upset\_VBN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD speak\_VB for\_IN him\_PRP and\_CC never\_RB let\_VB him\_PRP be\_VB troubled\_VBN or\_CC worried\_VBN with\_IN it\_PRP at\_IN all\_DT .\_.

If\_IN ever\_RB Jonathan\_NNP quite\_RB gets\_VBZ over\_IN the\_DT nervousness\_NN he\_PRP may\_MD want\_VB to\_TO tell\_VB me\_PRP of\_IN it\_PRP all\_DT ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP can\_MD ask\_VB him\_PRP questions\_NNS and\_CC find\_VB out\_RP things\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC see\_VB how\_WRB I\_PRP may\_MD comfort\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

Letter\_NNP ,\_, Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP to\_TO Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` 24\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

-LRB-\_-LRB- Confidence\_NN -RRB-\_-RRB- ``\_`` Dear\_NNP Madam\_NNP ,\_, --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP pray\_VBP you\_PRP to\_TO pardon\_NN my\_PRP$ writing\_NN ,\_, in\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP so\_RB far\_RB friend\_NN as\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP sent\_VBD to\_TO you\_PRP sad\_JJ news\_NN of\_IN Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP Westenra\_NNP 's\_POS death\_NN .\_.

By\_IN the\_DT kindness\_NN of\_IN Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP empowered\_VBN to\_TO read\_VB her\_PRP$ letters\_NNS and\_CC papers\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP deeply\_RB concerned\_JJ about\_IN certain\_JJ matters\_NNS vitally\_RB important\_JJ .\_.

In\_IN them\_PRP I\_PRP find\_VBP some\_DT letters\_NNS from\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, which\_WDT show\_VBP how\_WRB great\_JJ friends\_NNS you\_PRP were\_VBD and\_CC how\_WRB you\_PRP love\_VBP her\_PRP .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, by\_IN that\_DT love\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP implore\_VBP you\_PRP ,\_, help\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ for\_IN others\_NNS '\_POS good\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP ask\_VBP --\_: to\_TO redress\_VB great\_JJ wrong\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO lift\_VB much\_JJ and\_CC terrible\_JJ troubles\_NNS --\_: that\_WDT may\_MD be\_VB more\_RBR great\_JJ than\_IN you\_PRP can\_MD know\_VB .\_.

May\_MD it\_PRP be\_VB that\_IN I\_PRP see\_VBP you\_PRP ?\_.

You\_PRP can\_MD trust\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP friend\_NN of\_IN Dr.\_NNP John\_NNP Seward\_NNP and\_CC of\_IN Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP -LRB-\_-LRB- that\_DT was\_VBD Arthur\_NNP of\_IN Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP -RRB-\_-RRB- .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD keep\_VB it\_PRP private\_JJ for\_IN the\_DT present\_JJ from\_IN all\_DT .\_.

I\_PRP should\_MD come\_VB to\_TO Exeter\_NNP to\_TO see\_VB you\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB if\_IN you\_PRP tell\_VBP me\_PRP I\_PRP am\_VBP privilege\_NN to\_TO come\_VB ,\_, and\_CC where\_WRB and\_CC when\_WRB .\_.

I\_PRP implore\_VBP your\_PRP$ pardon\_NN ,\_, madam\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP read\_VBN your\_PRP$ letters\_NNS to\_TO poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC know\_VB how\_WRB good\_JJ you\_PRP are\_VBP and\_CC how\_WRB your\_PRP$ husband\_NN suffer\_VBP ;\_: so\_IN I\_PRP pray\_VBP you\_PRP ,\_, if\_IN it\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB ,\_, enlighten\_VB him\_PRP not\_RB ,\_, lest\_IN it\_PRP may\_MD harm\_VB .\_.

Again\_RB your\_PRP$ pardon\_NN ,\_, and\_CC forgive\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

``\_`` Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

Telegram\_NN ,\_, Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP to\_TO Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` 25\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Come\_VB to-day\_JJ by\_IN quarter-past\_NN ten\_CD train\_NN if\_IN you\_PRP can\_MD catch\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

Can\_MD see\_VB you\_PRP any\_DT time\_NN you\_PRP call\_VBP .\_.

``\_`` Wilhelmina\_NNP Harker\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

MINA\_NNP HARKER\_NNP 'S\_POS JOURNAL\_NN .\_.

25\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB help\_VB feeling\_NN terribly\_RB excited\_VBD as\_IN the\_DT time\_NN draws\_VBZ near\_IN for\_IN the\_DT visit\_NN of\_IN Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, for\_IN somehow\_RB I\_PRP expect\_VBP that\_IN it\_PRP will\_MD throw\_VB some\_DT light\_NN upon\_IN Jonathan\_NNP 's\_POS sad\_JJ experience\_NN ;\_: and\_CC as\_IN he\_PRP attended\_VBD poor\_JJ dear\_RB Lucy\_NNP in\_IN her\_PRP$ last\_JJ illness\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP can\_MD tell\_VB me\_PRP all\_DT about\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

That\_DT is\_VBZ the\_DT reason\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ coming\_VBG ;\_: it\_PRP is\_VBZ concerning\_VBG Lucy\_NNP and\_CC her\_PRP$ sleep-walking\_NN ,\_, and\_CC not\_RB about\_IN Jonathan\_NNP .\_.

Then\_RB I\_PRP shall\_MD never\_RB know\_VB the\_DT real\_JJ truth\_NN now\_RB !\_.

How\_WRB silly\_JJ I\_PRP am\_VBP .\_.

That\_DT awful\_JJ journal\_NN gets\_VBZ hold\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ imagination\_NN and\_CC tinges\_NNS everything\_NN with\_IN something\_NN of\_IN its\_PRP$ own\_JJ colour\_NN .\_.

Of\_IN course\_NN it\_PRP is\_VBZ about\_IN Lucy\_NNP .\_.

That\_DT habit\_NN came\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO the\_DT poor\_JJ dear\_RB ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN awful\_JJ night\_NN on\_IN the\_DT cliff\_NN must\_MD have\_VB made\_VBN her\_PRP$ ill\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD almost\_RB forgotten\_VBN in\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ affairs\_NNS how\_WRB ill\_JJ she\_PRP was\_VBD afterwards\_RB .\_.

She\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB told\_VBD him\_PRP of\_IN her\_PRP$ sleep-walking\_JJ adventure\_NN on\_IN the\_DT cliff\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN I\_PRP knew\_VBD all\_DT about\_IN it\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC now\_RB he\_PRP wants\_VBZ me\_PRP to\_TO tell\_VB him\_PRP what\_WP she\_PRP knows\_VBZ ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN he\_PRP may\_MD understand\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP hope\_VBP I\_PRP did\_VBD right\_RB in\_IN not\_RB saying\_VBG anything\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP to\_TO Mrs.\_NNP Westenra\_NNP ;\_: I\_PRP should\_MD never\_RB forgive\_VB myself\_PRP if\_IN any\_DT act\_NN of\_IN mine\_NN ,\_, were\_VBD it\_PRP even\_RB a\_DT negative\_JJ one\_CD ,\_, brought\_VBD harm\_NN on\_IN poor\_NN dear\_RB Lucy\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP hope\_VBP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP will\_MD not\_RB blame\_VB me\_PRP ;\_: I\_PRP have\_VBP had\_VBN so\_RB much\_JJ trouble\_NN and\_CC anxiety\_NN of\_IN late\_RB that\_IN I\_PRP feel\_VBP I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB bear\_VB more\_RBR just\_RB at\_IN present\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP suppose\_VBP a\_DT cry\_NN does\_VBZ us\_PRP all\_DT good\_JJ at\_IN times\_NNS --\_: clears\_VBZ the\_DT air\_NN as\_IN other\_JJ rain\_NN does\_VBZ .\_.

Perhaps\_RB it\_PRP was\_VBD reading\_VBG the\_DT journal\_NN yesterday\_NN that\_WDT upset\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB Jonathan\_NNP went\_VBD away\_RB this\_DT morning\_NN to\_TO stay\_VB away\_RB from\_IN me\_PRP a\_DT whole\_JJ day\_NN and\_CC night\_NN ,\_, the\_DT first\_JJ time\_NN we\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN parted\_VBN since\_IN our\_PRP$ marriage\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP hope\_VB the\_DT dear\_RB fellow\_JJ will\_MD take\_VB care\_NN of\_IN himself\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC that\_DT nothing\_NN will\_MD occur\_VB to\_TO upset\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ two\_CD o'clock\_RB ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT doctor\_NN will\_MD be\_VB here\_RB soon\_RB now\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD say\_VB nothing\_NN of\_IN Jonathan\_NNP 's\_POS journal\_NN unless\_IN he\_PRP asks\_VBZ me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP so\_RB glad\_JJ I\_PRP have\_VBP type-written\_VBN out\_RP my\_PRP$ own\_JJ journal\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN ,\_, in\_IN case\_NN he\_PRP asks\_VBZ about\_IN Lucy\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP can\_MD hand\_VB it\_PRP to\_TO him\_PRP ;\_: it\_PRP will\_MD save\_VB much\_RB questioning\_VBG .\_.

Later\_RB .\_.

--\_: He\_PRP has\_VBZ come\_VBN and\_CC gone\_VBN .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, what\_WP a\_DT strange\_JJ meeting\_NN ,\_, and\_CC how\_WRB it\_PRP all\_DT makes\_VBZ my\_PRP$ head\_NN whirl\_NN round\_NN !\_.

I\_PRP feel\_VBP like\_IN one\_CD in\_IN a\_DT dream\_NN .\_.

Can\_MD it\_PRP be\_VB all\_DT possible\_JJ ,\_, or\_CC even\_RB a\_DT part\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP ?\_.

If\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB read\_VBN Jonathan\_NNP 's\_POS journal\_NN first\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP should\_MD never\_RB have\_VB accepted\_VBN even\_RB a\_DT possibility\_NN .\_.

Poor\_NNP ,\_, poor\_JJ ,\_, dear\_RB Jonathan\_NNP !\_.

How\_WRB he\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB suffered\_VBN .\_.

Please\_VB the\_DT good\_JJ God\_NNP ,\_, all\_PDT this\_DT may\_MD not\_RB upset\_VB him\_PRP again\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD try\_VB to\_TO save\_VB him\_PRP from\_IN it\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB even\_RB a\_DT consolation\_NN and\_CC a\_DT help\_NN to\_TO him\_PRP --\_: terrible\_JJ though\_IN it\_PRP be\_VB and\_CC awful\_JJ in\_IN its\_PRP$ consequences\_NNS --\_: to\_TO know\_VB for\_IN certain\_JJ that\_IN his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS and\_CC ears\_NNS and\_CC brain\_NN did\_VBD not\_RB deceive\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ all\_DT true\_JJ .\_.

It\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB that\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ the\_DT doubt\_NN which\_WDT haunts\_VBZ him\_PRP ;\_: that\_IN when\_WRB the\_DT doubt\_NN is\_VBZ removed\_VBN ,\_, no\_DT matter\_NN which\_WDT --\_: waking\_VBG or\_CC dreaming\_VBG --\_: may\_MD prove\_VB the\_DT truth\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB more\_RBR satisfied\_JJ and\_CC better\_RB able\_JJ to\_TO bear\_VB the\_DT shock\_NN .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP must\_MD be\_VB a\_DT good\_JJ man\_NN as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN a\_DT clever\_JJ one\_CD if\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ Arthur\_NNP 's\_POS friend\_NN and\_CC Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS ,\_, and\_CC if\_IN they\_PRP brought\_VBD him\_PRP all\_PDT the\_DT way\_NN from\_IN Holland\_NNP to\_TO look\_VB after\_IN Lucy\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP feel\_VBP from\_IN having\_VBG seen\_VBN him\_PRP that\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ good\_JJ and\_CC kind\_NN and\_CC of\_IN a\_DT noble\_JJ nature\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB he\_PRP comes\_VBZ to-morrow\_NN I\_PRP shall\_MD ask\_VB him\_PRP about\_IN Jonathan\_NNP ;\_: and\_CC then\_RB ,\_, please\_VB God\_NNP ,\_, all\_PDT this\_DT sorrow\_NN and\_CC anxiety\_NN may\_MD lead\_VB to\_TO a\_DT good\_JJ end\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP used\_VBD to\_TO think\_VB I\_PRP would\_MD like\_VB to\_TO practise\_VB interviewing\_VBG ;\_: Jonathan\_NNP 's\_POS friend\_NN on\_IN ``\_`` The\_DT Exeter\_NNP News\_NNP ''\_'' told\_VBD him\_PRP that\_DT memory\_NN was\_VBD everything\_NN in\_IN such\_JJ work\_NN --\_: that\_IN you\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB able\_JJ to\_TO put\_VB down\_RP exactly\_RB almost\_RB every\_DT word\_NN spoken\_VBN ,\_, even\_RB if\_IN you\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO refine\_VB some\_DT of\_IN it\_PRP afterwards\_RB .\_.

Here\_RB was\_VBD a\_DT rare\_JJ interview\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP shall\_MD try\_VB to\_TO record\_VB it\_PRP verbatim\_JJ .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD half-past\_JJ two\_CD o'clock\_RB when\_WRB the\_DT knock\_VBP came\_VBD .\_.

I\_PRP took\_VBD my\_PRP$ courage\_NN à\_FW deux\_FW mains\_NNS and\_CC waited\_VBD .\_.

In\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ minutes\_NNS Mary\_NNP opened\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, and\_CC announced\_VBD ``\_`` Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP rose\_VBD and\_CC bowed\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP came\_VBD towards\_IN me\_PRP ;\_: a\_DT man\_NN of\_IN medium\_NN weight\_NN ,\_, strongly\_RB built\_VBN ,\_, with\_IN his\_PRP$ shoulders\_NNS set\_VBD back\_RB over\_IN a\_DT broad\_JJ ,\_, deep\_JJ chest\_NN and\_CC a\_DT neck\_NN well\_RB balanced\_VBN on\_IN the\_DT trunk\_NN as\_IN the\_DT head\_NN is\_VBZ on\_IN the\_DT neck\_NN .\_.

The\_DT poise\_NN of\_IN the\_DT head\_NN strikes\_VBZ one\_CD at\_IN once\_RB as\_RB indicative\_JJ of\_IN thought\_NN and\_CC power\_NN ;\_: the\_DT head\_NN is\_VBZ noble\_JJ ,\_, well-sized\_JJ ,\_, broad\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC large\_JJ behind\_IN the\_DT ears\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT face\_NN ,\_, clean-shaven\_JJ ,\_, shows\_VBZ a\_DT hard\_JJ ,\_, square\_JJ chin\_NN ,\_, a\_DT large\_JJ ,\_, resolute\_JJ ,\_, mobile\_JJ mouth\_NN ,\_, a\_DT good-sized\_JJ nose\_NN ,\_, rather\_RB straight\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC with\_IN quick\_JJ ,\_, sensitive\_JJ nostrils\_NNS ,\_, that\_WDT seem\_VBP to\_TO broaden\_VB as\_IN the\_DT big\_JJ ,\_, bushy\_JJ brows\_NNS come\_VBP down\_RB and\_CC the\_DT mouth\_NN tightens\_VBZ .\_.

The\_DT forehead\_NN is\_VBZ broad\_JJ and\_CC fine\_JJ ,\_, rising\_VBG at\_IN first\_JJ almost\_RB straight\_RB and\_CC then\_RB sloping\_VBG back\_RB above\_IN two\_CD bumps\_NNS or\_CC ridges\_NNS wide\_JJ apart\_RB ;\_: such\_PDT a\_DT forehead\_NN that\_IN the\_DT reddish\_JJ hair\_NN can\_MD not\_RB possibly\_RB tumble\_VB over\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC falls\_VBZ naturally\_RB back\_RB and\_CC to\_TO the\_DT sides\_NNS .\_.

Big\_JJ ,\_, dark\_JJ blue\_JJ eyes\_NNS are\_VBP set\_VBN widely\_RB apart\_RB ,\_, and\_CC are\_VBP quick\_JJ and\_CC tender\_JJ or\_CC stern\_JJ with\_IN the\_DT man\_NN 's\_POS moods\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP ,\_, is\_VBZ it\_PRP not\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP bowed\_VBD assent\_NN .\_.

``\_`` That\_DT was\_VBD Miss\_NNP Mina\_NNP Murray\_NNP ?\_. ''\_''

Again\_RB I\_PRP assented\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` It\_PRP is\_VBZ Mina\_NNP Murray\_NNP that\_IN I\_PRP came\_VBD to\_TO see\_VB that\_DT was\_VBD friend\_NN of\_IN that\_DT poor\_JJ dear\_RB child\_NN Lucy\_NNP Westenra\_NNP .\_.

Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, it\_PRP is\_VBZ on\_IN account\_NN of\_IN the\_DT dead\_NN I\_PRP come\_VBP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Sir\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` you\_PRP could\_MD have\_VB no\_DT better\_JJR claim\_NN on\_IN me\_PRP than\_IN that\_IN you\_PRP were\_VBD a\_DT friend\_NN and\_CC helper\_NN of\_IN Lucy\_NNP Westenra\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

And\_CC I\_PRP held\_VBD out\_RP my\_PRP$ hand\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP took\_VBD it\_PRP and\_CC said\_VBD tenderly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT friend\_NN of\_IN that\_DT poor\_JJ lily\_NN girl\_NN must\_MD be\_VB good\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP had\_VBD yet\_RB to\_TO learn\_VB --\_: --\_: ''\_'' He\_PRP finished\_VBD his\_PRP$ speech\_NN with\_IN a\_DT courtly\_JJ bow\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP asked\_VBD him\_PRP what\_WP it\_PRP was\_VBD that\_IN he\_PRP wanted\_VBD to\_TO see\_VB me\_PRP about\_IN ,\_, so\_IN he\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB began\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP have\_VBP read\_VBN your\_PRP$ letters\_NNS to\_TO Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP .\_.

Forgive\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO begin\_VB to\_TO inquire\_VB somewhere\_RB ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD none\_NN to\_TO ask\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP that\_IN you\_PRP were\_VBD with\_IN her\_PRP at\_IN Whitby\_NNP .\_.

She\_PRP sometimes\_RB kept\_VBD a\_DT diary\_NN --\_: you\_PRP need\_MD not\_RB look\_VB surprised\_JJ ,\_, Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ;\_: it\_PRP was\_VBD begun\_VBN after\_IN you\_PRP had\_VBD left\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD in\_IN imitation\_NN of\_IN you\_PRP --\_: and\_CC in\_IN that\_DT diary\_NN she\_PRP traces\_NNS by\_IN inference\_NN certain\_JJ things\_NNS to\_TO a\_DT sleep-walking\_NN in\_IN which\_WDT she\_PRP puts\_VBZ down\_RP that\_IN you\_PRP saved\_VBD her\_PRP .\_.

In\_IN great\_JJ perplexity\_NN then\_RB I\_PRP come\_VBP to\_TO you\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC ask\_VB you\_PRP out\_IN of\_IN your\_PRP$ so\_RB much\_JJ kindness\_NN to\_TO tell\_VB me\_PRP all\_DT of\_IN it\_PRP that\_IN you\_PRP can\_MD remember\_VB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP can\_MD tell\_VB you\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP think\_VBP ,\_, Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, all\_DT about\_IN it\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Ah\_UH ,\_, then\_RB you\_PRP have\_VBP good\_JJ memory\_NN for\_IN facts\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN details\_NNS ?\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB always\_RB so\_RB with\_IN young\_JJ ladies\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` No\_UH ,\_, doctor\_NN ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP wrote\_VBD it\_PRP all\_DT down\_RP at\_IN the\_DT time\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP can\_MD show\_VB it\_PRP to\_TO you\_PRP if\_IN you\_PRP like\_VBP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB grateful\_JJ ;\_: you\_PRP will\_MD do\_VB me\_PRP much\_JJ favour\_NN .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB resist\_VB the\_DT temptation\_NN of\_IN mystifying\_VBG him\_PRP a\_DT bit\_NN --\_: I\_PRP suppose\_VBP it\_PRP is\_VBZ some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT taste\_NN of\_IN the\_DT original\_JJ apple\_NN that\_WDT remains\_VBZ still\_RB in\_IN our\_PRP$ mouths\_NNS --\_: so\_IN I\_PRP handed\_VBD him\_PRP the\_DT shorthand\_NN diary\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP took\_VBD it\_PRP with\_IN a\_DT grateful\_JJ bow\_NN ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` May\_MD I\_PRP read\_VB it\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` If\_IN you\_PRP wish\_VBP ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP answered\_VBD as\_RB demurely\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD .\_.

He\_PRP opened\_VBD it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC for\_IN an\_DT instant\_NN his\_PRP$ face\_NN fell\_VBD .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP stood\_VBD up\_RB and\_CC bowed\_VBN .\_.

``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, you\_PRP so\_RB clever\_JJ woman\_NN !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP knew\_VBD long\_RB that\_IN Mr.\_NNP Jonathan\_NNP was\_VBD a\_DT man\_NN of\_IN much\_JJ thankfulness\_NN ;\_: but\_CC see\_VBP ,\_, his\_PRP$ wife\_NN have\_VB all\_PDT the\_DT good\_JJ things\_NNS .\_.

And\_CC will\_MD you\_PRP not\_RB so\_RB much\_JJ honour\_NN me\_PRP and\_CC so\_RB help\_VB me\_PRP as\_IN to\_TO read\_VB it\_PRP for\_IN me\_PRP ?\_.

Alas\_NNS !\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP not\_RB the\_DT shorthand\_NN .\_. ''\_''

By\_IN this\_DT time\_NN my\_PRP$ little\_JJ joke\_NN was\_VBD over\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP was\_VBD almost\_RB ashamed\_JJ ;\_: so\_IN I\_PRP took\_VBD the\_DT typewritten\_JJ copy\_NN from\_IN my\_PRP$ workbasket\_NN and\_CC handed\_VBD it\_PRP to\_TO him\_PRP .\_.

``\_`` Forgive\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB help\_VB it\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN thinking\_VBG that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD of\_IN dear\_RB Lucy\_NNP that\_IN you\_PRP wished\_VBD to\_TO ask\_VB ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB that\_IN you\_PRP might\_MD not\_RB have\_VB time\_NN to\_TO wait\_VB --\_: not\_RB on\_IN my\_PRP$ account\_NN ,\_, but\_CC because\_IN I\_PRP know\_VBP your\_PRP$ time\_NN must\_MD be\_VB precious\_JJ --\_: I\_PRP have\_VBP written\_VBN it\_PRP out\_RP on\_IN the\_DT typewriter\_NN for\_IN you\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP took\_VBD it\_PRP and\_CC his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS glistened\_VBN .\_.

``\_`` You\_PRP are\_VBP so\_RB good\_JJ ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` And\_CC may\_MD I\_PRP read\_VB it\_PRP now\_RB ?\_.

I\_PRP may\_MD want\_VB to\_TO ask\_VB you\_PRP some\_DT things\_NNS when\_WRB I\_PRP have\_VBP read\_VBN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` By\_IN all\_DT means\_NNS ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` read\_VB it\_PRP over\_IN whilst\_IN I\_PRP order\_VBP lunch\_NN ;\_: and\_CC then\_RB you\_PRP can\_MD ask\_VB me\_PRP questions\_NNS whilst\_IN we\_PRP eat\_VBP .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP bowed\_VBD and\_CC settled\_VBD himself\_PRP in\_IN a\_DT chair\_NN with\_IN his\_PRP$ back\_NN to\_TO the\_DT light\_NN ,\_, and\_CC became\_VBD absorbed\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT papers\_NNS ,\_, whilst\_IN I\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO see\_VB after\_IN lunch\_NN chiefly\_RB in\_IN order\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP might\_MD not\_RB be\_VB disturbed\_VBN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP came\_VBD back\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP found\_VBD him\_PRP walking\_VBG hurriedly\_RB up\_IN and\_CC down\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, his\_PRP$ face\_NN all\_DT ablaze\_NN with\_IN excitement\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP rushed\_VBD up\_RP to\_TO me\_PRP and\_CC took\_VBD me\_PRP by\_IN both\_DT hands\_NNS .\_.

``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` how\_WRB can\_MD I\_PRP say\_VB what\_WP I\_PRP owe\_VBP to\_TO you\_PRP ?\_.

This\_DT paper\_NN is\_VBZ as\_IN sunshine\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP opens\_VBZ the\_DT gate\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP daze\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP dazzle\_NN ,\_, with\_IN so\_RB much\_JJ light\_NN ,\_, and\_CC yet\_RB clouds\_VBZ roll\_NN in\_IN behind\_IN the\_DT light\_NN every\_DT time\_NN .\_.

But\_CC that\_IN you\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB ,\_, can\_MD not\_RB ,\_, comprehend\_NN .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP grateful\_JJ to\_TO you\_PRP ,\_, you\_PRP so\_RB clever\_JJ woman\_NN .\_.

Madam\_NNP ''\_'' --\_: he\_PRP said\_VBD this\_DT very\_RB solemnly\_RB --\_: ``\_`` if\_IN ever\_RB Abraham\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP can\_MD do\_VB anything\_NN for\_IN you\_PRP or\_CC yours\_PRP$ ,\_, I\_PRP trust\_VBP you\_PRP will\_MD let\_VB me\_PRP know\_VB .\_.

It\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB pleasure\_NN and\_CC delight\_NN if\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD serve\_VB you\_PRP as\_IN a\_DT friend\_NN ;\_: as\_IN a\_DT friend\_NN ,\_, but\_CC all\_DT I\_PRP have\_VBP ever\_RB learned\_VBN ,\_, all\_DT I\_PRP can\_MD ever\_RB do\_VB ,\_, shall\_MD be\_VB for\_IN you\_PRP and\_CC those\_DT you\_PRP love\_VBP .\_.

There\_EX are\_VBP darknesses\_NNS in\_IN life\_NN ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX are\_VBP lights\_NNS ;\_: you\_PRP are\_VBP one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT lights\_NNS .\_.

You\_PRP will\_MD have\_VB happy\_JJ life\_NN and\_CC good\_JJ life\_NN ,\_, and\_CC your\_PRP$ husband\_NN will\_MD be\_VB blessed\_VBN in\_IN you\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` But\_CC ,\_, doctor\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP praise\_VBP me\_PRP too\_RB much\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC --\_: and\_CC you\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB know\_VB me\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Not\_RB know\_VB you\_PRP --\_: I\_PRP ,\_, who\_WP am\_VBP old\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC who\_WP have\_VBP studied\_VBN all\_DT my\_PRP$ life\_NN men\_NNS and\_CC women\_NNS ;\_: I\_PRP ,\_, who\_WP have\_VBP made\_VBN my\_PRP$ specialty\_NN the\_DT brain\_NN and\_CC all\_DT that\_WDT belongs\_VBZ to\_TO him\_PRP and\_CC all\_DT that\_WDT follow\_VBP from\_IN him\_PRP !\_.

And\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP read\_VBN your\_PRP$ diary\_NN that\_IN you\_PRP have\_VBP so\_RB goodly\_RB written\_VBN for\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC which\_WDT breathes\_VBZ out\_RP truth\_NN in\_IN every\_DT line\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP ,\_, who\_WP have\_VBP read\_VBN your\_PRP$ so\_RB sweet\_JJ letter\_NN to\_TO poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP of\_IN your\_PRP$ marriage\_NN and\_CC your\_PRP$ trust\_NN ,\_, not\_RB know\_VB you\_PRP !\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, good\_JJ women\_NNS tell\_VBP all\_DT their\_PRP$ lives\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC by\_IN day\_NN and\_CC by\_IN hour\_NN and\_CC by\_IN minute\_NN ,\_, such\_JJ things\_NNS that\_IN angels\_NNS can\_MD read\_VB ;\_: and\_CC we\_PRP men\_NNS who\_WP wish\_VBP to\_TO know\_VB have\_VB in\_IN us\_PRP something\_NN of\_IN angels\_NNS '\_POS eyes\_NNS .\_.

Your\_PRP$ husband\_NN is\_VBZ noble\_JJ nature\_NN ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP are\_VBP noble\_JJ too\_RB ,\_, for\_IN you\_PRP trust\_NN ,\_, and\_CC trust\_NN can\_MD not\_RB be\_VB where\_WRB there\_EX is\_VBZ mean\_JJ nature\_NN .\_.

And\_CC your\_PRP$ husband\_NN --\_: tell\_VB me\_PRP of\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

Is\_VBZ he\_PRP quite\_RB well\_RB ?\_.

Is\_VBZ all\_DT that\_DT fever\_NN gone\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC is\_VBZ he\_PRP strong\_JJ and\_CC hearty\_JJ ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP saw\_VBD here\_RB an\_DT opening\_NN to\_TO ask\_VB him\_PRP about\_IN Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` He\_PRP was\_VBD almost\_RB recovered\_VBN ,\_, but\_CC he\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN greatly\_RB upset\_VBN by\_IN Mr.\_NNP Hawkins\_NNP 's\_POS death\_NN .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP interrupted\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, yes\_UH ,\_, I\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, I\_PRP know\_VBP .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP read\_VBN your\_PRP$ last\_JJ two\_CD letters\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP suppose\_VBP this\_DT upset\_NN him\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN when\_WRB we\_PRP were\_VBD in\_IN town\_NN on\_IN Thursday\_NNP last\_JJ he\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN shock\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` A\_DT shock\_NN ,\_, and\_CC after\_IN brain\_NN fever\_NN so\_RB soon\_RB !\_.

That\_DT was\_VBD not\_RB good\_JJ .\_.

What\_WDT kind\_NN of\_IN a\_DT shock\_NN was\_VBD it\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` He\_PRP thought\_VBD he\_PRP saw\_VBD some\_DT one\_NN who\_WP recalled\_VBD something\_NN terrible\_JJ ,\_, something\_NN which\_WDT led\_VBD to\_TO his\_PRP$ brain\_NN fever\_NN .\_. ''\_''

And\_CC here\_RB the\_DT whole\_JJ thing\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO overwhelm\_VB me\_PRP in\_IN a\_DT rush\_NN .\_.

The\_DT pity\_NN for\_IN Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, the\_DT horror\_NN which\_WDT he\_PRP experienced\_VBD ,\_, the\_DT whole\_JJ fearful\_JJ mystery\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ diary\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT fear\_NN that\_WDT has\_VBZ been\_VBN brooding\_VBG over\_IN me\_PRP ever\_RB since\_IN ,\_, all\_DT came\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT tumult\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP suppose\_VBP I\_PRP was\_VBD hysterical\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP threw\_VBD myself\_PRP on\_IN my\_PRP$ knees\_NNS and\_CC held\_VBD up\_RP my\_PRP$ hands\_NNS to\_TO him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC implored\_VBD him\_PRP to\_TO make\_VB my\_PRP$ husband\_NN well\_RB again\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP took\_VBD my\_PRP$ hands\_NNS and\_CC raised\_VBD me\_PRP up\_RP ,\_, and\_CC made\_VBD me\_PRP sit\_VB on\_IN the\_DT sofa\_NN ,\_, and\_CC sat\_VBD by\_IN me\_PRP ;\_: he\_PRP held\_VBD my\_PRP$ hand\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP with\_IN ,\_, oh\_UH ,\_, such\_JJ infinite\_JJ sweetness\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` My\_PRP$ life\_NN is\_VBZ a\_DT barren\_JJ and\_CC lonely\_JJ one\_CD ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB full\_JJ of\_IN work\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB had\_VBN much\_JJ time\_NN for\_IN friendships\_NNS ;\_: but\_CC since\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN summoned\_VBN to\_TO here\_RB by\_IN my\_PRP$ friend\_NN John\_NNP Seward\_NNP I\_PRP have\_VBP known\_VBN so\_RB many\_JJ good\_JJ people\_NNS and\_CC seen\_VBN such\_JJ nobility\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP feel\_VBP more\_RBR than\_IN ever\_RB --\_: and\_CC it\_PRP has\_VBZ grown\_VBN with\_IN my\_PRP$ advancing\_VBG years\_NNS --\_: the\_DT loneliness\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ life\_NN .\_.

Believe\_NNP ,\_, me\_PRP ,\_, then\_RB ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP come\_VBP here\_RB full\_JJ of\_IN respect\_NN for\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP have\_VBP given\_VBN me\_PRP hope\_VBP --\_: hope\_NN ,\_, not\_RB in\_IN what\_WP I\_PRP am\_VBP seeking\_VBG of\_IN ,\_, but\_CC that\_IN there\_EX are\_VBP good\_JJ women\_NNS still\_RB left\_VBD to\_TO make\_VB life\_NN happy\_JJ --\_: good\_JJ women\_NNS ,\_, whose\_WP$ lives\_NNS and\_CC whose\_WP$ truths\_NNS may\_MD make\_VB good\_JJ lesson\_NN for\_IN the\_DT children\_NNS that\_WDT are\_VBP to\_TO be\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP glad\_JJ ,\_, glad\_JJ ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD here\_RB be\_VB of\_IN some\_DT use\_NN to\_TO you\_PRP ;\_: for\_IN if\_IN your\_PRP$ husband\_NN suffer\_VB ,\_, he\_PRP suffer\_VBP within\_IN the\_DT range\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ study\_NN and\_CC experience\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP promise\_VBP you\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP will\_MD gladly\_RB do\_VB all\_DT for\_IN him\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD --\_: all\_DT to\_TO make\_VB his\_PRP$ life\_NN strong\_JJ and\_CC manly\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC your\_PRP$ life\_NN a\_DT happy\_JJ one\_CD .\_.

Now\_RB you\_PRP must\_MD eat\_VB .\_.

You\_PRP are\_VBP overwrought\_JJ and\_CC perhaps\_RB over-anxious\_JJ .\_.

Husband\_NNP Jonathan\_NNP would\_MD not\_RB like\_VB to\_TO see\_VB you\_PRP so\_RB pale\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC what\_WP he\_PRP like\_IN not\_RB where\_WRB he\_PRP love\_NN ,\_, is\_VBZ not\_RB to\_TO his\_PRP$ good\_NN .\_.

Therefore\_RB for\_IN his\_PRP$ sake\_NN you\_PRP must\_MD eat\_VB and\_CC smile\_VB .\_.

You\_PRP have\_VBP told\_VBN me\_PRP all\_DT about\_IN Lucy\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB now\_RB we\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB speak\_VB of\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, lest\_IN it\_PRP distress\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD stay\_VB in\_IN Exeter\_NNP to-night\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP want\_VBP to\_TO think\_VB much\_RB over\_IN what\_WP you\_PRP have\_VBP told\_VBN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB I\_PRP have\_VBP thought\_VBN I\_PRP will\_MD ask\_VB you\_PRP questions\_NNS ,\_, if\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD .\_.

And\_CC then\_RB ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, you\_PRP will\_MD tell\_VB me\_PRP of\_IN husband\_NN Jonathan\_NNP 's\_POS trouble\_NN so\_RB far\_RB as\_IN you\_PRP can\_MD ,\_, but\_CC not\_RB yet\_RB .\_.

You\_PRP must\_MD eat\_VB now\_RB ;\_: afterwards\_RB you\_PRP shall\_MD tell\_VB me\_PRP all\_DT .\_. ''\_''

After\_IN lunch\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB we\_PRP went\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO the\_DT drawing-room\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` And\_CC now\_RB tell\_VB me\_PRP all\_DT about\_IN him\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

When\_WRB it\_PRP came\_VBD to\_TO speaking\_VBG to\_TO this\_DT great\_JJ learned\_VBN man\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO fear\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP would\_MD think\_VB me\_PRP a\_DT weak\_JJ fool\_NN ,\_, and\_CC Jonathan\_NNP a\_DT madman\_NN --\_: that\_IN journal\_NN is\_VBZ all\_RB so\_RB strange\_JJ --\_: and\_CC I\_PRP hesitated\_VBD to\_TO go\_VB on\_RP .\_.

But\_CC he\_PRP was\_VBD so\_RB sweet\_JJ and\_CC kind\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP had\_VBD promised\_VBN to\_TO help\_VB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP trusted\_VBD him\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, what\_WP I\_PRP have\_VBP to\_TO tell\_VB you\_PRP is\_VBZ so\_RB queer\_JJ that\_IN you\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB laugh\_NN at\_IN me\_PRP or\_CC at\_IN my\_PRP$ husband\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN since\_IN yesterday\_NN in\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN fever\_NN of\_IN doubt\_NN ;\_: you\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB kind\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC not\_RB think\_VB me\_PRP foolish\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP even\_RB half\_NN believed\_VBD some\_DT very\_RB strange\_JJ things\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP reassured\_VBD me\_PRP by\_IN his\_PRP$ manner\_NN as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN his\_PRP$ words\_NNS when\_WRB he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, if\_IN you\_PRP only\_RB know\_VB how\_WRB strange\_JJ is\_VBZ the\_DT matter\_NN regarding\_VBG which\_WDT I\_PRP am\_VBP here\_RB ,\_, it\_PRP is\_VBZ you\_PRP who\_WP would\_MD laugh\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP learned\_VBN not\_RB to\_TO think\_VB little\_JJ of\_IN any\_DT one\_NN 's\_POS belief\_NN ,\_, no\_DT matter\_NN how\_WRB strange\_JJ it\_PRP be\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP tried\_VBN to\_TO keep\_VB an\_DT open\_JJ mind\_NN ;\_: and\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB the\_DT ordinary\_JJ things\_NNS of\_IN life\_NN that\_WDT could\_MD close\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT strange\_JJ things\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT extraordinary\_JJ things\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT things\_NNS that\_WDT make\_VBP one\_CD doubt\_NN if\_IN they\_PRP be\_VB mad\_JJ or\_CC sane\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Thank\_VB you\_PRP ,\_, thank\_VB you\_PRP ,\_, a\_DT thousand\_CD times\_NNS !\_.

You\_PRP have\_VBP taken\_VBN a\_DT weight\_NN off\_IN my\_PRP$ mind\_NN .\_.

If\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD let\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP shall\_MD give\_VB you\_PRP a\_DT paper\_NN to\_TO read\_VB .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ long\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP typewritten\_VBN it\_PRP out\_RP .\_.

It\_PRP will\_MD tell\_VB you\_PRP my\_PRP$ trouble\_NN and\_CC Jonathan\_NNP 's\_POS .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ the\_DT copy\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ journal\_NN when\_WRB abroad\_RB ,\_, and\_CC all\_PDT that\_DT happened\_VBD .\_.

I\_PRP dare\_VBP not\_RB say\_VB anything\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP ;\_: you\_PRP will\_MD read\_VB for\_IN yourself\_PRP and\_CC judge\_NN .\_.

And\_CC then\_RB when\_WRB I\_PRP see\_VBP you\_PRP ,\_, perhaps\_RB ,\_, you\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB very\_JJ kind\_NN and\_CC tell\_VB me\_PRP what\_WP you\_PRP think\_VBP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP promise\_VBP ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD as\_IN I\_PRP gave\_VBD him\_PRP the\_DT papers\_NNS ;\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP shall\_MD in\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN ,\_, so\_RB soon\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD ,\_, come\_VBN to\_TO see\_VB you\_PRP and\_CC your\_PRP$ husband\_NN ,\_, if\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Jonathan\_NNP will\_MD be\_VB here\_RB at\_IN half-past\_JJ eleven\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP must\_MD come\_VB to\_TO lunch\_VB with\_IN us\_PRP and\_CC see\_VB him\_PRP then\_RB ;\_: you\_PRP could\_MD catch\_VB the\_DT quick\_JJ 3:34\_CD train\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT will\_MD leave\_VB you\_PRP at\_IN Paddington\_NNP before\_IN eight\_CD .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP was\_VBD surprised\_VBN at\_IN my\_PRP$ knowledge\_NN of\_IN the\_DT trains\_NNS off-hand\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC he\_PRP does\_VBZ not\_RB know\_VB that\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP made\_VBN up\_RP all\_PDT the\_DT trains\_NNS to\_TO and\_CC from\_IN Exeter\_NNP ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD help\_VB Jonathan\_NNP in\_IN case\_NN he\_PRP is\_VBZ in\_IN a\_DT hurry\_NN .\_.

So\_RB he\_PRP took\_VBD the\_DT papers\_NNS with\_IN him\_PRP and\_CC went\_VBD away\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP sit\_VBP here\_RB thinking\_VBG --\_: thinking\_VBG I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB know\_VB what\_WP .\_.

Letter\_NN -LRB-\_-LRB- by\_IN hand\_NN -RRB-\_-RRB- ,\_, Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP to\_TO Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` 25\_CD September\_NNP ,\_, 6\_CD o'clock\_RB .\_.

``\_`` Dear\_NNP Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP have\_VBP read\_VBN your\_PRP$ husband\_NN 's\_VBZ so\_RB wonderful\_JJ diary\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP may\_MD sleep\_VB without\_IN doubt\_NN .\_.

Strange\_JJ and\_CC terrible\_JJ as\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ ,\_, it\_PRP is\_VBZ true\_JJ !\_.

I\_PRP will\_VBP pledge\_NN my\_PRP$ life\_NN on\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB worse\_JJR for\_IN others\_NNS ;\_: but\_CC for\_IN him\_PRP and\_CC you\_PRP there\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT dread\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT noble\_JJ fellow\_NN ;\_: and\_CC let\_VB me\_PRP tell\_VB you\_PRP from\_IN experience\_NN of\_IN men\_NNS ,\_, that\_IN one\_CD who\_WP would\_MD do\_VB as\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD in\_IN going\_VBG down\_RP that\_DT wall\_NN and\_CC to\_TO that\_DT room\_NN --\_: ay\_NN ,\_, and\_CC going\_VBG a\_DT second\_JJ time\_NN --\_: is\_VBZ not\_RB one\_CD to\_TO be\_VB injured\_VBN in\_IN permanence\_NN by\_IN a\_DT shock\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ brain\_NN and\_CC his\_PRP$ heart\_NN are\_VBP all\_DT right\_NN ;\_: this\_DT I\_PRP swear\_VBP ,\_, before\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP even\_RB seen\_VBN him\_PRP ;\_: so\_RB be\_VB at\_IN rest\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD have\_VB much\_JJ to\_TO ask\_VB him\_PRP of\_IN other\_JJ things\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP blessed\_VBN that\_IN to-day\_JJ I\_NN come\_VBN to\_TO see\_VB you\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP learn\_VB all\_DT at\_IN once\_RB so\_RB much\_JJ that\_IN again\_RB I\_PRP am\_VBP dazzle\_NN --\_: dazzle\_VBP more\_RBR than\_IN ever\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP must\_MD think\_VB .\_.

``\_`` Yours\_VBZ the\_DT most\_RBS faithful\_JJ ,\_, ``\_`` Abraham\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

Letter\_NNP ,\_, Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP to\_TO Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` 25\_CD September\_NNP ,\_, 6:30\_CD p.\_NN m.\_NN ``\_`` My\_PRP$ dear\_RB Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, --\_: ``\_`` A\_DT thousand\_CD thanks\_NNS for\_IN your\_PRP$ kind\_NN letter\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT has\_VBZ taken\_VBN a\_DT great\_JJ weight\_NN off\_IN my\_PRP$ mind\_NN .\_.

And\_CC yet\_RB ,\_, if\_IN it\_PRP be\_VB true\_JJ ,\_, what\_WP terrible\_JJ things\_NNS there\_EX are\_VBP in\_IN the\_DT world\_NN ,\_, and\_CC what\_WP an\_DT awful\_JJ thing\_NN if\_IN that\_DT man\_NN ,\_, that\_DT monster\_NN ,\_, be\_VB really\_RB in\_IN London\_NNP !\_.

I\_PRP fear\_VBP to\_TO think\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP this\_DT moment\_NN ,\_, whilst\_IN writing\_NN ,\_, had\_VBD a\_DT wire\_NN from\_IN Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, saying\_VBG that\_IN he\_PRP leaves\_VBZ by\_IN the\_DT 6:25\_CD to-night\_NN from\_IN Launceston\_NNP and\_CC will\_MD be\_VB here\_RB at\_IN 10:18\_CD ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP shall\_MD have\_VB no\_DT fear\_NN to-night\_NN .\_.

Will\_MD you\_PRP ,\_, therefore\_RB ,\_, instead\_RB of\_IN lunching\_VBG with\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, please\_VB come\_VBN to\_TO breakfast\_NN at\_IN eight\_CD o'clock\_RB ,\_, if\_IN this\_DT be\_VB not\_RB too\_RB early\_JJ for\_IN you\_PRP ?\_.

You\_PRP can\_MD get\_VB away\_RB ,\_, if\_IN you\_PRP are\_VBP in\_IN a\_DT hurry\_NN ,\_, by\_IN the\_DT 10:30\_CD train\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT will\_MD bring\_VB you\_PRP to\_TO Paddington\_NNP by\_IN 2:35\_CD .\_.

Do\_VBP not\_RB answer\_VB this\_DT ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP shall\_MD take\_VB it\_PRP that\_IN ,\_, if\_IN I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB hear\_VB ,\_, you\_PRP will\_MD come\_VB to\_TO breakfast\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Believe\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, ``\_`` Your\_PRP$ faithful\_NN and\_CC grateful\_JJ friend\_NN ,\_, ``\_`` Mina\_NNP Harker\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

Jonathan\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP .\_.

26\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP thought\_VBD never\_RB to\_TO write\_VB in\_IN this\_DT diary\_NN again\_RB ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT time\_NN has\_VBZ come\_VBN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP got\_VBD home\_NN last\_JJ night\_NN Mina\_NNP had\_VBD supper\_NN ready\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB we\_PRP had\_VBD supped\_VBN she\_PRP told\_VBD me\_PRP of\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP 's\_POS visit\_NN ,\_, and\_CC of\_IN her\_PRP$ having\_VBG given\_VBN him\_PRP the\_DT two\_CD diaries\_NNS copied\_VBD out\_RP ,\_, and\_CC of\_IN how\_WRB anxious\_JJ she\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN about\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

She\_PRP showed\_VBD me\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT doctor\_NN 's\_POS letter\_NN that\_IN all\_DT I\_PRP wrote\_VBD down\_RB was\_VBD true\_JJ .\_.

It\_PRP seems\_VBZ to\_TO have\_VB made\_VBN a\_DT new\_JJ man\_NN of\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD the\_DT doubt\_NN as\_IN to\_TO the\_DT reality\_NN of\_IN the\_DT whole\_JJ thing\_NN that\_WDT knocked\_VBD me\_PRP over\_RP .\_.

I\_PRP felt\_VBD impotent\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN the\_DT dark\_NN ,\_, and\_CC distrustful\_JJ .\_.

But\_CC ,\_, now\_RB that\_IN I\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB afraid\_JJ ,\_, even\_RB of\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ succeeded\_VBN after\_IN all\_DT ,\_, then\_RB ,\_, in\_IN his\_PRP$ design\_NN in\_IN getting\_VBG to\_TO London\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP was\_VBD he\_PRP I\_PRP saw\_VBD .\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ got\_VBN younger\_JJR ,\_, and\_CC how\_WRB ?\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP is\_VBZ the\_DT man\_NN to\_TO unmask\_VB him\_PRP and\_CC hunt\_NN him\_PRP out\_RP ,\_, if\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ anything\_NN like\_IN what\_WP Mina\_NNP says\_VBZ .\_.

We\_PRP sat\_VBD late\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC talked\_VBD it\_PRP all\_RB over\_RB .\_.

Mina\_NNP is\_VBZ dressing\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD call\_VB at\_IN the\_DT hotel\_NN in\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ minutes\_NNS and\_CC bring\_VB him\_PRP over\_IN ...\_: .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, I\_PRP think\_VBP ,\_, surprised\_VBD to\_TO see\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP came\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN where\_WRB he\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC introduced\_VBD myself\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP took\_VBD me\_PRP by\_IN the\_DT shoulder\_NN ,\_, and\_CC turned\_VBD my\_PRP$ face\_NN round\_NN to\_TO the\_DT light\_NN ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD ,\_, after\_IN a\_DT sharp\_JJ scrutiny\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` But\_CC Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP told\_VBD me\_PRP you\_PRP were\_VBD ill\_JJ ,\_, that\_IN you\_PRP had\_VBD had\_VBN a\_DT shock\_NN .\_. ''\_''

It\_PRP was\_VBD so\_RB funny\_JJ to\_TO hear\_VB my\_PRP$ wife\_NN called\_VBN ``\_`` Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ''\_'' by\_IN this\_DT kindly\_RB ,\_, strong-faced\_JJ old\_JJ man\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP smiled\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP was\_VBD ill\_JJ ,\_, I\_PRP have\_VBP had\_VBN a\_DT shock\_NN ;\_: but\_CC you\_PRP have\_VBP cured\_VBN me\_PRP already\_RB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` And\_CC how\_WRB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` By\_IN your\_PRP$ letter\_NN to\_TO Mina\_NNP last\_JJ night\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN doubt\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB everything\_NN took\_VBD a\_DT hue\_NN of\_IN unreality\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB know\_VB what\_WP to\_TO trust\_NN ,\_, even\_RB the\_DT evidence\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ senses\_NNS .\_.

Not\_RB knowing\_VBG what\_WP to\_TO trust\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB know\_VB what\_WP to\_TO do\_VB ;\_: and\_CC so\_RB had\_VBD only\_RB to\_TO keep\_VB on\_IN working\_VBG in\_IN what\_WP had\_VBD hitherto\_RB been\_VBN the\_DT groove\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ life\_NN .\_.

The\_DT groove\_NN ceased\_VBD to\_TO avail\_NN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP mistrusted\_VBD myself\_PRP .\_.

Doctor\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB know\_VB what\_WP it\_PRP is\_VBZ to\_TO doubt\_VB everything\_NN ,\_, even\_RB yourself\_PRP .\_.

No\_DT ,\_, you\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB ;\_: you\_PRP could\_MD n't\_RB with\_IN eyebrows\_NNS like\_IN yours\_PRP$ .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP seemed\_VBD pleased\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC laughed\_VBD as\_IN he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` So\_RB !\_.

You\_PRP are\_VBP physiognomist\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP learn\_VBP more\_RBR here\_RB with\_IN each\_DT hour\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP with\_IN so\_RB much\_JJ pleasure\_NN coming\_VBG to\_TO you\_PRP to\_TO breakfast\_NN ;\_: and\_CC ,\_, oh\_UH ,\_, sir\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP will\_MD pardon\_NN praise\_VB from\_IN an\_DT old\_JJ man\_NN ,\_, but\_CC you\_PRP are\_VBP blessed\_VBN in\_IN your\_PRP$ wife\_NN .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP would\_MD listen\_VB to\_TO him\_PRP go\_VB on\_IN praising\_VBG Mina\_NNP for\_IN a\_DT day\_NN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP simply\_RB nodded\_VBD and\_CC stood\_VBD silent\_JJ .\_.

``\_`` She\_PRP is\_VBZ one\_CD of\_IN God\_NNP 's\_POS women\_NNS ,\_, fashioned\_VBN by\_IN His\_PRP$ own\_JJ hand\_NN to\_TO show\_VB us\_PRP men\_NNS and\_CC other\_JJ women\_NNS that\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT heaven\_NN where\_WRB we\_PRP can\_MD enter\_VB ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN its\_PRP$ light\_NN can\_MD be\_VB here\_RB on\_IN earth\_NN .\_.

So\_RB true\_JJ ,\_, so\_RB sweet\_JJ ,\_, so\_RB noble\_JJ ,\_, so\_RB little\_JJ an\_DT egoist\_NN --\_: and\_CC that\_IN ,\_, let\_VB me\_PRP tell\_VB you\_PRP ,\_, is\_VBZ much\_JJ in\_IN this\_DT age\_NN ,\_, so\_RB sceptical\_JJ and\_CC selfish\_JJ .\_.

And\_CC you\_PRP ,\_, sir\_NN --\_: I\_PRP have\_VBP read\_VBN all\_PDT the\_DT letters\_NNS to\_TO poor\_JJ Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC some\_DT of\_IN them\_PRP speak\_VBP of\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP know\_VBP you\_PRP since\_IN some\_DT days\_NNS from\_IN the\_DT knowing\_VBG of\_IN others\_NNS ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP seen\_VBN your\_PRP$ true\_JJ self\_NN since\_IN last\_JJ night\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP will\_MD give\_VB me\_PRP your\_PRP$ hand\_NN ,\_, will\_MD you\_PRP not\_RB ?\_.

And\_CC let\_VB us\_PRP be\_VB friends\_NNS for\_IN all\_PDT our\_PRP$ lives\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

We\_PRP shook\_VBD hands\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP was\_VBD so\_RB earnest\_JJ and\_CC so\_RB kind\_JJ that\_IN it\_PRP made\_VBD me\_PRP quite\_RB choky\_NN .\_.

``\_`` And\_CC now\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` may\_MD I\_PRP ask\_VB you\_PRP for\_IN some\_DT more\_JJR help\_NN ?\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP a\_DT great\_JJ task\_NN to\_TO do\_VB ,\_, and\_CC at\_IN the\_DT beginning\_NN it\_PRP is\_VBZ to\_TO know\_VB .\_.

You\_PRP can\_MD help\_VB me\_PRP here\_RB .\_.

Can\_MD you\_PRP tell\_VB me\_PRP what\_WP went\_VBD before\_IN your\_PRP$ going\_VBG to\_TO Transylvania\_NNP ?\_.

Later\_RB on\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD ask\_VB more\_JJR help\_NN ,\_, and\_CC of\_IN a\_DT different\_JJ kind\_NN ;\_: but\_CC at\_IN first\_RB this\_DT will\_MD do\_VB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Look\_VB here\_RB ,\_, sir\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` does\_VBZ what\_WP you\_PRP have\_VBP to\_TO do\_VB concern\_NN the\_DT Count\_NNP ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` It\_PRP does\_VBZ ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD solemnly\_RB .\_.

``\_`` Then\_RB I\_PRP am\_VBP with\_IN you\_PRP heart\_NN and\_CC soul\_NN .\_.

As\_IN you\_PRP go\_VBP by\_IN the\_DT 10:30\_CD train\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB have\_VB time\_NN to\_TO read\_VB them\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD get\_VB the\_DT bundle\_NN of\_IN papers\_NNS .\_.

You\_PRP can\_MD take\_VB them\_PRP with\_IN you\_PRP and\_CC read\_VB them\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT train\_NN .\_. ''\_''

After\_IN breakfast\_NN I\_PRP saw\_VBD him\_PRP to\_TO the\_DT station\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP were\_VBD parting\_NN he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Perhaps\_RB you\_PRP will\_MD come\_VB to\_TO town\_NN if\_IN I\_PRP send\_VBP to\_TO you\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC take\_VB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP too\_RB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` We\_PRP shall\_MD both\_DT come\_VBP when\_WRB you\_PRP will\_MD ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD got\_VBN him\_PRP the\_DT morning\_NN papers\_NNS and\_CC the\_DT London\_NNP papers\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT previous\_JJ night\_NN ,\_, and\_CC while\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD talking\_VBG at\_IN the\_DT carriage\_NN window\_NN ,\_, waiting\_VBG for\_IN the\_DT train\_NN to\_TO start\_VB ,\_, he\_PRP was\_VBD turning\_VBG them\_PRP over\_RP .\_.

His\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS suddenly\_RB seemed\_VBD to\_TO catch\_VB something\_NN in\_IN one\_CD of\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, ``\_`` The\_DT Westminster\_NNP Gazette\_NNP ''\_'' --\_: I\_PRP knew\_VBD it\_PRP by\_IN the\_DT colour\_NN --\_: and\_CC he\_PRP grew\_VBD quite\_RB white\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP read\_VBD something\_NN intently\_RB ,\_, groaning\_VBG to\_TO himself\_PRP :\_: ``\_`` Mein\_NNP Gott\_NNP !\_.

Mein\_NNP Gott\_NNP !\_.

So\_RB soon\_RB !\_.

so\_RB soon\_RB !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB think\_VB he\_PRP remembered\_VBD me\_PRP at\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN .\_.

Just\_RB then\_RB the\_DT whistle\_VBP blew\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT train\_NN moved\_VBD off\_RB .\_.

This\_DT recalled\_VBD him\_PRP to\_TO himself\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP leaned\_VBD out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT window\_NN and\_CC waved\_VBD his\_PRP$ hand\_NN ,\_, calling\_VBG out\_RP :\_: ``\_`` Love\_NNP to\_TO Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ;\_: I\_PRP shall\_MD write\_VB so\_RB soon\_RB as\_IN ever\_RB I\_PRP can\_MD .\_. ''\_''

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

26\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Truly\_RB there\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT such\_JJ thing\_NN as\_IN finality\_NN .\_.

Not\_RB a\_DT week\_NN since\_IN I\_PRP said\_VBD ``\_`` Finis\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' and\_CC yet\_RB here\_RB I\_PRP am\_VBP starting\_VBG fresh\_JJ again\_RB ,\_, or\_CC rather\_RB going\_VBG on\_RP with\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ record\_NN .\_.

Until\_IN this\_DT afternoon\_NN I\_PRP had\_VBD no\_DT cause\_NN to\_TO think\_VB of\_IN what\_WP is\_VBZ done\_VBN .\_.

Renfield\_NNP had\_VBD become\_VBN ,\_, to\_TO all\_DT intents\_NNS ,\_, as\_RB sane\_JJ as\_IN he\_PRP ever\_RB was\_VBD .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD already\_RB well\_RB ahead\_RB with\_IN his\_PRP$ fly\_NN business\_NN ;\_: and\_CC he\_PRP had\_VBD just\_RB started\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT spider\_NN line\_NN also\_RB ;\_: so\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB been\_VBN of\_IN any\_DT trouble\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT letter\_NN from\_IN Arthur\_NNP ,\_, written\_VBN on\_IN Sunday\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC from\_IN it\_PRP I\_PRP gather\_VBP that\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ bearing\_VBG up\_RP wonderfully\_RB well\_RB .\_.

Quincey\_NNP Morris\_NNP is\_VBZ with\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC that\_DT is\_VBZ much\_JJ of\_IN a\_DT help\_NN ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP himself\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT bubbling\_VBG well\_RB of\_IN good\_JJ spirits\_NNS .\_.

Quincey\_NNP wrote\_VBD me\_PRP a\_DT line\_NN too\_RB ,\_, and\_CC from\_IN him\_PRP I\_PRP hear\_VBP that\_IN Arthur\_NNP is\_VBZ beginning\_VBG to\_TO recover\_VB something\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ old\_JJ buoyancy\_NN ;\_: so\_RB as\_IN to\_TO them\_PRP all\_DT my\_PRP$ mind\_NN is\_VBZ at\_IN rest\_NN .\_.

As\_IN for\_IN myself\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP was\_VBD settling\_VBG down\_RB to\_TO my\_PRP$ work\_NN with\_IN the\_DT enthusiasm\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP used\_VBD to\_TO have\_VB for\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP might\_MD fairly\_RB have\_VB said\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT wound\_NN which\_WDT poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP left\_VBD on\_IN me\_PRP was\_VBD becoming\_VBG cicatrised\_VBN .\_.

Everything\_NNP is\_VBZ ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, now\_RB reopened\_VBN ;\_: and\_CC what\_WP is\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB the\_DT end\_NN God\_NNP only\_RB knows\_VBZ .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP an\_DT idea\_NN that\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP thinks\_VBZ he\_PRP knows\_VBZ ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, but\_CC he\_PRP will\_MD only\_RB let\_VB out\_RP enough\_RB at\_IN a\_DT time\_NN to\_TO whet\_VB curiosity\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO Exeter\_NNP yesterday\_NN ,\_, and\_CC stayed\_VBD there\_RB all\_DT night\_NN .\_.

To-day\_VB he\_PRP came\_VBD back\_RB ,\_, and\_CC almost\_RB bounded\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN at\_IN about\_IN half-past\_NN five\_CD o'clock\_RB ,\_, and\_CC thrust\_NN last\_JJ night\_NN 's\_POS ``\_`` Westminster\_NNP Gazette\_NNP ''\_'' into\_IN my\_PRP$ hand\_NN .\_.

``\_`` What\_WP do\_VBP you\_PRP think\_VB of\_IN that\_DT ?\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP asked\_VBD as\_IN he\_PRP stood\_VBD back\_RB and\_CC folded\_VBD his\_PRP$ arms\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP looked\_VBD over\_IN the\_DT paper\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP really\_RB did\_VBD not\_RB know\_VB what\_WP he\_PRP meant\_VBD ;\_: but\_CC he\_PRP took\_VBD it\_PRP from\_IN me\_PRP and\_CC pointed\_VBD out\_RP a\_DT paragraph\_NN about\_IN children\_NNS being\_VBG decoyed\_VBN away\_RP at\_IN Hampstead\_NNP .\_.

It\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB convey\_VB much\_RB to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, until\_IN I\_PRP reached\_VBD a\_DT passage\_NN where\_WRB it\_PRP described\_VBD small\_JJ punctured\_JJ wounds\_NNS on\_IN their\_PRP$ throats\_NNS .\_.

An\_DT idea\_NN struck\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP looked\_VBD up\_RP .\_.

``\_`` Well\_NNP ?\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` It\_PRP is\_VBZ like\_IN poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` And\_CC what\_WP do\_VBP you\_PRP make\_VB of\_IN it\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Simply\_RB that\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ some\_DT cause\_NN in\_IN common\_NN .\_.

Whatever\_WDT it\_PRP was\_VBD that\_IN injured\_VBN her\_PRP has\_VBZ injured\_VBN them\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB quite\_RB understand\_VB his\_PRP$ answer\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` That\_DT is\_VBZ true\_JJ indirectly\_RB ,\_, but\_CC not\_RB directly\_RB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` How\_WRB do\_VBP you\_PRP mean\_VB ,\_, Professor\_NNP ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP asked\_VBD .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT little\_RB inclined\_JJ to\_TO take\_VB his\_PRP$ seriousness\_NN lightly\_RB --\_: for\_IN ,\_, after\_IN all\_DT ,\_, four\_CD days\_NNS of\_IN rest\_NN and\_CC freedom\_NN from\_IN burning\_NN ,\_, harrowing\_JJ anxiety\_NN does\_VBZ help\_VB to\_TO restore\_VB one\_PRP 's\_POS spirits\_NNS --\_: but\_CC when\_WRB I\_PRP saw\_VBD his\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, it\_PRP sobered\_VBD me\_PRP .\_.

Never\_RB ,\_, even\_RB in\_IN the\_DT midst\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ despair\_NN about\_IN poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP ,\_, had\_VBD he\_PRP looked\_VBD more\_RBR stern\_JJ .\_.

``\_`` Tell\_VB me\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP can\_MD hazard\_NN no\_DT opinion\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB know\_VB what\_WP to\_TO think\_VB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP no\_DT data\_NNS on\_IN which\_WDT to\_TO found\_VBD a\_DT conjecture\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Do\_VBP you\_PRP mean\_VB to\_TO tell\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, that\_IN you\_PRP have\_VBP no\_DT suspicion\_NN as\_IN to\_TO what\_WP poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP died\_VBD of\_IN ;\_: not\_RB after\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT hints\_NNS given\_VBN ,\_, not\_RB only\_RB by\_IN events\_NNS ,\_, but\_CC by\_IN me\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Of\_IN nervous\_JJ prostration\_NN following\_VBG on\_IN great\_JJ loss\_NN or\_CC waste\_NN of\_IN blood\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` And\_CC how\_WRB the\_DT blood\_NN lost\_VBD or\_CC waste\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP shook\_VBD my\_PRP$ head\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP stepped\_VBD over\_RB and\_CC sat\_VBD down\_RP beside\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP are\_VBP clever\_JJ man\_NN ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP ;\_: you\_PRP reason\_VBP well\_RB ,\_, and\_CC your\_PRP$ wit\_NN is\_VBZ bold\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC you\_PRP are\_VBP too\_RB prejudiced\_JJ .\_.

You\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB let\_VB your\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS see\_VBP nor\_CC your\_PRP$ ears\_NNS hear\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN which\_WDT is\_VBZ outside\_IN your\_PRP$ daily\_JJ life\_NN is\_VBZ not\_RB of\_IN account\_NN to\_TO you\_PRP .\_.

Do\_VBP you\_PRP not\_RB think\_VB that\_IN there\_EX are\_VBP things\_NNS which\_WDT you\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB understand\_VB ,\_, and\_CC yet\_RB which\_WDT are\_VBP ;\_: that\_IN some\_DT people\_NNS see\_VBP things\_NNS that\_IN others\_NNS can\_MD not\_RB ?\_.

But\_CC there\_EX are\_VBP things\_NNS old\_JJ and\_CC new\_JJ which\_WDT must\_MD not\_RB be\_VB contemplate\_VB by\_IN men\_NNS 's\_POS eyes\_NNS ,\_, because\_IN they\_PRP know\_VBP --\_: or\_CC think\_VB they\_PRP know\_VBP --\_: some\_DT things\_NNS which\_WDT other\_JJ men\_NNS have\_VBP told\_VBN them\_PRP .\_.

Ah\_NN ,\_, it\_PRP is\_VBZ the\_DT fault\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ science\_NN that\_IN it\_PRP wants\_VBZ to\_TO explain\_VB all\_DT ;\_: and\_CC if\_IN it\_PRP explain\_VB not\_RB ,\_, then\_RB it\_PRP says\_VBZ there\_EX is\_VBZ nothing\_NN to\_TO explain\_VB .\_.

But\_CC yet\_RB we\_PRP see\_VBP around\_IN us\_PRP every\_DT day\_NN the\_DT growth\_NN of\_IN new\_JJ beliefs\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT think\_VBP themselves\_PRP new\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC which\_WDT are\_VBP yet\_RB but\_CC the\_DT old\_JJ ,\_, which\_WDT pretend\_VBP to\_TO be\_VB young\_JJ --\_: like\_IN the\_DT fine\_NN ladies\_NNS at\_IN the\_DT opera\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP suppose\_VBP now\_RB you\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB believe\_VB in\_IN corporeal\_JJ transference\_NN .\_.

No\_DT ?\_.

Nor\_CC in\_IN materialisation\_NN .\_.

No\_DT ?\_.

Nor\_CC in\_IN astral\_JJ bodies\_NNS .\_.

No\_DT ?\_.

Nor\_CC in\_IN the\_DT reading\_NN of\_IN thought\_NN .\_.

No\_DT ?\_.

Nor\_CC in\_IN hypnotism\_NN --\_: --\_: ''\_'' ``\_`` Yes\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Charcot\_NNP has\_VBZ proved\_VBN that\_IN pretty\_RB well\_RB .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP smiled\_VBD as\_IN he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: ``\_`` Then\_RB you\_PRP are\_VBP satisfied\_VBN as\_IN to\_TO it\_PRP .\_.

Yes\_UH ?\_.

And\_CC of\_IN course\_NN then\_RB you\_PRP understand\_VBP how\_WRB it\_PRP act\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC can\_MD follow\_VB the\_DT mind\_NN of\_IN the\_DT great\_JJ Charcot\_NNP --\_: alas\_UH that\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ no\_DT more\_RBR !\_.

--\_: into\_IN the\_DT very\_JJ soul\_NN of\_IN the\_DT patient\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP influence\_VB .\_.

No\_DT ?\_.

Then\_RB ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, am\_VBP I\_PRP to\_TO take\_VB it\_PRP that\_IN you\_PRP simply\_RB accept\_VB fact\_NN ,\_, and\_CC are\_VBP satisfied\_VBN to\_TO let\_VB from\_IN premise\_NN to\_TO conclusion\_NN be\_VB a\_DT blank\_NN ?\_.

No\_DT ?\_.

Then\_RB tell\_VB me\_PRP --\_: for\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP student\_NN of\_IN the\_DT brain\_NN --\_: how\_WRB you\_PRP accept\_VBP the\_DT hypnotism\_NN and\_CC reject\_VB the\_DT thought\_NN reading\_NN .\_.

Let\_VB me\_PRP tell\_VB you\_PRP ,\_, my\_PRP$ friend\_NN ,\_, that\_IN there\_EX are\_VBP things\_NNS done\_VBN to-day\_RB in\_IN electrical\_JJ science\_NN which\_WDT would\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN deemed\_VBN unholy\_JJ by\_IN the\_DT very\_JJ men\_NNS who\_WP discovered\_VBD electricity\_NN --\_: who\_WP would\_MD themselves\_PRP not\_RB so\_RB long\_RB before\_RB have\_VBP been\_VBN burned\_VBN as\_IN wizards\_NNS .\_.

There\_EX are\_VBP always\_RB mysteries\_NNS in\_IN life\_NN .\_.

Why\_WRB was\_VBD it\_PRP that\_IN Methuselah\_NNP lived\_VBD nine\_CD hundred\_CD years\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC `\_`` Old\_JJ Parr\_NN '\_'' one\_CD hundred\_CD and\_CC sixty-nine\_CD ,\_, and\_CC yet\_RB that\_IN poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP ,\_, with\_IN four\_CD men\_NNS 's\_POS blood\_NN in\_IN her\_PRP$ poor\_JJ veins\_NNS ,\_, could\_MD not\_RB live\_VB even\_RB one\_CD day\_NN ?\_.

For\_IN ,\_, had\_VBD she\_PRP live\_VB one\_CD more\_JJR day\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP could\_MD have\_VB save\_VB her\_PRP .\_.

Do\_VBP you\_PRP know\_VB all\_PDT the\_DT mystery\_NN of\_IN life\_NN and\_CC death\_NN ?\_.

Do\_VBP you\_PRP know\_VB the\_DT altogether\_RB of\_IN comparative\_JJ anatomy\_NN and\_CC can\_MD say\_VB wherefore\_VB the\_DT qualities\_NNS of\_IN brutes\_NNS are\_VBP in\_IN some\_DT men\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC not\_RB in\_IN others\_NNS ?\_.

Can\_MD you\_PRP tell\_VB me\_PRP why\_WRB ,\_, when\_WRB other\_JJ spiders\_NNS die\_VBP small\_JJ and\_CC soon\_RB ,\_, that\_IN one\_CD great\_JJ spider\_NN lived\_VBD for\_IN centuries\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT tower\_NN of\_IN the\_DT old\_JJ Spanish\_JJ church\_NN and\_CC grew\_VBD and\_CC grew\_VBD ,\_, till\_IN ,\_, on\_IN descending\_VBG ,\_, he\_PRP could\_MD drink\_VB the\_DT oil\_NN of\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT church\_NN lamps\_NNS ?\_.

Can\_MD you\_PRP tell\_VB me\_PRP why\_WRB in\_IN the\_DT Pampas\_NNP ,\_, ay\_NN and\_CC elsewhere\_RB ,\_, there\_EX are\_VBP bats\_NNS that\_WDT come\_VBP at\_IN night\_NN and\_CC open\_VB the\_DT veins\_NNS of\_IN cattle\_NNS and\_CC horses\_NNS and\_CC suck\_NN dry\_VBP their\_PRP$ veins\_NNS ;\_: how\_WRB in\_IN some\_DT islands\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT Western\_JJ seas\_NNS there\_EX are\_VBP bats\_NNS which\_WDT hang\_VBP on\_IN the\_DT trees\_NNS all\_DT day\_NN ,\_, and\_CC those\_DT who\_WP have\_VBP seen\_VBN describe\_VBP as\_IN like\_IN giant\_JJ nuts\_NNS or\_CC pods\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN when\_WRB the\_DT sailors\_NNS sleep\_VBP on\_IN the\_DT deck\_NN ,\_, because\_IN that\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ hot\_JJ ,\_, flit\_VB down\_RP on\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB --\_: and\_CC then\_RB in\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN are\_VBP found\_VBN dead\_JJ men\_NNS ,\_, white\_JJ as\_IN even\_RB Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP was\_VBD ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Good\_NNP God\_NNP ,\_, Professor\_NNP !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, starting\_VBG up\_RP .\_.

``\_`` Do\_VBP you\_PRP mean\_VB to\_TO tell\_VB me\_PRP that\_IN Lucy\_NNP was\_VBD bitten\_VBN by\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT bat\_NN ;\_: and\_CC that\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT thing\_NN is\_VBZ here\_RB in\_IN London\_NNP in\_IN the\_DT nineteenth\_JJ century\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP waved\_VBD his\_PRP$ hand\_NN for\_IN silence\_NN ,\_, and\_CC went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Can\_MD you\_PRP tell\_VB me\_PRP why\_WRB the\_DT tortoise\_NN lives\_VBZ more\_RBR long\_JJ than\_IN generations\_NNS of\_IN men\_NNS ;\_: why\_WRB the\_DT elephant\_NN goes\_VBZ on\_IN and\_CC on\_IN till\_IN he\_PRP have\_VBP seen\_VBN dynasties\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC why\_WRB the\_DT parrot\_NN never\_RB die\_VBP only\_RB of\_IN bite\_NN of\_IN cat\_NN or\_CC dog\_NN or\_CC other\_JJ complaint\_NN ?\_.

Can\_MD you\_PRP tell\_VB me\_PRP why\_WRB men\_NNS believe\_VBP in\_IN all\_DT ages\_NNS and\_CC places\_NNS that\_IN there\_EX are\_VBP some\_DT few\_JJ who\_WP live\_VBP on\_IN always\_RB if\_IN they\_PRP be\_VB permit\_NN ;\_: that\_IN there\_EX are\_VBP men\_NNS and\_CC women\_NNS who\_WP can\_MD not\_RB die\_VB ?\_.

We\_PRP all\_DT know\_VBP --\_: because\_IN science\_NN has\_VBZ vouched\_VBN for\_IN the\_DT fact\_NN --\_: that\_IN there\_EX have\_VBP been\_VBN toads\_NNS shut\_VBD up\_RP in\_IN rocks\_NNS for\_IN thousands\_NNS of\_IN years\_NNS ,\_, shut\_VBN in\_IN one\_CD so\_RB small\_JJ hole\_NN that\_WDT only\_RB hold\_VBP him\_PRP since\_IN the\_DT youth\_NN of\_IN the\_DT world\_NN .\_.

Can\_MD you\_PRP tell\_VB me\_PRP how\_WRB the\_DT Indian\_JJ fakir\_NN can\_MD make\_VB himself\_PRP to\_TO die\_VB and\_CC have\_VB been\_VBN buried\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ grave\_JJ sealed\_JJ and\_CC corn\_NN sowed\_VBD on\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT corn\_NN reaped\_VBD and\_CC be\_VB cut\_VBN and\_CC sown\_VBN and\_CC reaped\_VBN and\_CC cut\_VBN again\_RB ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB men\_NNS come\_VB and\_CC take\_VB away\_RP the\_DT unbroken\_JJ seal\_NN and\_CC that\_IN there\_EX lie\_VBP the\_DT Indian\_JJ fakir\_NN ,\_, not\_RB dead\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC that\_DT rise\_NN up\_RB and\_CC walk\_VB amongst\_IN them\_PRP as\_RB before\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

Here\_RB I\_PRP interrupted\_VBD him\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD getting\_VBG bewildered\_VBN ;\_: he\_PRP so\_RB crowded\_VBD on\_IN my\_PRP$ mind\_NN his\_PRP$ list\_NN of\_IN nature\_NN 's\_POS eccentricities\_NNS and\_CC possible\_JJ impossibilities\_NNS that\_IN my\_PRP$ imagination\_NN was\_VBD getting\_VBG fired\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT dim\_JJ idea\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD teaching\_VBG me\_PRP some\_DT lesson\_NN ,\_, as\_RB long\_RB ago\_RB he\_PRP used\_VBD to\_TO do\_VB in\_IN his\_PRP$ study\_NN at\_IN Amsterdam\_NNP ;\_: but\_CC he\_PRP used\_VBD then\_RB to\_TO tell\_VB me\_PRP the\_DT thing\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD have\_VB the\_DT object\_NN of\_IN thought\_NN in\_IN mind\_NN all\_PDT the\_DT time\_NN .\_.

But\_CC now\_RB I\_PRP was\_VBD without\_IN this\_DT help\_NN ,\_, yet\_CC I\_PRP wanted\_VBD to\_TO follow\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Professor\_NNP ,\_, let\_VB me\_PRP be\_VB your\_PRP$ pet\_NN student\_NN again\_RB .\_.

Tell\_VB me\_PRP the\_DT thesis\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD apply\_VB your\_PRP$ knowledge\_NN as\_IN you\_PRP go\_VBP on\_RP .\_.

At\_IN present\_NN I\_PRP am\_VBP going\_VBG in\_IN my\_PRP$ mind\_NN from\_IN point\_NN to\_TO point\_NN as\_IN a\_DT mad\_JJ man\_NN ,\_, and\_CC not\_RB a\_DT sane\_JJ one\_CD ,\_, follows\_VBZ an\_DT idea\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP feel\_VBP like\_IN a\_DT novice\_NN lumbering\_VBG through\_IN a\_DT bog\_NN in\_IN a\_DT mist\_NN ,\_, jumping\_VBG from\_IN one\_CD tussock\_NN to\_TO another\_DT in\_IN the\_DT mere\_JJ blind\_JJ effort\_NN to\_TO move\_VB on\_RP without\_IN knowing\_VBG where\_WRB I\_PRP am\_VBP going\_VBG .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` That\_DT is\_VBZ good\_JJ image\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Well\_UH ,\_, I\_PRP shall\_MD tell\_VB you\_PRP .\_.

My\_PRP$ thesis\_NN is\_VBZ this\_DT :\_: I\_PRP want\_VBP you\_PRP to\_TO believe\_VB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` To\_TO believe\_VB what\_WP ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` To\_TO believe\_VB in\_IN things\_NNS that\_IN you\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB .\_.

Let\_VB me\_PRP illustrate\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP heard\_VBD once\_RB of\_IN an\_DT American\_JJ who\_WP so\_RB defined\_VBN faith\_NN :\_: `\_`` that\_IN faculty\_NN which\_WDT enables\_VBZ us\_PRP to\_TO believe\_VB things\_NNS which\_WDT we\_PRP know\_VBP to\_TO be\_VB untrue\_JJ .\_. '\_''

For\_IN one\_CD ,\_, I\_PRP follow\_VBP that\_DT man\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP meant\_VBD that\_IN we\_PRP shall\_MD have\_VB an\_DT open\_JJ mind\_NN ,\_, and\_CC not\_RB let\_VB a\_DT little\_JJ bit\_NN of\_IN truth\_NN check\_NN the\_DT rush\_NN of\_IN a\_DT big\_JJ truth\_NN ,\_, like\_IN a\_DT small\_JJ rock\_NN does\_VBZ a\_DT railway\_NN truck\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP get\_VBP the\_DT small\_JJ truth\_NN first\_RB .\_.

Good\_JJ !\_.

We\_PRP keep\_VBP him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP value\_VBP him\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC all\_PDT the\_DT same\_JJ we\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB let\_VB him\_PRP think\_VB himself\_PRP all\_PDT the\_DT truth\_NN in\_IN the\_DT universe\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Then\_RB you\_PRP want\_VBP me\_PRP not\_RB to\_TO let\_VB some\_DT previous\_JJ conviction\_NN injure\_VB the\_DT receptivity\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ mind\_NN with\_IN regard\_NN to\_TO some\_DT strange\_JJ matter\_NN .\_.

Do\_VBP I\_PRP read\_VB your\_PRP$ lesson\_NN aright\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Ah\_UH ,\_, you\_PRP are\_VBP my\_PRP$ favourite\_JJ pupil\_NN still\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ worth\_JJ to\_TO teach\_VB you\_PRP .\_.

Now\_RB that\_IN you\_PRP are\_VBP willing\_JJ to\_TO understand\_VB ,\_, you\_PRP have\_VBP taken\_VBN the\_DT first\_JJ step\_NN to\_TO understand\_VB .\_.

You\_PRP think\_VBP then\_RB that\_IN those\_DT so\_RB small\_JJ holes\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT children\_NNS 's\_POS throats\_NNS were\_VBD made\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ that\_WDT made\_VBD the\_DT hole\_NN in\_IN Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP suppose\_VBP so\_RB .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP stood\_VBD up\_RP and\_CC said\_VBD solemnly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Then\_RB you\_PRP are\_VBP wrong\_JJ .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, would\_MD it\_PRP were\_VBD so\_RB !\_.

but\_CC alas\_UH !\_.

no\_UH .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ worse\_JJR ,\_, far\_RB ,\_, far\_RB worse\_JJR .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` In\_IN God\_NNP 's\_POS name\_NN ,\_, Professor\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, what\_WP do\_VBP you\_PRP mean\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP cried\_VBD .\_.

He\_PRP threw\_VBD himself\_PRP with\_IN a\_DT despairing\_JJ gesture\_NN into\_IN a\_DT chair\_NN ,\_, and\_CC placed\_VBD his\_PRP$ elbows\_NNS on\_IN the\_DT table\_NN ,\_, covering\_VBG his\_PRP$ face\_NN with\_IN his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS as\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` They\_PRP were\_VBD made\_VBN by\_IN Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP !\_. ''\_''

CHAPTER\_NNP XV\_NNP DR.\_NNP SEWARD\_NNP 'S\_POS DIARY\_NN --\_: continued\_VBN .\_.

FOR\_IN a\_DT while\_NN sheer\_NN anger\_NN mastered\_VBD me\_PRP ;\_: it\_PRP was\_VBD as\_IN if\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD during\_IN her\_PRP$ life\_NN struck\_VBD Lucy\_NNP on\_IN the\_DT face\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP smote\_VBP the\_DT table\_NN hard\_JJ and\_CC rose\_VBD up\_RP as\_IN I\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, are\_VBP you\_PRP mad\_JJ ?\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP raised\_VBD his\_PRP$ head\_NN and\_CC looked\_VBD at\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC somehow\_RB the\_DT tenderness\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN calmed\_VBD me\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB .\_.

``\_`` Would\_MD I\_PRP were\_VBD !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Madness\_NN were\_VBD easy\_JJ to\_TO bear\_VB compared\_VBN with\_IN truth\_NN like\_IN this\_DT .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, my\_PRP$ friend\_NN ,\_, why\_WRB ,\_, think\_VB you\_PRP ,\_, did\_VBD I\_PRP go\_VB so\_RB far\_RB round\_JJ ,\_, why\_WRB take\_VBP so\_RB long\_JJ to\_TO tell\_VB you\_PRP so\_RB simple\_JJ a\_DT thing\_NN ?\_.

Was\_VBD it\_PRP because\_IN I\_PRP hate\_VBP you\_PRP and\_CC have\_VBP hated\_VBN you\_PRP all\_DT my\_PRP$ life\_NN ?\_.

Was\_VBD it\_PRP because\_IN I\_PRP wished\_VBD to\_TO give\_VB you\_PRP pain\_NN ?\_.

Was\_VBD it\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP wanted\_VBD ,\_, now\_RB so\_RB late\_JJ ,\_, revenge\_NN for\_IN that\_DT time\_NN when\_WRB you\_PRP saved\_VBD my\_PRP$ life\_NN ,\_, and\_CC from\_IN a\_DT fearful\_JJ death\_NN ?\_.

Ah\_NN no\_RB !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Forgive\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD I\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` My\_PRP$ friend\_NN ,\_, it\_PRP was\_VBD because\_IN I\_PRP wished\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB gentle\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT breaking\_NN to\_TO you\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP know\_VBP you\_PRP have\_VBP loved\_VBN that\_IN so\_RB sweet\_JJ lady\_NN .\_.

But\_CC even\_RB yet\_RB I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB expect\_VB you\_PRP to\_TO believe\_VB .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ so\_RB hard\_JJ to\_TO accept\_VB at\_IN once\_RB any\_DT abstract\_JJ truth\_NN ,\_, that\_IN we\_PRP may\_MD doubt\_VB such\_JJ to\_TO be\_VB possible\_JJ when\_WRB we\_PRP have\_VBP always\_RB believed\_VBN the\_DT `\_`` no\_DT '\_'' of\_IN it\_PRP ;\_: it\_PRP is\_VBZ more\_RBR hard\_JJ still\_RB to\_TO accept\_VB so\_RB sad\_JJ a\_DT concrete\_JJ truth\_NN ,\_, and\_CC of\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT one\_CD as\_IN Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP .\_.

To-night\_JJ I\_PRP go\_VBP to\_TO prove\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

Dare\_VB you\_PRP come\_VBP with\_IN me\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

This\_DT staggered\_VBD me\_PRP .\_.

A\_DT man\_NN does\_VBZ not\_RB like\_VB to\_TO prove\_VB such\_JJ a\_DT truth\_NN ;\_: Byron\_NNP excepted\_VBD from\_IN the\_DT category\_NN ,\_, jealousy\_NN .\_.

``\_`` And\_CC prove\_VB the\_DT very\_JJ truth\_NN he\_PRP most\_RBS abhorred\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP saw\_VBD my\_PRP$ hesitation\_NN ,\_, and\_CC spoke\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` The\_DT logic\_NN is\_VBZ simple\_JJ ,\_, no\_DT madman\_NN 's\_POS logic\_NN this\_DT time\_NN ,\_, jumping\_VBG from\_IN tussock\_NN to\_TO tussock\_VB in\_IN a\_DT misty\_JJ bog\_NN .\_.

If\_IN it\_PRP be\_VB not\_RB true\_JJ ,\_, then\_RB proof\_NN will\_MD be\_VB relief\_NN ;\_: at\_IN worst\_JJS it\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB harm\_VB .\_.

If\_IN it\_PRP be\_VB true\_JJ !\_.

Ah\_NN ,\_, there\_EX is\_VBZ the\_DT dread\_NN ;\_: yet\_RB very\_RB dread\_NN should\_MD help\_VB my\_PRP$ cause\_NN ,\_, for\_IN in\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ some\_DT need\_NN of\_IN belief\_NN .\_.

Come\_VB ,\_, I\_PRP tell\_VBP you\_PRP what\_WP I\_PRP propose\_VBP :\_: first\_RB ,\_, that\_IN we\_PRP go\_VBP off\_RP now\_RB and\_CC see\_VB that\_DT child\_NN in\_IN the\_DT hospital\_NN .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Vincent\_NNP ,\_, of\_IN the\_DT North\_NNP Hospital\_NNP ,\_, where\_WRB the\_DT papers\_NNS say\_VBP the\_DT child\_NN is\_VBZ ,\_, is\_VBZ friend\_NN of\_IN mine\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP think\_VBP of\_IN yours\_PRP$ since\_IN you\_PRP were\_VBD in\_IN class\_NN at\_IN Amsterdam\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP will\_MD let\_VB two\_CD scientists\_NNS see\_VBP his\_PRP$ case\_NN ,\_, if\_IN he\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB let\_VB two\_CD friends\_NNS .\_.

We\_PRP shall\_MD tell\_VB him\_PRP nothing\_NN ,\_, but\_CC only\_RB that\_IN we\_PRP wish\_VBP to\_TO learn\_VB .\_.

And\_CC then\_RB --\_: --\_: ''\_'' ``\_`` And\_CC then\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP took\_VBD a\_DT key\_NN from\_IN his\_PRP$ pocket\_NN and\_CC held\_VBD it\_PRP up\_RP .\_.

``\_`` And\_CC then\_RB we\_PRP spend\_VBP the\_DT night\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP and\_CC I\_PRP ,\_, in\_IN the\_DT churchyard\_NN where\_WRB Lucy\_NNP lies\_VBZ .\_.

This\_DT is\_VBZ the\_DT key\_NN that\_WDT lock\_VBP the\_DT tomb\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD it\_PRP from\_IN the\_DT coffin-man\_NN to\_TO give\_VB to\_TO Arthur\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

My\_PRP$ heart\_NN sank\_VBD within\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP felt\_VBD that\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD some\_DT fearful\_JJ ordeal\_NN before\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD do\_VB nothing\_NN ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP plucked\_VBD up\_RP what\_WDT heart\_NN I\_PRP could\_MD and\_CC said\_VBD that\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD better\_RBR hasten\_VB ,\_, as\_IN the\_DT afternoon\_NN was\_VBD passing\_VBG ...\_: .\_.

We\_PRP found\_VBD the\_DT child\_NN awake\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP had\_VBD had\_VBN a\_DT sleep\_NN and\_CC taken\_VBN some\_DT food\_NN ,\_, and\_CC altogether\_RB was\_VBD going\_VBG on\_RB well\_RB .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Vincent\_NNP took\_VBD the\_DT bandage\_NN from\_IN its\_PRP$ throat\_NN ,\_, and\_CC showed\_VBD us\_PRP the\_DT punctures\_NNS .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT mistaking\_VBG the\_DT similarity\_NN to\_TO those\_DT which\_WDT had\_VBD been\_VBN on\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS throat\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP were\_VBD smaller\_JJR ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT edges\_NNS looked\_VBD fresher\_JJR ;\_: that\_WDT was\_VBD all\_DT .\_.

We\_PRP asked\_VBD Vincent\_NNP to\_TO what\_WP he\_PRP attributed\_VBD them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP replied\_VBD that\_IN it\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN a\_DT bite\_NN of\_IN some\_DT animal\_NN ,\_, perhaps\_RB a\_DT rat\_NN ;\_: but\_CC ,\_, for\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ part\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP was\_VBD inclined\_VBN to\_TO think\_VB that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT bats\_NNS which\_WDT are\_VBP so\_RB numerous\_JJ on\_IN the\_DT northern\_JJ heights\_NNS of\_IN London\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` Out\_IN of\_IN so\_RB many\_JJ harmless\_JJ ones\_NNS ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` there\_EX may\_MD be\_VB some\_DT wild\_JJ specimen\_NN from\_IN the\_DT South\_NNP of\_IN a\_DT more\_RBR malignant\_JJ species\_NNS .\_.

Some\_DT sailor\_NN may\_MD have\_VB brought\_VBN one\_CD home\_NN ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP managed\_VBD to\_TO escape\_VB ;\_: or\_CC even\_RB from\_IN the\_DT Zoölogical\_NNP Gardens\_NNP a\_DT young\_JJ one\_NN may\_MD have\_VB got\_VBD loose\_JJ ,\_, or\_CC one\_CD be\_VB bred\_VBN there\_RB from\_IN a\_DT vampire\_NN .\_.

These\_DT things\_NNS do\_VBP occur\_VB ,\_, you\_PRP know\_VBP .\_.

Only\_RB ten\_CD days\_NNS ago\_IN a\_DT wolf\_NN got\_VBD out\_RB ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD ,\_, I\_PRP believe\_VBP ,\_, traced\_VBN up\_RP in\_IN this\_DT direction\_NN .\_.

For\_IN a\_DT week\_NN after\_IN ,\_, the\_DT children\_NNS were\_VBD playing\_VBG nothing\_NN but\_CC Red\_NNP Riding\_NNP Hood\_NNP on\_IN the\_DT Heath\_NNP and\_CC in\_IN every\_DT alley\_NN in\_IN the\_DT place\_NN until\_IN this\_DT `\_`` bloofer\_NN lady\_NN '\_'' scare\_NN came\_VBD along\_RB ,\_, since\_IN when\_WRB it\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN quite\_RB a\_DT gala-time\_NN with\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

Even\_RB this\_DT poor\_JJ little\_JJ mite\_JJ ,\_, when\_WRB he\_PRP woke\_VBD up\_RP to-day\_NN ,\_, asked\_VBD the\_DT nurse\_NN if\_IN he\_PRP might\_MD go\_VB away\_RB .\_.

When\_WRB she\_PRP asked\_VBD him\_PRP why\_WRB he\_PRP wanted\_VBD to\_TO go\_VB ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD he\_PRP wanted\_VBD to\_TO play\_VB with\_IN the\_DT `\_`` bloofer\_NN lady\_NN .\_. '\_'' ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP hope\_VBP ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, ``\_`` that\_IN when\_WRB you\_PRP are\_VBP sending\_VBG the\_DT child\_NN home\_NN you\_PRP will\_MD caution\_VB its\_PRP$ parents\_NNS to\_TO keep\_VB strict\_JJ watch\_NN over\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

These\_DT fancies\_VBZ to\_TO stray\_VB are\_VBP most\_RBS dangerous\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC if\_IN the\_DT child\_NN were\_VBD to\_TO remain\_VB out\_RP another\_DT night\_NN ,\_, it\_PRP would\_MD probably\_RB be\_VB fatal\_JJ .\_.

But\_CC in\_IN any\_DT case\_NN I\_PRP suppose\_VBP you\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB let\_VB it\_PRP away\_RB for\_IN some\_DT days\_NNS ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Certainly\_RB not\_RB ,\_, not\_RB for\_IN a\_DT week\_NN at\_IN least\_JJS ;\_: longer\_RBR if\_IN the\_DT wound\_NN is\_VBZ not\_RB healed\_VBN .\_. ''\_''

Our\_PRP$ visit\_NN to\_TO the\_DT hospital\_NN took\_VBD more\_JJR time\_NN than\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD reckoned\_VBN on\_IN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT sun\_NN had\_VBD dipped\_VBN before\_IN we\_PRP came\_VBD out\_RP .\_.

When\_WRB Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP saw\_VBD how\_WRB dark\_JJ it\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` There\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT hurry\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ more\_RBR late\_JJ than\_IN I\_PRP thought\_VBD .\_.

Come\_VB ,\_, let\_VB us\_PRP seek\_VB somewhere\_RB that\_IN we\_PRP may\_MD eat\_VB ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB we\_PRP shall\_MD go\_VB on\_IN our\_PRP$ way\_NN .\_. ''\_''

We\_PRP dined\_VBD at\_IN ``\_`` Jack\_NNP Straw\_NNP 's\_POS Castle\_NNP ''\_'' along\_IN with\_IN a\_DT little\_JJ crowd\_NN of\_IN bicyclists\_NNS and\_CC others\_NNS who\_WP were\_VBD genially\_RB noisy\_JJ .\_.

About\_IN ten\_CD o'clock\_RB we\_PRP started\_VBD from\_IN the\_DT inn\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD then\_RB very\_RB dark\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT scattered\_JJ lamps\_NNS made\_VBD the\_DT darkness\_NN greater\_JJR when\_WRB we\_PRP were\_VBD once\_RB outside\_IN their\_PRP$ individual\_JJ radius\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP had\_VBD evidently\_RB noted\_VBN the\_DT road\_NN we\_PRP were\_VBD to\_TO go\_VB ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN unhesitatingly\_RB ;\_: but\_CC ,\_, as\_IN for\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN quite\_RB a\_DT mixup\_NN as\_IN to\_TO locality\_NN .\_.

As\_IN we\_PRP went\_VBD further\_RBR ,\_, we\_PRP met\_VBD fewer\_JJR and\_CC fewer\_JJR people\_NNS ,\_, till\_IN at\_IN last\_JJ we\_PRP were\_VBD somewhat\_RB surprised\_VBN when\_WRB we\_PRP met\_VBD even\_RB the\_DT patrol\_NN of\_IN horse\_NN police\_NNS going\_VBG their\_PRP$ usual\_JJ suburban\_JJ round\_NN .\_.

At\_IN last\_JJ we\_PRP reached\_VBD the\_DT wall\_NN of\_IN the\_DT churchyard\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT we\_PRP climbed\_VBD over\_RP .\_.

With\_IN some\_DT little\_JJ difficulty\_NN --\_: for\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD very\_RB dark\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT whole\_JJ place\_NN seemed\_VBD so\_RB strange\_JJ to\_TO us\_PRP --\_: we\_PRP found\_VBD the\_DT Westenra\_NNP tomb\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP took\_VBD the\_DT key\_NN ,\_, opened\_VBD the\_DT creaky\_JJ door\_NN ,\_, and\_CC standing\_VBG back\_RB ,\_, politely\_RB ,\_, but\_CC quite\_RB unconsciously\_RB ,\_, motioned\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO precede\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT delicious\_JJ irony\_NN in\_IN the\_DT offer\_NN ,\_, in\_IN the\_DT courtliness\_NN of\_IN giving\_VBG preference\_NN on\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT ghastly\_JJ occasion\_NN .\_.

My\_PRP$ companion\_NN followed\_VBD me\_PRP quickly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC cautiously\_RB drew\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN to\_TO ,\_, after\_IN carefully\_RB ascertaining\_VBG that\_IN the\_DT lock\_NN was\_VBD a\_DT falling\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC not\_RB a\_DT spring\_NN ,\_, one\_CD .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT latter\_JJ case\_NN we\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN in\_IN a\_DT bad\_JJ plight\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP fumbled\_VBD in\_IN his\_PRP$ bag\_NN ,\_, and\_CC taking\_VBG out\_RP a\_DT matchbox\_NN and\_CC a\_DT piece\_NN of\_IN candle\_NN ,\_, proceeded\_VBD to\_TO make\_VB a\_DT light\_NN .\_.

The\_DT tomb\_NN in\_IN the\_DT day-time\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB wreathed\_VBN with\_IN fresh\_JJ flowers\_NNS ,\_, had\_VBD looked\_VBN grim\_JJ and\_CC gruesome\_JJ enough\_RB ;\_: but\_CC now\_RB ,\_, some\_DT days\_NNS afterwards\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB the\_DT flowers\_NNS hung\_VBD lank\_JJ and\_CC dead\_JJ ,\_, their\_PRP$ whites\_NNS turning\_VBG to\_TO rust\_NN and\_CC their\_PRP$ greens\_NNS to\_TO browns\_NNS ;\_: when\_WRB the\_DT spider\_NN and\_CC the\_DT beetle\_NN had\_VBD resumed\_VBN their\_PRP$ accustomed\_JJ dominance\_NN ;\_: when\_WRB time-discoloured\_JJ stone\_NN ,\_, and\_CC dust-encrusted\_JJ mortar\_NN ,\_, and\_CC rusty\_JJ ,\_, dank\_JJ iron\_NN ,\_, and\_CC tarnished\_JJ brass\_NN ,\_, and\_CC clouded\_JJ silver-plating\_NN gave\_VBD back\_RP the\_DT feeble\_JJ glimmer\_NN of\_IN a\_DT candle\_NN ,\_, the\_DT effect\_NN was\_VBD more\_RBR miserable\_JJ and\_CC sordid\_JJ than\_IN could\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN imagined\_VBN .\_.

It\_PRP conveyed\_VBD irresistibly\_RB the\_DT idea\_NN that\_IN life\_NN --\_: animal\_JJ life\_NN --\_: was\_VBD not\_RB the\_DT only\_JJ thing\_NN which\_WDT could\_MD pass\_VB away\_RB .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP went\_VBD about\_IN his\_PRP$ work\_NN systematically\_RB .\_.

Holding\_VBG his\_PRP$ candle\_NN so\_IN that\_IN he\_PRP could\_MD read\_VB the\_DT coffin\_NN plates\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB holding\_VBG it\_PRP that\_IN the\_DT sperm\_NN dropped\_VBD in\_IN white\_JJ patches\_NNS which\_WDT congealed\_VBD as\_IN they\_PRP touched\_VBD the\_DT metal\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP made\_VBD assurance\_NN of\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS coffin\_NN .\_.

Another\_DT search\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ bag\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP took\_VBD out\_RP a\_DT turnscrew\_NN .\_.

``\_`` What\_WP are\_VBP you\_PRP going\_VBG to\_TO do\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP asked\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` To\_TO open\_VB the\_DT coffin\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP shall\_MD yet\_RB be\_VB convinced\_VBN .\_. ''\_''

Straightway\_NNP he\_PRP began\_VBD taking\_VBG out\_RP the\_DT screws\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC finally\_RB lifted\_VBN off\_IN the\_DT lid\_NN ,\_, showing\_VBG the\_DT casing\_NN of\_IN lead\_NN beneath\_IN .\_.

The\_DT sight\_NN was\_VBD almost\_RB too\_RB much\_JJ for\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB as\_RB much\_JJ an\_DT affront\_NN to\_TO the\_DT dead\_NN as\_IN it\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN to\_TO have\_VB stripped\_VBN off\_RP her\_PRP$ clothing\_NN in\_IN her\_PRP$ sleep\_NN whilst\_IN living\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP actually\_RB took\_VBD hold\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ hand\_NN to\_TO stop\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP only\_RB said\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP shall\_MD see\_VB ,\_, ''\_'' and\_CC again\_RB fumbling\_VBG in\_IN his\_PRP$ bag\_NN ,\_, took\_VBD out\_RP a\_DT tiny\_JJ fret-saw\_NN .\_.

Striking\_VBG the\_DT turnscrew\_NN through\_IN the\_DT lead\_NN with\_IN a\_DT swift\_JJ downward\_JJ stab\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT made\_VBD me\_PRP wince\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP made\_VBD a\_DT small\_JJ hole\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT was\_VBD ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, big\_JJ enough\_RB to\_TO admit\_VB the\_DT point\_NN of\_IN the\_DT saw\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD expected\_VBN a\_DT rush\_NN of\_IN gas\_NN from\_IN the\_DT week-old\_JJ corpse\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP doctors\_NNS ,\_, who\_WP have\_VBP had\_VBD to\_TO study\_VB our\_PRP$ dangers\_NNS ,\_, have\_VBP to\_TO become\_VB accustomed\_JJ to\_TO such\_JJ things\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP drew\_VBD back\_RB towards\_IN the\_DT door\_NN .\_.

But\_CC the\_DT Professor\_NNP never\_RB stopped\_VBD for\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP sawed\_VBD down\_RP a\_DT couple\_NN of\_IN feet\_NNS along\_IN one\_CD side\_NN of\_IN the\_DT lead\_NN coffin\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB across\_IN ,\_, and\_CC down\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ side\_NN .\_.

Taking\_VBG the\_DT edge\_NN of\_IN the\_DT loose\_JJ flange\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP bent\_JJ it\_PRP back\_RB towards\_IN the\_DT foot\_NN of\_IN the\_DT coffin\_NN ,\_, and\_CC holding\_VBG up\_RP the\_DT candle\_NN into\_IN the\_DT aperture\_NN ,\_, motioned\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP to\_TO look\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP drew\_VBD near\_IN and\_CC looked\_VBD .\_.

The\_DT coffin\_NN was\_VBD empty\_JJ .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD certainly\_RB a\_DT surprise\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC gave\_VBD me\_PRP a\_DT considerable\_JJ shock\_NN ,\_, but\_CC Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP was\_VBD unmoved\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD now\_RB more\_RBR sure\_JJ than\_IN ever\_RB of\_IN his\_PRP$ ground\_NN ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB emboldened\_VBN to\_TO proceed\_VB in\_IN his\_PRP$ task\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Are\_VBP you\_PRP satisfied\_VBN now\_RB ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP ?\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP asked\_VBD .\_.

I\_PRP felt\_VBD all\_PDT the\_DT dogged\_JJ argumentativeness\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ nature\_NN awake\_RB within\_IN me\_PRP as\_IN I\_PRP answered\_VBD him\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP am\_VBP satisfied\_JJ that\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS body\_NN is\_VBZ not\_RB in\_IN that\_DT coffin\_NN ;\_: but\_CC that\_IN only\_RB proves\_VBZ one\_CD thing\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` And\_CC what\_WP is\_VBZ that\_IN ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` That\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB there\_RB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` That\_DT is\_VBZ good\_JJ logic\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` so\_RB far\_RB as\_IN it\_PRP goes\_VBZ .\_.

But\_CC how\_WRB do\_VBP you\_PRP --\_: how\_WRB can\_MD you\_PRP --\_: account\_VBP for\_IN it\_PRP not\_RB being\_VBG there\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Perhaps\_RB a\_DT body-snatcher\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP suggested\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT undertaker\_NN 's\_POS people\_NNS may\_MD have\_VB stolen\_VBN it\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP felt\_VBD that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD speaking\_VBG folly\_NN ,\_, and\_CC yet\_RB it\_PRP was\_VBD the\_DT only\_JJ real\_JJ cause\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP could\_MD suggest\_VB .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP sighed\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Ah\_NN well\_RB !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` we\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB more\_JJR proof\_NN .\_.

Come\_VB with\_IN me\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP put\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT coffin-lid\_NN again\_RB ,\_, gathered\_VBD up\_RP all\_PDT his\_PRP$ things\_NNS and\_CC placed\_VBD them\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT bag\_NN ,\_, blew\_VBD out\_RP the\_DT light\_NN ,\_, and\_CC placed\_VBD the\_DT candle\_NN also\_RB in\_IN the\_DT bag\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP opened\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, and\_CC went\_VBD out\_RP .\_.

Behind\_IN us\_PRP he\_PRP closed\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN and\_CC locked\_VBD it\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP handed\_VBD me\_PRP the\_DT key\_NN ,\_, saying\_VBG :\_: ``\_`` Will\_MD you\_PRP keep\_VB it\_PRP ?\_.

You\_PRP had\_VBD better\_RBR be\_VB assured\_VBN .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP laughed\_VBD --\_: it\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB a\_DT very\_RB cheerful\_JJ laugh\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP bound\_VBN to\_TO say\_VB --\_: as\_IN I\_PRP motioned\_VBD him\_PRP to\_TO keep\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

``\_`` A\_DT key\_NN is\_VBZ nothing\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD ;\_: ``\_`` there\_EX may\_MD be\_VB duplicates\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC anyhow\_RB it\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB difficult\_JJ to\_TO pick\_VB a\_DT lock\_NN of\_IN that\_DT kind\_NN .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP said\_VBD nothing\_NN ,\_, but\_CC put\_VBD the\_DT key\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ pocket\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP told\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO watch\_VB at\_IN one\_CD side\_NN of\_IN the\_DT churchyard\_NN whilst\_IN he\_PRP would\_MD watch\_VB at\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP took\_VBD up\_RP my\_PRP$ place\_NN behind\_IN a\_DT yew-tree\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP saw\_VBD his\_PRP$ dark\_JJ figure\_NN move\_NN until\_IN the\_DT intervening\_VBG headstones\_NNS and\_CC trees\_NNS hid\_VBD it\_PRP from\_IN my\_PRP$ sight\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT lonely\_JJ vigil\_NN .\_.

Just\_RB after\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD taken\_VBN my\_PRP$ place\_NN I\_PRP heard\_VBD a\_DT distant\_JJ clock\_NN strike\_NN twelve\_CD ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN time\_NN came\_VBD one\_CD and\_CC two\_CD .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD chilled\_VBN and\_CC unnerved\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC angry\_JJ with\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP for\_IN taking\_VBG me\_PRP on\_IN such\_PDT an\_DT errand\_NN and\_CC with\_IN myself\_PRP for\_IN coming\_VBG .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD too\_RB cold\_JJ and\_CC too\_RB sleepy\_JJ to\_TO be\_VB keenly\_RB observant\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC not\_RB sleepy\_JJ enough\_RB to\_TO betray\_VB my\_PRP$ trust\_NN so\_RB altogether\_RB I\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT dreary\_JJ ,\_, miserable\_JJ time\_NN .\_.

Suddenly\_RB ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP turned\_VBD round\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP thought\_VBD I\_PRP saw\_VBD something\_NN like\_IN a\_DT white\_JJ streak\_NN ,\_, moving\_VBG between\_IN two\_CD dark\_JJ yew-trees\_NNS at\_IN the\_DT side\_NN of\_IN the\_DT churchyard\_NN farthest\_JJS from\_IN the\_DT tomb\_NN ;\_: at\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ time\_NN a\_DT dark\_JJ mass\_NN moved\_VBN from\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP 's\_POS side\_NN of\_IN the\_DT ground\_NN ,\_, and\_CC hurriedly\_RB went\_VBD towards\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

Then\_RB I\_PRP too\_RB moved\_VBD ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO go\_VB round\_JJ headstones\_NNS and\_CC railed-off\_JJ tombs\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP stumbled\_VBD over\_IN graves\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT sky\_NN was\_VBD overcast\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC somewhere\_RB far\_RB off\_IN an\_DT early\_JJ cock\_NN crew\_NN .\_.

A\_DT little\_JJ way\_NN off\_IN ,\_, beyond\_IN a\_DT line\_NN of\_IN scattered\_JJ juniper-trees\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT marked\_VBD the\_DT pathway\_NN to\_TO the\_DT church\_NN ,\_, a\_DT white\_JJ ,\_, dim\_JJ figure\_NN flitted\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT direction\_NN of\_IN the\_DT tomb\_NN .\_.

The\_DT tomb\_NN itself\_PRP was\_VBD hidden\_VBN by\_IN trees\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB see\_VB where\_WRB the\_DT figure\_NN disappeared\_VBD .\_.

I\_PRP heard\_VBD the\_DT rustle\_NN of\_IN actual\_JJ movement\_NN where\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD first\_RB seen\_VBN the\_DT white\_JJ figure\_NN ,\_, and\_CC coming\_VBG over\_RB ,\_, found\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP holding\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ arms\_NNS a\_DT tiny\_JJ child\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB he\_PRP saw\_VBD me\_PRP he\_PRP held\_VBD it\_PRP out\_RP to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Are\_VBP you\_PRP satisfied\_VBN now\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` No\_UH ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, in\_IN a\_DT way\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP felt\_VBD was\_VBD aggressive\_JJ .\_.

``\_`` Do\_VBP you\_PRP not\_RB see\_VB the\_DT child\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Yes\_UH ,\_, it\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT child\_NN ,\_, but\_CC who\_WP brought\_VBD it\_PRP here\_RB ?\_.

And\_CC is\_VBZ it\_PRP wounded\_VBN ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP asked\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` We\_PRP shall\_MD see\_VB ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN one\_CD impulse\_NN we\_PRP took\_VBD our\_PRP$ way\_NN out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT churchyard\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP carrying\_VBG the\_DT sleeping\_VBG child\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP had\_VBD got\_VBN some\_DT little\_JJ distance\_NN away\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP went\_VBD into\_IN a\_DT clump\_NN of\_IN trees\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC struck\_VBD a\_DT match\_NN ,\_, and\_CC looked\_VBD at\_IN the\_DT child\_NN 's\_POS throat\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD without\_IN a\_DT scratch\_NN or\_CC scar\_NN of\_IN any\_DT kind\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Was\_VBD I\_PRP right\_JJ ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP asked\_VBD triumphantly\_RB .\_.

``\_`` We\_PRP were\_VBD just\_RB in\_IN time\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP thankfully\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP had\_VBD now\_RB to\_TO decide\_VB what\_WP we\_PRP were\_VBD to\_TO do\_VB with\_IN the\_DT child\_NN ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB consulted\_VBN about\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

If\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD to\_TO take\_VB it\_PRP to\_TO a\_DT police-station\_NN we\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB to\_TO give\_VB some\_DT account\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ movements\_NNS during\_IN the\_DT night\_NN ;\_: at\_IN least\_JJS ,\_, we\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB had\_VBD to\_TO make\_VB some\_DT statement\_NN as\_IN to\_TO how\_WRB we\_PRP had\_VBD come\_VBN to\_TO find\_VB the\_DT child\_NN .\_.

So\_RB finally\_RB we\_PRP decided\_VBD that\_IN we\_PRP would\_MD take\_VB it\_PRP to\_TO the\_DT Heath\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB we\_PRP heard\_VBD a\_DT policeman\_NN coming\_VBG ,\_, would\_MD leave\_VB it\_PRP where\_WRB he\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB fail\_VB to\_TO find\_VB it\_PRP ;\_: we\_PRP would\_MD then\_RB seek\_VB our\_PRP$ way\_NN home\_NN as\_RB quickly\_RB as\_IN we\_PRP could\_MD .\_.

All\_DT fell\_VBD out\_RP well\_RB .\_.

At\_IN the\_DT edge\_NN of\_IN Hampstead\_NNP Heath\_NNP we\_PRP heard\_VBD a\_DT policeman\_NN 's\_POS heavy\_JJ tramp\_NN ,\_, and\_CC laying\_VBG the\_DT child\_NN on\_IN the\_DT pathway\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP waited\_VBD and\_CC watched\_VBD until\_IN he\_PRP saw\_VBD it\_PRP as\_IN he\_PRP flashed\_VBD his\_PRP$ lantern\_NN to\_TO and\_CC fro\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP heard\_VBD his\_PRP$ exclamation\_NN of\_IN astonishment\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB we\_PRP went\_VBD away\_RB silently\_RB .\_.

By\_IN good\_JJ chance\_NN we\_PRP got\_VBD a\_DT cab\_NN near\_IN the\_DT ``\_`` Spaniards\_NNPS ,\_, ''\_'' and\_CC drove\_VBD to\_TO town\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB sleep\_VB ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP make\_VBP this\_DT entry\_NN .\_.

But\_CC I\_PRP must\_MD try\_VB to\_TO get\_VB a\_DT few\_JJ hours\_NNS '\_POS sleep\_NN ,\_, as\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP is\_VBZ to\_TO call\_VB for\_IN me\_PRP at\_IN noon\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP insists\_VBZ that\_IN I\_PRP shall\_MD go\_VB with\_IN him\_PRP on\_IN another\_DT expedition\_NN .\_.

27\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: It\_PRP was\_VBD two\_CD o'clock\_RB before\_IN we\_PRP found\_VBD a\_DT suitable\_JJ opportunity\_NN for\_IN our\_PRP$ attempt\_NN .\_.

The\_DT funeral\_NN held\_VBN at\_IN noon\_NN was\_VBD all\_DT completed\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT last\_JJ stragglers\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT mourners\_NNS had\_VBD taken\_VBN themselves\_PRP lazily\_RB away\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB ,\_, looking\_VBG carefully\_RB from\_IN behind\_IN a\_DT clump\_NN of\_IN alder-trees\_NNS ,\_, we\_PRP saw\_VBD the\_DT sexton\_NN lock\_VB the\_DT gate\_NN after\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

We\_PRP knew\_VBD then\_RB that\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD safe\_JJ till\_IN morning\_NN did\_VBD we\_PRP desire\_VB it\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC the\_DT Professor\_NNP told\_VBD me\_PRP that\_IN we\_PRP should\_MD not\_RB want\_VB more\_JJR than\_IN an\_DT hour\_NN at\_IN most\_JJS .\_.

Again\_RB I\_PRP felt\_VBD that\_IN horrid\_JJ sense\_NN of\_IN the\_DT reality\_NN of\_IN things\_NNS ,\_, in\_IN which\_WDT any\_DT effort\_NN of\_IN imagination\_NN seemed\_VBD out\_IN of\_IN place\_NN ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP realised\_VBD distinctly\_RB the\_DT perils\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT law\_NN which\_WDT we\_PRP were\_VBD incurring\_VBG in\_IN our\_PRP$ unhallowed\_JJ work\_NN .\_.

Besides\_IN ,\_, I\_PRP felt\_VBD it\_PRP was\_VBD all\_RB so\_RB useless\_JJ .\_.

Outrageous\_JJ as\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD to\_TO open\_VB a\_DT leaden\_JJ coffin\_NN ,\_, to\_TO see\_VB if\_IN a\_DT woman\_NN dead\_NN nearly\_RB a\_DT week\_NN were\_VBD really\_RB dead\_JJ ,\_, it\_PRP now\_RB seemed\_VBD the\_DT height\_NN of\_IN folly\_NN to\_TO open\_VB the\_DT tomb\_NN again\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB we\_PRP knew\_VBD ,\_, from\_IN the\_DT evidence\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ own\_JJ eyesight\_NN ,\_, that\_IN the\_DT coffin\_NN was\_VBD empty\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP shrugged\_VBD my\_PRP$ shoulders\_NNS ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, and\_CC rested\_VBD silent\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP had\_VBD a\_DT way\_NN of\_IN going\_VBG on\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ road\_NN ,\_, no\_DT matter\_NN who\_WP remonstrated\_VBD .\_.

He\_PRP took\_VBD the\_DT key\_NN ,\_, opened\_VBD the\_DT vault\_NN ,\_, and\_CC again\_RB courteously\_RB motioned\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO precede\_VB .\_.

The\_DT place\_NN was\_VBD not\_RB so\_RB gruesome\_JJ as\_IN last\_JJ night\_NN ,\_, but\_CC oh\_UH ,\_, how\_WRB unutterably\_RB mean-looking\_JJ when\_WRB the\_DT sunshine\_NN streamed\_VBN in\_IN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP walked\_VBD over\_RP to\_TO Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS coffin\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP followed\_VBD .\_.

He\_PRP bent\_JJ over\_RB and\_CC again\_RB forced\_VBD back\_RP the\_DT leaden\_JJ flange\_NN ;\_: and\_CC then\_RB a\_DT shock\_NN of\_IN surprise\_NN and\_CC dismay\_NN shot\_NN through\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

There\_EX lay\_VBD Lucy\_NNP ,\_, seemingly\_RB just\_RB as\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD seen\_VBN her\_PRP the\_DT night\_NN before\_IN her\_PRP$ funeral\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, if\_IN possible\_JJ ,\_, more\_RBR radiantly\_RB beautiful\_JJ than\_IN ever\_RB ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB believe\_VB that\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD dead\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT lips\_NNS were\_VBD red\_JJ ,\_, nay\_NN redder\_JJR than\_IN before\_RB ;\_: and\_CC on\_IN the\_DT cheeks\_NNS was\_VBD a\_DT delicate\_JJ bloom\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Is\_VBZ this\_DT a\_DT juggle\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP .\_.

``\_`` Are\_VBP you\_PRP convinced\_VBN now\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

said\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP in\_IN response\_NN ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD he\_PRP put\_VBD over\_RP his\_PRP$ hand\_NN ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN a\_DT way\_NN that\_WDT made\_VBD me\_PRP shudder\_JJR ,\_, pulled\_VBD back\_RP the\_DT dead\_JJ lips\_NNS and\_CC showed\_VBD the\_DT white\_JJ teeth\_NNS .\_.

``\_`` See\_VB ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN ,\_, ``\_`` see\_VB ,\_, they\_PRP are\_VBP even\_RB sharper\_JJR than\_IN before\_RB .\_.

With\_IN this\_DT and\_CC this\_DT ''\_'' --\_: and\_CC he\_PRP touched\_VBD one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT canine\_NN teeth\_NNS and\_CC that\_IN below\_IN it\_PRP --\_: ``\_`` the\_DT little\_JJ children\_NNS can\_MD be\_VB bitten\_VBN .\_.

Are\_VBP you\_PRP of\_IN belief\_NN now\_RB ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP ?\_. ''\_''

Once\_RB more\_JJR ,\_, argumentative\_JJ hostility\_NN woke\_VBD within\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB accept\_VB such\_JJ an\_DT overwhelming\_JJ idea\_NN as\_IN he\_PRP suggested\_VBD ;\_: so\_RB ,\_, with\_IN an\_DT attempt\_NN to\_TO argue\_VB of\_IN which\_WDT I\_PRP was\_VBD even\_RB at\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN ashamed\_JJ ,\_, I\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` She\_PRP may\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN placed\_VBN here\_RB since\_IN last\_JJ night\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Indeed\_RB ?\_.

That\_DT is\_VBZ so\_RB ,\_, and\_CC by\_IN whom\_WP ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB know\_VB .\_.

Some\_DT one\_NN has\_VBZ done\_VBN it\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` And\_CC yet\_RB she\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN dead\_JJ one\_CD week\_NN .\_.

Most\_JJS peoples\_NNS in\_IN that\_DT time\_NN would\_MD not\_RB look\_VB so\_RB .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP had\_VBD no\_DT answer\_NN for\_IN this\_DT ,\_, so\_RB was\_VBD silent\_JJ .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP did\_VBD not\_RB seem\_VB to\_TO notice\_VB my\_PRP$ silence\_NN ;\_: at\_IN any\_DT rate\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP showed\_VBD neither\_CC chagrin\_NN nor\_CC triumph\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD looking\_VBG intently\_RB at\_IN the\_DT face\_NN of\_IN the\_DT dead\_JJ woman\_NN ,\_, raising\_VBG the\_DT eyelids\_NNS and\_CC looking\_VBG at\_IN the\_DT eyes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC once\_RB more\_RBR opening\_VBG the\_DT lips\_NNS and\_CC examining\_VBG the\_DT teeth\_NNS .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP turned\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Here\_RB ,\_, there\_EX is\_VBZ one\_CD thing\_NN which\_WDT is\_VBZ different\_JJ from\_IN all\_DT recorded\_VBN ;\_: here\_RB is\_VBZ some\_DT dual\_JJ life\_NN that\_WDT is\_VBZ not\_RB as\_IN the\_DT common\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP was\_VBD bitten\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT vampire\_NN when\_WRB she\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT trance\_NN ,\_, sleep-walking\_JJ --\_: oh\_UH ,\_, you\_PRP start\_VBP ;\_: you\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB know\_VB that\_DT ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, but\_CC you\_PRP shall\_MD know\_VB it\_PRP all\_RB later\_RB --\_: and\_CC in\_IN trance\_NN could\_MD he\_PRP best\_RB come\_VBN to\_TO take\_VB more\_JJR blood\_NN .\_.

In\_IN trance\_NN she\_PRP died\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN trance\_NN she\_PRP is\_VBZ Un-Dead\_NNP ,\_, too\_RB .\_.

So\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ that\_IN she\_PRP differ\_VBP from\_IN all\_DT other\_JJ .\_.

Usually\_RB when\_WRB the\_DT Un-Dead\_NNP sleep\_NN at\_IN home\_NN ''\_'' --\_: as\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD he\_PRP made\_VBD a\_DT comprehensive\_JJ sweep\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ arm\_NN to\_TO designate\_VB what\_WP to\_TO a\_DT vampire\_NN was\_VBD ``\_`` home\_NN ''\_'' --\_: ``\_`` their\_PRP$ face\_NN show\_VBP what\_WP they\_PRP are\_VBP ,\_, but\_CC this\_DT so\_RB sweet\_JJ that\_WDT was\_VBD when\_WRB she\_PRP not\_RB Un-Dead\_NNP she\_PRP go\_VBP back\_RB to\_TO the\_DT nothings\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT common\_JJ dead\_NN .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT malign\_NN there\_RB ,\_, see\_VB ,\_, and\_CC so\_IN it\_PRP make\_VB hard\_RB that\_IN I\_PRP must\_MD kill\_VB her\_PRP in\_IN her\_PRP$ sleep\_NN .\_. ''\_''

This\_DT turned\_VBD my\_PRP$ blood\_NN cold\_NN ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO dawn\_NN upon\_IN me\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD accepting\_VBG Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP 's\_POS theories\_NNS ;\_: but\_CC if\_IN she\_PRP were\_VBD really\_RB dead\_JJ ,\_, what\_WP was\_VBD there\_RB of\_IN terror\_NN in\_IN the\_DT idea\_NN of\_IN killing\_VBG her\_PRP ?\_.

He\_PRP looked\_VBD up\_RP at\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC evidently\_RB saw\_VBD the\_DT change\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP said\_VBD almost\_RB joyously\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Ah\_UH ,\_, you\_PRP believe\_VBP now\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP answered\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` Do\_VBP not\_RB press\_VB me\_PRP too\_RB hard\_RB all\_DT at\_IN once\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP willing\_JJ to\_TO accept\_VB .\_.

How\_WRB will\_MD you\_PRP do\_VB this\_DT bloody\_JJ work\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP shall\_MD cut\_VB off\_RP her\_PRP$ head\_NN and\_CC fill\_VB her\_PRP$ mouth\_NN with\_IN garlic\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD drive\_VB a\_DT stake\_NN through\_IN her\_PRP$ body\_NN .\_. ''\_''

It\_PRP made\_VBD me\_PRP shudder\_JJR to\_TO think\_VB of\_IN so\_RB mutilating\_VBG the\_DT body\_NN of\_IN the\_DT woman\_NN whom\_WP I\_PRP had\_VBD loved\_VBN .\_.

And\_CC yet\_RB the\_DT feeling\_NN was\_VBD not\_RB so\_RB strong\_JJ as\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD expected\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, in\_IN fact\_NN ,\_, beginning\_VBG to\_TO shudder\_VB at\_IN the\_DT presence\_NN of\_IN this\_DT being\_NN ,\_, this\_DT Un-Dead\_NNP ,\_, as\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP called\_VBD it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO loathe\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

Is\_VBZ it\_PRP possible\_JJ that\_IN love\_NN is\_VBZ all\_DT subjective\_JJ ,\_, or\_CC all\_DT objective\_NN ?\_.

I\_PRP waited\_VBD a\_DT considerable\_JJ time\_NN for\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP to\_TO begin\_VB ,\_, but\_CC he\_PRP stood\_VBD as\_IN if\_IN wrapped\_VBN in\_IN thought\_NN .\_.

Presently\_RB he\_PRP closed\_VBD the\_DT catch\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ bag\_NN with\_IN a\_DT snap\_NN ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN thinking\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC have\_VBP made\_VBN up\_RP my\_PRP$ mind\_NN as\_IN to\_TO what\_WP is\_VBZ best\_JJS .\_.

If\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD simply\_RB follow\_VB my\_PRP$ inclining\_VBG I\_PRP would\_MD do\_VB now\_RB ,\_, at\_IN this\_DT moment\_NN ,\_, what\_WP is\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB done\_VBN ;\_: but\_CC there\_EX are\_VBP other\_JJ things\_NNS to\_TO follow\_VB ,\_, and\_CC things\_NNS that\_WDT are\_VBP thousand\_CD times\_NNS more\_RBR difficult\_JJ in\_IN that\_IN them\_PRP we\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB know\_VB .\_.

This\_DT is\_VBZ simple\_JJ .\_.

She\_PRP have\_VBP yet\_RB no\_DT life\_NN taken\_VBN ,\_, though\_IN that\_DT is\_VBZ of\_IN time\_NN ;\_: and\_CC to\_TO act\_VB now\_RB would\_MD be\_VB to\_TO take\_VB danger\_NN from\_IN her\_PRP for\_IN ever\_RB .\_.

But\_CC then\_RB we\_PRP may\_MD have\_VB to\_TO want\_VB Arthur\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC how\_WRB shall\_MD we\_PRP tell\_VB him\_PRP of\_IN this\_DT ?\_.

If\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, who\_WP saw\_VBD the\_DT wounds\_NNS on\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS throat\_NN ,\_, and\_CC saw\_VBD the\_DT wounds\_NNS so\_RB similar\_JJ on\_IN the\_DT child\_NN 's\_POS at\_IN the\_DT hospital\_NN ;\_: if\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, who\_WP saw\_VBD the\_DT coffin\_NN empty\_JJ last\_JJ night\_NN and\_CC full\_JJ to-day\_NN with\_IN a\_DT woman\_NN who\_WP have\_VBP not\_RB change\_VB only\_RB to\_TO be\_VB more\_JJR rose\_NN and\_CC more\_RBR beautiful\_JJ in\_IN a\_DT whole\_JJ week\_NN ,\_, after\_IN she\_PRP die\_VB --\_: if\_IN you\_PRP know\_VBP of\_IN this\_DT and\_CC know\_VB of\_IN the\_DT white\_JJ figure\_NN last\_JJ night\_NN that\_WDT brought\_VBD the\_DT child\_NN to\_TO the\_DT churchyard\_NN ,\_, and\_CC yet\_RB of\_IN your\_PRP$ own\_JJ senses\_NNS you\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB believe\_VB ,\_, how\_WRB ,\_, then\_RB ,\_, can\_MD I\_PRP expect\_VB Arthur\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP know\_VBP none\_NN of\_IN those\_DT things\_NNS ,\_, to\_TO believe\_VB ?\_.

He\_PRP doubted\_VBD me\_PRP when\_WRB I\_PRP took\_VBD him\_PRP from\_IN her\_PRP$ kiss\_NN when\_WRB she\_PRP was\_VBD dying\_VBG .\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP he\_PRP has\_VBZ forgiven\_VBN me\_PRP because\_IN in\_IN some\_DT mistaken\_JJ idea\_NN I\_PRP have\_VBP done\_VBN things\_NNS that\_WDT prevent\_VBP him\_PRP say\_VB good-bye\_NN as\_IN he\_PRP ought\_MD ;\_: and\_CC he\_PRP may\_MD think\_VB that\_IN in\_IN some\_DT more\_RBR mistaken\_JJ idea\_NN this\_DT woman\_NN was\_VBD buried\_VBN alive\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC that\_IN in\_IN most\_JJS mistake\_NN of\_IN all\_DT we\_PRP have\_VBP killed\_VBN her\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP will\_MD then\_RB argue\_VB back\_RB that\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ we\_PRP ,\_, mistaken\_JJ ones\_NNS ,\_, that\_WDT have\_VBP killed\_VBN her\_PRP by\_IN our\_PRP$ ideas\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC so\_RB he\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB much\_RB unhappy\_JJ always\_RB .\_.

Yet\_CC he\_PRP never\_RB can\_MD be\_VB sure\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC that\_DT is\_VBZ the\_DT worst\_JJS of\_IN all\_DT .\_.

And\_CC he\_PRP will\_MD sometimes\_RB think\_VB that\_IN she\_PRP he\_PRP loved\_VBD was\_VBD buried\_VBN alive\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC that\_DT will\_MD paint\_VB his\_PRP$ dreams\_NNS with\_IN horrors\_NNS of\_IN what\_WP she\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB suffered\_VBN ;\_: and\_CC again\_RB ,\_, he\_PRP will\_MD think\_VB that\_IN we\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB right\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN his\_PRP$ so\_RB beloved\_JJ was\_VBD ,\_, after\_IN all\_DT ,\_, an\_DT Un-Dead\_NNP .\_.

No\_DT !\_.

I\_PRP told\_VBD him\_PRP once\_RB ,\_, and\_CC since\_IN then\_RB I\_PRP learn\_VBP much\_JJ .\_.

Now\_RB ,\_, since\_IN I\_PRP know\_VBP it\_PRP is\_VBZ all\_DT true\_JJ ,\_, a\_DT hundred\_CD thousand\_CD times\_NNS more\_RBR do\_VBP I\_PRP know\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP must\_MD pass\_VB through\_IN the\_DT bitter\_JJ waters\_NNS to\_TO reach\_VB the\_DT sweet\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP ,\_, poor\_JJ fellow\_NN ,\_, must\_MD have\_VB one\_CD hour\_NN that\_WDT will\_MD make\_VB the\_DT very\_JJ face\_NN of\_IN heaven\_NN grow\_VBP black\_JJ to\_TO him\_PRP ;\_: then\_RB we\_PRP can\_MD act\_VB for\_IN good\_JJ all\_DT round\_NN and\_CC send\_VB him\_PRP peace\_NN .\_.

My\_PRP$ mind\_NN is\_VBZ made\_VBN up\_RP .\_.

Let\_VB us\_PRP go\_VB .\_.

You\_PRP return\_VBP home\_NN for\_IN to-night\_NN to\_TO your\_PRP$ asylum\_NN ,\_, and\_CC see\_VB that\_IN all\_DT be\_VB well\_RB .\_.

As\_IN for\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP shall\_MD spend\_VB the\_DT night\_NN here\_RB in\_IN this\_DT churchyard\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ way\_NN .\_.

To-morrow\_JJ night\_NN you\_PRP will\_MD come\_VB to\_TO me\_PRP to\_TO the\_DT Berkeley\_NNP Hotel\_NNP at\_IN ten\_CD of\_IN the\_DT clock\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD send\_VB for\_IN Arthur\_NNP to\_TO come\_VB too\_RB ,\_, and\_CC also\_RB that\_IN so\_RB fine\_JJ young\_JJ man\_NN of\_IN America\_NNP that\_WDT gave\_VBD his\_PRP$ blood\_NN .\_.

Later\_RB we\_PRP shall\_MD all\_DT have\_VBP work\_NN to\_TO do\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP come\_VBP with\_IN you\_PRP so\_RB far\_RB as\_IN Piccadilly\_NNP and\_CC there\_EX dine\_VBP ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB back\_RB here\_RB before\_IN the\_DT sun\_NN set\_NN .\_. ''\_''

So\_RB we\_PRP locked\_VBD the\_DT tomb\_NN and\_CC came\_VBD away\_RB ,\_, and\_CC got\_VBD over\_IN the\_DT wall\_NN of\_IN the\_DT churchyard\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT was\_VBD not\_RB much\_JJ of\_IN a\_DT task\_NN ,\_, and\_CC drove\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO Piccadilly\_NNP .\_.

Note\_VB left\_VBN by\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP in\_IN his\_PRP$ portmanteau\_NN ,\_, Berkeley\_NNP Hotel\_NNP directed\_VBD to\_TO John\_NNP Seward\_NNP ,\_, M.\_NNP D.\_NNP -LRB-\_-LRB- Not\_RB delivered\_VBN .\_. -RRB-\_-RRB-

``\_`` 27\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` Friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP write\_VBP this\_DT in\_IN case\_NN anything\_NN should\_MD happen\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP go\_VBP alone\_RB to\_TO watch\_VB in\_IN that\_DT churchyard\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP pleases\_VBZ me\_PRP that\_IN the\_DT Un-Dead\_NNP ,\_, Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP ,\_, shall\_MD not\_RB leave\_VB to-night\_NN ,\_, that\_WDT so\_RB on\_IN the\_DT morrow\_NN night\_NN she\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB more\_RBR eager\_JJ .\_.

Therefore\_RB I\_PRP shall\_MD fix\_VB some\_DT things\_NNS she\_PRP like\_IN not\_RB --\_: garlic\_NN and\_CC a\_DT crucifix\_NN --\_: and\_CC so\_RB seal\_VB up\_RP the\_DT door\_NN of\_IN the\_DT tomb\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP is\_VBZ young\_JJ as\_IN Un-Dead\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC will\_MD heed\_VB .\_.

Moreover\_RB ,\_, these\_DT are\_VBP only\_RB to\_TO prevent\_VB her\_PRP coming\_VBG out\_RP ;\_: they\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB prevail\_VB on\_IN her\_PRP wanting\_VBG to\_TO get\_VB in\_IN ;\_: for\_IN then\_RB the\_DT Un-Dead\_NNP is\_VBZ desperate\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC must\_MD find\_VB the\_DT line\_NN of\_IN least\_JJS resistance\_NN ,\_, whatsoever\_RB it\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB at\_IN hand\_NN all\_PDT the\_DT night\_NN from\_IN sunset\_NN till\_IN after\_IN the\_DT sunrise\_NN ,\_, and\_CC if\_IN there\_RB be\_VB aught\_NN that\_WDT may\_MD be\_VB learned\_VBN I\_PRP shall\_MD learn\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

For\_IN Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP or\_CC from\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP have\_VBP no\_DT fear\_NN ;\_: but\_CC that\_IN other\_JJ to\_TO whom\_WP is\_VBZ there\_RB that\_IN she\_PRP is\_VBZ Un-Dead\_NNP ,\_, he\_PRP have\_VBP now\_RB the\_DT power\_NN to\_TO seek\_VB her\_PRP$ tomb\_NN and\_CC find\_VB shelter\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ cunning\_JJ ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP know\_VBP from\_IN Mr.\_NNP Jonathan\_NNP and\_CC from\_IN the\_DT way\_NN that\_IN all\_DT along\_IN he\_PRP have\_VBP fooled\_VBN us\_PRP when\_WRB he\_PRP played\_VBD with\_IN us\_PRP for\_IN Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS life\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP lost\_VBD ;\_: and\_CC in\_IN many\_JJ ways\_NNS the\_DT Un-Dead\_NNP are\_VBP strong\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP have\_VBP always\_RB the\_DT strength\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ hand\_NN of\_IN twenty\_CD men\_NNS ;\_: even\_RB we\_PRP four\_CD who\_WP gave\_VBD our\_PRP$ strength\_NN to\_TO Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP it\_PRP also\_RB is\_VBZ all\_DT to\_TO him\_PRP .\_.

Besides\_IN ,\_, he\_PRP can\_MD summon\_VB his\_PRP$ wolf\_NN and\_CC I\_PRP know\_VBP not\_RB what\_WP .\_.

So\_RB if\_IN it\_PRP be\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP come\_VB thither\_RB on\_IN this\_DT night\_NN he\_PRP shall\_MD find\_VB me\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC none\_NN other\_JJ shall\_MD --\_: until\_IN it\_PRP be\_VB too\_RB late\_JJ .\_.

But\_CC it\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB attempt\_VB the\_DT place\_NN .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT reason\_NN why\_WRB he\_PRP should\_MD ;\_: his\_PRP$ hunting\_NN ground\_NN is\_VBZ more\_RBR full\_JJ of\_IN game\_NN than\_IN the\_DT churchyard\_NN where\_WRB the\_DT Un-Dead\_JJ woman\_NN sleep\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT one\_CD old\_JJ man\_NN watch\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Therefore\_RB I\_PRP write\_VBP this\_DT in\_IN case\_NN ...\_: .\_.

Take\_VB the\_DT papers\_NNS that\_WDT are\_VBP with\_IN this\_DT ,\_, the\_DT diaries\_NNS of\_IN Harker\_NNP and\_CC the\_DT rest\_NN ,\_, and\_CC read\_VB them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB find\_VB this\_DT great\_JJ Un-Dead\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC cut\_VB off\_RP his\_PRP$ head\_NN and\_CC burn\_VB his\_PRP$ heart\_NN or\_CC drive\_VB a\_DT stake\_NN through\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN the\_DT world\_NN may\_MD rest\_VB from\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

``\_`` If\_IN it\_PRP be\_VB so\_RB ,\_, farewell\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

28\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: It\_PRP is\_VBZ wonderful\_JJ what\_WP a\_DT good\_JJ night\_NN 's\_POS sleep\_NN will\_MD do\_VB for\_IN one\_CD .\_.

Yesterday\_NN I\_PRP was\_VBD almost\_RB willing\_JJ to\_TO accept\_VB Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP 's\_POS monstrous\_JJ ideas\_NNS ;\_: but\_CC now\_RB they\_PRP seem\_VBP to\_TO start\_VB out\_RP lurid\_JJ before\_IN me\_PRP as\_IN outrages\_NNS on\_IN common\_JJ sense\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP no\_DT doubt\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP believes\_VBZ it\_PRP all\_DT .\_.

I\_PRP wonder\_VBP if\_IN his\_PRP$ mind\_NN can\_MD have\_VB become\_VBN in\_IN any\_DT way\_NN unhinged\_VBN .\_.

Surely\_RB there\_EX must\_MD be\_VB some\_DT rational\_JJ explanation\_NN of\_IN all\_PDT these\_DT mysterious\_JJ things\_NNS .\_.

Is\_VBZ it\_PRP possible\_JJ that\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP can\_MD have\_VB done\_VBN it\_PRP himself\_PRP ?\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ so\_RB abnormally\_RB clever\_JJ that\_IN if\_IN he\_PRP went\_VBD off\_RP his\_PRP$ head\_NN he\_PRP would\_MD carry\_VB out\_RP his\_PRP$ intent\_NN with\_IN regard\_NN to\_TO some\_DT fixed\_JJ idea\_NN in\_IN a\_DT wonderful\_JJ way\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP loath\_JJ to\_TO think\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC indeed\_RB it\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB almost\_RB as\_RB great\_JJ a\_DT marvel\_VB as\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ to\_TO find\_VB that\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP was\_VBD mad\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC anyhow\_RB I\_PRP shall\_MD watch\_VB him\_PRP carefully\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP may\_MD get\_VB some\_DT light\_NN on\_IN the\_DT mystery\_NN .\_.

29\_CD September\_NNP ,\_, morning\_NN ...\_: .\_.

Last\_JJ night\_NN ,\_, at\_IN a\_DT little\_JJ before\_IN ten\_CD o'clock\_RB ,\_, Arthur\_NNP and\_CC Quincey\_NNP came\_VBD into\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP 's\_POS room\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP told\_VBD us\_PRP all\_DT that\_IN he\_PRP wanted\_VBD us\_PRP to\_TO do\_VB ,\_, but\_CC especially\_RB addressing\_VBG himself\_PRP to\_TO Arthur\_NNP ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN all\_DT our\_PRP$ wills\_NNS were\_VBD centred\_VBN in\_IN his\_PRP$ .\_.

He\_PRP began\_VBD by\_IN saying\_VBG that\_IN he\_PRP hoped\_VBD we\_PRP would\_MD all\_DT come\_VB with\_IN him\_PRP too\_RB ,\_, ``\_`` for\_IN ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` there\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT grave\_JJ duty\_NN to\_TO be\_VB done\_VBN there\_RB .\_.

You\_PRP were\_VBD doubtless\_RB surprised\_VBN at\_IN my\_PRP$ letter\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

This\_DT query\_NN was\_VBD directly\_RB addressed\_VBN to\_TO Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP was\_VBD .\_.

It\_PRP rather\_RB upset\_VBD me\_PRP for\_IN a\_DT bit\_NN .\_.

There\_EX has\_VBZ been\_VBN so\_RB much\_JJ trouble\_NN around\_IN my\_PRP$ house\_NN of\_IN late\_RB that\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD do\_VB without\_IN any\_DT more\_JJR .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN curious\_JJ ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, as\_IN to\_TO what\_WP you\_PRP mean\_VBP .\_.

Quincey\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP talked\_VBD it\_PRP over\_IN ;\_: but\_CC the\_DT more\_JJR we\_PRP talked\_VBD ,\_, the\_DT more\_RBR puzzled\_VBN we\_PRP got\_VBD ,\_, till\_IN now\_RB I\_PRP can\_MD say\_VB for\_IN myself\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP 'm\_VBP about\_IN up\_RB a\_DT tree\_NN as\_IN to\_TO any\_DT meaning\_NN about\_IN anything\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Me\_PRP too\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD Quincey\_NNP Morris\_NNP laconically\_RB .\_.

``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP ,\_, ``\_`` then\_RB you\_PRP are\_VBP nearer\_IN the\_DT beginning\_NN ,\_, both\_DT of\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, than\_IN friend\_NN John\_NNP here\_RB ,\_, who\_WP has\_VBZ to\_TO go\_VB a\_DT long\_JJ way\_NN back\_RB before\_IN he\_PRP can\_MD even\_RB get\_VB so\_RB far\_RB as\_IN to\_TO begin\_VB .\_. ''\_''

It\_PRP was\_VBD evident\_JJ that\_IN he\_PRP recognised\_VBD my\_PRP$ return\_NN to\_TO my\_PRP$ old\_JJ doubting\_VBG frame\_NN of\_IN mind\_NN without\_IN my\_PRP$ saying\_VBG a\_DT word\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB ,\_, turning\_VBG to\_TO the\_DT other\_JJ two\_CD ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD with\_IN intense\_JJ gravity\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP want\_VBP your\_PRP$ permission\_NN to\_TO do\_VB what\_WP I\_PRP think\_VBP good\_JJ this\_DT night\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ ,\_, I\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, much\_RB to\_TO ask\_VB ;\_: and\_CC when\_WRB you\_PRP know\_VBP what\_WP it\_PRP is\_VBZ I\_PRP propose\_VBP to\_TO do\_VB you\_PRP will\_MD know\_VB ,\_, and\_CC only\_RB then\_RB ,\_, how\_WRB much\_JJ .\_.

Therefore\_RB may\_MD I\_PRP ask\_VB that\_IN you\_PRP promise\_VBP me\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT dark\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN afterwards\_RB ,\_, though\_IN you\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB angry\_JJ with\_IN me\_PRP for\_IN a\_DT time\_NN --\_: I\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB disguise\_VB from\_IN myself\_PRP the\_DT possibility\_NN that\_IN such\_JJ may\_MD be\_VB --\_: you\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB blame\_VB yourselves\_NNS for\_IN anything\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` That\_DT 's\_VBZ frank\_JJ anyhow\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' broke\_VBD in\_IN Quincey\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP 'll\_MD answer\_VB for\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB quite\_RB see\_VB his\_PRP$ drift\_NN ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP swear\_VBP he\_PRP 's\_VBZ honest\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC that\_DT 's\_VBZ good\_JJ enough\_RB for\_IN me\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP thank\_VBP you\_PRP ,\_, sir\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP proudly\_RB .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP have\_VBP done\_VBN myself\_PRP the\_DT honour\_NN of\_IN counting\_VBG you\_PRP one\_CD trusting\_VBG friend\_NN ,\_, and\_CC such\_JJ endorsement\_NN is\_VBZ dear\_RB to\_TO me\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP held\_VBD out\_RP a\_DT hand\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT Quincey\_NNP took\_VBD .\_.

Then\_RB Arthur\_NNP spoke\_VBD out\_RP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB quite\_RB like\_VB to\_TO `\_`` buy\_VB a\_DT pig\_NN in\_IN a\_DT poke\_NN ,\_, '\_'' as\_IN they\_PRP say\_VBP in\_IN Scotland\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC if\_IN it\_PRP be\_VB anything\_NN in\_IN which\_WDT my\_PRP$ honour\_NN as\_IN a\_DT gentleman\_NN or\_CC my\_PRP$ faith\_NN as\_IN a\_DT Christian\_NNP is\_VBZ concerned\_VBN ,\_, I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB make\_VB such\_JJ a\_DT promise\_NN .\_.

If\_IN you\_PRP can\_MD assure\_VB me\_PRP that\_IN what\_WP you\_PRP intend\_VBP does\_VBZ not\_RB violate\_VB either\_DT of\_IN these\_DT two\_CD ,\_, then\_RB I\_PRP give\_VBP my\_PRP$ consent\_NN at\_IN once\_RB ;\_: though\_IN for\_IN the\_DT life\_NN of\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB understand\_VB what\_WP you\_PRP are\_VBP driving\_VBG at\_IN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP accept\_VBP your\_PRP$ limitation\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, ``\_`` and\_CC all\_DT I\_PRP ask\_VBP of\_IN you\_PRP is\_VBZ that\_IN if\_IN you\_PRP feel\_VBP it\_PRP necessary\_JJ to\_TO condemn\_VB any\_DT act\_NN of\_IN mine\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP will\_MD first\_RB consider\_VB it\_PRP well\_RB and\_CC be\_VB satisfied\_VBN that\_IN it\_PRP does\_VBZ not\_RB violate\_VB your\_PRP$ reservations\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Agreed\_VBD !\_. ''\_''

said\_VBD Arthur\_NNP ;\_: ``\_`` that\_DT is\_VBZ only\_RB fair\_JJ .\_.

And\_CC now\_RB that\_IN the\_DT pourparlers\_NNS are\_VBP over\_RB ,\_, may\_MD I\_PRP ask\_VB what\_WP it\_PRP is\_VBZ we\_PRP are\_VBP to\_TO do\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP want\_VBP you\_PRP to\_TO come\_VB with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO come\_VB in\_IN secret\_NN ,\_, to\_TO the\_DT churchyard\_NN at\_IN Kingstead\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

Arthur\_NNP 's\_POS face\_NN fell\_VBD as\_IN he\_PRP said\_VBD in\_IN an\_DT amazed\_VBN sort\_NN of\_IN way\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Where\_WRB poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP is\_VBZ buried\_VBN ?\_. ''\_''

The\_DT Professor\_NNP bowed\_VBD .\_.

Arthur\_NNP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: ``\_`` And\_CC when\_WRB there\_EX ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` To\_TO enter\_VB the\_DT tomb\_NN !\_. ''\_''

Arthur\_NNP stood\_VBD up\_RP .\_.

``\_`` Professor\_NNP ,\_, are\_VBP you\_PRP in\_IN earnest\_NN ;\_: or\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ some\_DT monstrous\_JJ joke\_NN ?\_.

Pardon\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP see\_VBP that\_IN you\_PRP are\_VBP in\_IN earnest\_NN .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP sat\_VBD down\_RB again\_RB ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP sat\_VBD firmly\_RB and\_CC proudly\_RB ,\_, as\_IN one\_CD who\_WP is\_VBZ on\_IN his\_PRP$ dignity\_NN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD silence\_NN until\_IN he\_PRP asked\_VBD again\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` And\_CC when\_WRB in\_IN the\_DT tomb\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` To\_TO open\_VB the\_DT coffin\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` This\_DT is\_VBZ too\_RB much\_JJ !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, angrily\_RB rising\_VBG again\_RB .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP am\_VBP willing\_JJ to\_TO be\_VB patient\_JJ in\_IN all\_DT things\_NNS that\_WDT are\_VBP reasonable\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC in\_IN this\_DT --\_: this\_DT desecration\_NN of\_IN the\_DT grave\_NN --\_: of\_IN one\_CD who\_WP --\_: --\_: ''\_'' He\_PRP fairly\_RB choked\_VBD with\_IN indignation\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP looked\_VBD pityingly\_RB at\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

``\_`` If\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD spare\_VB you\_PRP one\_CD pang\_NN ,\_, my\_PRP$ poor\_JJ friend\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` God\_NNP knows\_VBZ I\_PRP would\_MD .\_.

But\_CC this\_DT night\_NN our\_PRP$ feet\_NNS must\_MD tread\_VB in\_IN thorny\_JJ paths\_NNS ;\_: or\_CC later\_RB ,\_, and\_CC for\_IN ever\_RB ,\_, the\_DT feet\_NNS you\_PRP love\_VBP must\_MD walk\_VB in\_IN paths\_NNS of\_IN flame\_NN !\_. ''\_''

Arthur\_NNP looked\_VBD up\_RP with\_IN set\_VBN white\_JJ face\_NN and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Take\_VB care\_NN ,\_, sir\_NN ,\_, take\_VB care\_NN !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Would\_MD it\_PRP not\_RB be\_VB well\_RB to\_TO hear\_VB what\_WP I\_PRP have\_VBP to\_TO say\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

said\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` And\_CC then\_RB you\_PRP will\_MD at\_IN least\_JJS know\_VBP the\_DT limit\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ purpose\_NN .\_.

Shall\_VB I\_PRP go\_VB on\_RP ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` That\_DT 's\_VBZ fair\_JJ enough\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' broke\_VBD in\_IN Morris\_NNP .\_.

After\_IN a\_DT pause\_NN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP went\_VBD on\_IN ,\_, evidently\_RB with\_IN an\_DT effort\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP is\_VBZ dead\_JJ ;\_: is\_VBZ it\_PRP not\_RB so\_RB ?\_.

Yes\_UH !\_.

Then\_RB there\_EX can\_MD be\_VB no\_RB wrong\_JJ to\_TO her\_PRP .\_.

But\_CC if\_IN she\_PRP be\_VB not\_RB dead\_JJ --\_: --\_: ''\_'' Arthur\_NNP jumped\_VBD to\_TO his\_PRP$ feet\_NNS .\_.

``\_`` Good\_NNP God\_NNP !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP cried\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` What\_WP do\_VBP you\_PRP mean\_VB ?\_.

Has\_VBZ there\_RB been\_VBN any\_DT mistake\_NN ;\_: has\_VBZ she\_PRP been\_VBN buried\_VBN alive\_JJ ?\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP groaned\_VBD in\_IN anguish\_NN that\_IN not\_RB even\_RB hope\_VB could\_MD soften\_VB .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB say\_VB she\_PRP was\_VBD alive\_JJ ,\_, my\_PRP$ child\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB think\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP go\_VBP no\_RB further\_RB than\_IN to\_TO say\_VB that\_IN she\_PRP might\_MD be\_VB Un-Dead\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Un-Dead\_NNP !\_.

Not\_RB alive\_JJ !\_.

What\_WP do\_VBP you\_PRP mean\_VB ?\_.

Is\_VBZ this\_DT all\_PDT a\_DT nightmare\_NN ,\_, or\_CC what\_WP is\_VBZ it\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` There\_EX are\_VBP mysteries\_NNS which\_WDT men\_NNS can\_MD only\_RB guess\_VB at\_IN ,\_, which\_WDT age\_NN by\_IN age\_NN they\_PRP may\_MD solve\_VB only\_RB in\_IN part\_NN .\_.

Believe\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, we\_PRP are\_VBP now\_RB on\_IN the\_DT verge\_NN of\_IN one\_CD .\_.

But\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB done\_VBN .\_.

May\_MD I\_PRP cut\_VB off\_RP the\_DT head\_NN of\_IN dead\_JJ Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Heavens\_NNS and\_CC earth\_NN ,\_, no\_DT !\_. ''\_''

cried\_VBD Arthur\_NNP in\_IN a\_DT storm\_NN of\_IN passion\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Not\_RB for\_IN the\_DT wide\_JJ world\_NN will\_MD I\_PRP consent\_VB to\_TO any\_DT mutilation\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ dead\_JJ body\_NN .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, you\_PRP try\_VBP me\_PRP too\_RB far\_RB .\_.

What\_WP have\_VBP I\_PRP done\_VBN to\_TO you\_PRP that\_IN you\_PRP should\_MD torture\_VB me\_PRP so\_RB ?\_.

What\_WP did\_VBD that\_DT poor\_JJ ,\_, sweet\_JJ girl\_NN do\_VBP that\_IN you\_PRP should\_MD want\_VB to\_TO cast\_VB such\_JJ dishonour\_NN on\_IN her\_PRP$ grave\_NN ?\_.

Are\_VBP you\_PRP mad\_JJ that\_WDT speak\_VBP such\_JJ things\_NNS ,\_, or\_CC am\_VBP I\_PRP mad\_JJ to\_TO listen\_VB to\_TO them\_PRP ?\_.

Do\_VBP n't\_RB dare\_VB to\_TO think\_VB more\_JJR of\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT desecration\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB give\_VB my\_PRP$ consent\_NN to\_TO anything\_NN you\_PRP do\_VBP .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP a\_DT duty\_NN to\_TO do\_VB in\_IN protecting\_VBG her\_PRP$ grave\_NN from\_IN outrage\_NN ;\_: and\_CC ,\_, by\_IN God\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP shall\_MD do\_VB it\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP rose\_VBD up\_RB from\_IN where\_WRB he\_PRP had\_VBD all\_PDT the\_DT time\_NN been\_VBN seated\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD ,\_, gravely\_RB and\_CC sternly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` My\_PRP$ Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, have\_VBP a\_DT duty\_NN to\_TO do\_VB ,\_, a\_DT duty\_NN to\_TO others\_NNS ,\_, a\_DT duty\_NN to\_TO you\_PRP ,\_, a\_DT duty\_NN to\_TO the\_DT dead\_NN ;\_: and\_CC ,\_, by\_IN God\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP shall\_MD do\_VB it\_PRP !\_.

All\_DT I\_PRP ask\_VBP you\_PRP now\_RB is\_VBZ that\_IN you\_PRP come\_VBP with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, that\_IN you\_PRP look\_VBP and\_CC listen\_VBP ;\_: and\_CC if\_IN when\_WRB later\_RB I\_PRP make\_VBP the\_DT same\_JJ request\_NN you\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB be\_VB more\_RBR eager\_JJ for\_IN its\_PRP$ fulfilment\_NN even\_RB than\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP ,\_, then\_RB --\_: then\_RB I\_PRP shall\_MD do\_VB my\_PRP$ duty\_NN ,\_, whatever\_WDT it\_PRP may\_MD seem\_VB to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

And\_CC then\_RB ,\_, to\_TO follow\_VB of\_IN your\_PRP$ Lordship\_NN 's\_POS wishes\_NNS I\_PRP shall\_MD hold\_VB myself\_PRP at\_IN your\_PRP$ disposal\_NN to\_TO render\_VB an\_DT account\_NN to\_TO you\_PRP ,\_, when\_WRB and\_CC where\_WRB you\_PRP will\_MD .\_. ''\_''

His\_PRP$ voice\_NN broke\_VBD a\_DT little\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_RP with\_IN a\_DT voice\_NN full\_JJ of\_IN pity\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` But\_CC ,\_, I\_PRP beseech\_VBP you\_PRP ,\_, do\_VBP not\_RB go\_VB forth\_RB in\_IN anger\_NN with\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

In\_IN a\_DT long\_JJ life\_NN of\_IN acts\_NNS which\_WDT were\_VBD often\_RB not\_RB pleasant\_JJ to\_TO do\_VB ,\_, and\_CC which\_WDT sometimes\_RB did\_VBD wring\_VB my\_PRP$ heart\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP have\_VBP never\_RB had\_VBN so\_RB heavy\_JJ a\_DT task\_NN as\_RB now\_RB .\_.

Believe\_VB me\_PRP that\_IN if\_IN the\_DT time\_NN comes\_VBZ for\_IN you\_PRP to\_TO change\_VB your\_PRP$ mind\_NN towards\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, one\_CD look\_NN from\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD wipe\_VB away\_RB all\_PDT this\_DT so\_RB sad\_JJ hour\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP would\_MD do\_VB what\_WP a\_DT man\_NN can\_MD to\_TO save\_VB you\_PRP from\_IN sorrow\_NN .\_.

Just\_RB think\_VB .\_.

For\_IN why\_WRB should\_MD I\_PRP give\_VB myself\_PRP so\_RB much\_JJ of\_IN labour\_NN and\_CC so\_RB much\_JJ of\_IN sorrow\_NN ?\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP come\_VBN here\_RB from\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ land\_NN to\_TO do\_VB what\_WP I\_PRP can\_MD of\_IN good\_JJ ;\_: at\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ to\_TO please\_VB my\_PRP$ friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB to\_TO help\_VB a\_DT sweet\_JJ young\_JJ lady\_NN ,\_, whom\_WP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP came\_VBD to\_TO love\_VB .\_.

For\_IN her\_PRP --\_: I\_PRP am\_VBP ashamed\_JJ to\_TO say\_VB so\_RB much\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP say\_VBP it\_PRP in\_IN kindness\_NN --\_: I\_PRP gave\_VBD what\_WP you\_PRP gave\_VBD ;\_: the\_DT blood\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ veins\_NNS ;\_: I\_PRP gave\_VBD it\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP ,\_, who\_WP was\_VBD not\_RB ,\_, like\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, her\_PRP$ lover\_NN ,\_, but\_CC only\_RB her\_PRP$ physician\_NN and\_CC her\_PRP$ friend\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP gave\_VBD to\_TO her\_PRP$ my\_PRP$ nights\_NNS and\_CC days\_NNS --\_: before\_IN death\_NN ,\_, after\_IN death\_NN ;\_: and\_CC if\_IN my\_PRP$ death\_NN can\_MD do\_VB her\_PRP$ good\_NN even\_RB now\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB she\_PRP is\_VBZ the\_DT dead\_JJ Un-Dead\_NNP ,\_, she\_PRP shall\_MD have\_VB it\_PRP freely\_RB .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP said\_VBD this\_DT with\_IN a\_DT very\_RB grave\_JJ ,\_, sweet\_JJ pride\_NN ,\_, and\_CC Arthur\_NNP was\_VBD much\_RB affected\_VBN by\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP took\_VBD the\_DT old\_JJ man\_NN 's\_POS hand\_NN and\_CC said\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT broken\_JJ voice\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, it\_PRP is\_VBZ hard\_JJ to\_TO think\_VB of\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB understand\_VB ;\_: but\_CC at\_IN least\_JJS I\_PRP shall\_MD go\_VB with\_IN you\_PRP and\_CC wait\_VB .\_. ''\_''

CHAPTER\_NNP XVI\_NNP DR.\_NNP SEWARD\_NNP 'S\_POS DIARY\_NN --\_: continued\_VBD IT\_NNP was\_VBD just\_RB a\_DT quarter\_NN before\_IN twelve\_CD o'clock\_RB when\_WRB we\_PRP got\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT churchyard\_NN over\_IN the\_DT low\_JJ wall\_NN .\_.

The\_DT night\_NN was\_VBD dark\_JJ with\_IN occasional\_JJ gleams\_NNS of\_IN moonlight\_NN between\_IN the\_DT rents\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT heavy\_JJ clouds\_NNS that\_WDT scudded\_VBD across\_IN the\_DT sky\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP all\_DT kept\_VBD somehow\_RB close\_RB together\_RB ,\_, with\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP slightly\_RB in\_IN front\_NN as\_IN he\_PRP led\_VBD the\_DT way\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP had\_VBD come\_VBN close\_RB to\_TO the\_DT tomb\_NN I\_PRP looked\_VBD well\_RB at\_IN Arthur\_NNP ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP feared\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT proximity\_NN to\_TO a\_DT place\_NN laden\_JJ with\_IN so\_RB sorrowful\_JJ a\_DT memory\_NN would\_MD upset\_VB him\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC he\_PRP bore\_VBD himself\_PRP well\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP took\_VBD it\_PRP that\_IN the\_DT very\_JJ mystery\_NN of\_IN the\_DT proceeding\_NN was\_VBD in\_IN some\_DT way\_NN a\_DT counteractant\_NN to\_TO his\_PRP$ grief\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP unlocked\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, and\_CC seeing\_VBG a\_DT natural\_JJ hesitation\_NN amongst\_IN us\_PRP for\_IN various\_JJ reasons\_NNS ,\_, solved\_VBD the\_DT difficulty\_NN by\_IN entering\_VBG first\_RB himself\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT rest\_NN of\_IN us\_PRP followed\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP closed\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP then\_RB lit\_VBD a\_DT dark\_JJ lantern\_NN and\_CC pointed\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT coffin\_NN .\_.

Arthur\_NNP stepped\_VBD forward\_RB hesitatingly\_RB ;\_: Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP were\_VBD with\_IN me\_PRP here\_RB yesterday\_NN .\_.

Was\_VBD the\_DT body\_NN of\_IN Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP in\_IN that\_DT coffin\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` It\_PRP was\_VBD .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT Professor\_NNP turned\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT rest\_NN saying\_VBG :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP hear\_VBP ;\_: and\_CC yet\_RB there\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT one\_NN who\_WP does\_VBZ not\_RB believe\_VB with\_IN me\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP took\_VBD his\_PRP$ screwdriver\_NN and\_CC again\_RB took\_VBD off\_RP the\_DT lid\_NN of\_IN the\_DT coffin\_NN .\_.

Arthur\_NNP looked\_VBD on\_IN ,\_, very\_RB pale\_JJ but\_CC silent\_JJ ;\_: when\_WRB the\_DT lid\_NN was\_VBD removed\_VBN he\_PRP stepped\_VBD forward\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP evidently\_RB did\_VBD not\_RB know\_VB that\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT leaden\_JJ coffin\_NN ,\_, or\_CC ,\_, at\_IN any\_DT rate\_NN ,\_, had\_VBD not\_RB thought\_VBN of\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

When\_WRB he\_PRP saw\_VBD the\_DT rent\_NN in\_IN the\_DT lead\_NN ,\_, the\_DT blood\_NN rushed\_VBD to\_TO his\_PRP$ face\_NN for\_IN an\_DT instant\_NN ,\_, but\_CC as\_RB quickly\_RB fell\_VBD away\_RB again\_RB ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN he\_PRP remained\_VBD of\_IN a\_DT ghastly\_JJ whiteness\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP was\_VBD still\_RB silent\_JJ .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP forced\_VBD back\_RP the\_DT leaden\_JJ flange\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP all\_DT looked\_VBD in\_IN and\_CC recoiled\_VBD .\_.

The\_DT coffin\_NN was\_VBD empty\_JJ !\_.

For\_IN several\_JJ minutes\_NNS no\_DT one\_NN spoke\_VBD a\_DT word\_NN .\_.

The\_DT silence\_NN was\_VBD broken\_VBN by\_IN Quincey\_NNP Morris\_NNP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Professor\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP answered\_VBD for\_IN you\_PRP .\_.

Your\_PRP$ word\_NN is\_VBZ all\_DT I\_PRP want\_VBP .\_.

I\_PRP would\_MD n't\_RB ask\_VB such\_JJ a\_DT thing\_NN ordinarily\_RB --\_: I\_PRP would\_MD n't\_RB so\_RB dishonour\_VB you\_PRP as\_IN to\_TO imply\_VB a\_DT doubt\_NN ;\_: but\_CC this\_DT is\_VBZ a\_DT mystery\_NN that\_WDT goes\_VBZ beyond\_IN any\_DT honour\_NN or\_CC dishonour\_NN .\_.

Is\_VBZ this\_DT your\_PRP$ doing\_VBG ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP swear\_VBP to\_TO you\_PRP by\_IN all\_DT that\_IN I\_PRP hold\_VBP sacred\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB removed\_VBN nor\_CC touched\_VBN her\_PRP .\_.

What\_WP happened\_VBD was\_VBD this\_DT :\_: Two\_CD nights\_NNS ago\_IN my\_PRP$ friend\_NN Seward\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP came\_VBD here\_RB --\_: with\_IN good\_JJ purpose\_NN ,\_, believe\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP opened\_VBD that\_IN coffin\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT was\_VBD then\_RB sealed\_VBN up\_RP ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP found\_VBD it\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN now\_RB ,\_, empty\_JJ .\_.

We\_PRP then\_RB waited\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC saw\_VBD something\_NN white\_NN come\_VBN through\_IN the\_DT trees\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT next\_JJ day\_NN we\_PRP came\_VBD here\_RB in\_IN day-time\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP lay\_VBD there\_RB .\_.

Did\_VBD she\_PRP not\_RB ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Yes\_UH .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` That\_DT night\_NN we\_PRP were\_VBD just\_RB in\_IN time\_NN .\_.

One\_CD more\_RBR so\_RB small\_JJ child\_NN was\_VBD missing\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP find\_VBP it\_PRP ,\_, thank\_VB God\_NNP ,\_, unharmed\_JJ amongst\_IN the\_DT graves\_NNS .\_.

Yesterday\_NN I\_PRP came\_VBD here\_RB before\_IN sundown\_NN ,\_, for\_IN at\_IN sundown\_NN the\_DT Un-Dead\_NNP can\_MD move\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP waited\_VBD here\_RB all\_PDT the\_DT night\_NN till\_IN the\_DT sun\_NN rose\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP saw\_VBD nothing\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD most\_RBS probable\_JJ that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD because\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD laid\_VBN over\_IN the\_DT clamps\_NNS of\_IN those\_DT doors\_NNS garlic\_VBP ,\_, which\_WDT the\_DT Un-Dead\_NNP can\_MD not\_RB bear\_VB ,\_, and\_CC other\_JJ things\_NNS which\_WDT they\_PRP shun\_VBP .\_.

Last\_JJ night\_NN there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT exodus\_NN ,\_, so\_RB to-night\_JJ before\_IN the\_DT sundown\_NN I\_PRP took\_VBD away\_RP my\_PRP$ garlic\_NN and\_CC other\_JJ things\_NNS .\_.

And\_CC so\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ we\_PRP find\_VBP this\_DT coffin\_NN empty\_JJ .\_.

But\_CC bear\_NN with\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

So\_RB far\_RB there\_EX is\_VBZ much\_RB that\_DT is\_VBZ strange\_JJ .\_.

Wait\_VB you\_PRP with\_IN me\_PRP outside\_JJ ,\_, unseen\_JJ and\_CC unheard\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC things\_NNS much\_JJ stranger\_NN are\_VBP yet\_RB to\_TO be\_VB .\_.

So\_RB ''\_'' --\_: here\_RB he\_PRP shut\_VBD the\_DT dark\_JJ slide\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ lantern\_NN --\_: ``\_`` now\_RB to\_TO the\_DT outside\_NN .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP opened\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP filed\_VBD out\_RP ,\_, he\_PRP coming\_VBG last\_JJ and\_CC locking\_VBG the\_DT door\_NN behind\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

Oh\_UH !\_.

but\_CC it\_PRP seemed\_VBD fresh\_JJ and\_CC pure\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT night\_NN air\_NN after\_IN the\_DT terror\_NN of\_IN that\_DT vault\_NN .\_.

How\_WRB sweet\_JJ it\_PRP was\_VBD to\_TO see\_VB the\_DT clouds\_NNS race\_NN by\_IN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT passing\_VBG gleams\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT moonlight\_NN between\_IN the\_DT scudding\_VBG clouds\_NNS crossing\_VBG and\_CC passing\_VBG --\_: like\_IN the\_DT gladness\_NN and\_CC sorrow\_NN of\_IN a\_DT man\_NN 's\_POS life\_NN ;\_: how\_WRB sweet\_JJ it\_PRP was\_VBD to\_TO breathe\_VB the\_DT fresh\_JJ air\_NN ,\_, that\_WDT had\_VBD no\_DT taint\_NN of\_IN death\_NN and\_CC decay\_NN ;\_: how\_WRB humanising\_VBG to\_TO see\_VB the\_DT red\_JJ lighting\_NN of\_IN the\_DT sky\_NN beyond\_IN the\_DT hill\_NN ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO hear\_VB far\_RB away\_RB the\_DT muffled\_VBN roar\_NN that\_WDT marks\_VBZ the\_DT life\_NN of\_IN a\_DT great\_JJ city\_NN .\_.

Each\_DT in\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ way\_NN was\_VBD solemn\_JJ and\_CC overcome\_VBN .\_.

Arthur\_NNP was\_VBD silent\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB ,\_, striving\_VBG to\_TO grasp\_VB the\_DT purpose\_NN and\_CC the\_DT inner\_JJ meaning\_NN of\_IN the\_DT mystery\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD myself\_PRP tolerably\_RB patient\_NN ,\_, and\_CC half\_NN inclined\_VBD again\_RB to\_TO throw\_VB aside\_RB doubt\_NN and\_CC to\_TO accept\_VB Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP 's\_POS conclusions\_NNS .\_.

Quincey\_NNP Morris\_NNP was\_VBD phlegmatic\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT way\_NN of\_IN a\_DT man\_NN who\_WP accepts\_VBZ all\_DT things\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC accepts\_VBZ them\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT spirit\_NN of\_IN cool\_JJ bravery\_NN ,\_, with\_IN hazard\_NN of\_IN all\_DT he\_PRP has\_VBZ to\_TO stake\_NN .\_.

Not\_RB being\_VBG able\_JJ to\_TO smoke\_VB ,\_, he\_PRP cut\_VBD himself\_PRP a\_DT good-sized\_JJ plug\_NN of\_IN tobacco\_NN and\_CC began\_VBD to\_TO chew\_VB .\_.

As\_IN to\_TO Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, he\_PRP was\_VBD employed\_VBN in\_IN a\_DT definite\_JJ way\_NN .\_.

First\_RB he\_PRP took\_VBD from\_IN his\_PRP$ bag\_NN a\_DT mass\_NN of\_IN what\_WP looked\_VBD like\_IN thin\_JJ ,\_, wafer-like\_JJ biscuit\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT was\_VBD carefully\_RB rolled\_VBN up\_RP in\_IN a\_DT white\_JJ napkin\_NN ;\_: next\_RB he\_PRP took\_VBD out\_RP a\_DT double-handful\_NN of\_IN some\_DT whitish\_JJ stuff\_NN ,\_, like\_IN dough\_NN or\_CC putty\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP crumbled\_VBD the\_DT wafer\_NN up\_RP fine\_NN and\_CC worked\_VBD it\_PRP into\_IN the\_DT mass\_NN between\_IN his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS .\_.

This\_DT he\_PRP then\_RB took\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC rolling\_VBG it\_PRP into\_IN thin\_JJ strips\_NNS ,\_, began\_VBD to\_TO lay\_VB them\_PRP into\_IN the\_DT crevices\_NNS between\_IN the\_DT door\_NN and\_CC its\_PRP$ setting\_NN in\_IN the\_DT tomb\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD somewhat\_RB puzzled\_VBN at\_IN this\_DT ,\_, and\_CC being\_VBG close\_JJ ,\_, asked\_VBD him\_PRP what\_WP it\_PRP was\_VBD that\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD doing\_VBG .\_.

Arthur\_NNP and\_CC Quincey\_NNP drew\_VBD near\_IN also\_RB ,\_, as\_IN they\_PRP too\_RB were\_VBD curious\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP answered\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP am\_VBP closing\_VBG the\_DT tomb\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN the\_DT Un-Dead\_NNP may\_MD not\_RB enter\_VB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` And\_CC is\_VBZ that\_DT stuff\_NN you\_PRP have\_VBP put\_VBN there\_RB going\_VBG to\_TO do\_VB it\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

asked\_VBD Quincey\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` Great\_NNP Scott\_NNP !\_.

Is\_VBZ this\_DT a\_DT game\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` It\_PRP is\_VBZ .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` What\_WP is\_VBZ that\_IN which\_WDT you\_PRP are\_VBP using\_VBG ?\_. ''\_''

This\_DT time\_NN the\_DT question\_NN was\_VBD by\_IN Arthur\_NNP .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP reverently\_RB lifted\_VBD his\_PRP$ hat\_NN as\_IN he\_PRP answered\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` The\_DT Host\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP brought\_VBD it\_PRP from\_IN Amsterdam\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP an\_DT Indulgence\_NN .\_. ''\_''

It\_PRP was\_VBD an\_DT answer\_NN that\_WDT appalled\_VBD the\_DT most\_RBS sceptical\_JJ of\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP felt\_VBD individually\_RB that\_IN in\_IN the\_DT presence\_NN of\_IN such\_JJ earnest\_JJ purpose\_NN as\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP 's\_POS ,\_, a\_DT purpose\_NN which\_WDT could\_MD thus\_RB use\_VB the\_DT to\_TO him\_PRP most\_RBS sacred\_JJ of\_IN things\_NNS ,\_, it\_PRP was\_VBD impossible\_JJ to\_TO distrust\_VB .\_.

In\_IN respectful\_JJ silence\_NN we\_PRP took\_VBD the\_DT places\_NNS assigned\_VBN to\_TO us\_PRP close\_RB round\_VBP the\_DT tomb\_NN ,\_, but\_CC hidden\_VBD from\_IN the\_DT sight\_NN of\_IN any\_DT one\_CD approaching\_VBG .\_.

I\_PRP pitied\_VBD the\_DT others\_NNS ,\_, especially\_RB Arthur\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD myself\_PRP been\_VBN apprenticed\_VBN by\_IN my\_PRP$ former\_JJ visits\_NNS to\_TO this\_DT watching\_VBG horror\_NN ;\_: and\_CC yet\_RB I\_PRP ,\_, who\_WP had\_VBD up\_RP to\_TO an\_DT hour\_NN ago\_RB repudiated\_VBD the\_DT proofs\_NNS ,\_, felt\_VBD my\_PRP$ heart\_NN sink\_NN within\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

Never\_NNP did\_VBD tombs\_NNS look\_VB so\_RB ghastly\_JJ white\_NN ;\_: never\_RB did\_VBD cypress\_NN ,\_, or\_CC yew\_NN ,\_, or\_CC juniper\_NN so\_RB seem\_VBP the\_DT embodiment\_NN of\_IN funereal\_JJ gloom\_NN ;\_: never\_RB did\_VBD tree\_NN or\_CC grass\_NN wave\_NN or\_CC rustle\_VB so\_RB ominously\_RB ;\_: never\_RB did\_VBD bough\_NN creak\_VB so\_RB mysteriously\_RB ;\_: and\_CC never\_RB did\_VBD the\_DT far-away\_JJ howling\_NN of\_IN dogs\_NNS send\_VBP such\_JJ a\_DT woeful\_NN presage\_VB through\_IN the\_DT night\_NN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT long\_JJ spell\_NN of\_IN silence\_NN ,\_, a\_DT big\_JJ ,\_, aching\_VBG void\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB from\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP a\_DT keen\_JJ ``\_`` S-s-s-s\_FW !\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP pointed\_VBD ;\_: and\_CC far\_RB down\_IN the\_DT avenue\_NN of\_IN yews\_NNS we\_PRP saw\_VBD a\_DT white\_JJ figure\_NN advance\_NN --\_: a\_DT dim\_JJ white\_JJ figure\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT held\_VBD something\_NN dark\_JJ at\_IN its\_PRP$ breast\_NN .\_.

The\_DT figure\_NN stopped\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC at\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN a\_DT ray\_NN of\_IN moonlight\_NN fell\_VBD upon\_IN the\_DT masses\_NNS of\_IN driving\_VBG clouds\_NNS and\_CC showed\_VBD in\_IN startling\_JJ prominence\_NN a\_DT dark-haired\_JJ woman\_NN ,\_, dressed\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT cerements\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT grave\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB see\_VB the\_DT face\_NN ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD bent\_JJ down\_RB over\_IN what\_WP we\_PRP saw\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB a\_DT fair-haired\_JJ child\_NN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT pause\_NN and\_CC a\_DT sharp\_JJ little\_JJ cry\_NN ,\_, such\_JJ as\_IN a\_DT child\_NN gives\_VBZ in\_IN sleep\_NN ,\_, or\_CC a\_DT dog\_NN as\_IN it\_PRP lies\_VBZ before\_IN the\_DT fire\_NN and\_CC dreams\_NNS .\_.

We\_PRP were\_VBD starting\_VBG forward\_RB ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT Professor\_NNP 's\_POS warning\_NN hand\_NN ,\_, seen\_VBN by\_IN us\_PRP as\_IN he\_PRP stood\_VBD behind\_IN a\_DT yew-tree\_NN ,\_, kept\_VBD us\_PRP back\_RB ;\_: and\_CC then\_RB as\_IN we\_PRP looked\_VBD the\_DT white\_JJ figure\_NN moved\_VBD forwards\_RB again\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD now\_RB near\_JJ enough\_RB for\_IN us\_PRP to\_TO see\_VB clearly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT moonlight\_NN still\_RB held\_VBN .\_.

My\_PRP$ own\_JJ heart\_NN grew\_VBD cold\_JJ as\_IN ice\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD hear\_VB the\_DT gasp\_VB of\_IN Arthur\_NNP ,\_, as\_IN we\_PRP recognised\_VBD the\_DT features\_NNS of\_IN Lucy\_NNP Westenra\_NNP .\_.

Lucy\_NNP Westenra\_NNP ,\_, but\_CC yet\_RB how\_WRB changed\_VBN .\_.

The\_DT sweetness\_NN was\_VBD turned\_VBN to\_TO adamantine\_JJ ,\_, heartless\_JJ cruelty\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT purity\_NN to\_TO voluptuous\_JJ wantonness\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP stepped\_VBD out\_RP ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, obedient\_JJ to\_TO his\_PRP$ gesture\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP all\_DT advanced\_VBD too\_RB ;\_: the\_DT four\_CD of\_IN us\_PRP ranged\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT line\_NN before\_IN the\_DT door\_NN of\_IN the\_DT tomb\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP raised\_VBD his\_PRP$ lantern\_NN and\_CC drew\_VBD the\_DT slide\_NN ;\_: by\_IN the\_DT concentrated\_JJ light\_NN that\_WDT fell\_VBD on\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS face\_NN we\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB that\_IN the\_DT lips\_NNS were\_VBD crimson\_JJ with\_IN fresh\_JJ blood\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN the\_DT stream\_NN had\_VBD trickled\_VBN over\_IN her\_PRP$ chin\_NN and\_CC stained\_VBD the\_DT purity\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ lawn\_NN death-robe\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP shuddered\_VBD with\_IN horror\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB by\_IN the\_DT tremulous\_JJ light\_NN that\_IN even\_RB Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP 's\_POS iron\_NN nerve\_NN had\_VBD failed\_VBN .\_.

Arthur\_NNP was\_VBD next\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC if\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB seized\_VBN his\_PRP$ arm\_NN and\_CC held\_VBD him\_PRP up\_RP ,\_, he\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB fallen\_VBN .\_.

When\_WRB Lucy\_NNP --\_: I\_PRP call\_VBP the\_DT thing\_NN that\_WDT was\_VBD before\_IN us\_PRP Lucy\_NNP because\_IN it\_PRP bore\_VBD her\_PRP$ shape\_NN --\_: saw\_VBD us\_PRP she\_PRP drew\_VBD back\_RB with\_IN an\_DT angry\_JJ snarl\_NN ,\_, such\_JJ as\_IN a\_DT cat\_NN gives\_VBZ when\_WRB taken\_VBN unawares\_NNS ;\_: then\_RB her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ranged\_VBD over\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS eyes\_NNS in\_IN form\_NN and\_CC colour\_NN ;\_: but\_CC Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS eyes\_NNS unclean\_JJ and\_CC full\_JJ of\_IN hell-fire\_NN ,\_, instead\_RB of\_IN the\_DT pure\_JJ ,\_, gentle\_JJ orbs\_NNS we\_PRP knew\_VBD .\_.

At\_IN that\_DT moment\_NN the\_DT remnant\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ love\_NN passed\_VBD into\_IN hate\_NN and\_CC loathing\_NN ;\_: had\_VBD she\_PRP then\_RB to\_TO be\_VB killed\_VBN ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD have\_VB done\_VBN it\_PRP with\_IN savage\_JJ delight\_NN .\_.

As\_IN she\_PRP looked\_VBD ,\_, her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS blazed\_VBN with\_IN unholy\_JJ light\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT face\_NN became\_VBD wreathed\_VBN with\_IN a\_DT voluptuous\_JJ smile\_NN .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, God\_NNP ,\_, how\_WRB it\_PRP made\_VBD me\_PRP shudder\_JJR to\_TO see\_VB it\_PRP !\_.

With\_IN a\_DT careless\_JJ motion\_NN ,\_, she\_PRP flung\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT ground\_NN ,\_, callous\_JJ as\_IN a\_DT devil\_NNP ,\_, the\_DT child\_NN that\_IN up\_IN to\_TO now\_RB she\_PRP had\_VBD clutched\_VBN strenuously\_RB to\_TO her\_PRP$ breast\_NN ,\_, growling\_VBG over\_IN it\_PRP as\_IN a\_DT dog\_NN growls\_VBZ over\_IN a\_DT bone\_NN .\_.

The\_DT child\_NN gave\_VBD a\_DT sharp\_JJ cry\_NN ,\_, and\_CC lay\_VBD there\_RB moaning\_VBG .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT cold-bloodedness\_NN in\_IN the\_DT act\_NN which\_WDT wrung\_VBD a\_DT groan\_NN from\_IN Arthur\_NNP ;\_: when\_WRB she\_PRP advanced\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP with\_IN outstretched\_VBN arms\_NNS and\_CC a\_DT wanton\_JJ smile\_NN he\_PRP fell\_VBD back\_RB and\_CC hid\_VBD his\_PRP$ face\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS .\_.

She\_PRP still\_RB advanced\_VBD ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN a\_DT languorous\_JJ ,\_, voluptuous\_JJ grace\_NN ,\_, said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Come\_VB to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, Arthur\_NNP .\_.

Leave\_VB these\_DT others\_NNS and\_CC come\_VBN to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

My\_PRP$ arms\_NNS are\_VBP hungry\_JJ for\_IN you\_PRP .\_.

Come\_VB ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP can\_MD rest\_VB together\_RB .\_.

Come\_VB ,\_, my\_PRP$ husband\_NN ,\_, come\_VB !\_. ''\_''

There\_EX was\_VBD something\_NN diabolically\_RB sweet\_JJ in\_IN her\_PRP$ tones\_NNS --\_: something\_NN of\_IN the\_DT tingling\_NN of\_IN glass\_NN when\_WRB struck\_VBN --\_: which\_WDT rang\_VBD through\_IN the\_DT brains\_NNS even\_RB of\_IN us\_PRP who\_WP heard\_VBD the\_DT words\_NNS addressed\_VBN to\_TO another\_DT .\_.

As\_IN for\_IN Arthur\_NNP ,\_, he\_PRP seemed\_VBD under\_IN a\_DT spell\_NN ;\_: moving\_VBG his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS from\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP opened\_VBD wide\_JJ his\_PRP$ arms\_NNS .\_.

She\_PRP was\_VBD leaping\_VBG for\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, when\_WRB Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP sprang\_VBD forward\_RB and\_CC held\_VBN between\_IN them\_PRP his\_PRP$ little\_JJ golden\_JJ crucifix\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP recoiled\_VBD from\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT suddenly\_RB distorted\_JJ face\_NN ,\_, full\_JJ of\_IN rage\_NN ,\_, dashed\_VBN past\_IN him\_PRP as\_IN if\_IN to\_TO enter\_VB the\_DT tomb\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB within\_IN a\_DT foot\_NN or\_CC two\_CD of\_IN the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, she\_PRP stopped\_VBD ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN arrested\_VBN by\_IN some\_DT irresistible\_JJ force\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB she\_PRP turned\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC her\_PRP$ face\_NN was\_VBD shown\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT clear\_JJ burst\_NN of\_IN moonlight\_NN and\_CC by\_IN the\_DT lamp\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT had\_VBD now\_RB no\_DT quiver\_NN from\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP 's\_POS iron\_NN nerves\_NNS .\_.

Never\_NNP did\_VBD I\_PRP see\_VB such\_JJ baffled\_JJ malice\_NN on\_IN a\_DT face\_NN ;\_: and\_CC never\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP trust\_VBP ,\_, shall\_MD such\_JJ ever\_RB be\_VB seen\_VBN again\_RB by\_IN mortal\_JJ eyes\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT beautiful\_JJ colour\_NN became\_VBD livid\_JJ ,\_, the\_DT eyes\_NNS seemed\_VBD to\_TO throw\_VB out\_RP sparks\_VBZ of\_IN hell-fire\_NN ,\_, the\_DT brows\_NNS were\_VBD wrinkled\_VBN as\_IN though\_IN the\_DT folds\_VBZ of\_IN the\_DT flesh\_NN were\_VBD the\_DT coils\_NNS of\_IN Medusa\_NNP 's\_POS snakes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT lovely\_JJ ,\_, blood-stained\_JJ mouth\_NN grew\_VBD to\_TO an\_DT open\_JJ square\_NN ,\_, as\_IN in\_IN the\_DT passion\_NN masks\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT Greeks\_NNPS and\_CC Japanese\_NNPS .\_.

If\_IN ever\_RB a\_DT face\_NN meant\_VBD death\_NN --\_: if\_IN looks\_NNS could\_MD kill\_VB --\_: we\_PRP saw\_VBD it\_PRP at\_IN that\_DT moment\_NN .\_.

And\_CC so\_RB for\_IN full\_JJ half\_PDT a\_DT minute\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT seemed\_VBD an\_DT eternity\_NN ,\_, she\_PRP remained\_VBD between\_IN the\_DT lifted\_VBN crucifix\_NN and\_CC the\_DT sacred\_JJ closing\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ means\_NNS of\_IN entry\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP broke\_VBD the\_DT silence\_NN by\_IN asking\_VBG Arthur\_NNP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Answer\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, oh\_UH my\_PRP$ friend\_NN !\_.

Am\_VBP I\_PRP to\_TO proceed\_VB in\_IN my\_PRP$ work\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

Arthur\_NNP threw\_VBD himself\_PRP on\_IN his\_PRP$ knees\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC hid\_VBD his\_PRP$ face\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP answered\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Do\_VBP as\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD ,\_, friend\_NN ;\_: do\_VBP as\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD .\_.

There\_EX can\_MD be\_VB no\_DT horror\_NN like\_IN this\_DT ever\_RB any\_DT more\_RBR ;\_: ''\_'' and\_CC he\_PRP groaned\_VBD in\_IN spirit\_NN .\_.

Quincey\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP simultaneously\_RB moved\_VBD towards\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC took\_VBD his\_PRP$ arms\_NNS .\_.

We\_PRP could\_MD hear\_VB the\_DT click\_VB of\_IN the\_DT closing\_NN lantern\_NN as\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP held\_VBD it\_PRP down\_RP ;\_: coming\_VBG close\_RB to\_TO the\_DT tomb\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO remove\_VB from\_IN the\_DT chinks\_NNS some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT sacred\_JJ emblem\_NN which\_WDT he\_PRP had\_VBD placed\_VBN there\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP all\_DT looked\_VBD on\_IN in\_FW horrified\_FW amazement\_NN as\_IN we\_PRP saw\_VBD ,\_, when\_WRB he\_PRP stood\_VBD back\_RB ,\_, the\_DT woman\_NN ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT corporeal\_JJ body\_NN as\_IN real\_JJ at\_IN that\_DT moment\_NN as\_IN our\_PRP$ own\_JJ ,\_, pass\_NN in\_IN through\_IN the\_DT interstice\_NN where\_WRB scarce\_JJ a\_DT knife-blade\_NN could\_MD have\_VB gone\_VBN .\_.

We\_PRP all\_DT felt\_VBD a\_DT glad\_JJ sense\_NN of\_IN relief\_NN when\_WRB we\_PRP saw\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP calmly\_RB restoring\_VBG the\_DT strings\_NNS of\_IN putty\_NN to\_TO the\_DT edges\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT door\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB this\_DT was\_VBD done\_VBN ,\_, he\_PRP lifted\_VBD the\_DT child\_NN and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` Come\_VB now\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ friends\_NNS ;\_: we\_PRP can\_MD do\_VB no\_RB more\_JJR till\_IN to-morrow\_NN .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT funeral\_NN at\_IN noon\_NN ,\_, so\_RB here\_RB we\_PRP shall\_MD all\_DT come\_VBP before\_RB long\_RB after\_IN that\_DT .\_.

The\_DT friends\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT dead\_NN will\_MD all\_DT be\_VB gone\_VBN by\_IN two\_CD ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB the\_DT sexton\_NN lock\_VBP the\_DT gate\_NN we\_PRP shall\_MD remain\_VB .\_.

Then\_RB there\_EX is\_VBZ more\_JJR to\_TO do\_VB ;\_: but\_CC not\_RB like\_IN this\_DT of\_IN to-night\_NN .\_.

As\_IN for\_IN this\_DT little\_JJ one\_CD ,\_, he\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB much\_JJ harm\_NN ,\_, and\_CC by\_IN to-morrow\_JJ night\_NN he\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB well\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP shall\_MD leave\_VB him\_PRP where\_WRB the\_DT police\_NN will\_MD find\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN on\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ night\_NN ;\_: and\_CC then\_RB to\_TO home\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Coming\_VBG close\_RB to\_TO Arthur\_NNP ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` My\_PRP$ friend\_NN Arthur\_NNP ,\_, you\_PRP have\_VBP had\_VBN a\_DT sore\_JJ trial\_NN ;\_: but\_CC after\_IN ,\_, when\_WRB you\_PRP look\_VBP back\_RB ,\_, you\_PRP will\_MD see\_VB how\_WRB it\_PRP was\_VBD necessary\_JJ .\_.

You\_PRP are\_VBP now\_RB in\_IN the\_DT bitter\_JJ waters\_NNS ,\_, my\_PRP$ child\_NN .\_.

By\_IN this\_DT time\_NN to-morrow\_NN you\_PRP will\_MD ,\_, please\_VB God\_NNP ,\_, have\_VBP passed\_VBN them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC have\_VBP drunk\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT sweet\_JJ waters\_NNS ;\_: so\_RB do\_VBP not\_RB mourn\_VB overmuch\_RB .\_.

Till\_IN then\_RB I\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB ask\_VB you\_PRP to\_TO forgive\_VB me\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

Arthur\_NNP and\_CC Quincey\_NNP came\_VBD home\_NN with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP tried\_VBD to\_TO cheer\_VB each\_DT other\_JJ on\_IN the\_DT way\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP had\_VBD left\_VBN the\_DT child\_NN in\_IN safety\_NN ,\_, and\_CC were\_VBD tired\_VBN ;\_: so\_IN we\_PRP all\_DT slept\_VBD with\_IN more\_JJR or\_CC less\_JJR reality\_NN of\_IN sleep\_NN .\_.

29\_CD September\_NNP ,\_, night\_NN .\_.

--\_: A\_DT little\_JJ before\_IN twelve\_CD o'clock\_RB we\_PRP three\_CD --\_: Arthur\_NNP ,\_, Quincey\_NNP Morris\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC myself\_PRP --\_: called\_VBD for\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD odd\_JJ to\_TO notice\_VB that\_IN by\_IN common\_JJ consent\_NN we\_PRP had\_VBD all\_DT put\_VBN on\_IN black\_JJ clothes\_NNS .\_.

Of\_IN course\_NN ,\_, Arthur\_NNP wore\_VBD black\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN deep\_JJ mourning\_NN ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT rest\_NN of\_IN us\_PRP wore\_VBD it\_PRP by\_IN instinct\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP got\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT churchyard\_NN by\_IN half-past\_JJ one\_NN ,\_, and\_CC strolled\_VBD about\_IN ,\_, keeping\_VBG out\_IN of\_IN official\_JJ observation\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN when\_WRB the\_DT gravediggers\_NNS had\_VBD completed\_VBN their\_PRP$ task\_NN and\_CC the\_DT sexton\_NN under\_IN the\_DT belief\_NN that\_IN every\_DT one\_NN had\_VBD gone\_VBN ,\_, had\_VBD locked\_VBN the\_DT gate\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP had\_VBD the\_DT place\_NN all\_DT to\_TO ourselves\_PRP .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, instead\_RB of\_IN his\_PRP$ little\_JJ black\_JJ bag\_NN ,\_, had\_VBD with\_IN him\_PRP a\_DT long\_JJ leather\_NN one\_CD ,\_, something\_NN like\_IN a\_DT cricketing\_VBG bag\_NN ;\_: it\_PRP was\_VBD manifestly\_RB of\_IN fair\_JJ weight\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP were\_VBD alone\_RB and\_CC had\_VBD heard\_VBN the\_DT last\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT footsteps\_NNS die\_VBP out\_RP up\_IN the\_DT road\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP silently\_RB ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN if\_IN by\_IN ordered\_VBN intention\_NN ,\_, followed\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP to\_TO the\_DT tomb\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP unlocked\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP entered\_VBD ,\_, closing\_VBG it\_PRP behind\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP took\_VBD from\_IN his\_PRP$ bag\_NN the\_DT lantern\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT he\_PRP lit\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC also\_RB two\_CD wax\_NN candles\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT ,\_, when\_WRB lighted\_VBN ,\_, he\_PRP stuck\_VBD ,\_, by\_IN melting\_VBG their\_PRP$ own\_JJ ends\_NNS ,\_, on\_IN other\_JJ coffins\_NNS ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN they\_PRP might\_MD give\_VB light\_NN sufficient\_JJ to\_TO work\_VB by\_IN .\_.

When\_WRB he\_PRP again\_RB lifted\_VBD the\_DT lid\_NN off\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS coffin\_NN we\_PRP all\_DT looked\_VBD --\_: Arthur\_NNP trembling\_VBG like\_IN an\_DT aspen\_NN --\_: and\_CC saw\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT body\_NN lay\_VBD there\_RB in\_IN all\_DT its\_PRP$ death-beauty\_NN .\_.

But\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT love\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ heart\_NN ,\_, nothing\_NN but\_CC loathing\_NN for\_IN the\_DT foul\_JJ Thing\_NN which\_WDT had\_VBD taken\_VBN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS shape\_NN without\_IN her\_PRP$ soul\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB even\_RB Arthur\_NNP 's\_POS face\_NN grow\_VB hard\_RB as\_IN he\_PRP looked\_VBD .\_.

Presently\_RB he\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Is\_VBZ this\_DT really\_RB Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS body\_NN ,\_, or\_CC only\_RB a\_DT demon\_NN in\_IN her\_PRP$ shape\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` It\_PRP is\_VBZ her\_PRP$ body\_NN ,\_, and\_CC yet\_RB not\_RB it\_PRP .\_.

But\_CC wait\_VB a\_DT while\_NN ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP all\_DT see\_VBP her\_PRP as\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC is\_VBZ .\_. ''\_''

She\_PRP seemed\_VBD like\_IN a\_DT nightmare\_NN of\_IN Lucy\_NNP as\_IN she\_PRP lay\_VBD there\_EX ;\_: the\_DT pointed\_JJ teeth\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT bloodstained\_JJ ,\_, voluptuous\_JJ mouth\_NN --\_: which\_WDT it\_PRP made\_VBD one\_CD shudder\_NN to\_TO see\_VB --\_: the\_DT whole\_JJ carnal\_JJ and\_CC unspiritual\_JJ appearance\_NN ,\_, seeming\_VBG like\_IN a\_DT devilish\_JJ mockery\_NN of\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS sweet\_JJ purity\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, with\_IN his\_PRP$ usual\_JJ methodicalness\_NN ,\_, began\_VBD taking\_VBG the\_DT various\_JJ contents\_NNS from\_IN his\_PRP$ bag\_NN and\_CC placing\_VBG them\_PRP ready\_JJ for\_IN use\_NN .\_.

First\_RB he\_PRP took\_VBD out\_RP a\_DT soldering\_JJ iron\_NN and\_CC some\_DT plumbing\_NN solder\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB a\_DT small\_JJ oil-lamp\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT gave\_VBD out\_RP ,\_, when\_WRB lit\_VBN in\_IN a\_DT corner\_NN of\_IN the\_DT tomb\_NN ,\_, gas\_NN which\_WDT burned\_VBD at\_IN fierce\_JJ heat\_NN with\_IN a\_DT blue\_JJ flame\_NN ;\_: then\_RB his\_PRP$ operating\_NN knives\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT he\_PRP placed\_VBD to\_TO hand\_VB ;\_: and\_CC last\_VB a\_DT round\_JJ wooden\_JJ stake\_NN ,\_, some\_DT two\_CD and\_CC a\_DT half\_NN or\_CC three\_CD inches\_NNS thick\_JJ and\_CC about\_IN three\_CD feet\_NNS long\_RB .\_.

One\_CD end\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD hardened\_VBN by\_IN charring\_VBG in\_IN the\_DT fire\_NN ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD sharpened\_VBN to\_TO a\_DT fine\_JJ point\_NN .\_.

With\_IN this\_DT stake\_NN came\_VBD a\_DT heavy\_JJ hammer\_NN ,\_, such\_JJ as\_IN in\_IN households\_NNS is\_VBZ used\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT coal-cellar\_NN for\_IN breaking\_VBG the\_DT lumps\_NNS .\_.

To\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, a\_DT doctor\_NN 's\_POS preparations\_NNS for\_IN work\_NN of\_IN any\_DT kind\_NN are\_VBP stimulating\_VBG and\_CC bracing\_VBG ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT effect\_NN of\_IN these\_DT things\_NNS on\_IN both\_DT Arthur\_NNP and\_CC Quincey\_NNP was\_VBD to\_TO cause\_VB them\_PRP a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN consternation\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP both\_DT ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, kept\_VBD their\_PRP$ courage\_NN ,\_, and\_CC remained\_VBD silent\_JJ and\_CC quiet\_JJ .\_.

When\_WRB all\_DT was\_VBD ready\_JJ ,\_, Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Before\_IN we\_PRP do\_VBP anything\_NN ,\_, let\_VB me\_PRP tell\_VB you\_PRP this\_DT ;\_: it\_PRP is\_VBZ out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT lore\_NN and\_CC experience\_NN of\_IN the\_DT ancients\_NNS and\_CC of\_IN all\_PDT those\_DT who\_WP have\_VBP studied\_VBN the\_DT powers\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT Un-Dead\_NNP .\_.

When\_WRB they\_PRP become\_VBP such\_JJ ,\_, there\_EX comes\_VBZ with\_IN the\_DT change\_NN the\_DT curse\_NN of\_IN immortality\_NN ;\_: they\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB die\_VB ,\_, but\_CC must\_MD go\_VB on\_IN age\_NN after\_IN age\_NN adding\_VBG new\_JJ victims\_NNS and\_CC multiplying\_VBG the\_DT evils\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT world\_NN ;\_: for\_IN all\_DT that\_WDT die\_VBP from\_IN the\_DT preying\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Un-Dead\_NNP becomes\_VBZ themselves\_PRP Un-Dead\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC prey\_NN on\_IN their\_PRP$ kind\_NN .\_.

And\_CC so\_RB the\_DT circle\_NN goes\_VBZ on\_IN ever\_RB widening\_VBG ,\_, like\_IN as\_IN the\_DT ripples\_NNS from\_IN a\_DT stone\_NN thrown\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT water\_NN .\_.

Friend\_NN Arthur\_NNP ,\_, if\_IN you\_PRP had\_VBD met\_VBN that\_DT kiss\_NN which\_WDT you\_PRP know\_VBP of\_IN before\_RB poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP die\_NN ;\_: or\_CC again\_RB ,\_, last\_JJ night\_NN when\_WRB you\_PRP open\_VBP your\_PRP$ arms\_NNS to\_TO her\_PRP ,\_, you\_PRP would\_MD in\_IN time\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB you\_PRP had\_VBD died\_VBN ,\_, have\_VBP become\_VBN nosferatu\_NN ,\_, as\_IN they\_PRP call\_VBP it\_PRP in\_IN Eastern\_NNP Europe\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC would\_MD all\_DT time\_NN make\_VB more\_JJR of\_IN those\_DT Un-Deads\_NNP that\_WDT so\_RB have\_VBP fill\_VB us\_PRP with\_IN horror\_NN .\_.

The\_DT career\_NN of\_IN this\_DT so\_RB unhappy\_JJ dear\_RB lady\_NN is\_VBZ but\_CC just\_RB begun\_VBN .\_.

Those\_DT children\_NNS whose\_WP$ blood\_NN she\_PRP suck\_VBP are\_VBP not\_RB as\_RB yet\_RB so\_RB much\_JJ the\_DT worse\_JJR ;\_: but\_CC if\_IN she\_PRP live\_VBP on\_RP ,\_, Un-Dead\_NNP ,\_, more\_JJR and\_CC more\_JJR they\_PRP lose\_VBP their\_PRP$ blood\_NN and\_CC by\_IN her\_PRP$ power\_NN over\_IN them\_PRP they\_PRP come\_VBP to\_TO her\_PRP$ ;\_: and\_CC so\_RB she\_PRP draw\_VBP their\_PRP$ blood\_NN with\_IN that\_DT so\_RB wicked\_JJ mouth\_NN .\_.

But\_CC if\_IN she\_PRP die\_VBP in\_IN truth\_NN ,\_, then\_RB all\_DT cease\_VBP ;\_: the\_DT tiny\_JJ wounds\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT throats\_NNS disappear\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC they\_PRP go\_VBP back\_RB to\_TO their\_PRP$ plays\_NNS unknowing\_VBG ever\_RB of\_IN what\_WP has\_VBZ been\_VBN .\_.

But\_CC of\_IN the\_DT most\_RBS blessed\_VBN of\_IN all\_DT ,\_, when\_WRB this\_DT now\_RB Un-Dead\_NNP be\_VB made\_VBN to\_TO rest\_VB as\_IN true\_JJ dead\_NN ,\_, then\_RB the\_DT soul\_NN of\_IN the\_DT poor\_JJ lady\_NN whom\_WP we\_PRP love\_VBP shall\_MD again\_RB be\_VB free\_JJ .\_.

Instead\_RB of\_IN working\_VBG wickedness\_NN by\_IN night\_NN and\_CC growing\_VBG more\_RBR debased\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT assimilating\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP by\_IN day\_NN ,\_, she\_PRP shall\_MD take\_VB her\_PRP$ place\_NN with\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ Angels\_NNP .\_.

So\_IN that\_DT ,\_, my\_PRP$ friend\_NN ,\_, it\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB a\_DT blessed\_VBN hand\_NN for\_IN her\_PRP that\_WDT shall\_MD strike\_VB the\_DT blow\_NN that\_WDT sets\_VBZ her\_PRP free\_JJ .\_.

To\_TO this\_DT I\_PRP am\_VBP willing\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC is\_VBZ there\_RB none\_NN amongst\_IN us\_PRP who\_WP has\_VBZ a\_DT better\_JJR right\_NN ?\_.

Will\_MD it\_PRP be\_VB no\_DT joy\_NN to\_TO think\_VB of\_IN hereafter\_RB in\_IN the\_DT silence\_NN of\_IN the\_DT night\_NN when\_WRB sleep\_NN is\_VBZ not\_RB :\_: `\_`` It\_PRP was\_VBD my\_PRP$ hand\_NN that\_WDT sent\_VBD her\_PRP to\_TO the\_DT stars\_NNS ;\_: it\_PRP was\_VBD the\_DT hand\_NN of\_IN him\_PRP that\_WDT loved\_VBD her\_PRP best\_JJS ;\_: the\_DT hand\_NN that\_IN of\_IN all\_DT she\_PRP would\_MD herself\_PRP have\_VB chosen\_VBN ,\_, had\_VBD it\_PRP been\_VBN to\_TO her\_PRP to\_TO choose\_VB ?\_. '\_''

Tell\_VB me\_PRP if\_IN there\_RB be\_VB such\_JJ a\_DT one\_CD amongst\_IN us\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

We\_PRP all\_DT looked\_VBD at\_IN Arthur\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP saw\_VBD ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, what\_WP we\_PRP all\_DT did\_VBD ,\_, the\_DT infinite\_JJ kindness\_NN which\_WDT suggested\_VBD that\_IN his\_PRP$ should\_MD be\_VB the\_DT hand\_NN which\_WDT would\_MD restore\_VB Lucy\_NNP to\_TO us\_PRP as\_IN a\_DT holy\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC not\_RB an\_DT unholy\_JJ ,\_, memory\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP stepped\_VBD forward\_RB and\_CC said\_VBD bravely\_RB ,\_, though\_IN his\_PRP$ hand\_NN trembled\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ face\_NN was\_VBD as\_RB pale\_JJ as\_IN snow\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` My\_PRP$ true\_JJ friend\_NN ,\_, from\_IN the\_DT bottom\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ broken\_JJ heart\_NN I\_PRP thank\_VBP you\_PRP .\_.

Tell\_VB me\_PRP what\_WP I\_PRP am\_VBP to\_TO do\_VB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB falter\_VB !\_. ''\_''

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP laid\_VBD a\_DT hand\_NN on\_IN his\_PRP$ shoulder\_NN ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Brave\_NNP lad\_NN !\_.

A\_DT moment\_NN 's\_POS courage\_NN ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ done\_VBN .\_.

This\_DT stake\_NN must\_MD be\_VB driven\_VBN through\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB a\_DT fearful\_JJ ordeal\_NN --\_: be\_VB not\_RB deceived\_VBN in\_IN that\_DT --\_: but\_CC it\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB only\_RB a\_DT short\_JJ time\_NN ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP will\_MD then\_RB rejoice\_VB more\_JJR than\_IN your\_PRP$ pain\_NN was\_VBD great\_JJ ;\_: from\_IN this\_DT grim\_JJ tomb\_NN you\_PRP will\_MD emerge\_VB as\_IN though\_IN you\_PRP tread\_VBP on\_IN air\_NN .\_.

But\_CC you\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB falter\_VB when\_WRB once\_RB you\_PRP have\_VBP begun\_VBN .\_.

Only\_RB think\_VBP that\_IN we\_PRP ,\_, your\_PRP$ true\_JJ friends\_NNS ,\_, are\_VBP round\_JJ you\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN we\_PRP pray\_VBP for\_IN you\_PRP all\_PDT the\_DT time\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Go\_VB on\_IN ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD Arthur\_NNP hoarsely\_RB .\_.

``\_`` Tell\_VB me\_PRP what\_WP I\_PRP am\_VBP to\_TO do\_VB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Take\_VB this\_DT stake\_NN in\_IN your\_PRP$ left\_JJ hand\_NN ,\_, ready\_JJ to\_TO place\_VB the\_DT point\_NN over\_IN the\_DT heart\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT hammer\_NN in\_IN your\_PRP$ right\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB when\_WRB we\_PRP begin\_VBP our\_PRP$ prayer\_NN for\_IN the\_DT dead\_NN --\_: I\_PRP shall\_MD read\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP have\_VBP here\_RB the\_DT book\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT others\_NNS shall\_MD follow\_VB --\_: strike\_NN in\_IN God\_NNP 's\_POS name\_NN ,\_, that\_IN so\_IN all\_DT may\_MD be\_VB well\_RB with\_IN the\_DT dead\_NN that\_IN we\_PRP love\_VBP and\_CC that\_IN the\_DT Un-Dead\_JJ pass\_NN away\_RB .\_. ''\_''

Arthur\_NNP took\_VBD the\_DT stake\_NN and\_CC the\_DT hammer\_NN ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB once\_RB his\_PRP$ mind\_NN was\_VBD set\_VBN on\_IN action\_NN his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS never\_RB trembled\_VBD nor\_CC even\_RB quivered\_VBD .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP opened\_VBD his\_PRP$ missal\_NN and\_CC began\_VBD to\_TO read\_VB ,\_, and\_CC Quincey\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP followed\_VBD as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN we\_PRP could\_MD .\_.

Arthur\_NNP placed\_VBD the\_DT point\_NN over\_IN the\_DT heart\_NN ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN I\_PRP looked\_VBD I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB its\_PRP$ dint\_NN in\_IN the\_DT white\_JJ flesh\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP struck\_VBD with\_IN all\_DT his\_PRP$ might\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Thing\_NN in\_IN the\_DT coffin\_NN writhed\_VBD ;\_: and\_CC a\_DT hideous\_JJ ,\_, blood-curdling\_JJ screech\_NN came\_VBD from\_IN the\_DT opened\_VBN red\_JJ lips\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT body\_NN shook\_VBD and\_CC quivered\_VBD and\_CC twisted\_VBD in\_IN wild\_JJ contortions\_NNS ;\_: the\_DT sharp\_JJ white\_JJ teeth\_NNS champed\_VBN together\_RB till\_IN the\_DT lips\_NNS were\_VBD cut\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT mouth\_NN was\_VBD smeared\_VBN with\_IN a\_DT crimson\_JJ foam\_NN .\_.

But\_CC Arthur\_NNP never\_RB faltered\_VBD .\_.

He\_PRP looked\_VBD like\_IN a\_DT figure\_NN of\_IN Thor\_NNP as\_IN his\_PRP$ untrembling\_JJ arm\_NN rose\_VBD and\_CC fell\_VBD ,\_, driving\_VBG deeper\_JJR and\_CC deeper\_JJR the\_DT mercy-bearing\_JJ stake\_NN ,\_, whilst\_IN the\_DT blood\_NN from\_IN the\_DT pierced\_JJ heart\_NN welled\_VBD and\_CC spurted\_VBD up\_RP around\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

His\_PRP$ face\_NN was\_VBD set\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC high\_JJ duty\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO shine\_VB through\_IN it\_PRP ;\_: the\_DT sight\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP gave\_VBD us\_PRP courage\_NN so\_IN that\_IN our\_PRP$ voices\_NNS seemed\_VBD to\_TO ring\_VB through\_IN the\_DT little\_JJ vault\_NN .\_.

And\_CC then\_RB the\_DT writhing\_VBG and\_CC quivering\_VBG of\_IN the\_DT body\_NN became\_VBD less\_JJR ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT teeth\_NNS seemed\_VBD to\_TO champ\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT face\_NN to\_TO quiver\_VB .\_.

Finally\_RB it\_PRP lay\_VBD still\_RB .\_.

The\_DT terrible\_JJ task\_NN was\_VBD over\_RB .\_.

The\_DT hammer\_NN fell\_VBD from\_IN Arthur\_NNP 's\_POS hand\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP reeled\_VBD and\_CC would\_MD have\_VB fallen\_VBN had\_VBD we\_PRP not\_RB caught\_VBD him\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT great\_JJ drops\_NNS of\_IN sweat\_NN sprang\_VBD from\_IN his\_PRP$ forehead\_NN ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ breath\_NN came\_VBD in\_IN broken\_JJ gasps\_NNS .\_.

It\_PRP had\_VBD indeed\_RB been\_VBN an\_DT awful\_JJ strain\_NN on\_IN him\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC had\_VBD he\_PRP not\_RB been\_VBN forced\_VBN to\_TO his\_PRP$ task\_NN by\_IN more\_JJR than\_IN human\_JJ considerations\_NNS he\_PRP could\_MD never\_RB have\_VB gone\_VBN through\_IN with\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

For\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ minutes\_NNS we\_PRP were\_VBD so\_RB taken\_VBN up\_RP with\_IN him\_PRP that\_IN we\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB look\_VB towards\_IN the\_DT coffin\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP did\_VBD ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, a\_DT murmur\_NN of\_IN startled\_JJ surprise\_NN ran\_VBD from\_IN one\_CD to\_TO the\_DT other\_JJ of\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

We\_PRP gazed\_VBD so\_RB eagerly\_RB that\_IN Arthur\_NNP rose\_VBD ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN seated\_VBN on\_IN the\_DT ground\_NN ,\_, and\_CC came\_VBD and\_CC looked\_VBD too\_RB ;\_: and\_CC then\_RB a\_DT glad\_JJ ,\_, strange\_JJ light\_NN broke\_VBD over\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN and\_CC dispelled\_VBD altogether\_RB the\_DT gloom\_NN of\_IN horror\_NN that\_WDT lay\_VBD upon\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

There\_RB ,\_, in\_IN the\_DT coffin\_NN lay\_VBD no\_RB longer\_RB the\_DT foul\_JJ Thing\_NN that\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD so\_RB dreaded\_VBN and\_CC grown\_VBN to\_TO hate\_VB that\_IN the\_DT work\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ destruction\_NN was\_VBD yielded\_VBN as\_IN a\_DT privilege\_NN to\_TO the\_DT one\_CD best\_RBS entitled\_VBN to\_TO it\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC Lucy\_NNP as\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD seen\_VBN her\_PRP in\_IN her\_PRP$ life\_NN ,\_, with\_IN her\_PRP$ face\_NN of\_IN unequalled\_JJ sweetness\_NN and\_CC purity\_NN .\_.

True\_JJ that\_IN there\_EX were\_VBD there\_RB ,\_, as\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD seen\_VBN them\_PRP in\_IN life\_NN ,\_, the\_DT traces\_NNS of\_IN care\_NN and\_CC pain\_NN and\_CC waste\_NN ;\_: but\_CC these\_DT were\_VBD all\_RB dear\_RB to\_TO us\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN they\_PRP marked\_VBD her\_PRP$ truth\_NN to\_TO what\_WP we\_PRP knew\_VBD .\_.

One\_CD and\_CC all\_DT we\_PRP felt\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT holy\_JJ calm\_NN that\_WDT lay\_VBD like\_IN sunshine\_NN over\_IN the\_DT wasted\_VBN face\_NN and\_CC form\_NN was\_VBD only\_RB an\_DT earthly\_JJ token\_JJ and\_CC symbol\_NN of\_IN the\_DT calm\_NN that\_WDT was\_VBD to\_TO reign\_VB for\_IN ever\_RB .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP came\_VBD and\_CC laid\_VBD his\_PRP$ hand\_NN on\_IN Arthur\_NNP 's\_POS shoulder\_NN ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` And\_CC now\_RB ,\_, Arthur\_NNP my\_PRP$ friend\_NN ,\_, dear\_RB lad\_NN ,\_, am\_VBP I\_PRP not\_RB forgiven\_VBN ?\_. ''\_''

The\_DT reaction\_NN of\_IN the\_DT terrible\_JJ strain\_NN came\_VBD as\_IN he\_PRP took\_VBD the\_DT old\_JJ man\_NN 's\_POS hand\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ ,\_, and\_CC raising\_VBG it\_PRP to\_TO his\_PRP$ lips\_NNS ,\_, pressed\_VBD it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Forgiven\_NNP !\_.

God\_NN bless\_VBP you\_PRP that\_IN you\_PRP have\_VBP given\_VBN my\_PRP$ dear\_RB one\_CD her\_PRP$ soul\_NN again\_RB ,\_, and\_CC me\_PRP peace\_NN .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP put\_VBD his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS on\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP 's\_POS shoulder\_NN ,\_, and\_CC laying\_VBG his\_PRP$ head\_NN on\_IN his\_PRP$ breast\_NN ,\_, cried\_VBD for\_IN a\_DT while\_NN silently\_RB ,\_, whilst\_IN we\_PRP stood\_VBD unmoving\_JJ .\_.

When\_WRB he\_PRP raised\_VBD his\_PRP$ head\_NN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP said\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` And\_CC now\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ child\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP may\_MD kiss\_NN her\_PRP .\_.

Kiss\_VB her\_PRP$ dead\_JJ lips\_NNS if\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD ,\_, as\_IN she\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB you\_PRP to\_TO ,\_, if\_IN for\_IN her\_PRP to\_TO choose\_VB .\_.

For\_IN she\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB a\_DT grinning\_VBG devil\_NNP now\_RB --\_: not\_RB any\_DT more\_RBR a\_DT foul\_JJ Thing\_NN for\_IN all\_DT eternity\_NN .\_.

No\_DT longer\_JJR she\_PRP is\_VBZ the\_DT devil\_NNP 's\_POS Un-Dead\_NNP .\_.

She\_PRP is\_VBZ God\_NNP 's\_POS true\_JJ dead\_NN ,\_, whose\_WP$ soul\_NN is\_VBZ with\_IN Him\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

Arthur\_NNP bent\_NN and\_CC kissed\_VBD her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB we\_PRP sent\_VBD him\_PRP and\_CC Quincey\_NNP out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT tomb\_NN ;\_: the\_DT Professor\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP sawed\_VBD the\_DT top\_NN off\_IN the\_DT stake\_NN ,\_, leaving\_VBG the\_DT point\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT body\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB we\_PRP cut\_VBD off\_RP the\_DT head\_NN and\_CC filled\_VBD the\_DT mouth\_NN with\_IN garlic\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP soldered\_VBD up\_RP the\_DT leaden\_JJ coffin\_NN ,\_, screwed\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT coffin-lid\_NN ,\_, and\_CC gathering\_VBG up\_RP our\_PRP$ belongings\_NNS ,\_, came\_VBD away\_RB .\_.

When\_WRB the\_DT Professor\_NNP locked\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN he\_PRP gave\_VBD the\_DT key\_NN to\_TO Arthur\_NNP .\_.

Outside\_IN the\_DT air\_NN was\_VBD sweet\_JJ ,\_, the\_DT sun\_NN shone\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT birds\_NNS sang\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP seemed\_VBD as\_IN if\_IN all\_DT nature\_NN were\_VBD tuned\_VBN to\_TO a\_DT different\_JJ pitch\_NN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD gladness\_NN and\_CC mirth\_NN and\_CC peace\_NN everywhere\_RB ,\_, for\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD at\_IN rest\_NN ourselves\_PRP on\_IN one\_CD account\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP were\_VBD glad\_JJ ,\_, though\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD with\_IN a\_DT tempered\_VBN joy\_NN .\_.

Before\_IN we\_PRP moved\_VBD away\_RB Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Now\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ friends\_NNS ,\_, one\_CD step\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ work\_NN is\_VBZ done\_VBN ,\_, one\_CD the\_DT most\_RBS harrowing\_JJ to\_TO ourselves\_PRP .\_.

But\_CC there\_EX remains\_VBZ a\_DT greater\_JJR task\_NN :\_: to\_TO find\_VB out\_RP the\_DT author\_NN of\_IN all\_PDT this\_DT our\_PRP$ sorrow\_NN and\_CC to\_TO stamp\_VB him\_PRP out\_RP .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP clues\_NNS which\_WDT we\_PRP can\_MD follow\_VB ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT long\_JJ task\_NN ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT difficult\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX is\_VBZ danger\_NN in\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC pain\_NN .\_.

Shall\_VB you\_PRP not\_RB all\_DT help\_VB me\_PRP ?\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP learned\_VBN to\_TO believe\_VB ,\_, all\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP --\_: is\_VBZ it\_PRP not\_RB so\_RB ?\_.

And\_CC since\_IN so\_RB ,\_, do\_VBP we\_PRP not\_RB see\_VB our\_PRP$ duty\_NN ?\_.

Yes\_UH !\_.

And\_CC do\_VBP we\_PRP not\_RB promise\_VBP to\_TO go\_VB on\_RP to\_TO the\_DT bitter\_JJ end\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

Each\_DT in\_IN turn\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP took\_VBD his\_PRP$ hand\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT promise\_NN was\_VBD made\_VBN .\_.

Then\_RB said\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP as\_IN we\_PRP moved\_VBD off\_RP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Two\_CD nights\_NNS hence\_RB you\_PRP shall\_MD meet\_VB with\_IN me\_PRP and\_CC dine\_VB together\_RB at\_IN seven\_CD of\_IN the\_DT clock\_NN with\_IN friend\_NN John\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD entreat\_VB two\_CD others\_NNS ,\_, two\_CD that\_IN you\_PRP know\_VBP not\_RB as\_RB yet\_RB ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB ready\_JJ to\_TO all\_DT our\_PRP$ work\_NN show\_NN and\_CC our\_PRP$ plans\_NNS unfold\_VBP .\_.

Friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, you\_PRP come\_VBP with\_IN me\_PRP home\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP much\_JJ to\_TO consult\_VB about\_IN ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP can\_MD help\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

To-night\_JJ I\_PRP leave\_VBP for\_IN Amsterdam\_NNP ,\_, but\_CC shall\_MD return\_VB to-morrow\_JJ night\_NN .\_.

And\_CC then\_RB begins\_VBZ our\_PRP$ great\_JJ quest\_NN .\_.

But\_CC first\_RB I\_PRP shall\_MD have\_VB much\_JJ to\_TO say\_VB ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN you\_PRP may\_MD know\_VB what\_WP is\_VBZ to\_TO do\_VB and\_CC to\_TO dread\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB our\_PRP$ promise\_NN shall\_MD be\_VB made\_VBN to\_TO each\_DT other\_JJ anew\_RB ;\_: for\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT terrible\_JJ task\_NN before\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC once\_RB our\_PRP$ feet\_NNS are\_VBP on\_IN the\_DT ploughshare\_NN we\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB draw\_VB back\_RB .\_. ''\_''

CHAPTER\_NNP XVII\_NNP DR.\_NNP SEWARD\_NNP 'S\_POS DIARY\_NN --\_: continued\_VBN WHEN\_WRB we\_PRP arrived\_VBD at\_IN the\_DT Berkeley\_NNP Hotel\_NNP ,\_, Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP found\_VBD a\_DT telegram\_NN waiting\_VBG for\_IN him\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Am\_VBP coming\_VBG up\_RP by\_IN train\_NN .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP at\_IN Whitby\_NNP .\_.

Important\_JJ news\_NN .\_.

--\_: Mina\_NNP Harker\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT Professor\_NNP was\_VBD delighted\_JJ .\_.

``\_`` Ah\_UH ,\_, that\_IN wonderful\_JJ Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` pearl\_NN among\_IN women\_NNS !\_.

She\_PRP arrive\_VBP ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB stay\_VB .\_.

She\_PRP must\_MD go\_VB to\_TO your\_PRP$ house\_NN ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP .\_.

You\_PRP must\_MD meet\_VB her\_PRP at\_IN the\_DT station\_NN .\_.

Telegraph\_NNP her\_PRP en\_IN route\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN she\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB prepared\_VBN .\_. ''\_''

When\_WRB the\_DT wire\_NN was\_VBD despatched\_VBN he\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT cup\_NN of\_IN tea\_NN ;\_: over\_IN it\_PRP he\_PRP told\_VBD me\_PRP of\_IN a\_DT diary\_NN kept\_VBN by\_IN Jonathan\_NNP Harker\_NNP when\_WRB abroad\_RB ,\_, and\_CC gave\_VBD me\_PRP a\_DT typewritten\_JJ copy\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN also\_RB of\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS diary\_NN at\_IN Whitby\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` Take\_VB these\_DT ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` and\_CC study\_VB them\_PRP well\_RB .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP have\_VBP returned\_VBN you\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB master\_NN of\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT facts\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP can\_MD then\_RB better\_RB enter\_VB on\_IN our\_PRP$ inquisition\_NN .\_.

Keep\_VB them\_PRP safe\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ in\_IN them\_PRP much\_JJ of\_IN treasure\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP will\_MD need\_VB all\_DT your\_PRP$ faith\_NN ,\_, even\_RB you\_PRP who\_WP have\_VBP had\_VBD such\_JJ an\_DT experience\_NN as\_IN that\_DT of\_IN to-day\_NN .\_.

What\_WP is\_VBZ here\_RB told\_VBN ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP laid\_VBD his\_PRP$ hand\_NN heavily\_RB and\_CC gravely\_RB on\_IN the\_DT packet\_NN of\_IN papers\_NNS as\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` may\_MD be\_VB the\_DT beginning\_NN of\_IN the\_DT end\_NN to\_TO you\_PRP and\_CC me\_PRP and\_CC many\_JJ another\_DT ;\_: or\_CC it\_PRP may\_MD sound\_VB the\_DT knell\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Un-Dead\_NNP who\_WP walk\_VBP the\_DT earth\_NN .\_.

Read\_VB all\_DT ,\_, I\_PRP pray\_VBP you\_PRP ,\_, with\_IN the\_DT open\_JJ mind\_NN ;\_: and\_CC if\_IN you\_PRP can\_MD add\_VB in\_IN any\_DT way\_NN to\_TO the\_DT story\_NN here\_RB told\_VBD do\_VB so\_RB ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ all-important\_JJ .\_.

You\_PRP have\_VBP kept\_VBN diary\_NN of\_IN all\_PDT these\_DT so\_RB strange\_JJ things\_NNS ;\_: is\_VBZ it\_PRP not\_RB so\_RB ?\_.

Yes\_UH !\_.

Then\_RB we\_PRP shall\_MD go\_VB through\_IN all\_PDT these\_DT together\_RB when\_WRB we\_PRP meet\_VBP .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP then\_RB made\_VBD ready\_JJ for\_IN his\_PRP$ departure\_NN ,\_, and\_CC shortly\_RB after\_IN drove\_VBD off\_RP to\_TO Liverpool\_NNP Street\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP took\_VBD my\_PRP$ way\_NN to\_TO Paddington\_NNP ,\_, where\_WRB I\_PRP arrived\_VBD about\_RB fifteen\_CD minutes\_NNS before\_IN the\_DT train\_NN came\_VBD in\_RP .\_.

The\_DT crowd\_NN melted\_VBD away\_RB ,\_, after\_IN the\_DT bustling\_JJ fashion\_NN common\_JJ to\_TO arrival\_NN platforms\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP was\_VBD beginning\_VBG to\_TO feel\_VB uneasy\_JJ ,\_, lest\_IN I\_PRP might\_MD miss\_VB my\_PRP$ guest\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB a\_DT sweet-faced\_JJ ,\_, dainty-looking\_JJ girl\_NN stepped\_VBD up\_RB to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, after\_IN a\_DT quick\_JJ glance\_NN ,\_, said\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP ,\_, is\_VBZ it\_PRP not\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` And\_CC you\_PRP are\_VBP Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP answered\_VBD at\_IN once\_RB ;\_: whereupon\_NN she\_PRP held\_VBD out\_RP her\_PRP$ hand\_NN .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP knew\_VBD you\_PRP from\_IN the\_DT description\_NN of\_IN poor\_NN dear\_RB Lucy\_NNP ;\_: but\_CC --\_: --\_: ''\_'' She\_PRP stopped\_VBD suddenly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT quick\_JJ blush\_VBP overspread\_VBN her\_PRP$ face\_NN .\_.

The\_DT blush\_VBP that\_WDT rose\_VBD to\_TO my\_PRP$ own\_JJ cheeks\_NNS somehow\_RB set\_VBD us\_PRP both\_DT at\_IN ease\_NN ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT tacit\_JJ answer\_NN to\_TO her\_PRP$ own\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP got\_VBD her\_PRP$ luggage\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT included\_VBD a\_DT typewriter\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP took\_VBD the\_DT Underground\_NNP to\_TO Fenchurch\_NNP Street\_NNP ,\_, after\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD sent\_VBN a\_DT wire\_NN to\_TO my\_PRP$ housekeeper\_NN to\_TO have\_VB a\_DT sitting-room\_NN and\_CC bedroom\_NN prepared\_VBN at\_IN once\_RB for\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP .\_.

In\_IN due\_JJ time\_NN we\_PRP arrived\_VBD .\_.

She\_PRP knew\_VBD ,\_, of\_IN course\_NN ,\_, that\_IN the\_DT place\_NN was\_VBD a\_DT lunatic\_JJ asylum\_NN ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB that\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD unable\_JJ to\_TO repress\_VB a\_DT shudder\_NN when\_WRB we\_PRP entered\_VBD .\_.

She\_PRP told\_VBD me\_PRP that\_IN ,\_, if\_IN she\_PRP might\_MD ,\_, she\_PRP would\_MD come\_VB presently\_RB to\_TO my\_PRP$ study\_NN ,\_, as\_IN she\_PRP had\_VBD much\_JJ to\_TO say\_VB .\_.

So\_IN here\_RB I\_PRP am\_VBP finishing\_VBG my\_PRP$ entry\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ phonograph\_NN diary\_NN whilst\_IN I\_PRP await\_VBP her\_PRP .\_.

As\_IN yet\_RB I\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB had\_VBN the\_DT chance\_NN of\_IN looking\_VBG at\_IN the\_DT papers\_NNS which\_WDT Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP left\_VBD with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, though\_IN they\_PRP lie\_VBP open\_JJ before\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD get\_VB her\_PRP$ interested\_JJ in\_IN something\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD have\_VB an\_DT opportunity\_NN of\_IN reading\_VBG them\_PRP .\_.

She\_PRP does\_VBZ not\_RB know\_VB how\_WRB precious\_JJ time\_NN is\_VBZ ,\_, or\_CC what\_WP a\_DT task\_NN we\_PRP have\_VBP in\_IN hand\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB careful\_JJ not\_RB to\_TO frighten\_VB her\_PRP .\_.

Here\_RB she\_PRP is\_VBZ !\_.

Mina\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP .\_.

29\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: After\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD tidied\_VBN myself\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP went\_VBD down\_RB to\_TO Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS study\_NN .\_.

At\_IN the\_DT door\_NN I\_PRP paused\_VBD a\_DT moment\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP thought\_VBD I\_PRP heard\_VBD him\_PRP talking\_VBG with\_IN some\_DT one\_CD .\_.

As\_IN ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, he\_PRP had\_VBD pressed\_VBN me\_PRP to\_TO be\_VB quick\_JJ ,\_, I\_PRP knocked\_VBD at\_IN the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, and\_CC on\_IN his\_PRP$ calling\_VBG out\_RP ,\_, ``\_`` Come\_VB in\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP entered\_VBD .\_.

To\_TO my\_PRP$ intense\_JJ surprise\_NN ,\_, there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT one\_NN with\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD quite\_RB alone\_RB ,\_, and\_CC on\_IN the\_DT table\_NN opposite\_NN him\_PRP was\_VBD what\_WP I\_PRP knew\_VBD at\_IN once\_RB from\_IN the\_DT description\_NN to\_TO be\_VB a\_DT phonograph\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD never\_RB seen\_VBN one\_CD ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD much\_RB interested\_JJ .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP hope\_VBP I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB keep\_VB you\_PRP waiting\_VBG ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD ;\_: ``\_`` but\_CC I\_PRP stayed\_VBD at\_IN the\_DT door\_NN as\_IN I\_PRP heard\_VBD you\_PRP talking\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC thought\_VBD there\_EX was\_VBD some\_DT one\_CD with\_IN you\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP replied\_VBD with\_IN a\_DT smile\_NN ,\_, ``\_`` I\_PRP was\_VBD only\_RB entering\_VBG my\_PRP$ diary\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Your\_PRP$ diary\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP asked\_VBD him\_PRP in\_IN surprise\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Yes\_UH ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP answered\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP keep\_VBP it\_PRP in\_IN this\_DT .\_. ''\_''

As\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD he\_PRP laid\_VBD his\_PRP$ hand\_NN on\_IN the\_DT phonograph\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP felt\_VBD quite\_RB excited\_JJ over\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC blurted\_VBD out\_RP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Why\_WRB ,\_, this\_DT beats\_VBZ even\_RB shorthand\_NN !\_.

May\_MD I\_PRP hear\_VB it\_PRP say\_VB something\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Certainly\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP replied\_VBD with\_IN alacrity\_NN ,\_, and\_CC stood\_VBD up\_RP to\_TO put\_VB it\_PRP in\_IN train\_NN for\_IN speaking\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP paused\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT troubled\_JJ look\_NN overspread\_VBD his\_PRP$ face\_NN .\_.

``\_`` The\_DT fact\_NN is\_VBZ ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP began\_VBD awkwardly\_RB ,\_, ``\_`` I\_PRP only\_RB keep\_VB my\_PRP$ diary\_NN in\_IN it\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC as\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ entirely\_RB --\_: almost\_RB entirely\_RB --\_: about\_IN my\_PRP$ cases\_NNS ,\_, it\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB awkward\_JJ --\_: that\_DT is\_VBZ ,\_, I\_PRP mean\_VBP --\_: --\_: ''\_'' He\_PRP stopped\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP tried\_VBD to\_TO help\_VB him\_PRP out\_IN of\_IN his\_PRP$ embarrassment\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP helped\_VBD to\_TO attend\_VB dear\_RB Lucy\_NNP at\_IN the\_DT end\_NN .\_.

Let\_VB me\_PRP hear\_VB how\_WRB she\_PRP died\_VBD ;\_: for\_IN all\_DT that\_IN I\_PRP know\_VBP of\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB very\_RB grateful\_JJ .\_.

She\_PRP was\_VBD very\_RB ,\_, very\_RB dear\_RB to\_TO me\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

To\_TO my\_PRP$ surprise\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP answered\_VBD ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT horrorstruck\_NN look\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Tell\_VB you\_PRP of\_IN her\_PRP$ death\_NN ?\_.

Not\_RB for\_IN the\_DT wide\_JJ world\_NN !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Why\_WRB not\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP asked\_VBD ,\_, for\_IN some\_DT grave\_JJ ,\_, terrible\_JJ feeling\_NN was\_VBD coming\_VBG over\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

Again\_RB he\_PRP paused\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD trying\_VBG to\_TO invent\_VB an\_DT excuse\_NN .\_.

At\_IN length\_NN he\_PRP stammered\_VBD out\_RP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP see\_VBP ,\_, I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB know\_VB how\_WRB to\_TO pick\_VB out\_RP any\_DT particular\_JJ part\_NN of\_IN the\_DT diary\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Even\_RB while\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD speaking\_VBG an\_DT idea\_NN dawned\_VBN upon\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP said\_VBD with\_IN unconscious\_JJ simplicity\_NN ,\_, in\_IN a\_DT different\_JJ voice\_NN ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN the\_DT naïveté\_NN of\_IN a\_DT child\_NN :\_: ``\_`` That\_DT 's\_VBZ quite\_RB true\_JJ ,\_, upon\_IN my\_PRP$ honour\_NN .\_.

Honest\_JJ Indian\_NNP !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB but\_CC smile\_NN ,\_, at\_IN which\_WDT he\_PRP grimaced\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP gave\_VBD myself\_PRP away\_RB that\_DT time\_NN !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` But\_CC do\_VBP you\_PRP know\_VB that\_IN ,\_, although\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP kept\_VBN the\_DT diary\_NN for\_IN months\_NNS past\_NN ,\_, it\_PRP never\_RB once\_RB struck\_VBD me\_PRP how\_WRB I\_PRP was\_VBD going\_VBG to\_TO find\_VB any\_DT particular\_JJ part\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP in\_IN case\_NN I\_PRP wanted\_VBD to\_TO look\_VB it\_PRP up\_RP ?\_. ''\_''

By\_IN this\_DT time\_NN my\_PRP$ mind\_NN was\_VBD made\_VBN up\_RP that\_IN the\_DT diary\_NN of\_IN a\_DT doctor\_NN who\_WP attended\_VBD Lucy\_NNP might\_MD have\_VB something\_NN to\_TO add\_VB to\_TO the\_DT sum\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ knowledge\_NN of\_IN that\_DT terrible\_JJ Being\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP said\_VBD boldly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Then\_RB ,\_, Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP ,\_, you\_PRP had\_VBD better\_RBR let\_VB me\_PRP copy\_VB it\_PRP out\_RP for\_IN you\_PRP on\_IN my\_PRP$ typewriter\_NN .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP grew\_VBD to\_TO a\_DT positively\_RB deathly\_RB pallor\_NN as\_IN he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` No\_UH !\_.

no\_DT !\_.

no\_DT !\_.

For\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT world\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP would\_MD n't\_RB let\_VB you\_PRP know\_VB that\_DT terrible\_JJ story\_NN !\_. ''\_''

Then\_RB it\_PRP was\_VBD terrible\_JJ ;\_: my\_PRP$ intuition\_NN was\_VBD right\_JJ !\_.

For\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN I\_PRP thought\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN my\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ranged\_VBD the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, unconsciously\_RB looking\_VBG for\_IN something\_NN or\_CC some\_DT opportunity\_NN to\_TO aid\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, they\_PRP lit\_VBD on\_IN a\_DT great\_JJ batch\_NN of\_IN typewriting\_VBG on\_IN the\_DT table\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS caught\_VBD the\_DT look\_NN in\_IN mine\_NN ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, without\_IN his\_PRP$ thinking\_NN ,\_, followed\_VBD their\_PRP$ direction\_NN .\_.

As\_IN they\_PRP saw\_VBD the\_DT parcel\_NN he\_PRP realised\_VBD my\_PRP$ meaning\_NN .\_.

``\_`` You\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB know\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` When\_WRB you\_PRP have\_VBP read\_VBN those\_DT papers\_NNS --\_: my\_PRP$ own\_JJ diary\_NN and\_CC my\_PRP$ husband\_NN 's\_VBZ also\_RB ,\_, which\_WDT I\_PRP have\_VBP typed\_VBN --\_: you\_PRP will\_MD know\_VB me\_PRP better\_RBR .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB faltered\_VBN in\_IN giving\_VBG every\_DT thought\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ heart\_NN in\_IN this\_DT cause\_NN ;\_: but\_CC ,\_, of\_IN course\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB know\_VB me\_PRP --\_: yet\_RB ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB expect\_VB you\_PRP to\_TO trust\_VB me\_PRP so\_RB far\_RB .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP is\_VBZ certainly\_RB a\_DT man\_NN of\_IN noble\_JJ nature\_NN ;\_: poor\_JJ dear\_RB Lucy\_NNP was\_VBD right\_JJ about\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP stood\_VBD up\_RP and\_CC opened\_VBD a\_DT large\_JJ drawer\_NN ,\_, in\_IN which\_WDT were\_VBD arranged\_VBN in\_IN order\_NN a\_DT number\_NN of\_IN hollow\_JJ cylinders\_NNS of\_IN metal\_NN covered\_VBN with\_IN dark\_JJ wax\_NN ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP are\_VBP quite\_RB right\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB trust\_VB you\_PRP because\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB know\_VB you\_PRP .\_.

But\_CC I\_PRP know\_VBP you\_PRP now\_RB ;\_: and\_CC let\_VB me\_PRP say\_VB that\_IN I\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB known\_VBN you\_PRP long\_RB ago\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP that\_IN Lucy\_NNP told\_VBD you\_PRP of\_IN me\_PRP ;\_: she\_PRP told\_VBD me\_PRP of\_IN you\_PRP too\_RB .\_.

May\_MD I\_PRP make\_VB the\_DT only\_JJ atonement\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ power\_NN ?\_.

Take\_VB the\_DT cylinders\_NNS and\_CC hear\_VB them\_PRP --\_: the\_DT first\_JJ half-dozen\_NN of\_IN them\_PRP are\_VBP personal\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC they\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB horrify\_VB you\_PRP ;\_: then\_RB you\_PRP will\_MD know\_VB me\_PRP better\_RBR .\_.

Dinner\_NN will\_MD by\_IN then\_RB be\_VB ready\_JJ .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT meantime\_NN I\_PRP shall\_MD read\_VB over\_IN some\_DT of\_IN these\_DT documents\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC shall\_MD be\_VB better\_JJR able\_JJ to\_TO understand\_VB certain\_JJ things\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP carried\_VBD the\_DT phonograph\_NN himself\_PRP up\_RP to\_TO my\_PRP$ sitting-room\_NN and\_CC adjusted\_VBD it\_PRP for\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

Now\_RB I\_PRP shall\_MD learn\_VB something\_NN pleasant\_JJ ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP sure\_RB ;\_: for\_IN it\_PRP will\_MD tell\_VB me\_PRP the\_DT other\_JJ side\_NN of\_IN a\_DT true\_JJ love\_NN episode\_NN of\_IN which\_WDT I\_PRP know\_VBP one\_CD side\_NN already\_RB ...\_: .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

29\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP was\_VBD so\_RB absorbed\_VBN in\_IN that\_DT wonderful\_JJ diary\_NN of\_IN Jonathan\_NNP Harker\_NNP and\_CC that\_IN other\_JJ of\_IN his\_PRP$ wife\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP let\_VBD the\_DT time\_NN run\_VBN on\_RP without\_IN thinking\_NN .\_.

Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP was\_VBD not\_RB down\_RB when\_WRB the\_DT maid\_NN came\_VBD to\_TO announce\_VB dinner\_NN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` She\_PRP is\_VBZ possibly\_RB tired\_VBN ;\_: let\_VB dinner\_NN wait\_VB an\_DT hour\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' and\_CC I\_PRP went\_VBD on\_RP with\_IN my\_PRP$ work\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD just\_RB finished\_VBN Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS diary\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB she\_PRP came\_VBD in\_RP .\_.

She\_PRP looked\_VBD sweetly\_RB pretty\_RB ,\_, but\_CC very\_RB sad\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS were\_VBD flushed\_VBN with\_IN crying\_VBG .\_.

This\_DT somehow\_RB moved\_VBD me\_PRP much\_RB .\_.

Of\_IN late\_RB I\_PRP have\_VBP had\_VBN cause\_NN for\_IN tears\_NNS ,\_, God\_NNP knows\_VBZ !\_.

but\_CC the\_DT relief\_NN of\_IN them\_PRP was\_VBD denied\_VBN me\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC now\_RB the\_DT sight\_NN of\_IN those\_DT sweet\_JJ eyes\_NNS ,\_, brightened\_VBN with\_IN recent\_JJ tears\_NNS ,\_, went\_VBD straight\_RB to\_TO my\_PRP$ heart\_NN .\_.

So\_RB I\_PRP said\_VBD as\_RB gently\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP greatly\_RB fear\_VBP I\_PRP have\_VBP distressed\_JJ you\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, no\_DT ,\_, not\_RB distressed\_JJ me\_PRP ,\_, ''\_'' she\_PRP replied\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` but\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN more\_RBR touched\_VBN than\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD say\_VB by\_IN your\_PRP$ grief\_NN .\_.

That\_DT is\_VBZ a\_DT wonderful\_JJ machine\_NN ,\_, but\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ cruelly\_RB true\_JJ .\_.

It\_PRP told\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, in\_IN its\_PRP$ very\_JJ tones\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT anguish\_NN of\_IN your\_PRP$ heart\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD like\_IN a\_DT soul\_NN crying\_VBG out\_RP to\_TO Almighty\_NNP God\_NNP .\_.

No\_DT one\_NN must\_MD hear\_VB them\_PRP spoken\_VBN ever\_RB again\_RB !\_.

See\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP have\_VBP tried\_VBN to\_TO be\_VB useful\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP copied\_VBN out\_RP the\_DT words\_NNS on\_IN my\_PRP$ typewriter\_NN ,\_, and\_CC none\_NN other\_JJ need\_MD now\_RB hear\_VB your\_PRP$ heart\_NN beat\_NN ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` No\_DT one\_CD need\_NN ever\_RB know\_VBP ,\_, shall\_MD ever\_RB know\_VB ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT low\_JJ voice\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP laid\_VBD her\_PRP$ hand\_NN on\_IN mine\_NN and\_CC said\_VBD very\_RB gravely\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Ah\_UH ,\_, but\_CC they\_PRP must\_MD !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Must\_MD !\_.

But\_CC why\_WRB ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP asked\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Because\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT part\_NN of\_IN the\_DT terrible\_JJ story\_NN ,\_, a\_DT part\_NN of\_IN poor\_JJ dear\_RB Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS death\_NN and\_CC all\_DT that\_WDT led\_VBD to\_TO it\_PRP ;\_: because\_IN in\_IN the\_DT struggle\_NN which\_WDT we\_PRP have\_VBP before\_IN us\_PRP to\_TO rid\_VB the\_DT earth\_NN of\_IN this\_DT terrible\_JJ monster\_NN we\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB all\_PDT the\_DT knowledge\_NN and\_CC all\_PDT the\_DT help\_NN which\_WDT we\_PRP can\_MD get\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP think\_VBP that\_IN the\_DT cylinders\_NNS which\_WDT you\_PRP gave\_VBD me\_PRP contained\_VBD more\_JJR than\_IN you\_PRP intended\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO know\_VB ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP can\_MD see\_VB that\_IN there\_EX are\_VBP in\_IN your\_PRP$ record\_NN many\_JJ lights\_NNS to\_TO this\_DT dark\_JJ mystery\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP will\_MD let\_VB me\_PRP help\_VB ,\_, will\_VB you\_PRP not\_RB ?\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP all\_DT up\_IN to\_TO a\_DT certain\_JJ point\_NN ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP see\_VBP already\_RB ,\_, though\_IN your\_PRP$ diary\_NN only\_RB took\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO 7\_CD September\_NNP ,\_, how\_WRB poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP was\_VBD beset\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC how\_WRB her\_PRP$ terrible\_JJ doom\_NN was\_VBD being\_VBG wrought\_VBN out\_RP .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN working\_VBG day\_NN and\_CC night\_NN since\_IN Professor\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP saw\_VBD us\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ gone\_VBN to\_TO Whitby\_NNP to\_TO get\_VB more\_JJR information\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB here\_RB to-morrow\_JJ to\_TO help\_VB us\_PRP .\_.

We\_PRP need\_VBP have\_VBP no\_DT secrets\_NNS amongst\_IN us\_PRP ;\_: working\_VBG together\_RB and\_CC with\_IN absolute\_JJ trust\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP can\_MD surely\_RB be\_VB stronger\_JJR than\_IN if\_IN some\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP were\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT dark\_NN .\_. ''\_''

She\_PRP looked\_VBD at\_IN me\_PRP so\_RB appealingly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC at\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ time\_NN manifested\_VBD such\_JJ courage\_NN and\_CC resolution\_NN in\_IN her\_PRP$ bearing\_NN ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP gave\_VBD in\_RP at\_IN once\_RB to\_TO her\_PRP$ wishes\_NNS .\_.

``\_`` You\_PRP shall\_MD ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` do\_VBP as\_IN you\_PRP like\_VBP in\_IN the\_DT matter\_NN .\_.

God\_NNP forgive\_VB me\_PRP if\_IN I\_PRP do\_VBP wrong\_JJ !\_.

There\_EX are\_VBP terrible\_JJ things\_NNS yet\_RB to\_TO learn\_VB of\_IN ;\_: but\_CC if\_IN you\_PRP have\_VBP so\_RB far\_RB travelled\_VBN on\_IN the\_DT road\_NN to\_TO poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS death\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB be\_VB content\_JJ ,\_, I\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, to\_TO remain\_VB in\_IN the\_DT dark\_NN .\_.

Nay\_NNP ,\_, the\_DT end\_NN --\_: the\_DT very\_JJ end\_NN --\_: may\_MD give\_VB you\_PRP a\_DT gleam\_NN of\_IN peace\_NN .\_.

Come\_VB ,\_, there\_EX is\_VBZ dinner\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP must\_MD keep\_VB one\_CD another\_DT strong\_JJ for\_IN what\_WP is\_VBZ before\_IN us\_PRP ;\_: we\_PRP have\_VBP a\_DT cruel\_JJ and\_CC dreadful\_JJ task\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB you\_PRP have\_VBP eaten\_VBN you\_PRP shall\_MD learn\_VB the\_DT rest\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD answer\_VB any\_DT questions\_NNS you\_PRP ask\_VBP --\_: if\_IN there\_EX be\_VB anything\_NN which\_WDT you\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB understand\_VB ,\_, though\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD apparent\_JJ to\_TO us\_PRP who\_WP were\_VBD present\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

Mina\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP .\_.

29\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: After\_IN dinner\_NN I\_PRP came\_VBD with\_IN Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP to\_TO his\_PRP$ study\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP brought\_VBD back\_RP the\_DT phonograph\_NN from\_IN my\_PRP$ room\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP took\_VBD my\_PRP$ typewriter\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP placed\_VBD me\_PRP in\_IN a\_DT comfortable\_JJ chair\_NN ,\_, and\_CC arranged\_VBD the\_DT phonograph\_NN so\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD touch\_VB it\_PRP without\_IN getting\_VBG up\_RP ,\_, and\_CC showed\_VBD me\_PRP how\_WRB to\_TO stop\_VB it\_PRP in\_IN case\_NN I\_PRP should\_MD want\_VB to\_TO pause\_VB .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP very\_RB thoughtfully\_RB took\_VBD a\_DT chair\_NN ,\_, with\_IN his\_PRP$ back\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP might\_MD be\_VB as\_RB free\_JJ as\_IN possible\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC began\_VBD to\_TO read\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP put\_VBD the\_DT forked\_VBN metal\_NN to\_TO my\_PRP$ ears\_NNS and\_CC listened\_VBD .\_.

When\_WRB the\_DT terrible\_JJ story\_NN of\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS death\_NN ,\_, and\_CC --\_: and\_CC all\_DT that\_WDT followed\_VBD ,\_, was\_VBD done\_VBN ,\_, I\_PRP lay\_VBD back\_RB in\_IN my\_PRP$ chair\_NN powerless\_JJ .\_.

Fortunately\_RB I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB of\_IN a\_DT fainting\_VBG disposition\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP saw\_VBD me\_PRP he\_PRP jumped\_VBD up\_RP with\_IN a\_DT horrified\_JJ exclamation\_NN ,\_, and\_CC hurriedly\_RB taking\_VBG a\_DT case-bottle\_NN from\_IN a\_DT cupboard\_NN ,\_, gave\_VBD me\_PRP some\_DT brandy\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT in\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ minutes\_NNS somewhat\_RB restored\_VBD me\_PRP .\_.

My\_PRP$ brain\_NN was\_VBD all\_DT in\_IN a\_DT whirl\_NN ,\_, and\_CC only\_RB that\_IN there\_EX came\_VBD through\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT multitude\_NN of\_IN horrors\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT holy\_JJ ray\_NN of\_IN light\_NN that\_IN my\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, dear\_RB Lucy\_NNP was\_VBD at\_IN last\_JJ at\_IN peace\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB think\_VB I\_PRP could\_MD have\_VB borne\_VBN it\_PRP without\_IN making\_VBG a\_DT scene\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ all\_RB so\_RB wild\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC mysterious\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC strange\_JJ that\_IN if\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB known\_VBN Jonathan\_NNP 's\_POS experience\_NN in\_IN Transylvania\_NNP I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB have\_VB believed\_VBN .\_.

As\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, I\_PRP did\_VBD n't\_RB know\_VB what\_WP to\_TO believe\_VB ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB got\_VBD out\_IN of\_IN my\_PRP$ difficulty\_NN by\_IN attending\_VBG to\_TO something\_NN else\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP took\_VBD the\_DT cover\_NN off\_IN my\_PRP$ typewriter\_NN ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD to\_TO Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Let\_VB me\_PRP write\_VB this\_DT all\_DT out\_RP now\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB ready\_JJ for\_IN Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP when\_WRB he\_PRP comes\_VBZ .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP sent\_VBN a\_DT telegram\_NN to\_TO Jonathan\_NNP to\_TO come\_VB on\_IN here\_RB when\_WRB he\_PRP arrives\_VBZ in\_IN London\_NNP from\_IN Whitby\_NNP .\_.

In\_IN this\_DT matter\_NN dates\_NNS are\_VBP everything\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP think\_VBP that\_IN if\_IN we\_PRP get\_VBP all\_DT our\_PRP$ material\_NN ready\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC have\_VBP every\_DT item\_NN put\_VBN in\_IN chronological\_JJ order\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP shall\_MD have\_VB done\_VBN much\_RB .\_.

You\_PRP tell\_VBP me\_PRP that\_IN Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP and\_CC Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP are\_VBP coming\_VBG too\_RB .\_.

Let\_VB us\_PRP be\_VB able\_JJ to\_TO tell\_VB him\_PRP when\_WRB they\_PRP come\_VBP .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP accordingly\_RB set\_VBD the\_DT phonograph\_NN at\_IN a\_DT slow\_JJ pace\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO typewrite\_VB from\_IN the\_DT beginning\_NN of\_IN the\_DT seventh\_JJ cylinder\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP used\_VBD manifold\_NN ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB took\_VBD three\_CD copies\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT diary\_NN ,\_, just\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD done\_VBN with\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT rest\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD late\_JJ when\_WRB I\_PRP got\_VBD through\_IN ,\_, but\_CC Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP went\_VBD about\_IN his\_PRP$ work\_NN of\_IN going\_VBG his\_PRP$ round\_NN of\_IN the\_DT patients\_NNS ;\_: when\_WRB he\_PRP had\_VBD finished\_VBN he\_PRP came\_VBD back\_RB and\_CC sat\_VBD near\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, reading\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB feel\_VB too\_RB lonely\_JJ whilst\_IN I\_PRP worked\_VBD .\_.

How\_WRB good\_JJ and\_CC thoughtful\_JJ he\_PRP is\_VBZ ;\_: the\_DT world\_NN seems\_VBZ full\_JJ of\_IN good\_JJ men\_NNS --\_: even\_RB if\_IN there\_EX are\_VBP monsters\_NNS in\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

Before\_IN I\_PRP left\_VBD him\_PRP I\_PRP remembered\_VBD what\_WP Jonathan\_NNP put\_VBD in\_RP his\_PRP$ diary\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP 's\_POS perturbation\_NN at\_IN reading\_VBG something\_NN in\_IN an\_DT evening\_NN paper\_NN at\_IN the\_DT station\_NN at\_IN Exeter\_NNP ;\_: so\_RB ,\_, seeing\_VBG that\_IN Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP keeps\_VBZ his\_PRP$ newspapers\_NNS ,\_, I\_PRP borrowed\_VBD the\_DT files\_NNS of\_IN ``\_`` The\_DT Westminster\_NNP Gazette\_NNP ''\_'' and\_CC ``\_`` The\_DT Pall\_NN Mall\_NN Gazette\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' and\_CC took\_VBD them\_PRP to\_TO my\_PRP$ room\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP remember\_VBP how\_WRB much\_JJ ``\_`` The\_DT Dailygraph\_NNP ''\_'' and\_CC ``\_`` The\_DT Whitby\_NNP Gazette\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' of\_IN which\_WDT I\_PRP had\_VBD made\_VBN cuttings\_NNS ,\_, helped\_VBD us\_PRP to\_TO understand\_VB the\_DT terrible\_JJ events\_NNS at\_IN Whitby\_NNP when\_WRB Count\_NNP Dracula\_NNP landed\_VBD ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP shall\_MD look\_VB through\_IN the\_DT evening\_NN papers\_NNS since\_IN then\_RB ,\_, and\_CC perhaps\_RB I\_PRP shall\_MD get\_VB some\_DT new\_JJ light\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB sleepy\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT work\_NN will\_MD help\_VB to\_TO keep\_VB me\_PRP quiet\_JJ .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

30\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Mr.\_NNP Harker\_NNP arrived\_VBD at\_IN nine\_CD o'clock\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD got\_VBN his\_PRP$ wife\_NN 's\_POS wire\_NN just\_RB before\_IN starting\_VBG .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ uncommonly\_RB clever\_JJ ,\_, if\_IN one\_CD can\_NN judge\_NN from\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, and\_CC full\_JJ of\_IN energy\_NN .\_.

If\_IN this\_DT journal\_NN be\_VB true\_JJ --\_: and\_CC judging\_VBG by\_IN one\_NN 's\_POS own\_JJ wonderful\_JJ experiences\_NNS ,\_, it\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB --\_: he\_PRP is\_VBZ also\_RB a\_DT man\_NN of\_IN great\_JJ nerve\_NN .\_.

That\_DT going\_VBG down\_RB to\_TO the\_DT vault\_NN a\_DT second\_JJ time\_NN was\_VBD a\_DT remarkable\_JJ piece\_NN of\_IN daring\_JJ .\_.

After\_IN reading\_VBG his\_PRP$ account\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP I\_PRP was\_VBD prepared\_VBN to\_TO meet\_VB a\_DT good\_JJ specimen\_NN of\_IN manhood\_NN ,\_, but\_CC hardly\_RB the\_DT quiet\_JJ ,\_, business-like\_JJ gentleman\_NN who\_WP came\_VBD here\_RB to-day\_JJ .\_.

Later\_RB .\_.

--\_: After\_IN lunch\_NN Harker\_NN and\_CC his\_PRP$ wife\_NN went\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO their\_PRP$ own\_JJ room\_NN ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN I\_PRP passed\_VBD a\_DT while\_NN ago\_RB I\_PRP heard\_VBD the\_DT click\_VB of\_IN the\_DT typewriter\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP are\_VBP hard\_RB at\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP says\_VBZ that\_IN they\_PRP are\_VBP knitting\_VBG together\_RB in\_IN chronological\_JJ order\_NN every\_DT scrap\_NN of\_IN evidence\_NN they\_PRP have\_VBP .\_.

Harker\_NNP has\_VBZ got\_VBN the\_DT letters\_NNS between\_IN the\_DT consignee\_NN of\_IN the\_DT boxes\_NNS at\_IN Whitby\_NNP and\_CC the\_DT carriers\_NNS in\_IN London\_NNP who\_WP took\_VBD charge\_NN of\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ now\_RB reading\_VBG his\_PRP$ wife\_NN 's\_POS typescript\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ diary\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP wonder\_VBP what\_WP they\_PRP make\_VBP out\_IN of\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

Here\_RB it\_PRP is\_VBZ ...\_: .\_.

Strange\_JJ that\_IN it\_PRP never\_RB struck\_VBD me\_PRP that\_IN the\_DT very\_RB next\_JJ house\_NN might\_MD be\_VB the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS hiding-place\_NN !\_.

Goodness\_NN knows\_VBZ that\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD enough\_JJ clues\_NNS from\_IN the\_DT conduct\_NN of\_IN the\_DT patient\_NN Renfield\_NNP !\_.

The\_DT bundle\_NN of\_IN letters\_NNS relating\_VBG to\_TO the\_DT purchase\_NN of\_IN the\_DT house\_NN were\_VBD with\_IN the\_DT typescript\_NN .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, if\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD only\_RB had\_VBD them\_PRP earlier\_RBR we\_PRP might\_MD have\_VB saved\_VBN poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP !\_.

Stop\_NN ;\_: that\_DT way\_NN madness\_NN lies\_VBZ !\_.

Harker\_NNP has\_VBZ gone\_VBN back\_RB ,\_, and\_CC is\_VBZ again\_RB collating\_VBG his\_PRP$ material\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP says\_VBZ that\_IN by\_IN dinner-time\_NN they\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB able\_JJ to\_TO show\_VB a\_DT whole\_JJ connected\_JJ narrative\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP thinks\_VBZ that\_IN in\_IN the\_DT meantime\_NN I\_PRP should\_MD see\_VB Renfield\_NNP ,\_, as\_RB hitherto\_RB he\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN index\_NN to\_TO the\_DT coming\_VBG and\_CC going\_VBG of\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP hardly\_RB see\_VBP this\_DT yet\_RB ,\_, but\_CC when\_WRB I\_PRP get\_VBP at\_IN the\_DT dates\_NNS I\_PRP suppose\_VBP I\_PRP shall\_MD .\_.

What\_WP a\_DT good\_JJ thing\_NN that\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP put\_VBD my\_PRP$ cylinders\_NNS into\_IN type\_NN !\_.

We\_PRP never\_RB could\_MD have\_VB found\_VBN the\_DT dates\_NNS otherwise\_RB ...\_: .\_.

I\_PRP found\_VBD Renfield\_NNP sitting\_VBG placidly\_RB in\_IN his\_PRP$ room\_NN with\_IN his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS folded\_VBD ,\_, smiling\_VBG benignly\_RB .\_.

At\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN he\_PRP seemed\_VBD as\_RB sane\_JJ as\_IN any\_DT one\_CD I\_PRP ever\_RB saw\_VBD .\_.

I\_PRP sat\_VBD down\_RB and\_CC talked\_VBD with\_IN him\_PRP on\_IN a\_DT lot\_NN of\_IN subjects\_NNS ,\_, all\_DT of\_IN which\_WDT he\_PRP treated\_VBD naturally\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP then\_RB ,\_, of\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ accord\_NN ,\_, spoke\_VBD of\_IN going\_VBG home\_NN ,\_, a\_DT subject\_NN he\_PRP has\_VBZ never\_RB mentioned\_VBN to\_TO my\_PRP$ knowledge\_NN during\_IN his\_PRP$ sojourn\_NN here\_RB .\_.

In\_IN fact\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP spoke\_VBD quite\_RB confidently\_RB of\_IN getting\_VBG his\_PRP$ discharge\_NN at\_IN once\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP believe\_VBP that\_IN ,\_, had\_VBD I\_PRP not\_RB had\_VBD the\_DT chat\_NN with\_IN Harker\_NNP and\_CC read\_VB the\_DT letters\_NNS and\_CC the\_DT dates\_NNS of\_IN his\_PRP$ outbursts\_NNS ,\_, I\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN prepared\_VBN to\_TO sign\_VB for\_IN him\_PRP after\_IN a\_DT brief\_JJ time\_NN of\_IN observation\_NN .\_.

As\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP darkly\_RB suspicious\_JJ .\_.

All\_DT those\_DT outbreaks\_NNS were\_VBD in\_IN some\_DT way\_NN linked\_VBN with\_IN the\_DT proximity\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN .\_.

What\_WP then\_RB does\_VBZ this\_DT absolute\_JJ content\_NN mean\_VB ?\_.

Can\_MD it\_PRP be\_VB that\_IN his\_PRP$ instinct\_NN is\_VBZ satisfied\_VBN as\_IN to\_TO the\_DT vampire\_NN 's\_POS ultimate\_JJ triumph\_NN ?\_.

Stay\_NNP ;\_: he\_PRP is\_VBZ himself\_PRP zoöphagous\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN his\_PRP$ wild\_JJ ravings\_NNS outside\_IN the\_DT chapel\_NN door\_NN of\_IN the\_DT deserted\_VBN house\_NN he\_PRP always\_RB spoke\_VBD of\_IN ``\_`` master\_NN .\_. ''\_''

This\_DT all\_DT seems\_VBZ confirmation\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ idea\_NN .\_.

However\_RB ,\_, after\_IN a\_DT while\_NN I\_PRP came\_VBD away\_RB ;\_: my\_PRP$ friend\_NN is\_VBZ just\_RB a\_DT little\_JJ too\_RB sane\_JJ at\_IN present\_JJ to\_TO make\_VB it\_PRP safe\_JJ to\_TO probe\_VB him\_PRP too\_RB deep\_JJ with\_IN questions\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP might\_MD begin\_VB to\_TO think\_VB ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB --\_: !\_.

So\_RB I\_PRP came\_VBD away\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP mistrust\_NN these\_DT quiet\_JJ moods\_NNS of\_IN his\_PRP$ ;\_: so\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP given\_VBN the\_DT attendant\_NN a\_DT hint\_NN to\_TO look\_VB closely\_RB after\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO have\_VB a\_DT strait-waistcoat\_NN ready\_JJ in\_IN case\_NN of\_IN need\_NN .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP .\_.

29\_CD September\_NNP ,\_, in\_IN train\_NN to\_TO London\_NNP .\_.

--\_: When\_WRB I\_PRP received\_VBD Mr.\_NNP Billington\_NNP 's\_POS courteous\_JJ message\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP would\_MD give\_VB me\_PRP any\_DT information\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ power\_NN I\_PRP thought\_VBD it\_PRP best\_JJS to\_TO go\_VB down\_RP to\_TO Whitby\_NNP and\_CC make\_VB ,\_, on\_IN the\_DT spot\_NN ,\_, such\_JJ inquiries\_NNS as\_IN I\_PRP wanted\_VBD .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD now\_RB my\_PRP$ object\_NN to\_TO trace\_VB that\_IN horrid\_JJ cargo\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS to\_TO its\_PRP$ place\_NN in\_IN London\_NNP .\_.

Later\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB able\_JJ to\_TO deal\_VB with\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

Billington\_NNP junior\_NN ,\_, a\_DT nice\_JJ lad\_NN ,\_, met\_VBD me\_PRP at\_IN the\_DT station\_NN ,\_, and\_CC brought\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO his\_PRP$ father\_NN 's\_POS house\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB they\_PRP had\_VBD decided\_VBN that\_IN I\_PRP must\_MD stay\_VB the\_DT night\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP are\_VBP hospitable\_JJ ,\_, with\_IN true\_JJ Yorkshire\_NNP hospitality\_NN :\_: give\_VB a\_DT guest\_NN everything\_NN ,\_, and\_CC leave\_VB him\_PRP free\_JJ to\_TO do\_VB as\_IN he\_PRP likes\_VBZ .\_.

They\_PRP all\_DT knew\_VBD that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD busy\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN my\_PRP$ stay\_NN was\_VBD short\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC Mr.\_NNP Billington\_NNP had\_VBD ready\_JJ in\_IN his\_PRP$ office\_NN all\_PDT the\_DT papers\_NNS concerning\_VBG the\_DT consignment\_NN of\_IN boxes\_NNS .\_.

It\_PRP gave\_VBD me\_PRP almost\_RB a\_DT turn\_NN to\_TO see\_VB again\_RB one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT letters\_NNS which\_WDT I\_PRP had\_VBD seen\_VBN on\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS table\_NN before\_IN I\_PRP knew\_VBD of\_IN his\_PRP$ diabolical\_JJ plans\_NNS .\_.

Everything\_NNP had\_VBD been\_VBN carefully\_RB thought\_VBN out\_RP ,\_, and\_CC done\_VBN systematically\_RB and\_CC with\_IN precision\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO have\_VB been\_VBN prepared\_VBN for\_IN every\_DT obstacle\_NN which\_WDT might\_MD be\_VB placed\_VBN by\_IN accident\_NN in\_IN the\_DT way\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ intentions\_NNS being\_VBG carried\_VBN out\_RP .\_.

To\_TO use\_VB an\_DT Americanism\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP had\_VBD ``\_`` taken\_VBN no\_DT chances\_NNS ,\_, ''\_'' and\_CC the\_DT absolute\_JJ accuracy\_NN with\_IN which\_WDT his\_PRP$ instructions\_NNS were\_VBD fulfilled\_VBN ,\_, was\_VBD simply\_RB the\_DT logical\_JJ result\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ care\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP saw\_VBD the\_DT invoice\_NN ,\_, and\_CC took\_VBD note\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP :\_: ``\_`` Fifty\_CD cases\_NNS of\_IN common\_JJ earth\_NN ,\_, to\_TO be\_VB used\_VBN for\_IN experimental\_JJ purposes\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

Also\_RB the\_DT copy\_NN of\_IN letter\_NN to\_TO Carter\_NNP Paterson\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC their\_PRP$ reply\_NN ;\_: of\_IN both\_DT of\_IN these\_DT I\_PRP got\_VBD copies\_NNS .\_.

This\_DT was\_VBD all\_PDT the\_DT information\_NN Mr.\_NNP Billington\_NNP could\_MD give\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP went\_VBD down\_RB to\_TO the\_DT port\_NN and\_CC saw\_VBD the\_DT coastguards\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT Customs\_NNP officers\_NNS and\_CC the\_DT harbour-master\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP had\_VBD all\_DT something\_NN to\_TO say\_VB of\_IN the\_DT strange\_JJ entry\_NN of\_IN the\_DT ship\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT is\_VBZ already\_RB taking\_VBG its\_PRP$ place\_NN in\_IN local\_JJ tradition\_NN ;\_: but\_CC no\_DT one\_NN could\_MD add\_VB to\_TO the\_DT simple\_JJ description\_NN ``\_`` Fifty\_CD cases\_NNS of\_IN common\_JJ earth\_NN .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP then\_RB saw\_VBD the\_DT station-master\_NN ,\_, who\_WP kindly\_RB put\_VBD me\_PRP in\_IN communication\_NN with\_IN the\_DT men\_NNS who\_WP had\_VBD actually\_RB received\_VBN the\_DT boxes\_NNS .\_.

Their\_PRP$ tally\_NN was\_VBD exact\_JJ with\_IN the\_DT list\_NN ,\_, and\_CC they\_PRP had\_VBD nothing\_NN to\_TO add\_VB except\_IN that\_IN the\_DT boxes\_NNS were\_VBD ``\_`` main\_JJ and\_CC mortal\_JJ heavy\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' and\_CC that\_IN shifting\_VBG them\_PRP was\_VBD dry\_JJ work\_NN .\_.

One\_CD of\_IN them\_PRP added\_VBD that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD hard\_JJ lines\_NNS that\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD n't\_RB any\_DT gentleman\_NN ``\_`` such-like\_JJ as\_IN yourself\_PRP ,\_, squire\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' to\_TO show\_VB some\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN appreciation\_NN of\_IN their\_PRP$ efforts\_NNS in\_IN a\_DT liquid\_JJ form\_NN ;\_: another\_DT put\_NN in\_IN a\_DT rider\_NN that\_IN the\_DT thirst\_NN then\_RB generated\_VBD was\_VBD such\_JJ that\_IN even\_RB the\_DT time\_NN which\_WDT had\_VBD elapsed\_VBN had\_VBD not\_RB completely\_RB allayed\_VBD it\_PRP .\_.

Needless\_JJ to\_TO add\_VB ,\_, I\_PRP took\_VBD care\_NN before\_IN leaving\_VBG to\_TO lift\_VB ,\_, for\_IN ever\_RB and\_CC adequately\_RB ,\_, this\_DT source\_NN of\_IN reproach\_NN .\_.

30\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: The\_DT station-master\_NN was\_VBD good\_JJ enough\_RB to\_TO give\_VB me\_PRP a\_DT line\_NN to\_TO his\_PRP$ old\_JJ companion\_NN the\_DT station-master\_NN at\_IN King\_NNP 's\_POS Cross\_NNP ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN when\_WRB I\_PRP arrived\_VBD there\_EX in\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN I\_PRP was\_VBD able\_JJ to\_TO ask\_VB him\_PRP about\_IN the\_DT arrival\_NN of\_IN the\_DT boxes\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, put\_VB me\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB in\_IN communication\_NN with\_IN the\_DT proper\_JJ officials\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP saw\_VBD that\_DT their\_PRP$ tally\_NN was\_VBD correct\_JJ with\_IN the\_DT original\_JJ invoice\_NN .\_.

The\_DT opportunities\_NNS of\_IN acquiring\_VBG an\_DT abnormal\_JJ thirst\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN here\_RB limited\_VBN ;\_: a\_DT noble\_JJ use\_NN of\_IN them\_PRP had\_VBD ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, been\_VBN made\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC again\_RB I\_PRP was\_VBD compelled\_VBN to\_TO deal\_VB with\_IN the\_DT result\_NN in\_IN an\_DT ex\_FW post\_JJ facto\_JJ manner\_NN .\_.

From\_IN thence\_RB I\_PRP went\_VBD on\_RP to\_TO Carter\_NNP Paterson\_NNP 's\_POS central\_JJ office\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB I\_PRP met\_VBD with\_IN the\_DT utmost\_JJ courtesy\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP looked\_VBD up\_RP the\_DT transaction\_NN in\_IN their\_PRP$ day-book\_NN and\_CC letter-book\_NN ,\_, and\_CC at\_IN once\_RB telephoned\_VBN to\_TO their\_PRP$ King\_NNP 's\_POS Cross\_NNP office\_NN for\_IN more\_JJR details\_NNS .\_.

By\_IN good\_JJ fortune\_NN ,\_, the\_DT men\_NNS who\_WP did\_VBD the\_DT teaming\_VBG were\_VBD waiting\_VBG for\_IN work\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT official\_NN at\_IN once\_RB sent\_VBD them\_PRP over\_RP ,\_, sending\_VBG also\_RB by\_IN one\_CD of\_IN them\_PRP the\_DT way-bill\_NN and\_CC all\_PDT the\_DT papers\_NNS connected\_VBN with\_IN the\_DT delivery\_NN of\_IN the\_DT boxes\_NNS at\_IN Carfax\_NNP .\_.

Here\_RB again\_RB I\_PRP found\_VBD the\_DT tally\_NN agreeing\_VBG exactly\_RB ;\_: the\_DT carriers\_NNS '\_POS men\_NNS were\_VBD able\_JJ to\_TO supplement\_VB the\_DT paucity\_NN of\_IN the\_DT written\_VBN words\_NNS with\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ details\_NNS .\_.

These\_DT were\_VBD ,\_, I\_PRP shortly\_RB found\_VBD ,\_, connected\_VBN almost\_RB solely\_RB with\_IN the\_DT dusty\_JJ nature\_NN of\_IN the\_DT job\_NN ,\_, and\_CC of\_IN the\_DT consequent\_JJ thirst\_NN engendered\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT operators\_NNS .\_.

On\_IN my\_PRP$ affording\_VBG an\_DT opportunity\_NN ,\_, through\_IN the\_DT medium\_NN of\_IN the\_DT currency\_NN of\_IN the\_DT realm\_NN ,\_, of\_IN the\_DT allaying\_NN ,\_, at\_IN a\_DT later\_JJ period\_NN ,\_, this\_DT beneficial\_JJ evil\_NN ,\_, one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT men\_NNS remarked\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` That\_DT '\_'' ere\_NN '\_'' ouse\_NN ,\_, guv\_NN '\_'' nor\_CC ,\_, is\_VBZ the\_DT rummiest\_JJS I\_PRP ever\_RB was\_VBD in\_IN .\_.

Blyme\_NN !\_.

but\_CC it\_PRP ai\_VBP n't\_RB been\_VBN touched\_VBN sence\_NN a\_DT hundred\_CD years\_NNS .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD dust\_NN that\_IN thick\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT place\_NN that\_IN you\_PRP might\_MD have\_VB slep\_NN '\_'' on\_IN it\_PRP without\_IN '\_POS urtin\_NN '\_'' of\_IN yer\_JJ bones\_NNS ;\_: an\_DT '\_'' the\_DT place\_NN was\_VBD that\_IN neglected\_VBN that\_IN yer\_JJ might\_NN '\_'' ave\_NN smelled\_VBD ole\_JJ Jerusalem\_NNP in\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

But\_CC the\_DT ole\_FW chapel\_FW --\_: that\_WDT took\_VBD the\_DT cike\_NN ,\_, that\_WDT did\_VBD !\_.

Me\_PRP and\_CC my\_PRP$ mate\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP thort\_VBP we\_PRP would\_MD n't\_RB never\_RB git\_VB out\_RP quick\_RB enough\_RB .\_.

Lor\_NN '\_'' ,\_, I\_PRP would\_MD n't\_RB take\_VB less\_JJR nor\_CC a\_DT quid\_NN a\_DT moment\_NN to\_TO stay\_VB there\_RB arter\_JJ dark\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Having\_VBG been\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT house\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD well\_RB believe\_VB him\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC if\_IN he\_PRP knew\_VBD what\_WP I\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, he\_PRP would\_MD ,\_, I\_PRP think\_VBP ,\_, have\_VBP raised\_VBN his\_PRP$ terms\_NNS .\_.

Of\_IN one\_CD thing\_NN I\_PRP am\_VBP now\_RB satisfied\_VBN :\_: that\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT boxes\_NNS which\_WDT arrived\_VBD at\_IN Whitby\_NNP from\_IN Varna\_NNP in\_IN the\_DT Demeter\_NNP were\_VBD safely\_RB deposited\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT old\_JJ chapel\_NN at\_IN Carfax\_NNP .\_.

There\_EX should\_MD be\_VB fifty\_CD of\_IN them\_PRP there\_RB ,\_, unless\_IN any\_DT have\_VBP since\_IN been\_VBN removed\_VBN --\_: as\_IN from\_IN Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS diary\_NN I\_PRP fear\_VBP .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD try\_VB to\_TO see\_VB the\_DT carter\_NN who\_WP took\_VBD away\_RP the\_DT boxes\_NNS from\_IN Carfax\_NNP when\_WRB Renfield\_NNP attacked\_VBD them\_PRP .\_.

By\_IN following\_VBG up\_RP this\_DT clue\_NN we\_PRP may\_MD learn\_VB a\_DT good\_JJ deal\_NN .\_.

Later\_RB .\_.

--\_: Mina\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP worked\_VBN all\_DT day\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP have\_VBP put\_VBN all\_PDT the\_DT papers\_NNS into\_IN order\_NN .\_.

Mina\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP 30\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP am\_VBP so\_RB glad\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP hardly\_RB know\_VBP how\_WRB to\_TO contain\_VB myself\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ ,\_, I\_PRP suppose\_VBP ,\_, the\_DT reaction\_NN from\_IN the\_DT haunting\_VBG fear\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP have\_VBP had\_VBN :\_: that\_IN this\_DT terrible\_JJ affair\_NN and\_CC the\_DT reopening\_VBG of\_IN his\_PRP$ old\_JJ wound\_NN might\_MD act\_VB detrimentally\_RB on\_IN Jonathan\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP saw\_VBD him\_PRP leave\_VB for\_IN Whitby\_NNP with\_IN as\_RB brave\_VB a\_DT face\_NN as\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP was\_VBD sick\_JJ with\_IN apprehension\_NN .\_.

The\_DT effort\_NN has\_VBZ ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, done\_VBD him\_PRP good\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD never\_RB so\_RB resolute\_JJ ,\_, never\_RB so\_RB strong\_JJ ,\_, never\_RB so\_RB full\_JJ of\_IN volcanic\_JJ energy\_NN ,\_, as\_IN at\_IN present\_JJ .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ just\_RB as\_IN that\_DT dear\_RB ,\_, good\_JJ Professor\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP said\_VBD :\_: he\_PRP is\_VBZ true\_JJ grit\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP improves\_VBZ under\_IN strain\_NN that\_WDT would\_MD kill\_VB a\_DT weaker\_JJR nature\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP came\_VBD back\_RB full\_JJ of\_IN life\_NN and\_CC hope\_NN and\_CC determination\_NN ;\_: we\_PRP have\_VBP got\_VBN everything\_NN in\_IN order\_NN for\_IN to-night\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP feel\_VBP myself\_PRP quite\_RB wild\_JJ with\_IN excitement\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP suppose\_VBP one\_PRP ought\_MD to\_TO pity\_NN any\_DT thing\_NN so\_RB hunted\_VBN as\_IN is\_VBZ the\_DT Count\_NN .\_.

That\_DT is\_VBZ just\_RB it\_PRP :\_: this\_DT Thing\_NN is\_VBZ not\_RB human\_JJ --\_: not\_RB even\_RB beast\_NN .\_.

To\_TO read\_VB Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS account\_NN of\_IN poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS death\_NN ,\_, and\_CC what\_WP followed\_VBD ,\_, is\_VBZ enough\_JJ to\_TO dry\_VB up\_RP the\_DT springs\_NNS of\_IN pity\_NN in\_IN one\_NN 's\_POS heart\_NN .\_.

Later\_RB .\_.

--\_: Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP and\_CC Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP arrived\_VBD earlier\_RBR than\_IN we\_PRP expected\_VBD .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP was\_VBD out\_RB on\_IN business\_NN ,\_, and\_CC had\_VBD taken\_VBN Jonathan\_NNP with\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO see\_VB them\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP a\_DT painful\_JJ meeting\_NN ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP brought\_VBD back\_RP all\_DT poor\_JJ dear\_RB Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS hopes\_NNS of\_IN only\_RB a\_DT few\_JJ months\_NNS ago\_RB .\_.

Of\_IN course\_NN they\_PRP had\_VBD heard\_VBN Lucy\_NNP speak\_VB of\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP seemed\_VBD that\_IN Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, has\_VBZ been\_VBN quite\_RB ``\_`` blowing\_VBG my\_PRP$ trumpet\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' as\_IN Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP expressed\_VBD it\_PRP .\_.

Poor\_NNP fellows\_NNS ,\_, neither\_DT of\_IN them\_PRP is\_VBZ aware\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP know\_VBP all\_DT about\_IN the\_DT proposals\_NNS they\_PRP made\_VBD to\_TO Lucy\_NNP .\_.

They\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB quite\_RB know\_VB what\_WP to\_TO say\_VB or\_CC do\_VB ,\_, as\_IN they\_PRP were\_VBD ignorant\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT amount\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ knowledge\_NN ;\_: so\_IN they\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO keep\_VB on\_IN neutral\_JJ subjects\_NNS .\_.

However\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP thought\_VBD the\_DT matter\_NN over\_IN ,\_, and\_CC came\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT conclusion\_NN that\_IN the\_DT best\_JJS thing\_NN I\_PRP could\_MD do\_VB would\_MD be\_VB to\_TO post\_VB them\_PRP in\_IN affairs\_NNS right\_RB up\_RB to\_TO date\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP knew\_VBD from\_IN Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS diary\_NN that\_IN they\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN at\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS death\_NN --\_: her\_PRP$ real\_JJ death\_NN --\_: and\_CC that\_IN I\_PRP need\_VBP not\_RB fear\_VB to\_TO betray\_VB any\_DT secret\_NN before\_IN the\_DT time\_NN .\_.

So\_RB I\_PRP told\_VBD them\_PRP ,\_, as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD read\_VBN all\_PDT the\_DT papers\_NNS and\_CC diaries\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN my\_PRP$ husband\_NN and\_CC I\_NN ,\_, having\_VBG typewritten\_VBN them\_PRP ,\_, had\_VBD just\_RB finished\_VBN putting\_VBG them\_PRP in\_IN order\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP gave\_VBD them\_PRP each\_DT a\_DT copy\_NN to\_TO read\_VB in\_IN the\_DT library\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP got\_VBD his\_PRP$ and\_CC turned\_VBD it\_PRP over\_RP --\_: it\_PRP does\_VBZ make\_VB a\_DT pretty\_RB good\_JJ pile\_NN --\_: he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Did\_VBD you\_PRP write\_VB all\_PDT this\_DT ,\_, Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP nodded\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB quite\_RB see\_VB the\_DT drift\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC you\_PRP people\_NNS are\_VBP all\_RB so\_RB good\_JJ and\_CC kind\_NN ,\_, and\_CC have\_VBP been\_VBN working\_VBG so\_RB earnestly\_RB and\_CC so\_RB energetically\_RB ,\_, that\_IN all\_DT I\_PRP can\_MD do\_VB is\_VBZ to\_TO accept\_VB your\_PRP$ ideas\_NNS blindfold\_NN and\_CC try\_VB to\_TO help\_VB you\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP had\_VBN one\_CD lesson\_NN already\_RB in\_IN accepting\_VBG facts\_NNS that\_WDT should\_MD make\_VB a\_DT man\_NN humble\_JJ to\_TO the\_DT last\_JJ hour\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ life\_NN .\_.

Besides\_IN ,\_, I\_PRP know\_VBP you\_PRP loved\_VBD my\_PRP$ poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP --\_: ''\_'' Here\_RB he\_PRP turned\_VBD away\_RB and\_CC covered\_VBD his\_PRP$ face\_NN with\_IN his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD hear\_VB the\_DT tears\_NNS in\_IN his\_PRP$ voice\_NN .\_.

Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP ,\_, with\_IN instinctive\_JJ delicacy\_NN ,\_, just\_RB laid\_VBD a\_DT hand\_NN for\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN on\_IN his\_PRP$ shoulder\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB walked\_VBD quietly\_RB out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT room\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP suppose\_VBP there\_EX is\_VBZ something\_NN in\_IN woman\_NN 's\_POS nature\_NN that\_WDT makes\_VBZ a\_DT man\_NN free\_JJ to\_TO break\_VB down\_RP before\_IN her\_PRP and\_CC express\_VB his\_PRP$ feelings\_NNS on\_IN the\_DT tender\_NN or\_CC emotional\_JJ side\_NN without\_IN feeling\_VBG it\_PRP derogatory\_JJ to\_TO his\_PRP$ manhood\_NN ;\_: for\_IN when\_WRB Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP found\_VBD himself\_PRP alone\_RB with\_IN me\_PRP he\_PRP sat\_VBD down\_RP on\_IN the\_DT sofa\_NN and\_CC gave\_VBD way\_NN utterly\_RB and\_CC openly\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP sat\_VBD down\_RB beside\_IN him\_PRP and\_CC took\_VBD his\_PRP$ hand\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP hope\_VBP he\_PRP did\_VBD n't\_RB think\_VB it\_PRP forward\_RB of\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN if\_IN he\_PRP ever\_RB thinks\_VBZ of\_IN it\_PRP afterwards\_RB he\_PRP never\_RB will\_MD have\_VB such\_JJ a\_DT thought\_NN .\_.

There\_EX I\_PRP wrong\_JJ him\_PRP ;\_: I\_PRP know\_VBP he\_PRP never\_RB will\_MD --\_: he\_PRP is\_VBZ too\_RB true\_JJ a\_DT gentleman\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB that\_IN his\_PRP$ heart\_NN was\_VBD breaking\_VBG :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP loved\_VBD dear\_RB Lucy\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP know\_VBP what\_WP she\_PRP was\_VBD to\_TO you\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC what\_WP you\_PRP were\_VBD to\_TO her\_PRP .\_.

She\_PRP and\_CC I\_PRP were\_VBD like\_IN sisters\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC now\_RB she\_PRP is\_VBZ gone\_VBN ,\_, will\_MD you\_PRP not\_RB let\_VB me\_PRP be\_VB like\_IN a\_DT sister\_NN to\_TO you\_PRP in\_IN your\_PRP$ trouble\_NN ?\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP what\_WP sorrows\_VBZ you\_PRP have\_VBP had\_VBN ,\_, though\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB measure\_VB the\_DT depth\_NN of\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

If\_IN sympathy\_NN and\_CC pity\_NN can\_MD help\_VB in\_IN your\_PRP$ affliction\_NN ,\_, wo\_MD n't\_RB you\_PRP let\_VB me\_PRP be\_VB of\_IN some\_DT little\_JJ service\_NN --\_: for\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS sake\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

In\_IN an\_DT instant\_NN the\_DT poor\_JJ dear\_RB fellow\_NN was\_VBD overwhelmed\_VBN with\_IN grief\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP that\_IN all\_DT that\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD of\_IN late\_RB been\_VBN suffering\_VBG in\_IN silence\_NN found\_VBD a\_DT vent\_VB at\_IN once\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP grew\_VBD quite\_RB hysterical\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC raising\_VBG his\_PRP$ open\_JJ hands\_NNS ,\_, beat\_VB his\_PRP$ palms\_NNS together\_RB in\_IN a\_DT perfect\_JJ agony\_NN of\_IN grief\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP stood\_VBD up\_RB and\_CC then\_RB sat\_VBD down\_RB again\_RB ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT tears\_NNS rained\_VBD down\_RP his\_PRP$ cheeks\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP felt\_VBD an\_DT infinite\_JJ pity\_NN for\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC opened\_VBD my\_PRP$ arms\_NNS unthinkingly\_RB .\_.

With\_IN a\_DT sob\_VBP he\_PRP laid\_VBD his\_PRP$ head\_NN on\_IN my\_PRP$ shoulder\_NN and\_CC cried\_VBD like\_IN a\_DT wearied\_JJ child\_NN ,\_, whilst\_IN he\_PRP shook\_VBD with\_IN emotion\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP women\_NNS have\_VBP something\_NN of\_IN the\_DT mother\_NN in\_IN us\_PRP that\_WDT makes\_VBZ us\_PRP rise\_VB above\_IN smaller\_JJR matters\_NNS when\_WRB the\_DT mother-spirit\_NN is\_VBZ invoked\_VBN ;\_: I\_PRP felt\_VBD this\_DT big\_JJ sorrowing\_JJ man\_NN 's\_POS head\_NN resting\_VBG on\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN it\_PRP were\_VBD that\_IN of\_IN the\_DT baby\_NN that\_IN some\_DT day\_NN may\_MD lie\_VB on\_IN my\_PRP$ bosom\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP stroked\_VBD his\_PRP$ hair\_NN as\_IN though\_IN he\_PRP were\_VBD my\_PRP$ own\_JJ child\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP never\_RB thought\_VBD at\_IN the\_DT time\_NN how\_WRB strange\_JJ it\_PRP all\_DT was\_VBD .\_.

After\_IN a\_DT little\_JJ bit\_NN his\_PRP$ sobs\_NNS ceased\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP raised\_VBD himself\_PRP with\_IN an\_DT apology\_NN ,\_, though\_IN he\_PRP made\_VBD no\_DT disguise\_VB of\_IN his\_PRP$ emotion\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP told\_VBD me\_PRP that\_IN for\_IN days\_NNS and\_CC nights\_NNS past\_NN --\_: weary\_JJ days\_NNS and\_CC sleepless\_JJ nights\_NNS --\_: he\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN unable\_JJ to\_TO speak\_VB with\_IN any\_DT one\_CD ,\_, as\_IN a\_DT man\_NN must\_MD speak\_VB in\_IN his\_PRP$ time\_NN of\_IN sorrow\_NN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT woman\_NN whose\_WP$ sympathy\_NN could\_MD be\_VB given\_VBN to\_TO him\_PRP ,\_, or\_CC with\_IN whom\_WP ,\_, owing\_VBG to\_TO the\_DT terrible\_JJ circumstance\_NN with\_IN which\_WDT his\_PRP$ sorrow\_NN was\_VBD surrounded\_VBN ,\_, he\_PRP could\_MD speak\_VB freely\_RB .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP know\_VBP now\_RB how\_WRB I\_PRP suffered\_VBD ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP dried\_VBD his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ,\_, ``\_`` but\_CC I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB know\_VB even\_RB yet\_RB --\_: and\_CC none\_NN other\_JJ can\_MD ever\_RB know\_VB --\_: how\_WRB much\_RB your\_PRP$ sweet\_JJ sympathy\_NN has\_VBZ been\_VBN to\_TO me\_PRP to-day\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD know\_VB better\_JJR in\_IN time\_NN ;\_: and\_CC believe\_VBP me\_PRP that\_IN ,\_, though\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB ungrateful\_JJ now\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ gratitude\_NN will\_MD grow\_VB with\_IN my\_PRP$ understanding\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP will\_MD let\_VB me\_PRP be\_VB like\_IN a\_DT brother\_NN ,\_, will\_MD you\_PRP not\_RB ,\_, for\_IN all\_PDT our\_PRP$ lives\_NNS --\_: for\_IN dear\_RB Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS sake\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` For\_IN dear\_RB Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS sake\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD as\_IN we\_PRP clasped\_VBD hands\_NNS .\_.

``\_`` Ay\_NN ,\_, and\_CC for\_IN your\_PRP$ own\_JJ sake\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP added\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` for\_IN if\_IN a\_DT man\_NN 's\_POS esteem\_NN and\_CC gratitude\_NN are\_VBP ever\_RB worth\_JJ the\_DT winning\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP have\_VBP won\_VBN mine\_JJ to-day\_NN .\_.

If\_IN ever\_RB the\_DT future\_NN should\_MD bring\_VB to\_TO you\_PRP a\_DT time\_NN when\_WRB you\_PRP need\_VBP a\_DT man\_NN 's\_POS help\_NN ,\_, believe\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, you\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB call\_VB in\_IN vain\_JJ .\_.

God\_NN grant\_NN that\_IN no\_DT such\_JJ time\_NN may\_MD ever\_RB come\_VB to\_TO you\_PRP to\_TO break\_VB the\_DT sunshine\_NN of\_IN your\_PRP$ life\_NN ;\_: but\_CC if\_IN it\_PRP should\_MD ever\_RB come\_VB ,\_, promise\_VB me\_PRP that\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD let\_VB me\_PRP know\_VB .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP was\_VBD so\_RB earnest\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ sorrow\_NN was\_VBD so\_RB fresh\_JJ ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP felt\_VBD it\_PRP would\_MD comfort\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP promise\_VBP .\_. ''\_''

As\_IN I\_PRP came\_VBD along\_IN the\_DT corridor\_NN I\_PRP saw\_VBD Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP looking\_VBG out\_IN of\_IN a\_DT window\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP turned\_VBD as\_IN he\_PRP heard\_VBD my\_PRP$ footsteps\_NNS .\_.

``\_`` How\_WRB is\_VBZ Art\_NNP ?\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

Then\_RB noticing\_VBG my\_PRP$ red\_JJ eyes\_NNS ,\_, he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: ``\_`` Ah\_UH ,\_, I\_PRP see\_VBP you\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN comforting\_JJ him\_PRP .\_.

Poor\_NNP old\_JJ fellow\_NN !\_.

he\_PRP needs\_VBZ it\_PRP .\_.

No\_DT one\_NN but\_CC a\_DT woman\_NN can\_MD help\_VB a\_DT man\_NN when\_WRB he\_PRP is\_VBZ in\_IN trouble\_NN of\_IN the\_DT heart\_NN ;\_: and\_CC he\_PRP had\_VBD no\_DT one\_NN to\_TO comfort\_VB him\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP bore\_VBD his\_PRP$ own\_JJ trouble\_NN so\_RB bravely\_RB that\_IN my\_PRP$ heart\_NN bled\_VBD for\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP saw\_VBD the\_DT manuscript\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ hand\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN when\_WRB he\_PRP read\_VBD it\_PRP he\_PRP would\_MD realise\_VB how\_WRB much\_JJ I\_PRP knew\_VBD ;\_: so\_IN I\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP wish\_VBP I\_PRP could\_MD comfort\_VB all\_DT who\_WP suffer\_VBP from\_IN the\_DT heart\_NN .\_.

Will\_MD you\_PRP let\_VB me\_PRP be\_VB your\_PRP$ friend\_NN ,\_, and\_CC will\_MD you\_PRP come\_VB to\_TO me\_PRP for\_IN comfort\_NN if\_IN you\_PRP need\_VBP it\_PRP ?\_.

You\_PRP will\_MD know\_VB ,\_, later\_RB on\_IN ,\_, why\_WRB I\_PRP speak\_VBP .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP saw\_VBD that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN earnest\_NN ,\_, and\_CC stooping\_NN ,\_, took\_VBD my\_PRP$ hand\_NN ,\_, and\_CC raising\_VBG it\_PRP to\_TO his\_PRP$ lips\_NNS ,\_, kissed\_VBD it\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP seemed\_VBD but\_CC poor\_JJ comfort\_NN to\_TO so\_RB brave\_VB and\_CC unselfish\_VB a\_DT soul\_NN ,\_, and\_CC impulsively\_RB I\_PRP bent\_JJ over\_IN and\_CC kissed\_VBD him\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT tears\_NNS rose\_VBD in\_IN his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT momentary\_JJ choking\_VBG in\_IN his\_PRP$ throat\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP said\_VBD quite\_RB calmly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Little\_JJ girl\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP will\_MD never\_RB regret\_VB that\_IN true-hearted\_JJ kindness\_NN ,\_, so\_RB long\_RB as\_RB ever\_RB you\_PRP live\_VBP !\_. ''\_''

Then\_RB he\_PRP went\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT study\_NN to\_TO his\_PRP$ friend\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Little\_JJ girl\_NN !\_. ''\_''

--\_: the\_DT very\_JJ words\_NNS he\_PRP had\_VBD used\_VBN to\_TO Lucy\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC oh\_UH ,\_, but\_CC he\_PRP proved\_VBD himself\_PRP a\_DT friend\_NN !\_.

CHAPTER\_NNP XVIII\_NNP DR.\_NNP SEWARD\_NNP 'S\_POS DIARY\_NN 30\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP got\_VBD home\_NN at\_IN five\_CD o'clock\_RB ,\_, and\_CC found\_VBD that\_IN Godalming\_NNP and\_CC Morris\_NNP had\_VBD not\_RB only\_RB arrived\_VBN ,\_, but\_CC had\_VBD already\_RB studied\_VBN the\_DT transcript\_NN of\_IN the\_DT various\_JJ diaries\_NNS and\_CC letters\_NNS which\_WDT Harker\_NNP and\_CC his\_PRP$ wonderful\_JJ wife\_NN had\_VBD made\_VBN and\_CC arranged\_VBN .\_.

Harker\_NNP had\_VBD not\_RB yet\_RB returned\_VBN from\_IN his\_PRP$ visit\_NN to\_TO the\_DT carriers\_NNS '\_POS men\_NNS ,\_, of\_IN whom\_WP Dr.\_NNP Hennessey\_NNP had\_VBD written\_VBN to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP gave\_VBD us\_PRP a\_DT cup\_NN of\_IN tea\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP can\_MD honestly\_RB say\_VB that\_IN ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ time\_NN since\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP lived\_VBN in\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, this\_DT old\_JJ house\_NN seemed\_VBD like\_IN home\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP had\_VBD finished\_VBN ,\_, Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP ,\_, may\_MD I\_PRP ask\_VB a\_DT favour\_NN ?\_.

I\_PRP want\_VBP to\_TO see\_VB your\_PRP$ patient\_NN ,\_, Mr.\_NNP Renfield\_NNP .\_.

Do\_VB let\_VB me\_PRP see\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

What\_WP you\_PRP have\_VBP said\_VBN of\_IN him\_PRP in\_IN your\_PRP$ diary\_NN interests\_NNS me\_PRP so\_RB much\_JJ !\_. ''\_''

She\_PRP looked\_VBD so\_RB appealing\_JJ and\_CC so\_RB pretty\_RB that\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB refuse\_VB her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT possible\_JJ reason\_NN why\_WRB I\_PRP should\_MD ;\_: so\_IN I\_PRP took\_VBD her\_PRP with\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP went\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP told\_VBD the\_DT man\_NN that\_IN a\_DT lady\_NN would\_MD like\_VB to\_TO see\_VB him\_PRP ;\_: to\_TO which\_WDT he\_PRP simply\_RB answered\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` Why\_WRB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` She\_PRP is\_VBZ going\_VBG through\_IN the\_DT house\_NN ,\_, and\_CC wants\_VBZ to\_TO see\_VB every\_DT one\_CD in\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP answered\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, very\_RB well\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ;\_: ``\_`` let\_VB her\_PRP come\_VB in\_IN ,\_, by\_IN all\_DT means\_NNS ;\_: but\_CC just\_RB wait\_VB a\_DT minute\_NN till\_IN I\_PRP tidy\_VBP up\_RP the\_DT place\_NN .\_. ''\_''

His\_PRP$ method\_NN of\_IN tidying\_VBG was\_VBD peculiar\_JJ :\_: he\_PRP simply\_RB swallowed\_VBD all\_PDT the\_DT flies\_NNS and\_CC spiders\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT boxes\_NNS before\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD stop\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD quite\_RB evident\_JJ that\_IN he\_PRP feared\_VBD ,\_, or\_CC was\_VBD jealous\_JJ of\_IN ,\_, some\_DT interference\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB he\_PRP had\_VBD got\_VBN through\_IN his\_PRP$ disgusting\_JJ task\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD cheerfully\_RB :\_: ``\_`` Let\_VB the\_DT lady\_NN come\_VBN in\_RP ,\_, ''\_'' and\_CC sat\_VBD down\_RP on\_IN the\_DT edge\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ bed\_NN with\_IN his\_PRP$ head\_NN down\_RP ,\_, but\_CC with\_IN his\_PRP$ eyelids\_NNS raised\_VBD so\_RB that\_IN he\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB her\_PRP as\_IN she\_PRP entered\_VBD .\_.

For\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN I\_PRP thought\_VBD that\_IN he\_PRP might\_MD have\_VB some\_DT homicidal\_JJ intent\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP remembered\_VBD how\_WRB quiet\_JJ he\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN just\_RB before\_IN he\_PRP attacked\_VBD me\_PRP in\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ study\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP took\_VBD care\_NN to\_TO stand\_VB where\_WRB I\_PRP could\_MD seize\_VB him\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB if\_IN he\_PRP attempted\_VBD to\_TO make\_VB a\_DT spring\_NN at\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

She\_PRP came\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN with\_IN an\_DT easy\_JJ gracefulness\_NN which\_WDT would\_MD at\_IN once\_RB command\_VB the\_DT respect\_NN of\_IN any\_DT lunatic\_JJ --\_: for\_IN easiness\_NN is\_VBZ one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT qualities\_NNS mad\_JJ people\_NNS most\_JJS respect\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP walked\_VBD over\_RP to\_TO him\_PRP ,\_, smiling\_VBG pleasantly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC held\_VBD out\_RP her\_PRP$ hand\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Good-evening\_JJ ,\_, Mr.\_NNP Renfield\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD she\_PRP .\_.

``\_`` You\_PRP see\_VBP ,\_, I\_PRP know\_VBP you\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP has\_VBZ told\_VBN me\_PRP of\_IN you\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP made\_VBD no\_DT immediate\_JJ reply\_NN ,\_, but\_CC eyed\_VBD her\_PRP all\_DT over\_IN intently\_RB with\_IN a\_DT set\_VBN frown\_NN on\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN .\_.

This\_DT look\_NN gave\_VBD way\_NN to\_TO one\_CD of\_IN wonder\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT merged\_VBD in\_IN doubt\_NN ;\_: then\_RB ,\_, to\_TO my\_PRP$ intense\_JJ astonishment\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP 're\_VBP not\_RB the\_DT girl\_NN the\_DT doctor\_NN wanted\_VBD to\_TO marry\_VB ,\_, are\_VBP you\_PRP ?\_.

You\_PRP ca\_MD n't\_RB be\_VB ,\_, you\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, for\_IN she\_PRP 's\_VBZ dead\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP smiled\_VBD sweetly\_RB as\_IN she\_PRP replied\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Oh\_UH no\_UH !\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP a\_DT husband\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ ,\_, to\_TO whom\_WP I\_PRP was\_VBD married\_VBN before\_IN I\_PRP ever\_RB saw\_VBD Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP ,\_, or\_CC he\_PRP me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Then\_RB what\_WP are\_VBP you\_PRP doing\_VBG here\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` My\_PRP$ husband\_NN and\_CC I\_PRP are\_VBP staying\_VBG on\_IN a\_DT visit\_NN with\_IN Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Then\_RB do\_VBP n't\_RB stay\_VB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` But\_CC why\_WRB not\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP thought\_VBD that\_IN this\_DT style\_NN of\_IN conversation\_NN might\_MD not\_RB be\_VB pleasant\_JJ to\_TO Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP ,\_, any\_DT more\_JJR than\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP joined\_VBD in\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` How\_WRB did\_VBD you\_PRP know\_VB I\_PRP wanted\_VBD to\_TO marry\_VB any\_DT one\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

His\_PRP$ reply\_NN was\_VBD simply\_RB contemptuous\_JJ ,\_, given\_VBN in\_IN a\_DT pause\_NN in\_IN which\_WDT he\_PRP turned\_VBD his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS from\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, instantly\_RB turning\_VBG them\_PRP back\_RB again\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` What\_WP an\_DT asinine\_JJ question\_NN !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB see\_VB that\_IN at\_IN all\_DT ,\_, Mr.\_NNP Renfield\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP ,\_, at\_IN once\_RB championing\_VBG me\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP replied\_VBD to\_TO her\_PRP with\_IN as\_RB much\_JJ courtesy\_NN and\_CC respect\_NN as\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD shown\_VBN contempt\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP will\_MD ,\_, of\_IN course\_NN ,\_, understand\_VB ,\_, Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP ,\_, that\_IN when\_WRB a\_DT man\_NN is\_VBZ so\_RB loved\_VBN and\_CC honoured\_VBN as\_IN our\_PRP$ host\_NN is\_VBZ ,\_, everything\_NN regarding\_VBG him\_PRP is\_VBZ of\_IN interest\_NN in\_IN our\_PRP$ little\_JJ community\_NN .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP is\_VBZ loved\_VBN not\_RB only\_RB by\_IN his\_PRP$ household\_NN and\_CC his\_PRP$ friends\_NNS ,\_, but\_CC even\_RB by\_IN his\_PRP$ patients\_NNS ,\_, who\_WP ,\_, being\_VBG some\_DT of\_IN them\_PRP hardly\_RB in\_IN mental\_JJ equilibrium\_NN ,\_, are\_VBP apt\_JJ to\_TO distort\_VB causes\_NNS and\_CC effects\_NNS .\_.

Since\_IN I\_PRP myself\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN an\_DT inmate\_NN of\_IN a\_DT lunatic\_JJ asylum\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB but\_CC notice\_VB that\_IN the\_DT sophistic\_JJ tendencies\_NNS of\_IN some\_DT of\_IN its\_PRP$ inmates\_NNS lean\_VBP towards\_IN the\_DT errors\_NNS of\_IN non\_JJ causa\_NN and\_CC ignoratio\_FW elenchi\_FW .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP positively\_RB opened\_VBD my\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS at\_IN this\_DT new\_JJ development\_NN .\_.

Here\_RB was\_VBD my\_PRP$ own\_JJ pet\_NN lunatic\_NN --\_: the\_DT most\_RBS pronounced\_JJ of\_IN his\_PRP$ type\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD ever\_RB met\_VBN with\_IN --\_: talking\_VBG elemental\_JJ philosophy\_NN ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN the\_DT manner\_NN of\_IN a\_DT polished\_JJ gentleman\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP wonder\_VBP if\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS presence\_NN which\_WDT had\_VBD touched\_VBN some\_DT chord\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ memory\_NN .\_.

If\_IN this\_DT new\_JJ phase\_NN was\_VBD spontaneous\_JJ ,\_, or\_CC in\_IN any\_DT way\_NN due\_JJ to\_TO her\_PRP$ unconscious\_JJ influence\_NN ,\_, she\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB some\_DT rare\_JJ gift\_NN or\_CC power\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP continued\_VBD to\_TO talk\_VB for\_IN some\_DT time\_NN ;\_: and\_CC ,\_, seeing\_VBG that\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD seemingly\_RB quite\_RB reasonable\_JJ ,\_, she\_PRP ventured\_VBD ,\_, looking\_VBG at\_IN me\_PRP questioningly\_RB as\_IN she\_PRP began\_VBD ,\_, to\_TO lead\_VB him\_PRP to\_TO his\_PRP$ favourite\_JJ topic\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD again\_RB astonished\_VBN ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP addressed\_VBD himself\_PRP to\_TO the\_DT question\_NN with\_IN the\_DT impartiality\_NN of\_IN the\_DT completest\_NN sanity\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP even\_RB took\_VBD himself\_PRP as\_IN an\_DT example\_NN when\_WRB he\_PRP mentioned\_VBD certain\_JJ things\_NNS .\_.

``\_`` Why\_WRB ,\_, I\_PRP myself\_PRP am\_VBP an\_DT instance\_NN of\_IN a\_DT man\_NN who\_WP had\_VBD a\_DT strange\_JJ belief\_NN .\_.

Indeed\_RB ,\_, it\_PRP was\_VBD no\_DT wonder\_NN that\_IN my\_PRP$ friends\_NNS were\_VBD alarmed\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC insisted\_VBD on\_IN my\_PRP$ being\_VBG put\_VBN under\_IN control\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP used\_VBD to\_TO fancy\_JJ that\_IN life\_NN was\_VBD a\_DT positive\_JJ and\_CC perpetual\_JJ entity\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN by\_IN consuming\_VBG a\_DT multitude\_NN of\_IN live\_JJ things\_NNS ,\_, no\_DT matter\_NN how\_WRB low\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT scale\_NN of\_IN creation\_NN ,\_, one\_PRP might\_MD indefinitely\_RB prolong\_VB life\_NN .\_.

At\_IN times\_NNS I\_PRP held\_VBD the\_DT belief\_NN so\_RB strongly\_RB that\_IN I\_PRP actually\_RB tried\_VBD to\_TO take\_VB human\_JJ life\_NN .\_.

The\_DT doctor\_NN here\_RB will\_MD bear\_VB me\_PRP out\_RP that\_IN on\_IN one\_CD occasion\_NN I\_PRP tried\_VBD to\_TO kill\_VB him\_PRP for\_IN the\_DT purpose\_NN of\_IN strengthening\_VBG my\_PRP$ vital\_JJ powers\_NNS by\_IN the\_DT assimilation\_NN with\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ body\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ life\_NN through\_IN the\_DT medium\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ blood\_NN --\_: relying\_VBG ,\_, of\_IN course\_NN ,\_, upon\_IN the\_DT Scriptural\_NNP phrase\_NN ,\_, `\_`` For\_IN the\_DT blood\_NN is\_VBZ the\_DT life\_NN .\_. '\_''

Though\_IN ,\_, indeed\_RB ,\_, the\_DT vendor\_NN of\_IN a\_DT certain\_JJ nostrum\_NN has\_VBZ vulgarised\_VBN the\_DT truism\_NN to\_TO the\_DT very\_JJ point\_NN of\_IN contempt\_NN .\_.

Is\_VBZ n't\_RB that\_IN true\_JJ ,\_, doctor\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP nodded\_VBD assent\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD so\_RB amazed\_VBN that\_IN I\_PRP hardly\_RB knew\_VBD what\_WP to\_TO either\_RB think\_VB or\_CC say\_VB ;\_: it\_PRP was\_VBD hard\_JJ to\_TO imagine\_VB that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD seen\_VBN him\_PRP eat\_VB up\_RP his\_PRP$ spiders\_NNS and\_CC flies\_VBZ not\_RB five\_CD minutes\_NNS before\_RB .\_.

Looking\_VBG at\_IN my\_PRP$ watch\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP saw\_VBD that\_IN I\_PRP should\_MD go\_VB to\_TO the\_DT station\_NN to\_TO meet\_VB Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP told\_VBD Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD time\_NN to\_TO leave\_VB .\_.

She\_PRP came\_VBD at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, after\_IN saying\_VBG pleasantly\_RB to\_TO Mr.\_NNP Renfield\_NNP :\_: ``\_`` Good-bye\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP hope\_VBP I\_PRP may\_MD see\_VB you\_PRP often\_RB ,\_, under\_IN auspices\_NNS pleasanter\_RBR to\_TO yourself\_PRP ,\_, ''\_'' to\_TO which\_WDT ,\_, to\_TO my\_PRP$ astonishment\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP replied\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Good-bye\_JJ ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP pray\_VBP God\_NNP I\_PRP may\_MD never\_RB see\_VB your\_PRP$ sweet\_JJ face\_NN again\_RB .\_.

May\_MD He\_PRP bless\_VB and\_CC keep\_VB you\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

When\_WRB I\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT station\_NN to\_TO meet\_VB Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP I\_PRP left\_VBD the\_DT boys\_NNS behind\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

Poor\_NNP Art\_NNP seemed\_VBD more\_RBR cheerful\_JJ than\_IN he\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN since\_IN Lucy\_NNP first\_RB took\_VBD ill\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC Quincey\_NNP is\_VBZ more\_RBR like\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ bright\_JJ self\_NN than\_IN he\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN for\_IN many\_JJ a\_DT long\_JJ day\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP stepped\_VBD from\_IN the\_DT carriage\_NN with\_IN the\_DT eager\_JJ nimbleness\_NN of\_IN a\_DT boy\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP saw\_VBD me\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, and\_CC rushed\_VBD up\_RP to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, saying\_VBG :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Ah\_NN ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, how\_WRB goes\_VBZ all\_DT ?\_.

Well\_UH ?\_.

So\_RB !\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN busy\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP come\_VBP here\_RB to\_TO stay\_VB if\_IN need\_NN be\_VB .\_.

All\_DT affairs\_NNS are\_VBP settled\_VBN with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP much\_JJ to\_TO tell\_VB .\_.

Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP is\_VBZ with\_IN you\_PRP ?\_.

Yes\_UH .\_.

And\_CC her\_PRP so\_RB fine\_JJ husband\_NN ?\_.

And\_CC Arthur\_NNP and\_CC my\_PRP$ friend\_NN Quincey\_NNP ,\_, they\_PRP are\_VBP with\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, too\_RB ?\_.

Good\_JJ !\_. ''\_''

As\_IN I\_PRP drove\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT house\_NN I\_PRP told\_VBD him\_PRP of\_IN what\_WP had\_VBD passed\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC of\_IN how\_WRB my\_PRP$ own\_JJ diary\_NN had\_VBD come\_VBN to\_TO be\_VB of\_IN some\_DT use\_NN through\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS suggestion\_NN ;\_: at\_IN which\_WDT the\_DT Professor\_NNP interrupted\_VBD me\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Ah\_UH ,\_, that\_IN wonderful\_JJ Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP !\_.

She\_PRP has\_VBZ man\_NN 's\_POS brain\_NN --\_: a\_DT brain\_NN that\_IN a\_DT man\_NN should\_MD have\_VB were\_VBD he\_PRP much\_RB gifted\_JJ --\_: and\_CC a\_DT woman\_NN 's\_POS heart\_NN .\_.

The\_DT good\_JJ God\_NNP fashioned\_VBD her\_PRP for\_IN a\_DT purpose\_NN ,\_, believe\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, when\_WRB He\_PRP made\_VBD that\_IN so\_RB good\_JJ combination\_NN .\_.

Friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, up\_RB to\_TO now\_RB fortune\_NN has\_VBZ made\_VBN that\_DT woman\_NN of\_IN help\_NN to\_TO us\_PRP ;\_: after\_IN to-night\_JJ she\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB have\_VB to\_TO do\_VB with\_IN this\_DT so\_RB terrible\_JJ affair\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB good\_JJ that\_IN she\_PRP run\_VBP a\_DT risk\_NN so\_RB great\_JJ .\_.

We\_PRP men\_NNS are\_VBP determined\_VBN --\_: nay\_NN ,\_, are\_VBP we\_PRP not\_RB pledged\_VBN ?\_.

--\_: to\_TO destroy\_VB this\_DT monster\_NN ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ no\_DT part\_NN for\_IN a\_DT woman\_NN .\_.

Even\_RB if\_IN she\_PRP be\_VB not\_RB harmed\_VBN ,\_, her\_PRP$ heart\_NN may\_MD fail\_VB her\_PRP in\_IN so\_RB much\_JJ and\_CC so\_RB many\_JJ horrors\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC hereafter\_RB she\_PRP may\_MD suffer\_VB --\_: both\_CC in\_FW waking\_FW ,\_, from\_IN her\_PRP$ nerves\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN sleep\_NN ,\_, from\_IN her\_PRP$ dreams\_NNS .\_.

And\_CC ,\_, besides\_IN ,\_, she\_PRP is\_VBZ young\_JJ woman\_NN and\_CC not\_RB so\_RB long\_RB married\_VBN ;\_: there\_EX may\_MD be\_VB other\_JJ things\_NNS to\_TO think\_VB of\_IN some\_DT time\_NN ,\_, if\_IN not\_RB now\_RB .\_.

You\_PRP tell\_VBP me\_PRP she\_PRP has\_VBZ wrote\_VBN all\_DT ,\_, then\_RB she\_PRP must\_MD consult\_VB with\_IN us\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC to-morrow\_RB she\_PRP say\_VBP good-bye\_JJ to\_TO this\_DT work\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP go\_VBP alone\_RB .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP agreed\_VBD heartily\_RB with\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB I\_PRP told\_VBD him\_PRP what\_WP we\_PRP had\_VBD found\_VBN in\_IN his\_PRP$ absence\_NN :\_: that\_IN the\_DT house\_NN which\_WDT Dracula\_NNP had\_VBD bought\_VBN was\_VBD the\_DT very\_RB next\_JJ one\_CD to\_TO my\_PRP$ own\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD amazed\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT great\_JJ concern\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO come\_VB on\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

``\_`` Oh\_UH that\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD known\_VBN it\_PRP before\_IN !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` for\_IN then\_RB we\_PRP might\_MD have\_VB reached\_VBN him\_PRP in\_IN time\_NN to\_TO save\_VB poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP .\_.

However\_RB ,\_, `\_`` the\_DT milk\_NN that\_WDT is\_VBZ spilt\_JJ cries\_VBZ not\_RB out\_IN afterwards\_RB ,\_, '\_'' as\_IN you\_PRP say\_VBP .\_.

We\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB think\_VB of\_IN that\_DT ,\_, but\_CC go\_VB on\_IN our\_PRP$ way\_NN to\_TO the\_DT end\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Then\_RB he\_PRP fell\_VBD into\_IN a\_DT silence\_NN that\_WDT lasted\_VBD till\_IN we\_PRP entered\_VBD my\_PRP$ own\_JJ gateway\_NN .\_.

Before\_IN we\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO prepare\_VB for\_IN dinner\_NN he\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP am\_VBP told\_VBN ,\_, Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, by\_IN my\_PRP$ friend\_NN John\_NNP that\_IN you\_PRP and\_CC your\_PRP$ husband\_NN have\_VBP put\_VBN up\_RP in\_IN exact\_JJ order\_NN all\_DT things\_NNS that\_WDT have\_VBP been\_VBN ,\_, up\_IN to\_TO this\_DT moment\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Not\_RB up\_IN to\_TO this\_DT moment\_NN ,\_, Professor\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' she\_PRP said\_VBD impulsively\_RB ,\_, ``\_`` but\_CC up\_RB to\_TO this\_DT morning\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` But\_CC why\_WRB not\_RB up\_IN to\_TO now\_RB ?\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP seen\_VBN hitherto\_RB how\_WRB good\_JJ light\_NN all\_PDT the\_DT little\_JJ things\_NNS have\_VBP made\_VBN .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP told\_VBN our\_PRP$ secrets\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC yet\_RB no\_DT one\_NN who\_WP has\_VBZ told\_VBN is\_VBZ the\_DT worse\_JJR for\_IN it\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP began\_VBD to\_TO blush\_VB ,\_, and\_CC taking\_VBG a\_DT paper\_NN from\_IN her\_PRP$ pockets\_NNS ,\_, she\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, will\_MD you\_PRP read\_VB this\_DT ,\_, and\_CC tell\_VB me\_PRP if\_IN it\_PRP must\_MD go\_VB in\_IN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ my\_PRP$ record\_NN of\_IN to-day\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP too\_RB have\_VBP seen\_VBN the\_DT need\_NN of\_IN putting\_VBG down\_RP at\_IN present\_JJ everything\_NN ,\_, however\_RB trivial\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC there\_EX is\_VBZ little\_JJ in\_IN this\_DT except\_IN what\_WP is\_VBZ personal\_JJ .\_.

Must\_MD it\_PRP go\_VB in\_IN ?\_. ''\_''

The\_DT Professor\_NNP read\_VBD it\_PRP over\_IN gravely\_RB ,\_, and\_CC handed\_VBD it\_PRP back\_RB ,\_, saying\_VBG :\_: --\_: ``\_`` It\_PRP need\_MD not\_RB go\_VB in\_IN if\_IN you\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB wish\_VB it\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP pray\_VBP that\_IN it\_PRP may\_MD .\_.

It\_PRP can\_MD but\_CC make\_VB your\_PRP$ husband\_NN love\_VB you\_PRP the\_DT more\_JJR ,\_, and\_CC all\_DT us\_PRP ,\_, your\_PRP$ friends\_NNS ,\_, more\_JJR honour\_NN you\_PRP --\_: as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN more\_JJR esteem\_NN and\_CC love\_NN .\_. ''\_''

She\_PRP took\_VBD it\_PRP back\_RP with\_IN another\_DT blush\_VBP and\_CC a\_DT bright\_JJ smile\_NN .\_.

And\_CC so\_RB now\_RB ,\_, up\_RB to\_TO this\_DT very\_JJ hour\_NN ,\_, all\_PDT the\_DT records\_NNS we\_PRP have\_VBP are\_VBP complete\_JJ and\_CC in\_IN order\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP took\_VBD away\_RB one\_CD copy\_NN to\_TO study\_VB after\_IN dinner\_NN ,\_, and\_CC before\_IN our\_PRP$ meeting\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT is\_VBZ fixed\_VBN for\_IN nine\_CD o'clock\_RB .\_.

The\_DT rest\_NN of\_IN us\_PRP have\_VBP already\_RB read\_VBN everything\_NN ;\_: so\_RB when\_WRB we\_PRP meet\_VBP in\_IN the\_DT study\_NN we\_PRP shall\_MD all\_DT be\_VB informed\_VBN as\_IN to\_TO facts\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC can\_MD arrange\_VB our\_PRP$ plan\_NN of\_IN battle\_NN with\_IN this\_DT terrible\_JJ and\_CC mysterious\_JJ enemy\_NN .\_.

Mina\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP .\_.

30\_CD September\_NNP .\_.

--\_: When\_WRB we\_PRP met\_VBD in\_IN Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS study\_NN two\_CD hours\_NNS after\_IN dinner\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT had\_VBD been\_VBN at\_IN six\_CD o'clock\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP unconsciously\_RB formed\_VBD a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN board\_NN or\_CC committee\_NN .\_.

Professor\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP took\_VBD the\_DT head\_NN of\_IN the\_DT table\_NN ,\_, to\_TO which\_WDT Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP motioned\_VBD him\_PRP as\_IN he\_PRP came\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP made\_VBD me\_PRP sit\_VB next\_JJ to\_TO him\_PRP on\_IN his\_PRP$ right\_NN ,\_, and\_CC asked\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO act\_VB as\_IN secretary\_NN ;\_: Jonathan\_NNP sat\_VBD next\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

Opposite\_VB us\_PRP were\_VBD Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP ,\_, Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP --\_: Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP being\_VBG next\_JJ the\_DT Professor\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP in\_IN the\_DT centre\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP may\_MD ,\_, I\_PRP suppose\_VBP ,\_, take\_VBP it\_PRP that\_IN we\_PRP are\_VBP all\_DT acquainted\_VBN with\_IN the\_DT facts\_NNS that\_WDT are\_VBP in\_IN these\_DT papers\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

We\_PRP all\_DT expressed\_VBN assent\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Then\_RB it\_PRP were\_VBD ,\_, I\_PRP think\_VBP good\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP tell\_VBP you\_PRP something\_NN of\_IN the\_DT kind\_NN of\_IN enemy\_NN with\_IN which\_WDT we\_PRP have\_VBP to\_TO deal\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD then\_RB make\_VB known\_VBN to\_TO you\_PRP something\_NN of\_IN the\_DT history\_NN of\_IN this\_DT man\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT has\_VBZ been\_VBN ascertained\_VBN for\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

So\_RB we\_PRP then\_RB can\_MD discuss\_VB how\_WRB we\_PRP shall\_MD act\_VB ,\_, and\_CC can\_MD take\_VB our\_PRP$ measure\_NN according\_VBG .\_.

``\_`` There\_EX are\_VBP such\_JJ beings\_NNS as\_IN vampires\_NNS ;\_: some\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP have\_VBP evidence\_NN that\_IN they\_PRP exist\_VBP .\_.

Even\_RB had\_VBD we\_PRP not\_RB the\_DT proof\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ own\_JJ unhappy\_JJ experience\_NN ,\_, the\_DT teachings\_NNS and\_CC the\_DT records\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT past\_NN give\_VBP proof\_NN enough\_RB for\_IN sane\_JJ peoples\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP admit\_VBP that\_IN at\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ I\_PRP was\_VBD sceptic\_JJ .\_.

Were\_VBD it\_PRP not\_RB that\_IN through\_IN long\_JJ years\_NNS I\_PRP have\_VBP train\_VB myself\_PRP to\_TO keep\_VB an\_DT open\_JJ mind\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB have\_VB believe\_VB until\_IN such\_JJ time\_NN as\_IN that\_DT fact\_NN thunder\_NN on\_IN my\_PRP$ ear\_NN .\_.

`\_`` See\_VB !\_.

see\_VB !\_.

I\_PRP prove\_VBP ;\_: I\_PRP prove\_VBP .\_. '\_''

Alas\_NNS !\_.

Had\_VBD I\_PRP known\_VBN at\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ what\_WP now\_RB I\_PRP know\_VBP --\_: nay\_NN ,\_, had\_VBD I\_PRP even\_RB guess\_VBP at\_IN him\_PRP --\_: one\_CD so\_RB precious\_JJ life\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN spared\_VBN to\_TO many\_JJ of\_IN us\_PRP who\_WP did\_VBD love\_VB her\_PRP .\_.

But\_CC that\_DT is\_VBZ gone\_VBN ;\_: and\_CC we\_PRP must\_MD so\_RB work\_VB ,\_, that\_IN other\_JJ poor\_JJ souls\_NNS perish\_VBP not\_RB ,\_, whilst\_IN we\_PRP can\_MD save\_VB .\_.

The\_DT nosferatu\_NN do\_VBP not\_RB die\_VB like\_IN the\_DT bee\_NN when\_WRB he\_PRP sting\_VBD once\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ only\_RB stronger\_JJR ;\_: and\_CC being\_VBG stronger\_JJR ,\_, have\_VBP yet\_RB more\_JJR power\_NN to\_TO work\_VB evil\_NN .\_.

This\_DT vampire\_NN which\_WDT is\_VBZ amongst\_IN us\_PRP is\_VBZ of\_IN himself\_PRP so\_RB strong\_JJ in\_IN person\_NN as\_IN twenty\_CD men\_NNS ;\_: he\_PRP is\_VBZ of\_IN cunning\_JJ more\_RBR than\_IN mortal\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN his\_PRP$ cunning\_JJ be\_VB the\_DT growth\_NN of\_IN ages\_NNS ;\_: he\_PRP have\_VBP still\_RB the\_DT aids\_NNS of\_IN necromancy\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT is\_VBZ ,\_, as\_IN his\_PRP$ etymology\_NN imply\_VBP ,\_, the\_DT divination\_NN by\_IN the\_DT dead\_NN ,\_, and\_CC all\_PDT the\_DT dead\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP can\_MD come\_VB nigh\_NN to\_TO are\_VB for\_IN him\_PRP at\_IN command\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP is\_VBZ brute\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC more\_JJR than\_IN brute\_JJ ;\_: he\_PRP is\_VBZ devil\_NNP in\_IN callous\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT heart\_NN of\_IN him\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB ;\_: he\_PRP can\_MD ,\_, within\_IN limitations\_NNS ,\_, appear\_VBP at\_IN will\_NN when\_WRB ,\_, and\_CC where\_WRB ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN any\_DT of\_IN the\_DT forms\_NNS that\_WDT are\_VBP to\_TO him\_PRP ;\_: he\_PRP can\_MD ,\_, within\_IN his\_PRP$ range\_NN ,\_, direct\_VBP the\_DT elements\_NNS ;\_: the\_DT storm\_NN ,\_, the\_DT fog\_NN ,\_, the\_DT thunder\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP can\_MD command\_VB all\_PDT the\_DT meaner\_JJR things\_NNS :\_: the\_DT rat\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT owl\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT bat\_NN --\_: the\_DT moth\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT fox\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT wolf\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP can\_MD grow\_VB and\_CC become\_VB small\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC he\_PRP can\_MD at\_IN times\_NNS vanish\_VBP and\_CC come\_VBP unknown\_JJ .\_.

How\_WRB then\_RB are\_VBP we\_PRP to\_TO begin\_VB our\_PRP$ strike\_NN to\_TO destroy\_VB him\_PRP ?\_.

How\_WRB shall\_MD we\_PRP find\_VB his\_PRP$ where\_WRB ;\_: and\_CC having\_VBG found\_VBN it\_PRP ,\_, how\_WRB can\_MD we\_PRP destroy\_VB ?\_.

My\_PRP$ friends\_NNS ,\_, this\_DT is\_VBZ much\_JJ ;\_: it\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT terrible\_JJ task\_NN that\_IN we\_PRP undertake\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX may\_MD be\_VB consequence\_NN to\_TO make\_VB the\_DT brave\_VBP shudder\_NN .\_.

For\_IN if\_IN we\_PRP fail\_VBP in\_IN this\_DT our\_PRP$ fight\_NN he\_PRP must\_MD surely\_RB win\_VB ;\_: and\_CC then\_RB where\_WRB end\_VB we\_PRP ?\_.

Life\_NNP is\_VBZ nothings\_NNS ;\_: I\_PRP heed\_VBP him\_PRP not\_RB .\_.

But\_CC to\_TO fail\_VB here\_RB ,\_, is\_VBZ not\_RB mere\_JJ life\_NN or\_CC death\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ that\_IN we\_PRP become\_VBP as\_IN him\_PRP ;\_: that\_IN we\_PRP henceforward\_RB become\_VBP foul\_JJ things\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT night\_NN like\_IN him\_PRP --\_: without\_IN heart\_NN or\_CC conscience\_NN ,\_, preying\_VBG on\_IN the\_DT bodies\_NNS and\_CC the\_DT souls\_NNS of\_IN those\_DT we\_PRP love\_VBP best\_RB .\_.

To\_TO us\_PRP for\_IN ever\_RB are\_VBP the\_DT gates\_NNS of\_IN heaven\_NN shut\_VBN ;\_: for\_IN who\_WP shall\_MD open\_VB them\_PRP to\_TO us\_PRP again\_RB ?\_.

We\_PRP go\_VBP on\_RP for\_IN all\_DT time\_NN abhorred\_VBN by\_IN all\_DT ;\_: a\_DT blot\_NN on\_IN the\_DT face\_NN of\_IN God\_NNP 's\_POS sunshine\_NN ;\_: an\_DT arrow\_NN in\_IN the\_DT side\_NN of\_IN Him\_PRP who\_WP died\_VBD for\_IN man\_NN .\_.

But\_CC we\_PRP are\_VBP face\_JJ to\_TO face\_VB with\_IN duty\_NN ;\_: and\_CC in\_IN such\_JJ case\_NN must\_MD we\_PRP shrink\_VB ?\_.

For\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP say\_VBP ,\_, no\_DT ;\_: but\_CC then\_RB I\_PRP am\_VBP old\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC life\_NN ,\_, with\_IN his\_PRP$ sunshine\_NN ,\_, his\_PRP$ fair\_JJ places\_NNS ,\_, his\_PRP$ song\_NN of\_IN birds\_NNS ,\_, his\_PRP$ music\_NN and\_CC his\_PRP$ love\_NN ,\_, lie\_VBP far\_RB behind\_RB .\_.

You\_PRP others\_NNS are\_VBP young\_JJ .\_.

Some\_DT have\_VBP seen\_VBN sorrow\_NN ;\_: but\_CC there\_EX are\_VBP fair\_JJ days\_NNS yet\_RB in\_IN store\_NN .\_.

What\_WP say\_VB you\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

Whilst\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD speaking\_VBG ,\_, Jonathan\_NNP had\_VBD taken\_VBN my\_PRP$ hand\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP feared\_VBD ,\_, oh\_UH so\_RB much\_JJ ,\_, that\_IN the\_DT appalling\_JJ nature\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ danger\_NN was\_VBD overcoming\_VBG him\_PRP when\_WRB I\_PRP saw\_VBD his\_PRP$ hand\_NN stretch\_NN out\_IN ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP was\_VBD life\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP to\_TO feel\_VB its\_PRP$ touch\_NN --\_: so\_RB strong\_JJ ,\_, so\_RB self-reliant\_JJ ,\_, so\_RB resolute\_JJ .\_.

A\_DT brave\_VBP man\_NN 's\_POS hand\_NN can\_MD speak\_VB for\_IN itself\_PRP ;\_: it\_PRP does\_VBZ not\_RB even\_RB need\_VB a\_DT woman\_NN 's\_POS love\_NN to\_TO hear\_VB its\_PRP$ music\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB the\_DT Professor\_NNP had\_VBD done\_VBN speaking\_VBG my\_PRP$ husband\_NN looked\_VBD in\_IN my\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP in\_IN his\_PRP$ ;\_: there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT need\_NN for\_IN speaking\_VBG between\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP answer\_VBP for\_IN Mina\_NNP and\_CC myself\_PRP ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Count\_VB me\_PRP in\_IN ,\_, Professor\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD Mr.\_NNP Quincey\_NNP Morris\_NNP ,\_, laconically\_RB as\_IN usual\_JJ .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP am\_VBP with\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP ,\_, ``\_`` for\_IN Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS sake\_NN ,\_, if\_IN for\_IN no\_DT other\_JJ reason\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP simply\_RB nodded\_VBD .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP stood\_VBD up\_RB and\_CC ,\_, after\_IN laying\_VBG his\_PRP$ golden\_JJ crucifix\_NN on\_IN the\_DT table\_NN ,\_, held\_VBD out\_RP his\_PRP$ hand\_NN on\_IN either\_DT side\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP took\_VBD his\_PRP$ right\_JJ hand\_NN ,\_, and\_CC Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP his\_PRP$ left\_NN ;\_: Jonathan\_NNP held\_VBD my\_PRP$ right\_NN with\_IN his\_PRP$ left\_NN and\_CC stretched\_VBD across\_RB to\_TO Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP .\_.

So\_RB as\_IN we\_PRP all\_DT took\_VBD hands\_NNS our\_PRP$ solemn\_JJ compact\_NN was\_VBD made\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP felt\_VBD my\_PRP$ heart\_NN icy\_NN cold\_NN ,\_, but\_CC it\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB even\_RB occur\_VB to\_TO me\_PRP to\_TO draw\_VB back\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP resumed\_VBD our\_PRP$ places\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP went\_VBD on\_RP with\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN cheerfulness\_NN which\_WDT showed\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT serious\_JJ work\_NN had\_VBD begun\_VBN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB taken\_VBN as\_RB gravely\_RB ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN as\_RB businesslike\_JJ a\_DT way\_NN ,\_, as\_IN any\_DT other\_JJ transaction\_NN of\_IN life\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Well\_UH ,\_, you\_PRP know\_VBP what\_WP we\_PRP have\_VBP to\_TO contend\_VB against\_IN ;\_: but\_CC we\_PRP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, are\_VBP not\_RB without\_IN strength\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP on\_IN our\_PRP$ side\_JJ power\_NN of\_IN combination\_NN --\_: a\_DT power\_NN denied\_VBN to\_TO the\_DT vampire\_NN kind\_NN ;\_: we\_PRP have\_VBP sources\_NNS of\_IN science\_NN ;\_: we\_PRP are\_VBP free\_JJ to\_TO act\_VB and\_CC think\_VB ;\_: and\_CC the\_DT hours\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT day\_NN and\_CC the\_DT night\_NN are\_VBP ours\_PRP equally\_RB .\_.

In\_IN fact\_NN ,\_, so\_RB far\_RB as\_IN our\_PRP$ powers\_NNS extend\_VBP ,\_, they\_PRP are\_VBP unfettered\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP are\_VBP free\_JJ to\_TO use\_VB them\_PRP .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP self-devotion\_NN in\_IN a\_DT cause\_NN ,\_, and\_CC an\_DT end\_NN to\_TO achieve\_VB which\_WDT is\_VBZ not\_RB a\_DT selfish\_JJ one\_CD .\_.

These\_DT things\_NNS are\_VBP much\_JJ .\_.

``\_`` Now\_RB let\_VB us\_PRP see\_VB how\_WRB far\_RB the\_DT general\_JJ powers\_NNS arrayed\_VBN against\_IN us\_PRP are\_VBP restrict\_VB ,\_, and\_CC how\_WRB the\_DT individual\_NN can\_MD not\_RB .\_.

In\_IN fine\_NN ,\_, let\_VB us\_PRP consider\_VB the\_DT limitations\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT vampire\_NN in\_IN general\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC of\_IN this\_DT one\_CD in\_IN particular\_JJ .\_.

``\_`` All\_DT we\_PRP have\_VBP to\_TO go\_VB upon\_IN are\_VBP traditions\_NNS and\_CC superstitions\_NNS .\_.

These\_DT do\_VBP not\_RB at\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ appear\_VB much\_JJ ,\_, when\_WRB the\_DT matter\_NN is\_VBZ one\_CD of\_IN life\_NN and\_CC death\_NN --\_: nay\_NN of\_IN more\_JJR than\_IN either\_DT life\_NN or\_CC death\_NN .\_.

Yet\_RB must\_MD we\_PRP be\_VB satisfied\_VBN ;\_: in\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ place\_NN because\_IN we\_PRP have\_VBP to\_TO be\_VB --\_: no\_DT other\_JJ means\_NNS is\_VBZ at\_IN our\_PRP$ control\_NN --\_: and\_CC secondly\_RB ,\_, because\_IN ,\_, after\_IN all\_DT ,\_, these\_DT things\_NNS --\_: tradition\_NN and\_CC superstition\_NN --\_: are\_VBP everything\_NN .\_.

Does\_VBZ not\_RB the\_DT belief\_NN in\_FW vampires\_FW rest\_NN for\_IN others\_NNS --\_: though\_IN not\_RB ,\_, alas\_UH !\_.

for\_IN us\_PRP --\_: on\_IN them\_PRP ?\_.

A\_DT year\_NN ago\_IN which\_WDT of\_IN us\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB received\_VBN such\_PDT a\_DT possibility\_NN ,\_, in\_IN the\_DT midst\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ scientific\_JJ ,\_, sceptical\_JJ ,\_, matter-of-fact\_JJ nineteenth\_JJ century\_NN ?\_.

We\_PRP even\_RB scouted\_VBD a\_DT belief\_NN that\_IN we\_PRP saw\_VBD justified\_JJ under\_IN our\_PRP$ very\_JJ eyes\_NNS .\_.

Take\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, then\_RB ,\_, that\_IN the\_DT vampire\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT belief\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ limitations\_NNS and\_CC his\_PRP$ cure\_NN ,\_, rest\_NN for\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN on\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ base\_NN .\_.

For\_IN ,\_, let\_VB me\_PRP tell\_VB you\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP is\_VBZ known\_VBN everywhere\_RB that\_IN men\_NNS have\_VBP been\_VBN .\_.

In\_IN old\_JJ Greece\_NNP ,\_, in\_IN old\_JJ Rome\_NNP ;\_: he\_PRP flourish\_VB in\_IN Germany\_NNP all\_DT over\_IN ,\_, in\_IN France\_NNP ,\_, in\_IN India\_NNP ,\_, even\_RB in\_IN the\_DT Chernosese\_NN ;\_: and\_CC in\_IN China\_NNP ,\_, so\_RB far\_RB from\_IN us\_PRP in\_IN all\_DT ways\_NNS ,\_, there\_EX even\_RB is\_VBZ he\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT peoples\_NNS fear\_VBP him\_PRP at\_IN this\_DT day\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP have\_VBP follow\_VB the\_DT wake\_NN of\_IN the\_DT berserker\_NN Icelander\_NNP ,\_, the\_DT devil-begotten\_JJ Hun\_NNP ,\_, the\_DT Slav\_NNP ,\_, the\_DT Saxon\_NNP ,\_, the\_DT Magyar\_NNP .\_.

So\_RB far\_RB ,\_, then\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP have\_VBP all\_DT we\_PRP may\_MD act\_VB upon\_IN ;\_: and\_CC let\_VB me\_PRP tell\_VB you\_PRP that\_IN very\_RB much\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT beliefs\_NNS are\_VBP justified\_VBN by\_IN what\_WP we\_PRP have\_VBP seen\_VBN in\_IN our\_PRP$ own\_JJ so\_RB unhappy\_JJ experience\_NN .\_.

The\_DT vampire\_NN live\_VBP on\_IN ,\_, and\_CC can\_MD not\_RB die\_VB by\_IN mere\_JJ passing\_NN of\_IN the\_DT time\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP can\_MD flourish\_VB when\_WRB that\_IN he\_PRP can\_MD fatten\_VB on\_IN the\_DT blood\_NN of\_IN the\_DT living\_NN .\_.

Even\_RB more\_JJR ,\_, we\_PRP have\_VBP seen\_VBN amongst\_IN us\_PRP that\_IN he\_PRP can\_MD even\_RB grow\_VB younger\_JJR ;\_: that\_IN his\_PRP$ vital\_JJ faculties\_NNS grow\_VBP strenuous\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC seem\_VBP as\_IN though\_IN they\_PRP refresh\_VBP themselves\_PRP when\_WRB his\_PRP$ special\_JJ pabulum\_NN is\_VBZ plenty\_JJ .\_.

But\_CC he\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB flourish\_VB without\_IN this\_DT diet\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP eat\_VB not\_RB as\_IN others\_NNS .\_.

Even\_RB friend\_NN Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP lived\_VBD with\_IN him\_PRP for\_IN weeks\_NNS ,\_, did\_VBD never\_RB see\_VB him\_PRP to\_TO eat\_VB ,\_, never\_RB !\_.

He\_PRP throws\_VBZ no\_DT shadow\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP make\_VB in\_IN the\_DT mirror\_NN no\_DT reflect\_VBP ,\_, as\_IN again\_RB Jonathan\_NNP observe\_VB .\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ the\_DT strength\_NN of\_IN many\_JJ of\_IN his\_PRP$ hand\_NN --\_: witness\_NN again\_RB Jonathan\_NNP when\_WRB he\_PRP shut\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN against\_IN the\_DT wolfs\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB he\_PRP help\_VBP him\_PRP from\_IN the\_DT diligence\_NN too\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP can\_MD transform\_VB himself\_PRP to\_TO wolf\_VB ,\_, as\_IN we\_PRP gather\_VBP from\_IN the\_DT ship\_NN arrival\_NN in\_IN Whitby\_NNP ,\_, when\_WRB he\_PRP tear\_VBP open\_VB the\_DT dog\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP can\_MD be\_VB as\_IN bat\_NN ,\_, as\_IN Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP saw\_VBD him\_PRP on\_IN the\_DT window\_NN at\_IN Whitby\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN friend\_NN John\_NNP saw\_VBD him\_PRP fly\_VB from\_IN this\_DT so\_RB near\_JJ house\_NN ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN my\_PRP$ friend\_NN Quincey\_NNP saw\_VBD him\_PRP at\_IN the\_DT window\_NN of\_IN Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP can\_MD come\_VB in\_IN mist\_NN which\_WDT he\_PRP create\_VB --\_: that\_IN noble\_JJ ship\_NN 's\_POS captain\_NN proved\_VBD him\_PRP of\_IN this\_DT ;\_: but\_CC ,\_, from\_IN what\_WP we\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, the\_DT distance\_NN he\_PRP can\_MD make\_VB this\_DT mist\_NN is\_VBZ limited\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP can\_MD only\_RB be\_VB round\_JJ himself\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP come\_VBP on\_IN moonlight\_NN rays\_NNS as\_IN elemental\_JJ dust\_NN --\_: as\_RB again\_RB Jonathan\_NNP saw\_VBD those\_DT sisters\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT castle\_NN of\_IN Dracula\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP become\_VBP so\_RB small\_JJ --\_: we\_PRP ourselves\_PRP saw\_VBD Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP ,\_, ere\_NN she\_PRP was\_VBD at\_IN peace\_NN ,\_, slip\_NN through\_IN a\_DT hairbreadth\_NN space\_NN at\_IN the\_DT tomb\_NN door\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP can\_MD ,\_, when\_WRB once\_RB he\_PRP find\_VB his\_PRP$ way\_NN ,\_, come\_VBN out\_RP from\_IN anything\_NN or\_CC into\_IN anything\_NN ,\_, no\_DT matter\_NN how\_WRB close\_JJ it\_PRP be\_VB bound\_VBN or\_CC even\_RB fused\_VBN up\_RP with\_IN fire\_NN --\_: solder\_NN you\_PRP call\_VBP it\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP can\_MD see\_VB in\_IN the\_DT dark\_NN --\_: no\_DT small\_JJ power\_NN this\_DT ,\_, in\_IN a\_DT world\_NN which\_WDT is\_VBZ one\_CD half\_NN shut\_VBN from\_IN the\_DT light\_NN .\_.

Ah\_NN ,\_, but\_CC hear\_VB me\_PRP through\_IN .\_.

He\_PRP can\_MD do\_VB all\_PDT these\_DT things\_NNS ,\_, yet\_CC he\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB free\_JJ .\_.

Nay\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP is\_VBZ even\_RB more\_JJR prisoner\_NN than\_IN the\_DT slave\_NN of\_IN the\_DT galley\_NN ,\_, than\_IN the\_DT madman\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ cell\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB go\_VB where\_WRB he\_PRP lists\_VBZ ;\_: he\_PRP who\_WP is\_VBZ not\_RB of\_IN nature\_NN has\_VBZ yet\_RB to\_TO obey\_VB some\_DT of\_IN nature\_NN 's\_POS laws\_NNS --\_: why\_WRB we\_PRP know\_VBP not\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB enter\_VB anywhere\_RB at\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ ,\_, unless\_IN there\_EX be\_VB some\_DT one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT household\_NN who\_WP bid\_VBD him\_PRP to\_TO come\_VB ;\_: though\_IN afterwards\_RB he\_PRP can\_MD come\_VB as\_IN he\_PRP please\_VBP .\_.

His\_PRP$ power\_NN ceases\_VBZ ,\_, as\_IN does\_VBZ that\_DT of\_IN all\_DT evil\_JJ things\_NNS ,\_, at\_IN the\_DT coming\_VBG of\_IN the\_DT day\_NN .\_.

Only\_RB at\_IN certain\_JJ times\_NNS can\_MD he\_PRP have\_VB limited\_VBN freedom\_NN .\_.

If\_IN he\_PRP be\_VB not\_RB at\_IN the\_DT place\_NN whither\_NN he\_PRP is\_VBZ bound\_VBN ,\_, he\_PRP can\_MD only\_RB change\_VB himself\_PRP at\_IN noon\_NN or\_CC at\_IN exact\_JJ sunrise\_NN or\_CC sunset\_NN .\_.

These\_DT things\_NNS are\_VBP we\_PRP told\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN this\_DT record\_NN of\_IN ours\_PRP we\_PRP have\_VBP proof\_NN by\_IN inference\_NN .\_.

Thus\_RB ,\_, whereas\_IN he\_PRP can\_MD do\_VB as\_IN he\_PRP will\_MD within\_IN his\_PRP$ limit\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB he\_PRP have\_VBP his\_PRP$ earth-home\_JJ ,\_, his\_PRP$ coffin-home\_NN ,\_, his\_PRP$ hell-home\_NN ,\_, the\_DT place\_NN unhallowed\_JJ ,\_, as\_IN we\_PRP saw\_VBD when\_WRB he\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT grave\_NN of\_IN the\_DT suicide\_NN at\_IN Whitby\_NNP ;\_: still\_RB at\_IN other\_JJ time\_NN he\_PRP can\_MD only\_RB change\_VB when\_WRB the\_DT time\_NN come\_VBN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ said\_VBD ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, that\_IN he\_PRP can\_MD only\_RB pass\_VB running\_VBG water\_NN at\_IN the\_DT slack\_NN or\_CC the\_DT flood\_NN of\_IN the\_DT tide\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB there\_EX are\_VBP things\_NNS which\_WDT so\_RB afflict\_VBP him\_PRP that\_IN he\_PRP has\_VBZ no\_DT power\_NN ,\_, as\_IN the\_DT garlic\_NN that\_IN we\_PRP know\_VBP of\_IN ;\_: and\_CC as\_IN for\_IN things\_NNS sacred\_JJ ,\_, as\_IN this\_DT symbol\_NN ,\_, my\_PRP$ crucifix\_NN ,\_, that\_WDT was\_VBD amongst\_IN us\_PRP even\_RB now\_RB when\_WRB we\_PRP resolve\_VBP ,\_, to\_TO them\_PRP he\_PRP is\_VBZ nothing\_NN ,\_, but\_CC in\_IN their\_PRP$ presence\_NN he\_PRP take\_VB his\_PRP$ place\_NN far\_RB off\_RP and\_CC silent\_JJ with\_IN respect\_NN .\_.

There\_EX are\_VBP others\_NNS ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, which\_WDT I\_PRP shall\_MD tell\_VB you\_PRP of\_IN ,\_, lest\_IN in\_IN our\_PRP$ seeking\_VBG we\_PRP may\_MD need\_VB them\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT branch\_NN of\_IN wild\_JJ rose\_NN on\_IN his\_PRP$ coffin\_NN keep\_VB him\_PRP that\_IN he\_PRP move\_VB not\_RB from\_IN it\_PRP ;\_: a\_DT sacred\_JJ bullet\_NN fired\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT coffin\_NN kill\_VBP him\_PRP so\_IN that\_IN he\_PRP be\_VB true\_JJ dead\_NN ;\_: and\_CC as\_IN for\_IN the\_DT stake\_NN through\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, we\_PRP know\_VBP already\_RB of\_IN its\_PRP$ peace\_NN ;\_: or\_CC the\_DT cut-off\_JJ head\_NN that\_WDT giveth\_VBZ rest\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP seen\_VBN it\_PRP with\_IN our\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS .\_.

``\_`` Thus\_RB when\_WRB we\_PRP find\_VBP the\_DT habitation\_NN of\_IN this\_DT man-that-was\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP can\_MD confine\_VB him\_PRP to\_TO his\_PRP$ coffin\_NN and\_CC destroy\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, if\_IN we\_PRP obey\_VBP what\_WP we\_PRP know\_VBP .\_.

But\_CC he\_PRP is\_VBZ clever\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP asked\_VBN my\_PRP$ friend\_NN Arminius\_NNP ,\_, of\_IN Buda-Pesth\_NNP University\_NNP ,\_, to\_TO make\_VB his\_PRP$ record\_NN ;\_: and\_CC ,\_, from\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT means\_NNS that\_WDT are\_VBP ,\_, he\_PRP tell\_VBP me\_PRP of\_IN what\_WP he\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN .\_.

He\_PRP must\_MD ,\_, indeed\_RB ,\_, have\_VBP been\_VBN that\_IN Voivode\_NNP Dracula\_NNP who\_WP won\_VBD his\_PRP$ name\_NN against\_IN the\_DT Turk\_NNP ,\_, over\_IN the\_DT great\_JJ river\_NN on\_IN the\_DT very\_JJ frontier\_NN of\_IN Turkey-land\_NN .\_.

If\_IN it\_PRP be\_VB so\_RB ,\_, then\_RB was\_VBD he\_PRP no\_DT common\_JJ man\_NN ;\_: for\_IN in\_IN that\_DT time\_NN ,\_, and\_CC for\_IN centuries\_NNS after\_IN ,\_, he\_PRP was\_VBD spoken\_VBN of\_IN as\_IN the\_DT cleverest\_JJS and\_CC the\_DT most\_RBS cunning\_JJ ,\_, as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN the\_DT bravest\_JJS of\_IN the\_DT sons\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT `\_`` land\_NN beyond\_IN the\_DT forest\_NN .\_. '\_''

That\_DT mighty\_JJ brain\_NN and\_CC that\_IN iron\_NN resolution\_NN went\_VBD with\_IN him\_PRP to\_TO his\_PRP$ grave\_NN ,\_, and\_CC are\_VBP even\_RB now\_RB arrayed\_VBN against\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT Draculas\_NNPS were\_VBD ,\_, says\_VBZ Arminius\_NNP ,\_, a\_DT great\_JJ and\_CC noble\_JJ race\_NN ,\_, though\_IN now\_RB and\_CC again\_RB were\_VBD scions\_NNS who\_WP were\_VBD held\_VBN by\_IN their\_PRP$ coevals\_NNS to\_TO have\_VB had\_VBN dealings\_NNS with\_IN the\_DT Evil\_NNP One\_CD .\_.

They\_PRP learned\_VBD his\_PRP$ secrets\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT Scholomance\_NNP ,\_, amongst\_IN the\_DT mountains\_NNS over\_IN Lake\_NNP Hermanstadt\_NNP ,\_, where\_WRB the\_DT devil\_NNP claims\_VBZ the\_DT tenth\_NN scholar\_NN as\_IN his\_PRP$ due\_JJ .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT records\_NNS are\_VBP such\_JJ words\_NNS as\_IN `\_`` stregoica\_NN '\_'' --\_: witch\_NN ,\_, `\_`` ordog\_NN ,\_, '\_'' and\_CC `\_`` pokol\_NN '\_'' --\_: Satan\_NN and\_CC hell\_NN ;\_: and\_CC in\_IN one\_CD manuscript\_NN this\_DT very\_JJ Dracula\_NNP is\_VBZ spoken\_VBN of\_IN as\_IN `\_`` wampyr\_NN ,\_, '\_'' which\_WDT we\_PRP all\_DT understand\_VBP too\_RB well\_RB .\_.

There\_EX have\_VBP been\_VBN from\_IN the\_DT loins\_NNS of\_IN this\_DT very\_RB one\_CD great\_JJ men\_NNS and\_CC good\_JJ women\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC their\_PRP$ graves\_NNS make\_VBP sacred\_JJ the\_DT earth\_NN where\_WRB alone\_RB this\_DT foulness\_NN can\_MD dwell\_VB .\_.

For\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB the\_DT least\_JJS of\_IN its\_PRP$ terrors\_NNS that\_IN this\_DT evil\_JJ thing\_NN is\_VBZ rooted\_VBN deep\_RB in\_IN all\_DT good\_JJ ;\_: in\_IN soil\_NN barren\_JJ of\_IN holy\_JJ memories\_NNS it\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB rest\_VB .\_. ''\_''

Whilst\_IN they\_PRP were\_VBD talking\_VBG Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP was\_VBD looking\_VBG steadily\_RB at\_IN the\_DT window\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP now\_RB got\_VBD up\_RP quietly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC went\_VBD out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT room\_NN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT little\_JJ pause\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB the\_DT Professor\_NNP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` And\_CC now\_RB we\_PRP must\_MD settle\_VB what\_WP we\_PRP do\_VBP .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP here\_RB much\_JJ data\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP must\_MD proceed\_VB to\_TO lay\_VB out\_RP our\_PRP$ campaign\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP know\_VBP from\_IN the\_DT inquiry\_NN of\_IN Jonathan\_NNP that\_IN from\_IN the\_DT castle\_NN to\_TO Whitby\_NNP came\_VBD fifty\_CD boxes\_NNS of\_IN earth\_NN ,\_, all\_DT of\_IN which\_WDT were\_VBD delivered\_VBN at\_IN Carfax\_NNP ;\_: we\_PRP also\_RB know\_VBP that\_IN at\_IN least\_JJS some\_DT of\_IN these\_DT boxes\_NNS have\_VBP been\_VBN removed\_VBN .\_.

It\_PRP seems\_VBZ to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, that\_IN our\_PRP$ first\_JJ step\_NN should\_MD be\_VB to\_TO ascertain\_VB whether\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT rest\_NN remain\_VBP in\_IN the\_DT house\_NN beyond\_IN that\_DT wall\_NN where\_WRB we\_PRP look\_VBP to-day\_JJ ;\_: or\_CC whether\_IN any\_DT more\_JJR have\_VBP been\_VBN removed\_VBN .\_.

If\_IN the\_DT latter\_JJ ,\_, we\_PRP must\_MD trace\_VB --\_: --\_: ''\_'' Here\_RB we\_PRP were\_VBD interrupted\_VBN in\_IN a\_DT very\_RB startling\_JJ way\_NN .\_.

Outside\_IN the\_DT house\_NN came\_VBD the\_DT sound\_NN of\_IN a\_DT pistol-shot\_NN ;\_: the\_DT glass\_NN of\_IN the\_DT window\_NN was\_VBD shattered\_VBN with\_IN a\_DT bullet\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT ,\_, ricochetting\_VBG from\_IN the\_DT top\_NN of\_IN the\_DT embrasure\_NN ,\_, struck\_VBD the\_DT far\_JJ wall\_NN of\_IN the\_DT room\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP afraid\_JJ I\_PRP am\_VBP at\_IN heart\_NN a\_DT coward\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP shrieked\_VBD out\_RP .\_.

The\_DT men\_NNS all\_DT jumped\_VBD to\_TO their\_PRP$ feet\_NNS ;\_: Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP flew\_VBD over\_RP to\_TO the\_DT window\_NN and\_CC threw\_VBD up\_RP the\_DT sash\_NN .\_.

As\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD so\_RB we\_PRP heard\_VBD Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP 's\_POS voice\_NN without\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Sorry\_NNP !\_.

I\_PRP fear\_VBP I\_PRP have\_VBP alarmed\_VBN you\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD come\_VB in\_IN and\_CC tell\_VB you\_PRP about\_IN it\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

A\_DT minute\_NN later\_RB he\_PRP came\_VBD in\_IN and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` It\_PRP was\_VBD an\_DT idiotic\_JJ thing\_NN of\_IN me\_PRP to\_TO do\_VB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP ask\_VBP your\_PRP$ pardon\_NN ,\_, Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP ,\_, most\_RBS sincerely\_RB ;\_: I\_PRP fear\_VBP I\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB frightened\_VBN you\_PRP terribly\_RB .\_.

But\_CC the\_DT fact\_NN is\_VBZ that\_IN whilst\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP was\_VBD talking\_VBG there\_EX came\_VBD a\_DT big\_JJ bat\_NN and\_CC sat\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT window-sill\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP got\_VBN such\_PDT a\_DT horror\_NN of\_IN the\_DT damned\_RB brutes\_NNS from\_IN recent\_JJ events\_NNS that\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB stand\_VB them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP went\_VBD out\_RP to\_TO have\_VB a\_DT shot\_NN ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN doing\_VBG of\_IN late\_RB of\_IN evenings\_NNS ,\_, whenever\_WRB I\_PRP have\_VBP seen\_VBN one\_CD .\_.

You\_PRP used\_VBD to\_TO laugh\_NN at\_IN me\_PRP for\_IN it\_PRP then\_RB ,\_, Art\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Did\_VBD you\_PRP hit\_VB it\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

asked\_VBD Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB know\_VB ;\_: I\_NN fancy\_NN not\_RB ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP flew\_VBD away\_RB into\_IN the\_DT wood\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Without\_IN saying\_VBG any\_DT more\_JJR he\_PRP took\_VBD his\_PRP$ seat\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT Professor\_NNP began\_VBD to\_TO resume\_VB his\_PRP$ statement\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` We\_PRP must\_MD trace\_VB each\_DT of\_IN these\_DT boxes\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC when\_WRB we\_PRP are\_VBP ready\_JJ ,\_, we\_PRP must\_MD either\_RB capture\_VB or\_CC kill\_VB this\_DT monster\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ lair\_NN ;\_: or\_CC we\_PRP must\_MD ,\_, so\_RB to\_TO speak\_VB ,\_, sterilise\_VB the\_DT earth\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN no\_DT more\_RBR he\_PRP can\_MD seek\_VB safety\_NN in\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

Thus\_RB in\_IN the\_DT end\_NN we\_PRP may\_MD find\_VB him\_PRP in\_IN his\_PRP$ form\_NN of\_IN man\_NN between\_IN the\_DT hours\_NNS of\_IN noon\_NN and\_CC sunset\_NN ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB engage\_VB with\_IN him\_PRP when\_WRB he\_PRP is\_VBZ at\_IN his\_PRP$ most\_RBS weak\_JJ .\_.

``\_`` And\_CC now\_RB for\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, this\_DT night\_NN is\_VBZ the\_DT end\_NN until\_IN all\_DT be\_VB well\_RB .\_.

You\_PRP are\_VBP too\_RB precious\_JJ to\_TO us\_PRP to\_TO have\_VB such\_JJ risk\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP part\_VBP to-night\_JJ ,\_, you\_PRP no\_DT more\_RBR must\_MD question\_VB .\_.

We\_PRP shall\_MD tell\_VB you\_PRP all\_DT in\_IN good\_JJ time\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP are\_VBP men\_NNS and\_CC are\_VBP able\_JJ to\_TO bear\_VB ;\_: but\_CC you\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB our\_PRP$ star\_NN and\_CC our\_PRP$ hope\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP shall\_MD act\_VB all\_PDT the\_DT more\_RBR free\_JJ that\_IN you\_PRP are\_VBP not\_RB in\_IN the\_DT danger\_NN ,\_, such\_JJ as\_IN we\_PRP are\_VBP .\_. ''\_''

All\_PDT the\_DT men\_NNS ,\_, even\_RB Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, seemed\_VBD relieved\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB seem\_VB to\_TO me\_PRP good\_JJ that\_IN they\_PRP should\_MD brave\_VB danger\_NN and\_CC ,\_, perhaps\_RB ,\_, lessen\_VB their\_PRP$ safety\_NN --\_: strength\_NN being\_VBG the\_DT best\_JJS safety\_NN --\_: through\_IN care\_NN of\_IN me\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC their\_PRP$ minds\_NNS were\_VBD made\_VBN up\_RP ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, though\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT bitter\_JJ pill\_NN for\_IN me\_PRP to\_TO swallow\_VB ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD say\_VB nothing\_NN ,\_, save\_VB to\_TO accept\_VB their\_PRP$ chivalrous\_JJ care\_NN of\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP resumed\_VBD the\_DT discussion\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` As\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT time\_NN to\_TO lose\_VB ,\_, I\_PRP vote\_VBP we\_PRP have\_VBP a\_DT look\_NN at\_IN his\_PRP$ house\_NN right\_RB now\_RB .\_.

Time\_NNP is\_VBZ everything\_NN with\_IN him\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC swift\_JJ action\_NN on\_IN our\_PRP$ part\_NN may\_MD save\_VB another\_DT victim\_NN .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP own\_VBP that\_IN my\_PRP$ heart\_NN began\_VBD to\_TO fail\_VB me\_PRP when\_WRB the\_DT time\_NN for\_IN action\_NN came\_VBD so\_RB close\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB say\_VB anything\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT greater\_JJR fear\_NN that\_IN if\_IN I\_PRP appeared\_VBD as\_IN a\_DT drag\_NN or\_CC a\_DT hindrance\_NN to\_TO their\_PRP$ work\_NN ,\_, they\_PRP might\_MD even\_RB leave\_VB me\_PRP out\_IN of\_IN their\_PRP$ counsels\_VBZ altogether\_RB .\_.

They\_PRP have\_VBP now\_RB gone\_VBN off\_RP to\_TO Carfax\_NNP ,\_, with\_IN means\_NNS to\_TO get\_VB into\_IN the\_DT house\_NN .\_.

Manlike\_NNP ,\_, they\_PRP had\_VBD told\_VBN me\_PRP to\_TO go\_VB to\_TO bed\_NN and\_CC sleep\_NN ;\_: as\_IN if\_IN a\_DT woman\_NN can\_MD sleep\_VB when\_WRB those\_DT she\_PRP loves\_VBZ are\_VBP in\_IN danger\_NN !\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD lie\_VB down\_RB and\_CC pretend\_VB to\_TO sleep\_VB ,\_, lest\_IN Jonathan\_NNP have\_VBP added\_VBN anxiety\_NN about\_IN me\_PRP when\_WRB he\_PRP returns\_VBZ .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

1\_CD October\_NNP ,\_, 4\_CD a.\_FW m.\_FW --\_: Just\_RB as\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD about\_IN to\_TO leave\_VB the\_DT house\_NN ,\_, an\_DT urgent\_JJ message\_NN was\_VBD brought\_VBN to\_TO me\_PRP from\_IN Renfield\_NNP to\_TO know\_VB if\_IN I\_PRP would\_MD see\_VB him\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD something\_NN of\_IN the\_DT utmost\_JJ importance\_NN to\_TO say\_VB to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP told\_VBD the\_DT messenger\_NN to\_TO say\_VB that\_IN I\_PRP would\_MD attend\_VB to\_TO his\_PRP$ wishes\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP was\_VBD busy\_JJ just\_RB at\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN .\_.

The\_DT attendant\_NN added\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` He\_PRP seems\_VBZ very\_RB importunate\_JJ ,\_, sir\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP never\_RB seen\_VBN him\_PRP so\_RB eager\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB know\_VB but\_CC what\_WP ,\_, if\_IN you\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB see\_VB him\_PRP soon\_RB ,\_, he\_PRP will\_MD have\_VB one\_CD of\_IN his\_PRP$ violent\_JJ fits\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP knew\_VBD the\_DT man\_NN would\_MD not\_RB have\_VB said\_VBN this\_DT without\_IN some\_DT cause\_NN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` All\_DT right\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP 'll\_MD go\_VB now\_RB ''\_'' ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP asked\_VBD the\_DT others\_NNS to\_TO wait\_VB a\_DT few\_JJ minutes\_NNS for\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO go\_VB and\_CC see\_VB my\_PRP$ ``\_`` patient\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Take\_VB me\_PRP with\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` His\_PRP$ case\_NN in\_IN your\_PRP$ diary\_NN interest\_NN me\_PRP much\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP had\_VBD bearing\_NN ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, now\_RB and\_CC again\_RB on\_IN our\_PRP$ case\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP should\_MD much\_RB like\_VB to\_TO see\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC especial\_JJ when\_WRB his\_PRP$ mind\_NN is\_VBZ disturbed\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` May\_MD I\_PRP come\_VB also\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

asked\_VBD Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` Me\_PRP too\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

said\_VBD Quincey\_NNP Morris\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` May\_MD I\_PRP come\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

said\_VBD Harker\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP nodded\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP all\_DT went\_VBD down\_IN the\_DT passage\_NN together\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP found\_VBD him\_PRP in\_IN a\_DT state\_NN of\_IN considerable\_JJ excitement\_NN ,\_, but\_CC far\_RB more\_RBR rational\_JJ in\_IN his\_PRP$ speech\_NN and\_CC manner\_NN than\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD ever\_RB seen\_VBN him\_PRP .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD an\_DT unusual\_JJ understanding\_NN of\_IN himself\_PRP ,\_, which\_WDT was\_VBD unlike\_IN anything\_NN I\_PRP had\_VBD ever\_RB met\_VBN with\_IN in\_IN a\_DT lunatic\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC he\_PRP took\_VBD it\_PRP for\_IN granted\_VBN that\_IN his\_PRP$ reasons\_NNS would\_MD prevail\_VB with\_IN others\_NNS entirely\_RB sane\_VBP .\_.

We\_PRP all\_DT four\_CD went\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, but\_CC none\_NN of\_IN the\_DT others\_NNS at\_IN first\_RB said\_VBD anything\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ request\_NN was\_VBD that\_IN I\_PRP would\_MD at\_IN once\_RB release\_VB him\_PRP from\_IN the\_DT asylum\_NN and\_CC send\_VB him\_PRP home\_NN .\_.

This\_DT he\_PRP backed\_VBD up\_RP with\_IN arguments\_NNS regarding\_VBG his\_PRP$ complete\_JJ recovery\_NN ,\_, and\_CC adduced\_VBD his\_PRP$ own\_JJ existing\_VBG sanity\_NN .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP appeal\_VBP to\_TO your\_PRP$ friends\_NNS ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` they\_PRP will\_MD ,\_, perhaps\_RB ,\_, not\_RB mind\_VB sitting\_VBG in\_IN judgment\_NN on\_IN my\_PRP$ case\_NN .\_.

By\_IN the\_DT way\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB introduced\_VBN me\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP was\_VBD so\_RB much\_RB astonished\_VBN ,\_, that\_IN the\_DT oddness\_NN of\_IN introducing\_VBG a\_DT madman\_NN in\_IN an\_DT asylum\_NN did\_VBD not\_RB strike\_VB me\_PRP at\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN ;\_: and\_CC ,\_, besides\_IN ,\_, there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT certain\_JJ dignity\_NN in\_IN the\_DT man\_NN 's\_POS manner\_NN ,\_, so\_RB much\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT habit\_NN of\_IN equality\_NN ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB made\_VBN the\_DT introduction\_NN :\_: ``\_`` Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP ;\_: Professor\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ;\_: Mr.\_NNP Quincey\_NNP Morris\_NNP ,\_, of\_IN Texas\_NNP ;\_: Mr.\_NNP Renfield\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP shook\_VBD hands\_NNS with\_IN each\_DT of\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, saying\_VBG in\_IN turn\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP had\_VBD the\_DT honour\_NN of\_IN seconding\_VBG your\_PRP$ father\_NN at\_IN the\_DT Windham\_NNP ;\_: I\_PRP grieve\_VBP to\_TO know\_VB ,\_, by\_IN your\_PRP$ holding\_VBG the\_DT title\_NN ,\_, that\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ no\_RB more\_JJR .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT man\_NN loved\_VBN and\_CC honoured\_VBN by\_IN all\_DT who\_WP knew\_VBD him\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC in\_IN his\_PRP$ youth\_NN was\_VBD ,\_, I\_PRP have\_VBP heard\_VBN ,\_, the\_DT inventor\_NN of\_IN a\_DT burnt\_JJ rum\_NN punch\_NN ,\_, much\_RB patronised\_VBN on\_IN Derby\_NNP night\_NN .\_.

Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP ,\_, you\_PRP should\_MD be\_VB proud\_JJ of\_IN your\_PRP$ great\_JJ state\_NN .\_.

Its\_PRP$ reception\_NN into\_IN the\_DT Union\_NNP was\_VBD a\_DT precedent\_NN which\_WDT may\_MD have\_VB far-reaching\_JJ effects\_NNS hereafter\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB the\_DT Pole\_NNP and\_CC the\_DT Tropics\_NNPS may\_MD hold\_VB alliance\_NN to\_TO the\_DT Stars\_NNP and\_CC Stripes\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT power\_NN of\_IN Treaty\_NNP may\_MD yet\_RB prove\_VB a\_DT vast\_JJ engine\_NN of\_IN enlargement\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB the\_DT Monroe\_NNP doctrine\_NN takes\_VBZ its\_PRP$ true\_JJ place\_NN as\_IN a\_DT political\_JJ fable\_NN .\_.

What\_WP shall\_MD any\_DT man\_NN say\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ pleasure\_NN at\_IN meeting\_NN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ?\_.

Sir\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP make\_VBP no\_DT apology\_NN for\_IN dropping\_VBG all\_DT forms\_NNS of\_IN conventional\_JJ prefix\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB an\_DT individual\_NN has\_VBZ revolutionised\_VBN therapeutics\_NNS by\_IN his\_PRP$ discovery\_NN of\_IN the\_DT continuous\_JJ evolution\_NN of\_IN brain-matter\_NN ,\_, conventional\_JJ forms\_NNS are\_VBP unfitting\_JJ ,\_, since\_IN they\_PRP would\_MD seem\_VB to\_TO limit\_VB him\_PRP to\_TO one\_CD of\_IN a\_DT class\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP ,\_, gentlemen\_NNS ,\_, who\_WP by\_IN nationality\_NN ,\_, by\_IN heredity\_NN ,\_, or\_CC by\_IN the\_DT possession\_NN of\_IN natural\_JJ gifts\_NNS ,\_, are\_VBP fitted\_VBN to\_TO hold\_VB your\_PRP$ respective\_JJ places\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT moving\_JJ world\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP take\_VBP to\_TO witness\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP as\_RB sane\_JJ as\_IN at\_IN least\_JJS the\_DT majority\_NN of\_IN men\_NNS who\_WP are\_VBP in\_IN full\_JJ possession\_NN of\_IN their\_PRP$ liberties\_NNS .\_.

And\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP sure\_JJ that\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP ,\_, humanitarian\_JJ and\_CC medico-jurist\_JJ as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN scientist\_NN ,\_, will\_MD deem\_VB it\_PRP a\_DT moral\_JJ duty\_NN to\_TO deal\_VB with\_IN me\_PRP as\_IN one\_CD to\_TO be\_VB considered\_VBN as\_IN under\_IN exceptional\_JJ circumstances\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP made\_VBD this\_DT last\_JJ appeal\_NN with\_IN a\_DT courtly\_JJ air\_NN of\_IN conviction\_NN which\_WDT was\_VBD not\_RB without\_IN its\_PRP$ own\_JJ charm\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP think\_VBP we\_PRP were\_VBD all\_DT staggered\_VBN .\_.

For\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ part\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP was\_VBD under\_IN the\_DT conviction\_NN ,\_, despite\_IN my\_PRP$ knowledge\_NN of\_IN the\_DT man\_NN 's\_POS character\_NN and\_CC history\_NN ,\_, that\_IN his\_PRP$ reason\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN restored\_VBN ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP felt\_VBD under\_IN a\_DT strong\_JJ impulse\_NN to\_TO tell\_VB him\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD satisfied\_VBN as\_IN to\_TO his\_PRP$ sanity\_NN ,\_, and\_CC would\_MD see\_VB about\_IN the\_DT necessary\_JJ formalities\_NNS for\_IN his\_PRP$ release\_NN in\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP thought\_VBD it\_PRP better\_JJR to\_TO wait\_VB ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, before\_IN making\_VBG so\_RB grave\_JJ a\_DT statement\_NN ,\_, for\_IN of\_IN old\_JJ I\_PRP knew\_VBD the\_DT sudden\_JJ changes\_NNS to\_TO which\_WDT this\_DT particular\_JJ patient\_NN was\_VBD liable\_JJ .\_.

So\_RB I\_PRP contented\_JJ myself\_PRP with\_IN making\_VBG a\_DT general\_JJ statement\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP appeared\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB improving\_VBG very\_RB rapidly\_RB ;\_: that\_IN I\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB a\_DT longer\_JJR chat\_NN with\_IN him\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN ,\_, and\_CC would\_MD then\_RB see\_VB what\_WP I\_PRP could\_MD do\_VB in\_IN the\_DT direction\_NN of\_IN meeting\_VBG his\_PRP$ wishes\_NNS .\_.

This\_DT did\_VBD not\_RB at\_IN all\_DT satisfy\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP said\_VBD quickly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` But\_CC I\_PRP fear\_VBP ,\_, Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP ,\_, that\_IN you\_PRP hardly\_RB apprehend\_VB my\_PRP$ wish\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP desire\_VBP to\_TO go\_VB at\_IN once\_RB --\_: here\_RB --\_: now\_RB --\_: this\_DT very\_JJ hour\_NN --\_: this\_DT very\_JJ moment\_NN ,\_, if\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD .\_.

Time\_NN presses\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN our\_PRP$ implied\_JJ agreement\_NN with\_IN the\_DT old\_JJ scytheman\_NN it\_PRP is\_VBZ of\_IN the\_DT essence\_NN of\_IN the\_DT contract\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP sure\_JJ it\_PRP is\_VBZ only\_RB necessary\_JJ to\_TO put\_VB before\_RB so\_RB admirable\_JJ a\_DT practitioner\_NN as\_IN Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP so\_RB simple\_JJ ,\_, yet\_CC so\_RB momentous\_JJ a\_DT wish\_NN ,\_, to\_TO ensure\_VB its\_PRP$ fulfilment\_NN .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP looked\_VBD at\_IN me\_PRP keenly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC seeing\_VBG the\_DT negative\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, turned\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT others\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC scrutinised\_VBD them\_PRP closely\_RB .\_.

Not\_RB meeting\_VBG any\_DT sufficient\_JJ response\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Is\_VBZ it\_PRP possible\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP erred\_VBN in\_IN my\_PRP$ supposition\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` You\_PRP have\_VBP ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD frankly\_RB ,\_, but\_CC at\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ time\_NN ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP felt\_VBD ,\_, brutally\_RB .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT considerable\_JJ pause\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB he\_PRP said\_VBD slowly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Then\_RB I\_PRP suppose\_VBP I\_PRP must\_MD only\_RB shift\_VB my\_PRP$ ground\_NN of\_IN request\_NN .\_.

Let\_VB me\_PRP ask\_VB for\_IN this\_DT concession\_NN --\_: boon\_NN ,\_, privilege\_NN ,\_, what\_WP you\_PRP will\_MD .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP content\_JJ to\_TO implore\_VB in\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT case\_NN ,\_, not\_RB on\_IN personal\_JJ grounds\_NNS ,\_, but\_CC for\_IN the\_DT sake\_NN of\_IN others\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB at\_IN liberty\_NN to\_TO give\_VB you\_PRP the\_DT whole\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ reasons\_NNS ;\_: but\_CC you\_PRP may\_MD ,\_, I\_PRP assure\_VBP you\_PRP ,\_, take\_VB it\_PRP from\_IN me\_PRP that\_IN they\_PRP are\_VBP good\_JJ ones\_NNS ,\_, sound\_JJ and\_CC unselfish\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC spring\_NN from\_IN the\_DT highest\_JJS sense\_NN of\_IN duty\_NN .\_.

Could\_MD you\_PRP look\_VB ,\_, sir\_NN ,\_, into\_IN my\_PRP$ heart\_NN ,\_, you\_PRP would\_MD approve\_VB to\_TO the\_DT full\_JJ the\_DT sentiments\_NNS which\_WDT animate\_VBP me\_PRP .\_.

Nay\_NNP ,\_, more\_JJR ,\_, you\_PRP would\_MD count\_VB me\_PRP amongst\_IN the\_DT best\_JJS and\_CC truest\_JJS of\_IN your\_PRP$ friends\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

Again\_RB he\_PRP looked\_VBD at\_IN us\_PRP all\_RB keenly\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT growing\_VBG conviction\_NN that\_IN this\_DT sudden\_JJ change\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ entire\_JJ intellectual\_JJ method\_NN was\_VBD but\_CC yet\_RB another\_DT form\_NN or\_CC phase\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ madness\_NN ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB determined\_VBN to\_TO let\_VB him\_PRP go\_VB on\_IN a\_DT little\_RB longer\_JJR ,\_, knowing\_VBG from\_IN experience\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP would\_MD ,\_, like\_IN all\_DT lunatics\_NNS ,\_, give\_VB himself\_PRP away\_RB in\_IN the\_DT end\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP was\_VBD gazing\_VBG at\_IN him\_PRP with\_IN a\_DT look\_NN of\_IN utmost\_JJ intensity\_NN ,\_, his\_PRP$ bushy\_JJ eyebrows\_NNS almost\_RB meeting\_VBG with\_IN the\_DT fixed\_JJ concentration\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ look\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO Renfield\_NNP in\_IN a\_DT tone\_NN which\_WDT did\_VBD not\_RB surprise\_VB me\_PRP at\_IN the\_DT time\_NN ,\_, but\_CC only\_RB when\_WRB I\_PRP thought\_VBD of\_IN it\_PRP afterwards\_RB --\_: for\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD as\_IN of\_IN one\_CD addressing\_VBG an\_DT equal\_JJ :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Can\_MD you\_PRP not\_RB tell\_VB frankly\_RB your\_PRP$ real\_JJ reason\_NN for\_IN wishing\_VBG to\_TO be\_VB free\_JJ to-night\_NN ?\_.

I\_PRP will\_MD undertake\_VB that\_IN if\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD satisfy\_VB even\_RB me\_PRP --\_: a\_DT stranger\_NN ,\_, without\_IN prejudice\_NN ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN the\_DT habit\_NN of\_IN keeping\_VBG an\_DT open\_JJ mind\_NN --\_: Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP will\_MD give\_VB you\_PRP ,\_, at\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ risk\_NN and\_CC on\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ responsibility\_NN ,\_, the\_DT privilege\_NN you\_PRP seek\_VBP .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP shook\_VBD his\_PRP$ head\_NN sadly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN a\_DT look\_NN of\_IN poignant\_JJ regret\_NN on\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Come\_VB ,\_, sir\_VB ,\_, bethink\_VB yourself\_PRP .\_.

You\_PRP claim\_VBP the\_DT privilege\_NN of\_IN reason\_NN in\_IN the\_DT highest\_JJS degree\_NN ,\_, since\_IN you\_PRP seek\_VBP to\_TO impress\_VB us\_PRP with\_IN your\_PRP$ complete\_JJ reasonableness\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP do\_VBP this\_DT ,\_, whose\_WP$ sanity\_NN we\_PRP have\_VBP reason\_NN to\_TO doubt\_NN ,\_, since\_IN you\_PRP are\_VBP not\_RB yet\_RB released\_VBN from\_IN medical\_JJ treatment\_NN for\_IN this\_DT very\_JJ defect\_NN .\_.

If\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB help\_VB us\_PRP in\_IN our\_PRP$ effort\_NN to\_TO choose\_VB the\_DT wisest\_JJS course\_NN ,\_, how\_WRB can\_MD we\_PRP perform\_VB the\_DT duty\_NN which\_WDT you\_PRP yourself\_PRP put\_VBD upon\_IN us\_PRP ?\_.

Be\_VB wise\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC help\_VB us\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC if\_IN we\_PRP can\_MD we\_PRP shall\_MD aid\_VB you\_PRP to\_TO achieve\_VB your\_PRP$ wish\_NN .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP still\_RB shook\_VBD his\_PRP$ head\_NN as\_IN he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP have\_VBP nothing\_NN to\_TO say\_VB .\_.

Your\_PRP$ argument\_NN is\_VBZ complete\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC if\_IN I\_PRP were\_VBD free\_JJ to\_TO speak\_VB I\_PRP should\_MD not\_RB hesitate\_VB a\_DT moment\_NN ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB my\_PRP$ own\_JJ master\_NN in\_IN the\_DT matter\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP can\_MD only\_RB ask\_VB you\_PRP to\_TO trust\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

If\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP refused\_VBN ,\_, the\_DT responsibility\_NN does\_VBZ not\_RB rest\_VB with\_IN me\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP thought\_VBD it\_PRP was\_VBD now\_RB time\_NN to\_TO end\_VB the\_DT scene\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT was\_VBD becoming\_VBG too\_RB comically\_RB grave\_JJ ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP went\_VBD towards\_IN the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, simply\_RB saying\_VBG :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Come\_VB ,\_, my\_PRP$ friends\_NNS ,\_, we\_PRP have\_VBP work\_NN to\_TO do\_VB .\_.

Good-night\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

As\_IN ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP got\_VBD near\_IN the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, a\_DT new\_JJ change\_NN came\_VBD over\_IN the\_DT patient\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP moved\_VBD towards\_IN me\_PRP so\_RB quickly\_RB that\_IN for\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN I\_PRP feared\_VBD that\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD about\_IN to\_TO make\_VB another\_DT homicidal\_JJ attack\_NN .\_.

My\_PRP$ fears\_NNS ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, were\_VBD groundless\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP held\_VBD up\_RP his\_PRP$ two\_CD hands\_NNS imploringly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC made\_VBD his\_PRP$ petition\_NN in\_IN a\_DT moving\_JJ manner\_NN .\_.

As\_IN he\_PRP saw\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT very\_JJ excess\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ emotion\_NN was\_VBD militating\_VBG against\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, by\_IN restoring\_VBG us\_PRP more\_JJR to\_TO our\_PRP$ old\_JJ relations\_NNS ,\_, he\_PRP became\_VBD still\_RB more\_RBR demonstrative\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP glanced\_VBD at\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC saw\_VBD my\_PRP$ conviction\_NN reflected\_VBN in\_IN his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ;\_: so\_IN I\_PRP became\_VBD a\_DT little\_RB more\_RBR fixed\_JJ in\_IN my\_PRP$ manner\_NN ,\_, if\_IN not\_RB more\_RBR stern\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC motioned\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP that\_IN his\_PRP$ efforts\_NNS were\_VBD unavailing\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD previously\_RB seen\_VBN something\_NN of\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ constantly\_RB growing\_VBG excitement\_NN in\_IN him\_PRP when\_WRB he\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO make\_VB some\_DT request\_NN of\_IN which\_WDT at\_IN the\_DT time\_NN he\_PRP had\_VBD thought\_VBN much\_JJ ,\_, such\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN instance\_NN ,\_, as\_IN when\_WRB he\_PRP wanted\_VBD a\_DT cat\_NN ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP was\_VBD prepared\_VBN to\_TO see\_VB the\_DT collapse\_NN into\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ sullen\_JJ acquiescence\_NN on\_IN this\_DT occasion\_NN .\_.

My\_PRP$ expectation\_NN was\_VBD not\_RB realised\_VBN ,\_, for\_IN ,\_, when\_WRB he\_PRP found\_VBD that\_IN his\_PRP$ appeal\_NN would\_MD not\_RB be\_VB successful\_JJ ,\_, he\_PRP got\_VBD into\_IN quite\_RB a\_DT frantic\_JJ condition\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP threw\_VBD himself\_PRP on\_IN his\_PRP$ knees\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC held\_VBD up\_RP his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS ,\_, wringing\_VBG them\_PRP in\_IN plaintive\_JJ supplication\_NN ,\_, and\_CC poured\_VBD forth\_RB a\_DT torrent\_NN of\_IN entreaty\_NN ,\_, with\_IN the\_DT tears\_NNS rolling\_VBG down\_IN his\_PRP$ cheeks\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ whole\_JJ face\_NN and\_CC form\_NN expressive\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT deepest\_JJS emotion\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Let\_VB me\_PRP entreat\_VB you\_PRP ,\_, Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP ,\_, oh\_UH ,\_, let\_VB me\_PRP implore\_VB you\_PRP ,\_, to\_TO let\_VB me\_PRP out\_IN of\_IN this\_DT house\_NN at\_IN once\_RB .\_.

Send\_VB me\_PRP away\_RB how\_WRB you\_PRP will\_MD and\_CC where\_WRB you\_PRP will\_MD ;\_: send\_VB keepers\_NNS with\_IN me\_PRP with\_IN whips\_VBZ and\_CC chains\_NNS ;\_: let\_VB them\_PRP take\_VB me\_PRP in\_IN a\_DT strait-waistcoat\_JJ ,\_, manacled\_JJ and\_CC leg-ironed\_JJ ,\_, even\_RB to\_TO a\_DT gaol\_NN ;\_: but\_CC let\_VB me\_PRP go\_VB out\_IN of\_IN this\_DT .\_.

You\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB know\_VB what\_WP you\_PRP do\_VBP by\_IN keeping\_VBG me\_PRP here\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP speaking\_VBG from\_IN the\_DT depths\_NNS of\_IN my\_PRP$ heart\_NN --\_: of\_IN my\_PRP$ very\_JJ soul\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB know\_VB whom\_WP you\_PRP wrong\_JJ ,\_, or\_CC how\_WRB ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB tell\_VB .\_.

Woe\_NN is\_VBZ me\_PRP !\_.

I\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB tell\_VB .\_.

By\_IN all\_DT you\_PRP hold\_VBP sacred\_JJ --\_: by\_IN all\_DT you\_PRP hold\_VBP dear\_RB --\_: by\_IN your\_PRP$ love\_NN that\_WDT is\_VBZ lost\_VBN --\_: by\_IN your\_PRP$ hope\_NN that\_WDT lives\_VBZ --\_: for\_IN the\_DT sake\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Almighty\_NNP ,\_, take\_VB me\_PRP out\_IN of\_IN this\_DT and\_CC save\_VB my\_PRP$ soul\_NN from\_IN guilt\_NN !\_.

Ca\_MD n't\_RB you\_PRP hear\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, man\_NN ?\_.

Ca\_MD n't\_RB you\_PRP understand\_VB ?\_.

Will\_MD you\_PRP never\_RB learn\_VB ?\_.

Do\_VBP n't\_RB you\_PRP know\_VBP that\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP sane\_JJ and\_CC earnest\_JJ now\_RB ;\_: that\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP no\_DT lunatic\_NN in\_IN a\_DT mad\_JJ fit\_NN ,\_, but\_CC a\_DT sane\_JJ man\_NN fighting\_VBG for\_IN his\_PRP$ soul\_NN ?\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, hear\_VB me\_PRP !\_.

hear\_VB me\_PRP !\_.

Let\_VB me\_PRP go\_VB !\_.

let\_VB me\_PRP go\_VB !\_.

let\_VB me\_PRP go\_VB !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP thought\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT longer\_RBR this\_DT went\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT wilder\_NN he\_PRP would\_MD get\_VB ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB would\_MD bring\_VB on\_IN a\_DT fit\_NN ;\_: so\_IN I\_PRP took\_VBD him\_PRP by\_IN the\_DT hand\_NN and\_CC raised\_VBD him\_PRP up\_RP .\_.

``\_`` Come\_VB ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD sternly\_RB ,\_, ``\_`` no\_DT more\_JJR of\_IN this\_DT ;\_: we\_PRP have\_VBP had\_VBN quite\_RB enough\_RB already\_RB .\_.

Get\_VB to\_TO your\_PRP$ bed\_NN and\_CC try\_VB to\_TO behave\_VB more\_RBR discreetly\_RB .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP suddenly\_RB stopped\_VBD and\_CC looked\_VBD at\_IN me\_PRP intently\_RB for\_IN several\_JJ moments\_NNS .\_.

Then\_RB ,\_, without\_IN a\_DT word\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP rose\_VBD and\_CC moving\_VBG over\_RB ,\_, sat\_VBD down\_RP on\_IN the\_DT side\_NN of\_IN the\_DT bed\_NN .\_.

The\_DT collapse\_NN had\_VBD come\_VBN ,\_, as\_IN on\_IN former\_JJ occasion\_NN ,\_, just\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD expected\_VBN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP was\_VBD leaving\_VBG the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, last\_JJ of\_IN our\_PRP$ party\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP in\_IN a\_DT quiet\_JJ ,\_, well-bred\_JJ voice\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP will\_MD ,\_, I\_PRP trust\_VBP ,\_, Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP ,\_, do\_VB me\_PRP the\_DT justice\_NN to\_TO bear\_VB in\_IN mind\_NN ,\_, later\_RB on\_IN ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD what\_WP I\_PRP could\_MD to\_TO convince\_VB you\_PRP to-night\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

CHAPTER\_NNP XIX\_NNP JONATHAN\_NNP HARKER\_NNP 'S\_POS JOURNAL\_NN 1\_CD October\_NNP ,\_, 5\_CD a.\_FW m.\_FW --\_: I\_PRP went\_VBD with\_IN the\_DT party\_NN to\_TO the\_DT search\_NN with\_IN an\_DT easy\_JJ mind\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP think\_VBP I\_PRP never\_RB saw\_VBD Mina\_NNP so\_RB absolutely\_RB strong\_JJ and\_CC well\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP so\_RB glad\_JJ that\_IN she\_PRP consented\_VBD to\_TO hold\_VB back\_RB and\_CC let\_VB us\_PRP men\_NNS do\_VBP the\_DT work\_NN .\_.

Somehow\_RB ,\_, it\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT dread\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP that\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN this\_DT fearful\_JJ business\_NN at\_IN all\_DT ;\_: but\_CC now\_RB that\_IN her\_PRP$ work\_NN is\_VBZ done\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ due\_JJ to\_TO her\_PRP$ energy\_NN and\_CC brains\_NNS and\_CC foresight\_NN that\_IN the\_DT whole\_JJ story\_NN is\_VBZ put\_VBN together\_RB in\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT way\_NN that\_IN every\_DT point\_NN tells\_VBZ ,\_, she\_PRP may\_MD well\_RB feel\_VB that\_DT her\_PRP$ part\_NN is\_VBZ finished\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN she\_PRP can\_MD henceforth\_RB leave\_VB the\_DT rest\_NN to\_TO us\_PRP .\_.

We\_PRP were\_VBD ,\_, I\_PRP think\_VBP ,\_, all\_PDT a\_DT little\_JJ upset\_NN by\_IN the\_DT scene\_NN with\_IN Mr.\_NNP Renfield\_NNP .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP came\_VBD away\_RB from\_IN his\_PRP$ room\_NN we\_PRP were\_VBD silent\_JJ till\_IN we\_PRP got\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO the\_DT study\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP said\_VBD to\_TO Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Say\_VB ,\_, Jack\_NNP ,\_, if\_IN that\_DT man\_NN was\_VBD n't\_RB attempting\_VBG a\_DT bluff\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP is\_VBZ about\_IN the\_DT sanest\_JJS lunatic\_NN I\_PRP ever\_RB saw\_VBD .\_.

I\_PRP 'm\_VBP not\_RB sure\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP believe\_VBP that\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD some\_DT serious\_JJ purpose\_NN ,\_, and\_CC if\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD ,\_, it\_PRP was\_VBD pretty\_RB rough\_JJ on\_IN him\_PRP not\_RB to\_TO get\_VB a\_DT chance\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP were\_VBD silent\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP added\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, you\_PRP know\_VBP more\_JJR of\_IN lunatics\_NNS than\_IN I\_PRP do\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP 'm\_VBP glad\_JJ of\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP fear\_VBP that\_IN if\_IN it\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN to\_TO me\_PRP to\_TO decide\_VB I\_PRP would\_MD before\_IN that\_DT last\_JJ hysterical\_JJ outburst\_NN have\_VBP given\_VBN him\_PRP free\_JJ .\_.

But\_CC we\_PRP live\_VBP and\_CC learn\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN our\_PRP$ present\_JJ task\_NN we\_PRP must\_MD take\_VB no\_DT chance\_NN ,\_, as\_IN my\_PRP$ friend\_NN Quincey\_NNP would\_MD say\_VB .\_.

All\_DT is\_VBZ best\_RB as\_IN they\_PRP are\_VBP .\_. ''\_''

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP seemed\_VBD to\_TO answer\_VB them\_PRP both\_CC in\_IN a\_DT dreamy\_JJ kind\_NN of\_IN way\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB know\_VB but\_CC that\_IN I\_PRP agree\_VBP with\_IN you\_PRP .\_.

If\_IN that\_DT man\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN an\_DT ordinary\_JJ lunatic\_NN I\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB taken\_VBN my\_PRP$ chance\_NN of\_IN trusting\_VBG him\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC he\_PRP seems\_VBZ so\_RB mixed\_VBN up\_RP with\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN in\_IN an\_DT indexy\_JJ kind\_NN of\_IN way\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP afraid\_JJ of\_IN doing\_VBG anything\_NN wrong\_JJ by\_IN helping\_VBG his\_PRP$ fads\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP ca\_MD n't\_RB forget\_VB how\_WRB he\_PRP prayed\_VBD with\_IN almost\_RB equal\_JJ fervour\_NN for\_IN a\_DT cat\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB tried\_VBD to\_TO tear\_VB my\_PRP$ throat\_NN out\_RP with\_IN his\_PRP$ teeth\_NNS .\_.

Besides\_IN ,\_, he\_PRP called\_VBD the\_DT Count\_NNP `\_`` lord\_NN and\_CC master\_NN ,\_, '\_'' and\_CC he\_PRP may\_MD want\_VB to\_TO get\_VB out\_RP to\_TO help\_VB him\_PRP in\_IN some\_DT diabolical\_JJ way\_NN .\_.

That\_DT horrid\_JJ thing\_NN has\_VBZ the\_DT wolves\_NNS and\_CC the\_DT rats\_NNS and\_CC his\_PRP$ own\_JJ kind\_NN to\_TO help\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP suppose\_VBP he\_PRP is\_VBZ n't\_RB above\_IN trying\_VBG to\_TO use\_VB a\_DT respectable\_JJ lunatic\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP certainly\_RB did\_VBD seem\_VB earnest\_JJ ,\_, though\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP only\_RB hope\_VBP we\_PRP have\_VBP done\_VBN what\_WP is\_VBZ best\_JJS .\_.

These\_DT things\_NNS ,\_, in\_IN conjunction\_NN with\_IN the\_DT wild\_JJ work\_NN we\_PRP have\_VBP in\_IN hand\_NN ,\_, help\_NN to\_TO unnerve\_VB a\_DT man\_NN .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT Professor\_NNP stepped\_VBD over\_RB ,\_, and\_CC laying\_VBG his\_PRP$ hand\_NN on\_IN his\_PRP$ shoulder\_NN ,\_, said\_VBD in\_IN his\_PRP$ grave\_NN ,\_, kindly\_RB way\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, have\_VBP no\_DT fear\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP are\_VBP trying\_VBG to\_TO do\_VB our\_PRP$ duty\_NN in\_IN a\_DT very\_RB sad\_JJ and\_CC terrible\_JJ case\_NN ;\_: we\_PRP can\_MD only\_RB do\_VB as\_IN we\_PRP deem\_VBP best\_RB .\_.

What\_WP else\_RB have\_VBP we\_PRP to\_TO hope\_VB for\_IN ,\_, except\_IN the\_DT pity\_NN of\_IN the\_DT good\_JJ God\_NNP ?\_. ''\_''

Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP had\_VBD slipped\_VBN away\_RB for\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ minutes\_NNS ,\_, but\_CC now\_RB he\_PRP returned\_VBD .\_.

He\_PRP held\_VBD up\_RP a\_DT little\_JJ silver\_NN whistle\_VBP ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP remarked\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` That\_DT old\_JJ place\_NN may\_MD be\_VB full\_JJ of\_IN rats\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC if\_IN so\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP 've\_VBP got\_VBN an\_DT antidote\_NN on\_IN call\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Having\_VBG passed\_VBN the\_DT wall\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP took\_VBD our\_PRP$ way\_NN to\_TO the\_DT house\_NN ,\_, taking\_VBG care\_NN to\_TO keep\_VB in\_IN the\_DT shadows\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT trees\_NNS on\_IN the\_DT lawn\_NN when\_WRB the\_DT moonlight\_NN shone\_VBD out\_RP .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP got\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT porch\_NN the\_DT Professor\_NNP opened\_VBD his\_PRP$ bag\_NN and\_CC took\_VBD out\_RP a\_DT lot\_NN of\_IN things\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT he\_PRP laid\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT step\_NN ,\_, sorting\_VBG them\_PRP into\_IN four\_CD little\_JJ groups\_NNS ,\_, evidently\_RB one\_CD for\_IN each\_DT .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP spoke\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` My\_PRP$ friends\_NNS ,\_, we\_PRP are\_VBP going\_VBG into\_IN a\_DT terrible\_JJ danger\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP need\_VBP arms\_NNS of\_IN many\_JJ kinds\_NNS .\_.

Our\_PRP$ enemy\_NN is\_VBZ not\_RB merely\_RB spiritual\_JJ .\_.

Remember\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP has\_VBZ the\_DT strength\_NN of\_IN twenty\_CD men\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN ,\_, though\_IN our\_PRP$ necks\_NNS or\_CC our\_PRP$ windpipes\_NNS are\_VBP of\_IN the\_DT common\_JJ kind\_NN --\_: and\_CC therefore\_RB breakable\_JJ or\_CC crushable\_JJ --\_: his\_PRP$ are\_VBP not\_RB amenable\_JJ to\_TO mere\_JJ strength\_NN .\_.

A\_DT stronger\_JJR man\_NN ,\_, or\_CC a\_DT body\_NN of\_IN men\_NNS more\_RBR strong\_JJ in\_IN all\_DT than\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, can\_MD at\_IN certain\_JJ times\_NNS hold\_VBP him\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC they\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB hurt\_VB him\_PRP as\_IN we\_PRP can\_MD be\_VB hurt\_VBN by\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

We\_PRP must\_MD ,\_, therefore\_RB ,\_, guard\_VB ourselves\_PRP from\_IN his\_PRP$ touch\_NN .\_.

Keep\_VB this\_DT near\_IN your\_PRP$ heart\_NN ''\_'' --\_: as\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD he\_PRP lifted\_VBD a\_DT little\_JJ silver\_NN crucifix\_NN and\_CC held\_VBD it\_PRP out\_RP to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP being\_VBG nearest\_IN to\_TO him\_PRP --\_: ``\_`` put\_VB these\_DT flowers\_NNS round\_VBP your\_PRP$ neck\_NN ''\_'' --\_: here\_RB he\_PRP handed\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP a\_DT wreath\_NN of\_IN withered\_FW garlic\_FW blossoms\_NNS --\_: ``\_`` for\_IN other\_JJ enemies\_NNS more\_RBR mundane\_JJ ,\_, this\_DT revolver\_NN and\_CC this\_DT knife\_NN ;\_: and\_CC for\_IN aid\_NN in\_IN all\_DT ,\_, these\_DT so\_RB small\_JJ electric\_JJ lamps\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT you\_PRP can\_MD fasten\_VB to\_TO your\_PRP$ breast\_NN ;\_: and\_CC for\_IN all\_DT ,\_, and\_CC above\_IN all\_DT at\_IN the\_DT last\_JJ ,\_, this\_DT ,\_, which\_WDT we\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB desecrate\_VB needless\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

This\_DT was\_VBD a\_DT portion\_NN of\_IN Sacred\_NNP Wafer\_NNP ,\_, which\_WDT he\_PRP put\_VBD in\_RP an\_DT envelope\_NN and\_CC handed\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

Each\_DT of\_IN the\_DT others\_NNS was\_VBD similarly\_RB equipped\_VBN .\_.

``\_`` Now\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, where\_WRB are\_VBP the\_DT skeleton\_NN keys\_NNS ?\_.

If\_IN so\_RB that\_IN we\_PRP can\_MD open\_VB the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP need\_VBP not\_RB break\_VB house\_NN by\_IN the\_DT window\_NN ,\_, as\_RB before\_RB at\_IN Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS .\_. ''\_''

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP tried\_VBD one\_CD or\_CC two\_CD skeleton\_NN keys\_NNS ,\_, his\_PRP$ mechanical\_JJ dexterity\_NN as\_IN a\_DT surgeon\_NN standing\_VBG him\_PRP in\_IN good\_JJ stead\_NN .\_.

Presently\_RB he\_PRP got\_VBD one\_CD to\_TO suit\_NN ;\_: after\_IN a\_DT little\_JJ play\_NN back\_RB and\_CC forward\_RB the\_DT bolt\_NN yielded\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT rusty\_JJ clang\_NN ,\_, shot\_VBD back\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP pressed\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, the\_DT rusty\_JJ hinges\_NNS creaked\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP slowly\_RB opened\_VBD .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD startlingly\_RB like\_IN the\_DT image\_NN conveyed\_VBN to\_TO me\_PRP in\_IN Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS diary\_NN of\_IN the\_DT opening\_NN of\_IN Miss\_NNP Westenra\_NNP 's\_POS tomb\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP fancy\_JJ that\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ idea\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO strike\_VB the\_DT others\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN with\_IN one\_CD accord\_NN they\_PRP shrank\_VBD back\_RB .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP was\_VBD the\_DT first\_JJ to\_TO move\_VB forward\_RB ,\_, and\_CC stepped\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT open\_JJ door\_NN .\_.

``\_`` In\_IN manus\_FW tuas\_FW ,\_, Domine\_NNP !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, crossing\_VBG himself\_PRP as\_IN he\_PRP passed\_VBD over\_IN the\_DT threshold\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP closed\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN behind\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, lest\_IN when\_WRB we\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB lit\_VBN our\_PRP$ lamps\_NNS we\_PRP should\_MD possibly\_RB attract\_VB attention\_NN from\_IN the\_DT road\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP carefully\_RB tried\_VBD the\_DT lock\_NN ,\_, lest\_IN we\_PRP might\_MD not\_RB be\_VB able\_JJ to\_TO open\_VB it\_PRP from\_IN within\_IN should\_MD we\_PRP be\_VB in\_IN a\_DT hurry\_NN making\_VBG our\_PRP$ exit\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB we\_PRP all\_DT lit\_VBD our\_PRP$ lamps\_NNS and\_CC proceeded\_VBD on\_IN our\_PRP$ search\_NN .\_.

The\_DT light\_NN from\_IN the\_DT tiny\_JJ lamps\_NNS fell\_VBD in\_IN all\_DT sorts\_NNS of\_IN odd\_JJ forms\_NNS ,\_, as\_IN the\_DT rays\_NNS crossed\_VBD each\_DT other\_JJ ,\_, or\_CC the\_DT opacity\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ bodies\_NNS threw\_VBD great\_JJ shadows\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB for\_IN my\_PRP$ life\_NN get\_VB away\_RB from\_IN the\_DT feeling\_NN that\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD some\_DT one\_NN else\_RB amongst\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP suppose\_VBP it\_PRP was\_VBD the\_DT recollection\_NN ,\_, so\_RB powerfully\_RB brought\_VBD home\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP by\_IN the\_DT grim\_JJ surroundings\_NNS ,\_, of\_IN that\_DT terrible\_JJ experience\_NN in\_IN Transylvania\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP think\_VBP the\_DT feeling\_NN was\_VBD common\_JJ to\_TO us\_PRP all\_DT ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP noticed\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT others\_NNS kept\_VBD looking\_VBG over\_IN their\_PRP$ shoulders\_NNS at\_IN every\_DT sound\_NN and\_CC every\_DT new\_JJ shadow\_NN ,\_, just\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP felt\_VBD myself\_PRP doing\_VBG .\_.

The\_DT whole\_JJ place\_NN was\_VBD thick\_JJ with\_IN dust\_NN .\_.

The\_DT floor\_NN was\_VBD seemingly\_RB inches\_NNS deep\_RB ,\_, except\_IN where\_WRB there\_EX were\_VBD recent\_JJ footsteps\_NNS ,\_, in\_IN which\_WDT on\_IN holding\_VBG down\_RP my\_PRP$ lamp\_NN I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB marks\_NNS of\_IN hobnails\_NNS where\_WRB the\_DT dust\_NN was\_VBD cracked\_VBN .\_.

The\_DT walls\_NNS were\_VBD fluffy\_JJ and\_CC heavy\_JJ with\_IN dust\_NN ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN the\_DT corners\_NNS were\_VBD masses\_NNS of\_IN spider\_NN 's\_POS webs\_NNS ,\_, whereon\_VBP the\_DT dust\_NN had\_VBD gathered\_VBN till\_IN they\_PRP looked\_VBD like\_IN old\_JJ tattered\_JJ rags\_NNS as\_IN the\_DT weight\_NN had\_VBD torn\_VBN them\_PRP partly\_RB down\_RB .\_.

On\_IN a\_DT table\_NN in\_IN the\_DT hall\_NN was\_VBD a\_DT great\_JJ bunch\_NN of\_IN keys\_NNS ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT time-yellowed\_JJ label\_NN on\_IN each\_DT .\_.

They\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN used\_VBN several\_JJ times\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN on\_IN the\_DT table\_NN were\_VBD several\_JJ similar\_JJ rents\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT blanket\_NN of\_IN dust\_NN ,\_, similar\_JJ to\_TO that\_DT exposed\_VBN when\_WRB the\_DT Professor\_NNP lifted\_VBD them\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP turned\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP know\_VBP this\_DT place\_NN ,\_, Jonathan\_NNP .\_.

You\_PRP have\_VBP copied\_VBN maps\_NNS of\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP know\_VBP it\_PRP at\_IN least\_JJS more\_JJR than\_IN we\_PRP do\_VBP .\_.

Which\_WDT is\_VBZ the\_DT way\_NN to\_TO the\_DT chapel\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP had\_VBD an\_DT idea\_NN of\_IN its\_PRP$ direction\_NN ,\_, though\_IN on\_IN my\_PRP$ former\_JJ visit\_NN I\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB been\_VBN able\_JJ to\_TO get\_VB admission\_NN to\_TO it\_PRP ;\_: so\_IN I\_PRP led\_VBD the\_DT way\_NN ,\_, and\_CC after\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ wrong\_JJ turnings\_NNS found\_VBD myself\_PRP opposite\_IN a\_DT low\_JJ ,\_, arched\_JJ oaken\_NN door\_NN ,\_, ribbed\_VBN with\_IN iron\_NN bands\_NNS .\_.

``\_`` This\_DT is\_VBZ the\_DT spot\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP as\_IN he\_PRP turned\_VBD his\_PRP$ lamp\_NN on\_IN a\_DT small\_JJ map\_NN of\_IN the\_DT house\_NN ,\_, copied\_VBN from\_IN the\_DT file\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ original\_JJ correspondence\_NN regarding\_VBG the\_DT purchase\_NN .\_.

With\_IN a\_DT little\_JJ trouble\_NN we\_PRP found\_VBD the\_DT key\_NN on\_IN the\_DT bunch\_NN and\_CC opened\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP were\_VBD prepared\_VBN for\_IN some\_DT unpleasantness\_NN ,\_, for\_IN as\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD opening\_VBG the\_DT door\_NN a\_DT faint\_JJ ,\_, malodorous\_JJ air\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO exhale\_VB through\_IN the\_DT gaps\_NNS ,\_, but\_CC none\_NN of\_IN us\_PRP ever\_RB expected\_VBD such\_PDT an\_DT odour\_NN as\_IN we\_PRP encountered\_VBD .\_.

None\_NN of\_IN the\_DT others\_NNS had\_VBD met\_VBN the\_DT Count\_NN at\_IN all\_DT at\_IN close\_JJ quarters\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD seen\_VBN him\_PRP he\_PRP was\_VBD either\_CC in\_IN the\_DT fasting\_JJ stage\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ existence\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ rooms\_NNS or\_CC ,\_, when\_WRB he\_PRP was\_VBD gloated\_VBN with\_IN fresh\_JJ blood\_NN ,\_, in\_IN a\_DT ruined\_VBN building\_NN open\_JJ to\_TO the\_DT air\_NN ;\_: but\_CC here\_RB the\_DT place\_NN was\_VBD small\_JJ and\_CC close\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT long\_JJ disuse\_NN had\_VBD made\_VBN the\_DT air\_NN stagnant\_JJ and\_CC foul\_JJ .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD an\_DT earthy\_JJ smell\_NN ,\_, as\_IN of\_IN some\_DT dry\_JJ miasma\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT came\_VBD through\_IN the\_DT fouler\_JJR air\_NN .\_.

But\_CC as\_IN to\_TO the\_DT odour\_NN itself\_PRP ,\_, how\_WRB shall\_MD I\_PRP describe\_VB it\_PRP ?\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB alone\_RB that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD composed\_VBN of\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT ills\_NNS of\_IN mortality\_NN and\_CC with\_IN the\_DT pungent\_JJ ,\_, acrid\_JJ smell\_NN of\_IN blood\_NN ,\_, but\_CC it\_PRP seemed\_VBD as\_IN though\_IN corruption\_NN had\_VBD become\_VBN itself\_PRP corrupt\_JJ .\_.

Faugh\_NN !\_.

it\_PRP sickens\_VBZ me\_PRP to\_TO think\_VB of\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

Every\_DT breath\_NN exhaled\_VBN by\_IN that\_DT monster\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO have\_VB clung\_VBN to\_TO the\_DT place\_NN and\_CC intensified\_VBD its\_PRP$ loathsomeness\_NN .\_.

Under\_IN ordinary\_JJ circumstances\_NNS such\_PDT a\_DT stench\_NN would\_MD have\_VB brought\_VBN our\_PRP$ enterprise\_NN to\_TO an\_DT end\_NN ;\_: but\_CC this\_DT was\_VBD no\_DT ordinary\_JJ case\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT high\_JJ and\_CC terrible\_JJ purpose\_NN in\_IN which\_WDT we\_PRP were\_VBD involved\_VBN gave\_VBD us\_PRP a\_DT strength\_NN which\_WDT rose\_VBD above\_IN merely\_RB physical\_JJ considerations\_NNS .\_.

After\_IN the\_DT involuntary\_JJ shrinking\_NN consequent\_JJ on\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ nauseous\_JJ whiff\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP one\_CD and\_CC all\_DT set\_NN about\_IN our\_PRP$ work\_NN as\_IN though\_IN that\_DT loathsome\_JJ place\_NN were\_VBD a\_DT garden\_NN of\_IN roses\_NNS .\_.

We\_PRP made\_VBD an\_DT accurate\_JJ examination\_NN of\_IN the\_DT place\_NN ,\_, the\_DT Professor\_NNP saying\_VBG as\_IN we\_PRP began\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` The\_DT first\_JJ thing\_NN is\_VBZ to\_TO see\_VB how\_WRB many\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT boxes\_NNS are\_VBP left\_VBN ;\_: we\_PRP must\_MD then\_RB examine\_VB every\_DT hole\_NN and\_CC corner\_NN and\_CC cranny\_NN and\_CC see\_VB if\_IN we\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB get\_VB some\_DT clue\_NN as\_IN to\_TO what\_WP has\_VBZ become\_VBN of\_IN the\_DT rest\_NN .\_. ''\_''

A\_DT glance\_NN was\_VBD sufficient\_JJ to\_TO show\_VB how\_WRB many\_JJ remained\_VBD ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT great\_JJ earth\_NN chests\_NNS were\_VBD bulky\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT mistaking\_VBG them\_PRP .\_.

There\_EX were\_VBD only\_RB twenty-nine\_JJ left\_NN out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT fifty\_CD !\_.

Once\_RB I\_PRP got\_VBD a\_DT fright\_NN ,\_, for\_IN ,\_, seeing\_VBG Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP suddenly\_RB turn\_VB and\_CC look\_VB out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT vaulted\_VBN door\_NN into\_IN the\_DT dark\_JJ passage\_NN beyond\_IN ,\_, I\_PRP looked\_VBD too\_RB ,\_, and\_CC for\_IN an\_DT instant\_NN my\_PRP$ heart\_NN stood\_VBD still\_RB .\_.

Somewhere\_RB ,\_, looking\_VBG out\_RP from\_IN the\_DT shadow\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO see\_VB the\_DT high\_JJ lights\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS evil\_JJ face\_NN ,\_, the\_DT ridge\_NN of\_IN the\_DT nose\_NN ,\_, the\_DT red\_JJ eyes\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT red\_JJ lips\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT awful\_JJ pallor\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD only\_RB for\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN ,\_, for\_IN ,\_, as\_IN Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` I\_PRP thought\_VBD I\_PRP saw\_VBD a\_DT face\_NN ,\_, but\_CC it\_PRP was\_VBD only\_RB the\_DT shadows\_NNS ,\_, ''\_'' and\_CC resumed\_VBD his\_PRP$ inquiry\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP turned\_VBD my\_PRP$ lamp\_NN in\_IN the\_DT direction\_NN ,\_, and\_CC stepped\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT passage\_NN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT sign\_NN of\_IN any\_DT one\_CD ;\_: and\_CC as\_IN there\_EX were\_VBD no\_DT corners\_NNS ,\_, no\_DT doors\_NNS ,\_, no\_DT aperture\_NN of\_IN any\_DT kind\_NN ,\_, but\_CC only\_RB the\_DT solid\_JJ walls\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT passage\_NN ,\_, there\_EX could\_MD be\_VB no\_DT hiding-place\_NN even\_RB for\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP took\_VBD it\_PRP that\_IN fear\_NN had\_VBD helped\_VBN imagination\_NN ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD nothing\_NN .\_.

A\_DT few\_JJ minutes\_NNS later\_RB I\_PRP saw\_VBD Morris\_NNP step\_NN suddenly\_RB back\_RB from\_IN a\_DT corner\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT he\_PRP was\_VBD examining\_VBG .\_.

We\_PRP all\_DT followed\_VBD his\_PRP$ movements\_NNS with\_IN our\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN undoubtedly\_RB some\_DT nervousness\_NN was\_VBD growing\_VBG on\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP saw\_VBD a\_DT whole\_JJ mass\_NN of\_IN phosphorescence\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT twinkled\_VBD like\_IN stars\_NNS .\_.

We\_PRP all\_RB instinctively\_RB drew\_VBD back\_RB .\_.

The\_DT whole\_JJ place\_NN was\_VBD becoming\_VBG alive\_JJ with\_IN rats\_NNS .\_.

For\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN or\_CC two\_CD we\_PRP stood\_VBD appalled\_VBN ,\_, all\_DT save\_VBP Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP was\_VBD seemingly\_RB prepared\_VBN for\_IN such\_JJ an\_DT emergency\_NN .\_.

Rushing\_VBG over\_RP to\_TO the\_DT great\_JJ iron-bound\_JJ oaken\_NN door\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP had\_VBD described\_VBN from\_IN the\_DT outside\_NN ,\_, and\_CC which\_WDT I\_PRP had\_VBD seen\_VBN myself\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP turned\_VBD the\_DT key\_NN in\_IN the\_DT lock\_NN ,\_, drew\_VBD the\_DT huge\_JJ bolts\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC swung\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN open\_JJ .\_.

Then\_RB ,\_, taking\_VBG his\_PRP$ little\_JJ silver\_NN whistle\_VBP from\_IN his\_PRP$ pocket\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP blew\_VBD a\_DT low\_JJ ,\_, shrill\_JJ call\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD answered\_VBN from\_IN behind\_IN Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS house\_NN by\_IN the\_DT yelping\_NN of\_IN dogs\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC after\_IN about\_IN a\_DT minute\_JJ three\_CD terriers\_NNS came\_VBD dashing\_VBG round\_NN the\_DT corner\_NN of\_IN the\_DT house\_NN .\_.

Unconsciously\_RB we\_PRP had\_VBD all\_DT moved\_VBN towards\_IN the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN we\_PRP moved\_VBD I\_PRP noticed\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT dust\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN much\_RB disturbed\_VBN :\_: the\_DT boxes\_NNS which\_WDT had\_VBD been\_VBN taken\_VBN out\_RP had\_VBD been\_VBN brought\_VBN this\_DT way\_NN .\_.

But\_CC even\_RB in\_IN the\_DT minute\_NN that\_WDT had\_VBD elapsed\_VBN the\_DT number\_NN of\_IN the\_DT rats\_NNS had\_VBD vastly\_RB increased\_VBN .\_.

They\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO swarm\_VB over\_IN the\_DT place\_NN all\_DT at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, till\_IN the\_DT lamplight\_NN ,\_, shining\_VBG on\_IN their\_PRP$ moving\_VBG dark\_JJ bodies\_NNS and\_CC glittering\_NN ,\_, baleful\_JJ eyes\_NNS ,\_, made\_VBD the\_DT place\_NN look\_NN like\_IN a\_DT bank\_NN of\_IN earth\_NN set\_VBN with\_IN fireflies\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT dogs\_NNS dashed\_VBD on\_IN ,\_, but\_CC at\_IN the\_DT threshold\_NN suddenly\_RB stopped\_VBD and\_CC snarled\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB ,\_, simultaneously\_RB lifting\_VBG their\_PRP$ noses\_NNS ,\_, began\_VBD to\_TO howl\_NN in\_IN most\_JJS lugubrious\_JJ fashion\_NN .\_.

The\_DT rats\_NNS were\_VBD multiplying\_VBG in\_IN thousands\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP moved\_VBD out\_RP .\_.

Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP lifted\_VBD one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT dogs\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC carrying\_VBG him\_PRP in\_IN ,\_, placed\_VBD him\_PRP on\_IN the\_DT floor\_NN .\_.

The\_DT instant\_NN his\_PRP$ feet\_NNS touched\_VBD the\_DT ground\_NN he\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO recover\_VB his\_PRP$ courage\_NN ,\_, and\_CC rushed\_VBD at\_IN his\_PRP$ natural\_JJ enemies\_NNS .\_.

They\_PRP fled\_VBD before\_IN him\_PRP so\_RB fast\_RB that\_IN before\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD shaken\_VBN the\_DT life\_NN out\_IN of\_IN a\_DT score\_NN ,\_, the\_DT other\_JJ dogs\_NNS ,\_, who\_WP had\_VBD by\_IN now\_RB been\_VBN lifted\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ manner\_NN ,\_, had\_VBD but\_CC small\_JJ prey\_NN ere\_VBP the\_DT whole\_JJ mass\_NN had\_VBD vanished\_VBN .\_.

With\_IN their\_PRP$ going\_VBG it\_PRP seemed\_VBD as\_IN if\_IN some\_DT evil\_JJ presence\_NN had\_VBD departed\_VBN ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT dogs\_NNS frisked\_VBN about\_IN and\_CC barked\_VBD merrily\_RB as\_IN they\_PRP made\_VBD sudden\_JJ darts\_NN at\_IN their\_PRP$ prostrate\_JJ foes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC turned\_VBD them\_PRP over\_IN and\_CC over\_IN and\_CC tossed\_VBD them\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT air\_NN with\_IN vicious\_JJ shakes\_VBZ .\_.

We\_PRP all\_DT seemed\_VBD to\_TO find\_VB our\_PRP$ spirits\_NNS rise\_VBP .\_.

Whether\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD the\_DT purifying\_NN of\_IN the\_DT deadly\_JJ atmosphere\_NN by\_IN the\_DT opening\_NN of\_IN the\_DT chapel\_NN door\_NN ,\_, or\_CC the\_DT relief\_NN which\_WDT we\_PRP experienced\_VBD by\_IN finding\_VBG ourselves\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT open\_NN I\_PRP know\_VBP not\_RB ;\_: but\_CC most\_RBS certainly\_RB the\_DT shadow\_NN of\_IN dread\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO slip\_VB from\_IN us\_PRP like\_IN a\_DT robe\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT occasion\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ coming\_VBG lost\_VBN something\_NN of\_IN its\_PRP$ grim\_JJ significance\_NN ,\_, though\_IN we\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB slacken\_VB a\_DT whit\_NN in\_IN our\_PRP$ resolution\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP closed\_VBD the\_DT outer\_JJ door\_NN and\_CC barred\_VBN and\_CC locked\_VBN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC bringing\_VBG the\_DT dogs\_NNS with\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, began\_VBD our\_PRP$ search\_NN of\_IN the\_DT house\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP found\_VBD nothing\_NN throughout\_IN except\_IN dust\_NN in\_IN extraordinary\_JJ proportions\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC all\_DT untouched\_JJ save\_VB for\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ footsteps\_NNS when\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD made\_VBN my\_PRP$ first\_JJ visit\_NN .\_.

Never\_RB once\_RB did\_VBD the\_DT dogs\_NNS exhibit\_VBP any\_DT symptom\_NN of\_IN uneasiness\_NN ,\_, and\_CC even\_RB when\_WRB we\_PRP returned\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT chapel\_NN they\_PRP frisked\_VBD about\_IN as\_IN though\_IN they\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN rabbit-hunting\_JJ in\_IN a\_DT summer\_NN wood\_NN .\_.

The\_DT morning\_NN was\_VBD quickening\_VBG in\_IN the\_DT east\_JJ when\_WRB we\_PRP emerged\_VBD from\_IN the\_DT front\_NN .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP had\_VBD taken\_VBN the\_DT key\_NN of\_IN the\_DT hall-door\_NN from\_IN the\_DT bunch\_NN ,\_, and\_CC locked\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN in\_IN orthodox\_JJ fashion\_NN ,\_, putting\_VBG the\_DT key\_NN into\_IN his\_PRP$ pocket\_NN when\_WRB he\_PRP had\_VBD done\_VBN .\_.

``\_`` So\_RB far\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` our\_PRP$ night\_NN has\_VBZ been\_VBN eminently\_RB successful\_JJ .\_.

No\_DT harm\_NN has\_VBZ come\_VBN to\_TO us\_PRP such\_JJ as\_IN I\_PRP feared\_VBD might\_MD be\_VB and\_CC yet\_RB we\_PRP have\_VBP ascertained\_VBN how\_WRB many\_JJ boxes\_NNS are\_VBP missing\_VBG .\_.

More\_JJR than\_IN all\_DT do\_VBP I\_PRP rejoice\_VB that\_IN this\_DT ,\_, our\_PRP$ first\_JJ --\_: and\_CC perhaps\_RB our\_PRP$ most\_RBS difficult\_JJ and\_CC dangerous\_JJ --\_: step\_NN has\_VBZ been\_VBN accomplished\_VBN without\_IN the\_DT bringing\_VBG thereinto\_NN our\_PRP$ most\_RBS sweet\_JJ Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP or\_CC troubling\_VBG her\_PRP$ waking\_NN or\_CC sleeping\_VBG thoughts\_NNS with\_IN sights\_NNS and\_CC sounds\_NNS and\_CC smells\_VBZ of\_IN horror\_NN which\_WDT she\_PRP might\_MD never\_RB forget\_VB .\_.

One\_CD lesson\_NN ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP have\_VBP learned\_VBN ,\_, if\_IN it\_PRP be\_VB allowable\_JJ to\_TO argue\_VB a\_DT particulari\_NN :\_: that\_IN the\_DT brute\_JJ beasts\_NNS which\_WDT are\_VBP to\_TO the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS command\_NN are\_VBP yet\_RB themselves\_PRP not\_RB amenable\_JJ to\_TO his\_PRP$ spiritual\_JJ power\_NN ;\_: for\_IN look\_NN ,\_, these\_DT rats\_NNS that\_WDT would\_MD come\_VB to\_TO his\_PRP$ call\_NN ,\_, just\_RB as\_IN from\_IN his\_PRP$ castle\_NN top\_NN he\_PRP summon\_VBP the\_DT wolves\_NNS to\_TO your\_PRP$ going\_NN and\_CC to\_TO that\_DT poor\_JJ mother\_NN 's\_POS cry\_NN ,\_, though\_IN they\_PRP come\_VBP to\_TO him\_PRP ,\_, they\_PRP run\_VBP pell-mell\_JJ from\_IN the\_DT so\_RB little\_JJ dogs\_NNS of\_IN my\_PRP$ friend\_NN Arthur\_NNP .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP other\_JJ matters\_NNS before\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, other\_JJ dangers\_NNS ,\_, other\_JJ fears\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC that\_IN monster\_NN --\_: he\_PRP has\_VBZ not\_RB used\_VBN his\_PRP$ power\_NN over\_IN the\_DT brute\_JJ world\_NN for\_IN the\_DT only\_JJ or\_CC the\_DT last\_JJ time\_NN to-night\_NN .\_.

So\_RB be\_VB it\_PRP that\_IN he\_PRP has\_VBZ gone\_VBN elsewhere\_RB .\_.

Good\_JJ !\_.

It\_PRP has\_VBZ given\_VBN us\_PRP opportunity\_NN to\_TO cry\_VB `\_`` check\_NN '\_'' in\_IN some\_DT ways\_NNS in\_IN this\_DT chess\_NN game\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT we\_PRP play\_VBP for\_IN the\_DT stake\_NN of\_IN human\_JJ souls\_NNS .\_.

And\_CC now\_RB let\_VB us\_PRP go\_VB home\_NN .\_.

The\_DT dawn\_NN is\_VBZ close\_JJ at\_IN hand\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP have\_VBP reason\_NN to\_TO be\_VB content\_JJ with\_IN our\_PRP$ first\_JJ night\_NN 's\_POS work\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB ordained\_VBN that\_IN we\_PRP have\_VBP many\_JJ nights\_NNS and\_CC days\_NNS to\_TO follow\_VB ,\_, if\_IN full\_JJ of\_IN peril\_NN ;\_: but\_CC we\_PRP must\_MD go\_VB on\_IN ,\_, and\_CC from\_IN no\_DT danger\_NN shall\_MD we\_PRP shrink\_VB .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT house\_NN was\_VBD silent\_JJ when\_WRB we\_PRP got\_VBD back\_RB ,\_, save\_VB for\_IN some\_DT poor\_JJ creature\_NN who\_WP was\_VBD screaming\_VBG away\_RB in\_IN one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT distant\_JJ wards\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT low\_JJ ,\_, moaning\_VBG sound\_NN from\_IN Renfield\_NNP 's\_POS room\_NN .\_.

The\_DT poor\_JJ wretch\_NN was\_VBD doubtless\_JJ torturing\_VBG himself\_PRP ,\_, after\_IN the\_DT manner\_NN of\_IN the\_DT insane\_JJ ,\_, with\_IN needless\_JJ thoughts\_NNS of\_IN pain\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP came\_VBD tiptoe\_VB into\_IN our\_PRP$ own\_JJ room\_NN ,\_, and\_CC found\_VBD Mina\_NNP asleep\_RB ,\_, breathing\_VBG so\_RB softly\_RB that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO put\_VB my\_PRP$ ear\_NN down\_RP to\_TO hear\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

She\_PRP looks\_VBZ paler\_JJR than\_IN usual\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP hope\_VBP the\_DT meeting\_NN to-night\_NN has\_VBZ not\_RB upset\_VBN her\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP truly\_RB thankful\_JJ that\_IN she\_PRP is\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB left\_VBN out\_IN of\_IN our\_PRP$ future\_JJ work\_NN ,\_, and\_CC even\_RB of\_IN our\_PRP$ deliberations\_NNS .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ too\_RB great\_JJ a\_DT strain\_NN for\_IN a\_DT woman\_NN to\_TO bear\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB think\_VB so\_RB at\_IN first\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP know\_VBP better\_RB now\_RB .\_.

Therefore\_RB I\_PRP am\_VBP glad\_JJ that\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ settled\_VBN .\_.

There\_EX may\_MD be\_VB things\_NNS which\_WDT would\_MD frighten\_VB her\_PRP to\_TO hear\_VB ;\_: and\_CC yet\_RB to\_TO conceal\_VB them\_PRP from\_IN her\_PRP might\_MD be\_VB worse\_JJR than\_IN to\_TO tell\_VB her\_PRP if\_IN once\_RB she\_PRP suspected\_VBD that\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD any\_DT concealment\_NN .\_.

Henceforth\_VB our\_PRP$ work\_NN is\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB a\_DT sealed\_JJ book\_NN to\_TO her\_PRP ,\_, till\_IN at\_IN least\_JJS such\_JJ time\_NN as\_IN we\_PRP can\_MD tell\_VB her\_PRP that\_IN all\_DT is\_VBZ finished\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT earth\_NN free\_JJ from\_IN a\_DT monster\_NN of\_IN the\_DT nether\_JJ world\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP daresay\_VBP it\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB difficult\_JJ to\_TO begin\_VB to\_TO keep\_VB silence\_NN after\_IN such\_JJ confidence\_NN as\_IN ours\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB resolute\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC to-morrow\_NN I\_PRP shall\_MD keep\_VB dark\_NN over\_IN to-night\_NN 's\_POS doings\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC shall\_MD refuse\_VB to\_TO speak\_VB of\_IN anything\_NN that\_WDT has\_VBZ happened\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP rest\_VBP on\_IN the\_DT sofa\_NN ,\_, so\_RB as\_RB not\_RB to\_TO disturb\_VB her\_PRP .\_.

1\_CD October\_NNP ,\_, later\_RB .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP suppose\_VBP it\_PRP was\_VBD natural\_JJ that\_IN we\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB all\_DT overslept\_VBD ourselves\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT day\_NN was\_VBD a\_DT busy\_JJ one\_CD ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT night\_NN had\_VBD no\_DT rest\_NN at\_IN all\_DT .\_.

Even\_RB Mina\_NNP must\_MD have\_VB felt\_VBD its\_PRP$ exhaustion\_NN ,\_, for\_IN though\_IN I\_PRP slept\_VBD till\_IN the\_DT sun\_NN was\_VBD high\_JJ ,\_, I\_PRP was\_VBD awake\_RB before\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC had\_VBD to\_TO call\_VB two\_CD or\_CC three\_CD times\_NNS before\_IN she\_PRP awoke\_VBD .\_.

Indeed\_RB ,\_, she\_PRP was\_VBD so\_RB sound\_JJ asleep\_RB that\_IN for\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ seconds\_NNS she\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB recognize\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC looked\_VBD at\_IN me\_PRP with\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN blank\_JJ terror\_NN ,\_, as\_IN one\_CD looks\_NNS who\_WP has\_VBZ been\_VBN waked\_VBN out\_IN of\_IN a\_DT bad\_JJ dream\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP complained\_VBD a\_DT little\_JJ of\_IN being\_VBG tired\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP let\_VBD her\_PRP$ rest\_NN till\_IN later\_RB in\_IN the\_DT day\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP now\_RB know\_VBP of\_IN twenty-one\_CD boxes\_NNS having\_VBG been\_VBN removed\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC if\_IN it\_PRP be\_VB that\_IN several\_JJ were\_VBD taken\_VBN in\_IN any\_DT of\_IN these\_DT removals\_NNS we\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB able\_JJ to\_TO trace\_VB them\_PRP all\_DT .\_.

Such\_JJ will\_NN ,\_, of\_IN course\_NN ,\_, immensely\_RB simplify\_VB our\_PRP$ labour\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT sooner\_RBR the\_DT matter\_NN is\_VBZ attended\_VBN to\_TO the\_DT better\_JJR .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD look\_VB up\_RP Thomas\_NNP Snelling\_NNP to-day\_NN .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

1\_CD October\_NNP .\_.

--\_: It\_PRP was\_VBD towards\_IN noon\_NN when\_WRB I\_PRP was\_VBD awakened\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP walking\_VBG into\_IN my\_PRP$ room\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD more\_RBR jolly\_JJ and\_CC cheerful\_JJ than\_IN usual\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ quite\_RB evident\_JJ that\_IN last\_JJ night\_NN 's\_POS work\_NN has\_VBZ helped\_VBN to\_TO take\_VB some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT brooding\_JJ weight\_NN off\_IN his\_PRP$ mind\_NN .\_.

After\_IN going\_VBG over\_IN the\_DT adventure\_NN of\_IN the\_DT night\_NN he\_PRP suddenly\_RB said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Your\_PRP$ patient\_NN interests\_NNS me\_PRP much\_JJ .\_.

May\_MD it\_PRP be\_VB that\_IN with\_IN you\_PRP I\_PRP visit\_VBP him\_PRP this\_DT morning\_NN ?\_.

Or\_CC if\_IN that\_IN you\_PRP are\_VBP too\_RB occupy\_VB ,\_, I\_PRP can\_MD go\_VB alone\_RB if\_IN it\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT new\_JJ experience\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP to\_TO find\_VB a\_DT lunatic\_JJ who\_WP talk\_VBP philosophy\_NN ,\_, and\_CC reason\_NN so\_RB sound\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP had\_VBD some\_DT work\_NN to\_TO do\_VB which\_WDT pressed\_VBD ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP told\_VBD him\_PRP that\_IN if\_IN he\_PRP would\_MD go\_VB alone\_RB I\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB glad\_JJ ,\_, as\_IN then\_RB I\_PRP should\_MD not\_RB have\_VB to\_TO keep\_VB him\_PRP waiting\_VBG ;\_: so\_IN I\_PRP called\_VBD an\_DT attendant\_NN and\_CC gave\_VBD him\_PRP the\_DT necessary\_JJ instructions\_NNS .\_.

Before\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP left\_VBD the\_DT room\_NN I\_PRP cautioned\_VBD him\_PRP against\_IN getting\_VBG any\_DT false\_JJ impression\_NN from\_IN my\_PRP$ patient\_NN .\_.

``\_`` But\_CC ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP answered\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` I\_PRP want\_VBP him\_PRP to\_TO talk\_VB of\_IN himself\_PRP and\_CC of\_IN his\_PRP$ delusion\_NN as\_IN to\_TO consuming\_VBG live\_JJ things\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP see\_VBP in\_IN your\_PRP$ diary\_NN of\_IN yesterday\_NN ,\_, that\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD once\_RB had\_VBN such\_JJ a\_DT belief\_NN .\_.

Why\_WRB do\_VBP you\_PRP smile\_VB ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Excuse\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` but\_CC the\_DT answer\_NN is\_VBZ here\_RB .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP laid\_VBD my\_PRP$ hand\_NN on\_IN the\_DT type-written\_JJ matter\_NN .\_.

``\_`` When\_WRB our\_PRP$ sane\_NN and\_CC learned\_VBD lunatic\_JJ made\_VBD that\_DT very\_JJ statement\_NN of\_IN how\_WRB he\_PRP used\_VBD to\_TO consume\_VB life\_NN ,\_, his\_PRP$ mouth\_NN was\_VBD actually\_RB nauseous\_JJ with\_IN the\_DT flies\_NNS and\_CC spiders\_NNS which\_WDT he\_PRP had\_VBD eaten\_VBN just\_RB before\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP entered\_VBD the\_DT room\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP smiled\_VBD in\_IN turn\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Good\_JJ !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Your\_PRP$ memory\_NN is\_VBZ true\_JJ ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB remembered\_VBN .\_.

And\_CC yet\_RB it\_PRP is\_VBZ this\_DT very\_JJ obliquity\_NN of\_IN thought\_NN and\_CC memory\_NN which\_WDT makes\_VBZ mental\_JJ disease\_NN such\_PDT a\_DT fascinating\_JJ study\_NN .\_.

Perhaps\_RB I\_PRP may\_MD gain\_VB more\_JJR knowledge\_NN out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT folly\_NN of\_IN this\_DT madman\_NN than\_IN I\_PRP shall\_MD from\_IN the\_DT teaching\_NN of\_IN the\_DT most\_RBS wise\_JJ .\_.

Who\_WP knows\_VBZ ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP went\_VBD on\_RP with\_IN my\_PRP$ work\_NN ,\_, and\_CC before\_RB long\_RB was\_VBD through\_IN that\_DT in\_IN hand\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP seemed\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT time\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN very\_RB short\_JJ indeed\_RB ,\_, but\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP back\_RB in\_IN the\_DT study\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Do\_VBP I\_PRP interrupt\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP asked\_VBD politely\_RB as\_IN he\_PRP stood\_VBD at\_IN the\_DT door\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Not\_RB at\_IN all\_DT ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP answered\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Come\_VB in\_IN .\_.

My\_PRP$ work\_NN is\_VBZ finished\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP free\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP can\_MD go\_VB with\_IN you\_PRP now\_RB ,\_, if\_IN you\_PRP like\_VBP .\_.

``\_`` It\_PRP is\_VBZ needless\_JJ ;\_: I\_PRP have\_VBP seen\_VBN him\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Well\_NNP ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP fear\_VBP that\_IN he\_PRP does\_VBZ not\_RB appraise\_VB me\_PRP at\_IN much\_RB .\_.

Our\_PRP$ interview\_NN was\_VBD short\_JJ .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP entered\_VBD his\_PRP$ room\_NN he\_PRP was\_VBD sitting\_VBG on\_IN a\_DT stool\_NN in\_IN the\_DT centre\_NN ,\_, with\_IN his\_PRP$ elbows\_NNS on\_IN his\_PRP$ knees\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ face\_NN was\_VBD the\_DT picture\_NN of\_IN sullen\_JJ discontent\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP spoke\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP as\_RB cheerfully\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT measure\_NN of\_IN respect\_NN as\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD assume\_VB .\_.

He\_PRP made\_VBD no\_DT reply\_NN whatever\_WDT .\_.

``\_`` Do\_VBP n't\_RB you\_PRP know\_VB me\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP asked\_VBD .\_.

His\_PRP$ answer\_NN was\_VBD not\_RB reassuring\_JJ :\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP know\_VBP you\_PRP well\_RB enough\_RB ;\_: you\_PRP are\_VBP the\_DT old\_JJ fool\_NN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP wish\_VBP you\_PRP would\_MD take\_VB yourself\_PRP and\_CC your\_PRP$ idiotic\_JJ brain\_NN theories\_NNS somewhere\_RB else\_RB .\_.

Damn\_VB all\_DT thick-headed\_JJ Dutchmen\_NNP !\_. ''\_''

Not\_RB a\_DT word\_NN more\_RBR would\_MD he\_PRP say\_VB ,\_, but\_CC sat\_VBD in\_IN his\_PRP$ implacable\_JJ sullenness\_NN as\_IN indifferent\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP as\_IN though\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB been\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT room\_NN at\_IN all\_DT .\_.

Thus\_RB departed\_VBN for\_IN this\_DT time\_NN my\_PRP$ chance\_NN of\_IN much\_JJ learning\_NN from\_IN this\_DT so\_RB clever\_JJ lunatic\_JJ ;\_: so\_IN I\_PRP shall\_MD go\_VB ,\_, if\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD ,\_, and\_CC cheer\_VB myself\_PRP with\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ happy\_JJ words\_NNS with\_IN that\_DT sweet\_JJ soul\_NN Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP .\_.

Friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, it\_PRP does\_VBZ rejoice\_VB me\_PRP unspeakable\_JJ that\_IN she\_PRP is\_VBZ no\_DT more\_JJR to\_TO be\_VB pained\_JJ ,\_, no\_DT more\_JJR to\_TO be\_VB worried\_VBN with\_IN our\_PRP$ terrible\_JJ things\_NNS .\_.

Though\_IN we\_PRP shall\_MD much\_RB miss\_VB her\_PRP$ help\_NN ,\_, it\_PRP is\_VBZ better\_RB so\_RB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP agree\_VBP with\_IN you\_PRP with\_IN all\_DT my\_PRP$ heart\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP answered\_VBD earnestly\_RB ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB want\_VB him\_PRP to\_TO weaken\_VB in\_IN this\_DT matter\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP is\_VBZ better\_JJR out\_IN of\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

Things\_NNS are\_VBP quite\_RB bad\_JJ enough\_RB for\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, all\_DT men\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT world\_NN ,\_, and\_CC who\_WP have\_VBP been\_VBN in\_IN many\_JJ tight\_JJ places\_NNS in\_IN our\_PRP$ time\_NN ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ no\_DT place\_NN for\_IN a\_DT woman\_NN ,\_, and\_CC if\_IN she\_PRP had\_VBD remained\_VBN in\_IN touch\_NN with\_IN the\_DT affair\_NN ,\_, it\_PRP would\_MD in\_IN time\_NN infallibly\_RB have\_VBP wrecked\_VBN her\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

So\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP has\_VBZ gone\_VBN to\_TO confer\_VB with\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP and\_CC Harker\_NNP ;\_: Quincey\_NNP and\_CC Art\_NNP are\_VBP all\_DT out\_RB following\_VBG up\_RP the\_DT clues\_NNS as\_IN to\_TO the\_DT earth-boxes\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD finish\_VB my\_PRP$ round\_NN of\_IN work\_NN and\_CC we\_PRP shall\_MD meet\_VB to-night\_JJ .\_.

Mina\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP .\_.

1\_CD October\_NNP .\_.

--\_: It\_PRP is\_VBZ strange\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP to\_TO be\_VB kept\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT dark\_NN as\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP to-day\_JJ ;\_: after\_IN Jonathan\_NNP 's\_POS full\_JJ confidence\_NN for\_IN so\_RB many\_JJ years\_NNS ,\_, to\_TO see\_VB him\_PRP manifestly\_RB avoid\_VBP certain\_JJ matters\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC those\_DT the\_DT most\_RBS vital\_JJ of\_IN all\_DT .\_.

This\_DT morning\_NN I\_PRP slept\_VBD late\_RB after\_IN the\_DT fatigues\_NNS of\_IN yesterday\_NN ,\_, and\_CC though\_IN Jonathan\_NNP was\_VBD late\_RB too\_RB ,\_, he\_PRP was\_VBD the\_DT earlier\_JJR .\_.

He\_PRP spoke\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP before\_IN he\_PRP went\_VBD out\_RP ,\_, never\_RB more\_RBR sweetly\_RB or\_CC tenderly\_RB ,\_, but\_CC he\_PRP never\_RB mentioned\_VBD a\_DT word\_NN of\_IN what\_WP had\_VBD happened\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT visit\_NN to\_TO the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS house\_NN .\_.

And\_CC yet\_RB he\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB known\_VBN how\_WRB terribly\_RB anxious\_JJ I\_PRP was\_VBD .\_.

Poor\_NNP dear\_RB fellow\_JJ !\_.

I\_PRP suppose\_VBP it\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB distressed\_JJ him\_PRP even\_RB more\_RBR than\_IN it\_PRP did\_VBD me\_PRP .\_.

They\_PRP all\_DT agreed\_VBD that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD best\_JJS that\_IN I\_PRP should\_MD not\_RB be\_VB drawn\_VBN further\_RBR into\_IN this\_DT awful\_JJ work\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP acquiesced\_VBD .\_.

But\_CC to\_TO think\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP keeps\_VBZ anything\_NN from\_IN me\_PRP !\_.

And\_CC now\_RB I\_PRP am\_VBP crying\_VBG like\_IN a\_DT silly\_JJ fool\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB I\_PRP know\_VBP it\_PRP comes\_VBZ from\_IN my\_PRP$ husband\_NN 's\_POS great\_JJ love\_NN and\_CC from\_IN the\_DT good\_JJ ,\_, good\_JJ wishes\_NNS of\_IN those\_DT other\_JJ strong\_JJ men\_NNS .\_.

That\_DT has\_VBZ done\_VBN me\_PRP good\_JJ .\_.

Well\_UH ,\_, some\_DT day\_NN Jonathan\_NNP will\_MD tell\_VB me\_PRP all\_DT ;\_: and\_CC lest\_IN it\_PRP should\_MD ever\_RB be\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP should\_MD think\_VB for\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP kept\_VBD anything\_NN from\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP still\_RB keep\_VB my\_PRP$ journal\_NN as\_IN usual\_JJ .\_.

Then\_RB if\_IN he\_PRP has\_VBZ feared\_VBN of\_IN my\_PRP$ trust\_NN I\_PRP shall\_MD show\_VB it\_PRP to\_TO him\_PRP ,\_, with\_IN every\_DT thought\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ heart\_NN put\_VBD down\_RP for\_IN his\_PRP$ dear\_RB eyes\_VBZ to\_TO read\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP feel\_VBP strangely\_RB sad\_JJ and\_CC low-spirited\_JJ to-day\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP suppose\_VBP it\_PRP is\_VBZ the\_DT reaction\_NN from\_IN the\_DT terrible\_JJ excitement\_NN .\_.

Last\_JJ night\_NN I\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO bed\_NN when\_WRB the\_DT men\_NNS had\_VBD gone\_VBN ,\_, simply\_RB because\_IN they\_PRP told\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO .\_.

I\_PRP did\_VBD n't\_RB feel\_VB sleepy\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP did\_VBD feel\_VB full\_JJ of\_IN devouring\_VBG anxiety\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP kept\_VBD thinking\_VBG over\_IN everything\_NN that\_WDT has\_VBZ been\_VBN ever\_RB since\_IN Jonathan\_NNP came\_VBD to\_TO see\_VB me\_PRP in\_IN London\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP all\_DT seems\_VBZ like\_IN a\_DT horrible\_JJ tragedy\_NN ,\_, with\_IN fate\_NN pressing\_VBG on\_IN relentlessly\_RB to\_TO some\_DT destined\_VBN end\_NN .\_.

Everything\_NN that\_IN one\_CD does\_VBZ seems\_VBZ ,\_, no\_DT matter\_NN how\_WRB right\_JJ it\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB ,\_, to\_TO bring\_VB on\_IN the\_DT very\_JJ thing\_NN which\_WDT is\_VBZ most\_JJS to\_TO be\_VB deplored\_VBN .\_.

If\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD n't\_RB gone\_VBN to\_TO Whitby\_NNP ,\_, perhaps\_RB poor\_JJ dear\_RB Lucy\_NNP would\_MD be\_VB with\_IN us\_PRP now\_RB .\_.

She\_PRP had\_VBD n't\_RB taken\_VBN to\_TO visiting\_VBG the\_DT churchyard\_NN till\_IN I\_PRP came\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC if\_IN she\_PRP had\_VBD n't\_RB come\_VBN there\_RB in\_IN the\_DT day-time\_JJ with\_IN me\_PRP she\_PRP would\_MD n't\_RB have\_VB walked\_VBN there\_RB in\_IN her\_PRP$ sleep\_NN ;\_: and\_CC if\_IN she\_PRP had\_VBD n't\_RB gone\_VBN there\_RB at\_IN night\_NN and\_CC asleep\_RB ,\_, that\_DT monster\_NN could\_MD n't\_RB have\_VB destroyed\_VBN her\_PRP as\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, why\_WRB did\_VBD I\_PRP ever\_RB go\_VBP to\_TO Whitby\_NNP ?\_.

There\_EX now\_RB ,\_, crying\_VBG again\_RB !\_.

I\_PRP wonder\_VBP what\_WP has\_VBZ come\_VBN over\_IN me\_PRP to-day\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD hide\_VB it\_PRP from\_IN Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, for\_IN if\_IN he\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN crying\_VBG twice\_RB in\_IN one\_CD morning\_NN --\_: I\_PRP ,\_, who\_WP never\_RB cried\_VBD on\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ account\_NN ,\_, and\_CC whom\_WP he\_PRP has\_VBZ never\_RB caused\_VBN to\_TO shed\_VB a\_DT tear\_VB --\_: the\_DT dear\_RB fellow\_JJ would\_MD fret\_VB his\_PRP$ heart\_NN out\_RP .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD put\_VB a\_DT bold\_JJ face\_NN on\_IN ,\_, and\_CC if\_IN I\_PRP do\_VBP feel\_VB weepy\_JJ ,\_, he\_PRP shall\_MD never\_RB see\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP suppose\_VBP it\_PRP is\_VBZ one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT lessons\_NNS that\_WDT we\_VBP poor\_JJ women\_NNS have\_VBP to\_TO learn\_VB ...\_: .\_.

I\_PRP ca\_MD n't\_RB quite\_RB remember\_VB how\_WRB I\_PRP fell\_VBD asleep\_RB last\_JJ night\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP remember\_VBP hearing\_VBG the\_DT sudden\_JJ barking\_VBG of\_IN the\_DT dogs\_NNS and\_CC a\_DT lot\_NN of\_IN queer\_NN sounds\_NNS ,\_, like\_IN praying\_VBG on\_IN a\_DT very\_RB tumultuous\_JJ scale\_NN ,\_, from\_IN Mr.\_NNP Renfield\_NNP 's\_POS room\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT is\_VBZ somewhere\_RB under\_IN this\_DT .\_.

And\_CC then\_RB there\_EX was\_VBD silence\_NN over\_IN everything\_NN ,\_, silence\_NN so\_RB profound\_JJ that\_IN it\_PRP startled\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP got\_VBD up\_RB and\_CC looked\_VBD out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT window\_NN .\_.

All\_DT was\_VBD dark\_JJ and\_CC silent\_JJ ,\_, the\_DT black\_JJ shadows\_NNS thrown\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT moonlight\_NN seeming\_VBG full\_JJ of\_IN a\_DT silent\_JJ mystery\_NN of\_IN their\_PRP$ own\_JJ .\_.

Not\_RB a\_DT thing\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB stirring\_VBG ,\_, but\_CC all\_DT to\_TO be\_VB grim\_JJ and\_CC fixed\_VBN as\_IN death\_NN or\_CC fate\_NN ;\_: so\_IN that\_IN a\_DT thin\_JJ streak\_NN of\_IN white\_JJ mist\_NN ,\_, that\_WDT crept\_VBD with\_IN almost\_RB imperceptible\_JJ slowness\_NN across\_IN the\_DT grass\_NN towards\_IN the\_DT house\_NN ,\_, seemed\_VBD to\_TO have\_VB a\_DT sentience\_NN and\_CC a\_DT vitality\_NN of\_IN its\_PRP$ own\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP think\_VBP that\_IN the\_DT digression\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ thoughts\_NNS must\_MD have\_VB done\_VBN me\_PRP good\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN when\_WRB I\_PRP got\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO bed\_NN I\_PRP found\_VBD a\_DT lethargy\_NN creeping\_VBG over\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP lay\_VBD a\_DT while\_NN ,\_, but\_CC could\_MD not\_RB quite\_RB sleep\_VB ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP got\_VBD out\_RB and\_CC looked\_VBD out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT window\_NN again\_RB .\_.

The\_DT mist\_NN was\_VBD spreading\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD now\_RB close\_JJ up\_IN to\_TO the\_DT house\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB it\_PRP lying\_VBG thick\_JJ against\_IN the\_DT wall\_NN ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN it\_PRP were\_VBD stealing\_VBG up\_RP to\_TO the\_DT windows\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT poor\_JJ man\_NN was\_VBD more\_RBR loud\_JJ than\_IN ever\_RB ,\_, and\_CC though\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB distinguish\_VB a\_DT word\_NN he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD in\_IN some\_DT way\_NN recognise\_VB in\_IN his\_PRP$ tones\_NNS some\_DT passionate\_JJ entreaty\_NN on\_IN his\_PRP$ part\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB there\_EX was\_VBD the\_DT sound\_NN of\_IN a\_DT struggle\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT attendants\_NNS were\_VBD dealing\_VBG with\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD so\_RB frightened\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP crept\_VBD into\_IN bed\_NN ,\_, and\_CC pulled\_VBD the\_DT clothes\_NNS over\_IN my\_PRP$ head\_NN ,\_, putting\_VBG my\_PRP$ fingers\_NNS in\_IN my\_PRP$ ears\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB then\_RB a\_DT bit\_RB sleepy\_JJ ,\_, at\_IN least\_JJS so\_IN I\_PRP thought\_VBD ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB fallen\_VBN asleep\_RB ,\_, for\_IN ,\_, except\_IN dreams\_NNS ,\_, I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB remember\_VB anything\_NN until\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB Jonathan\_NNP woke\_VBD me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP think\_VBP that\_IN it\_PRP took\_VBD me\_PRP an\_DT effort\_NN and\_CC a\_DT little\_JJ time\_NN to\_TO realise\_VB where\_WRB I\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD Jonathan\_NNP who\_WP was\_VBD bending\_VBG over\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

My\_PRP$ dream\_NN was\_VBD very\_RB peculiar\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD almost\_RB typical\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT way\_NN that\_IN waking\_VBG thoughts\_NNS become\_VBP merged\_JJ in\_IN ,\_, or\_CC continued\_VBN in\_IN ,\_, dreams\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP thought\_VBD that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD asleep\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC waiting\_VBG for\_IN Jonathan\_NNP to\_TO come\_VB back\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD very\_RB anxious\_JJ about\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP was\_VBD powerless\_JJ to\_TO act\_VB ;\_: my\_PRP$ feet\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC my\_PRP$ hands\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC my\_PRP$ brain\_NN were\_VBD weighted\_VBN ,\_, so\_IN that\_DT nothing\_NN could\_MD proceed\_VB at\_IN the\_DT usual\_JJ pace\_NN .\_.

And\_CC so\_RB I\_PRP slept\_VBD uneasily\_RB and\_CC thought\_VBD .\_.

Then\_RB it\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO dawn\_NN upon\_IN me\_PRP that\_IN the\_DT air\_NN was\_VBD heavy\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC dank\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC cold\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP put\_VBD back\_RP the\_DT clothes\_NNS from\_IN my\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, and\_CC found\_VBD ,\_, to\_TO my\_PRP$ surprise\_NN ,\_, that\_IN all\_DT was\_VBD dim\_JJ around\_RB .\_.

The\_DT gaslight\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP had\_VBD left\_VBN lit\_VBN for\_IN Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, but\_CC turned\_VBD down\_RP ,\_, came\_VBD only\_RB like\_IN a\_DT tiny\_JJ red\_NN spark\_VB through\_IN the\_DT fog\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT had\_VBD evidently\_RB grown\_VBN thicker\_JJR and\_CC poured\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB it\_PRP occurred\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD shut\_VBN the\_DT window\_NN before\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD come\_VBN to\_TO bed\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB got\_VBN out\_RP to\_TO make\_VB certain\_JJ on\_IN the\_DT point\_NN ,\_, but\_CC some\_DT leaden\_JJ lethargy\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO chain\_VB my\_PRP$ limbs\_NNS and\_CC even\_RB my\_PRP$ will\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP lay\_VBP still\_RB and\_CC endured\_VBD ;\_: that\_DT was\_VBD all\_DT .\_.

I\_PRP closed\_VBD my\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ,\_, but\_CC could\_MD still\_RB see\_VB through\_IN my\_PRP$ eyelids\_NNS .\_.

-LRB-\_-LRB- It\_PRP is\_VBZ wonderful\_JJ what\_WP tricks\_NNS our\_PRP$ dreams\_NNS play\_VBP us\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC how\_WRB conveniently\_RB we\_PRP can\_MD imagine\_VB .\_. -RRB-\_-RRB-

The\_DT mist\_NN grew\_VBD thicker\_JJR and\_CC thicker\_JJR and\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB now\_RB how\_WRB it\_PRP came\_VBD in\_IN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB it\_PRP like\_IN smoke\_NN --\_: or\_CC with\_IN the\_DT white\_JJ energy\_NN of\_IN boiling\_JJ water\_NN --\_: pouring\_VBG in\_RP ,\_, not\_RB through\_IN the\_DT window\_NN ,\_, but\_CC through\_IN the\_DT joinings\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT door\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP got\_VBD thicker\_JJR and\_CC thicker\_JJR ,\_, till\_IN it\_PRP seemed\_VBD as\_IN if\_IN it\_PRP became\_VBD concentrated\_JJ into\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN pillar\_NN of\_IN cloud\_NN in\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, through\_IN the\_DT top\_NN of\_IN which\_WDT I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB the\_DT light\_NN of\_IN the\_DT gas\_NN shining\_VBG like\_IN a\_DT red\_JJ eye\_NN .\_.

Things\_NNS began\_VBD to\_TO whirl\_NN through\_IN my\_PRP$ brain\_NN just\_RB as\_IN the\_DT cloudy\_JJ column\_NN was\_VBD now\_RB whirling\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, and\_CC through\_IN it\_PRP all\_DT came\_VBD the\_DT scriptural\_JJ words\_NNS ``\_`` a\_DT pillar\_NN of\_IN cloud\_NN by\_IN day\_NN and\_CC of\_IN fire\_NN by\_IN night\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Was\_VBD it\_PRP indeed\_RB some\_DT such\_JJ spiritual\_JJ guidance\_NN that\_WDT was\_VBD coming\_VBG to\_TO me\_PRP in\_IN my\_PRP$ sleep\_NN ?\_.

But\_CC the\_DT pillar\_NN was\_VBD composed\_VBN of\_IN both\_CC the\_DT day\_NN and\_CC the\_DT night-guiding\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT fire\_NN was\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT red\_JJ eye\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT at\_IN the\_DT thought\_NN got\_VBD a\_DT new\_JJ fascination\_NN for\_IN me\_PRP ;\_: till\_IN ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP looked\_VBD ,\_, the\_DT fire\_NN divided\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC seemed\_VBD to\_TO shine\_VB on\_IN me\_PRP through\_IN the\_DT fog\_NN like\_IN two\_CD red\_JJ eyes\_NNS ,\_, such\_JJ as\_IN Lucy\_NNP told\_VBD me\_PRP of\_IN in\_IN her\_PRP$ momentary\_JJ mental\_JJ wandering\_VBG when\_WRB ,\_, on\_IN the\_DT cliff\_NN ,\_, the\_DT dying\_VBG sunlight\_NN struck\_VBD the\_DT windows\_NNS of\_IN St.\_NNP Mary\_NNP 's\_POS Church\_NNP .\_.

Suddenly\_RB the\_DT horror\_NN burst\_NN upon\_IN me\_PRP that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD thus\_RB that\_IN Jonathan\_NNP had\_VBD seen\_VBN those\_DT awful\_JJ women\_NNS growing\_VBG into\_IN reality\_NN through\_IN the\_DT whirling\_JJ mist\_NN in\_IN the\_DT moonlight\_NN ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN my\_PRP$ dream\_NN I\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB fainted\_VBN ,\_, for\_IN all\_DT became\_VBD black\_JJ darkness\_NN .\_.

The\_DT last\_JJ conscious\_JJ effort\_NN which\_WDT imagination\_NN made\_VBD was\_VBD to\_TO show\_VB me\_PRP a\_DT livid\_JJ white\_JJ face\_NN bending\_VBG over\_IN me\_PRP out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT mist\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB careful\_JJ of\_IN such\_JJ dreams\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN they\_PRP would\_MD unseat\_VB one\_PRP 's\_POS reason\_NN if\_IN there\_EX were\_VBD too\_RB much\_JJ of\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP would\_MD get\_VB Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP or\_CC Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP to\_TO prescribe\_VB something\_NN for\_IN me\_PRP which\_WDT would\_MD make\_VB me\_PRP sleep\_VB ,\_, only\_RB that\_IN I\_PRP fear\_VBP to\_TO alarm\_NN them\_PRP .\_.

Such\_JJ a\_DT dream\_NN at\_IN the\_DT present\_JJ time\_NN would\_MD become\_VB woven\_VBN into\_IN their\_PRP$ fears\_NNS for\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

To-night\_JJ I\_PRP shall\_MD strive\_VB hard\_JJ to\_TO sleep\_VB naturally\_RB .\_.

If\_IN I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP shall\_MD to-morrow\_VB night\_NN get\_VB them\_PRP to\_TO give\_VB me\_PRP a\_DT dose\_NN of\_IN chloral\_NN ;\_: that\_WDT can\_MD not\_RB hurt\_VB me\_PRP for\_IN once\_RB ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP will\_MD give\_VB me\_PRP a\_DT good\_JJ night\_NN 's\_POS sleep\_NN .\_.

Last\_JJ night\_NN tired\_VBD me\_PRP more\_JJR than\_IN if\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB slept\_VBN at\_IN all\_DT .\_.

2\_CD October\_NNP 10\_CD p.\_NN m.\_NN --\_: Last\_JJ night\_NN I\_PRP slept\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC did\_VBD not\_RB dream\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB slept\_VBN soundly\_RB ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB waked\_VBN by\_IN Jonathan\_NNP coming\_VBG to\_TO bed\_NN ;\_: but\_CC the\_DT sleep\_NN has\_VBZ not\_RB refreshed\_VBN me\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN to-day\_NN I\_PRP feel\_VBP terribly\_RB weak\_JJ and\_CC spiritless\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP spent\_VBD all\_DT yesterday\_NN trying\_VBG to\_TO read\_VB ,\_, or\_CC lying\_VBG down\_RB dozing\_VBG .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT afternoon\_NN Mr.\_NNP Renfield\_NNP asked\_VBD if\_IN he\_PRP might\_MD see\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

Poor\_NNP man\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP was\_VBD very\_RB gentle\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB I\_PRP came\_VBD away\_RB he\_PRP kissed\_VBD my\_PRP$ hand\_NN and\_CC bade\_NN God\_NNP bless\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

Some\_DT way\_NN it\_PRP affected\_VBD me\_PRP much\_RB ;\_: I\_PRP am\_VBP crying\_VBG when\_WRB I\_PRP think\_VBP of\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

This\_DT is\_VBZ a\_DT new\_JJ weakness\_NN ,\_, of\_IN which\_WDT I\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB careful\_JJ .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP would\_MD be\_VB miserable\_JJ if\_IN he\_PRP knew\_VBD I\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN crying\_VBG .\_.

He\_PRP and\_CC the\_DT others\_NNS were\_VBD out\_RB till\_IN dinner-time\_NN ,\_, and\_CC they\_PRP all\_DT came\_VBD in\_IN tired\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP did\_VBD what\_WP I\_PRP could\_MD to\_TO brighten\_VB them\_PRP up\_RP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP suppose\_VBP that\_IN the\_DT effort\_NN did\_VBD me\_PRP good\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP forgot\_VBD how\_WRB tired\_VBN I\_PRP was\_VBD .\_.

After\_IN dinner\_NN they\_PRP sent\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO bed\_NN ,\_, and\_CC all\_DT went\_VBD off\_RP to\_TO smoke\_VB together\_RB ,\_, as\_IN they\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN they\_PRP wanted\_VBD to\_TO tell\_VB each\_DT other\_JJ of\_IN what\_WP had\_VBD occurred\_VBN to\_TO each\_DT during\_IN the\_DT day\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB from\_IN Jonathan\_NNP 's\_POS manner\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD something\_NN important\_JJ to\_TO communicate\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB so\_RB sleepy\_JJ as\_IN I\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN ;\_: so\_RB before\_IN they\_PRP went\_VBD I\_PRP asked\_VBD Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP to\_TO give\_VB me\_PRP a\_DT little\_JJ opiate\_NN of\_IN some\_DT kind\_NN ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB slept\_VBN well\_RB the\_DT night\_NN before\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP very\_RB kindly\_RB made\_VBD me\_PRP up\_RP a\_DT sleeping\_VBG draught\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT he\_PRP gave\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, telling\_VBG me\_PRP that\_IN it\_PRP would\_MD do\_VB me\_PRP no\_DT harm\_NN ,\_, as\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD very\_RB mild\_JJ ...\_: .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP taken\_VBN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC am\_RB waiting\_VBG for\_IN sleep\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT still\_RB keeps\_VBZ aloof\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP hope\_VBP I\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB done\_VBN wrong\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN as\_IN sleep\_NN begins\_VBZ to\_TO flirt\_VB with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, a\_DT new\_JJ fear\_NN comes\_VBZ :\_: that\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN foolish\_JJ in\_IN thus\_RB depriving\_VBG myself\_PRP of\_IN the\_DT power\_NN of\_IN waking\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP might\_MD want\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

Here\_RB comes\_VBZ sleep\_NN .\_.

Good-night\_JJ .\_.

CHAPTER\_NNP XX\_NNP JONATHAN\_NNP HARKER\_NNP 'S\_POS JOURNAL\_NN 1\_CD October\_NNP ,\_, evening\_NN .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP found\_VBD Thomas\_NNP Snelling\_NNP in\_IN his\_PRP$ house\_NN at\_IN Bethnal\_NNP Green\_NNP ,\_, but\_CC unhappily\_RB he\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB in\_IN a\_DT condition\_NN to\_TO remember\_VB anything\_NN .\_.

The\_DT very\_JJ prospect\_NN of\_IN beer\_NN which\_WDT my\_PRP$ expected\_VBN coming\_VBG had\_VBD opened\_VBN to\_TO him\_PRP had\_VBD proved\_VBN too\_RB much\_RB ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP had\_VBD begun\_VBN too\_RB early\_RB on\_IN his\_PRP$ expected\_JJ debauch\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP learned\_VBD ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, from\_IN his\_PRP$ wife\_NN ,\_, who\_WP seemed\_VBD a\_DT decent\_JJ ,\_, poor\_JJ soul\_NN ,\_, that\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD only\_RB the\_DT assistant\_NN to\_TO Smollet\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP of\_IN the\_DT two\_CD mates\_NNS was\_VBD the\_DT responsible\_JJ person\_NN .\_.

So\_RB off\_IN I\_PRP drove\_VBD to\_TO Walworth\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC found\_VBD Mr.\_NNP Joseph\_NNP Smollet\_NNP at\_IN home\_NN and\_CC in\_IN his\_PRP$ shirtsleeves\_NNS ,\_, taking\_VBG a\_DT late\_JJ tea\_NN out\_IN of\_IN a\_DT saucer\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT decent\_JJ ,\_, intelligent\_JJ fellow\_NN ,\_, distinctly\_RB a\_DT good\_JJ ,\_, reliable\_JJ type\_NN of\_IN workman\_NN ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN a\_DT headpiece\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP remembered\_VBD all\_DT about\_IN the\_DT incident\_NN of\_IN the\_DT boxes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC from\_IN a\_DT wonderful\_JJ dog\_NN 's\_POS -\_: eared\_JJ notebook\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT he\_PRP produced\_VBD from\_IN some\_DT mysterious\_JJ receptacle\_NN about\_IN the\_DT seat\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ trousers\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC which\_WDT had\_VBD hieroglyphical\_JJ entries\_NNS in\_IN thick\_JJ ,\_, half-obliterated\_JJ pencil\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP gave\_VBD me\_PRP the\_DT destinations\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT boxes\_NNS .\_.

There\_EX were\_VBD ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, six\_CD in\_IN the\_DT cartload\_NN which\_WDT he\_PRP took\_VBD from\_IN Carfax\_NNP and\_CC left\_VBD at\_IN 197\_CD ,\_, Chicksand\_NNP Street\_NNP ,\_, Mile\_NNP End\_NNP New\_NNP Town\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC another\_DT six\_CD which\_WDT he\_PRP deposited\_VBD at\_IN Jamaica\_NNP Lane\_NNP ,\_, Bermondsey\_NNP .\_.

If\_IN then\_RB the\_DT Count\_NNP meant\_VBD to\_TO scatter\_VB these\_DT ghastly\_JJ refuges\_NNS of\_IN his\_PRP$ over\_IN London\_NNP ,\_, these\_DT places\_NNS were\_VBD chosen\_VBN as\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ of\_IN delivery\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN later\_RB he\_PRP might\_MD distribute\_VB more\_RBR fully\_RB .\_.

The\_DT systematic\_JJ manner\_NN in\_IN which\_WDT this\_DT was\_VBD done\_VBN made\_VBD me\_PRP think\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB mean\_VB to\_TO confine\_VB himself\_PRP to\_TO two\_CD sides\_NNS of\_IN London\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD now\_RB fixed\_VBN on\_IN the\_DT far\_RB east\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT northern\_JJ shore\_NN ,\_, on\_IN the\_DT east\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT southern\_JJ shore\_NN ,\_, and\_CC on\_IN the\_DT south\_NN .\_.

The\_DT north\_NN and\_CC west\_NN were\_VBD surely\_RB never\_RB meant\_VBN to\_TO be\_VB left\_VBN out\_IN of\_IN his\_PRP$ diabolical\_JJ scheme\_NN --\_: let\_VB alone\_RB the\_DT City\_NNP itself\_PRP and\_CC the\_DT very\_JJ heart\_NN of\_IN fashionable\_JJ London\_NNP in\_IN the\_DT south-west\_NN and\_CC west\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP went\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO Smollet\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC asked\_VBD him\_PRP if\_IN he\_PRP could\_MD tell\_VB us\_PRP if\_IN any\_DT other\_JJ boxes\_NNS had\_VBD been\_VBN taken\_VBN from\_IN Carfax\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP replied\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Well\_UH ,\_, guv\_NN '\_'' nor\_CC ,\_, you\_PRP 've\_VBP treated\_VBN me\_PRP wery\_NN '\_'' an\_DT '\_'' some\_DT ''\_'' --\_: I\_PRP had\_VBD given\_VBN him\_PRP half\_PDT a\_DT sovereign\_JJ --\_: ``\_`` an\_DT '\_'' I\_PRP 'll\_MD tell\_VB yer\_IN all\_DT I\_PRP know\_VBP .\_.

I\_PRP heard\_VBD a\_DT man\_NN by\_IN the\_DT name\_NN of\_IN Bloxam\_NNP say\_VBP four\_CD nights\_NNS ago\_RB in\_IN the\_DT '\_'' Are\_VBP an\_DT '\_'' '\_'' Ounds\_NNP ,\_, in\_IN Pincher\_NNP 's\_POS Alley\_NNP ,\_, as\_IN '\_'' ow\_IN he\_PRP an\_DT '\_'' his\_PRP$ mate\_NN '\_'' ad\_NN '\_'' ad\_NN a\_DT rare\_JJ dusty\_JJ job\_NN in\_IN a\_DT old\_JJ '\_'' ouse\_NN at\_IN Purfect\_NNP .\_.

There\_EX ai\_VBP n't\_RB a-many\_NN such\_JJ jobs\_NNS as\_IN this\_DT '\_'' ere\_NN ,\_, an\_DT '\_'' I\_PRP 'm\_VBP thinkin\_VBG '\_'' that\_IN maybe\_RB Sam\_NNP Bloxam\_NNP could\_MD tell\_VB ye\_PRP summut\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP asked\_VBD if\_IN he\_PRP could\_MD tell\_VB me\_PRP where\_WRB to\_TO find\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP told\_VBD him\_PRP that\_IN if\_IN he\_PRP could\_MD get\_VB me\_PRP the\_DT address\_NN it\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB worth\_JJ another\_DT half-sovereign\_NN to\_TO him\_PRP .\_.

So\_RB he\_PRP gulped\_VBD down\_RP the\_DT rest\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ tea\_NN and\_CC stood\_VBD up\_RP ,\_, saying\_VBG that\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD going\_VBG to\_TO begin\_VB the\_DT search\_NN then\_RB and\_CC there\_RB .\_.

At\_IN the\_DT door\_NN he\_PRP stopped\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Look\_VB '\_'' ere\_NN ,\_, guv\_NN '\_'' nor\_CC ,\_, there\_EX ai\_VBP n't\_RB no\_DT sense\_NN in\_IN me\_PRP a-keepin\_NN '\_'' you\_PRP '\_POS ere\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP may\_MD find\_VB Sam\_NNP soon\_RB ,\_, or\_CC I\_PRP may\_MD n't\_RB ;\_: but\_CC anyhow\_RB he\_PRP ai\_VBP n't\_RB like\_VB to\_TO be\_VB in\_IN a\_DT way\_NN to\_TO tell\_VB ye\_PRP much\_JJ to-night\_NN .\_.

Sam\_NNP is\_VBZ a\_DT rare\_JJ one\_CD when\_WRB he\_PRP starts\_VBZ on\_IN the\_DT booze\_NN .\_.

If\_IN you\_PRP can\_MD give\_VB me\_PRP a\_DT envelope\_NN with\_IN a\_DT stamp\_NN on\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC put\_VBD yer\_JJ address\_NN on\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP 'll\_MD find\_VB out\_RP where\_WRB Sam\_NNP is\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB found\_VBN and\_CC post\_VB it\_PRP ye\_PRP to-night\_JJ .\_.

But\_CC ye\_PRP 'd\_MD better\_RB be\_VB up\_RB arter\_JJ '\_'' im\_NN soon\_RB in\_IN the\_DT mornin\_NN '\_'' ,\_, or\_CC maybe\_RB ye\_PRP wo\_MD n't\_RB ketch\_VB '\_'' im\_NN ;\_: for\_IN Sam\_NNP gets\_VBZ off\_RP main\_JJ early\_JJ ,\_, never\_RB mind\_VB the\_DT booze\_NN the\_DT night\_NN afore\_NN .\_. ''\_''

This\_DT was\_VBD all\_DT practical\_JJ ,\_, so\_IN one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT children\_NNS went\_VBD off\_RP with\_IN a\_DT penny\_NN to\_TO buy\_VB an\_DT envelope\_NN and\_CC a\_DT sheet\_NN of\_IN paper\_NN ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO keep\_VB the\_DT change\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB she\_PRP came\_VBD back\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP addressed\_VBD the\_DT envelope\_NN and\_CC stamped\_VBD it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB Smollet\_NNP had\_VBD again\_RB faithfully\_RB promised\_VBN to\_TO post\_VB the\_DT address\_NN when\_WRB found\_VBN ,\_, I\_PRP took\_VBD my\_PRP$ way\_NN to\_TO home\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP 're\_VBP on\_IN the\_DT track\_NN anyhow\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP tired\_JJ to-night\_NN ,\_, and\_CC want\_VBP sleep\_NN .\_.

Mina\_NNP is\_VBZ fast\_RB asleep\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC looks\_VBZ a\_DT little\_JJ too\_RB pale\_JJ ;\_: her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS look\_VBP as\_IN though\_IN she\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN crying\_VBG .\_.

Poor\_NNP dear\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP 've\_VBP no\_DT doubt\_NN it\_PRP frets\_VBZ her\_PRP to\_TO be\_VB kept\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT dark\_NN ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP may\_MD make\_VB her\_PRP doubly\_RB anxious\_JJ about\_IN me\_PRP and\_CC the\_DT others\_NNS .\_.

But\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ best\_RB as\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ better\_JJR to\_TO be\_VB disappointed\_VBN and\_CC worried\_VBN in\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT way\_NN now\_RB than\_IN to\_TO have\_VB her\_PRP$ nerve\_NN broken\_VBN .\_.

The\_DT doctors\_NNS were\_VBD quite\_RB right\_JJ to\_TO insist\_VB on\_IN her\_PRP$ being\_NN kept\_VBD out\_IN of\_IN this\_DT dreadful\_JJ business\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB firm\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN on\_IN me\_PRP this\_DT particular\_JJ burden\_NN of\_IN silence\_NN must\_MD rest\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB ever\_RB enter\_VB on\_IN the\_DT subject\_NN with\_IN her\_PRP under\_IN any\_DT circumstances\_NNS .\_.

Indeed\_RB ,\_, it\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB be\_VB a\_DT hard\_JJ task\_NN ,\_, after\_IN all\_DT ,\_, for\_IN she\_PRP herself\_PRP has\_VBZ become\_VBN reticent\_JJ on\_IN the\_DT subject\_NN ,\_, and\_CC has\_VBZ not\_RB spoken\_VBN of\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN or\_CC his\_PRP$ doings\_NNS ever\_RB since\_IN we\_PRP told\_VBD her\_PRP of\_IN our\_PRP$ decision\_NN .\_.

2\_CD October\_NNP ,\_, evening\_NN .\_.

--\_: A\_DT long\_JJ and\_CC trying\_VBG and\_CC exciting\_JJ day\_NN .\_.

By\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ post\_NN I\_PRP got\_VBD my\_PRP$ directed\_JJ envelope\_NN with\_IN a\_DT dirty\_JJ scrap\_NN of\_IN paper\_NN enclosed\_VBN ,\_, on\_IN which\_WDT was\_VBD written\_VBN with\_IN a\_DT carpenter\_NN 's\_POS pencil\_NN in\_IN a\_DT sprawling\_JJ hand\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Sam\_NNP Bloxam\_NNP ,\_, Korkrans\_NNP ,\_, 4\_CD ,\_, Poters\_NNP Cort\_NNP ,\_, Bartel\_NNP Street\_NNP ,\_, Walworth\_NNP .\_.

Arsk\_NN for\_IN the\_DT depite\_NN .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP got\_VBD the\_DT letter\_NN in\_IN bed\_NN ,\_, and\_CC rose\_VBD without\_IN waking\_VBG Mina\_NNP .\_.

She\_PRP looked\_VBD heavy\_JJ and\_CC sleepy\_JJ and\_CC pale\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC far\_RB from\_IN well\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP determined\_VBD not\_RB to\_TO wake\_VB her\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC that\_DT ,\_, when\_WRB I\_PRP should\_MD return\_VB from\_IN this\_DT new\_JJ search\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP would\_MD arrange\_VB for\_IN her\_PRP going\_VBG back\_RB to\_TO Exeter\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP think\_VBP she\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB happier\_JJR in\_IN our\_PRP$ own\_JJ home\_NN ,\_, with\_IN her\_PRP$ daily\_JJ tasks\_NNS to\_TO interest\_VB her\_PRP ,\_, than\_IN in\_IN being\_VBG here\_RB amongst\_IN us\_PRP and\_CC in\_IN ignorance\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP only\_RB saw\_VBD Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP for\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN ,\_, and\_CC told\_VBD him\_PRP where\_WRB I\_PRP was\_VBD off\_RB to\_TO ,\_, promising\_VBG to\_TO come\_VB back\_RB and\_CC tell\_VB the\_DT rest\_NN so\_RB soon\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB found\_VBN out\_RP anything\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP drove\_VBD to\_TO Walworth\_NNP and\_CC found\_VBN ,\_, with\_IN some\_DT difficulty\_NN ,\_, Potter\_NNP 's\_POS Court\_NNP .\_.

Mr.\_NNP Smollet\_NNP 's\_POS spelling\_NN misled\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP asked\_VBD for\_IN Poter\_NNP 's\_POS Court\_NNP instead\_RB of\_IN Potter\_NNP 's\_POS Court\_NNP .\_.

However\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD found\_VBN the\_DT court\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP had\_VBD no\_DT difficulty\_NN in\_IN discovering\_VBG Corcoran\_NNP 's\_POS lodging-house\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP asked\_VBD the\_DT man\_NN who\_WP came\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT door\_NN for\_IN the\_DT ``\_`` depite\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP shook\_VBD his\_PRP$ head\_NN ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` I\_NNP du\_NNP n\_NN no\_DT '\_'' im\_NN .\_.

There\_EX ai\_VBP n't\_RB no\_DT such\_JJ a\_DT person\_NN '\_'' ere\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP never\_RB '\_POS eard\_NN of\_IN '\_'' im\_NN in\_IN all\_DT my\_PRP$ bloomin\_NN '\_'' days\_NNS .\_.

Do\_VBP n't\_RB believe\_VB there\_EX ai\_VBP n't\_RB nobody\_NN of\_IN that\_DT kind\_NN livin\_NN '\_'' ere\_NN or\_CC anywheres\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP took\_VBD out\_RP Smollet\_NNP 's\_POS letter\_NN ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN I\_PRP read\_VBP it\_PRP it\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP that\_IN the\_DT lesson\_NN of\_IN the\_DT spelling\_NN of\_IN the\_DT name\_NN of\_IN the\_DT court\_NN might\_MD guide\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

``\_`` What\_WP are\_VBP you\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP asked\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP 'm\_VBP the\_DT depity\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP answered\_VBD .\_.

I\_PRP saw\_VBD at\_IN once\_RB that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT right\_JJ track\_NN ;\_: phonetic\_JJ spelling\_NN had\_VBD again\_RB misled\_VBN me\_PRP .\_.

A\_DT half-crown\_JJ tip\_NN put\_VBD the\_DT deputy\_NN 's\_POS knowledge\_NN at\_IN my\_PRP$ disposal\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP learned\_VBD that\_IN Mr.\_NNP Bloxam\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP had\_VBD slept\_VBN off\_RP the\_DT remains\_NNS of\_IN his\_PRP$ beer\_NN on\_IN the\_DT previous\_JJ night\_NN at\_IN Corcoran\_NNP 's\_POS ,\_, had\_VBD left\_VBN for\_IN his\_PRP$ work\_NN at\_IN Poplar\_NNP at\_IN five\_CD o'clock\_RB that\_DT morning\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB tell\_VB me\_PRP where\_WRB the\_DT place\_NN of\_IN work\_NN was\_VBD situated\_VBN ,\_, but\_CC he\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT vague\_JJ idea\_NN that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD some\_DT kind\_NN of\_IN a\_DT ``\_`` new-fangled\_JJ ware'us\_NN ''\_'' ;\_: and\_CC with\_IN this\_DT slender\_JJ clue\_NN I\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO start\_VB for\_IN Poplar\_NNP .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD twelve\_CD o'clock\_RB before\_IN I\_PRP got\_VBD any\_DT satisfactory\_JJ hint\_NN of\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT building\_NN ,\_, and\_CC this\_DT I\_PRP got\_VBD at\_IN a\_DT coffee-shop\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB some\_DT workmen\_NNS were\_VBD having\_VBG their\_PRP$ dinner\_NN .\_.

One\_CD of\_IN these\_DT suggested\_VBD that\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD being\_VBG erected\_VBN at\_IN Cross\_NNP Angel\_NNP Street\_NNP a\_DT new\_JJ ``\_`` cold\_JJ storage\_NN ''\_'' building\_NN ;\_: and\_CC as\_IN this\_DT suited\_VBD the\_DT condition\_NN of\_IN a\_DT ``\_`` new-fangled\_JJ ware'us\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB drove\_VBN to\_TO it\_PRP .\_.

An\_DT interview\_NN with\_IN a\_DT surly\_JJ gatekeeper\_NN and\_CC a\_DT surlier\_JJR foreman\_NN ,\_, both\_DT of\_IN whom\_WP were\_VBD appeased\_VBN with\_IN the\_DT coin\_NN of\_IN the\_DT realm\_NN ,\_, put\_VBD me\_PRP on\_IN the\_DT track\_NN of\_IN Bloxam\_NNP ;\_: he\_PRP was\_VBD sent\_VBN for\_IN on\_IN my\_PRP$ suggesting\_VBG that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD willing\_JJ to\_TO pay\_VB his\_PRP$ day\_NN 's\_POS wages\_NNS to\_TO his\_PRP$ foreman\_NN for\_IN the\_DT privilege\_NN of\_IN asking\_VBG him\_PRP a\_DT few\_JJ questions\_NNS on\_IN a\_DT private\_JJ matter\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT smart\_JJ enough\_JJ fellow\_NN ,\_, though\_IN rough\_JJ of\_IN speech\_NN and\_CC bearing\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD promised\_VBN to\_TO pay\_VB for\_IN his\_PRP$ information\_NN and\_CC given\_VBN him\_PRP an\_DT earnest\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP told\_VBD me\_PRP that\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD made\_VBN two\_CD journeys\_NNS between\_IN Carfax\_NNP and\_CC a\_DT house\_NN in\_IN Piccadilly\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC had\_VBD taken\_VBN from\_IN this\_DT house\_NN to\_TO the\_DT latter\_JJ nine\_CD great\_JJ boxes\_NNS --\_: ``\_`` main\_JJ heavy\_JJ ones\_NNS ''\_'' --\_: with\_IN a\_DT horse\_NN and\_CC cart\_NN hired\_VBN by\_IN him\_PRP for\_IN this\_DT purpose\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP asked\_VBD him\_PRP if\_IN he\_PRP could\_MD tell\_VB me\_PRP the\_DT number\_NN of\_IN the\_DT house\_NN in\_IN Piccadilly\_NNP ,\_, to\_TO which\_WDT he\_PRP replied\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Well\_UH ,\_, guv\_NN '\_'' nor\_CC ,\_, I\_PRP forgits\_VBP the\_DT number\_NN ,\_, but\_CC it\_PRP was\_VBD only\_RB a\_DT few\_JJ doors\_NNS from\_IN a\_DT big\_JJ white\_JJ church\_NN or\_CC somethink\_NN of\_IN the\_DT kind\_NN ,\_, not\_RB long\_RB built\_VBN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT dusty\_JJ old\_JJ '\_'' ouse\_NN ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, though\_IN nothin\_NN '\_'' to\_TO the\_DT dustiness\_NN of\_IN the\_DT '\_'' ouse\_NN we\_PRP tooked\_VBD the\_DT bloomin\_NN '\_POS boxes\_NNS from\_IN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` How\_WRB did\_VBD you\_PRP get\_VB into\_IN the\_DT houses\_NNS if\_IN they\_PRP were\_VBD both\_DT empty\_JJ ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` There\_EX was\_VBD the\_DT old\_JJ party\_NN what\_WP engaged\_VBD me\_PRP a-waitin\_NN '\_'' in\_IN the\_DT '\_'' ouse\_NN at\_IN Purfleet\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP '\_'' elped\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO lift\_VB the\_DT boxes\_NNS and\_CC put\_VBD them\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT dray\_NN .\_.

Curse\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC he\_PRP was\_VBD the\_DT strongest\_JJS chap\_NN I\_PRP ever\_RB struck\_VBD ,\_, an\_DT '\_'' him\_PRP a\_DT old\_JJ feller\_NN ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT white\_JJ moustache\_NN ,\_, one\_CD that\_IN thin\_JJ you\_PRP would\_MD think\_VB he\_PRP could\_MD n't\_RB throw\_VB a\_DT shadder\_NN .\_. ''\_''

How\_WRB this\_DT phrase\_NN thrilled\_VBD through\_IN me\_PRP !\_.

``\_`` Why\_WRB ,\_, '\_'' e\_LS took\_VBD up\_RP '\_'' is\_VBZ end\_NN o\_NN '\_'' the\_DT boxes\_NNS like\_IN they\_PRP was\_VBD pounds\_NNS of\_IN tea\_NN ,\_, and\_CC me\_PRP a-puffin\_NN '\_'' an\_DT '\_POS a-blowin\_NN '\_POS afore\_NN I\_PRP could\_MD up-end\_RB mine\_VB anyhow\_RB --\_: an\_DT '\_'' I\_PRP 'm\_VBP no\_DT chicken\_NN ,\_, neither\_CC .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` How\_WRB did\_VBD you\_PRP get\_VB into\_IN the\_DT house\_NN in\_IN Piccadilly\_NNP ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP asked\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` He\_PRP was\_VBD there\_EX too\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP must\_MD '\_'' a\_DT '\_'' started\_VBN off\_RP and\_CC got\_VBD there\_RB afore\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN when\_WRB I\_PRP rung\_VBD of\_IN the\_DT bell\_NN he\_PRP kem\_VBD an\_DT '\_'' opened\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN '\_POS isself\_NN an\_DT '\_'' '\_'' elped\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO carry\_VB the\_DT boxes\_NNS into\_IN the\_DT '\_'' all\_DT .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` The\_DT whole\_JJ nine\_CD ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP asked\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Yus\_NN ;\_: there\_EX was\_VBD five\_CD in\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ load\_NN an\_DT '\_'' four\_CD in\_IN the\_DT second\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD main\_JJ dry\_JJ work\_NN ,\_, an\_DT '\_'' I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB so\_RB well\_RB remember\_VB '\_'' ow\_IN I\_PRP got\_VBD '\_POS ome\_NN .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP interrupted\_VBD him\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Were\_VBD the\_DT boxes\_NNS left\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT hall\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Yus\_NN ;\_: it\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT big\_JJ '\_'' all\_DT ,\_, an\_DT '\_'' there\_EX was\_VBD nothin\_NN '\_'' else\_RB in\_IN it\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP made\_VBD one\_CD more\_JJR attempt\_NN to\_TO further\_JJ matters\_NNS :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP did\_VBD n't\_RB have\_VB any\_DT key\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Never\_RB used\_VBN no\_DT key\_JJ nor\_CC nothink\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT old\_JJ gent\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP opened\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN '\_POS isself\_NN an\_DT '\_'' shut\_VB it\_PRP again\_RB when\_WRB I\_PRP druv\_VBP off\_RP .\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB remember\_VB the\_DT last\_JJ time\_NN --\_: but\_CC that\_DT was\_VBD the\_DT beer\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` And\_CC you\_PRP ca\_MD n't\_RB remember\_VB the\_DT number\_NN of\_IN the\_DT house\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` No\_UH ,\_, sir\_NN .\_.

But\_CC ye\_PRP need\_MD n't\_RB have\_VB no\_DT difficulty\_NN about\_IN that\_DT .\_.

It\_PRP 's\_VBZ a\_DT '\_POS igh\_NN '\_'' un\_NN with\_IN a\_DT stone\_NN front\_NN with\_IN a\_DT bow\_NN on\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, an\_DT '\_'' '\_POS igh\_JJ steps\_NNS up\_IN to\_TO the\_DT door\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP them\_PRP steps\_NNS ,\_, '\_'' avin\_NN '\_'' '\_'' ad\_NN to\_TO carry\_VB the\_DT boxes\_NNS up\_RP with\_IN three\_CD loafers\_NNS what\_WP come\_VBP round\_JJ to\_TO earn\_VB a\_DT copper\_NN .\_.

The\_DT old\_JJ gent\_NN give\_VBP them\_PRP shillin\_NN 's\_POS ,\_, an\_DT '\_'' they\_PRP seein\_VBP '\_'' they\_PRP got\_VBD so\_RB much\_JJ ,\_, they\_PRP wanted\_VBD more\_RBR ;\_: but\_CC '\_'' e\_LS took\_VBD one\_CD of\_IN them\_PRP by\_IN the\_DT shoulder\_NN and\_CC was\_VBD like\_JJ to\_TO throw\_VB '\_'' im\_FW down\_IN the\_DT steps\_NNS ,\_, till\_IN the\_DT lot\_NN of\_IN them\_PRP went\_VBD away\_RB cussin\_NN '\_'' .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP thought\_VBD that\_IN with\_IN this\_DT description\_NN I\_PRP could\_MD find\_VB the\_DT house\_NN ,\_, so\_RB ,\_, having\_VBG paid\_VBN my\_PRP$ friend\_NN for\_IN his\_PRP$ information\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP started\_VBD off\_RP for\_IN Piccadilly\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD gained\_VBN a\_DT new\_JJ painful\_JJ experience\_NN ;\_: the\_DT Count\_NNP could\_MD ,\_, it\_PRP was\_VBD evident\_JJ ,\_, handle\_VB the\_DT earth-boxes\_NNS himself\_PRP .\_.

If\_IN so\_RB ,\_, time\_NN was\_VBD precious\_JJ ;\_: for\_IN ,\_, now\_RB that\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD achieved\_VBN a\_DT certain\_JJ amount\_NN of\_IN distribution\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP could\_MD ,\_, by\_IN choosing\_VBG his\_PRP$ own\_JJ time\_NN ,\_, complete\_VB the\_DT task\_NN unobserved\_JJ .\_.

At\_IN Piccadilly\_NNP Circus\_NNP I\_PRP discharged\_VBD my\_PRP$ cab\_NN ,\_, and\_CC walked\_VBD westward\_RB ;\_: beyond\_IN the\_DT Junior\_NNP Constitutional\_NNP I\_PRP came\_VBD across\_IN the\_DT house\_NN described\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD satisfied\_VBN that\_IN this\_DT was\_VBD the\_DT next\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT lairs\_NNS arranged\_VBN by\_IN Dracula\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT house\_NN looked\_VBD as\_IN though\_IN it\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN long\_RB untenanted\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT windows\_NNS were\_VBD encrusted\_VBN with\_IN dust\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT shutters\_NNS were\_VBD up\_RB .\_.

All\_PDT the\_DT framework\_NN was\_VBD black\_JJ with\_IN time\_NN ,\_, and\_CC from\_IN the\_DT iron\_NN the\_DT paint\_NN had\_VBD mostly\_RB scaled\_VBN away\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD evident\_JJ that\_IN up\_IN to\_TO lately\_RB there\_EX had\_VBD been\_VBN a\_DT large\_JJ notice-board\_NN in\_IN front\_NN of\_IN the\_DT balcony\_NN ;\_: it\_PRP had\_VBD ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, been\_VBN roughly\_RB torn\_VBN away\_RB ,\_, the\_DT uprights\_NNS which\_WDT had\_VBD supported\_VBN it\_PRP still\_RB remaining\_VBG .\_.

Behind\_IN the\_DT rails\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT balcony\_NN I\_PRP saw\_VBD there\_EX were\_VBD some\_DT loose\_JJ boards\_NNS ,\_, whose\_WP$ raw\_JJ edges\_NNS looked\_VBD white\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB given\_VBN a\_DT good\_JJ deal\_NN to\_TO have\_VB been\_VBN able\_JJ to\_TO see\_VB the\_DT notice-board\_JJ intact\_JJ ,\_, as\_IN it\_PRP would\_MD ,\_, perhaps\_RB ,\_, have\_VBP given\_VBN some\_DT clue\_NN to\_TO the\_DT ownership\_NN of\_IN the\_DT house\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP remembered\_VBD my\_PRP$ experience\_NN of\_IN the\_DT investigation\_NN and\_CC purchase\_NN of\_IN Carfax\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB but\_CC feel\_VB that\_IN if\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD find\_VB the\_DT former\_JJ owner\_NN there\_EX might\_MD be\_VB some\_DT means\_NNS discovered\_VBN of\_IN gaining\_VBG access\_NN to\_TO the\_DT house\_NN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD at\_IN present\_JJ nothing\_NN to\_TO be\_VB learned\_VBN from\_IN the\_DT Piccadilly\_NNP side\_NN ,\_, and\_CC nothing\_NN could\_MD be\_VB done\_VBN ;\_: so\_IN I\_PRP went\_VBD round\_JJ to\_TO the\_DT back\_NN to\_TO see\_VB if\_IN anything\_NN could\_MD be\_VB gathered\_VBN from\_IN this\_DT quarter\_NN .\_.

The\_DT mews\_NNS were\_VBD active\_JJ ,\_, the\_DT Piccadilly\_NNP houses\_NNS being\_VBG mostly\_RB in\_IN occupation\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP asked\_VBD one\_CD or\_CC two\_CD of\_IN the\_DT grooms\_NNS and\_CC helpers\_NNS whom\_WP I\_PRP saw\_VBD around\_RB if\_IN they\_PRP could\_MD tell\_VB me\_PRP anything\_NN about\_IN the\_DT empty\_JJ house\_NN .\_.

One\_CD of\_IN them\_PRP said\_VBD that\_IN he\_PRP heard\_VBD it\_PRP had\_VBD lately\_RB been\_VBN taken\_VBN ,\_, but\_CC he\_PRP could\_MD n't\_RB say\_VB from\_IN whom\_WP .\_.

He\_PRP told\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, that\_IN up\_IN to\_TO very\_RB lately\_RB there\_EX had\_VBD been\_VBN a\_DT notice-board\_NN of\_IN ``\_`` For\_IN Sale\_NN ''\_'' up\_IN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN perhaps\_RB Mitchell\_NNP ,\_, Sons\_NNP ,\_, &\_CC Candy\_NN ,\_, the\_DT house\_NN agents\_NNS ,\_, could\_MD tell\_VB me\_PRP something\_NN ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP thought\_VBD he\_PRP remembered\_VBD seeing\_VBG the\_DT name\_NN of\_IN that\_DT firm\_NN on\_IN the\_DT board\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB wish\_VB to\_TO seem\_VB too\_RB eager\_JJ ,\_, or\_CC to\_TO let\_VB my\_PRP$ informant\_NN know\_VB or\_CC guess\_VB too\_RB much\_JJ ,\_, so\_RB ,\_, thanking\_VBG him\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT usual\_JJ manner\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP strolled\_VBD away\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD now\_RB growing\_VBG dusk\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT autumn\_NN night\_NN was\_VBD closing\_VBG in\_IN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB lose\_VB any\_DT time\_NN .\_.

Having\_VBG learned\_VBN the\_DT address\_NN of\_IN Mitchell\_NNP ,\_, Sons\_NNP ,\_, &\_CC Candy\_NN from\_IN a\_DT directory\_NN at\_IN the\_DT Berkeley\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP was\_VBD soon\_RB at\_IN their\_PRP$ office\_NN in\_IN Sackville\_NNP Street\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT gentleman\_NN who\_WP saw\_VBD me\_PRP was\_VBD particularly\_RB suave\_JJ in\_IN manner\_NN ,\_, but\_CC uncommunicative\_JJ in\_IN equal\_JJ proportion\_NN .\_.

Having\_VBG once\_RB told\_VBD me\_PRP that\_IN the\_DT Piccadilly\_NNP house\_NN --\_: which\_WDT throughout\_IN our\_PRP$ interview\_NN he\_PRP called\_VBD a\_DT ``\_`` mansion\_NN ''\_'' --\_: was\_VBD sold\_VBN ,\_, he\_PRP considered\_VBD my\_PRP$ business\_NN as\_IN concluded\_VBN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP asked\_VBD who\_WP had\_VBD purchased\_VBN it\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP opened\_VBD his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS a\_DT thought\_NN wider\_JJR ,\_, and\_CC paused\_VBD a\_DT few\_JJ seconds\_NNS before\_IN replying\_VBG :\_: --\_: ``\_`` It\_PRP is\_VBZ sold\_VBN ,\_, sir\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Pardon\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, with\_IN equal\_JJ politeness\_NN ,\_, ``\_`` but\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP a\_DT special\_JJ reason\_NN for\_IN wishing\_VBG to\_TO know\_VB who\_WP purchased\_VBD it\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

Again\_RB he\_PRP paused\_VBD longer\_RBR ,\_, and\_CC raised\_VBD his\_PRP$ eyebrows\_NNS still\_RB more\_JJR .\_.

``\_`` It\_PRP is\_VBZ sold\_VBN ,\_, sir\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' was\_VBD again\_RB his\_PRP$ laconic\_JJ reply\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Surely\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` you\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB mind\_VB letting\_VBG me\_PRP know\_VB so\_RB much\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` But\_CC I\_PRP do\_VBP mind\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP answered\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` The\_DT affairs\_NNS of\_IN their\_PRP$ clients\_NNS are\_VBP absolutely\_RB safe\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT hands\_NNS of\_IN Mitchell\_NNP ,\_, Sons\_NNP ,\_, &\_CC Candy\_NN .\_. ''\_''

This\_DT was\_VBD manifestly\_RB a\_DT prig\_NN of\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ water\_NN ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT use\_NN arguing\_VBG with\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP thought\_VBD I\_PRP had\_VBD best\_RB meet\_VB him\_PRP on\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ ground\_NN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Your\_PRP$ clients\_NNS ,\_, sir\_NN ,\_, are\_VBP happy\_JJ in\_IN having\_VBG so\_RB resolute\_JJ a\_DT guardian\_NN of\_IN their\_PRP$ confidence\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP myself\_PRP a\_DT professional\_JJ man\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Here\_RB I\_PRP handed\_VBD him\_PRP my\_PRP$ card\_NN .\_.

``\_`` In\_IN this\_DT instance\_NN I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB prompted\_VBN by\_IN curiosity\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP act\_VBP on\_IN the\_DT part\_NN of\_IN Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP wishes\_VBZ to\_TO know\_VB something\_NN of\_IN the\_DT property\_NN which\_WDT was\_VBD ,\_, he\_PRP understood\_VBD ,\_, lately\_RB for\_IN sale\_NN .\_. ''\_''

These\_DT words\_NNS put\_VBP a\_DT different\_JJ complexion\_NN on\_IN affairs\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP would\_MD like\_VB to\_TO oblige\_VB you\_PRP if\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD ,\_, Mr.\_NNP Harker\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC especially\_RB would\_MD I\_PRP like\_VB to\_TO oblige\_VB his\_PRP$ lordship\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP once\_RB carried\_VBD out\_RP a\_DT small\_JJ matter\_NN of\_IN renting\_VBG some\_DT chambers\_NNS for\_IN him\_PRP when\_WRB he\_PRP was\_VBD the\_DT Honourable\_NNP Arthur\_NNP Holmwood\_NNP .\_.

If\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD let\_VB me\_PRP have\_VB his\_PRP$ lordship\_NN 's\_POS address\_NN I\_PRP will\_MD consult\_VB the\_DT House\_NNP on\_IN the\_DT subject\_NN ,\_, and\_CC will\_MD ,\_, in\_IN any\_DT case\_NN ,\_, communicate\_VBP with\_IN his\_PRP$ lordship\_NN by\_IN to-night\_NN 's\_POS post\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB a\_DT pleasure\_NN if\_IN we\_PRP can\_MD so\_RB far\_RB deviate\_VB from\_IN our\_PRP$ rules\_NNS as\_IN to\_TO give\_VB the\_DT required\_JJ information\_NN to\_TO his\_PRP$ lordship\_NN .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP wanted\_VBD to\_TO secure\_VB a\_DT friend\_NN ,\_, and\_CC not\_RB to\_TO make\_VB an\_DT enemy\_NN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP thanked\_VBD him\_PRP ,\_, gave\_VBD the\_DT address\_NN at\_IN Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS and\_CC came\_VBD away\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD now\_RB dark\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP was\_VBD tired\_JJ and\_CC hungry\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP got\_VBD a\_DT cup\_NN of\_IN tea\_NN at\_IN the\_DT Aërated\_NNP Bread\_NNP Company\_NNP and\_CC came\_VBD down\_RB to\_TO Purfleet\_NNP by\_IN the\_DT next\_JJ train\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP found\_VBD all\_PDT the\_DT others\_NNS at\_IN home\_NN .\_.

Mina\_NNP was\_VBD looking\_VBG tired\_JJ and\_CC pale\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC she\_PRP made\_VBD a\_DT gallant\_JJ effort\_NN to\_TO be\_VB bright\_JJ and\_CC cheerful\_JJ ,\_, it\_PRP wrung\_VBD my\_PRP$ heart\_NN to\_TO think\_VB that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD had\_VBN to\_TO keep\_VB anything\_NN from\_IN her\_PRP and\_CC so\_RB caused\_VBD her\_PRP$ inquietude\_NN .\_.

Thank\_VB God\_NNP ,\_, this\_DT will\_MD be\_VB the\_DT last\_JJ night\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ looking\_VBG on\_RP at\_IN our\_PRP$ conferences\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC feeling\_VBG the\_DT sting\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ not\_RB showing\_VBG our\_PRP$ confidence\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP took\_VBD all\_DT my\_PRP$ courage\_NN to\_TO hold\_VB to\_TO the\_DT wise\_JJ resolution\_NN of\_IN keeping\_VBG her\_PRP out\_IN of\_IN our\_PRP$ grim\_JJ task\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP seems\_VBZ somehow\_RB more\_RBR reconciled\_VBN ;\_: or\_CC else\_RB the\_DT very\_JJ subject\_NN seems\_VBZ to\_TO have\_VB become\_VBN repugnant\_JJ to\_TO her\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN when\_WRB any\_DT accidental\_JJ allusion\_NN is\_VBZ made\_VBN she\_PRP actually\_RB shudders\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP glad\_JJ we\_PRP made\_VBD our\_PRP$ resolution\_NN in\_IN time\_NN ,\_, as\_IN with\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT feeling\_NN as\_IN this\_DT ,\_, our\_PRP$ growing\_VBG knowledge\_NN would\_MD be\_VB torture\_VB to\_TO her\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB tell\_VB the\_DT others\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT day\_NN 's\_POS discovery\_NN till\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD alone\_RB ;\_: so\_RB after\_IN dinner\_NN --\_: followed\_VBN by\_IN a\_DT little\_JJ music\_NN to\_TO save\_VB appearances\_NNS even\_RB amongst\_IN ourselves\_PRP --\_: I\_PRP took\_VBD Mina\_NNP to\_TO her\_PRP$ room\_NN and\_CC left\_VBD her\_PRP to\_TO go\_VB to\_TO bed\_NN .\_.

The\_DT dear\_RB girl\_NN was\_VBD more\_RBR affectionate\_JJ with\_IN me\_PRP than\_IN ever\_RB ,\_, and\_CC clung\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP as\_IN though\_IN she\_PRP would\_MD detain\_VB me\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD much\_JJ to\_TO be\_VB talked\_VBN of\_IN and\_CC I\_PRP came\_VBD away\_RB .\_.

Thank\_VB God\_NNP ,\_, the\_DT ceasing\_NN of\_IN telling\_VBG things\_NNS has\_VBZ made\_VBN no\_DT difference\_NN between\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP came\_VBD down\_RB again\_RB I\_PRP found\_VBD the\_DT others\_NNS all\_DT gathered\_VBN round\_NN the\_DT fire\_NN in\_IN the\_DT study\_NN .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT train\_NN I\_PRP had\_VBD written\_VBN my\_PRP$ diary\_NN so\_RB far\_RB ,\_, and\_CC simply\_RB read\_VB it\_PRP off\_RP to\_TO them\_PRP as\_IN the\_DT best\_JJS means\_NNS of\_IN letting\_VBG them\_PRP get\_VB abreast\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ information\_NN ;\_: when\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD finished\_VBN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` This\_DT has\_VBZ been\_VBN a\_DT great\_JJ day\_NN 's\_POS work\_NN ,\_, friend\_NN Jonathan\_NNP .\_.

Doubtless\_NNP we\_PRP are\_VBP on\_IN the\_DT track\_NN of\_IN the\_DT missing\_JJ boxes\_NNS .\_.

If\_IN we\_PRP find\_VBP them\_PRP all\_DT in\_IN that\_DT house\_NN ,\_, then\_RB our\_PRP$ work\_NN is\_VBZ near\_IN the\_DT end\_NN .\_.

But\_CC if\_IN there\_EX be\_VB some\_DT missing\_VBG ,\_, we\_PRP must\_MD search\_VB until\_IN we\_PRP find\_VBP them\_PRP .\_.

Then\_RB shall\_MD we\_PRP make\_VB our\_PRP$ final\_JJ coup\_NN ,\_, and\_CC hunt\_NN the\_DT wretch\_NN to\_TO his\_PRP$ real\_JJ death\_NN .\_. ''\_''

We\_PRP all\_DT sat\_VBD silent\_JJ awhile\_RB and\_CC all\_DT at\_IN once\_RB Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP spoke\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Say\_VB !\_.

how\_WRB are\_VBP we\_PRP going\_VBG to\_TO get\_VB into\_IN that\_DT house\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` We\_PRP got\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ ,\_, ''\_'' answered\_VBD Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP quickly\_RB .\_.

``\_`` But\_CC ,\_, Art\_NNP ,\_, this\_DT is\_VBZ different\_JJ .\_.

We\_PRP broke\_VBD house\_NN at\_IN Carfax\_NNP ,\_, but\_CC we\_PRP had\_VBD night\_NN and\_CC a\_DT walled\_JJ park\_NN to\_TO protect\_VB us\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB a\_DT mighty\_JJ different\_JJ thing\_NN to\_TO commit\_VB burglary\_NN in\_IN Piccadilly\_NNP ,\_, either\_CC by\_IN day\_NN or\_CC night\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP confess\_VBP I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB see\_VB how\_WRB we\_PRP are\_VBP going\_VBG to\_TO get\_VB in\_RP unless\_IN that\_DT agency\_NN duck\_NN can\_MD find\_VB us\_PRP a\_DT key\_NN of\_IN some\_DT sort\_NN ;\_: perhaps\_RB we\_PRP shall\_MD know\_VB when\_WRB you\_PRP get\_VBP his\_PRP$ letter\_NN in\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP 's\_POS brows\_NNS contracted\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP stood\_VBD up\_RB and\_CC walked\_VBD about\_IN the\_DT room\_NN .\_.

By-and-by\_JJ he\_PRP stopped\_VBD and\_CC said\_VBD ,\_, turning\_VBG from\_IN one\_CD to\_TO another\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Quincey\_NNP 's\_POS head\_NN is\_VBZ level\_NN .\_.

This\_DT burglary\_NN business\_NN is\_VBZ getting\_VBG serious\_JJ ;\_: we\_PRP got\_VBD off\_RP once\_RB all\_DT right\_NN ;\_: but\_CC we\_PRP have\_VBP now\_RB a\_DT rare\_JJ job\_NN on\_IN hand\_NN --\_: unless\_IN we\_PRP can\_MD find\_VB the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS key\_JJ basket\_NN .\_. ''\_''

As\_IN nothing\_NN could\_MD well\_RB be\_VB done\_VBN before\_IN morning\_NN ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN it\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB at\_IN least\_JJS advisable\_JJ to\_TO wait\_VB till\_IN Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP should\_MD hear\_VB from\_IN Mitchell\_NNP 's\_POS ,\_, we\_PRP decided\_VBD not\_RB to\_TO take\_VB any\_DT active\_JJ step\_NN before\_IN breakfast\_NN time\_NN .\_.

For\_IN a\_DT good\_JJ while\_NN we\_PRP sat\_VBD and\_CC smoked\_VBD ,\_, discussing\_VBG the\_DT matter\_NN in\_IN its\_PRP$ various\_JJ lights\_NNS and\_CC bearings\_NNS ;\_: I\_PRP took\_VBD the\_DT opportunity\_NN of\_IN bringing\_VBG this\_DT diary\_NN right\_RB up\_IN to\_TO the\_DT moment\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP very\_RB sleepy\_JJ and\_CC shall\_MD go\_VB to\_TO bed\_NN ...\_: .\_.

Just\_RB a\_DT line\_NN .\_.

Mina\_NNP sleeps\_VBZ soundly\_RB and\_CC her\_PRP$ breathing\_NN is\_VBZ regular\_JJ .\_.

Her\_PRP$ forehead\_NN is\_VBZ puckered\_VBN up\_RP into\_IN little\_JJ wrinkles\_NNS ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN she\_PRP thinks\_VBZ even\_RB in\_IN her\_PRP$ sleep\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP is\_VBZ still\_RB too\_RB pale\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC does\_VBZ not\_RB look\_VB so\_RB haggard\_RB as\_IN she\_PRP did\_VBD this\_DT morning\_NN .\_.

To-morrow\_JJ will\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP hope\_VBP ,\_, mend\_VB all\_PDT this\_DT ;\_: she\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB herself\_PRP at\_IN home\_NN in\_IN Exeter\_NNP .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP sleepy\_JJ !\_.

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

1\_CD October\_NNP .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP am\_VBP puzzled\_VBN afresh\_RB about\_IN Renfield\_NNP .\_.

His\_PRP$ moods\_NNS change\_VBP so\_RB rapidly\_RB that\_IN I\_PRP find\_VBP it\_PRP difficult\_JJ to\_TO keep\_VB touch\_NN of\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN they\_PRP always\_RB mean\_VBP something\_NN more\_JJR than\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ well-being\_NN ,\_, they\_PRP form\_VBP a\_DT more\_JJR than\_IN interesting\_JJ study\_NN .\_.

This\_DT morning\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB I\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO see\_VB him\_PRP after\_IN his\_PRP$ repulse\_NN of\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, his\_PRP$ manner\_NN was\_VBD that\_IN of\_IN a\_DT man\_NN commanding\_JJ destiny\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, in\_IN fact\_NN ,\_, commanding\_JJ destiny\_NN --\_: subjectively\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB really\_RB care\_VB for\_IN any\_DT of\_IN the\_DT things\_NNS of\_IN mere\_JJ earth\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT clouds\_NNS and\_CC looked\_VBD down\_RP on\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT weaknesses\_NNS and\_CC wants\_VBZ of\_IN us\_PRP poor\_JJ mortals\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP thought\_VBD I\_PRP would\_MD improve\_VB the\_DT occasion\_NN and\_CC learn\_VB something\_NN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP asked\_VBD him\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` What\_WP about\_IN the\_DT flies\_NNS these\_DT times\_NNS ?\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP smiled\_VBD on\_IN me\_PRP in\_IN quite\_RB a\_DT superior\_JJ sort\_NN of\_IN way\_NN --\_: such\_PDT a\_DT smile\_NN as\_IN would\_MD have\_VB become\_VBN the\_DT face\_NN of\_IN Malvolio\_NNP --\_: as\_IN he\_PRP answered\_VBD me\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` The\_DT fly\_NN ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB sir\_JJ ,\_, has\_VBZ one\_CD striking\_JJ feature\_NN ;\_: its\_PRP$ wings\_NNS are\_VBP typical\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT aërial\_JJ powers\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT psychic\_JJ faculties\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT ancients\_NNS did\_VBD well\_RB when\_WRB they\_PRP typified\_VBD the\_DT soul\_NN as\_IN a\_DT butterfly\_NN !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP thought\_VBD I\_PRP would\_MD push\_VB his\_PRP$ analogy\_NN to\_TO its\_PRP$ utmost\_JJ logically\_RB ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP said\_VBD quickly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, it\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT soul\_NN you\_PRP are\_VBP after\_IN now\_RB ,\_, is\_VBZ it\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

His\_PRP$ madness\_NN foiled\_JJ his\_PRP$ reason\_NN ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT puzzled\_VBN look\_NN spread\_NN over\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN as\_IN ,\_, shaking\_VBG his\_PRP$ head\_NN with\_IN a\_DT decision\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP had\_VBD but\_CC seldom\_RB seen\_VBN in\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, no\_DT ,\_, oh\_UH no\_DT !\_.

I\_PRP want\_VBP no\_DT souls\_NNS .\_.

Life\_NNP is\_VBZ all\_DT I\_PRP want\_VBP .\_. ''\_''

Here\_RB he\_PRP brightened\_VBD up\_RP ;\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP am\_VBP pretty\_RB indifferent\_JJ about\_IN it\_PRP at\_IN present\_JJ .\_.

Life\_NNP is\_VBZ all\_DT right\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP have\_VBP all\_DT I\_PRP want\_VBP .\_.

You\_PRP must\_MD get\_VB a\_DT new\_JJ patient\_NN ,\_, doctor\_NN ,\_, if\_IN you\_PRP wish\_VBP to\_TO study\_VB zoöphagy\_NN !\_. ''\_''

This\_DT puzzled\_VBD me\_PRP a\_DT little\_JJ ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP drew\_VBD him\_PRP on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Then\_RB you\_PRP command\_VBP life\_NN ;\_: you\_PRP are\_VBP a\_DT god\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP suppose\_VBP ?\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP smiled\_VBD with\_IN an\_DT ineffably\_RB benign\_JJ superiority\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Oh\_UH no\_UH !\_.

Far\_RB be\_VB it\_PRP from\_IN me\_PRP to\_TO arrogate\_VB to\_TO myself\_PRP the\_DT attributes\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT Deity\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB even\_RB concerned\_VBN in\_IN His\_PRP$ especially\_RB spiritual\_JJ doings\_NNS .\_.

If\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD state\_VB my\_PRP$ intellectual\_JJ position\_NN I\_PRP am\_VBP ,\_, so\_RB far\_RB as\_IN concerns\_NNS things\_NNS purely\_RB terrestrial\_JJ ,\_, somewhat\_RB in\_IN the\_DT position\_NN which\_WDT Enoch\_NNP occupied\_VBD spiritually\_RB !\_. ''\_''

This\_DT was\_VBD a\_DT poser\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB at\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN recall\_NN Enoch\_NNP 's\_POS appositeness\_NN ;\_: so\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO ask\_VB a\_DT simple\_JJ question\_NN ,\_, though\_IN I\_PRP felt\_VBD that\_IN by\_IN so\_RB doing\_VBG I\_PRP was\_VBD lowering\_VBG myself\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT eyes\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT lunatic\_JJ :\_: --\_: ``\_`` And\_CC why\_WRB with\_IN Enoch\_NNP ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Because\_IN he\_PRP walked\_VBD with\_IN God\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB see\_VB the\_DT analogy\_NN ,\_, but\_CC did\_VBD not\_RB like\_VB to\_TO admit\_VB it\_PRP ;\_: so\_IN I\_PRP harked\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO what\_WP he\_PRP had\_VBD denied\_VBN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` So\_IN you\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB care\_VB about\_IN life\_NN and\_CC you\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB want\_VB souls\_NNS .\_.

Why\_WRB not\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP put\_VBD my\_PRP$ question\_NN quickly\_RB and\_CC somewhat\_RB sternly\_RB ,\_, on\_IN purpose\_NN to\_TO disconcert\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT effort\_NN succeeded\_VBD ;\_: for\_IN an\_DT instant\_NN he\_PRP unconsciously\_RB relapsed\_VBD into\_IN his\_PRP$ old\_JJ servile\_JJ manner\_NN ,\_, bent\_JJ low\_NN before\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC actually\_RB fawned\_VBN upon\_IN me\_PRP as\_IN he\_PRP replied\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB want\_VB any\_DT souls\_NNS ,\_, indeed\_RB ,\_, indeed\_RB !\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD n't\_RB use\_VB them\_PRP if\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD them\_PRP ;\_: they\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB no\_DT manner\_NN of\_IN use\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD n't\_RB eat\_VB them\_PRP or\_CC --\_: --\_: ''\_'' He\_PRP suddenly\_RB stopped\_VBD and\_CC the\_DT old\_JJ cunning\_JJ look\_NN spread\_VBN over\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, like\_IN a\_DT wind-sweep\_NN on\_IN the\_DT surface\_NN of\_IN the\_DT water\_NN .\_.

``\_`` And\_CC doctor\_NN ,\_, as\_IN to\_TO life\_NN ,\_, what\_WP is\_VBZ it\_PRP after\_IN all\_DT ?\_.

When\_WRB you\_PRP 've\_VBP got\_VBN all\_DT you\_PRP require\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP know\_VBP that\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD never\_RB want\_VB ,\_, that\_WDT is\_VBZ all\_DT .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP friends\_NNS --\_: good\_JJ friends\_NNS --\_: like\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP ''\_'' ;\_: this\_DT was\_VBD said\_VBD with\_IN a\_DT leer\_NN of\_IN inexpressible\_JJ cunning\_JJ .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP know\_VBP that\_IN I\_PRP shall\_MD never\_RB lack\_VB the\_DT means\_NNS of\_IN life\_NN !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP think\_VBP that\_IN through\_IN the\_DT cloudiness\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ insanity\_NN he\_PRP saw\_VBD some\_DT antagonism\_NN in\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB fell\_VBD back\_RB on\_IN the\_DT last\_JJ refuge\_NN of\_IN such\_JJ as\_IN he\_PRP --\_: a\_DT dogged\_JJ silence\_NN .\_.

After\_IN a\_DT short\_JJ time\_NN I\_PRP saw\_VBD that\_IN for\_IN the\_DT present\_JJ it\_PRP was\_VBD useless\_JJ to\_TO speak\_VB to\_TO him\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD sulky\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB I\_PRP came\_VBD away\_RB .\_.

Later\_RB in\_IN the\_DT day\_NN he\_PRP sent\_VBD for\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

Ordinarily\_RB I\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB have\_VB come\_VBN without\_IN special\_JJ reason\_NN ,\_, but\_CC just\_RB at\_IN present\_JJ I\_PRP am\_VBP so\_RB interested\_JJ in\_IN him\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP would\_MD gladly\_RB make\_VB an\_DT effort\_NN .\_.

Besides\_IN ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP glad\_JJ to\_TO have\_VB anything\_NN to\_TO help\_VB to\_TO pass\_VB the\_DT time\_NN .\_.

Harker\_NNP is\_VBZ out\_RP ,\_, following\_VBG up\_RP clues\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC so\_RB are\_VBP Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP and\_CC Quincey\_NNP .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP sits\_VBZ in\_IN my\_PRP$ study\_NN poring\_VBG over\_IN the\_DT record\_NN prepared\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT Harkers\_NNPS ;\_: he\_PRP seems\_VBZ to\_TO think\_VB that\_IN by\_IN accurate\_JJ knowledge\_NN of\_IN all\_DT details\_NNS he\_PRP will\_MD light\_VB upon\_IN some\_DT clue\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP does\_VBZ not\_RB wish\_VB to\_TO be\_VB disturbed\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT work\_NN ,\_, without\_IN cause\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB taken\_VBN him\_PRP with\_IN me\_PRP to\_TO see\_VB the\_DT patient\_NN ,\_, only\_RB I\_PRP thought\_VBD that\_IN after\_IN his\_PRP$ last\_JJ repulse\_NN he\_PRP might\_MD not\_RB care\_VB to\_TO go\_VB again\_RB .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD also\_RB another\_DT reason\_NN :\_: Renfield\_NNP might\_MD not\_RB speak\_VB so\_RB freely\_RB before\_IN a\_DT third\_JJ person\_NN as\_IN when\_WRB he\_PRP and\_CC I\_PRP were\_VBD alone\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP found\_VBD him\_PRP sitting\_VBG out\_RP in\_IN the\_DT middle\_NN of\_IN the\_DT floor\_NN on\_IN his\_PRP$ stool\_NN ,\_, a\_DT pose\_VBP which\_WDT is\_VBZ generally\_RB indicative\_JJ of\_IN some\_DT mental\_JJ energy\_NN on\_IN his\_PRP$ part\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP came\_VBD in\_RP ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN the\_DT question\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN waiting\_VBG on\_IN his\_PRP$ lips\_NNS :\_: --\_: ``\_`` What\_WP about\_IN souls\_NNS ?\_. ''\_''

It\_PRP was\_VBD evident\_JJ then\_RB that\_IN my\_PRP$ surmise\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN correct\_JJ .\_.

Unconscious\_JJ cerebration\_NN was\_VBD doing\_VBG its\_PRP$ work\_NN ,\_, even\_RB with\_IN the\_DT lunatic\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP determined\_VBD to\_TO have\_VB the\_DT matter\_NN out\_RP .\_.

``\_`` What\_WP about\_IN them\_PRP yourself\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP asked\_VBD .\_.

He\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB reply\_VB for\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN but\_CC looked\_VBD all\_DT round\_NN him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC up\_RB and\_CC down\_RB ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN he\_PRP expected\_VBD to\_TO find\_VB some\_DT inspiration\_NN for\_IN an\_DT answer\_NN .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB want\_VB any\_DT souls\_NNS !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT feeble\_JJ ,\_, apologetic\_JJ way\_NN .\_.

The\_DT matter\_NN seemed\_VBD preying\_VBG on\_IN his\_PRP$ mind\_NN ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB I\_PRP determined\_VBD to\_TO use\_VB it\_PRP --\_: to\_TO ``\_`` be\_VB cruel\_JJ only\_RB to\_TO be\_VB kind\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

So\_RB I\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP like\_IN life\_NN ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP want\_VBP life\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Oh\_UH yes\_UH !\_.

but\_CC that\_DT is\_VBZ all\_DT right\_NN ;\_: you\_PRP need\_VBP n't\_RB worry\_VB about\_IN that\_DT !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` But\_CC ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP asked\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` how\_WRB are\_VBP we\_PRP to\_TO get\_VB the\_DT life\_NN without\_IN getting\_VBG the\_DT soul\_NN also\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

This\_DT seemed\_VBD to\_TO puzzle\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP followed\_VBD it\_PRP up\_RP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` A\_DT nice\_JJ time\_NN you\_PRP 'll\_MD have\_VB some\_DT time\_NN when\_WRB you\_PRP 're\_VBP flying\_VBG out\_RP there\_RB ,\_, with\_IN the\_DT souls\_NNS of\_IN thousands\_NNS of\_IN flies\_NNS and\_CC spiders\_NNS and\_CC birds\_NNS and\_CC cats\_NNS buzzing\_VBG and\_CC twittering\_VBG and\_CC miauing\_VBG all\_DT round\_VBP you\_PRP .\_.

You\_PRP 've\_VBP got\_VBN their\_PRP$ lives\_NNS ,\_, you\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP must\_MD put\_VB up\_RP with\_IN their\_PRP$ souls\_NNS !\_. ''\_''

Something\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO affect\_VB his\_PRP$ imagination\_NN ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP put\_VBD his\_PRP$ fingers\_NNS to\_TO his\_PRP$ ears\_NNS and\_CC shut\_VB his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ,\_, screwing\_VBG them\_PRP up\_RP tightly\_RB just\_RB as\_IN a\_DT small\_JJ boy\_NN does\_VBZ when\_WRB his\_PRP$ face\_NN is\_VBZ being\_VBG soaped\_VBN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD something\_NN pathetic\_JJ in\_IN it\_PRP that\_WDT touched\_VBD me\_PRP ;\_: it\_PRP also\_RB gave\_VBD me\_PRP a\_DT lesson\_NN ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP seemed\_VBD that\_IN before\_IN me\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT child\_NN --\_: only\_RB a\_DT child\_NN ,\_, though\_IN the\_DT features\_NNS were\_VBD worn\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT stubble\_NN on\_IN the\_DT jaws\_NNS was\_VBD white\_JJ .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD evident\_JJ that\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD undergoing\_VBG some\_DT process\_NN of\_IN mental\_JJ disturbance\_NN ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, knowing\_VBG how\_WRB his\_PRP$ past\_JJ moods\_NNS had\_VBD interpreted\_VBN things\_NNS seemingly\_RB foreign\_JJ to\_TO himself\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP thought\_VBD I\_PRP would\_MD enter\_VB into\_IN his\_PRP$ mind\_NN as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD and\_CC go\_VB with\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT first\_JJ step\_NN was\_VBD to\_TO restore\_VB confidence\_NN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP asked\_VBD him\_PRP ,\_, speaking\_VBG pretty\_RB loud\_JJ so\_IN that\_IN he\_PRP would\_MD hear\_VB me\_PRP through\_IN his\_PRP$ closed\_JJ ears\_NNS :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Would\_MD you\_PRP like\_VB some\_DT sugar\_NN to\_TO get\_VB your\_PRP$ flies\_NNS round\_VB again\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO wake\_VB up\_RP all\_DT at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, and\_CC shook\_VBD his\_PRP$ head\_NN .\_.

With\_IN a\_DT laugh\_NN he\_PRP replied\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Not\_RB much\_JJ !\_.

flies\_NNS are\_VBP poor\_JJ things\_NNS ,\_, after\_IN all\_DT !\_. ''\_''

After\_IN a\_DT pause\_NN he\_PRP added\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` But\_CC I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB want\_VB their\_PRP$ souls\_NNS buzzing\_VBG round\_NN me\_PRP ,\_, all\_PDT the\_DT same\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Or\_CC spiders\_NNS ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN .\_.

``\_`` Blow\_VB spiders\_NNS !\_.

What\_WP 's\_VBZ the\_DT use\_NN of\_IN spiders\_NNS ?\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ n't\_RB anything\_NN in\_IN them\_PRP to\_TO eat\_VB or\_CC ''\_'' --\_: he\_PRP stopped\_VBD suddenly\_RB ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN reminded\_VBN of\_IN a\_DT forbidden\_VBN topic\_NN .\_.

``\_`` So\_RB ,\_, so\_RB !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP thought\_VBD to\_TO myself\_PRP ,\_, ``\_`` this\_DT is\_VBZ the\_DT second\_JJ time\_NN he\_PRP has\_VBZ suddenly\_RB stopped\_VBN at\_IN the\_DT word\_NN `\_`` drink\_NN '\_'' ;\_: what\_WP does\_VBZ it\_PRP mean\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

Renfield\_NNP seemed\_VBD himself\_PRP aware\_JJ of\_IN having\_VBG made\_VBN a\_DT lapse\_NN ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP hurried\_VBD on\_RP ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN to\_TO distract\_VB my\_PRP$ attention\_NN from\_IN it\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB take\_VB any\_DT stock\_NN at\_IN all\_DT in\_IN such\_JJ matters\_NNS .\_.

`\_`` Rats\_NNS and\_CC mice\_NNS and\_CC such\_JJ small\_JJ deer\_NNS ,\_, '\_'' as\_IN Shakespeare\_NNP has\_VBZ it\_PRP ,\_, `\_`` chicken-feed\_NN of\_IN the\_DT larder\_NN '\_'' they\_PRP might\_MD be\_VB called\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP 'm\_VBP past\_JJ all\_PDT that\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN nonsense\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP might\_MD as\_RB well\_RB ask\_VB a\_DT man\_NN to\_TO eat\_VB molecules\_NNS with\_IN a\_DT pair\_NN of\_IN chop-sticks\_NNS ,\_, as\_IN to\_TO try\_VB to\_TO interest\_VB me\_PRP about\_IN the\_DT lesser\_JJR carnivora\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB I\_PRP know\_VBP of\_IN what\_WP is\_VBZ before\_IN me\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP see\_VBP ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` You\_PRP want\_VBP big\_JJ things\_NNS that\_IN you\_PRP can\_MD make\_VB your\_PRP$ teeth\_NNS meet\_VB in\_IN ?\_.

How\_WRB would\_MD you\_PRP like\_VB to\_TO breakfast\_NN on\_IN elephant\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` What\_WP ridiculous\_JJ nonsense\_NN you\_PRP are\_VBP talking\_VBG !\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP was\_VBD getting\_VBG too\_RB wide\_JJ awake\_RB ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP thought\_VBD I\_PRP would\_MD press\_VB him\_PRP hard\_RB .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP wonder\_VBP ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD reflectively\_RB ,\_, ``\_`` what\_WP an\_DT elephant\_NN 's\_POS soul\_NN is\_VBZ like\_IN !\_. ''\_''

The\_DT effect\_NN I\_PRP desired\_VBD was\_VBD obtained\_VBN ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB fell\_VBD from\_IN his\_PRP$ high-horse\_NN and\_CC became\_VBD a\_DT child\_NN again\_RB .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB want\_VB an\_DT elephant\_NN 's\_POS soul\_NN ,\_, or\_CC any\_DT soul\_NN at\_IN all\_DT !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

For\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ moments\_NNS he\_PRP sat\_VBD despondently\_RB .\_.

Suddenly\_RB he\_PRP jumped\_VBD to\_TO his\_PRP$ feet\_NNS ,\_, with\_IN his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS blazing\_VBG and\_CC all\_PDT the\_DT signs\_NNS of\_IN intense\_JJ cerebral\_JJ excitement\_NN .\_.

``\_`` To\_TO hell\_NN with\_IN you\_PRP and\_CC your\_PRP$ souls\_NNS !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP shouted\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Why\_WRB do\_VBP you\_PRP plague\_VB me\_PRP about\_IN souls\_NNS ?\_.

Have\_VBP n't\_RB I\_PRP got\_VBD enough\_RB to\_TO worry\_VB ,\_, and\_CC pain\_NN ,\_, and\_CC distract\_VB me\_PRP already\_RB ,\_, without\_IN thinking\_VBG of\_IN souls\_NNS !\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP looked\_VBD so\_RB hostile\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP thought\_VBD he\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN for\_IN another\_DT homicidal\_JJ fit\_NN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP blew\_VBD my\_PRP$ whistle\_VB .\_.

The\_DT instant\_NN ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD so\_RB he\_PRP became\_VBD calm\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD apologetically\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Forgive\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, Doctor\_NNP ;\_: I\_PRP forgot\_VBD myself\_PRP .\_.

You\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB need\_VB any\_DT help\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP so\_RB worried\_VBN in\_IN my\_PRP$ mind\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP apt\_JJ to\_TO be\_VB irritable\_JJ .\_.

If\_IN you\_PRP only\_RB knew\_VBD the\_DT problem\_NN I\_PRP have\_VBP to\_TO face\_VB ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP working\_VBG out\_RP ,\_, you\_PRP would\_MD pity\_NN ,\_, and\_CC tolerate\_VB ,\_, and\_CC pardon\_NN me\_PRP .\_.

Pray\_NN do\_VBP not\_RB put\_VB me\_PRP in\_IN a\_DT strait-waistcoat\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP want\_VBP to\_TO think\_VB and\_CC I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB think\_VB freely\_RB when\_WRB my\_PRP$ body\_NN is\_VBZ confined\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP sure\_JJ you\_PRP will\_MD understand\_VB !\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP had\_VBD evidently\_RB self-control\_JJ ;\_: so\_RB when\_WRB the\_DT attendants\_NNS came\_VBD I\_PRP told\_VBD them\_PRP not\_RB to\_TO mind\_VB ,\_, and\_CC they\_PRP withdrew\_VBD .\_.

Renfield\_NNP watched\_VBD them\_PRP go\_VB ;\_: when\_WRB the\_DT door\_NN was\_VBD closed\_VBN he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, with\_IN considerable\_JJ dignity\_NN and\_CC sweetness\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP ,\_, you\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN very\_RB considerate\_JJ towards\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

Believe\_VB me\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP very\_RB ,\_, very\_RB grateful\_JJ to\_TO you\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP thought\_VBD it\_PRP well\_RB to\_TO leave\_VB him\_PRP in\_IN this\_DT mood\_NN ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB I\_PRP came\_VBD away\_RB .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ certainly\_RB something\_NN to\_TO ponder\_VB over\_RP in\_IN this\_DT man\_NN 's\_POS state\_NN .\_.

Several\_JJ points\_NNS seem\_VBP to\_TO make\_VB what\_WP the\_DT American\_JJ interviewer\_NN calls\_VBZ ``\_`` a\_DT story\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' if\_IN one\_PRP could\_MD only\_RB get\_VB them\_PRP in\_IN proper\_JJ order\_NN .\_.

Here\_RB they\_PRP are\_VBP :\_: --\_: Will\_MD not\_RB mention\_VB ``\_`` drinking\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Fears\_NNS the\_DT thought\_NN of\_IN being\_VBG burdened\_VBN with\_IN the\_DT ``\_`` soul\_NN ''\_'' of\_IN anything\_NN .\_.

Has\_VBZ no\_DT dread\_NN of\_IN wanting\_VBG ``\_`` life\_NN ''\_'' in\_IN the\_DT future\_NN .\_.

Despises\_VBZ the\_DT meaner\_JJR forms\_NNS of\_IN life\_NN altogether\_RB ,\_, though\_IN he\_PRP dreads\_VBZ being\_VBG haunted\_VBN by\_IN their\_PRP$ souls\_NNS .\_.

Logically\_RB all\_DT these\_DT things\_NNS point\_VBP one\_CD way\_NN !\_.

he\_PRP has\_VBZ assurance\_NN of\_IN some\_DT kind\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP will\_MD acquire\_VB some\_DT higher\_JJR life\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP dreads\_VBZ the\_DT consequence\_NN --\_: the\_DT burden\_NN of\_IN a\_DT soul\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB it\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT human\_JJ life\_NN he\_PRP looks\_VBZ to\_TO !\_.

And\_CC the\_DT assurance\_NN --\_: ?\_.

Merciful\_NNP God\_NNP !\_.

the\_DT Count\_NNP has\_VBZ been\_VBN to\_TO him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX is\_VBZ some\_DT new\_JJ scheme\_NN of\_IN terror\_NN afoot\_RB !\_.

Later\_RB .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP went\_VBD after\_IN my\_PRP$ round\_NN to\_TO Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP and\_CC told\_VBD him\_PRP my\_PRP$ suspicion\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP grew\_VBD very\_RB grave\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC ,\_, after\_IN thinking\_VBG the\_DT matter\_NN over\_IN for\_IN a\_DT while\_NN asked\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO take\_VB him\_PRP to\_TO Renfield\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP did\_VBD so\_RB .\_.

As\_IN we\_PRP came\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT door\_NN we\_PRP heard\_VBD the\_DT lunatic\_NN within\_IN singing\_NN gaily\_RB ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP used\_VBD to\_TO do\_VB in\_IN the\_DT time\_NN which\_WDT now\_RB seems\_VBZ so\_RB long\_RB ago\_RB .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP entered\_VBD we\_PRP saw\_VBD with\_IN amazement\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD spread\_VBN out\_RP his\_PRP$ sugar\_NN as\_IN of\_IN old\_JJ ;\_: the\_DT flies\_NNS ,\_, lethargic\_JJ with\_IN the\_DT autumn\_NN ,\_, were\_VBD beginning\_VBG to\_TO buzz\_VB into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP tried\_VBD to\_TO make\_VB him\_PRP talk\_NN of\_IN the\_DT subject\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ previous\_JJ conversation\_NN ,\_, but\_CC he\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB attend\_VB .\_.

He\_PRP went\_VBD on\_RP with\_IN his\_PRP$ singing\_NN ,\_, just\_RB as\_IN though\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB been\_VBN present\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD got\_VBN a\_DT scrap\_NN of\_IN paper\_NN and\_CC was\_VBD folding\_JJ it\_PRP into\_IN a\_DT note-book\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO come\_VB away\_RB as\_RB ignorant\_JJ as\_IN we\_PRP went\_VBD in\_IN .\_.

His\_PRP$ is\_VBZ a\_DT curious\_JJ case\_NN indeed\_RB ;\_: we\_PRP must\_MD watch\_VB him\_PRP to-night\_JJ .\_.

Letter\_NNP ,\_, Mitchell\_NNP ,\_, Sons\_NNP and\_CC Candy\_NN to\_TO Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` 1\_CD October\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` My\_PRP$ Lord\_NNP ,\_, ``\_`` We\_PRP are\_VBP at\_IN all\_DT times\_NNS only\_RB too\_RB happy\_JJ to\_TO meet\_VB your\_PRP$ wishes\_NNS .\_.

We\_PRP beg\_VBP ,\_, with\_IN regard\_NN to\_TO the\_DT desire\_NN of\_IN your\_PRP$ Lordship\_NN ,\_, expressed\_VBN by\_IN Mr.\_NNP Harker\_NNP on\_IN your\_PRP$ behalf\_NN ,\_, to\_TO supply\_VB the\_DT following\_VBG information\_NN concerning\_VBG the\_DT sale\_NN and\_CC purchase\_NN of\_IN No.\_NN 347\_CD ,\_, Piccadilly\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT original\_JJ vendors\_NNS are\_VBP the\_DT executors\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT late\_JJ Mr.\_NNP Archibald\_NNP Winter-Suffield\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT purchaser\_NN is\_VBZ a\_DT foreign\_JJ nobleman\_NN ,\_, Count\_NNP de\_NNP Ville\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP effected\_VBD the\_DT purchase\_NN himself\_PRP paying\_VBG the\_DT purchase\_NN money\_NN in\_IN notes\_NNS `\_`` over\_IN the\_DT counter\_NN ,\_, '\_'' if\_IN your\_PRP$ Lordship\_NN will\_MD pardon\_NN us\_PRP using\_VBG so\_RB vulgar\_JJ an\_DT expression\_NN .\_.

Beyond\_IN this\_DT we\_PRP know\_VBP nothing\_NN whatever\_WDT of\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

``\_`` We\_PRP are\_VBP ,\_, my\_PRP$ Lord\_NNP ,\_, ``\_`` Your\_PRP$ Lordship\_NN 's\_POS humble\_JJ servants\_NNS ,\_, ``\_`` Mitchell\_NNP ,\_, Sons\_NNP &\_CC Candy\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

2\_CD October\_NNP .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP placed\_VBD a\_DT man\_NN in\_IN the\_DT corridor\_NN last\_JJ night\_NN ,\_, and\_CC told\_VBD him\_PRP to\_TO make\_VB an\_DT accurate\_JJ note\_NN of\_IN any\_DT sound\_NN he\_PRP might\_MD hear\_VB from\_IN Renfield\_NNP 's\_POS room\_NN ,\_, and\_CC gave\_VBD him\_PRP instructions\_NNS that\_IN if\_IN there\_EX should\_MD be\_VB anything\_NN strange\_JJ he\_PRP was\_VBD to\_TO call\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

After\_IN dinner\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB we\_PRP had\_VBD all\_DT gathered\_VBN round\_NN the\_DT fire\_NN in\_IN the\_DT study\_NN --\_: Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP having\_VBG gone\_VBN to\_TO bed\_NN --\_: we\_PRP discussed\_VBD the\_DT attempts\_NNS and\_CC discoveries\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT day\_NN .\_.

Harker\_NNP was\_VBD the\_DT only\_JJ one\_NN who\_WP had\_VBD any\_DT result\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP are\_VBP in\_IN great\_JJ hopes\_NNS that\_IN his\_PRP$ clue\_NN may\_MD be\_VB an\_DT important\_JJ one\_CD .\_.

Before\_IN going\_VBG to\_TO bed\_NN I\_PRP went\_VBD round\_JJ to\_TO the\_DT patient\_NN 's\_POS room\_NN and\_CC looked\_VBD in\_RP through\_IN the\_DT observation\_NN trap\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD sleeping\_VBG soundly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ heart\_NN rose\_VBD and\_CC fell\_VBD with\_IN regular\_JJ respiration\_NN .\_.

This\_DT morning\_NN the\_DT man\_NN on\_IN duty\_NN reported\_VBN to\_TO me\_PRP that\_IN a\_DT little\_JJ after\_IN midnight\_NN he\_PRP was\_VBD restless\_JJ and\_CC kept\_VBD saying\_VBG his\_PRP$ prayers\_NNS somewhat\_RB loudly\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP asked\_VBD him\_PRP if\_IN that\_DT was\_VBD all\_DT ;\_: he\_PRP replied\_VBD that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD all\_DT he\_PRP heard\_VBD .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD something\_NN about\_IN his\_PRP$ manner\_NN so\_RB suspicious\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP asked\_VBD him\_PRP point\_NN blank\_NN if\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN asleep\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP denied\_VBD sleep\_NN ,\_, but\_CC admitted\_VBD to\_TO having\_VBG ``\_`` dozed\_VBN ''\_'' for\_IN a\_DT while\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ too\_RB bad\_JJ that\_IN men\_NNS can\_MD not\_RB be\_VB trusted\_VBN unless\_IN they\_PRP are\_VBP watched\_VBN .\_.

To-day\_JJ Harker\_NNP is\_VBZ out\_RP following\_VBG up\_RP his\_PRP$ clue\_NN ,\_, and\_CC Art\_NNP and\_CC Quincey\_NNP are\_VBP looking\_VBG after\_IN horses\_NNS .\_.

Godalming\_NNP thinks\_VBZ that\_IN it\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB well\_RB to\_TO have\_VB horses\_NNS always\_RB in\_IN readiness\_NN ,\_, for\_IN when\_WRB we\_PRP get\_VBP the\_DT information\_NN which\_WDT we\_PRP seek\_VBP there\_EX will\_MD be\_VB no\_DT time\_NN to\_TO lose\_VB .\_.

We\_PRP must\_MD sterilise\_VB all\_PDT the\_DT imported\_VBN earth\_NN between\_IN sunrise\_NN and\_CC sunset\_NN ;\_: we\_PRP shall\_MD thus\_RB catch\_VB the\_DT Count\_NN at\_IN his\_PRP$ weakest\_JJS ,\_, and\_CC without\_IN a\_DT refuge\_NN to\_TO fly\_VB to\_TO .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP is\_VBZ off\_RB to\_TO the\_DT British\_JJ Museum\_NN looking\_VBG up\_RP some\_DT authorities\_NNS on\_IN ancient\_JJ medicine\_NN .\_.

The\_DT old\_JJ physicians\_NNS took\_VBD account\_NN of\_IN things\_NNS which\_WDT their\_PRP$ followers\_NNS do\_VBP not\_RB accept\_VB ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT Professor\_NNP is\_VBZ searching\_VBG for\_IN witch\_NN and\_CC demon\_NN cures\_NNS which\_WDT may\_MD be\_VB useful\_JJ to\_TO us\_PRP later\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP sometimes\_RB think\_VBP we\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB all\_DT mad\_JJ and\_CC that\_IN we\_PRP shall\_MD wake\_VB to\_TO sanity\_NN in\_IN strait-waistcoats\_NNS .\_.

Later\_RB .\_.

--\_: We\_PRP have\_VBP met\_VBN again\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP seem\_VBP at\_IN last\_JJ to\_TO be\_VB on\_IN the\_DT track\_NN ,\_, and\_CC our\_PRP$ work\_NN of\_IN to-morrow\_NN may\_MD be\_VB the\_DT beginning\_NN of\_IN the\_DT end\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP wonder\_VBP if\_IN Renfield\_NNP 's\_POS quiet\_NN has\_VBZ anything\_NN to\_TO do\_VB with\_IN this\_DT .\_.

His\_PRP$ moods\_NNS have\_VBP so\_RB followed\_VBN the\_DT doings\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP ,\_, that\_IN the\_DT coming\_VBG destruction\_NN of\_IN the\_DT monster\_NN may\_MD be\_VB carried\_VBN to\_TO him\_PRP in\_IN some\_DT subtle\_JJ way\_NN .\_.

If\_IN we\_PRP could\_MD only\_RB get\_VB some\_DT hint\_NN as\_IN to\_TO what\_WP passed\_VBN in\_IN his\_PRP$ mind\_NN ,\_, between\_IN the\_DT time\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ argument\_NN with\_IN him\_PRP to-day\_JJ and\_CC his\_PRP$ resumption\_NN of\_IN fly-catching\_NN ,\_, it\_PRP might\_MD afford\_VB us\_PRP a\_DT valuable\_JJ clue\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ now\_RB seemingly\_RB quiet\_JJ for\_IN a\_DT spell\_NN ...\_: .\_.

Is\_VBZ he\_PRP ?\_.

--\_: --\_: That\_DT wild\_JJ yell\_VBP seemed\_VBD to\_TO come\_VB from\_IN his\_PRP$ room\_NN ...\_: .\_.

The\_DT attendant\_NN came\_VBD bursting\_VBG into\_IN my\_PRP$ room\_NN and\_CC told\_VBD me\_PRP that\_IN Renfield\_NNP had\_VBD somehow\_RB met\_VBN with\_IN some\_DT accident\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD heard\_VBN him\_PRP yell\_VB ;\_: and\_CC when\_WRB he\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP found\_VBD him\_PRP lying\_VBG on\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN on\_IN the\_DT floor\_NN ,\_, all\_DT covered\_VBN with\_IN blood\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD go\_VB at\_IN once\_RB ...\_: .\_.

CHAPTER\_NNP XXI\_NNP DR.\_NNP SEWARD\_NNP 'S\_POS DIARY\_NN 3\_CD October\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Let\_VB me\_PRP put\_VB down\_RP with\_IN exactness\_NN all\_DT that\_WDT happened\_VBD ,\_, as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD remember\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, since\_IN last\_JJ I\_PRP made\_VBD an\_DT entry\_NN .\_.

Not\_RB a\_DT detail\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD recall\_VB must\_MD be\_VB forgotten\_VBN ;\_: in\_IN all\_DT calmness\_NN I\_PRP must\_MD proceed\_VB .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP came\_VBD to\_TO Renfield\_NNP 's\_POS room\_NN I\_PRP found\_VBD him\_PRP lying\_VBG on\_IN the\_DT floor\_NN on\_IN his\_PRP$ left\_JJ side\_NN in\_IN a\_DT glittering\_VBG pool\_NN of\_IN blood\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO move\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, it\_PRP became\_VBD at\_IN once\_RB apparent\_JJ that\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD received\_VBN some\_DT terrible\_JJ injuries\_NNS ;\_: there\_RB seemed\_VBD none\_NN of\_IN that\_DT unity\_NN of\_IN purpose\_NN between\_IN the\_DT parts\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT body\_NN which\_WDT marks\_VBZ even\_RB lethargic\_JJ sanity\_NN .\_.

As\_IN the\_DT face\_NN was\_VBD exposed\_VBN I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD horribly\_RB bruised\_VBN ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN it\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN beaten\_VBN against\_IN the\_DT floor\_NN --\_: indeed\_RB it\_PRP was\_VBD from\_IN the\_DT face\_NN wounds\_NNS that\_IN the\_DT pool\_NN of\_IN blood\_NN originated\_VBD .\_.

The\_DT attendant\_NN who\_WP was\_VBD kneeling\_VBG beside\_IN the\_DT body\_NN said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP as\_IN we\_PRP turned\_VBD him\_PRP over\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP think\_VBP ,\_, sir\_NN ,\_, his\_PRP$ back\_NN is\_VBZ broken\_VBN .\_.

See\_NNP ,\_, both\_DT his\_PRP$ right\_JJ arm\_NN and\_CC leg\_NN and\_CC the\_DT whole\_JJ side\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN are\_VBP paralysed\_VBN .\_. ''\_''

How\_WRB such\_JJ a\_DT thing\_NN could\_MD have\_VB happened\_VBN puzzled\_VBD the\_DT attendant\_NN beyond\_IN measure\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP seemed\_VBD quite\_RB bewildered\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ brows\_NNS were\_VBD gathered\_VBN in\_IN as\_IN he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP ca\_MD n't\_RB understand\_VB the\_DT two\_CD things\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP could\_MD mark\_VB his\_PRP$ face\_NN like\_IN that\_DT by\_IN beating\_VBG his\_PRP$ own\_JJ head\_NN on\_IN the\_DT floor\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP saw\_VBD a\_DT young\_JJ woman\_NN do\_VBP it\_PRP once\_RB at\_IN the\_DT Eversfield\_NNP Asylum\_NNP before\_IN anyone\_NN could\_MD lay\_VB hands\_NNS on\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

And\_CC I\_PRP suppose\_VBP he\_PRP might\_MD have\_VB broke\_VBN his\_PRP$ neck\_NN by\_IN falling\_VBG out\_IN of\_IN bed\_NN ,\_, if\_IN he\_PRP got\_VBD in\_IN an\_DT awkward\_JJ kink\_NN .\_.

But\_CC for\_IN the\_DT life\_NN of\_IN me\_PRP I\_PRP ca\_MD n't\_RB imagine\_VB how\_WRB the\_DT two\_CD things\_NNS occurred\_VBD .\_.

If\_IN his\_PRP$ back\_NN was\_VBD broke\_VBN ,\_, he\_PRP could\_MD n't\_RB beat\_VB his\_PRP$ head\_NN ;\_: and\_CC if\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN was\_VBD like\_IN that\_DT before\_IN the\_DT fall\_NN out\_IN of\_IN bed\_NN ,\_, there\_EX would\_MD be\_VB marks\_NNS of\_IN it\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Go\_VB to\_TO Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC ask\_VB him\_PRP to\_TO kindly\_RB come\_VB here\_RB at\_IN once\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP want\_VBP him\_PRP without\_IN an\_DT instant\_NN 's\_POS delay\_NN .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT man\_NN ran\_VBD off\_RB ,\_, and\_CC within\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ minutes\_NNS the\_DT Professor\_NNP ,\_, in\_IN his\_PRP$ dressing\_VBG gown\_NN and\_CC slippers\_NNS ,\_, appeared\_VBD .\_.

When\_WRB he\_PRP saw\_VBD Renfield\_NNP on\_IN the\_DT ground\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP looked\_VBD keenly\_RB at\_IN him\_PRP a\_DT moment\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB turned\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP think\_VBP he\_PRP recognised\_VBD my\_PRP$ thought\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP said\_VBD very\_RB quietly\_RB ,\_, manifestly\_RB for\_IN the\_DT ears\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT attendant\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Ah\_UH ,\_, a\_DT sad\_JJ accident\_NN !\_.

He\_PRP will\_MD need\_VB very\_RB careful\_JJ watching\_NN ,\_, and\_CC much\_JJ attention\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD stay\_VB with\_IN you\_PRP myself\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD first\_RB dress\_VB myself\_PRP .\_.

If\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD remain\_VB I\_PRP shall\_MD in\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ minutes\_NNS join\_VBP you\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT patient\_NN was\_VBD now\_RB breathing\_VBG stertorously\_RB and\_CC it\_PRP was\_VBD easy\_JJ to\_TO see\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD suffered\_VBN some\_DT terrible\_JJ injury\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP returned\_VBD with\_IN extraordinary\_JJ celerity\_NN ,\_, bearing\_VBG with\_IN him\_PRP a\_DT surgical\_JJ case\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD evidently\_RB been\_VBN thinking\_VBG and\_CC had\_VBD his\_PRP$ mind\_NN made\_VBD up\_RP ;\_: for\_IN ,\_, almost\_RB before\_IN he\_PRP looked\_VBD at\_IN the\_DT patient\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP whispered\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Send\_VB the\_DT attendant\_NN away\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB alone\_RB with\_IN him\_PRP when\_WRB he\_PRP becomes\_VBZ conscious\_JJ ,\_, after\_IN the\_DT operation\_NN .\_. ''\_''

So\_RB I\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP think\_VBP that\_DT will\_MD do\_VB now\_RB ,\_, Simmons\_NNP .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP done\_VBN all\_DT that\_IN we\_PRP can\_MD at\_IN present\_JJ .\_.

You\_PRP had\_VBD better\_RBR go\_VB your\_PRP$ round\_NN ,\_, and\_CC Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP will\_MD operate\_VB .\_.

Let\_VB me\_PRP know\_VB instantly\_RB if\_IN there\_EX be\_VB anything\_NN unusual\_JJ anywhere\_RB .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT man\_NN withdrew\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP went\_VBD into\_IN a\_DT strict\_JJ examination\_NN of\_IN the\_DT patient\_NN .\_.

The\_DT wounds\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT face\_NN was\_VBD superficial\_JJ ;\_: the\_DT real\_JJ injury\_NN was\_VBD a\_DT depressed\_JJ fracture\_NN of\_IN the\_DT skull\_NN ,\_, extending\_VBG right\_RB up\_RB through\_IN the\_DT motor\_NN area\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP thought\_VBD a\_DT moment\_NN and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` We\_PRP must\_MD reduce\_VB the\_DT pressure\_NN and\_CC get\_VB back\_RB to\_TO normal\_JJ conditions\_NNS ,\_, as\_RB far\_RB as\_IN can\_MD be\_VB ;\_: the\_DT rapidity\_NN of\_IN the\_DT suffusion\_NN shows\_VBZ the\_DT terrible\_JJ nature\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ injury\_NN .\_.

The\_DT whole\_JJ motor\_NN area\_NN seems\_VBZ affected\_VBN .\_.

The\_DT suffusion\_NN of\_IN the\_DT brain\_NN will\_MD increase\_VB quickly\_RB ,\_, so\_IN we\_PRP must\_MD trephine\_VB at\_IN once\_RB or\_CC it\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB too\_RB late\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

As\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD speaking\_VBG there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT soft\_JJ tapping\_VBG at\_IN the\_DT door\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP went\_VBD over\_RB and\_CC opened\_VBD it\_PRP and\_CC found\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT corridor\_NN without\_IN ,\_, Arthur\_NNP and\_CC Quincey\_NNP in\_IN pajamas\_NNS and\_CC slippers\_NNS :\_: the\_DT former\_JJ spoke\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP heard\_VBD your\_PRP$ man\_NN call\_VB up\_RP Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP and\_CC tell\_VB him\_PRP of\_IN an\_DT accident\_NN .\_.

So\_RB I\_PRP woke\_VBD Quincey\_NNP or\_CC rather\_RB called\_VBD for\_IN him\_PRP as\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB asleep\_RB .\_.

Things\_NNS are\_VBP moving\_VBG too\_RB quickly\_RB and\_CC too\_RB strangely\_RB for\_IN sound\_JJ sleep\_NN for\_IN any\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP these\_DT times\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP 've\_VBP been\_VBN thinking\_VBG that\_IN to-morrow\_JJ night\_NN will\_MD not\_RB see\_VB things\_NNS as\_IN they\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN .\_.

We\_PRP 'll\_MD have\_VB to\_TO look\_VB back\_RB --\_: and\_CC forward\_RB a\_DT little\_RB more\_JJR than\_IN we\_PRP have\_VBP done\_VBN .\_.

May\_MD we\_PRP come\_VB in\_IN ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP nodded\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC held\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN open\_JJ till\_IN they\_PRP had\_VBD entered\_VBN ;\_: then\_RB I\_PRP closed\_VBD it\_PRP again\_RB .\_.

When\_WRB Quincey\_NNP saw\_VBD the\_DT attitude\_NN and\_CC state\_NN of\_IN the\_DT patient\_NN ,\_, and\_CC noted\_VBD the\_DT horrible\_JJ pool\_NN on\_IN the\_DT floor\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD softly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` My\_PRP$ God\_NN !\_.

what\_WP has\_VBZ happened\_VBN to\_TO him\_PRP ?\_.

Poor\_NNP ,\_, poor\_JJ devil\_NNP !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP told\_VBD him\_PRP briefly\_NN ,\_, and\_CC added\_VBD that\_IN we\_PRP expected\_VBD he\_PRP would\_MD recover\_VB consciousness\_NN after\_IN the\_DT operation\_NN --\_: for\_IN a\_DT short\_JJ time\_NN ,\_, at\_IN all\_DT events\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP went\_VBD at\_IN once\_RB and\_CC sat\_VBD down\_RP on\_IN the\_DT edge\_NN of\_IN the\_DT bed\_NN ,\_, with\_IN Godalming\_NNP beside\_IN him\_PRP ;\_: we\_PRP all\_DT watched\_VBD in\_IN patience\_NN .\_.

``\_`` We\_PRP shall\_MD wait\_VB ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, ``\_`` just\_RB long\_JJ enough\_RB to\_TO fix\_VB the\_DT best\_JJS spot\_NN for\_IN trephining\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN we\_PRP may\_MD most\_RBS quickly\_RB and\_CC perfectly\_RB remove\_VB the\_DT blood\_NN clot\_NN ;\_: for\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ evident\_JJ that\_IN the\_DT hæmorrhage\_NN is\_VBZ increasing\_VBG .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT minutes\_NNS during\_IN which\_WDT we\_PRP waited\_VBD passed\_VBN with\_IN fearful\_JJ slowness\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT horrible\_JJ sinking\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ heart\_NN ,\_, and\_CC from\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP 's\_POS face\_NN I\_PRP gathered\_VBD that\_IN he\_PRP felt\_VBD some\_DT fear\_NN or\_CC apprehension\_NN as\_IN to\_TO what\_WP was\_VBD to\_TO come\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP dreaded\_VBD the\_DT words\_NNS that\_IN Renfield\_NNP might\_MD speak\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD positively\_RB afraid\_JJ to\_TO think\_VB ;\_: but\_CC the\_DT conviction\_NN of\_IN what\_WP was\_VBD coming\_VBG was\_VBD on\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP read\_VBN of\_IN men\_NNS who\_WP have\_VBP heard\_VBN the\_DT death-watch\_NN .\_.

The\_DT poor\_JJ man\_NN 's\_POS breathing\_NN came\_VBD in\_IN uncertain\_JJ gasps\_NNS .\_.

Each\_DT instant\_NN he\_PRP seemed\_VBD as\_IN though\_IN he\_PRP would\_MD open\_VB his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS and\_CC speak\_VB ;\_: but\_CC then\_RB would\_MD follow\_VB a\_DT prolonged\_JJ stertorous\_JJ breath\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP would\_MD relapse\_NN into\_IN a\_DT more\_RBR fixed\_JJ insensibility\_NN .\_.

Inured\_VBN as\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD to\_TO sick\_JJ beds\_NNS and\_CC death\_NN ,\_, this\_DT suspense\_NN grew\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC grew\_VBD upon\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD almost\_RB hear\_VB the\_DT beating\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ heart\_NN ;\_: and\_CC the\_DT blood\_NN surging\_VBG through\_IN my\_PRP$ temples\_NNS sounded\_VBD like\_IN blows\_NNS from\_IN a\_DT hammer\_NN .\_.

The\_DT silence\_NN finally\_RB became\_VBD agonising\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP looked\_VBD at\_IN my\_PRP$ companions\_NNS ,\_, one\_CD after\_IN another\_DT ,\_, and\_CC saw\_VBD from\_IN their\_PRP$ flushed\_VBN faces\_NNS and\_CC damp\_JJ brows\_NNS that\_IN they\_PRP were\_VBD enduring\_VBG equal\_JJ torture\_VBP .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT nervous\_JJ suspense\_NN over\_IN us\_PRP all\_DT ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN overhead\_RB some\_DT dread\_NN bell\_NN would\_MD peal\_NN out\_RP powerfully\_RB when\_WRB we\_PRP should\_MD least\_JJS expect\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

At\_IN last\_JJ there\_EX came\_VBD a\_DT time\_NN when\_WRB it\_PRP was\_VBD evident\_JJ that\_IN the\_DT patient\_NN was\_VBD sinking\_VBG fast\_RB ;\_: he\_PRP might\_MD die\_VB at\_IN any\_DT moment\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP looked\_VBD up\_RP at\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP and\_CC caught\_VBD his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS fixed\_VBN on\_IN mine\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ face\_NN was\_VBD sternly\_RB set\_VBN as\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` There\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT time\_NN to\_TO lose\_VB .\_.

His\_PRP$ words\_NNS may\_MD be\_VB worth\_JJ many\_JJ lives\_NNS ;\_: I\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN thinking\_VBG so\_RB ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP stood\_VBD here\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB there\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT soul\_NN at\_IN stake\_NN !\_.

We\_PRP shall\_MD operate\_VB just\_RB above\_IN the\_DT ear\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Without\_IN another\_DT word\_NN he\_PRP made\_VBD the\_DT operation\_NN .\_.

For\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ moments\_NNS the\_DT breathing\_NN continued\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB stertorous\_JJ .\_.

Then\_RB there\_EX came\_VBD a\_DT breath\_NN so\_RB prolonged\_JJ that\_IN it\_PRP seemed\_VBD as\_IN though\_IN it\_PRP would\_MD tear\_VB open\_VB his\_PRP$ chest\_NN .\_.

Suddenly\_RB his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS opened\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC became\_VBD fixed\_VBN in\_IN a\_DT wild\_JJ ,\_, helpless\_JJ stare\_VBP .\_.

This\_DT was\_VBD continued\_VBN for\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ moments\_NNS ;\_: then\_RB it\_PRP softened\_VBD into\_IN a\_DT glad\_JJ surprise\_NN ,\_, and\_CC from\_IN the\_DT lips\_NNS came\_VBD a\_DT sigh\_NN of\_IN relief\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP moved\_VBD convulsively\_RB ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD so\_RB ,\_, said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP 'll\_MD be\_VB quiet\_JJ ,\_, Doctor\_NNP .\_.

Tell\_VB them\_PRP to\_TO take\_VB off\_RP the\_DT strait-waistcoat\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP had\_VBN a\_DT terrible\_JJ dream\_NN ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP has\_VBZ left\_VBN me\_PRP so\_RB weak\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB move\_VB .\_.

What\_WP 's\_VBZ wrong\_JJ with\_IN my\_PRP$ face\_NN ?\_.

it\_PRP feels\_VBZ all\_DT swollen\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP smarts\_VBZ dreadfully\_RB .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP tried\_VBD to\_TO turn\_VB his\_PRP$ head\_NN ;\_: but\_CC even\_RB with\_IN the\_DT effort\_NN his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS seemed\_VBD to\_TO grow\_VB glassy\_JJ again\_RB so\_IN I\_PRP gently\_RB put\_VBD it\_PRP back\_RB .\_.

Then\_RB Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP said\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT quiet\_JJ grave\_JJ tone\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Tell\_VB us\_PRP your\_PRP$ dream\_NN ,\_, Mr.\_NNP Renfield\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

As\_IN he\_PRP heard\_VBD the\_DT voice\_NN his\_PRP$ face\_NN brightened\_VBD ,\_, through\_IN its\_PRP$ mutilation\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` That\_DT is\_VBZ Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP .\_.

How\_WRB good\_JJ it\_PRP is\_VBZ of\_IN you\_PRP to\_TO be\_VB here\_RB .\_.

Give\_VB me\_PRP some\_DT water\_NN ,\_, my\_PRP$ lips\_NNS are\_VBP dry\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD try\_VB to\_TO tell\_VB you\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP dreamed\_VBD ''\_'' --\_: he\_PRP stopped\_VBD and\_CC seemed\_VBD fainting\_VBG ,\_, I\_PRP called\_VBD quietly\_RB to\_TO Quincey\_NNP --\_: ``\_`` The\_DT brandy\_NN --\_: it\_PRP is\_VBZ in\_IN my\_PRP$ study\_NN --\_: quick\_JJ !\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP flew\_VBD and\_CC returned\_VBD with\_IN a\_DT glass\_NN ,\_, the\_DT decanter\_NN of\_IN brandy\_NN and\_CC a\_DT carafe\_NN of\_IN water\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP moistened\_VBD the\_DT parched\_JJ lips\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT patient\_NN quickly\_RB revived\_VBD .\_.

It\_PRP seemed\_VBD ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, that\_IN his\_PRP$ poor\_JJ injured\_JJ brain\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN working\_VBG in\_IN the\_DT interval\_NN ,\_, for\_IN ,\_, when\_WRB he\_PRP was\_VBD quite\_RB conscious\_JJ ,\_, he\_PRP looked\_VBD at\_IN me\_PRP piercingly\_RB with\_IN an\_DT agonised\_JJ confusion\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP shall\_MD never\_RB forget\_VB ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB deceive\_VB myself\_PRP ;\_: it\_PRP was\_VBD no\_DT dream\_NN ,\_, but\_CC all\_PDT a\_DT grim\_JJ reality\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Then\_RB his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS roved\_VBD round\_NN the\_DT room\_NN ;\_: as\_IN they\_PRP caught\_VBD sight\_NN of\_IN the\_DT two\_CD figures\_NNS sitting\_VBG patiently\_RB on\_IN the\_DT edge\_NN of\_IN the\_DT bed\_NN he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` If\_IN I\_PRP were\_VBD not\_RB sure\_JJ already\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP would\_MD know\_VB from\_IN them\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

For\_IN an\_DT instant\_NN his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS closed\_VBD --\_: not\_RB with\_IN pain\_NN or\_CC sleep\_NN but\_CC voluntarily\_RB ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN he\_PRP were\_VBD bringing\_VBG all\_PDT his\_PRP$ faculties\_NNS to\_TO bear\_VB ;\_: when\_WRB he\_PRP opened\_VBD them\_PRP he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, hurriedly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN more\_JJR energy\_NN than\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD yet\_RB displayed\_VBN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Quick\_NNP ,\_, Doctor\_NNP ,\_, quick\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP dying\_VBG !\_.

I\_PRP feel\_VBP that\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP but\_CC a\_DT few\_JJ minutes\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC then\_RB I\_PRP must\_MD go\_VB back\_RB to\_TO death\_NN --\_: or\_CC worse\_JJR !\_.

Wet\_NNP my\_PRP$ lips\_NNS with\_IN brandy\_NN again\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP something\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP must\_MD say\_VB before\_IN I\_PRP die\_VBP ;\_: or\_CC before\_IN my\_PRP$ poor\_JJ crushed\_JJ brain\_NN dies\_VBZ anyhow\_RB .\_.

Thank\_VB you\_PRP !\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD that\_IN night\_NN after\_IN you\_PRP left\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, when\_WRB I\_PRP implored\_VBD you\_PRP to\_TO let\_VB me\_PRP go\_VB away\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD n't\_RB speak\_VB then\_RB ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP felt\_VBD my\_PRP$ tongue\_NN was\_VBD tied\_VBN ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP was\_VBD as\_IN sane\_NN then\_RB ,\_, except\_IN in\_IN that\_DT way\_NN ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP now\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN an\_DT agony\_NN of\_IN despair\_NN for\_IN a\_DT long\_JJ time\_NN after\_IN you\_PRP left\_VBD me\_PRP ;\_: it\_PRP seemed\_VBD hours\_NNS .\_.

Then\_RB there\_EX came\_VBD a\_DT sudden\_JJ peace\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

My\_PRP$ brain\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO become\_VB cool\_NN again\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP realised\_VBD where\_WRB I\_PRP was\_VBD .\_.

I\_PRP heard\_VBD the\_DT dogs\_NNS bark\_NN behind\_IN our\_PRP$ house\_NN ,\_, but\_CC not\_RB where\_WRB He\_PRP was\_VBD !\_. ''\_''

As\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD ,\_, Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP 's\_POS eyes\_NNS never\_RB blinked\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC his\_PRP$ hand\_NN came\_VBD out\_RB and\_CC met\_VBD mine\_NN and\_CC gripped\_VBD it\_PRP hard\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, betray\_VB himself\_PRP ;\_: he\_PRP nodded\_VBD slightly\_RB and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` Go\_VB on\_IN ,\_, ''\_'' in\_IN a\_DT low\_JJ voice\_NN .\_.

Renfield\_NNP proceeded\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` He\_PRP came\_VBD up\_RP to\_TO the\_DT window\_NN in\_IN the\_DT mist\_NN ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD seen\_VBN him\_PRP often\_RB before\_RB ;\_: but\_CC he\_PRP was\_VBD solid\_JJ then\_RB --\_: not\_RB a\_DT ghost\_NN ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS were\_VBD fierce\_JJ like\_IN a\_DT man\_NN 's\_POS when\_WRB angry\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD laughing\_VBG with\_IN his\_PRP$ red\_JJ mouth\_NN ;\_: the\_DT sharp\_JJ white\_JJ teeth\_NNS glinted\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT moonlight\_NN when\_WRB he\_PRP turned\_VBD to\_TO look\_VB back\_RB over\_IN the\_DT belt\_NN of\_IN trees\_NNS ,\_, to\_TO where\_WRB the\_DT dogs\_NNS were\_VBD barking\_VBG .\_.

I\_PRP would\_MD n't\_RB ask\_VB him\_PRP to\_TO come\_VB in\_RP at\_IN first\_JJ ,\_, though\_IN I\_PRP knew\_VBD he\_PRP wanted\_VBD to\_TO --\_: just\_RB as\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD wanted\_VBN all\_RB along\_RB .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP began\_VBD promising\_VBG me\_PRP things\_NNS --\_: not\_RB in\_IN words\_NNS but\_CC by\_IN doing\_VBG them\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP was\_VBD interrupted\_VBN by\_IN a\_DT word\_NN from\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` How\_WRB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` By\_IN making\_VBG them\_PRP happen\_VB ;\_: just\_RB as\_IN he\_PRP used\_VBD to\_TO send\_VB in\_IN the\_DT flies\_NNS when\_WRB the\_DT sun\_NN was\_VBD shining\_VBG .\_.

Great\_JJ big\_JJ fat\_JJ ones\_NNS with\_IN steel\_NN and\_CC sapphire\_NN on\_IN their\_PRP$ wings\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC big\_JJ moths\_NNS ,\_, in\_IN the\_DT night\_NN ,\_, with\_IN skull\_NN and\_CC cross-bones\_NNS on\_IN their\_PRP$ backs\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP nodded\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP as\_IN he\_PRP whispered\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP unconsciously\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` The\_DT Acherontia\_NNP Aitetropos\_NNP of\_IN the\_DT Sphinges\_NNP --\_: what\_WP you\_PRP call\_VBP the\_DT `\_`` Death\_NNP 's\_POS -\_: head\_NN Moth\_NN '\_'' ?\_. ''\_''

The\_DT patient\_NN went\_VBD on\_RP without\_IN stopping\_VBG .\_.

``\_`` Then\_RB he\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO whisper\_VB :\_: `\_`` Rats\_NNS ,\_, rats\_NNS ,\_, rats\_NNS !\_.

Hundreds\_NNS ,\_, thousands\_NNS ,\_, millions\_NNS of\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC every\_DT one\_CD a\_DT life\_NN ;\_: and\_CC dogs\_VBZ to\_TO eat\_VB them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC cats\_NNS too\_RB .\_.

All\_DT lives\_NNS !\_.

all\_DT red\_JJ blood\_NN ,\_, with\_IN years\_NNS of\_IN life\_NN in\_IN it\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC not\_RB merely\_RB buzzing\_VBG flies\_NNS !\_. '\_''

I\_PRP laughed\_VBD at\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP wanted\_VBD to\_TO see\_VB what\_WP he\_PRP could\_MD do\_VB .\_.

Then\_RB the\_DT dogs\_NNS howled\_VBD ,\_, away\_RB beyond\_IN the\_DT dark\_JJ trees\_NNS in\_IN His\_PRP$ house\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP beckoned\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO the\_DT window\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP got\_VBD up\_RB and\_CC looked\_VBD out\_RP ,\_, and\_CC He\_PRP raised\_VBD his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC seemed\_VBD to\_TO call\_VB out\_RP without\_IN using\_VBG any\_DT words\_NNS .\_.

A\_DT dark\_JJ mass\_NN spread\_VBN over\_IN the\_DT grass\_NN ,\_, coming\_VBG on\_RP like\_IN the\_DT shape\_NN of\_IN a\_DT flame\_NN of\_IN fire\_NN ;\_: and\_CC then\_RB He\_PRP moved\_VBD the\_DT mist\_NN to\_TO the\_DT right\_NN and\_CC left\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB that\_IN there\_EX were\_VBD thousands\_NNS of\_IN rats\_NNS with\_IN their\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS blazing\_VBG red\_JJ --\_: like\_IN His\_PRP$ ,\_, only\_RB smaller\_JJR .\_.

He\_PRP held\_VBD up\_RP his\_PRP$ hand\_NN ,\_, and\_CC they\_PRP all\_DT stopped\_VBD ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP thought\_VBD he\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB saying\_VBG :\_: `\_`` All\_PDT these\_DT lives\_NNS will\_MD I\_PRP give\_VB you\_PRP ,\_, ay\_NN ,\_, and\_CC many\_JJ more\_JJR and\_CC greater\_JJR ,\_, through\_IN countless\_JJ ages\_NNS ,\_, if\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD fall\_VB down\_RB and\_CC worship\_NN me\_PRP !\_. '\_''

And\_CC then\_RB a\_DT red\_JJ cloud\_NN ,\_, like\_IN the\_DT colour\_NN of\_IN blood\_NN ,\_, seemed\_VBD to\_TO close\_VB over\_IN my\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC before\_IN I\_PRP knew\_VBD what\_WP I\_PRP was\_VBD doing\_VBG ,\_, I\_PRP found\_VBD myself\_PRP opening\_VBG the\_DT sash\_NN and\_CC saying\_VBG to\_TO Him\_PRP :\_: `\_`` Come\_VB in\_RB ,\_, Lord\_NNP and\_CC Master\_NNP !\_. '\_''

The\_DT rats\_NNS were\_VBD all\_DT gone\_VBN ,\_, but\_CC He\_PRP slid\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN through\_IN the\_DT sash\_NN ,\_, though\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD only\_RB open\_JJ an\_DT inch\_NN wide\_JJ --\_: just\_RB as\_IN the\_DT Moon\_NNP herself\_PRP has\_VBZ often\_RB come\_VBN in\_IN through\_IN the\_DT tiniest\_JJS crack\_NN and\_CC has\_VBZ stood\_VBN before\_IN me\_PRP in\_IN all\_DT her\_PRP$ size\_NN and\_CC splendour\_NN .\_. ''\_''

His\_PRP$ voice\_NN was\_VBD weaker\_JJR ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP moistened\_VBD his\_PRP$ lips\_NNS with\_IN the\_DT brandy\_NN again\_RB ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP continued\_VBD ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP seemed\_VBD as\_IN though\_IN his\_PRP$ memory\_NN had\_VBD gone\_VBN on\_IN working\_VBG in\_IN the\_DT interval\_NN for\_IN his\_PRP$ story\_NN was\_VBD further\_RB advanced\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD about\_IN to\_TO call\_VB him\_PRP back\_RB to\_TO the\_DT point\_NN ,\_, but\_CC Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP whispered\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP :\_: ``\_`` Let\_VB him\_PRP go\_VB on\_RP .\_.

Do\_VBP not\_RB interrupt\_VB him\_PRP ;\_: he\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB go\_VB back\_RB ,\_, and\_CC maybe\_RB could\_MD not\_RB proceed\_VB at\_IN all\_DT if\_IN once\_RB he\_PRP lost\_VBD the\_DT thread\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ thought\_NN .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP proceeded\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` All\_DT day\_NN I\_PRP waited\_VBD to\_TO hear\_VB from\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC he\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB send\_VB me\_PRP anything\_NN ,\_, not\_RB even\_RB a\_DT blow-fly\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB the\_DT moon\_NN got\_VBD up\_RP I\_PRP was\_VBD pretty\_RB angry\_JJ with\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

When\_WRB he\_PRP slid\_VBD in\_RP through\_IN the\_DT window\_NN ,\_, though\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD shut\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC did\_VBD not\_RB even\_RB knock\_VB ,\_, I\_PRP got\_VBD mad\_JJ with\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP sneered\_VBD at\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ white\_JJ face\_NN looked\_VBD out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT mist\_NN with\_IN his\_PRP$ red\_JJ eyes\_NNS gleaming\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_RP as\_IN though\_IN he\_PRP owned\_VBD the\_DT whole\_JJ place\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP was\_VBD no\_DT one\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP did\_VBD n't\_RB even\_RB smell\_VB the\_DT same\_JJ as\_IN he\_PRP went\_VBD by\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD n't\_RB hold\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP thought\_VBD that\_IN ,\_, somehow\_RB ,\_, Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP had\_VBD come\_VBN into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT two\_CD men\_NNS sitting\_VBG on\_IN the\_DT bed\_NN stood\_VBD up\_RB and\_CC came\_VBD over\_RB ,\_, standing\_VBG behind\_IN him\_PRP so\_RB that\_IN he\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB see\_VB them\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC where\_WRB they\_PRP could\_MD hear\_VB better\_JJR .\_.

They\_PRP were\_VBD both\_DT silent\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT Professor\_NNP started\_VBD and\_CC quivered\_VBD ;\_: his\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, grew\_VBD grimmer\_JJR and\_CC sterner\_JJR still\_RB .\_.

Renfield\_NNP went\_VBD on\_RP without\_IN noticing\_VBG :\_: --\_: ``\_`` When\_WRB Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP came\_VBD in\_RP to\_TO see\_VB me\_PRP this\_DT afternoon\_NN she\_PRP was\_VBD n't\_RB the\_DT same\_JJ ;\_: it\_PRP was\_VBD like\_IN tea\_NN after\_IN the\_DT teapot\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN watered\_VBN .\_. ''\_''

Here\_RB we\_PRP all\_DT moved\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC no\_DT one\_NN said\_VBD a\_DT word\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP did\_VBD n't\_RB know\_VB that\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD here\_RB till\_IN she\_PRP spoke\_VBD ;\_: and\_CC she\_PRP did\_VBD n't\_RB look\_VB the\_DT same\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB care\_VB for\_IN the\_DT pale\_JJ people\_NNS ;\_: I\_PRP like\_VBP them\_PRP with\_IN lots\_NNS of\_IN blood\_NN in\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC hers\_NNS had\_VBD all\_DT seemed\_VBD to\_TO have\_VB run\_VBN out\_RP .\_.

I\_PRP did\_VBD n't\_RB think\_VB of\_IN it\_PRP at\_IN the\_DT time\_NN ;\_: but\_CC when\_WRB she\_PRP went\_VBD away\_RB I\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO think\_VB ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP made\_VBD me\_PRP mad\_JJ to\_TO know\_VB that\_IN He\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN taking\_VBG the\_DT life\_NN out\_IN of\_IN her\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP could\_MD feel\_VB that\_IN the\_DT rest\_NN quivered\_VBD ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC we\_PRP remained\_VBD otherwise\_RB still\_RB .\_.

``\_`` So\_RB when\_WRB He\_PRP came\_VBD to-night\_NN I\_PRP was\_VBD ready\_JJ for\_IN Him\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP saw\_VBD the\_DT mist\_NN stealing\_NN in\_IN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP grabbed\_VBD it\_PRP tight\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD heard\_VBN that\_IN madmen\_NNS have\_VBP unnatural\_JJ strength\_NN ;\_: and\_CC as\_IN I\_PRP knew\_VBD I\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT madman\_NN --\_: at\_IN times\_NNS anyhow\_RB --\_: I\_PRP resolved\_VBD to\_TO use\_VB my\_PRP$ power\_NN .\_.

Ay\_NN ,\_, and\_CC He\_PRP felt\_VBD it\_PRP too\_RB ,\_, for\_IN He\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO come\_VB out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT mist\_NN to\_TO struggle\_VB with\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP held\_VBD tight\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP thought\_VBD I\_PRP was\_VBD going\_VBG to\_TO win\_VB ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD n't\_RB mean\_VB Him\_PRP to\_TO take\_VB any\_DT more\_JJR of\_IN her\_PRP$ life\_NN ,\_, till\_IN I\_PRP saw\_VBD His\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS .\_.

They\_PRP burned\_VBD into\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC my\_PRP$ strength\_NN became\_VBD like\_IN water\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP slipped\_VBD through\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB I\_PRP tried\_VBD to\_TO cling\_VB to\_TO Him\_PRP ,\_, He\_PRP raised\_VBD me\_PRP up\_RP and\_CC flung\_VBD me\_PRP down\_RP .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT red\_JJ cloud\_NN before\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT noise\_NN like\_IN thunder\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT mist\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO steal\_VB away\_RB under\_IN the\_DT door\_NN .\_. ''\_''

His\_PRP$ voice\_NN was\_VBD becoming\_VBG fainter\_JJR and\_CC his\_PRP$ breath\_NN more\_RBR stertorous\_JJ .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP stood\_VBD up\_RP instinctively\_RB .\_.

``\_`` We\_PRP know\_VBP the\_DT worst\_JJS now\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` He\_PRP is\_VBZ here\_RB ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP know\_VBP his\_PRP$ purpose\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB be\_VB too\_RB late\_JJ .\_.

Let\_VB us\_PRP be\_VB armed\_VBN --\_: the\_DT same\_JJ as\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD the\_DT other\_JJ night\_NN ,\_, but\_CC lose\_VBP no\_DT time\_NN ;\_: there\_EX is\_VBZ not\_RB an\_DT instant\_NN to\_TO spare\_VB .\_. ''\_''

There\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT need\_NN to\_TO put\_VB our\_PRP$ fear\_NN ,\_, nay\_VB our\_PRP$ conviction\_NN ,\_, into\_IN words\_NNS --\_: we\_PRP shared\_VBD them\_PRP in\_IN common\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP all\_DT hurried\_VBD and\_CC took\_VBD from\_IN our\_PRP$ rooms\_NNS the\_DT same\_JJ things\_NNS that\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD when\_WRB we\_PRP entered\_VBD the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS house\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP had\_VBD his\_PRP$ ready\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN we\_PRP met\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT corridor\_NN he\_PRP pointed\_VBD to\_TO them\_PRP significantly\_RB as\_IN he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` They\_PRP never\_RB leave\_VBP me\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC they\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB till\_IN this\_DT unhappy\_JJ business\_NN is\_VBZ over\_IN .\_.

Be\_VB wise\_JJ also\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ friends\_NNS .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ no\_DT common\_JJ enemy\_NN that\_IN we\_PRP deal\_VBP with\_IN .\_.

Alas\_NNS !\_.

alas\_UH !\_.

that\_IN that\_DT dear\_RB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP should\_MD suffer\_VB !\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP stopped\_VBD ;\_: his\_PRP$ voice\_NN was\_VBD breaking\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB know\_VB if\_IN rage\_NN or\_CC terror\_NN predominated\_VBN in\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ heart\_NN .\_.

Outside\_IN the\_DT Harkers\_NNPS '\_POS door\_NN we\_PRP paused\_VBD .\_.

Art\_NNP and\_CC Quincey\_NNP held\_VBD back\_RB ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT latter\_JJ said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Should\_MD we\_PRP disturb\_VB her\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` We\_PRP must\_MD ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP grimly\_RB .\_.

``\_`` If\_IN the\_DT door\_NN be\_VB locked\_VBN ,\_, I\_PRP shall\_MD break\_VB it\_PRP in\_IN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` May\_MD it\_PRP not\_RB frighten\_VB her\_PRP terribly\_RB ?\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ unusual\_JJ to\_TO break\_VB into\_IN a\_DT lady\_NN 's\_POS room\_NN !\_. ''\_''

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP said\_VBD solemnly\_RB ,\_, ``\_`` You\_PRP are\_VBP always\_RB right\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC this\_DT is\_VBZ life\_NN and\_CC death\_NN .\_.

All\_DT chambers\_NNS are\_VBP alike\_RB to\_TO the\_DT doctor\_NN ;\_: and\_CC even\_RB were\_VBD they\_PRP not\_RB they\_PRP are\_VBP all\_DT as\_IN one\_CD to\_TO me\_PRP to-night\_JJ .\_.

Friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, when\_WRB I\_PRP turn\_VBP the\_DT handle\_VB ,\_, if\_IN the\_DT door\_NN does\_VBZ not\_RB open\_VB ,\_, do\_VB you\_PRP put\_VB your\_PRP$ shoulder\_NN down\_IN and\_CC shove\_VB ;\_: and\_CC you\_PRP too\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ friends\_NNS .\_.

Now\_RB !\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP turned\_VBD the\_DT handle\_VB as\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT door\_NN did\_VBD not\_RB yield\_VB .\_.

We\_PRP threw\_VBD ourselves\_PRP against\_IN it\_PRP ;\_: with\_IN a\_DT crash\_NN it\_PRP burst\_VBP open\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP almost\_RB fell\_VBD headlong\_RB into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP did\_VBD actually\_RB fall\_VB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP saw\_VBD across\_IN him\_PRP as\_IN he\_PRP gathered\_VBD himself\_PRP up\_RP from\_IN hands\_NNS and\_CC knees\_NNS .\_.

What\_WP I\_PRP saw\_VBD appalled\_VBN me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP felt\_VBD my\_PRP$ hair\_NN rise\_NN like\_IN bristles\_VBZ on\_IN the\_DT back\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ neck\_NN ,\_, and\_CC my\_PRP$ heart\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO stand\_VB still\_RB .\_.

The\_DT moonlight\_NN was\_VBD so\_RB bright\_JJ that\_IN through\_IN the\_DT thick\_JJ yellow\_JJ blind\_JJ the\_DT room\_NN was\_VBD light\_JJ enough\_RB to\_TO see\_VB .\_.

On\_IN the\_DT bed\_NN beside\_IN the\_DT window\_NN lay\_VBD Jonathan\_NNP Harker\_NNP ,\_, his\_PRP$ face\_NN flushed\_VBD and\_CC breathing\_VBG heavily\_RB as\_IN though\_IN in\_IN a\_DT stupor\_NN .\_.

Kneeling\_VBG on\_IN the\_DT near\_JJ edge\_NN of\_IN the\_DT bed\_NN facing\_VBG outwards\_RB was\_VBD the\_DT white-clad\_JJ figure\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ wife\_NN .\_.

By\_IN her\_PRP$ side\_NN stood\_VBD a\_DT tall\_JJ ,\_, thin\_JJ man\_NN ,\_, clad\_VBN in\_IN black\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ face\_NN was\_VBD turned\_VBN from\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT instant\_NN we\_PRP saw\_VBD we\_PRP all\_DT recognised\_VBD the\_DT Count\_NNP --\_: in\_IN every\_DT way\_NN ,\_, even\_RB to\_TO the\_DT scar\_NN on\_IN his\_PRP$ forehead\_NN .\_.

With\_IN his\_PRP$ left\_JJ hand\_NN he\_PRP held\_VBD both\_DT Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS hands\_NNS ,\_, keeping\_VBG them\_PRP away\_RP with\_IN her\_PRP$ arms\_NNS at\_IN full\_JJ tension\_NN ;\_: his\_PRP$ right\_JJ hand\_NN gripped\_VBD her\_PRP by\_IN the\_DT back\_NN of\_IN the\_DT neck\_NN ,\_, forcing\_VBG her\_PRP$ face\_NN down\_RP on\_IN his\_PRP$ bosom\_NN .\_.

Her\_PRP$ white\_JJ nightdress\_NN was\_VBD smeared\_VBN with\_IN blood\_NN ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT thin\_JJ stream\_NN trickled\_VBD down\_RP the\_DT man\_NN 's\_POS bare\_JJ breast\_NN which\_WDT was\_VBD shown\_VBN by\_IN his\_PRP$ torn-open\_JJ dress\_NN .\_.

The\_DT attitude\_NN of\_IN the\_DT two\_CD had\_VBD a\_DT terrible\_JJ resemblance\_NN to\_TO a\_DT child\_NN forcing\_VBG a\_DT kitten\_NN 's\_POS nose\_NN into\_IN a\_DT saucer\_NN of\_IN milk\_NN to\_TO compel\_VB it\_PRP to\_TO drink\_VB .\_.

As\_IN we\_PRP burst\_VBP into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, the\_DT Count\_NNP turned\_VBD his\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT hellish\_JJ look\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD heard\_VBN described\_VBN seemed\_VBD to\_TO leap\_VB into\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

His\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS flamed\_VBD red\_JJ with\_IN devilish\_JJ passion\_NN ;\_: the\_DT great\_JJ nostrils\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT white\_JJ aquiline\_NN nose\_NN opened\_VBD wide\_JJ and\_CC quivered\_VBD at\_IN the\_DT edge\_NN ;\_: and\_CC the\_DT white\_JJ sharp\_JJ teeth\_NNS ,\_, behind\_IN the\_DT full\_JJ lips\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT blood-dripping\_JJ mouth\_NN ,\_, champed\_VBN together\_RB like\_IN those\_DT of\_IN a\_DT wild\_JJ beast\_NN .\_.

With\_IN a\_DT wrench\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT threw\_VBD his\_PRP$ victim\_NN back\_RB upon\_IN the\_DT bed\_NN as\_IN though\_IN hurled\_VBN from\_IN a\_DT height\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP turned\_VBD and\_CC sprang\_VBD at\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

But\_CC by\_IN this\_DT time\_NN the\_DT Professor\_NNP had\_VBD gained\_VBN his\_PRP$ feet\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD holding\_VBG towards\_IN him\_PRP the\_DT envelope\_NN which\_WDT contained\_VBD the\_DT Sacred\_NNP Wafer\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT Count\_NNP suddenly\_RB stopped\_VBD ,\_, just\_RB as\_IN poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP had\_VBD done\_VBN outside\_IN the\_DT tomb\_NN ,\_, and\_CC cowered\_VBD back\_RB .\_.

Further\_RB and\_CC further\_RB back\_RB he\_PRP cowered\_VBD ,\_, as\_IN we\_PRP ,\_, lifting\_VBG our\_PRP$ crucifixes\_NNS ,\_, advanced\_VBD .\_.

The\_DT moonlight\_NN suddenly\_RB failed\_VBD ,\_, as\_IN a\_DT great\_JJ black\_JJ cloud\_NN sailed\_VBD across\_IN the\_DT sky\_NN ;\_: and\_CC when\_WRB the\_DT gaslight\_NN sprang\_VBD up\_RP under\_IN Quincey\_NNP 's\_POS match\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP saw\_VBD nothing\_NN but\_CC a\_DT faint\_JJ vapour\_NN .\_.

This\_DT ,\_, as\_IN we\_PRP looked\_VBD ,\_, trailed\_VBN under\_IN the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT with\_IN the\_DT recoil\_NN from\_IN its\_PRP$ bursting\_VBG open\_JJ ,\_, had\_VBD swung\_VBN back\_RB to\_TO its\_PRP$ old\_JJ position\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, Art\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP moved\_VBD forward\_RB to\_TO Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP by\_IN this\_DT time\_NN had\_VBD drawn\_VBN her\_PRP$ breath\_NN and\_CC with\_IN it\_PRP had\_VBD given\_VBN a\_DT scream\_NN so\_RB wild\_JJ ,\_, so\_RB ear-piercing\_JJ ,\_, so\_RB despairing\_VBG that\_IN it\_PRP seems\_VBZ to\_TO me\_PRP now\_RB that\_IN it\_PRP will\_MD ring\_VB in\_IN my\_PRP$ ears\_NNS till\_IN my\_PRP$ dying\_VBG day\_NN .\_.

For\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ seconds\_NNS she\_PRP lay\_VBD in\_IN her\_PRP$ helpless\_JJ attitude\_NN and\_CC disarray\_NN .\_.

Her\_PRP$ face\_NN was\_VBD ghastly\_JJ ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT pallor\_NN which\_WDT was\_VBD accentuated\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT blood\_NN which\_WDT smeared\_VBD her\_PRP$ lips\_NNS and\_CC cheeks\_NNS and\_CC chin\_NN ;\_: from\_IN her\_PRP$ throat\_NN trickled\_VBD a\_DT thin\_JJ stream\_NN of\_IN blood\_NN ;\_: her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS were\_VBD mad\_JJ with\_IN terror\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB she\_PRP put\_VBD before\_IN her\_PRP face\_VBP her\_PRP poor\_JJ crushed\_JJ hands\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT bore\_VBD on\_IN their\_PRP$ whiteness\_NN the\_DT red\_JJ mark\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS terrible\_JJ grip\_NN ,\_, and\_CC from\_IN behind\_IN them\_PRP came\_VBD a\_DT low\_JJ desolate\_JJ wail\_VB which\_WDT made\_VBD the\_DT terrible\_JJ scream\_NN seem\_VBP only\_RB the\_DT quick\_JJ expression\_NN of\_IN an\_DT endless\_JJ grief\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP stepped\_VBD forward\_RB and\_CC drew\_VBD the\_DT coverlet\_NN gently\_RB over\_IN her\_PRP$ body\_NN ,\_, whilst\_IN Art\_NNP ,\_, after\_IN looking\_VBG at\_IN her\_PRP$ face\_NN for\_IN an\_DT instant\_NN despairingly\_RB ,\_, ran\_VBD out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT room\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP whispered\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Jonathan\_NNP is\_VBZ in\_IN a\_DT stupor\_NN such\_JJ as\_IN we\_PRP know\_VBP the\_DT Vampire\_NNP can\_MD produce\_VB .\_.

We\_PRP can\_MD do\_VB nothing\_NN with\_IN poor\_JJ Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP for\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ moments\_NNS till\_IN she\_PRP recovers\_VBZ herself\_PRP ;\_: I\_PRP must\_MD wake\_VB him\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP dipped\_VBD the\_DT end\_NN of\_IN a\_DT towel\_NN in\_IN cold\_JJ water\_NN and\_CC with\_IN it\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO flick\_VB him\_PRP on\_IN the\_DT face\_NN ,\_, his\_PRP$ wife\_NN all\_PDT the\_DT while\_NN holding\_VBG her\_PRP$ face\_NN between\_IN her\_PRP$ hands\_NNS and\_CC sobbing\_VBG in\_IN a\_DT way\_NN that\_WDT was\_VBD heart-breaking\_JJ to\_TO hear\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP raised\_VBD the\_DT blind\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC looked\_VBD out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT window\_NN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD much\_JJ moonshine\_NN ;\_: and\_CC as\_IN I\_PRP looked\_VBD I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB Quincey\_NNP Morris\_NNP run\_VB across\_IN the\_DT lawn\_NN and\_CC hide\_VB himself\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT shadow\_NN of\_IN a\_DT great\_JJ yew-tree\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP puzzled\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO think\_VB why\_WRB he\_PRP was\_VBD doing\_VBG this\_DT ;\_: but\_CC at\_IN the\_DT instant\_NN I\_PRP heard\_VBD Harker\_NNP 's\_POS quick\_JJ exclamation\_NN as\_IN he\_PRP woke\_VBD to\_TO partial\_JJ consciousness\_NN ,\_, and\_CC turned\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT bed\_NN .\_.

On\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, as\_IN there\_EX might\_MD well\_RB be\_VB ,\_, was\_VBD a\_DT look\_NN of\_IN wild\_JJ amazement\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP seemed\_VBD dazed\_VBN for\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ seconds\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB full\_JJ consciousness\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO burst\_VB upon\_IN him\_PRP all\_DT at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP started\_VBD up\_RP .\_.

His\_PRP$ wife\_NN was\_VBD aroused\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT quick\_JJ movement\_NN ,\_, and\_CC turned\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP with\_IN her\_PRP$ arms\_NNS stretched\_VBN out\_RP ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN to\_TO embrace\_VB him\_PRP ;\_: instantly\_RB ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, she\_PRP drew\_VBD them\_PRP in\_IN again\_RB ,\_, and\_CC putting\_VBG her\_PRP$ elbows\_NNS together\_RB ,\_, held\_VBD her\_PRP$ hands\_NNS before\_IN her\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, and\_CC shuddered\_VBD till\_IN the\_DT bed\_NN beneath\_IN her\_PRP shook\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` In\_IN God\_NNP 's\_POS name\_NN what\_WP does\_VBZ this\_DT mean\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

Harker\_NNP cried\_VBD out\_RP .\_.

``\_`` Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP ,\_, Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, what\_WP is\_VBZ it\_PRP ?\_.

What\_WP has\_VBZ happened\_VBN ?\_.

What\_WP is\_VBZ wrong\_JJ ?\_.

Mina\_NNP ,\_, dear\_RB ,\_, what\_WP is\_VBZ it\_PRP ?\_.

What\_WP does\_VBZ that\_DT blood\_NN mean\_VB ?\_.

My\_PRP$ God\_NNP ,\_, my\_PRP$ God\_NNP !\_.

has\_VBZ it\_PRP come\_VBN to\_TO this\_DT !\_. ''\_''

and\_CC ,\_, raising\_VBG himself\_PRP to\_TO his\_PRP$ knees\_NNS ,\_, he\_PRP beat\_VBD his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS wildly\_RB together\_RB .\_.

``\_`` Good\_NNP God\_NNP help\_VB us\_PRP !\_.

help\_VB her\_PRP !\_.

oh\_UH ,\_, help\_VB her\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

With\_IN a\_DT quick\_JJ movement\_NN he\_PRP jumped\_VBD from\_IN bed\_NN ,\_, and\_CC began\_VBD to\_TO pull\_VB on\_IN his\_PRP$ clothes\_NNS ,\_, --\_: all\_PDT the\_DT man\_NN in\_IN him\_PRP awake\_RB at\_IN the\_DT need\_NN for\_IN instant\_JJ exertion\_NN .\_.

``\_`` What\_WP has\_VBZ happened\_VBN ?\_.

Tell\_VB me\_PRP all\_DT about\_IN it\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP cried\_VBD without\_IN pausing\_VBG .\_.

``\_`` Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, you\_PRP love\_VBP Mina\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP know\_VBP .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, do\_VBP something\_NN to\_TO save\_VB her\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB have\_VB gone\_VBN too\_RB far\_RB yet\_RB .\_.

Guard\_NNP her\_PRP while\_IN I\_PRP look\_VBP for\_IN him\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

His\_PRP$ wife\_NN ,\_, through\_IN her\_PRP$ terror\_NN and\_CC horror\_NN and\_CC distress\_NN ,\_, saw\_VBD some\_DT sure\_JJ danger\_NN to\_TO him\_PRP :\_: instantly\_RB forgetting\_VBG her\_PRP$ own\_JJ grief\_NN ,\_, she\_PRP seized\_VBD hold\_NN of\_IN him\_PRP and\_CC cried\_VBD out\_RP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` No\_UH !\_.

no\_DT !\_.

Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, you\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB leave\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP suffered\_VBN enough\_JJ to-night\_NN ,\_, God\_NNP knows\_VBZ ,\_, without\_IN the\_DT dread\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ harming\_VBG you\_PRP .\_.

You\_PRP must\_MD stay\_VB with\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

Stay\_NNP with\_IN these\_DT friends\_NNS who\_WP will\_MD watch\_VB over\_IN you\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

Her\_PRP$ expression\_NN became\_VBD frantic\_JJ as\_IN she\_PRP spoke\_VBD ;\_: and\_CC ,\_, he\_PRP yielding\_VBG to\_TO her\_PRP ,\_, she\_PRP pulled\_VBD him\_PRP down\_RP sitting\_VBG on\_IN the\_DT bed\_NN side\_NN ,\_, and\_CC clung\_NN to\_TO him\_PRP fiercely\_RB .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP tried\_VBD to\_TO calm\_VB them\_PRP both\_DT .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP held\_VBD up\_RP his\_PRP$ little\_JJ golden\_JJ crucifix\_NN ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD with\_IN wonderful\_JJ calmness\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Do\_VBP not\_RB fear\_VB ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP are\_VBP here\_RB ;\_: and\_CC whilst\_IN this\_DT is\_VBZ close\_JJ to\_TO you\_PRP no\_DT foul\_JJ thing\_NN can\_MD approach\_VB .\_.

You\_PRP are\_VBP safe\_JJ for\_IN to-night\_NN ;\_: and\_CC we\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB calm\_JJ and\_CC take\_VB counsel\_NN together\_RB .\_. ''\_''

She\_PRP shuddered\_VBD and\_CC was\_VBD silent\_JJ ,\_, holding\_VBG down\_RP her\_PRP$ head\_NN on\_IN her\_PRP$ husband\_NN 's\_POS breast\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB she\_PRP raised\_VBD it\_PRP ,\_, his\_PRP$ white\_JJ night-robe\_NN was\_VBD stained\_VBN with\_IN blood\_NN where\_WRB her\_PRP$ lips\_NNS had\_VBD touched\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC where\_WRB the\_DT thin\_JJ open\_JJ wound\_NN in\_IN her\_PRP$ neck\_NN had\_VBD sent\_VBN forth\_RB drops\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT instant\_NN she\_PRP saw\_VBD it\_PRP she\_PRP drew\_VBD back\_RB ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT low\_JJ wail\_VB ,\_, and\_CC whispered\_VBD ,\_, amidst\_IN choking\_VBG sobs\_NNS :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Unclean\_JJ ,\_, unclean\_JJ !\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD touch\_VB him\_PRP or\_CC kiss\_NN him\_PRP no\_DT more\_JJR .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, that\_IN it\_PRP should\_MD be\_VB that\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ I\_PRP who\_WP am\_VBP now\_RB his\_PRP$ worst\_JJS enemy\_NN ,\_, and\_CC whom\_WP he\_PRP may\_MD have\_VB most\_JJS cause\_NN to\_TO fear\_VB .\_. ''\_''

To\_TO this\_DT he\_PRP spoke\_VBD out\_RP resolutely\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Nonsense\_NN ,\_, Mina\_NNP .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT shame\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP to\_TO hear\_VB such\_PDT a\_DT word\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB hear\_VB it\_PRP of\_IN you\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB hear\_VB it\_PRP from\_IN you\_PRP .\_.

May\_NNP God\_NNP judge\_VB me\_PRP by\_IN my\_PRP$ deserts\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC punish\_VB me\_PRP with\_IN more\_RBR bitter\_JJ suffering\_NN than\_IN even\_RB this\_DT hour\_NN ,\_, if\_IN by\_IN any\_DT act\_NN or\_CC will\_NN of\_IN mine\_JJ anything\_NN ever\_RB come\_VBN between\_IN us\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP put\_VBD out\_RP his\_PRP$ arms\_NNS and\_CC folded\_VBD her\_PRP to\_TO his\_PRP$ breast\_NN ;\_: and\_CC for\_IN a\_DT while\_NN she\_PRP lay\_VBD there\_RB sobbing\_VBG .\_.

He\_PRP looked\_VBD at\_IN us\_PRP over\_IN her\_PRP bowed\_VBD head\_NN ,\_, with\_IN eyes\_NNS that\_WDT blinked\_VBD damply\_RB above\_IN his\_PRP$ quivering\_VBG nostrils\_NNS ;\_: his\_PRP$ mouth\_NN was\_VBD set\_VBN as\_IN steel\_NN .\_.

After\_IN a\_DT while\_IN her\_PRP$ sobs\_NNS became\_VBD less\_RBR frequent\_JJ and\_CC more\_RBR faint\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB he\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, speaking\_VBG with\_IN a\_DT studied\_VBN calmness\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP felt\_VBD tried\_VBN his\_PRP$ nervous\_JJ power\_NN to\_TO the\_DT utmost\_JJ :\_: --\_: ``\_`` And\_CC now\_RB ,\_, Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP ,\_, tell\_VB me\_PRP all\_DT about\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

Too\_RB well\_RB I\_PRP know\_VBP the\_DT broad\_JJ fact\_NN ;\_: tell\_VB me\_PRP all\_DT that\_WDT has\_VBZ been\_VBN .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP told\_VBD him\_PRP exactly\_RB what\_WP had\_VBD happened\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP listened\_VBD with\_IN seeming\_JJ impassiveness\_NN ;\_: but\_CC his\_PRP$ nostrils\_NNS twitched\_VBN and\_CC his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS blazed\_VBD as\_IN I\_PRP told\_VBD how\_WRB the\_DT ruthless\_JJ hands\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP had\_VBD held\_VBN his\_PRP$ wife\_NN in\_IN that\_DT terrible\_JJ and\_CC horrid\_JJ position\_NN ,\_, with\_IN her\_PRP$ mouth\_NN to\_TO the\_DT open\_JJ wound\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ breast\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP interested\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, even\_RB at\_IN that\_DT moment\_NN ,\_, to\_TO see\_VB ,\_, that\_IN ,\_, whilst\_IN the\_DT face\_NN of\_IN white\_JJ set\_NN passion\_NN worked\_VBD convulsively\_RB over\_IN the\_DT bowed\_VBN head\_NN ,\_, the\_DT hands\_NNS tenderly\_RB and\_CC lovingly\_RB stroked\_VBD the\_DT ruffled\_VBN hair\_NN .\_.

Just\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD finished\_VBN ,\_, Quincey\_NNP and\_CC Godalming\_NNP knocked\_VBD at\_IN the\_DT door\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP entered\_VBD in\_IN obedience\_NN to\_TO our\_PRP$ summons\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP looked\_VBD at\_IN me\_PRP questioningly\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP understood\_VBD him\_PRP to\_TO mean\_VB if\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD to\_TO take\_VB advantage\_NN of\_IN their\_PRP$ coming\_VBG to\_TO divert\_VB if\_IN possible\_JJ the\_DT thoughts\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT unhappy\_JJ husband\_NN and\_CC wife\_NN from\_IN each\_DT other\_JJ and\_CC from\_IN themselves\_PRP ;\_: so\_RB on\_IN nodding\_VBG acquiescence\_NN to\_TO him\_PRP he\_PRP asked\_VBD them\_PRP what\_WP they\_PRP had\_VBD seen\_VBN or\_CC done\_VBN .\_.

To\_TO which\_WDT Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP answered\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB see\_VB him\_PRP anywhere\_RB in\_IN the\_DT passage\_NN ,\_, or\_CC in\_IN any\_DT of\_IN our\_PRP$ rooms\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP looked\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT study\_NN but\_CC ,\_, though\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN there\_RB ,\_, he\_PRP had\_VBD gone\_VBN .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD ,\_, however\_RB --\_: --\_: ''\_'' He\_PRP stopped\_VBD suddenly\_RB ,\_, looking\_VBG at\_IN the\_DT poor\_JJ drooping\_JJ figure\_NN on\_IN the\_DT bed\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP said\_VBD gravely\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Go\_VB on\_IN ,\_, friend\_NN Arthur\_NNP .\_.

We\_PRP want\_VBP here\_RB no\_RB more\_JJR concealments\_NNS .\_.

Our\_PRP$ hope\_NN now\_RB is\_VBZ in\_IN knowing\_VBG all\_DT .\_.

Tell\_VB freely\_RB !\_. ''\_''

So\_IN Art\_NNP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` He\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN there\_RB ,\_, and\_CC though\_IN it\_PRP could\_MD only\_RB have\_VB been\_VBN for\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ seconds\_NNS ,\_, he\_PRP made\_VBD rare\_JJ hay\_NN of\_IN the\_DT place\_NN .\_.

All\_PDT the\_DT manuscript\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN burned\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT blue\_JJ flames\_NNS were\_VBD flickering\_VBG amongst\_IN the\_DT white\_JJ ashes\_NNS ;\_: the\_DT cylinders\_NNS of\_IN your\_PRP$ phonograph\_NN too\_RB were\_VBD thrown\_VBN on\_IN the\_DT fire\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT wax\_NN had\_VBD helped\_VBN the\_DT flames\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

Here\_RB I\_PRP interrupted\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Thank\_VB God\_NNP there\_EX is\_VBZ the\_DT other\_JJ copy\_NN in\_IN the\_DT safe\_NN !\_. ''\_''

His\_PRP$ face\_NN lit\_VBD for\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN ,\_, but\_CC fell\_VBD again\_RB as\_IN he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP ran\_VBD downstairs\_NNS then\_RB ,\_, but\_CC could\_MD see\_VB no\_DT sign\_NN of\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP looked\_VBD into\_IN Renfield\_NNP 's\_POS room\_NN ;\_: but\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT trace\_NN there\_RB except\_IN --\_: --\_: !\_. ''\_''

Again\_RB he\_PRP paused\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Go\_VB on\_IN ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD Harker\_NNP hoarsely\_RB ;\_: so\_IN he\_PRP bowed\_VBD his\_PRP$ head\_NN and\_CC moistening\_VBG his\_PRP$ lips\_NNS with\_IN his\_PRP$ tongue\_NN ,\_, added\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` except\_IN that\_IN the\_DT poor\_JJ fellow\_NN is\_VBZ dead\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP raised\_VBD her\_PRP$ head\_NN ,\_, looking\_VBG from\_IN one\_CD to\_TO the\_DT other\_JJ of\_IN us\_PRP she\_PRP said\_VBD solemnly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` God\_NNP 's\_POS will\_MD be\_VB done\_VBN !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB but\_CC feel\_VB that\_IN Art\_NNP was\_VBD keeping\_VBG back\_JJ something\_NN ;\_: but\_CC ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP took\_VBD it\_PRP that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD with\_IN a\_DT purpose\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP said\_VBD nothing\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP turned\_VBD to\_TO Morris\_NNP and\_CC asked\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` And\_CC you\_PRP ,\_, friend\_NN Quincey\_NNP ,\_, have\_VBP you\_PRP any\_DT to\_TO tell\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` A\_DT little\_JJ ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP answered\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` It\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB much\_RB eventually\_RB ,\_, but\_CC at\_IN present\_NN I\_PRP ca\_MD n't\_RB say\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP thought\_VBD it\_PRP well\_RB to\_TO know\_VB if\_IN possible\_JJ where\_WRB the\_DT Count\_NNP would\_MD go\_VB when\_WRB he\_PRP left\_VBD the\_DT house\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB see\_VB him\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP saw\_VBD a\_DT bat\_NN rise\_NN from\_IN Renfield\_NNP 's\_POS window\_NN ,\_, and\_CC flap\_NN westward\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP expected\_VBD to\_TO see\_VB him\_PRP in\_IN some\_DT shape\_NN go\_VB back\_RB to\_TO Carfax\_NNP ;\_: but\_CC he\_PRP evidently\_RB sought\_VBD some\_DT other\_JJ lair\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB be\_VB back\_RB to-night\_JJ ;\_: for\_IN the\_DT sky\_NN is\_VBZ reddening\_VBG in\_IN the\_DT east\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT dawn\_NN is\_VBZ close\_JJ .\_.

We\_PRP must\_MD work\_VB to-morrow\_RB !\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP said\_VBD the\_DT latter\_JJ words\_NNS through\_IN his\_PRP$ shut\_VBN teeth\_NNS .\_.

For\_IN a\_DT space\_NN of\_IN perhaps\_RB a\_DT couple\_NN of\_IN minutes\_NNS there\_EX was\_VBD silence\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD fancy\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD hear\_VB the\_DT sound\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ hearts\_NNS beating\_NN ;\_: then\_RB Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP said\_VBD ,\_, placing\_VBG his\_PRP$ hand\_NN very\_RB tenderly\_RB on\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS head\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` And\_CC now\_RB ,\_, Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP --\_: poor\_JJ ,\_, dear\_RB ,\_, dear\_RB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP --\_: tell\_VB us\_PRP exactly\_RB what\_WP happened\_VBD .\_.

God\_NNP knows\_VBZ that\_IN I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB want\_VB that\_IN you\_PRP be\_VB pained\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ need\_NN that\_IN we\_PRP know\_VBP all\_DT .\_.

For\_IN now\_RB more\_JJR than\_IN ever\_RB has\_VBZ all\_DT work\_NN to\_TO be\_VB done\_VBN quick\_JJ and\_CC sharp\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN deadly\_JJ earnest\_NN .\_.

The\_DT day\_NN is\_VBZ close\_RB to\_TO us\_PRP that\_WDT must\_MD end\_VB all\_DT ,\_, if\_IN it\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB so\_RB ;\_: and\_CC now\_RB is\_VBZ the\_DT chance\_NN that\_IN we\_PRP may\_MD live\_VB and\_CC learn\_VB .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT poor\_JJ ,\_, dear\_RB lady\_NN shivered\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB the\_DT tension\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ nerves\_NNS as\_IN she\_PRP clasped\_VBD her\_PRP$ husband\_NN closer\_RBR to\_TO her\_PRP and\_CC bent\_JJ her\_PRP$ head\_NN lower\_JJR and\_CC lower\_JJR still\_RB on\_IN his\_PRP$ breast\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB she\_PRP raised\_VBD her\_PRP$ head\_NN proudly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC held\_VBD out\_RP one\_CD hand\_NN to\_TO Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP who\_WP took\_VBD it\_PRP in\_IN his\_PRP$ ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, after\_IN stooping\_VBG and\_CC kissing\_VBG it\_PRP reverently\_RB ,\_, held\_VBD it\_PRP fast\_RB .\_.

The\_DT other\_JJ hand\_NN was\_VBD locked\_VBN in\_IN that\_DT of\_IN her\_PRP$ husband\_NN ,\_, who\_WP held\_VBD his\_PRP$ other\_JJ arm\_NN thrown\_VBD round\_NN her\_PRP protectingly\_RB .\_.

After\_IN a\_DT pause\_NN in\_IN which\_WDT she\_PRP was\_VBD evidently\_RB ordering\_VBG her\_PRP$ thoughts\_NNS ,\_, she\_PRP began\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP took\_VBD the\_DT sleeping\_VBG draught\_NN which\_WDT you\_PRP had\_VBD so\_RB kindly\_RB given\_VBN me\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC for\_IN a\_DT long\_JJ time\_NN it\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB act\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO become\_VB more\_RBR wakeful\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC myriads\_NNS of\_IN horrible\_JJ fancies\_VBZ began\_VBD to\_TO crowd\_VB in\_RP upon\_IN my\_PRP$ mind\_NN --\_: all\_DT of\_IN them\_PRP connected\_VBN with\_IN death\_NN ,\_, and\_CC vampires\_NNS ;\_: with\_IN blood\_NN ,\_, and\_CC pain\_NN ,\_, and\_CC trouble\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Her\_PRP$ husband\_NN involuntarily\_RB groaned\_VBD as\_IN she\_PRP turned\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP and\_CC said\_VBD lovingly\_RB :\_: ``\_`` Do\_VBP not\_RB fret\_VB ,\_, dear\_RB .\_.

You\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB brave\_VB and\_CC strong\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC help\_VB me\_PRP through\_IN the\_DT horrible\_JJ task\_NN .\_.

If\_IN you\_PRP only\_RB knew\_VBD what\_WP an\_DT effort\_NN it\_PRP is\_VBZ to\_TO me\_PRP to\_TO tell\_VB of\_IN this\_DT fearful\_JJ thing\_NN at\_IN all\_DT ,\_, you\_PRP would\_MD understand\_VB how\_WRB much\_JJ I\_PRP need\_VBP your\_PRP$ help\_NN .\_.

Well\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP saw\_VBD I\_PRP must\_MD try\_VB to\_TO help\_VB the\_DT medicine\_NN to\_TO its\_PRP$ work\_NN with\_IN my\_PRP$ will\_NN ,\_, if\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD to\_TO do\_VB me\_PRP any\_DT good\_JJ ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP resolutely\_RB set\_VBD myself\_PRP to\_TO sleep\_VB .\_.

Sure\_JJ enough\_JJ sleep\_NN must\_MD soon\_RB have\_VB come\_VBN to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP remember\_VBP no\_RB more\_JJR .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP coming\_VBG in\_IN had\_VBD not\_RB waked\_VBN me\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP lay\_VBD by\_IN my\_PRP$ side\_NN when\_WRB next\_JJ I\_PRP remember\_VBP .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT room\_NN the\_DT same\_JJ thin\_JJ white\_JJ mist\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD before\_RB noticed\_VBN .\_.

But\_CC I\_PRP forget\_VBP now\_RB if\_IN you\_PRP know\_VBP of\_IN this\_DT ;\_: you\_PRP will\_MD find\_VB it\_PRP in\_IN my\_PRP$ diary\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP shall\_MD show\_VB you\_PRP later\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP felt\_VBD the\_DT same\_JJ vague\_JJ terror\_NN which\_WDT had\_VBD come\_VBN to\_TO me\_PRP before\_IN and\_CC the\_DT same\_JJ sense\_NN of\_IN some\_DT presence\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP turned\_VBD to\_TO wake\_VB Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, but\_CC found\_VBD that\_IN he\_PRP slept\_VBD so\_RB soundly\_RB that\_IN it\_PRP seemed\_VBD as\_IN if\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD he\_PRP who\_WP had\_VBD taken\_VBN the\_DT sleeping\_VBG draught\_NN ,\_, and\_CC not\_RB I.\_NN I\_PRP tried\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB wake\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

This\_DT caused\_VBD me\_PRP a\_DT great\_JJ fear\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP looked\_VBD around\_RB terrified\_VBN .\_.

Then\_RB indeed\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ heart\_NN sank\_VBD within\_IN me\_PRP :\_: beside\_IN the\_DT bed\_NN ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD stepped\_VBN out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT mist\_NN --\_: or\_CC rather\_RB as\_IN if\_IN the\_DT mist\_NN had\_VBD turned\_VBN into\_IN his\_PRP$ figure\_NN ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP had\_VBD entirely\_RB disappeared\_VBN --\_: stood\_VBD a\_DT tall\_JJ ,\_, thin\_JJ man\_NN ,\_, all\_DT in\_IN black\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP knew\_VBD him\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB from\_IN the\_DT description\_NN of\_IN the\_DT others\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT waxen\_JJ face\_NN ;\_: the\_DT high\_JJ aquiline\_NN nose\_NN ,\_, on\_IN which\_WDT the\_DT light\_NN fell\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT thin\_JJ white\_JJ line\_NN ;\_: the\_DT parted\_JJ red\_JJ lips\_NNS ,\_, with\_IN the\_DT sharp\_JJ white\_JJ teeth\_NNS showing\_VBG between\_IN ;\_: and\_CC the\_DT red\_JJ eyes\_NNS that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD seemed\_VBN to\_TO see\_VB in\_IN the\_DT sunset\_NN on\_IN the\_DT windows\_NNS of\_IN St.\_NNP Mary\_NNP 's\_POS Church\_NNP at\_IN Whitby\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP knew\_VBD ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, the\_DT red\_JJ scar\_NN on\_IN his\_PRP$ forehead\_NN where\_WRB Jonathan\_NNP had\_VBD struck\_VBN him\_PRP .\_.

For\_IN an\_DT instant\_NN my\_PRP$ heart\_NN stood\_VBD still\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB screamed\_VBN out\_RP ,\_, only\_RB that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD paralysed\_VBN .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT pause\_NN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN keen\_JJ ,\_, cutting\_VBG whisper\_NN ,\_, pointing\_VBG as\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD to\_TO Jonathan\_NNP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` `\_`` Silence\_NN !\_.

If\_IN you\_PRP make\_VBP a\_DT sound\_NN I\_PRP shall\_MD take\_VB him\_PRP and\_CC dash\_VB his\_PRP$ brains\_NNS out\_RP before\_IN your\_PRP$ very\_JJ eyes\_NNS .\_. '\_''

I\_PRP was\_VBD appalled\_VBN and\_CC was\_VBD too\_RB bewildered\_JJ to\_TO do\_VB or\_CC say\_VB anything\_NN .\_.

With\_IN a\_DT mocking\_VBG smile\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP placed\_VBD one\_CD hand\_NN upon\_IN my\_PRP$ shoulder\_NN and\_CC ,\_, holding\_VBG me\_PRP tight\_JJ ,\_, bared\_VBD my\_PRP$ throat\_NN with\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ ,\_, saying\_VBG as\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD so\_RB ,\_, `\_`` First\_JJ ,\_, a\_DT little\_JJ refreshment\_NN to\_TO reward\_VB my\_PRP$ exertions\_NNS .\_.

You\_PRP may\_MD as\_RB well\_RB be\_VB quiet\_JJ ;\_: it\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB the\_DT first\_JJ time\_NN ,\_, or\_CC the\_DT second\_JJ ,\_, that\_IN your\_PRP$ veins\_NNS have\_VBP appeased\_VBN my\_PRP$ thirst\_NN !\_. '\_''

I\_PRP was\_VBD bewildered\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, strangely\_RB enough\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB want\_VB to\_TO hinder\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP suppose\_VBP it\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT part\_NN of\_IN the\_DT horrible\_JJ curse\_NN that\_IN such\_JJ is\_VBZ ,\_, when\_WRB his\_PRP$ touch\_NN is\_VBZ on\_IN his\_PRP$ victim\_NN .\_.

And\_CC oh\_UH ,\_, my\_PRP$ God\_NNP ,\_, my\_PRP$ God\_NNP ,\_, pity\_NN me\_PRP !\_.

He\_PRP placed\_VBD his\_PRP$ reeking\_VBG lips\_NNS upon\_IN my\_PRP$ throat\_NN !\_. ''\_''

Her\_PRP$ husband\_NN groaned\_VBD again\_RB .\_.

She\_PRP clasped\_VBD his\_PRP$ hand\_NN harder\_RB ,\_, and\_CC looked\_VBD at\_IN him\_PRP pityingly\_RB ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN he\_PRP were\_VBD the\_DT injured\_JJ one\_CD ,\_, and\_CC went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP felt\_VBD my\_PRP$ strength\_NN fading\_JJ away\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT half\_JJ swoon\_NN .\_.

How\_WRB long\_RB this\_DT horrible\_JJ thing\_NN lasted\_VBD I\_PRP know\_VBP not\_RB ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP seemed\_VBD that\_IN a\_DT long\_JJ time\_NN must\_MD have\_VB passed\_VBN before\_IN he\_PRP took\_VBD his\_PRP$ foul\_JJ ,\_, awful\_JJ ,\_, sneering\_JJ mouth\_NN away\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP saw\_VBD it\_PRP drip\_NN with\_IN the\_DT fresh\_JJ blood\_NN !\_. ''\_''

The\_DT remembrance\_NN seemed\_VBD for\_IN a\_DT while\_NN to\_TO overpower\_VB her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP drooped\_VBD and\_CC would\_MD have\_VB sunk\_VBN down\_RP but\_CC for\_IN her\_PRP$ husband\_NN 's\_POS sustaining\_VBG arm\_NN .\_.

With\_IN a\_DT great\_JJ effort\_NN she\_PRP recovered\_VBD herself\_PRP and\_CC went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Then\_RB he\_PRP spoke\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP mockingly\_RB ,\_, `\_`` And\_CC so\_RB you\_PRP ,\_, like\_IN the\_DT others\_NNS ,\_, would\_MD play\_VB your\_PRP$ brains\_NNS against\_IN mine\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP would\_MD help\_VB these\_DT men\_NNS to\_TO hunt\_NN me\_PRP and\_CC frustrate\_VB me\_PRP in\_IN my\_PRP$ designs\_NNS !\_.

You\_PRP know\_VBP now\_RB ,\_, and\_CC they\_PRP know\_VBP in\_IN part\_NN already\_RB ,\_, and\_CC will\_MD know\_VB in\_IN full\_JJ before\_IN long\_RB ,\_, what\_WP it\_PRP is\_VBZ to\_TO cross\_VB my\_PRP$ path\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB kept\_VBN their\_PRP$ energies\_NNS for\_IN use\_NN closer\_RBR to\_TO home\_NN .\_.

Whilst\_IN they\_PRP played\_VBD wits\_NNS against\_IN me\_PRP --\_: against\_IN me\_PRP who\_WP commanded\_VBD nations\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC intrigued\_VBN for\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC fought\_VBD for\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, hundreds\_NNS of\_IN years\_NNS before\_IN they\_PRP were\_VBD born\_VBN --\_: I\_PRP was\_VBD countermining\_VBG them\_PRP .\_.

And\_CC you\_PRP ,\_, their\_PRP$ best\_JJS beloved\_JJ one\_CD ,\_, are\_VBP now\_RB to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, flesh\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ flesh\_NN ;\_: blood\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ blood\_NN ;\_: kin\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ kin\_NN ;\_: my\_PRP$ bountiful\_JJ wine-press\_NN for\_IN a\_DT while\_NN ;\_: and\_CC shall\_MD be\_VB later\_RB on\_IN my\_PRP$ companion\_NN and\_CC my\_PRP$ helper\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB avenged\_VBN in\_IN turn\_NN ;\_: for\_IN not\_RB one\_CD of\_IN them\_PRP but\_CC shall\_MD minister\_NN to\_TO your\_PRP$ needs\_NNS .\_.

But\_CC as\_IN yet\_RB you\_PRP are\_VBP to\_TO be\_VB punished\_VBN for\_IN what\_WP you\_PRP have\_VBP done\_VBN .\_.

You\_PRP have\_VBP aided\_VBN in\_IN thwarting\_VBG me\_PRP ;\_: now\_RB you\_PRP shall\_MD come\_VB to\_TO my\_PRP$ call\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB my\_PRP$ brain\_NN says\_VBZ ``\_`` Come\_VB !\_. ''\_''

to\_TO you\_PRP ,\_, you\_PRP shall\_MD cross\_VB land\_NN or\_CC sea\_NN to\_TO do\_VB my\_PRP$ bidding\_NN ;\_: and\_CC to\_TO that\_DT end\_NN this\_DT !\_. '\_''

With\_IN that\_IN he\_PRP pulled\_VBD open\_VB his\_PRP$ shirt\_NN ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN his\_PRP$ long\_JJ sharp\_JJ nails\_NNS opened\_VBD a\_DT vein\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ breast\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB the\_DT blood\_NN began\_VBD to\_TO spurt\_NN out\_RP ,\_, he\_PRP took\_VBD my\_PRP$ hands\_NNS in\_IN one\_CD of\_IN his\_PRP$ ,\_, holding\_VBG them\_PRP tight\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ seized\_VBD my\_PRP$ neck\_NN and\_CC pressed\_VBD my\_PRP$ mouth\_NN to\_TO the\_DT wound\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP must\_MD either\_RB suffocate\_VB or\_CC swallow\_VB some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT --\_: --\_: Oh\_UH my\_PRP$ God\_NNP !\_.

my\_PRP$ God\_NNP !\_.

what\_WP have\_VBP I\_PRP done\_VBN ?\_.

What\_WP have\_VBP I\_PRP done\_VBN to\_TO deserve\_VB such\_PDT a\_DT fate\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP who\_WP have\_VBP tried\_VBN to\_TO walk\_VB in\_IN meekness\_NN and\_CC righteousness\_NN all\_DT my\_PRP$ days\_NNS .\_.

God\_NN pity\_NN me\_PRP !\_.

Look\_VB down\_RP on\_IN a\_DT poor\_JJ soul\_NN in\_IN worse\_JJR than\_IN mortal\_JJ peril\_NN ;\_: and\_CC in\_IN mercy\_NN pity\_NN those\_DT to\_TO whom\_WP she\_PRP is\_VBZ dear\_RB !\_. ''\_''

Then\_RB she\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO rub\_VB her\_PRP$ lips\_NNS as\_IN though\_IN to\_TO cleanse\_VB them\_PRP from\_IN pollution\_NN .\_.

As\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD telling\_VBG her\_PRP$ terrible\_JJ story\_NN ,\_, the\_DT eastern\_JJ sky\_NN began\_VBD to\_TO quicken\_VB ,\_, and\_CC everything\_NN became\_VBD more\_RBR and\_CC more\_RBR clear\_JJ .\_.

Harker\_NNP was\_VBD still\_RB and\_CC quiet\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC over\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, as\_IN the\_DT awful\_JJ narrative\_NN went\_VBD on\_IN ,\_, came\_VBD a\_DT grey\_JJ look\_NN which\_WDT deepened\_VBD and\_CC deepened\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN light\_NN ,\_, till\_IN when\_WRB the\_DT first\_JJ red\_JJ streak\_NN of\_IN the\_DT coming\_VBG dawn\_NN shot\_NN up\_RB ,\_, the\_DT flesh\_NN stood\_VBD darkly\_RB out\_IN against\_IN the\_DT whitening\_NN hair\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP arranged\_VBN that\_IN one\_CD of\_IN us\_PRP is\_VBZ to\_TO stay\_VB within\_IN call\_NN of\_IN the\_DT unhappy\_JJ pair\_NN till\_IN we\_PRP can\_MD meet\_VB together\_RB and\_CC arrange\_VB about\_IN taking\_VBG action\_NN .\_.

Of\_IN this\_DT I\_PRP am\_VBP sure\_JJ :\_: the\_DT sun\_NN rises\_VBZ to-day\_JJ on\_IN no\_DT more\_RBR miserable\_JJ house\_NN in\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT great\_JJ round\_NN of\_IN its\_PRP$ daily\_JJ course\_NN .\_.

CHAPTER\_NNP XXII\_NNP JONATHAN\_NNP HARKER\_NNP 'S\_POS JOURNAL\_NN 3\_CD October\_NNP .\_.

--\_: As\_IN I\_PRP must\_MD do\_VB something\_NN or\_CC go\_VB mad\_JJ ,\_, I\_PRP write\_VBP this\_DT diary\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ now\_RB six\_CD o'clock\_RB ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP are\_VBP to\_TO meet\_VB in\_IN the\_DT study\_NN in\_IN half\_PDT an\_DT hour\_NN and\_CC take\_VB something\_NN to\_TO eat\_VB ;\_: for\_IN Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP and\_CC Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP are\_VBP agreed\_VBN that\_IN if\_IN we\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB eat\_VB we\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB work\_VB our\_PRP$ best\_JJS .\_.

Our\_PRP$ best\_JJS will\_MD be\_VB ,\_, God\_NNP knows\_VBZ ,\_, required\_VBD to-day\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD keep\_VB writing\_VBG at\_IN every\_DT chance\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP dare\_VBP not\_RB stop\_VB to\_TO think\_VB .\_.

All\_DT ,\_, big\_JJ and\_CC little\_JJ ,\_, must\_MD go\_VB down\_RB ;\_: perhaps\_RB at\_IN the\_DT end\_NN the\_DT little\_JJ things\_NNS may\_MD teach\_VB us\_PRP most\_JJS .\_.

The\_DT teaching\_NN ,\_, big\_JJ or\_CC little\_JJ ,\_, could\_MD not\_RB have\_VB landed\_VBN Mina\_NNP or\_CC me\_PRP anywhere\_RB worse\_JJR than\_IN we\_PRP are\_VBP to-day\_JJ .\_.

However\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP must\_MD trust\_VB and\_CC hope\_VB .\_.

Poor\_NNP Mina\_NNP told\_VBD me\_PRP just\_RB now\_RB ,\_, with\_IN the\_DT tears\_NNS running\_VBG down\_IN her\_PRP dear\_RB cheeks\_NNS ,\_, that\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ in\_IN trouble\_NN and\_CC trial\_NN that\_IN our\_PRP$ faith\_NN is\_VBZ tested\_VBN --\_: that\_IN we\_PRP must\_MD keep\_VB on\_IN trusting\_NN ;\_: and\_CC that\_IN God\_NNP will\_MD aid\_VB us\_PRP up\_IN to\_TO the\_DT end\_NN .\_.

The\_DT end\_NN !\_.

oh\_UH my\_PRP$ God\_NNP !\_.

what\_WDT end\_NN ?\_.

...\_: To\_TO work\_VB !\_.

To\_TO work\_VB !\_.

When\_WRB Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP and\_CC Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP had\_VBD come\_VBN back\_RB from\_IN seeing\_VBG poor\_JJ Renfield\_NNP ,\_, we\_PRP went\_VBD gravely\_RB into\_IN what\_WP was\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB done\_VBN .\_.

First\_RB ,\_, Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP told\_VBD us\_PRP that\_IN when\_WRB he\_PRP and\_CC Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP had\_VBD gone\_VBN down\_RB to\_TO the\_DT room\_NN below\_IN they\_PRP had\_VBD found\_VBN Renfield\_NNP lying\_VBG on\_IN the\_DT floor\_NN ,\_, all\_DT in\_IN a\_DT heap\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ face\_NN was\_VBD all\_DT bruised\_VBN and\_CC crushed\_VBN in\_IN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT bones\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT neck\_NN were\_VBD broken\_VBN .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP asked\_VBD the\_DT attendant\_NN who\_WP was\_VBD on\_IN duty\_NN in\_IN the\_DT passage\_NN if\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD heard\_VBN anything\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP said\_VBD that\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN sitting\_VBG down\_RP --\_: he\_PRP confessed\_VBD to\_TO half\_JJ dozing\_NN --\_: when\_WRB he\_PRP heard\_VBD loud\_JJ voices\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB Renfield\_NNP had\_VBD called\_VBN out\_RP loudly\_RB several\_JJ times\_NNS ,\_, ``\_`` God\_NNP !\_.

God\_NN !\_.

God\_NN !\_. ''\_''

after\_IN that\_DT there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT sound\_NN of\_IN falling\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB he\_PRP entered\_VBD the\_DT room\_NN he\_PRP found\_VBD him\_PRP lying\_VBG on\_IN the\_DT floor\_NN ,\_, face\_VBP down\_RP ,\_, just\_RB as\_IN the\_DT doctors\_NNS had\_VBD seen\_VBN him\_PRP .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP asked\_VBD if\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD heard\_VBN ``\_`` voices\_NNS ''\_'' or\_CC ``\_`` a\_DT voice\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' and\_CC he\_PRP said\_VBD he\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB say\_VB ;\_: that\_IN at\_IN first\_RB it\_PRP had\_VBD seemed\_VBN to\_TO him\_PRP as\_IN if\_IN there\_EX were\_VBD two\_CD ,\_, but\_CC as\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT one\_NN in\_IN the\_DT room\_NN it\_PRP could\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN only\_RB one\_CD .\_.

He\_PRP could\_MD swear\_VB to\_TO it\_PRP ,\_, if\_IN required\_VBN ,\_, that\_IN the\_DT word\_NN ``\_`` God\_NNP ''\_'' was\_VBD spoken\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT patient\_NN .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP said\_VBD to\_TO us\_PRP ,\_, when\_WRB we\_PRP were\_VBD alone\_RB ,\_, that\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB wish\_VB to\_TO go\_VB into\_IN the\_DT matter\_NN ;\_: the\_DT question\_NN of\_IN an\_DT inquest\_NN had\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB considered\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP would\_MD never\_RB do\_VB to\_TO put\_VB forward\_RB the\_DT truth\_NN ,\_, as\_IN no\_DT one\_NN would\_MD believe\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

As\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, he\_PRP thought\_VBD that\_IN on\_IN the\_DT attendant\_NN 's\_POS evidence\_NN he\_PRP could\_MD give\_VB a\_DT certificate\_NN of\_IN death\_NN by\_IN misadventure\_NN in\_IN falling\_VBG from\_IN bed\_NN .\_.

In\_IN case\_NN the\_DT coroner\_NN should\_MD demand\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, there\_EX would\_MD be\_VB a\_DT formal\_JJ inquest\_NN ,\_, necessarily\_RB to\_TO the\_DT same\_JJ result\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB the\_DT question\_NN began\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB discussed\_VBN as\_IN to\_TO what\_WP should\_MD be\_VB our\_PRP$ next\_JJ step\_NN ,\_, the\_DT very\_RB first\_JJ thing\_NN we\_PRP decided\_VBD was\_VBD that\_IN Mina\_NNP should\_MD be\_VB in\_IN full\_JJ confidence\_NN ;\_: that\_IN nothing\_NN of\_IN any\_DT sort\_NN --\_: no\_DT matter\_NN how\_WRB painful\_JJ --\_: should\_MD be\_VB kept\_VBN from\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

She\_PRP herself\_PRP agreed\_VBD as\_IN to\_TO its\_PRP$ wisdom\_NN ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP was\_VBD pitiful\_JJ to\_TO see\_VB her\_PRP so\_RB brave\_VB and\_CC yet\_RB so\_RB sorrowful\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT depth\_NN of\_IN despair\_NN .\_.

``\_`` There\_EX must\_MD be\_VB no\_DT concealment\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' she\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` Alas\_NNP !\_.

we\_PRP have\_VBP had\_VBN too\_RB much\_RB already\_RB .\_.

And\_CC besides\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ nothing\_NN in\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT world\_NN that\_WDT can\_MD give\_VB me\_PRP more\_JJR pain\_NN than\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP already\_RB endured\_VBN --\_: than\_IN I\_PRP suffer\_VBP now\_RB !\_.

Whatever\_WDT may\_MD happen\_VB ,\_, it\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB of\_IN new\_JJ hope\_NN or\_CC of\_IN new\_JJ courage\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP was\_VBD looking\_VBG at\_IN her\_PRP fixedly\_RB as\_IN she\_PRP spoke\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD ,\_, suddenly\_RB but\_CC quietly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` But\_CC dear\_RB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, are\_VBP you\_PRP not\_RB afraid\_JJ ;\_: not\_RB for\_IN yourself\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC for\_IN others\_NNS from\_IN yourself\_PRP ,\_, after\_IN what\_WP has\_VBZ happened\_VBN ?\_. ''\_''

Her\_PRP$ face\_NN grew\_VBD set\_VBN in\_IN its\_PRP$ lines\_NNS ,\_, but\_CC her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS shone\_VBP with\_IN the\_DT devotion\_NN of\_IN a\_DT martyr\_NN as\_IN she\_PRP answered\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Ah\_UH no\_UH !\_.

for\_IN my\_PRP$ mind\_NN is\_VBZ made\_VBN up\_RP !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` To\_TO what\_WP ?\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP asked\_VBD gently\_RB ,\_, whilst\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD all\_DT very\_RB still\_RB ;\_: for\_IN each\_DT in\_IN our\_PRP$ own\_JJ way\_NN we\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN vague\_JJ idea\_NN of\_IN what\_WP she\_PRP meant\_VBD .\_.

Her\_PRP$ answer\_NN came\_VBD with\_IN direct\_JJ simplicity\_NN ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN she\_PRP were\_VBD simply\_RB stating\_VBG a\_DT fact\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Because\_IN if\_IN I\_PRP find\_VBP in\_IN myself\_PRP --\_: and\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD watch\_VB keenly\_RB for\_IN it\_PRP --\_: a\_DT sign\_NN of\_IN harm\_NN to\_TO any\_DT that\_IN I\_PRP love\_VBP ,\_, I\_PRP shall\_MD die\_VB !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` You\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB kill\_VB yourself\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP asked\_VBD ,\_, hoarsely\_RB .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP would\_MD ;\_: if\_IN there\_EX were\_VBD no\_DT friend\_NN who\_WP loved\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, who\_WP would\_MD save\_VB me\_PRP such\_PDT a\_DT pain\_NN ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB desperate\_JJ an\_DT effort\_NN !\_. ''\_''

She\_PRP looked\_VBD at\_IN him\_PRP meaningly\_RB as\_IN she\_PRP spoke\_VBD .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD sitting\_VBG down\_RB ;\_: but\_CC now\_RB he\_PRP rose\_VBD and\_CC came\_VBD close\_RB to\_TO her\_PRP and\_CC put\_VB his\_PRP$ hand\_NN on\_IN her\_PRP$ head\_NN as\_IN he\_PRP said\_VBD solemnly\_RB :\_: ``\_`` My\_PRP$ child\_NN ,\_, there\_EX is\_VBZ such\_JJ an\_DT one\_CD if\_IN it\_PRP were\_VBD for\_IN your\_PRP$ good\_NN .\_.

For\_IN myself\_PRP I\_PRP could\_MD hold\_VB it\_PRP in\_IN my\_PRP$ account\_NN with\_IN God\_NNP to\_TO find\_VB such\_JJ an\_DT euthanasia\_NN for\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, even\_RB at\_IN this\_DT moment\_NN if\_IN it\_PRP were\_VBD best\_RB .\_.

Nay\_NNP ,\_, were\_VBD it\_PRP safe\_JJ !\_.

But\_CC my\_PRP$ child\_NN --\_: --\_: ''\_'' For\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN he\_PRP seemed\_VBD choked\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT great\_JJ sob\_VBP rose\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ throat\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP gulped\_VBD it\_PRP down\_RP and\_CC went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` There\_EX are\_VBP here\_RB some\_DT who\_WP would\_MD stand\_VB between\_IN you\_PRP and\_CC death\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB die\_VB .\_.

You\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB die\_VB by\_IN any\_DT hand\_NN ;\_: but\_CC least\_JJS of\_IN all\_DT by\_IN your\_PRP$ own\_JJ .\_.

Until\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ ,\_, who\_WP has\_VBZ fouled\_VBN your\_PRP$ sweet\_JJ life\_NN ,\_, is\_VBZ true\_JJ dead\_NN you\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB die\_VB ;\_: for\_IN if\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ still\_RB with\_IN the\_DT quick\_JJ Un-Dead\_NNP ,\_, your\_PRP$ death\_NN would\_MD make\_VB you\_PRP even\_RB as\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ .\_.

No\_DT ,\_, you\_PRP must\_MD live\_VB !\_.

You\_PRP must\_MD struggle\_VB and\_CC strive\_VB to\_TO live\_VB ,\_, though\_IN death\_NN would\_MD seem\_VB a\_DT boon\_NN unspeakable\_JJ .\_.

You\_PRP must\_MD fight\_VB Death\_NNP himself\_PRP ,\_, though\_IN he\_PRP come\_VB to\_TO you\_PRP in\_IN pain\_NN or\_CC in\_IN joy\_NN ;\_: by\_IN the\_DT day\_NN ,\_, or\_CC the\_DT night\_NN ;\_: in\_IN safety\_NN or\_CC in\_IN peril\_NN !\_.

On\_IN your\_PRP$ living\_NN soul\_NN I\_PRP charge\_VBP you\_PRP that\_IN you\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB die\_VB --\_: nay\_NN ,\_, nor\_CC think\_NN of\_IN death\_NN --\_: till\_IN this\_DT great\_JJ evil\_NN be\_VB past\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT poor\_NN dear\_RB grew\_VBD white\_JJ as\_IN death\_NN ,\_, and\_CC shock\_NN and\_CC shivered\_VBD ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP seen\_VBN a\_DT quicksand\_NN shake\_NN and\_CC shiver\_VB at\_IN the\_DT incoming\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT tide\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP were\_VBD all\_DT silent\_JJ ;\_: we\_PRP could\_MD do\_VB nothing\_NN .\_.

At\_IN length\_NN she\_PRP grew\_VBD more\_RBR calm\_JJ and\_CC turning\_VBG to\_TO him\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, sweetly\_RB ,\_, but\_CC oh\_UH !\_.

so\_RB sorrowfully\_RB ,\_, as\_IN she\_PRP held\_VBD out\_RP her\_PRP$ hand\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP promise\_VBP you\_PRP ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB friend\_NN ,\_, that\_IN if\_IN God\_NNP will\_MD let\_VB me\_PRP live\_VB ,\_, I\_PRP shall\_MD strive\_VB to\_TO do\_VB so\_RB ;\_: till\_IN ,\_, if\_IN it\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB in\_IN His\_PRP$ good\_JJ time\_NN ,\_, this\_DT horror\_NN may\_MD have\_VB passed\_VBN away\_RB from\_IN me\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

She\_PRP was\_VBD so\_RB good\_JJ and\_CC brave\_VBP that\_IN we\_PRP all\_DT felt\_VBD that\_IN our\_PRP$ hearts\_NNS were\_VBD strengthened\_VBN to\_TO work\_VB and\_CC endure\_VB for\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO discuss\_VB what\_WP we\_PRP were\_VBD to\_TO do\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP told\_VBD her\_PRP that\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD to\_TO have\_VB all\_PDT the\_DT papers\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT safe\_NN ,\_, and\_CC all\_PDT the\_DT papers\_NNS or\_CC diaries\_NNS and\_CC phonographs\_NNS we\_PRP might\_MD hereafter\_RB use\_VB ;\_: and\_CC was\_VBD to\_TO keep\_VB the\_DT record\_NN as\_IN she\_PRP had\_VBD done\_VBN before\_RB .\_.

She\_PRP was\_VBD pleased\_VBN with\_IN the\_DT prospect\_NN of\_IN anything\_NN to\_TO do\_VB --\_: if\_IN ``\_`` pleased\_JJ ''\_'' could\_MD be\_VB used\_VBN in\_IN connection\_NN with\_IN so\_RB grim\_JJ an\_DT interest\_NN .\_.

As\_IN usual\_JJ Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP had\_VBD thought\_VBN ahead\_RB of\_IN everyone\_NN else\_RB ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD prepared\_VBN with\_IN an\_DT exact\_JJ ordering\_VBG of\_IN our\_PRP$ work\_NN .\_.

``\_`` It\_PRP is\_VBZ perhaps\_RB well\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` that\_IN at\_IN our\_PRP$ meeting\_NN after\_IN our\_PRP$ visit\_NN to\_TO Carfax\_NNP we\_PRP decided\_VBD not\_RB to\_TO do\_VB anything\_NN with\_IN the\_DT earth-boxes\_NNS that\_WDT lay\_VBP there\_RB .\_.

Had\_VBD we\_PRP done\_VBN so\_RB ,\_, the\_DT Count\_NNP must\_MD have\_VB guessed\_VBN our\_PRP$ purpose\_NN ,\_, and\_CC would\_MD doubtless\_RB have\_VB taken\_VBN measures\_NNS in\_IN advance\_NN to\_TO frustrate\_VB such\_PDT an\_DT effort\_NN with\_IN regard\_NN to\_TO the\_DT others\_NNS ;\_: but\_CC now\_RB he\_PRP does\_VBZ not\_RB know\_VB our\_PRP$ intentions\_NNS .\_.

Nay\_NNP ,\_, more\_JJR ,\_, in\_IN all\_DT probability\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP does\_VBZ not\_RB know\_VB that\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT power\_NN exists\_VBZ to\_TO us\_PRP as\_IN can\_MD sterilise\_VB his\_PRP$ lairs\_NNS ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN he\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB use\_VB them\_PRP as\_IN of\_IN old\_JJ .\_.

We\_PRP are\_VBP now\_RB so\_RB much\_RB further\_RB advanced\_VBN in\_IN our\_PRP$ knowledge\_NN as\_IN to\_TO their\_PRP$ disposition\_NN that\_IN ,\_, when\_WRB we\_PRP have\_VBP examined\_VBN the\_DT house\_NN in\_IN Piccadilly\_NNP ,\_, we\_PRP may\_MD track\_VB the\_DT very\_RB last\_JJ of\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

To-day\_JJ ,\_, then\_RB ,\_, is\_VBZ ours\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC in\_IN it\_PRP rests\_VBZ our\_PRP$ hope\_NN .\_.

The\_DT sun\_NN that\_WDT rose\_VBD on\_IN our\_PRP$ sorrow\_NN this\_DT morning\_NN guards\_VBZ us\_PRP in\_IN its\_PRP$ course\_NN .\_.

Until\_IN it\_PRP sets\_VBZ to-night\_JJ ,\_, that\_DT monster\_NN must\_MD retain\_VB whatever\_WDT form\_VBP he\_PRP now\_RB has\_VBZ .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ confined\_VBN within\_IN the\_DT limitations\_NNS of\_IN his\_PRP$ earthly\_JJ envelope\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB melt\_VB into\_IN thin\_JJ air\_NN nor\_CC disappear\_VB through\_IN cracks\_NNS or\_CC chinks\_NNS or\_CC crannies\_NNS .\_.

If\_IN he\_PRP go\_VBP through\_IN a\_DT doorway\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP must\_MD open\_VB the\_DT door\_NN like\_IN a\_DT mortal\_JJ .\_.

And\_CC so\_RB we\_PRP have\_VBP this\_DT day\_NN to\_TO hunt\_NN out\_RP all\_PDT his\_PRP$ lairs\_NNS and\_CC sterilise\_VB them\_PRP .\_.

So\_RB we\_PRP shall\_MD ,\_, if\_IN we\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB yet\_RB catch\_VB him\_PRP and\_CC destroy\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, drive\_VB him\_PRP to\_TO bay\_NN in\_IN some\_DT place\_NN where\_WRB the\_DT catching\_VBG and\_CC the\_DT destroying\_VBG shall\_MD be\_VB ,\_, in\_IN time\_NN ,\_, sure\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

Here\_RB I\_PRP started\_VBD up\_RP for\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB contain\_VB myself\_PRP at\_IN the\_DT thought\_NN that\_IN the\_DT minutes\_NNS and\_CC seconds\_NNS so\_RB preciously\_RB laden\_JJ with\_IN Mina\_NNP 's\_POS life\_NN and\_CC happiness\_NN were\_VBD flying\_VBG from\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, since\_IN whilst\_IN we\_PRP talked\_VBD action\_NN was\_VBD impossible\_JJ .\_.

But\_CC Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP held\_VBD up\_RP his\_PRP$ hand\_NN warningly\_RB .\_.

``\_`` Nay\_NN ,\_, friend\_NN Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` in\_IN this\_DT ,\_, the\_DT quickest\_JJS way\_NN home\_NN is\_VBZ the\_DT longest\_JJS way\_NN ,\_, so\_RB your\_PRP$ proverb\_NNS say\_VBP .\_.

We\_PRP shall\_MD all\_DT act\_VBP and\_CC act\_VBP with\_IN desperate\_JJ quick\_JJ ,\_, when\_WRB the\_DT time\_NN has\_VBZ come\_VBN .\_.

But\_CC think\_NN ,\_, in\_IN all\_DT probable\_JJ the\_DT key\_NN of\_IN the\_DT situation\_NN is\_VBZ in\_IN that\_DT house\_NN in\_IN Piccadilly\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT Count\_NNP may\_MD have\_VB many\_JJ houses\_NNS which\_WDT he\_PRP has\_VBZ bought\_VBN .\_.

Of\_IN them\_PRP he\_PRP will\_MD have\_VB deeds\_NNS of\_IN purchase\_NN ,\_, keys\_NNS and\_CC other\_JJ things\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP will\_MD have\_VB paper\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP write\_VB on\_IN ;\_: he\_PRP will\_MD have\_VB his\_PRP$ book\_NN of\_IN cheques\_NNS .\_.

There\_EX are\_VBP many\_JJ belongings\_NNS that\_IN he\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB somewhere\_RB ;\_: why\_WRB not\_RB in\_IN this\_DT place\_NN so\_RB central\_JJ ,\_, so\_RB quiet\_JJ ,\_, where\_WRB he\_PRP come\_VB and\_CC go\_VB by\_IN the\_DT front\_NN or\_CC the\_DT back\_NN at\_IN all\_DT hour\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB in\_IN the\_DT very\_RB vast\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT traffic\_NN there\_EX is\_VBZ none\_NN to\_TO notice\_VB .\_.

We\_PRP shall\_MD go\_VB there\_RB and\_CC search\_VB that\_DT house\_NN ;\_: and\_CC when\_WRB we\_PRP learn\_VBP what\_WP it\_PRP holds\_VBZ ,\_, then\_RB we\_PRP do\_VBP what\_WP our\_PRP$ friend\_NN Arthur\_NNP call\_NN ,\_, in\_IN his\_PRP$ phrases\_NNS of\_IN hunt\_NN `\_`` stop\_VB the\_DT earths\_NNS '\_POS and\_CC so\_IN we\_PRP run\_VBP down\_RP our\_PRP$ old\_JJ fox\_NN --\_: so\_RB ?\_.

is\_VBZ it\_PRP not\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Then\_RB let\_VB us\_PRP come\_VB at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP cried\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` we\_PRP are\_VBP wasting\_VBG the\_DT precious\_JJ ,\_, precious\_JJ time\_NN !\_. ''\_''

The\_DT Professor\_NNP did\_VBD not\_RB move\_VB ,\_, but\_CC simply\_RB said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` And\_CC how\_WRB are\_VBP we\_PRP to\_TO get\_VB into\_IN that\_DT house\_NN in\_IN Piccadilly\_NNP ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Any\_DT way\_NN !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP cried\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` We\_PRP shall\_MD break\_VB in\_RP if\_IN need\_NN be\_VB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` And\_CC your\_PRP$ police\_NN ;\_: where\_WRB will\_MD they\_PRP be\_VB ,\_, and\_CC what\_WP will\_MD they\_PRP say\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP was\_VBD staggered\_VBN ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN if\_IN he\_PRP wished\_VBD to\_TO delay\_VB he\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT good\_JJ reason\_NN for\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

So\_RB I\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, as\_RB quietly\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Do\_VBP n't\_RB wait\_VB more\_JJR than\_IN need\_MD be\_VB ;\_: you\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP sure\_JJ ,\_, what\_WP torture\_VBP I\_PRP am\_VBP in\_RP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Ah\_UH ,\_, my\_PRP$ child\_NN ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP do\_VBP ;\_: and\_CC indeed\_RB there\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT wish\_NN of\_IN me\_PRP to\_TO add\_VB to\_TO your\_PRP$ anguish\_NN .\_.

But\_CC just\_RB think\_VB ,\_, what\_WP can\_MD we\_PRP do\_VB ,\_, until\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT world\_NN be\_VB at\_IN movement\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB will\_MD come\_VB our\_PRP$ time\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP thought\_VBN and\_CC thought\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP seems\_VBZ to\_TO me\_PRP that\_IN the\_DT simplest\_JJS way\_NN is\_VBZ the\_DT best\_JJS of\_IN all\_DT .\_.

Now\_RB we\_PRP wish\_VBP to\_TO get\_VB into\_IN the\_DT house\_NN ,\_, but\_CC we\_PRP have\_VBP no\_DT key\_NN ;\_: is\_VBZ it\_PRP not\_RB so\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP nodded\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Now\_RB suppose\_VBP that\_IN you\_PRP were\_VBD ,\_, in\_IN truth\_NN ,\_, the\_DT owner\_NN of\_IN that\_DT house\_NN ,\_, and\_CC could\_MD not\_RB still\_RB get\_VB it\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC think\_VBP there\_EX was\_VBD to\_TO you\_PRP no\_DT conscience\_NN of\_IN the\_DT housebreaker\_NN ,\_, what\_WP would\_MD you\_PRP do\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP should\_MD get\_VB a\_DT respectable\_JJ locksmith\_NN ,\_, and\_CC set\_VBD him\_PRP to\_TO work\_VB to\_TO pick\_VB the\_DT lock\_NN for\_IN me\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` And\_CC your\_PRP$ police\_NNS ,\_, they\_PRP would\_MD interfere\_VB ,\_, would\_MD they\_PRP not\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, no\_DT !\_.

not\_RB if\_IN they\_PRP knew\_VBD the\_DT man\_NN was\_VBD properly\_RB employed\_VBN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Then\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP looked\_VBD at\_IN me\_PRP as\_RB keenly\_RB as\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` all\_DT that\_DT is\_VBZ in\_IN doubt\_NN is\_VBZ the\_DT conscience\_NN of\_IN the\_DT employer\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT belief\_NN of\_IN your\_PRP$ policemen\_NN as\_IN to\_TO whether\_IN or\_CC no\_DT that\_DT employer\_NN has\_VBZ a\_DT good\_JJ conscience\_NN or\_CC a\_DT bad\_JJ one\_CD .\_.

Your\_PRP$ police\_NNS must\_MD indeed\_RB be\_VB zealous\_JJ men\_NNS and\_CC clever\_JJ --\_: oh\_UH ,\_, so\_RB clever\_JJ !\_.

--\_: in\_IN reading\_VBG the\_DT heart\_NN ,\_, that\_IN they\_PRP trouble\_NN themselves\_PRP in\_IN such\_JJ matter\_NN .\_.

No\_RB ,\_, no\_DT ,\_, my\_PRP$ friend\_NN Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, you\_PRP go\_VBP take\_VB the\_DT lock\_NN off\_RP a\_DT hundred\_CD empty\_JJ house\_NN in\_IN this\_DT your\_PRP$ London\_NNP ,\_, or\_CC of\_IN any\_DT city\_NN in\_IN the\_DT world\_NN ;\_: and\_CC if\_IN you\_PRP do\_VBP it\_PRP as\_IN such\_JJ things\_NNS are\_VBP rightly\_RB done\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC at\_IN the\_DT time\_NN such\_JJ things\_NNS are\_VBP rightly\_RB done\_VBN ,\_, no\_DT one\_NN will\_MD interfere\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP read\_VBN of\_IN a\_DT gentleman\_NN who\_WP owned\_VBD a\_DT so\_RB fine\_JJ house\_NN in\_IN London\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB he\_PRP went\_VBD for\_IN months\_NNS of\_IN summer\_NN to\_TO Switzerland\_NNP and\_CC lock\_VB up\_RP his\_PRP$ house\_NN ,\_, some\_DT burglar\_NN came\_VBD and\_CC broke\_VBD window\_NN at\_IN back\_NN and\_CC got\_VBD in\_RP .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP went\_VBD and\_CC made\_VBD open\_JJ the\_DT shutters\_NNS in\_IN front\_NN and\_CC walk\_NN out\_RB and\_CC in\_RB through\_IN the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, before\_IN the\_DT very\_JJ eyes\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT police\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP have\_VBP an\_DT auction\_NN in\_IN that\_DT house\_NN ,\_, and\_CC advertise\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC put\_VBD up\_RP big\_JJ notice\_NN ;\_: and\_CC when\_WRB the\_DT day\_NN come\_VBP he\_PRP sell\_VB off\_RP by\_IN a\_DT great\_JJ auctioneer\_NN all\_PDT the\_DT goods\_NNS of\_IN that\_DT other\_JJ man\_NN who\_WP own\_VBP them\_PRP .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP go\_VB to\_TO a\_DT builder\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP sell\_VBP him\_PRP that\_DT house\_NN ,\_, making\_VBG an\_DT agreement\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP pull\_VB it\_PRP down\_RP and\_CC take\_VB all\_DT away\_RB within\_IN a\_DT certain\_JJ time\_NN .\_.

And\_CC your\_PRP$ police\_NN and\_CC other\_JJ authority\_NN help\_VB him\_PRP all\_DT they\_PRP can\_MD .\_.

And\_CC when\_WRB that\_DT owner\_NN come\_VB back\_RB from\_IN his\_PRP$ holiday\_NN in\_IN Switzerland\_NNP he\_PRP find\_VB only\_RB an\_DT empty\_JJ hole\_NN where\_WRB his\_PRP$ house\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN .\_.

This\_DT was\_VBD all\_DT done\_VBN en\_IN règle\_NN ;\_: and\_CC in\_IN our\_PRP$ work\_NN we\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB en\_FW règle\_FW too\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB go\_VB so\_RB early\_RB that\_IN the\_DT policemen\_NNS who\_WP have\_VBP then\_RB little\_JJ to\_TO think\_VB of\_IN ,\_, shall\_MD deem\_VB it\_PRP strange\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC we\_PRP shall\_MD go\_VB after\_IN ten\_CD o'clock\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB there\_EX are\_VBP many\_JJ about\_IN ,\_, and\_CC such\_JJ things\_NNS would\_MD be\_VB done\_VBN were\_VBD we\_PRP indeed\_RB owners\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT house\_NN .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB but\_CC see\_VB how\_WRB right\_JJ he\_PRP was\_VBD and\_CC the\_DT terrible\_JJ despair\_NN of\_IN Mina\_NNP 's\_POS face\_NN became\_VBD relaxed\_VBN a\_DT thought\_NN ;\_: there\_EX was\_VBD hope\_NN in\_IN such\_JJ good\_JJ counsel\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` When\_WRB once\_RB within\_IN that\_DT house\_NN we\_PRP may\_MD find\_VB more\_JJR clues\_NNS ;\_: at\_IN any\_DT rate\_NN some\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP can\_MD remain\_VB there\_RB whilst\_IN the\_DT rest\_NN find\_VB the\_DT other\_JJ places\_NNS where\_WRB there\_RB be\_VB more\_JJR earth-boxes\_NNS --\_: at\_IN Bermondsey\_NNP and\_CC Mile\_NNP End\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP stood\_VBD up\_RP .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP can\_MD be\_VB of\_IN some\_DT use\_NN here\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP shall\_MD wire\_VB to\_TO my\_PRP$ people\_NNS to\_TO have\_VB horses\_NNS and\_CC carriages\_NNS where\_WRB they\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB most\_RBS convenient\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Look\_VB here\_RB ,\_, old\_JJ fellow\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD Morris\_NNP ,\_, ``\_`` it\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT capital\_NN idea\_NN to\_TO have\_VB all\_DT ready\_JJ in\_IN case\_NN we\_PRP want\_VBP to\_TO go\_VB horsebacking\_NN ;\_: but\_CC do\_VBP n't\_RB you\_PRP think\_VB that\_IN one\_CD of\_IN your\_PRP$ snappy\_JJ carriages\_NNS with\_IN its\_PRP$ heraldic\_JJ adornments\_NNS in\_IN a\_DT byway\_NN of\_IN Walworth\_NNP or\_CC Mile\_NNP End\_NNP would\_MD attract\_VB too\_RB much\_JJ attention\_NN for\_IN our\_PRP$ purposes\_NNS ?\_.

It\_PRP seems\_VBZ to\_TO me\_PRP that\_IN we\_PRP ought\_MD to\_TO take\_VB cabs\_NNS when\_WRB we\_PRP go\_VBP south\_JJ or\_CC east\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC even\_RB leave\_VB them\_PRP somewhere\_RB near\_IN the\_DT neighbourhood\_NN we\_PRP are\_VBP going\_VBG to\_TO .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Friend\_NN Quincey\_NN is\_VBZ right\_JJ !\_. ''\_''

said\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` His\_PRP$ head\_NN is\_VBZ what\_WP you\_PRP call\_VBP in\_IN plane\_NN with\_IN the\_DT horizon\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT difficult\_JJ thing\_NN that\_IN we\_PRP go\_VBP to\_TO do\_VB ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB want\_VB no\_DT peoples\_NNS to\_TO watch\_VB us\_PRP if\_IN so\_IN it\_PRP may\_MD .\_. ''\_''

Mina\_NNP took\_VBD a\_DT growing\_VBG interest\_NN in\_IN everything\_NN and\_CC I\_PRP was\_VBD rejoiced\_VBN to\_TO see\_VB that\_IN the\_DT exigency\_NN of\_IN affairs\_NNS was\_VBD helping\_VBG her\_PRP to\_TO forget\_VB for\_IN a\_DT time\_NN the\_DT terrible\_JJ experience\_NN of\_IN the\_DT night\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP was\_VBD very\_RB ,\_, very\_RB pale\_JJ --\_: almost\_RB ghastly\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB thin\_JJ that\_IN her\_PRP$ lips\_NNS were\_VBD drawn\_VBN away\_RB ,\_, showing\_VBG her\_PRP$ teeth\_NNS in\_IN somewhat\_RB of\_IN prominence\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB mention\_VB this\_DT last\_JJ ,\_, lest\_IN it\_PRP should\_MD give\_VB her\_PRP$ needless\_JJ pain\_NN ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP made\_VBD my\_PRP$ blood\_NN run\_NN cold\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ veins\_NNS to\_TO think\_VB of\_IN what\_WP had\_VBD occurred\_VBN with\_IN poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP when\_WRB the\_DT Count\_NNP had\_VBD sucked\_VBN her\_PRP$ blood\_NN .\_.

As\_IN yet\_RB there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT sign\_NN of\_IN the\_DT teeth\_NNS growing\_VBG sharper\_JJR ;\_: but\_CC the\_DT time\_NN as\_RB yet\_RB was\_VBD short\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD time\_NN for\_IN fear\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP came\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT discussion\_NN of\_IN the\_DT sequence\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ efforts\_NNS and\_CC of\_IN the\_DT disposition\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ forces\_NNS ,\_, there\_EX were\_VBD new\_JJ sources\_NNS of\_IN doubt\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD finally\_RB agreed\_VBN that\_IN before\_IN starting\_VBG for\_IN Piccadilly\_NNP we\_PRP should\_MD destroy\_VB the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS lair\_NN close\_NN at\_IN hand\_NN .\_.

In\_IN case\_NN he\_PRP should\_MD find\_VB it\_PRP out\_RP too\_RB soon\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP should\_MD thus\_RB be\_VB still\_RB ahead\_RB of\_IN him\_PRP in\_IN our\_PRP$ work\_NN of\_IN destruction\_NN ;\_: and\_CC his\_PRP$ presence\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ purely\_RB material\_JJ shape\_NN ,\_, and\_CC at\_IN his\_PRP$ weakest\_JJS ,\_, might\_MD give\_VB us\_PRP some\_DT new\_JJ clue\_NN .\_.

As\_IN to\_TO the\_DT disposal\_NN of\_IN forces\_NNS ,\_, it\_PRP was\_VBD suggested\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP that\_IN ,\_, after\_IN our\_PRP$ visit\_NN to\_TO Carfax\_NNP ,\_, we\_PRP should\_MD all\_DT enter\_VB the\_DT house\_NN in\_IN Piccadilly\_NNP ;\_: that\_IN the\_DT two\_CD doctors\_NNS and\_CC I\_PRP should\_MD remain\_VB there\_RB ,\_, whilst\_IN Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP and\_CC Quincey\_NNP found\_VBD the\_DT lairs\_NNS at\_IN Walworth\_NNP and\_CC Mile\_NNP End\_NNP and\_CC destroyed\_VBD them\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD possible\_JJ ,\_, if\_IN not\_RB likely\_JJ ,\_, the\_DT Professor\_NNP urged\_VBD ,\_, that\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN might\_MD appear\_VB in\_IN Piccadilly\_NNP during\_IN the\_DT day\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN if\_IN so\_RB we\_PRP might\_MD be\_VB able\_JJ to\_TO cope\_VB with\_IN him\_PRP then\_RB and\_CC there\_RB .\_.

At\_IN any\_DT rate\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP might\_MD be\_VB able\_JJ to\_TO follow\_VB him\_PRP in\_IN force\_NN .\_.

To\_TO this\_DT plan\_NN I\_PRP strenuously\_RB objected\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB far\_RB as\_IN my\_PRP$ going\_NN was\_VBD concerned\_VBN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP said\_VBD that\_IN I\_PRP intended\_VBD to\_TO stay\_VB and\_CC protect\_VB Mina\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP thought\_VBD that\_IN my\_PRP$ mind\_NN was\_VBD made\_VBN up\_RP on\_IN the\_DT subject\_NN ;\_: but\_CC Mina\_NNP would\_MD not\_RB listen\_VB to\_TO my\_PRP$ objection\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP said\_VBD that\_IN there\_EX might\_MD be\_VB some\_DT law\_NN matter\_NN in\_IN which\_WDT I\_PRP could\_MD be\_VB useful\_JJ ;\_: that\_IN amongst\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS papers\_NNS might\_MD be\_VB some\_DT clue\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP could\_MD understand\_VB out\_IN of\_IN my\_PRP$ experience\_NN in\_IN Transylvania\_NNP ;\_: and\_CC that\_IN ,\_, as\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, all\_PDT the\_DT strength\_NN we\_PRP could\_MD muster\_VB was\_VBD required\_VBN to\_TO cope\_VB with\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS extraordinary\_JJ power\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO give\_VB in\_RP ,\_, for\_IN Mina\_NNP 's\_POS resolution\_NN was\_VBD fixed\_VBN ;\_: she\_PRP said\_VBD that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD the\_DT last\_JJ hope\_NN for\_IN her\_PRP that\_IN we\_PRP should\_MD all\_DT work\_NN together\_RB .\_.

``\_`` As\_IN for\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, ''\_'' she\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` I\_PRP have\_VBP no\_DT fear\_NN .\_.

Things\_NNS have\_VBP been\_VBN as\_RB bad\_JJ as\_IN they\_PRP can\_MD be\_VB ;\_: and\_CC whatever\_WDT may\_MD happen\_VB must\_MD have\_VB in\_IN it\_PRP some\_DT element\_NN of\_IN hope\_NN or\_CC comfort\_NN .\_.

Go\_VB ,\_, my\_PRP$ husband\_NN !\_.

God\_NNP can\_MD ,\_, if\_IN He\_PRP wishes\_VBZ it\_PRP ,\_, guard\_VB me\_PRP as\_RB well\_RB alone\_RB as\_IN with\_IN any\_DT one\_CD present\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

So\_RB I\_PRP started\_VBD up\_RP crying\_VBG out\_RP :\_: ``\_`` Then\_RB in\_IN God\_NNP 's\_POS name\_NN let\_VBD us\_PRP come\_VB at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, for\_IN we\_PRP are\_VBP losing\_VBG time\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Count\_NNP may\_MD come\_VB to\_TO Piccadilly\_NNP earlier\_RBR than\_IN we\_PRP think\_VBP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Not\_RB so\_RB !\_. ''\_''

said\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, holding\_VBG up\_RP his\_PRP$ hand\_NN .\_.

``\_`` But\_CC why\_WRB ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP asked\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Do\_VBP you\_PRP forget\_VB ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, with\_IN actually\_RB a\_DT smile\_NN ,\_, ``\_`` that\_IN last\_JJ night\_NN he\_PRP banqueted\_VBD heavily\_RB ,\_, and\_CC will\_MD sleep\_VB late\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

Did\_VBD I\_PRP forget\_VBP !\_.

shall\_MD I\_PRP ever\_RB --\_: can\_MD I\_PRP ever\_RB !\_.

Can\_MD any\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP ever\_RB forget\_VBP that\_IN terrible\_JJ scene\_NN !\_.

Mina\_NNP struggled\_VBD hard\_JJ to\_TO keep\_VB her\_PRP brave\_VB countenance\_VBP ;\_: but\_CC the\_DT pain\_NN overmastered\_VBD her\_PRP and\_CC she\_PRP put\_VBD her\_PRP$ hands\_NNS before\_IN her\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, and\_CC shuddered\_VBD whilst\_IN she\_PRP moaned\_VBD .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP had\_VBD not\_RB intended\_VBN to\_TO recall\_VB her\_PRP$ frightful\_JJ experience\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD simply\_RB lost\_VBN sight\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP and\_CC her\_PRP$ part\_NN in\_IN the\_DT affair\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ intellectual\_JJ effort\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB it\_PRP struck\_VBD him\_PRP what\_WP he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, he\_PRP was\_VBD horrified\_VBN at\_IN his\_PRP$ thoughtlessness\_NN and\_CC tried\_VBD to\_TO comfort\_VB her\_PRP .\_.

``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` dear\_RB ,\_, dear\_RB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, alas\_UH !\_.

that\_IN I\_PRP of\_IN all\_DT who\_WP so\_RB reverence\_NN you\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB said\_VBD anything\_NN so\_RB forgetful\_JJ .\_.

These\_DT stupid\_JJ old\_JJ lips\_NNS of\_IN mine\_NN and\_CC this\_DT stupid\_JJ old\_JJ head\_NN do\_VBP not\_RB deserve\_VB so\_RB ;\_: but\_CC you\_PRP will\_MD forget\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, will\_MD you\_PRP not\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP bent\_JJ low\_NN beside\_IN her\_PRP as\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD ;\_: she\_PRP took\_VBD his\_PRP$ hand\_NN ,\_, and\_CC looking\_VBG at\_IN him\_PRP through\_IN her\_PRP$ tears\_NNS ,\_, said\_VBD hoarsely\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` No\_UH ,\_, I\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB forget\_VB ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ well\_RB that\_IN I\_PRP remember\_VBP ;\_: and\_CC with\_IN it\_PRP I\_PRP have\_VBP so\_RB much\_JJ in\_IN memory\_NN of\_IN you\_PRP that\_WDT is\_VBZ sweet\_JJ ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP take\_VBP it\_PRP all\_RB together\_RB .\_.

Now\_RB ,\_, you\_PRP must\_MD all\_DT be\_VB going\_VBG soon\_RB .\_.

Breakfast\_NN is\_VBZ ready\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP must\_MD all\_DT eat\_VB that\_IN we\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB strong\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

Breakfast\_NN was\_VBD a\_DT strange\_JJ meal\_NN to\_TO us\_PRP all\_DT .\_.

We\_PRP tried\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB cheerful\_JJ and\_CC encourage\_VB each\_DT other\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC Mina\_NNP was\_VBD the\_DT brightest\_JJS and\_CC most\_RBS cheerful\_JJ of\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

When\_WRB it\_PRP was\_VBD over\_RB ,\_, Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP stood\_VBD up\_RB and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Now\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB friends\_NNS ,\_, we\_PRP go\_VBP forth\_RB to\_TO our\_PRP$ terrible\_JJ enterprise\_NN .\_.

Are\_VBP we\_PRP all\_DT armed\_JJ ,\_, as\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD on\_IN that\_DT night\_NN when\_WRB first\_RB we\_PRP visited\_VBD our\_PRP$ enemy\_NN 's\_POS lair\_NN ;\_: armed\_VBN against\_IN ghostly\_JJ as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN carnal\_JJ attack\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

We\_PRP all\_DT assured\_VBD him\_PRP .\_.

``\_`` Then\_RB it\_PRP is\_VBZ well\_RB .\_.

Now\_RB ,\_, Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, you\_PRP are\_VBP in\_IN any\_DT case\_NN quite\_RB safe\_JJ here\_RB until\_IN the\_DT sunset\_NN ;\_: and\_CC before\_IN then\_RB we\_PRP shall\_MD return\_VB --\_: if\_IN --\_: --\_: We\_PRP shall\_MD return\_VB !\_.

But\_CC before\_IN we\_PRP go\_VBP let\_VB me\_PRP see\_VB you\_PRP armed\_VBN against\_IN personal\_JJ attack\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP myself\_PRP ,\_, since\_IN you\_PRP came\_VBD down\_RB ,\_, prepared\_VBD your\_PRP$ chamber\_NN by\_IN the\_DT placing\_NN of\_IN things\_NNS of\_IN which\_WDT we\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN He\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB enter\_VB .\_.

Now\_RB let\_VB me\_PRP guard\_VB yourself\_PRP .\_.

On\_IN your\_PRP$ forehead\_NN I\_PRP touch\_VBP this\_DT piece\_NN of\_IN Sacred\_NNP Wafer\_NNP in\_IN the\_DT name\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Father\_NNP ,\_, the\_DT Son\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC --\_: --\_: ''\_'' There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT fearful\_JJ scream\_NN which\_WDT almost\_RB froze\_VBD our\_PRP$ hearts\_NNS to\_TO hear\_VB .\_.

As\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD placed\_VBN the\_DT Wafer\_NNP on\_IN Mina\_NNP 's\_POS forehead\_NN ,\_, it\_PRP had\_VBD seared\_VBN it\_PRP --\_: had\_VBD burned\_VBN into\_IN the\_DT flesh\_NN as\_IN though\_IN it\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN a\_DT piece\_NN of\_IN white-hot\_JJ metal\_NN .\_.

My\_PRP$ poor\_JJ darling\_NN 's\_POS brain\_NN had\_VBD told\_VBN her\_PRP the\_DT significance\_NN of\_IN the\_DT fact\_NN as\_RB quickly\_RB as\_IN her\_PRP$ nerves\_NNS received\_VBD the\_DT pain\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC the\_DT two\_CD so\_RB overwhelmed\_VBD her\_PRP that\_IN her\_PRP$ overwrought\_JJ nature\_NN had\_VBD its\_PRP$ voice\_NN in\_IN that\_DT dreadful\_JJ scream\_NN .\_.

But\_CC the\_DT words\_NNS to\_TO her\_PRP$ thought\_NN came\_VBD quickly\_RB ;\_: the\_DT echo\_VBP of\_IN the\_DT scream\_NN had\_VBD not\_RB ceased\_VBN to\_TO ring\_VB on\_IN the\_DT air\_NN when\_WRB there\_EX came\_VBD the\_DT reaction\_NN ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP sank\_VBD on\_IN her\_PRP$ knees\_NNS on\_IN the\_DT floor\_NN in\_IN an\_DT agony\_NN of\_IN abasement\_NN .\_.

Pulling\_VBG her\_PRP$ beautiful\_JJ hair\_NN over\_IN her\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, as\_IN the\_DT leper\_NN of\_IN old\_JJ his\_PRP$ mantle\_NN ,\_, she\_PRP wailed\_VBD out\_RP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Unclean\_JJ !\_.

Unclean\_JJ !\_.

Even\_RB the\_DT Almighty\_NNP shuns\_VBZ my\_PRP$ polluted\_JJ flesh\_NN !\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD bear\_VB this\_DT mark\_NN of\_IN shame\_NN upon\_IN my\_PRP$ forehead\_NN until\_IN the\_DT Judgment\_NN Day\_NN .\_. ''\_''

They\_PRP all\_DT paused\_VBD .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD thrown\_VBN myself\_PRP beside\_IN her\_PRP in\_IN an\_DT agony\_NN of\_IN helpless\_JJ grief\_NN ,\_, and\_CC putting\_VBG my\_PRP$ arms\_NNS around\_RB held\_VBD her\_PRP$ tight\_JJ .\_.

For\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ minutes\_NNS our\_PRP$ sorrowful\_JJ hearts\_NNS beat\_VBP together\_RB ,\_, whilst\_IN the\_DT friends\_NNS around\_IN us\_PRP turned\_VBD away\_RP their\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS that\_WDT ran\_VBD tears\_NNS silently\_RB .\_.

Then\_RB Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP turned\_VBD and\_CC said\_VBD gravely\_RB ;\_: so\_RB gravely\_RB that\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB help\_VB feeling\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN some\_DT way\_NN inspired\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD stating\_VBG things\_NNS outside\_IN himself\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` It\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB that\_IN you\_PRP may\_MD have\_VB to\_TO bear\_VB that\_DT mark\_NN till\_IN God\_NNP himself\_PRP see\_VBP fit\_NN ,\_, as\_IN He\_PRP most\_RBS surely\_RB shall\_MD ,\_, on\_IN the\_DT Judgment\_NN Day\_NN ,\_, to\_TO redress\_VB all\_DT wrongs\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT earth\_NN and\_CC of\_IN His\_PRP$ children\_NNS that\_IN He\_PRP has\_VBZ placed\_VBN thereon\_NN .\_.

And\_CC oh\_UH ,\_, Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, may\_MD we\_PRP who\_WP love\_VBP you\_PRP be\_VB there\_RB to\_TO see\_VB ,\_, when\_WRB that\_DT red\_JJ scar\_NN ,\_, the\_DT sign\_NN of\_IN God\_NNP 's\_POS knowledge\_NN of\_IN what\_WP has\_VBZ been\_VBN ,\_, shall\_MD pass\_VB away\_RB ,\_, and\_CC leave\_VB your\_PRP$ forehead\_NN as\_RB pure\_JJ as\_IN the\_DT heart\_NN we\_PRP know\_VBP .\_.

For\_IN so\_RB surely\_RB as\_IN we\_PRP live\_VBP ,\_, that\_DT scar\_NN shall\_MD pass\_VB away\_RB when\_WRB God\_NNP sees\_VBZ right\_JJ to\_TO lift\_VB the\_DT burden\_NN that\_WDT is\_VBZ hard\_RB upon\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

Till\_IN then\_RB we\_PRP bear\_VBP our\_PRP$ Cross\_NNP ,\_, as\_IN His\_PRP$ Son\_NNP did\_VBD in\_IN obedience\_NN to\_TO His\_PRP$ Will\_NNP .\_.

It\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB that\_IN we\_PRP are\_VBP chosen\_JJ instruments\_NNS of\_IN His\_PRP$ good\_JJ pleasure\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN we\_PRP ascend\_VBP to\_TO His\_PRP$ bidding\_NN as\_IN that\_DT other\_JJ through\_IN stripes\_NNS and\_CC shame\_NN ;\_: through\_IN tears\_NNS and\_CC blood\_NN ;\_: through\_IN doubts\_NNS and\_CC fears\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC all\_DT that\_WDT makes\_VBZ the\_DT difference\_NN between\_IN God\_NNP and\_CC man\_NN .\_. ''\_''

There\_EX was\_VBD hope\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ words\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC comfort\_NN ;\_: and\_CC they\_PRP made\_VBD for\_IN resignation\_NN .\_.

Mina\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP both\_DT felt\_VBD so\_RB ,\_, and\_CC simultaneously\_RB we\_PRP each\_DT took\_VBD one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT old\_JJ man\_NN 's\_POS hands\_NNS and\_CC bent\_NN over\_IN and\_CC kissed\_VBD it\_PRP .\_.

Then\_RB without\_IN a\_DT word\_NN we\_PRP all\_DT knelt\_VBD down\_RB together\_RB ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, all\_DT holding\_VBG hands\_NNS ,\_, swore\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB true\_JJ to\_TO each\_DT other\_JJ .\_.

We\_PRP men\_NNS pledged\_VBD ourselves\_PRP to\_TO raise\_VB the\_DT veil\_NN of\_IN sorrow\_NN from\_IN the\_DT head\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP whom\_WP ,\_, each\_DT in\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ way\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP loved\_VBD ;\_: and\_CC we\_PRP prayed\_VBD for\_IN help\_NN and\_CC guidance\_NN in\_IN the\_DT terrible\_JJ task\_NN which\_WDT lay\_VBD before\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD then\_RB time\_NN to\_TO start\_VB .\_.

So\_RB I\_PRP said\_VBD farewell\_NN to\_TO Mina\_NNP ,\_, a\_DT parting\_NN which\_WDT neither\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP shall\_MD forget\_VB to\_TO our\_PRP$ dying\_VBG day\_NN ;\_: and\_CC we\_PRP set\_VBD out\_RP .\_.

To\_TO one\_CD thing\_NN I\_PRP have\_VBP made\_VBN up\_RP my\_PRP$ mind\_NN :\_: if\_IN we\_PRP find\_VBP out\_RP that\_IN Mina\_NNP must\_MD be\_VB a\_DT vampire\_NN in\_IN the\_DT end\_NN ,\_, then\_RB she\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB go\_VB into\_IN that\_DT unknown\_JJ and\_CC terrible\_JJ land\_NN alone\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP suppose\_VBP it\_PRP is\_VBZ thus\_RB that\_IN in\_IN old\_JJ times\_NNS one\_CD vampire\_NN meant\_VBD many\_JJ ;\_: just\_RB as\_IN their\_PRP$ hideous\_JJ bodies\_NNS could\_MD only\_RB rest\_VB in\_IN sacred\_JJ earth\_NN ,\_, so\_IN the\_DT holiest\_JJS love\_NN was\_VBD the\_DT recruiting\_NN sergeant\_NN for\_IN their\_PRP$ ghastly\_JJ ranks\_NNS .\_.

We\_PRP entered\_VBD Carfax\_NNP without\_IN trouble\_NN and\_CC found\_VBD all\_DT things\_NNS the\_DT same\_JJ as\_IN on\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ occasion\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD hard\_JJ to\_TO believe\_VB that\_IN amongst\_IN so\_RB prosaic\_JJ surroundings\_NNS of\_IN neglect\_NN and\_CC dust\_NN and\_CC decay\_NN there\_EX was\_VBD any\_DT ground\_NN for\_IN such\_JJ fear\_NN as\_RB already\_RB we\_PRP knew\_VBD .\_.

Had\_VBD not\_RB our\_PRP$ minds\_NNS been\_VBN made\_VBN up\_RP ,\_, and\_CC had\_VBD there\_EX not\_RB been\_VBN terrible\_JJ memories\_NNS to\_TO spur\_VB us\_PRP on\_IN ,\_, we\_PRP could\_MD hardly\_RB have\_VB proceeded\_VBN with\_IN our\_PRP$ task\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP found\_VBD no\_DT papers\_NNS ,\_, or\_CC any\_DT sign\_NN of\_IN use\_NN in\_IN the\_DT house\_NN ;\_: and\_CC in\_IN the\_DT old\_JJ chapel\_NN the\_DT great\_JJ boxes\_NNS looked\_VBD just\_RB as\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD seen\_VBN them\_PRP last\_JJ .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP said\_VBD to\_TO us\_PRP solemnly\_RB as\_IN we\_PRP stood\_VBD before\_IN them\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` And\_CC now\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ friends\_NNS ,\_, we\_PRP have\_VBP a\_DT duty\_NN here\_RB to\_TO do\_VB .\_.

We\_PRP must\_MD sterilise\_VB this\_DT earth\_NN ,\_, so\_RB sacred\_JJ of\_IN holy\_JJ memories\_NNS ,\_, that\_IN he\_PRP has\_VBZ brought\_VBN from\_IN a\_DT far\_RB distant\_JJ land\_NN for\_IN such\_JJ fell\_JJ use\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ chosen\_VBN this\_DT earth\_NN because\_IN it\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN holy\_JJ .\_.

Thus\_RB we\_PRP defeat\_VBP him\_PRP with\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ weapon\_NN ,\_, for\_IN we\_PRP make\_VBP it\_PRP more\_RBR holy\_JJ still\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD sanctified\_VBN to\_TO such\_JJ use\_NN of\_IN man\_NN ,\_, now\_RB we\_PRP sanctify\_VBP it\_PRP to\_TO God\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

As\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD he\_PRP took\_VBD from\_IN his\_PRP$ bag\_NN a\_DT screwdriver\_NN and\_CC a\_DT wrench\_NN ,\_, and\_CC very\_RB soon\_RB the\_DT top\_NN of\_IN one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT cases\_NNS was\_VBD thrown\_VBN open\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT earth\_NN smelled\_VBD musty\_JJ and\_CC close\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC we\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB somehow\_RB seem\_VBP to\_TO mind\_VB ,\_, for\_IN our\_PRP$ attention\_NN was\_VBD concentrated\_VBN on\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP .\_.

Taking\_VBG from\_IN his\_PRP$ box\_NN a\_DT piece\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Sacred\_JJ Wafer\_NN he\_PRP laid\_VBD it\_PRP reverently\_RB on\_IN the\_DT earth\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB shutting\_VBG down\_RP the\_DT lid\_NN began\_VBD to\_TO screw\_VB it\_PRP home\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP aiding\_VBG him\_PRP as\_IN he\_PRP worked\_VBD .\_.

One\_CD by\_IN one\_CD we\_PRP treated\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ way\_NN each\_DT of\_IN the\_DT great\_JJ boxes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC left\_VBD them\_PRP as\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD found\_VBN them\_PRP to\_TO all\_DT appearance\_NN ;\_: but\_CC in\_IN each\_DT was\_VBD a\_DT portion\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Host\_NNP .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP closed\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN behind\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, the\_DT Professor\_NNP said\_VBD solemnly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` So\_RB much\_JJ is\_VBZ already\_RB done\_VBN .\_.

If\_IN it\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB that\_IN with\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT others\_NNS we\_PRP can\_MD be\_VB so\_RB successful\_JJ ,\_, then\_RB the\_DT sunset\_NN of\_IN this\_DT evening\_NN may\_MD shine\_VB on\_IN Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP 's\_POS forehead\_NN all\_RB white\_JJ as\_IN ivory\_NN and\_CC with\_IN no\_DT stain\_VB !\_. ''\_''

As\_IN we\_PRP passed\_VBD across\_IN the\_DT lawn\_NN on\_IN our\_PRP$ way\_NN to\_TO the\_DT station\_NN to\_TO catch\_VB our\_PRP$ train\_NN we\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB the\_DT front\_NN of\_IN the\_DT asylum\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP looked\_VBD eagerly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN the\_DT window\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ room\_NN saw\_VBD Mina\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP waved\_VBD my\_PRP$ hand\_NN to\_TO her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC nodded\_VBD to\_TO tell\_VB that\_DT our\_PRP$ work\_NN there\_EX was\_VBD successfully\_RB accomplished\_VBN .\_.

She\_PRP nodded\_VBD in\_IN reply\_NN to\_TO show\_VB that\_IN she\_PRP understood\_VBD .\_.

The\_DT last\_JJ I\_PRP saw\_VBD ,\_, she\_PRP was\_VBD waving\_VBG her\_PRP$ hand\_NN in\_IN farewell\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD with\_IN a\_DT heavy\_JJ heart\_NN that\_IN we\_PRP sought\_VBD the\_DT station\_NN and\_CC just\_RB caught\_VBD the\_DT train\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT was\_VBD steaming\_VBG in\_RP as\_IN we\_PRP reached\_VBD the\_DT platform\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP written\_VBN this\_DT in\_IN the\_DT train\_NN .\_.

Piccadilly\_RB ,\_, 12:30\_CD o'clock\_RB .\_.

--\_: Just\_RB before\_IN we\_PRP reached\_VBD Fenchurch\_NNP Street\_NNP Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Quincey\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP will\_MD find\_VB a\_DT locksmith\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP had\_VBD better\_RBR not\_RB come\_VBN with\_IN us\_PRP in\_IN case\_NN there\_EX should\_MD be\_VB any\_DT difficulty\_NN ;\_: for\_IN under\_IN the\_DT circumstances\_NNS it\_PRP would\_MD n't\_RB seem\_VB so\_RB bad\_JJ for\_IN us\_PRP to\_TO break\_VB into\_IN an\_DT empty\_JJ house\_NN .\_.

But\_CC you\_PRP are\_VBP a\_DT solicitor\_NN and\_CC the\_DT Incorporated\_NNP Law\_NNP Society\_NNP might\_MD tell\_VB you\_PRP that\_IN you\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB known\_VBN better\_RBR .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP demurred\_VBD as\_IN to\_TO my\_PRP$ not\_RB sharing\_VBG any\_DT danger\_NN even\_RB of\_IN odium\_NN ,\_, but\_CC he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: ``\_`` Besides\_IN ,\_, it\_PRP will\_MD attract\_VB less\_JJR attention\_NN if\_IN there\_EX are\_VBP not\_RB too\_RB many\_JJ of\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

My\_PRP$ title\_NN will\_MD make\_VB it\_PRP all\_DT right\_NN with\_IN the\_DT locksmith\_NN ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN any\_DT policeman\_NN that\_WDT may\_MD come\_VB along\_RB .\_.

You\_PRP had\_VBD better\_RBR go\_VB with\_IN Jack\_NNP and\_CC the\_DT Professor\_NNP and\_CC stay\_VB in\_IN the\_DT Green\_NNP Park\_NNP ,\_, somewhere\_RB in\_IN sight\_NN of\_IN the\_DT house\_NN ;\_: and\_CC when\_WRB you\_PRP see\_VBP the\_DT door\_NN opened\_VBD and\_CC the\_DT smith\_NN has\_VBZ gone\_VBN away\_RB ,\_, do\_VB you\_PRP all\_DT come\_VBP across\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB on\_IN the\_DT lookout\_NN for\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC shall\_MD let\_VB you\_PRP in\_IN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` The\_DT advice\_NN is\_VBZ good\_JJ !\_. ''\_''

said\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, so\_IN we\_PRP said\_VBD no\_DT more\_JJR .\_.

Godalming\_NNP and\_CC Morris\_NNP hurried\_VBD off\_RP in\_IN a\_DT cab\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP following\_VBG in\_IN another\_DT .\_.

At\_IN the\_DT corner\_NN of\_IN Arlington\_NNP Street\_NNP our\_PRP$ contingent\_NN got\_VBD out\_RB and\_CC strolled\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT Green\_NNP Park\_NNP .\_.

My\_PRP$ heart\_NN beat\_NN as\_IN I\_PRP saw\_VBD the\_DT house\_NN on\_IN which\_WDT so\_RB much\_JJ of\_IN our\_PRP$ hope\_NN was\_VBD centred\_VBN ,\_, looming\_VBG up\_RP grim\_JJ and\_CC silent\_JJ in\_IN its\_PRP$ deserted\_VBN condition\_NN amongst\_IN its\_PRP$ more\_RBR lively\_JJ and\_CC spruce-looking\_JJ neighbours\_NNS .\_.

We\_PRP sat\_VBD down\_RP on\_IN a\_DT bench\_NN within\_IN good\_JJ view\_NN ,\_, and\_CC began\_VBD to\_TO smoke\_VB cigars\_NNS so\_RB as\_IN to\_TO attract\_VB as\_IN little\_JJ attention\_NN as\_IN possible\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT minutes\_NNS seemed\_VBD to\_TO pass\_VB with\_IN leaden\_JJ feet\_NNS as\_IN we\_PRP waited\_VBD for\_IN the\_DT coming\_VBG of\_IN the\_DT others\_NNS .\_.

At\_IN length\_NN we\_PRP saw\_VBD a\_DT four-wheeler\_NN drive\_NN up\_RB .\_.

Out\_IN of\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, in\_IN leisurely\_JJ fashion\_NN ,\_, got\_VBD Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP and\_CC Morris\_NNP ;\_: and\_CC down\_RB from\_IN the\_DT box\_NN descended\_VBD a\_DT thick-set\_JJ working\_VBG man\_NN with\_IN his\_PRP$ rush-woven\_JJ basket\_NN of\_IN tools\_NNS .\_.

Morris\_NNP paid\_VBD the\_DT cabman\_NN ,\_, who\_WP touched\_VBD his\_PRP$ hat\_NN and\_CC drove\_VBD away\_RB .\_.

Together\_RB the\_DT two\_CD ascended\_VBD the\_DT steps\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP pointed\_VBD out\_RP what\_WP he\_PRP wanted\_VBD done\_VBN .\_.

The\_DT workman\_NN took\_VBD off\_RP his\_PRP$ coat\_NN leisurely\_JJ and\_CC hung\_VBD it\_PRP on\_IN one\_CD of\_IN the\_DT spikes\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT rail\_NN ,\_, saying\_VBG something\_NN to\_TO a\_DT policeman\_NN who\_WP just\_RB then\_RB sauntered\_VBD along\_RB .\_.

The\_DT policeman\_NN nodded\_VBD acquiescence\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT man\_NN kneeling\_VBG down\_RB placed\_VBN his\_PRP$ bag\_NN beside\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

After\_IN searching\_VBG through\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP took\_VBD out\_RP a\_DT selection\_NN of\_IN tools\_NNS which\_WDT he\_PRP produced\_VBD to\_TO lay\_VB beside\_IN him\_PRP in\_IN orderly\_JJ fashion\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP stood\_VBD up\_RP ,\_, looked\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT keyhole\_NN ,\_, blew\_VBD into\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC turning\_VBG to\_TO his\_PRP$ employers\_NNS ,\_, made\_VBD some\_DT remark\_NN .\_.

Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP smiled\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT man\_NN lifted\_VBD a\_DT good-sized\_JJ bunch\_NN of\_IN keys\_NNS ;\_: selecting\_VBG one\_CD of\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO probe\_VB the\_DT lock\_NN ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN feeling\_VBG his\_PRP$ way\_NN with\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

After\_IN fumbling\_VBG about\_IN for\_IN a\_DT bit\_NN he\_PRP tried\_VBD a\_DT second\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB a\_DT third\_JJ .\_.

All\_DT at\_IN once\_RB the\_DT door\_NN opened\_VBD under\_IN a\_DT slight\_JJ push\_NN from\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP and\_CC the\_DT two\_CD others\_NNS entered\_VBD the\_DT hall\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP sat\_VBD still\_RB ;\_: my\_PRP$ own\_JJ cigar\_NN burnt\_VBN furiously\_RB ,\_, but\_CC Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP 's\_POS went\_VBD cold\_JJ altogether\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP waited\_VBD patiently\_RB as\_IN we\_PRP saw\_VBD the\_DT workman\_NN come\_VBN out\_RP and\_CC bring\_VB in\_RP his\_PRP$ bag\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP held\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN partly\_RB open\_JJ ,\_, steadying\_JJ it\_PRP with\_IN his\_PRP$ knees\_NNS ,\_, whilst\_IN he\_PRP fitted\_VBD a\_DT key\_NN to\_TO the\_DT lock\_NN .\_.

This\_DT he\_PRP finally\_RB handed\_VBD to\_TO Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP took\_VBD out\_RP his\_PRP$ purse\_NN and\_CC gave\_VBD him\_PRP something\_NN .\_.

The\_DT man\_NN touched\_VBD his\_PRP$ hat\_NN ,\_, took\_VBD his\_PRP$ bag\_NN ,\_, put\_VBN on\_IN his\_PRP$ coat\_NN and\_CC departed\_VBD ;\_: not\_RB a\_DT soul\_NN took\_VBD the\_DT slightest\_JJS notice\_NN of\_IN the\_DT whole\_JJ transaction\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB the\_DT man\_NN had\_VBD fairly\_RB gone\_VBN ,\_, we\_PRP three\_CD crossed\_VBD the\_DT street\_NN and\_CC knocked\_VBD at\_IN the\_DT door\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD immediately\_RB opened\_VBN by\_IN Quincey\_NNP Morris\_NNP ,\_, beside\_IN whom\_WP stood\_VBD Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP lighting\_VBG a\_DT cigar\_NN .\_.

``\_`` The\_DT place\_NN smells\_VBZ so\_RB vilely\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD the\_DT latter\_JJ as\_IN we\_PRP came\_VBD in\_IN .\_.

It\_PRP did\_VBD indeed\_RB smell\_VB vilely\_RB --\_: like\_IN the\_DT old\_JJ chapel\_NN at\_IN Carfax\_NNP --\_: and\_CC with\_IN our\_PRP$ previous\_JJ experience\_NN it\_PRP was\_VBD plain\_JJ to\_TO us\_PRP that\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN using\_VBG the\_DT place\_NN pretty\_RB freely\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP moved\_VBD to\_TO explore\_VB the\_DT house\_NN ,\_, all\_DT keeping\_VBG together\_RB in\_IN case\_NN of\_IN attack\_NN ;\_: for\_IN we\_PRP knew\_VBD we\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT strong\_JJ and\_CC wily\_JJ enemy\_NN to\_TO deal\_VB with\_IN ,\_, and\_CC as\_RB yet\_RB we\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB know\_VB whether\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN might\_MD not\_RB be\_VB in\_IN the\_DT house\_NN .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT dining-room\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT lay\_VBD at\_IN the\_DT back\_NN of\_IN the\_DT hall\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP found\_VBD eight\_CD boxes\_NNS of\_IN earth\_NN .\_.

Eight\_CD boxes\_NNS only\_RB out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT nine\_CD ,\_, which\_WDT we\_PRP sought\_VBD !\_.

Our\_PRP$ work\_NN was\_VBD not\_RB over\_RB ,\_, and\_CC would\_MD never\_RB be\_VB until\_IN we\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB found\_VBN the\_DT missing\_JJ box\_NN .\_.

First\_RB we\_PRP opened\_VBD the\_DT shutters\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT window\_NN which\_WDT looked\_VBD out\_RP across\_IN a\_DT narrow\_JJ stone-flagged\_JJ yard\_NN at\_IN the\_DT blank\_JJ face\_NN of\_IN a\_DT stable\_NN ,\_, pointed\_VBD to\_TO look\_VB like\_IN the\_DT front\_NN of\_IN a\_DT miniature\_JJ house\_NN .\_.

There\_EX were\_VBD no\_DT windows\_NNS in\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD not\_RB afraid\_JJ of\_IN being\_VBG over-looked\_JJ .\_.

We\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB lose\_VB any\_DT time\_NN in\_IN examining\_VBG the\_DT chests\_NNS .\_.

With\_IN the\_DT tools\_NNS which\_WDT we\_PRP had\_VBD brought\_VBN with\_IN us\_PRP we\_PRP opened\_VBD them\_PRP ,\_, one\_CD by\_IN one\_CD ,\_, and\_CC treated\_VBD them\_PRP as\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD treated\_VBN those\_DT others\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT old\_JJ chapel\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD evident\_JJ to\_TO us\_PRP that\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN was\_VBD not\_RB at\_IN present\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT house\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP proceeded\_VBD to\_TO search\_VB for\_IN any\_DT of\_IN his\_PRP$ effects\_NNS .\_.

After\_IN a\_DT cursory\_JJ glance\_NN at\_IN the\_DT rest\_NN of\_IN the\_DT rooms\_NNS ,\_, from\_IN basement\_NN to\_TO attic\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP came\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT conclusion\_NN that\_IN the\_DT dining-room\_NN contained\_VBD any\_DT effects\_NNS which\_WDT might\_MD belong\_VB to\_TO the\_DT Count\_NN ;\_: and\_CC so\_RB we\_PRP proceeded\_VBD to\_TO minutely\_RB examine\_VB them\_PRP .\_.

They\_PRP lay\_VBP in\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN orderly\_JJ disorder\_NN on\_IN the\_DT great\_JJ dining-room\_JJ table\_NN .\_.

There\_EX were\_VBD title\_JJ deeds\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT Piccadilly\_NNP house\_NN in\_IN a\_DT great\_JJ bundle\_NN ;\_: deeds\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT purchase\_NN of\_IN the\_DT houses\_NNS at\_IN Mile\_NNP End\_NNP and\_CC Bermondsey\_NNP ;\_: note-paper\_JJ ,\_, envelopes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC pens\_NNS and\_CC ink\_NN .\_.

All\_DT were\_VBD covered\_VBN up\_RP in\_IN thin\_JJ wrapping\_VBG paper\_NN to\_TO keep\_VB them\_PRP from\_IN the\_DT dust\_NN .\_.

There\_EX were\_VBD also\_RB a\_DT clothes\_NNS brush\_NN ,\_, a\_DT brush\_NN and\_CC comb\_NN ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT jug\_NN and\_CC basin\_NN --\_: the\_DT latter\_JJ containing\_VBG dirty\_JJ water\_NN which\_WDT was\_VBD reddened\_VBN as\_IN if\_IN with\_IN blood\_NN .\_.

Last\_JJ of\_IN all\_DT was\_VBD a\_DT little\_JJ heap\_NN of\_IN keys\_NNS of\_IN all\_DT sorts\_NNS and\_CC sizes\_NNS ,\_, probably\_RB those\_DT belonging\_VBG to\_TO the\_DT other\_JJ houses\_NNS .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP had\_VBD examined\_VBN this\_DT last\_JJ find\_VB ,\_, Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP and\_CC Quincey\_NNP Morris\_NNP taking\_VBG accurate\_JJ notes\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT various\_JJ addresses\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT houses\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT East\_NNP and\_CC the\_DT South\_NNP ,\_, took\_VBD with\_IN them\_PRP the\_DT keys\_NNS in\_IN a\_DT great\_JJ bunch\_NN ,\_, and\_CC set\_VBD out\_RP to\_TO destroy\_VB the\_DT boxes\_NNS in\_IN these\_DT places\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT rest\_NN of\_IN us\_PRP are\_VBP ,\_, with\_IN what\_WDT patience\_NN we\_PRP can\_MD ,\_, waiting\_VBG their\_PRP$ return\_NN --\_: or\_CC the\_DT coming\_VBG of\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN .\_.

CHAPTER\_NNP XXIII\_NNP DR.\_NNP SEWARD\_NNP 'S\_POS DIARY\_NN 3\_CD October\_NNP .\_.

--\_: The\_DT time\_NN seemed\_VBD terrible\_JJ long\_RB whilst\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD waiting\_VBG for\_IN the\_DT coming\_VBG of\_IN Godalming\_NNP and\_CC Quincey\_NNP Morris\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP tried\_VBD to\_TO keep\_VB our\_PRP$ minds\_NNS active\_JJ by\_IN using\_VBG them\_PRP all\_PDT the\_DT time\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB his\_PRP$ beneficent\_JJ purpose\_NN ,\_, by\_IN the\_DT side\_NN glances\_NNS which\_WDT he\_PRP threw\_VBD from\_IN time\_NN to\_TO time\_NN at\_IN Harker\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT poor\_JJ fellow\_NN is\_VBZ overwhelmed\_VBN in\_IN a\_DT misery\_NN that\_WDT is\_VBZ appalling\_JJ to\_TO see\_VB .\_.

Last\_JJ night\_NN he\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT frank\_JJ ,\_, happy-looking\_JJ man\_NN ,\_, with\_IN strong\_JJ ,\_, youthful\_JJ face\_NN ,\_, full\_JJ of\_IN energy\_NN ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN dark\_JJ brown\_JJ hair\_NN .\_.

To-day\_JJ he\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT drawn\_VBN ,\_, haggard\_JJ old\_JJ man\_NN ,\_, whose\_WP$ white\_JJ hair\_NN matches\_VBZ well\_RB with\_IN the\_DT hollow\_JJ burning\_NN eyes\_NNS and\_CC grief-written\_JJ lines\_NNS of\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ energy\_NN is\_VBZ still\_RB intact\_JJ ;\_: in\_IN fact\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP is\_VBZ like\_IN a\_DT living\_NN flame\_NN .\_.

This\_DT may\_MD yet\_RB be\_VB his\_PRP$ salvation\_NN ,\_, for\_IN ,\_, if\_IN all\_DT go\_VBP well\_RB ,\_, it\_PRP will\_MD tide\_NN him\_PRP over\_IN the\_DT despairing\_JJ period\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP will\_MD then\_RB ,\_, in\_IN a\_DT kind\_NN of\_IN way\_NN ,\_, wake\_VBP again\_RB to\_TO the\_DT realities\_NNS of\_IN life\_NN .\_.

Poor\_NNP fellow\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP thought\_VBD my\_PRP$ own\_JJ trouble\_NN was\_VBD bad\_JJ enough\_RB ,\_, but\_CC his\_PRP$ --\_: --\_: !\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP knows\_VBZ this\_DT well\_RB enough\_RB ,\_, and\_CC is\_VBZ doing\_VBG his\_PRP$ best\_JJS to\_TO keep\_VB his\_PRP$ mind\_NN active\_JJ .\_.

What\_WP he\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN saying\_VBG was\_VBD ,\_, under\_IN the\_DT circumstances\_NNS ,\_, of\_IN absorbing\_VBG interest\_NN .\_.

So\_RB well\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD remember\_VB ,\_, here\_RB it\_PRP is\_VBZ :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP have\_VBP studied\_VBN ,\_, over\_RB and\_CC over\_RB again\_RB since\_IN they\_PRP came\_VBD into\_IN my\_PRP$ hands\_NNS ,\_, all\_PDT the\_DT papers\_NNS relating\_VBG to\_TO this\_DT monster\_NN ;\_: and\_CC the\_DT more\_JJR I\_PRP have\_VBP studied\_VBN ,\_, the\_DT greater\_JJR seems\_VBZ the\_DT necessity\_NN to\_TO utterly\_RB stamp\_VB him\_PRP out\_RP .\_.

All\_DT through\_IN there\_EX are\_VBP signs\_NNS of\_IN his\_PRP$ advance\_NN ;\_: not\_RB only\_RB of\_IN his\_PRP$ power\_NN ,\_, but\_CC of\_IN his\_PRP$ knowledge\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

As\_IN I\_PRP learned\_VBD from\_IN the\_DT researches\_VBZ of\_IN my\_PRP$ friend\_NN Arminus\_NNP of\_IN Buda-Pesth\_NNP ,\_, he\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN life\_NN a\_DT most\_RBS wonderful\_JJ man\_NN .\_.

Soldier\_NN ,\_, statesman\_NN ,\_, and\_CC alchemist\_NN --\_: which\_WDT latter\_NN was\_VBD the\_DT highest\_JJS development\_NN of\_IN the\_DT science-knowledge\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ time\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT mighty\_JJ brain\_NN ,\_, a\_DT learning\_NN beyond\_IN compare\_VB ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT heart\_NN that\_WDT knew\_VBD no\_DT fear\_NN and\_CC no\_DT remorse\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP dared\_VBD even\_RB to\_TO attend\_VB the\_DT Scholomance\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT branch\_NN of\_IN knowledge\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ time\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB essay\_NN .\_.

Well\_RB ,\_, in\_IN him\_PRP the\_DT brain\_NN powers\_NNS survived\_VBD the\_DT physical\_JJ death\_NN ;\_: though\_IN it\_PRP would\_MD seem\_VB that\_DT memory\_NN was\_VBD not\_RB all\_RB complete\_JJ .\_.

In\_IN some\_DT faculties\_NNS of\_IN mind\_NN he\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC is\_VBZ ,\_, only\_RB a\_DT child\_NN ;\_: but\_CC he\_PRP is\_VBZ growing\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC some\_DT things\_NNS that\_WDT were\_VBD childish\_JJ at\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ are\_VBP now\_RB of\_IN man\_NN 's\_POS stature\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ experimenting\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC doing\_VBG it\_PRP well\_RB ;\_: and\_CC if\_IN it\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB been\_VBN that\_IN we\_PRP have\_VBP crossed\_VBN his\_PRP$ path\_NN he\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB yet\_RB --\_: he\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB yet\_RB if\_IN we\_PRP fail\_VBP --\_: the\_DT father\_NN or\_CC furtherer\_NN of\_IN a\_DT new\_JJ order\_NN of\_IN beings\_NNS ,\_, whose\_WP$ road\_NN must\_MD lead\_VB through\_IN Death\_NNP ,\_, not\_RB Life\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

Harker\_NNP groaned\_VBD and\_CC said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` And\_CC this\_DT is\_VBZ all\_DT arrayed\_VBN against\_IN my\_PRP$ darling\_NN !\_.

But\_CC how\_WRB is\_VBZ he\_PRP experimenting\_VBG ?\_.

The\_DT knowledge\_NN may\_MD help\_VB us\_PRP to\_TO defeat\_VB him\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` He\_PRP has\_VBZ all\_DT along\_IN ,\_, since\_IN his\_PRP$ coming\_VBG ,\_, been\_VBN trying\_VBG his\_PRP$ power\_NN ,\_, slowly\_RB but\_CC surely\_RB ;\_: that\_IN big\_JJ child-brain\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ is\_VBZ working\_VBG .\_.

Well\_RB for\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, it\_PRP is\_VBZ ,\_, as\_IN yet\_RB ,\_, a\_DT child-brain\_NN ;\_: for\_IN had\_VBD he\_PRP dared\_VBD ,\_, at\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ ,\_, to\_TO attempt\_VB certain\_JJ things\_NNS he\_PRP would\_MD long\_RB ago\_RB have\_VBP been\_VBN beyond\_IN our\_PRP$ power\_NN .\_.

However\_RB ,\_, he\_PRP means\_VBZ to\_TO succeed\_VB ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT man\_NN who\_WP has\_VBZ centuries\_NNS before\_IN him\_PRP can\_MD afford\_VB to\_TO wait\_VB and\_CC to\_TO go\_VB slow\_JJ .\_.

Festina\_FW lente\_FW may\_MD well\_RB be\_VB his\_PRP$ motto\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP fail\_VBP to\_TO understand\_VB ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD Harker\_NNP wearily\_RB .\_.

``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, do\_VBP be\_VB more\_RBR plain\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP !\_.

Perhaps\_RB grief\_NN and\_CC trouble\_NN are\_VBP dulling\_VBG my\_PRP$ brain\_NN .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT Professor\_NNP laid\_VBD his\_PRP$ hand\_NN tenderly\_RB on\_IN his\_PRP$ shoulder\_NN as\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Ah\_UH ,\_, my\_PRP$ child\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB plain\_JJ .\_.

Do\_VBP you\_PRP not\_RB see\_VB how\_WRB ,\_, of\_IN late\_RB ,\_, this\_DT monster\_NN has\_VBZ been\_VBN creeping\_VBG into\_IN knowledge\_NN experimentally\_RB .\_.

How\_WRB he\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN making\_VBG use\_NN of\_IN the\_DT zoöphagous\_JJ patient\_NN to\_TO effect\_VB his\_PRP$ entry\_NN into\_IN friend\_NN John\_NNP 's\_POS home\_NN ;\_: for\_IN your\_PRP$ Vampire\_NNP ,\_, though\_IN in\_IN all\_DT afterwards\_RB he\_PRP can\_MD come\_VB when\_WRB and\_CC how\_WRB he\_PRP will\_MD ,\_, must\_MD at\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ make\_NN entry\_NN only\_RB when\_WRB asked\_VBN thereto\_RB by\_IN an\_DT inmate\_NN .\_.

But\_CC these\_DT are\_VBP not\_RB his\_PRP$ most\_RBS important\_JJ experiments\_NNS .\_.

Do\_VBP we\_PRP not\_RB see\_VB how\_WRB at\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ all\_DT these\_DT so\_RB great\_JJ boxes\_NNS were\_VBD moved\_VBN by\_IN others\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP knew\_VBD not\_RB then\_RB but\_CC that\_DT must\_MD be\_VB so\_RB .\_.

But\_CC all\_PDT the\_DT time\_NN that\_WDT so\_RB great\_JJ child-brain\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ was\_VBD growing\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO consider\_VB whether\_IN he\_PRP might\_MD not\_RB himself\_PRP move\_VB the\_DT box\_NN .\_.

So\_RB he\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO help\_VB ;\_: and\_CC then\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB he\_PRP found\_VBD that\_IN this\_DT be\_VB all-right\_JJ ,\_, he\_PRP try\_VBP to\_TO move\_VB them\_PRP all\_RB alone\_RB .\_.

And\_CC so\_RB he\_PRP progress\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP scatter\_VB these\_DT graves\_NNS of\_IN him\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC none\_NN but\_CC he\_PRP know\_VBP where\_WRB they\_PRP are\_VBP hidden\_VBN .\_.

He\_PRP may\_MD have\_VB intend\_VBP to\_TO bury\_VB them\_PRP deep\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT ground\_NN .\_.

So\_RB that\_IN he\_PRP only\_RB use\_VBP them\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT night\_NN ,\_, or\_CC at\_IN such\_JJ time\_NN as\_IN he\_PRP can\_MD change\_VB his\_PRP$ form\_NN ,\_, they\_PRP do\_VBP him\_PRP equal\_VB well\_RB ;\_: and\_CC none\_NN may\_MD know\_VB these\_DT are\_VBP his\_PRP$ hiding-place\_NN !\_.

But\_CC ,\_, my\_PRP$ child\_NN ,\_, do\_VBP not\_RB despair\_NN ;\_: this\_DT knowledge\_NN come\_VBN to\_TO him\_PRP just\_RB too\_RB late\_JJ !\_.

Already\_RB all\_DT of\_IN his\_PRP$ lairs\_NNS but\_CC one\_CD be\_VB sterilise\_JJ as\_IN for\_IN him\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC before\_IN the\_DT sunset\_NN this\_DT shall\_MD be\_VB so\_RB .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP have\_VBP no\_DT place\_NN where\_WRB he\_PRP can\_MD move\_VB and\_CC hide\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP delayed\_VBD this\_DT morning\_NN that\_IN so\_IN we\_PRP might\_MD be\_VB sure\_JJ .\_.

Is\_VBZ there\_EX not\_RB more\_JJR at\_IN stake\_NN for\_IN us\_PRP than\_IN for\_IN him\_PRP ?\_.

Then\_RB why\_WRB we\_PRP not\_RB be\_VB even\_RB more\_RBR careful\_JJ than\_IN him\_PRP ?\_.

By\_IN my\_PRP$ clock\_NN it\_PRP is\_VBZ one\_CD hour\_NN and\_CC already\_RB ,\_, if\_IN all\_DT be\_VB well\_RB ,\_, friend\_NN Arthur\_NNP and\_CC Quincey\_NNP are\_VBP on\_IN their\_PRP$ way\_NN to\_TO us\_PRP .\_.

To-day\_JJ is\_VBZ our\_PRP$ day\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP must\_MD go\_VB sure\_JJ ,\_, if\_IN slow\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC lose\_VB no\_DT chance\_NN .\_.

See\_VB !\_.

there\_EX are\_VBP five\_CD of\_IN us\_PRP when\_WRB those\_DT absent\_JJ ones\_NNS return\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Whilst\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD speaking\_VBG we\_PRP were\_VBD startled\_VBN by\_IN a\_DT knock\_VB at\_IN the\_DT hall\_NN door\_NN ,\_, the\_DT double\_JJ postman\_NN 's\_POS knock\_VB of\_IN the\_DT telegraph\_NN boy\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP all\_DT moved\_VBD out\_RP to\_TO the\_DT hall\_NN with\_IN one\_CD impulse\_NN ,\_, and\_CC Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, holding\_VBG up\_RP his\_PRP$ hand\_NN to\_TO us\_PRP to\_TO keep\_VB silence\_NN ,\_, stepped\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT door\_NN and\_CC opened\_VBD it\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT boy\_NN handed\_VBN in\_IN a\_DT despatch\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP closed\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN again\_RB ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, after\_IN looking\_VBG at\_IN the\_DT direction\_NN ,\_, opened\_VBD it\_PRP and\_CC read\_VB aloud\_RB .\_.

``\_`` Look\_VB out\_RP for\_IN D\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ just\_RB now\_RB ,\_, 12:45\_CD ,\_, come\_VBN from\_IN Carfax\_NNP hurriedly\_RB and\_CC hastened\_VBD towards\_IN the\_DT South\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP seems\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB going\_VBG the\_DT round\_NN and\_CC may\_MD want\_VB to\_TO see\_VB you\_PRP :\_: Mina\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT pause\_NN ,\_, broken\_VBN by\_IN Jonathan\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS voice\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Now\_RB ,\_, God\_NNP be\_VB thanked\_VBN ,\_, we\_PRP shall\_MD soon\_RB meet\_VB !\_. ''\_''

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP turned\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP quickly\_RB and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` God\_NNP will\_MD act\_VB in\_IN His\_PRP$ own\_JJ way\_NN and\_CC time\_NN .\_.

Do\_VBP not\_RB fear\_VB ,\_, and\_CC do\_VBP not\_RB rejoice\_VB as\_IN yet\_RB ;\_: for\_IN what\_WP we\_PRP wish\_VBP for\_IN at\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN may\_MD be\_VB our\_PRP$ undoings\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP care\_VBP for\_IN nothing\_NN now\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP answered\_VBD hotly\_RB ,\_, ``\_`` except\_IN to\_TO wipe\_VB out\_RP this\_DT brute\_JJ from\_IN the\_DT face\_NN of\_IN creation\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP would\_MD sell\_VB my\_PRP$ soul\_NN to\_TO do\_VB it\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, hush\_JJ ,\_, hush\_JJ ,\_, my\_PRP$ child\_NN !\_. ''\_''

said\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` God\_NN does\_VBZ not\_RB purchase\_VB souls\_NNS in\_IN this\_DT wise\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC the\_DT Devil\_NNP ,\_, though\_IN he\_PRP may\_MD purchase\_VB ,\_, does\_VBZ not\_RB keep\_VB faith\_NN .\_.

But\_CC God\_NNP is\_VBZ merciful\_JJ and\_CC just\_RB ,\_, and\_CC knows\_VBZ your\_PRP$ pain\_NN and\_CC your\_PRP$ devotion\_NN to\_TO that\_DT dear\_RB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP .\_.

Think\_VB you\_PRP ,\_, how\_WRB her\_PRP$ pain\_NN would\_MD be\_VB doubled\_VBN ,\_, did\_VBD she\_PRP but\_CC hear\_VB your\_PRP$ wild\_JJ words\_NNS .\_.

Do\_VBP not\_RB fear\_VB any\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, we\_PRP are\_VBP all\_DT devoted\_VBN to\_TO this\_DT cause\_NN ,\_, and\_CC to-day\_NN shall\_MD see\_VB the\_DT end\_NN .\_.

The\_DT time\_NN is\_VBZ coming\_VBG for\_IN action\_NN ;\_: to-day\_NN this\_DT Vampire\_NNP is\_VBZ limit\_NN to\_TO the\_DT powers\_NNS of\_IN man\_NN ,\_, and\_CC till\_IN sunset\_NN he\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB change\_VB .\_.

It\_PRP will\_MD take\_VB him\_PRP time\_NN to\_TO arrive\_VB here\_RB --\_: see\_VBP ,\_, it\_PRP is\_VBZ twenty\_CD minutes\_NNS past\_JJ one\_CD --\_: and\_CC there\_EX are\_VBP yet\_RB some\_DT times\_NNS before\_IN he\_PRP can\_MD hither\_RB come\_VB ,\_, be\_VB he\_PRP never\_RB so\_RB quick\_JJ .\_.

What\_WP we\_PRP must\_MD hope\_VB for\_IN is\_VBZ that\_IN my\_PRP$ Lord\_NNP Arthur\_NNP and\_CC Quincey\_NNP arrive\_VBP first\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

About\_IN half\_PDT an\_DT hour\_NN after\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD received\_VBN Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS telegram\_NN ,\_, there\_EX came\_VBD a\_DT quiet\_JJ ,\_, resolute\_JJ knock\_VBP at\_IN the\_DT hall\_NN door\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD just\_RB an\_DT ordinary\_JJ knock\_VBP ,\_, such\_JJ as\_IN is\_VBZ given\_VBN hourly\_JJ by\_IN thousands\_NNS of\_IN gentlemen\_NNS ,\_, but\_CC it\_PRP made\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP 's\_POS heart\_NN and\_CC mine\_JJ beat\_NN loudly\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP looked\_VBD at\_IN each\_DT other\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC together\_RB moved\_VBD out\_RP into\_IN the\_DT hall\_NN ;\_: we\_PRP each\_DT held\_VBD ready\_JJ to\_TO use\_VB our\_PRP$ various\_JJ armaments\_NNS --\_: the\_DT spiritual\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT left\_JJ hand\_NN ,\_, the\_DT mortal\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT right\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP pulled\_VBD back\_RP the\_DT latch\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, holding\_VBG the\_DT door\_NN half\_NN open\_NN ,\_, stood\_VBD back\_RB ,\_, having\_VBG both\_DT hands\_NNS ready\_JJ for\_IN action\_NN .\_.

The\_DT gladness\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ hearts\_NNS must\_MD have\_VB shown\_VBN upon\_IN our\_PRP$ faces\_NNS when\_WRB on\_IN the\_DT step\_NN ,\_, close\_RB to\_TO the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP saw\_VBD Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP and\_CC Quincey\_NNP Morris\_NNP .\_.

They\_PRP came\_VBD quickly\_RB in\_IN and\_CC closed\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN behind\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, the\_DT former\_JJ saying\_NN ,\_, as\_IN they\_PRP moved\_VBD along\_IN the\_DT hall\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` It\_PRP is\_VBZ all\_DT right\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP found\_VBD both\_DT places\_NNS ;\_: six\_CD boxes\_NNS in\_IN each\_DT and\_CC we\_PRP destroyed\_VBD them\_PRP all\_DT !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Destroyed\_VBN ?\_. ''\_''

asked\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` For\_IN him\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

We\_PRP were\_VBD silent\_JJ for\_IN a\_DT minute\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB Quincey\_NNP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` There\_EX 's\_VBZ nothing\_NN to\_TO do\_VB but\_CC to\_TO wait\_VB here\_RB .\_.

If\_IN ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, he\_PRP does\_VBZ n't\_RB turn\_VB up\_RP by\_IN five\_CD o'clock\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP must\_MD start\_VB off\_RP ;\_: for\_IN it\_PRP wo\_MD n't\_RB do\_VB to\_TO leave\_VB Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP alone\_RB after\_IN sunset\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` He\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB here\_RB before\_IN long\_RB now\_RB ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP had\_VBD been\_VBN consulting\_VBG his\_PRP$ pocket-book\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Nota\_FW bene\_FW ,\_, in\_IN Madam\_NNP 's\_POS telegram\_NN he\_PRP went\_VBD south\_RB from\_IN Carfax\_NNP ,\_, that\_WDT means\_VBZ he\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO cross\_VB the\_DT river\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP could\_MD only\_RB do\_VB so\_RB at\_IN slack\_NN of\_IN tide\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT should\_MD be\_VB something\_NN before\_IN one\_CD o'clock\_RB .\_.

That\_IN he\_PRP went\_VBD south\_RB has\_VBZ a\_DT meaning\_NN for\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ as\_RB yet\_RB only\_RB suspicious\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC he\_PRP went\_VBD from\_IN Carfax\_NNP first\_RB to\_TO the\_DT place\_NN where\_WRB he\_PRP would\_MD suspect\_VB interference\_NN least\_JJS .\_.

You\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN at\_IN Bermondsey\_NNP only\_RB a\_DT short\_JJ time\_NN before\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

That\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB here\_RB already\_RB shows\_VBZ that\_IN he\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO Mile\_NNP End\_NNP next\_JJ .\_.

This\_DT took\_VBD him\_PRP some\_DT time\_NN ;\_: for\_IN he\_PRP would\_MD then\_RB have\_VB to\_TO be\_VB carried\_VBN over\_IN the\_DT river\_NN in\_IN some\_DT way\_NN .\_.

Believe\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, my\_PRP$ friends\_NNS ,\_, we\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB have\_VB long\_JJ to\_TO wait\_VB now\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB ready\_JJ some\_DT plan\_NN of\_IN attack\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN we\_PRP may\_MD throw\_VB away\_RP no\_DT chance\_NN .\_.

Hush\_JJ ,\_, there\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT time\_NN now\_RB .\_.

Have\_VB all\_DT your\_PRP$ arms\_NNS !\_.

Be\_VB ready\_JJ !\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP held\_VBD up\_RP a\_DT warning\_NN hand\_NN as\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD ,\_, for\_IN we\_PRP all\_DT could\_MD hear\_VB a\_DT key\_NN softly\_RB inserted\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT lock\_NN of\_IN the\_DT hall\_NN door\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB but\_CC admire\_RB ,\_, even\_RB at\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT moment\_NN ,\_, the\_DT way\_NN in\_IN which\_WDT a\_DT dominant\_JJ spirit\_NN asserted\_VBD itself\_PRP .\_.

In\_IN all\_DT our\_PRP$ hunting\_NN parties\_NNS and\_CC adventures\_NNS in\_IN different\_JJ parts\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT world\_NN ,\_, Quincey\_NNP Morris\_NNP had\_VBD always\_RB been\_VBN the\_DT one\_CD to\_TO arrange\_VB the\_DT plan\_NN of\_IN action\_NN ,\_, and\_CC Arthur\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN accustomed\_VBN to\_TO obey\_VB him\_PRP implicitly\_RB .\_.

Now\_RB ,\_, the\_DT old\_JJ habit\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB renewed\_VBN instinctively\_RB .\_.

With\_IN a\_DT swift\_JJ glance\_NN around\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB laid\_VBN out\_RP our\_PRP$ plan\_NN of\_IN attack\_NN ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, without\_IN speaking\_VBG a\_DT word\_NN ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT gesture\_NN ,\_, placed\_VBD us\_PRP each\_DT in\_IN position\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, Harker\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP were\_VBD just\_RB behind\_IN the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN when\_WRB it\_PRP was\_VBD opened\_VBN the\_DT Professor\_NNP could\_MD guard\_VB it\_PRP whilst\_IN we\_PRP two\_CD stepped\_VBD between\_IN the\_DT incomer\_NN and\_CC the\_DT door\_NN .\_.

Godalming\_VBG behind\_IN and\_CC Quincey\_NNP in\_IN front\_NN stood\_VBD just\_RB out\_IN of\_IN sight\_NN ready\_JJ to\_TO move\_VB in\_IN front\_NN of\_IN the\_DT window\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP waited\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT suspense\_NN that\_WDT made\_VBD the\_DT seconds\_NNS pass\_VBP with\_IN nightmare\_NN slowness\_NN .\_.

The\_DT slow\_JJ ,\_, careful\_JJ steps\_NNS came\_VBD along\_IN the\_DT hall\_NN ;\_: the\_DT Count\_NNP was\_VBD evidently\_RB prepared\_VBN for\_IN some\_DT surprise\_NN --\_: at\_IN least\_JJS he\_PRP feared\_VBD it\_PRP .\_.

Suddenly\_RB with\_IN a\_DT single\_JJ bound\_VBD he\_PRP leaped\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, winning\_VBG a\_DT way\_NN past\_IN us\_PRP before\_IN any\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP could\_MD raise\_VB a\_DT hand\_NN to\_TO stay\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD something\_NN so\_RB panther-like\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT movement\_NN --\_: something\_NN so\_RB unhuman\_JJ ,\_, that\_IN it\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO sober\_JJ us\_PRP all\_DT from\_IN the\_DT shock\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ coming\_VBG .\_.

The\_DT first\_JJ to\_TO act\_NN was\_VBD Harker\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT quick\_JJ movement\_NN ,\_, threw\_VBD himself\_PRP before\_IN the\_DT door\_NN leading\_VBG into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN in\_IN the\_DT front\_NN of\_IN the\_DT house\_NN .\_.

As\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP saw\_VBD us\_PRP ,\_, a\_DT horrible\_JJ sort\_NN of\_IN snarl\_NN passed\_VBN over\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, showing\_VBG the\_DT eye-teeth\_JJ long\_JJ and\_CC pointed\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC the\_DT evil\_JJ smile\_NN as\_IN quickly\_RB passed\_VBN into\_IN a\_DT cold\_NN stare\_VB of\_IN lion-like\_JJ disdain\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ expression\_NN again\_RB changed\_VBD as\_IN ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT single\_JJ impulse\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP all\_DT advanced\_VBD upon\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT pity\_NN that\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB some\_DT better\_RBR organised\_VBN plan\_NN of\_IN attack\_NN ,\_, for\_IN even\_RB at\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN I\_PRP wondered\_VBD what\_WP we\_PRP were\_VBD to\_TO do\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB myself\_PRP know\_VBP whether\_IN our\_PRP$ lethal\_JJ weapons\_NNS would\_MD avail\_NN us\_PRP anything\_NN .\_.

Harker\_NNP evidently\_RB meant\_VBD to\_TO try\_VB the\_DT matter\_NN ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD ready\_JJ his\_PRP$ great\_JJ Kukri\_NNP knife\_NN and\_CC made\_VBD a\_DT fierce\_JJ and\_CC sudden\_JJ cut\_NN at\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT blow\_NN was\_VBD a\_DT powerful\_JJ one\_CD ;\_: only\_RB the\_DT diabolical\_JJ quickness\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS leap\_NN back\_RB saved\_VBD him\_PRP .\_.

A\_DT second\_JJ less\_JJR and\_CC the\_DT trenchant\_JJ blade\_NN had\_VBD shorne\_VBN through\_IN his\_PRP$ heart\_NN .\_.

As\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, the\_DT point\_NN just\_RB cut\_VBD the\_DT cloth\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ coat\_NN ,\_, making\_VBG a\_DT wide\_JJ gap\_NN whence\_NN a\_DT bundle\_NN of\_IN bank-notes\_NNS and\_CC a\_DT stream\_NN of\_IN gold\_NN fell\_VBD out\_RP .\_.

The\_DT expression\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS face\_NN was\_VBD so\_RB hellish\_JJ ,\_, that\_IN for\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN I\_PRP feared\_VBD for\_IN Harker\_NNP ,\_, though\_IN I\_PRP saw\_VBD him\_PRP throw\_VB the\_DT terrible\_JJ knife\_NN aloft\_RB again\_RB for\_IN another\_DT stroke\_NN .\_.

Instinctively\_RB I\_PRP moved\_VBD forward\_RB with\_IN a\_DT protective\_JJ impulse\_NN ,\_, holding\_VBG the\_DT Crucifix\_NNP and\_CC Wafer\_NNP in\_IN my\_PRP$ left\_JJ hand\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP felt\_VBD a\_DT mighty\_JJ power\_NN fly\_NN along\_IN my\_PRP$ arm\_NN ;\_: and\_CC it\_PRP was\_VBD without\_IN surprise\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP saw\_VBD the\_DT monster\_NN cower\_VBP back\_RB before\_IN a\_DT similar\_JJ movement\_NN made\_VBN spontaneously\_RB by\_IN each\_DT one\_CD of\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB impossible\_JJ to\_TO describe\_VB the\_DT expression\_NN of\_IN hate\_NN and\_CC baffled\_JJ malignity\_NN --\_: of\_IN anger\_NN and\_CC hellish\_JJ rage\_NN --\_: which\_WDT came\_VBD over\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS face\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ waxen\_JJ hue\_NN became\_VBD greenish-yellow\_JJ by\_IN the\_DT contrast\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ burning\_NN eyes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT red\_JJ scar\_NN on\_IN the\_DT forehead\_NN showed\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT pallid\_JJ skin\_NN like\_IN a\_DT palpitating\_JJ wound\_NN .\_.

The\_DT next\_JJ instant\_NN ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT sinuous\_JJ dive\_NN he\_PRP swept\_VBD under\_IN Harker\_NNP 's\_POS arm\_NN ,\_, ere\_VB his\_PRP$ blow\_NN could\_MD fall\_VB ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, grasping\_VBG a\_DT handful\_NN of\_IN the\_DT money\_NN from\_IN the\_DT floor\_NN ,\_, dashed\_VBN across\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, threw\_VBD himself\_PRP at\_IN the\_DT window\_NN .\_.

Amid\_IN the\_DT crash\_NN and\_CC glitter\_NN of\_IN the\_DT falling\_VBG glass\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP tumbled\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT flagged\_VBN area\_NN below\_IN .\_.

Through\_IN the\_DT sound\_NN of\_IN the\_DT shivering\_VBG glass\_NN I\_PRP could\_MD hear\_VB the\_DT ``\_`` ting\_NN ''\_'' of\_IN the\_DT gold\_NN ,\_, as\_IN some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT sovereigns\_NNS fell\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT flagging\_JJ .\_.

We\_PRP ran\_VBD over\_RB and\_CC saw\_VBD him\_PRP spring\_NN unhurt\_NN from\_IN the\_DT ground\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP ,\_, rushing\_VBG up\_RP the\_DT steps\_NNS ,\_, crossed\_VBD the\_DT flagged\_VBN yard\_NN ,\_, and\_CC pushed\_VBD open\_VB the\_DT stable\_JJ door\_NN .\_.

There\_EX he\_PRP turned\_VBD and\_CC spoke\_VBD to\_TO us\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP think\_VBP to\_TO baffle\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, you\_PRP --\_: with\_IN your\_PRP$ pale\_NN faces\_VBZ all\_DT in\_IN a\_DT row\_NN ,\_, like\_IN sheep\_NN in\_IN a\_DT butcher\_NN 's\_POS .\_.

You\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB sorry\_JJ yet\_RB ,\_, each\_DT one\_CD of\_IN you\_PRP !\_.

You\_PRP think\_VBP you\_PRP have\_VBP left\_VBN me\_PRP without\_IN a\_DT place\_NN to\_TO rest\_VB ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP more\_JJR .\_.

My\_PRP$ revenge\_NN is\_VBZ just\_RB begun\_VBN !\_.

I\_PRP spread\_VBD it\_PRP over\_IN centuries\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC time\_NN is\_VBZ on\_IN my\_PRP$ side\_NN .\_.

Your\_PRP$ girls\_NNS that\_IN you\_PRP all\_DT love\_NN are\_VBP mine\_JJ already\_RB ;\_: and\_CC through\_IN them\_PRP you\_PRP and\_CC others\_NNS shall\_MD yet\_RB be\_VB mine\_JJ --\_: my\_PRP$ creatures\_NNS ,\_, to\_TO do\_VB my\_PRP$ bidding\_NN and\_CC to\_TO be\_VB my\_PRP$ jackals\_NNS when\_WRB I\_PRP want\_VBP to\_TO feed\_VB .\_.

Bah\_NN !\_. ''\_''

With\_IN a\_DT contemptuous\_JJ sneer\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP passed\_VBD quickly\_RB through\_IN the\_DT door\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP heard\_VBD the\_DT rusty\_JJ bolt\_NN creak\_VBP as\_IN he\_PRP fastened\_VBD it\_PRP behind\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

A\_DT door\_NN beyond\_IN opened\_VBN and\_CC shut\_VBN .\_.

The\_DT first\_JJ of\_IN us\_PRP to\_TO speak\_VB was\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP ,\_, as\_IN ,\_, realising\_VBG the\_DT difficulty\_NN of\_IN following\_VBG him\_PRP through\_IN the\_DT stable\_JJ ,\_, we\_PRP moved\_VBD toward\_IN the\_DT hall\_NN .\_.

``\_`` We\_PRP have\_VBP learnt\_VBN something\_NN --\_: much\_JJ !\_.

Notwithstanding\_IN his\_PRP$ brave\_VB words\_NNS ,\_, he\_PRP fears\_VBZ us\_PRP ;\_: he\_PRP fear\_VBP time\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP fear\_VBP want\_VB !\_.

For\_IN if\_IN not\_RB ,\_, why\_WRB he\_PRP hurry\_VB so\_RB ?\_.

His\_PRP$ very\_JJ tone\_NN betray\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, or\_CC my\_PRP$ ears\_NNS deceive\_VBP .\_.

Why\_WRB take\_VBP that\_DT money\_NN ?\_.

You\_PRP follow\_VBP quick\_JJ .\_.

You\_PRP are\_VBP hunters\_NNS of\_IN wild\_JJ beast\_NN ,\_, and\_CC understand\_VB it\_PRP so\_RB .\_.

For\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP make\_VBP sure\_JJ that\_IN nothing\_NN here\_RB may\_MD be\_VB of\_IN use\_NN to\_TO him\_PRP ,\_, if\_IN so\_RB that\_IN he\_PRP return\_VB .\_. ''\_''

As\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD he\_PRP put\_VBD the\_DT money\_NN remaining\_VBG into\_IN his\_PRP$ pocket\_NN ;\_: took\_VBD the\_DT title-deeds\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT bundle\_NN as\_IN Harker\_NNP had\_VBD left\_VBN them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC swept\_VBD the\_DT remaining\_VBG things\_NNS into\_IN the\_DT open\_JJ fireplace\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB he\_PRP set\_VBD fire\_NN to\_TO them\_PRP with\_IN a\_DT match\_NN .\_.

Godalming\_NNP and\_CC Morris\_NNP had\_VBD rushed\_VBN out\_RP into\_IN the\_DT yard\_NN ,\_, and\_CC Harker\_NNP had\_VBD lowered\_VBN himself\_PRP from\_IN the\_DT window\_NN to\_TO follow\_VB the\_DT Count\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, bolted\_VBD the\_DT stable\_JJ door\_NN ;\_: and\_CC by\_IN the\_DT time\_NN they\_PRP had\_VBD forced\_VBN it\_PRP open\_JJ there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT sign\_NN of\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP tried\_VBD to\_TO make\_VB inquiry\_NN at\_IN the\_DT back\_NN of\_IN the\_DT house\_NN ;\_: but\_CC the\_DT mews\_NNS was\_VBD deserted\_VBN and\_CC no\_DT one\_NN had\_VBD seen\_VBN him\_PRP depart\_VBP .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD now\_RB late\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT afternoon\_NN ,\_, and\_CC sunset\_NN was\_VBD not\_RB far\_RB off\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO recognise\_VB that\_DT our\_PRP$ game\_NN was\_VBD up\_RB ;\_: with\_IN heavy\_JJ hearts\_NNS we\_PRP agreed\_VBD with\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP when\_WRB he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Let\_VB us\_PRP go\_VB back\_RB to\_TO Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP --\_: poor\_JJ ,\_, poor\_JJ dear\_RB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP .\_.

All\_DT we\_PRP can\_MD do\_VB just\_RB now\_RB is\_VBZ done\_VBN ;\_: and\_CC we\_PRP can\_MD there\_RB ,\_, at\_IN least\_JJS ,\_, protect\_VB her\_PRP .\_.

But\_CC we\_PRP need\_VBP not\_RB despair\_NN .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ but\_CC one\_CD more\_RBR earth-box\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP must\_MD try\_VB to\_TO find\_VB it\_PRP ;\_: when\_WRB that\_WDT is\_VBZ done\_VBN all\_DT may\_MD yet\_RB be\_VB well\_RB .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD as\_RB bravely\_RB as\_IN he\_PRP could\_MD to\_TO comfort\_VB Harker\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT poor\_JJ fellow\_NN was\_VBD quite\_RB broken\_VBN down\_RP ;\_: now\_RB and\_CC again\_RB he\_PRP gave\_VBD a\_DT low\_JJ groan\_NN which\_WDT he\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB suppress\_VB --\_: he\_PRP was\_VBD thinking\_VBG of\_IN his\_PRP$ wife\_NN .\_.

With\_IN sad\_JJ hearts\_NNS we\_PRP came\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO my\_PRP$ house\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB we\_PRP found\_VBD Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP waiting\_VBG us\_PRP ,\_, with\_IN an\_DT appearance\_NN of\_IN cheerfulness\_NN which\_WDT did\_VBD honour\_VB to\_TO her\_PRP$ bravery\_NN and\_CC unselfishness\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB she\_PRP saw\_VBD our\_PRP$ faces\_NNS ,\_, her\_PRP$ own\_JJ became\_VBD as\_RB pale\_JJ as\_IN death\_NN :\_: for\_IN a\_DT second\_JJ or\_CC two\_CD her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS were\_VBD closed\_VBN as\_IN if\_IN she\_PRP were\_VBD in\_IN secret\_JJ prayer\_NN ;\_: and\_CC then\_RB she\_PRP said\_VBD cheerfully\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP can\_MD never\_RB thank\_VB you\_PRP all\_RB enough\_RB .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, my\_PRP$ poor\_JJ darling\_NN !\_. ''\_''

As\_IN she\_PRP spoke\_VBD ,\_, she\_PRP took\_VBD her\_PRP$ husband\_NN 's\_POS grey\_JJ head\_NN in\_IN her\_PRP$ hands\_NNS and\_CC kissed\_VBD it\_PRP --\_: ``\_`` Lay\_VB your\_PRP$ poor\_JJ head\_NN here\_RB and\_CC rest\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

All\_DT will\_MD yet\_RB be\_VB well\_RB ,\_, dear\_RB !\_.

God\_NNP will\_MD protect\_VB us\_PRP if\_IN He\_PRP so\_RB will\_MD it\_PRP in\_IN His\_PRP$ good\_JJ intent\_NN .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT poor\_JJ fellow\_NN groaned\_VBD .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT place\_NN for\_IN words\_NNS in\_IN his\_PRP$ sublime\_JJ misery\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN perfunctory\_JJ supper\_NN together\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP think\_VBP it\_PRP cheered\_VBD us\_PRP all\_DT up\_RP somewhat\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, perhaps\_RB ,\_, the\_DT mere\_JJ animal\_NN heat\_NN of\_IN food\_NN to\_TO hungry\_JJ people\_NNS --\_: for\_IN none\_NN of\_IN us\_PRP had\_VBD eaten\_VBN anything\_NN since\_IN breakfast\_NN --\_: or\_CC the\_DT sense\_NN of\_IN companionship\_NN may\_MD have\_VB helped\_VBN us\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC anyhow\_RB we\_PRP were\_VBD all\_DT less\_RBR miserable\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC saw\_VBD the\_DT morrow\_NN as\_IN not\_RB altogether\_RB without\_IN hope\_NN .\_.

True\_JJ to\_TO our\_PRP$ promise\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP told\_VBD Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP everything\_NN which\_WDT had\_VBD passed\_VBN ;\_: and\_CC although\_IN she\_PRP grew\_VBD snowy\_JJ white\_NN at\_IN times\_NNS when\_WRB danger\_NN had\_VBD seemed\_VBN to\_TO threaten\_VB her\_PRP$ husband\_NN ,\_, and\_CC red\_NN at\_IN others\_NNS when\_WRB his\_PRP$ devotion\_NN to\_TO her\_PRP was\_VBD manifested\_VBN ,\_, she\_PRP listened\_VBD bravely\_RB and\_CC with\_IN calmness\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP came\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT part\_NN where\_WRB Harker\_NNP had\_VBD rushed\_VBN at\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP so\_RB recklessly\_RB ,\_, she\_PRP clung\_VBD to\_TO her\_PRP$ husband\_NN 's\_POS arm\_NN ,\_, and\_CC held\_VBD it\_PRP tight\_JJ as\_IN though\_IN her\_PRP$ clinging\_NN could\_MD protect\_VB him\_PRP from\_IN any\_DT harm\_NN that\_WDT might\_MD come\_VB .\_.

She\_PRP said\_VBD nothing\_NN ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, till\_IN the\_DT narration\_NN was\_VBD all\_DT done\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC matters\_NNS had\_VBD been\_VBN brought\_VBN right\_RB up\_IN to\_TO the\_DT present\_JJ time\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB without\_IN letting\_VBG go\_VB her\_PRP$ husband\_NN 's\_POS hand\_NN she\_PRP stood\_VBD up\_RP amongst\_IN us\_PRP and\_CC spoke\_VBD .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD give\_VB any\_DT idea\_NN of\_IN the\_DT scene\_NN ;\_: of\_IN that\_DT sweet\_JJ ,\_, sweet\_JJ ,\_, good\_JJ ,\_, good\_JJ woman\_NN in\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT radiant\_JJ beauty\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ youth\_NN and\_CC animation\_NN ,\_, with\_IN the\_DT red\_JJ scar\_NN on\_IN her\_PRP$ forehead\_NN ,\_, of\_IN which\_WDT she\_PRP was\_VBD conscious\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC which\_WDT we\_PRP saw\_VBD with\_IN grinding\_VBG of\_IN our\_PRP$ teeth\_NNS --\_: remembering\_VBG whence\_NN and\_CC how\_WRB it\_PRP came\_VBD ;\_: her\_PRP$ loving\_JJ kindness\_NN against\_IN our\_PRP$ grim\_JJ hate\_NN ;\_: her\_PRP$ tender\_NN faith\_NN against\_IN all\_PDT our\_PRP$ fears\_NNS and\_CC doubting\_VBG ;\_: and\_CC we\_PRP ,\_, knowing\_VBG that\_IN so\_RB far\_RB as\_IN symbols\_NNS went\_VBD ,\_, she\_PRP with\_IN all\_DT her\_PRP$ goodness\_NN and\_CC purity\_NN and\_CC faith\_NN ,\_, was\_VBD outcast\_NN from\_IN God\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' she\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT word\_NN sounded\_VBD like\_IN music\_NN on\_IN her\_PRP$ lips\_NNS it\_PRP was\_VBD so\_RB full\_JJ of\_IN love\_NN and\_CC tenderness\_NN ,\_, ``\_`` Jonathan\_NNP dear\_RB ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP all\_DT my\_PRP$ true\_JJ ,\_, true\_JJ friends\_NNS ,\_, I\_PRP want\_VBP you\_PRP to\_TO bear\_VB something\_NN in\_IN mind\_NN through\_IN all\_PDT this\_DT dreadful\_JJ time\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP that\_IN you\_PRP must\_MD fight\_VB --\_: that\_IN you\_PRP must\_MD destroy\_VB even\_RB as\_IN you\_PRP destroyed\_VBD the\_DT false\_JJ Lucy\_NNP so\_IN that\_IN the\_DT true\_JJ Lucy\_NNP might\_MD live\_VB hereafter\_RB ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB a\_DT work\_NN of\_IN hate\_NN .\_.

That\_DT poor\_JJ soul\_NN who\_WP has\_VBZ wrought\_VBN all\_PDT this\_DT misery\_NN is\_VBZ the\_DT saddest\_JJS case\_NN of\_IN all\_DT .\_.

Just\_RB think\_VBP what\_WP will\_MD be\_VB his\_PRP$ joy\_NN when\_WRB he\_PRP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, is\_VBZ destroyed\_VBN in\_IN his\_PRP$ worser\_NN part\_NN that\_IN his\_PRP$ better\_JJR part\_NN may\_MD have\_VB spiritual\_JJ immortality\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB pitiful\_JJ to\_TO him\_PRP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, though\_IN it\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB hold\_VB your\_PRP$ hands\_NNS from\_IN his\_PRP$ destruction\_NN .\_. ''\_''

As\_IN she\_PRP spoke\_VBD I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB her\_PRP$ husband\_NN 's\_POS face\_NN darken\_VB and\_CC draw\_VB together\_RB ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN the\_DT passion\_NN in\_IN him\_PRP were\_VBD shrivelling\_VBG his\_PRP$ being\_VBG to\_TO its\_PRP$ core\_NN .\_.

Instinctively\_RB the\_DT clasp\_NN on\_IN his\_PRP$ wife\_NN 's\_POS hand\_NN grew\_VBD closer\_JJR ,\_, till\_IN his\_PRP$ knuckles\_NNS looked\_VBD white\_JJ .\_.

She\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB flinch\_VB from\_IN the\_DT pain\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP knew\_VBD she\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB suffered\_VBN ,\_, but\_CC looked\_VBD at\_IN him\_PRP with\_IN eyes\_NNS that\_WDT were\_VBD more\_RBR appealing\_JJ than\_IN ever\_RB .\_.

As\_IN she\_PRP stopped\_VBD speaking\_VBG he\_PRP leaped\_VBD to\_TO his\_PRP$ feet\_NNS ,\_, almost\_RB tearing\_VBG his\_PRP$ hand\_NN from\_IN hers\_NNS as\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` May\_NNP God\_NNP give\_VB him\_PRP into\_IN my\_PRP$ hand\_NN just\_RB for\_IN long\_RB enough\_RB to\_TO destroy\_VB that\_IN earthly\_JJ life\_NN of\_IN him\_PRP which\_WDT we\_PRP are\_VBP aiming\_VBG at\_IN .\_.

If\_IN beyond\_IN it\_PRP I\_PRP could\_MD send\_VB his\_PRP$ soul\_NN for\_IN ever\_RB and\_CC ever\_RB to\_TO burning\_NN hell\_NN I\_PRP would\_MD do\_VB it\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, hush\_JJ !\_.

oh\_UH ,\_, hush\_JJ !\_.

in\_IN the\_DT name\_NN of\_IN the\_DT good\_JJ God\_NNP .\_.

Do\_VBP n't\_RB say\_VB such\_JJ things\_NNS ,\_, Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, my\_PRP$ husband\_NN ;\_: or\_CC you\_PRP will\_MD crush\_VB me\_PRP with\_IN fear\_NN and\_CC horror\_NN .\_.

Just\_RB think\_VB ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB --\_: I\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN thinking\_VBG all\_PDT this\_DT long\_JJ ,\_, long\_JJ day\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP --\_: that\_IN ...\_: perhaps\_RB ...\_: some\_DT day\_NN ...\_: I\_PRP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, may\_MD need\_VB such\_JJ pity\_NN ;\_: and\_CC that\_IN some\_DT other\_JJ like\_IN you\_PRP --\_: and\_CC with\_IN equal\_JJ cause\_NN for\_IN anger\_NN --\_: may\_MD deny\_VB it\_PRP to\_TO me\_PRP !\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, my\_PRP$ husband\_NN !\_.

my\_PRP$ husband\_NN ,\_, indeed\_RB I\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB spared\_VBN you\_PRP such\_PDT a\_DT thought\_NN had\_VBD there\_RB been\_VBN another\_DT way\_NN ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP pray\_VBP that\_IN God\_NNP may\_MD not\_RB have\_VB treasured\_JJ your\_PRP$ wild\_JJ words\_NNS ,\_, except\_IN as\_IN the\_DT heart-broken\_JJ wail\_VB of\_IN a\_DT very\_RB loving\_JJ and\_CC sorely\_RB stricken\_JJ man\_NN .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, God\_NNP ,\_, let\_VBD these\_DT poor\_JJ white\_JJ hairs\_NNS go\_VBP in\_IN evidence\_NN of\_IN what\_WP he\_PRP has\_VBZ suffered\_VBN ,\_, who\_WP all\_PDT his\_PRP$ life\_NN has\_VBZ done\_VBN no\_DT wrong\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC on\_IN whom\_WP so\_RB many\_JJ sorrows\_NNS have\_VBP come\_VBN .\_. ''\_''

We\_PRP men\_NNS were\_VBD all\_DT in\_IN tears\_NNS now\_RB .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT resisting\_VBG them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP wept\_VBD openly\_RB .\_.

She\_PRP wept\_VBD ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, to\_TO see\_VB that\_DT her\_PRP$ sweeter\_NN counsels\_VBZ had\_VBD prevailed\_VBN .\_.

Her\_PRP$ husband\_NN flung\_VBD himself\_PRP on\_IN his\_PRP$ knees\_NNS beside\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC putting\_VBG his\_PRP$ arms\_NNS round\_VBP her\_PRP ,\_, hid\_VBD his\_PRP$ face\_NN in\_IN the\_DT folds\_VBZ of\_IN her\_PRP$ dress\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP beckoned\_VBD to\_TO us\_PRP and\_CC we\_PRP stole\_VBD out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, leaving\_VBG the\_DT two\_CD loving\_JJ hearts\_NNS alone\_RB with\_IN their\_PRP$ God\_NNP .\_.

Before\_IN they\_PRP retired\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP fixed\_VBD up\_RP the\_DT room\_NN against\_IN any\_DT coming\_VBG of\_IN the\_DT Vampire\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC assured\_VBD Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP that\_IN she\_PRP might\_MD rest\_VB in\_IN peace\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP tried\_VBD to\_TO school\_VB herself\_PRP to\_TO the\_DT belief\_NN ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, manifestly\_RB for\_IN her\_PRP$ husband\_NN 's\_POS sake\_NN ,\_, tried\_VBD to\_TO seem\_VB content\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT brave\_VBP struggle\_NN ;\_: and\_CC was\_VBD ,\_, I\_PRP think\_VBP and\_CC believe\_VBP ,\_, not\_RB without\_IN its\_PRP$ reward\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP had\_VBD placed\_VBN at\_IN hand\_NN a\_DT bell\_NN which\_WDT either\_CC of\_IN them\_PRP was\_VBD to\_TO sound\_VB in\_IN case\_NN of\_IN any\_DT emergency\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB they\_PRP had\_VBD retired\_VBN ,\_, Quincey\_NNP ,\_, Godalming\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP arranged\_VBD that\_IN we\_PRP should\_MD sit\_VB up\_RP ,\_, dividing\_VBG the\_DT night\_NN between\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC watch\_NN over\_IN the\_DT safety\_NN of\_IN the\_DT poor\_JJ stricken\_JJ lady\_NN .\_.

The\_DT first\_JJ watch\_NN falls\_VBZ to\_TO Quincey\_NNP ,\_, so\_IN the\_DT rest\_NN of\_IN us\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB off\_RB to\_TO bed\_NN as\_RB soon\_RB as\_IN we\_PRP can\_MD .\_.

Godalming\_NNP has\_VBZ already\_RB turned\_VBN in\_RP ,\_, for\_IN his\_PRP$ is\_VBZ the\_DT second\_JJ watch\_NN .\_.

Now\_RB that\_IN my\_PRP$ work\_NN is\_VBZ done\_VBN I\_PRP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, shall\_MD go\_VB to\_TO bed\_NN .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP .\_.

3-4\_CD October\_NNP ,\_, close\_RB to\_TO midnight\_NN .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP thought\_VBD yesterday\_NN would\_MD never\_RB end\_VB .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD over\_IN me\_PRP a\_DT yearning\_NN for\_IN sleep\_NN ,\_, in\_IN some\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN blind\_JJ belief\_NN that\_IN to\_TO wake\_VB would\_MD be\_VB to\_TO find\_VB things\_NNS changed\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN any\_DT change\_NN must\_MD now\_RB be\_VB for\_IN the\_DT better\_JJR .\_.

Before\_IN we\_PRP parted\_VBD ,\_, we\_PRP discussed\_VBD what\_WP our\_PRP$ next\_JJ step\_NN was\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB ,\_, but\_CC we\_PRP could\_MD arrive\_VB at\_IN no\_DT result\_NN .\_.

All\_DT we\_PRP knew\_VBD was\_VBD that\_IN one\_CD earth-box\_NN remained\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN alone\_RB knew\_VBD where\_WRB it\_PRP was\_VBD .\_.

If\_IN he\_PRP chooses\_VBZ to\_TO lie\_VB hidden\_JJ ,\_, he\_PRP may\_MD baffle\_VB us\_PRP for\_IN years\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC in\_IN the\_DT meantime\_NN !\_.

--\_: the\_DT thought\_NN is\_VBZ too\_RB horrible\_JJ ,\_, I\_PRP dare\_VBP not\_RB think\_VB of\_IN it\_PRP even\_RB now\_RB .\_.

This\_DT I\_PRP know\_VBP :\_: that\_IN if\_IN ever\_RB there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT woman\_NN who\_WP was\_VBD all\_DT perfection\_NN ,\_, that\_IN one\_CD is\_VBZ my\_PRP$ poor\_JJ wronged\_VBN darling\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP love\_VBP her\_PRP a\_DT thousand\_CD times\_NNS more\_JJR for\_IN her\_PRP$ sweet\_JJ pity\_NN of\_IN last\_JJ night\_NN ,\_, a\_DT pity\_NN that\_WDT made\_VBD my\_PRP$ own\_JJ hate\_NN of\_IN the\_DT monster\_NN seem\_VBP despicable\_JJ .\_.

Surely\_RB God\_NNP will\_MD not\_RB permit\_VB the\_DT world\_NN to\_TO be\_VB the\_DT poorer\_JJR by\_IN the\_DT loss\_NN of\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT creature\_NN .\_.

This\_DT is\_VBZ hope\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

We\_PRP are\_VBP all\_DT drifting\_VBG reefwards\_NNS now\_RB ,\_, and\_CC faith\_NN is\_VBZ our\_PRP$ only\_JJ anchor\_NN .\_.

Thank\_VB God\_NNP !\_.

Mina\_NNP is\_VBZ sleeping\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC sleeping\_VBG without\_IN dreams\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP fear\_VBP what\_WP her\_PRP$ dreams\_NNS might\_MD be\_VB like\_IN ,\_, with\_IN such\_JJ terrible\_JJ memories\_NNS to\_TO ground\_VB them\_PRP in\_IN .\_.

She\_PRP has\_VBZ not\_RB been\_VBN so\_RB calm\_JJ ,\_, within\_IN my\_PRP$ seeing\_VBG ,\_, since\_IN the\_DT sunset\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB ,\_, for\_IN a\_DT while\_NN ,\_, there\_EX came\_VBD over\_IN her\_PRP face\_VBP a\_DT repose\_NN which\_WDT was\_VBD like\_IN spring\_NN after\_IN the\_DT blasts\_NNS of\_IN March\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP thought\_VBD at\_IN the\_DT time\_NN that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD the\_DT softness\_NN of\_IN the\_DT red\_JJ sunset\_NN on\_IN her\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, but\_CC somehow\_RB now\_RB I\_PRP think\_VBP it\_PRP has\_VBZ a\_DT deeper\_JJR meaning\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB sleepy\_JJ myself\_PRP ,\_, though\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP weary\_JJ --\_: weary\_JJ to\_TO death\_NN .\_.

However\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP must\_MD try\_VB to\_TO sleep\_VB ;\_: for\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ to-morrow\_JJ to\_TO think\_VB of\_IN ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT rest\_NN for\_IN me\_PRP until\_IN ...\_: .\_.

Later\_RB .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB fallen\_VBN asleep\_RB ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD awaked\_VBN by\_IN Mina\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP was\_VBD sitting\_VBG up\_RP in\_IN bed\_NN ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT startled\_JJ look\_NN on\_IN her\_PRP$ face\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB easily\_RB ,\_, for\_IN we\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB leave\_VB the\_DT room\_NN in\_IN darkness\_NN ;\_: she\_PRP had\_VBD placed\_VBN a\_DT warning\_NN hand\_NN over\_IN my\_PRP$ mouth\_NN ,\_, and\_CC now\_RB she\_PRP whispered\_VBD in\_IN my\_PRP$ ear\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Hush\_JJ !\_.

there\_EX is\_VBZ someone\_NN in\_IN the\_DT corridor\_NN !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP got\_VBD up\_RP softly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC crossing\_VBG the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, gently\_RB opened\_VBD the\_DT door\_NN .\_.

Just\_RB outside\_JJ ,\_, stretched\_VBN on\_IN a\_DT mattress\_NN ,\_, lay\_VBD Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP ,\_, wide\_JJ awake\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP raised\_VBD a\_DT warning\_NN hand\_NN for\_IN silence\_NN as\_IN he\_PRP whispered\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Hush\_JJ !\_.

go\_VB back\_RB to\_TO bed\_NN ;\_: it\_PRP is\_VBZ all\_DT right\_NN .\_.

One\_CD of\_IN us\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB here\_RB all\_DT night\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB mean\_VB to\_TO take\_VB any\_DT chances\_NNS !\_. ''\_''

His\_PRP$ look\_NN and\_CC gesture\_NN forbade\_VBD discussion\_NN ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP came\_VBD back\_RB and\_CC told\_VBD Mina\_NNP .\_.

She\_PRP sighed\_VBD and\_CC positively\_RB a\_DT shadow\_NN of\_IN a\_DT smile\_NN stole\_VBN over\_IN her\_PRP$ poor\_JJ ,\_, pale\_JJ face\_NN as\_IN she\_PRP put\_VBD her\_PRP$ arms\_NNS round\_VBP me\_PRP and\_CC said\_VBD softly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, thank\_VB God\_NNP for\_IN good\_JJ brave\_VB men\_NNS !\_. ''\_''

With\_IN a\_DT sigh\_NN she\_PRP sank\_VBD back\_RB again\_RB to\_TO sleep\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP write\_VBP this\_DT now\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB sleepy\_JJ ,\_, though\_IN I\_PRP must\_MD try\_VB again\_RB .\_.

4\_CD October\_NNP ,\_, morning\_NN .\_.

--\_: Once\_RB again\_RB during\_IN the\_DT night\_NN I\_PRP was\_VBD wakened\_VBN by\_IN Mina\_NNP .\_.

This\_DT time\_NN we\_PRP had\_VBD all\_DT had\_VBD a\_DT good\_JJ sleep\_NN ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT grey\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT coming\_VBG dawn\_NN was\_VBD making\_VBG the\_DT windows\_NNS into\_IN sharp\_JJ oblongs\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT gas\_NN flame\_NN was\_VBD like\_IN a\_DT speck\_NN rather\_RB than\_IN a\_DT disc\_NN of\_IN light\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP hurriedly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Go\_VB ,\_, call\_VB the\_DT Professor\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP want\_VBP to\_TO see\_VB him\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Why\_WRB ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP asked\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP have\_VBP an\_DT idea\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP suppose\_VBP it\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB come\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT night\_NN ,\_, and\_CC matured\_VBD without\_IN my\_PRP$ knowing\_VBG it\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP must\_MD hypnotise\_VB me\_PRP before\_IN the\_DT dawn\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB I\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB able\_JJ to\_TO speak\_VB .\_.

Go\_VB quick\_JJ ,\_, dearest\_JJ ;\_: the\_DT time\_NN is\_VBZ getting\_VBG close\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT door\_NN .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP was\_VBD resting\_VBG on\_IN the\_DT mattress\_NN ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, seeing\_VBG me\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP sprang\_VBD to\_TO his\_PRP$ feet\_NNS .\_.

``\_`` Is\_VBZ anything\_NN wrong\_JJ ?\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP asked\_VBD ,\_, in\_IN alarm\_NN .\_.

``\_`` No\_UH ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP replied\_VBD ;\_: ``\_`` but\_CC Mina\_NNP wants\_VBZ to\_TO see\_VB Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP at\_IN once\_RB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP will\_MD go\_VB ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC hurried\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP 's\_POS room\_NN .\_.

In\_IN two\_CD or\_CC three\_CD minutes\_NNS later\_RB Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP was\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT room\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ dressing-gown\_NN ,\_, and\_CC Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP and\_CC Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP were\_VBD with\_IN Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP at\_IN the\_DT door\_NN asking\_VBG questions\_NNS .\_.

When\_WRB the\_DT Professor\_NNP saw\_VBD Mina\_NNP a\_DT smile\_NN --\_: a\_DT positive\_JJ smile\_NN ousted\_VBD the\_DT anxiety\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP rubbed\_VBD his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS as\_IN he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, this\_DT is\_VBZ indeed\_RB a\_DT change\_NN .\_.

See\_VB !\_.

friend\_NN Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, we\_PRP have\_VBP got\_VBN our\_PRP$ dear\_RB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, as\_IN of\_IN old\_JJ ,\_, back\_RB to\_TO us\_PRP to-day\_JJ !\_. ''\_''

Then\_RB turning\_VBG to\_TO her\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, cheerfully\_RB :\_: ``\_`` And\_CC what\_WP am\_VBP I\_PRP do\_VBP for\_IN you\_PRP ?\_.

For\_IN at\_IN this\_DT hour\_NN you\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB want\_VB me\_PRP for\_IN nothings\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP want\_VBP you\_PRP to\_TO hypnotise\_VB me\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

she\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Do\_VBP it\_PRP before\_IN the\_DT dawn\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP feel\_VBP that\_IN then\_RB I\_PRP can\_MD speak\_VB ,\_, and\_CC speak\_VBP freely\_RB .\_.

Be\_VB quick\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT time\_NN is\_VBZ short\_JJ !\_. ''\_''

Without\_IN a\_DT word\_NN he\_PRP motioned\_VBD her\_PRP to\_TO sit\_VB up\_RP in\_IN bed\_NN .\_.

Looking\_VBG fixedly\_RB at\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP commenced\_VBD to\_TO make\_VB passes\_NNS in\_IN front\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, from\_IN over\_IN the\_DT top\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ head\_NN downward\_RB ,\_, with\_IN each\_DT hand\_NN in\_IN turn\_NN .\_.

Mina\_NNP gazed\_VBD at\_IN him\_PRP fixedly\_RB for\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ minutes\_NNS ,\_, during\_IN which\_WDT my\_PRP$ own\_JJ heart\_NN beat\_NN like\_IN a\_DT trip\_NN hammer\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP felt\_VBD that\_IN some\_DT crisis\_NN was\_VBD at\_IN hand\_NN .\_.

Gradually\_RB her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS closed\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP sat\_VBD ,\_, stock\_NN still\_RB ;\_: only\_RB by\_IN the\_DT gentle\_JJ heaving\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ bosom\_NN could\_MD one\_PRP know\_VB that\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD alive\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP made\_VBD a\_DT few\_JJ more\_JJR passes\_NNS and\_CC then\_RB stopped\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB that\_IN his\_PRP$ forehead\_NN was\_VBD covered\_VBN with\_IN great\_JJ beads\_NNS of\_IN perspiration\_NN .\_.

Mina\_NNP opened\_VBD her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ;\_: but\_CC she\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB seem\_VB the\_DT same\_JJ woman\_NN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT far-away\_JJ look\_NN in\_IN her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC her\_PRP$ voice\_NN had\_VBD a\_DT sad\_JJ dreaminess\_NN which\_WDT was\_VBD new\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

Raising\_NNP his\_PRP$ hand\_NN to\_TO impose\_VB silence\_NN ,\_, the\_DT Professor\_NNP motioned\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP to\_TO bring\_VB the\_DT others\_NNS in\_IN .\_.

They\_PRP came\_VBD on\_IN tip-toe\_NN ,\_, closing\_VBG the\_DT door\_NN behind\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC stood\_VBD at\_IN the\_DT foot\_NN of\_IN the\_DT bed\_NN ,\_, looking\_VBG on\_IN .\_.

Mina\_NNP appeared\_VBD not\_RB to\_TO see\_VB them\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT stillness\_NN was\_VBD broken\_VBN by\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP 's\_POS voice\_NN speaking\_NN in\_IN a\_DT low\_JJ level\_NN tone\_NN which\_WDT would\_MD not\_RB break\_VB the\_DT current\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ thoughts\_NNS :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Where\_WRB are\_VBP you\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

The\_DT answer\_NN came\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT neutral\_JJ way\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB know\_VB .\_.

Sleep\_NNP has\_VBZ no\_DT place\_NN it\_PRP can\_MD call\_VB its\_PRP$ own\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

For\_IN several\_JJ minutes\_NNS there\_RB was\_VBD silence\_NN .\_.

Mina\_NNP sat\_VBD rigid\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT Professor\_NNP stood\_VBD staring\_VBG at\_IN her\_PRP fixedly\_RB ;\_: the\_DT rest\_NN of\_IN us\_PRP hardly\_RB dared\_VBD to\_TO breathe\_VB .\_.

The\_DT room\_NN was\_VBD growing\_VBG lighter\_JJR ;\_: without\_IN taking\_VBG his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS from\_IN Mina\_NNP 's\_POS face\_NN ,\_, Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP motioned\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO pull\_VB up\_RP the\_DT blind\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP did\_VBD so\_RB ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT day\_NN seemed\_VBD just\_RB upon\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

A\_DT red\_JJ streak\_NN shot\_NN up\_RB ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT rosy\_JJ light\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO diffuse\_VB itself\_PRP through\_IN the\_DT room\_NN .\_.

On\_IN the\_DT instant\_NN the\_DT Professor\_NNP spoke\_VBD again\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Where\_WRB are\_VBP you\_PRP now\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

The\_DT answer\_NN came\_VBD dreamily\_RB ,\_, but\_CC with\_IN intention\_NN ;\_: it\_PRP were\_VBD as\_IN though\_IN she\_PRP were\_VBD interpreting\_VBG something\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP heard\_VBN her\_PRP use\_VBP the\_DT same\_JJ tone\_NN when\_WRB reading\_VBG her\_PRP$ shorthand\_NN notes\_NNS .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB know\_VB .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ all\_DT strange\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` What\_WP do\_VBP you\_PRP see\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP can\_MD see\_VB nothing\_NN ;\_: it\_PRP is\_VBZ all\_DT dark\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` What\_WP do\_VBP you\_PRP hear\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP could\_MD detect\_VB the\_DT strain\_NN in\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP 's\_POS patient\_NN voice\_NN .\_.

``\_`` The\_DT lapping\_NN of\_IN water\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ gurgling\_JJ by\_IN ,\_, and\_CC little\_JJ waves\_NNS leap\_VBP .\_.

I\_PRP can\_MD hear\_VB them\_PRP on\_IN the\_DT outside\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Then\_RB you\_PRP are\_VBP on\_IN a\_DT ship\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

We\_PRP all\_DT looked\_VBD at\_IN each\_DT other\_JJ ,\_, trying\_VBG to\_TO glean\_VB something\_NN each\_DT from\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ .\_.

We\_PRP were\_VBD afraid\_JJ to\_TO think\_VB .\_.

The\_DT answer\_NN came\_VBD quick\_JJ :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, yes\_UH !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` What\_WP else\_RB do\_VBP you\_PRP hear\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` The\_DT sound\_NN of\_IN men\_NNS stamping\_VBG overhead\_RB as\_IN they\_PRP run\_VBP about\_RB .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ the\_DT creaking\_NN of\_IN a\_DT chain\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT loud\_JJ tinkle\_NN as\_IN the\_DT check\_NN of\_IN the\_DT capstan\_NN falls\_VBZ into\_IN the\_DT rachet\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` What\_WP are\_VBP you\_PRP doing\_VBG ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP am\_VBP still\_RB --\_: oh\_UH ,\_, so\_RB still\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ like\_IN death\_NN !\_. ''\_''

The\_DT voice\_NN faded\_VBD away\_RB into\_IN a\_DT deep\_JJ breath\_NN as\_IN of\_IN one\_CD sleeping\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT open\_JJ eyes\_NNS closed\_VBD again\_RB .\_.

By\_IN this\_DT time\_NN the\_DT sun\_NN had\_VBD risen\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP were\_VBD all\_DT in\_IN the\_DT full\_JJ light\_NN of\_IN day\_NN .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP placed\_VBD his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS on\_IN Mina\_NNP 's\_POS shoulders\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC laid\_VBD her\_PRP$ head\_NN down\_RB softly\_RB on\_IN her\_PRP$ pillow\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP lay\_VBD like\_IN a\_DT sleeping\_VBG child\_NN for\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ moments\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT long\_JJ sigh\_NN ,\_, awoke\_VBD and\_CC stared\_VBD in\_IN wonder\_NN to\_TO see\_VB us\_PRP all\_DT around\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

``\_`` Have\_VBP I\_PRP been\_VBN talking\_VBG in\_IN my\_PRP$ sleep\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

was\_VBD all\_DT she\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

She\_PRP seemed\_VBD ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, to\_TO know\_VB the\_DT situation\_NN without\_IN telling\_VBG ,\_, though\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD eager\_JJ to\_TO know\_VB what\_WP she\_PRP had\_VBD told\_VBN .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP repeated\_VBD the\_DT conversation\_NN ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Then\_RB there\_EX is\_VBZ not\_RB a\_DT moment\_NN to\_TO lose\_VB :\_: it\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB be\_VB yet\_RB too\_RB late\_JJ !\_. ''\_''

Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP and\_CC Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP started\_VBD for\_IN the\_DT door\_NN but\_CC the\_DT Professor\_NNP 's\_POS calm\_JJ voice\_NN called\_VBD them\_PRP back\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Stay\_NNP ,\_, my\_PRP$ friends\_NNS .\_.

That\_DT ship\_NN ,\_, wherever\_WRB it\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, was\_VBD weighing\_VBG anchor\_NN whilst\_IN she\_PRP spoke\_VBD .\_.

There\_EX are\_VBP many\_JJ ships\_NNS weighing\_VBG anchor\_NN at\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN in\_IN your\_PRP$ so\_RB great\_JJ Port\_NNP of\_IN London\_NNP .\_.

Which\_WDT of\_IN them\_PRP is\_VBZ it\_PRP that\_IN you\_PRP seek\_VB ?\_.

God\_NNP be\_VB thanked\_VBN that\_IN we\_PRP have\_VBP once\_RB again\_RB a\_DT clue\_NN ,\_, though\_IN whither\_NN it\_PRP may\_MD lead\_VB us\_PRP we\_PRP know\_VBP not\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN blind\_JJ somewhat\_RB ;\_: blind\_JJ after\_IN the\_DT manner\_NN of\_IN men\_NNS ,\_, since\_IN when\_WRB we\_PRP can\_MD look\_VB back\_RB we\_PRP see\_VBP what\_WP we\_PRP might\_MD have\_VB seen\_VBN looking\_VBG forward\_RB if\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN able\_JJ to\_TO see\_VB what\_WP we\_PRP might\_MD have\_VB seen\_VBN !\_.

Alas\_RB ,\_, but\_CC that\_DT sentence\_NN is\_VBZ a\_DT puddle\_NN ;\_: is\_VBZ it\_PRP not\_RB ?\_.

We\_PRP can\_MD know\_VB now\_RB what\_WP was\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS mind\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB he\_PRP seize\_VBP that\_IN money\_NN ,\_, though\_IN Jonathan\_NNP 's\_POS so\_RB fierce\_JJ knife\_NN put\_VBD him\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT danger\_NN that\_IN even\_RB he\_PRP dread\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP meant\_VBD escape\_NN .\_.

Hear\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, ESCAPE\_NN !\_.

He\_PRP saw\_VBD that\_IN with\_IN but\_CC one\_CD earth-box\_JJ left\_NN ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT pack\_NN of\_IN men\_NNS following\_VBG like\_IN dogs\_NNS after\_IN a\_DT fox\_NN ,\_, this\_DT London\_NNP was\_VBD no\_DT place\_NN for\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP have\_VBP take\_VB his\_PRP$ last\_JJ earth-box\_NN on\_IN board\_NN a\_DT ship\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP leave\_VBP the\_DT land\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP think\_VBP to\_TO escape\_VB ,\_, but\_CC no\_DT !\_.

we\_PRP follow\_VBP him\_PRP .\_.

Tally\_NNP Ho\_NNP !\_.

as\_IN friend\_NN Arthur\_NNP would\_MD say\_VB when\_WRB he\_PRP put\_VBD on\_IN his\_PRP$ red\_JJ frock\_NN !\_.

Our\_PRP$ old\_JJ fox\_NN is\_VBZ wily\_JJ ;\_: oh\_UH !\_.

so\_RB wily\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP must\_MD follow\_VB with\_IN wile\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, am\_VBP wily\_JJ and\_CC I\_PRP think\_VBP his\_PRP$ mind\_NN in\_IN a\_DT little\_JJ while\_NN .\_.

In\_IN meantime\_NN we\_PRP may\_MD rest\_VB and\_CC in\_IN peace\_NN ,\_, for\_IN there\_EX are\_VBP waters\_NNS between\_IN us\_PRP which\_WDT he\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB want\_VB to\_TO pass\_VB ,\_, and\_CC which\_WDT he\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB if\_IN he\_PRP would\_MD --\_: unless\_IN the\_DT ship\_NN were\_VBD to\_TO touch\_VB the\_DT land\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB only\_RB at\_IN full\_JJ or\_CC slack\_JJ tide\_NN .\_.

See\_VB ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT sun\_NN is\_VBZ just\_RB rose\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC all\_DT day\_NN to\_TO sunset\_NN is\_VBZ to\_TO us\_PRP .\_.

Let\_VB us\_PRP take\_VB bath\_NN ,\_, and\_CC dress\_NN ,\_, and\_CC have\_VBP breakfast\_NN which\_WDT we\_PRP all\_DT need\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC which\_WDT we\_PRP can\_MD eat\_VB comfortably\_RB since\_IN he\_PRP be\_VB not\_RB in\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ land\_NN with\_IN us\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

Mina\_NNP looked\_VBD at\_IN him\_PRP appealingly\_RB as\_IN she\_PRP asked\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` But\_CC why\_WRB need\_VBP we\_PRP seek\_VB him\_PRP further\_RBR ,\_, when\_WRB he\_PRP is\_VBZ gone\_VBN away\_RB from\_IN us\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP took\_VBD her\_PRP$ hand\_NN and\_CC patted\_VBD it\_PRP as\_IN he\_PRP replied\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Ask\_VB me\_PRP nothings\_NNS as\_RB yet\_RB .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP have\_VBP breakfast\_NN ,\_, then\_RB I\_PRP answer\_VBP all\_DT questions\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP would\_MD say\_VB no\_DT more\_JJR ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP separated\_VBD to\_TO dress\_VB .\_.

After\_IN breakfast\_NN Mina\_NNP repeated\_VBD her\_PRP$ question\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP looked\_VBD at\_IN her\_PRP gravely\_RB for\_IN a\_DT minute\_NN and\_CC then\_RB said\_VBD sorrowfully\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Because\_IN my\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, dear\_RB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, now\_RB more\_RBR than\_IN ever\_RB must\_MD we\_PRP find\_VB him\_PRP even\_RB if\_IN we\_PRP have\_VBP to\_TO follow\_VB him\_PRP to\_TO the\_DT jaws\_NNS of\_IN Hell\_NNP !\_. ''\_''

She\_PRP grew\_VBD paler\_JJR as\_IN she\_PRP asked\_VBD faintly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Why\_WRB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Because\_IN ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP answered\_VBD solemnly\_RB ,\_, ``\_`` he\_PRP can\_MD live\_VB for\_IN centuries\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP are\_VBP but\_CC mortal\_JJ woman\_NN .\_.

Time\_NNP is\_VBZ now\_RB to\_TO be\_VB dreaded\_VBN --\_: since\_IN once\_RB he\_PRP put\_VBD that\_DT mark\_NN upon\_IN your\_PRP$ throat\_NN .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP was\_VBD just\_RB in\_IN time\_NN to\_TO catch\_VB her\_PRP as\_IN she\_PRP fell\_VBD forward\_RB in\_IN a\_DT faint\_JJ .\_.

CHAPTER\_NNP XXIV\_NNP DR.\_NNP SEWARD\_NNP 'S\_POS PHONOGRAPH\_NNP DIARY\_NNP ,\_, SPOKEN\_NNP BY\_NNP VAN\_NNP HELSING\_NNP THIS\_NNP to\_TO Jonathan\_NNP Harker\_NNP .\_.

You\_PRP are\_VBP to\_TO stay\_VB with\_IN your\_PRP$ dear\_RB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP .\_.

We\_PRP shall\_MD go\_VB to\_TO make\_VB our\_PRP$ search\_NN --\_: if\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD call\_VB it\_PRP so\_RB ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB search\_NN but\_CC knowing\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP seek\_VBP confirmation\_NN only\_RB .\_.

But\_CC do\_VBP you\_PRP stay\_VB and\_CC take\_VB care\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ to-day\_NN .\_.

This\_DT is\_VBZ your\_PRP$ best\_JJS and\_CC most\_RBS holiest\_JJ office\_NN .\_.

This\_DT day\_NN nothing\_NN can\_MD find\_VB him\_PRP here\_RB .\_.

Let\_VB me\_PRP tell\_VB you\_PRP that\_IN so\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD know\_VB what\_WP we\_PRP four\_CD know\_VBP already\_RB ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP tell\_VB them\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP ,\_, our\_PRP$ enemy\_NN ,\_, have\_VBP gone\_VBN away\_RB ;\_: he\_PRP have\_VBP gone\_VBN back\_RB to\_TO his\_PRP$ Castle\_NNP in\_IN Transylvania\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP it\_PRP so\_RB well\_RB ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN a\_DT great\_JJ hand\_NN of\_IN fire\_NN wrote\_VBD it\_PRP on\_IN the\_DT wall\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP have\_VBP prepare\_VB for\_IN this\_DT in\_IN some\_DT way\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN last\_JJ earth-box\_NN was\_VBD ready\_JJ to\_TO ship\_VB somewheres\_NNS .\_.

For\_IN this\_DT he\_PRP took\_VBD the\_DT money\_NN ;\_: for\_IN this\_DT he\_PRP hurry\_VB at\_IN the\_DT last\_JJ ,\_, lest\_IN we\_PRP catch\_VBP him\_PRP before\_IN the\_DT sun\_NN go\_VB down\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD his\_PRP$ last\_JJ hope\_NN ,\_, save\_VBP that\_IN he\_PRP might\_MD hide\_VB in\_IN the\_DT tomb\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP think\_VBP poor\_JJ Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP ,\_, being\_VBG as\_IN he\_PRP thought\_VBD like\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, keep\_VB open\_JJ to\_TO him\_PRP .\_.

But\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD not\_RB of\_IN time\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB that\_WDT fail\_VBP he\_PRP make\_VB straight\_RB for\_IN his\_PRP$ last\_JJ resource\_NN --\_: his\_PRP$ last\_JJ earth-work\_NN I\_PRP might\_MD say\_VB did\_VBD I\_PRP wish\_VB double\_JJ entente\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ clever\_JJ ,\_, oh\_UH ,\_, so\_RB clever\_JJ !\_.

he\_PRP know\_VBP that\_IN his\_PRP$ game\_NN here\_RB was\_VBD finish\_NN ;\_: and\_CC so\_RB he\_PRP decide\_VBP he\_PRP go\_VB back\_RP home\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP find\_VBP ship\_NN going\_VBG by\_IN the\_DT route\_NN he\_PRP came\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP go\_VB in\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

We\_PRP go\_VBP off\_RB now\_RB to\_TO find\_VB what\_WP ship\_NN ,\_, and\_CC whither\_NN bound\_VBD ;\_: when\_WRB we\_PRP have\_VBP discover\_VBP that\_IN ,\_, we\_PRP come\_VBP back\_RB and\_CC tell\_VB you\_PRP all\_DT .\_.

Then\_RB we\_PRP will\_MD comfort\_VB you\_PRP and\_CC poor\_JJ dear\_RB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP with\_IN new\_JJ hope\_NN .\_.

For\_IN it\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB hope\_NN when\_WRB you\_PRP think\_VBP it\_PRP over\_IN :\_: that\_IN all\_DT is\_VBZ not\_RB lost\_VBN .\_.

This\_DT very\_JJ creature\_NN that\_IN we\_PRP pursue\_VBP ,\_, he\_PRP take\_VBP hundreds\_NNS of\_IN years\_NNS to\_TO get\_VB so\_RB far\_RB as\_IN London\_NNP ;\_: and\_CC yet\_RB in\_IN one\_CD day\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB we\_PRP know\_VBP of\_IN the\_DT disposal\_NN of\_IN him\_PRP we\_PRP drive\_VBP him\_PRP out\_RP .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ finite\_JJ ,\_, though\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ powerful\_JJ to\_TO do\_VB much\_JJ harm\_NN and\_CC suffers\_VBZ not\_RB as\_IN we\_PRP do\_VBP .\_.

But\_CC we\_PRP are\_VBP strong\_JJ ,\_, each\_DT in\_IN our\_PRP$ purpose\_NN ;\_: and\_CC we\_PRP are\_VBP all\_DT more\_RBR strong\_JJ together\_RB .\_.

Take\_VB heart\_NN afresh\_RB ,\_, dear\_RB husband\_NN of\_IN Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP .\_.

This\_DT battle\_NN is\_VBZ but\_CC begun\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN the\_DT end\_NN we\_PRP shall\_MD win\_VB --\_: so\_RB sure\_JJ as\_IN that\_DT God\_NNP sits\_VBZ on\_IN high\_JJ to\_TO watch\_VB over\_IN His\_PRP$ children\_NNS .\_.

Therefore\_RB be\_VB of\_IN much\_JJ comfort\_NN till\_IN we\_PRP return\_VBP .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP .\_.

4\_CD October\_NNP .\_.

--\_: When\_WRB I\_PRP read\_VBP to\_TO Mina\_NNP ,\_, Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP 's\_POS message\_NN in\_IN the\_DT phonograph\_NN ,\_, the\_DT poor\_JJ girl\_NN brightened\_VBN up\_RP considerably\_RB .\_.

Already\_RB the\_DT certainty\_NN that\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP is\_VBZ out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT country\_NN has\_VBZ given\_VBN her\_PRP$ comfort\_NN ;\_: and\_CC comfort\_NN is\_VBZ strength\_NN to\_TO her\_PRP .\_.

For\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ part\_NN ,\_, now\_RB that\_IN his\_PRP$ horrible\_JJ danger\_NN is\_VBZ not\_RB face\_JJ to\_TO face\_VB with\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, it\_PRP seems\_VBZ almost\_RB impossible\_JJ to\_TO believe\_VB in\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

Even\_RB my\_PRP$ own\_JJ terrible\_JJ experiences\_NNS in\_IN Castle\_NNP Dracula\_NNP seem\_VBP like\_IN a\_DT long-forgotten\_JJ dream\_NN .\_.

Here\_RB in\_IN the\_DT crisp\_JJ autumn\_NN air\_NN in\_IN the\_DT bright\_JJ sunlight\_NN --\_: --\_: Alas\_NNPS !\_.

how\_WRB can\_MD I\_PRP disbelieve\_VB !\_.

In\_IN the\_DT midst\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ thought\_NN my\_PRP$ eye\_NN fell\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT red\_JJ scar\_NN on\_IN my\_PRP$ poor\_JJ darling\_NN 's\_POS white\_JJ forehead\_NN .\_.

Whilst\_IN that\_DT lasts\_VBZ ,\_, there\_EX can\_MD be\_VB no\_DT disbelief\_NN .\_.

And\_CC afterwards\_RB the\_DT very\_JJ memory\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP will\_MD keep\_VB faith\_NN crystal\_NN clear\_JJ .\_.

Mina\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP fear\_VBP to\_TO be\_VB idle\_JJ ,\_, so\_IN we\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN over\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT diaries\_NNS again\_RB and\_CC again\_RB .\_.

Somehow\_RB ,\_, although\_IN the\_DT reality\_NN seems\_VBZ greater\_JJR each\_DT time\_NN ,\_, the\_DT pain\_NN and\_CC the\_DT fear\_NN seem\_VBP less\_JJR .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ something\_NN of\_IN a\_DT guiding\_VBG purpose\_NN manifest\_JJ throughout\_IN ,\_, which\_WDT is\_VBZ comforting\_JJ .\_.

Mina\_NNP says\_VBZ that\_IN perhaps\_RB we\_PRP are\_VBP the\_DT instruments\_NNS of\_IN ultimate\_JJ good\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB !\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD try\_VB to\_TO think\_VB as\_IN she\_PRP does\_VBZ .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP never\_RB spoken\_VBN to\_TO each\_DT other\_JJ yet\_RB of\_IN the\_DT future\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ better\_JJR to\_TO wait\_VB till\_IN we\_PRP see\_VBP the\_DT Professor\_NNP and\_CC the\_DT others\_NNS after\_IN their\_PRP$ investigations\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT day\_NN is\_VBZ running\_VBG by\_IN more\_RBR quickly\_RB than\_IN I\_PRP ever\_RB thought\_VBD a\_DT day\_NN could\_MD run\_VB for\_IN me\_PRP again\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ now\_RB three\_CD o'clock\_RB .\_.

Mina\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP .\_.

5\_CD October\_NNP ,\_, 5\_CD p.\_NN m.\_NN --\_: Our\_PRP$ meeting\_NN for\_IN report\_NN .\_.

Present\_JJ :\_: Professor\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP ,\_, Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP ,\_, Mr.\_NNP Quincey\_NNP Morris\_NNP ,\_, Jonathan\_NNP Harker\_NNP ,\_, Mina\_NNP Harker\_NNP .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP described\_VBD what\_WP steps\_NNS were\_VBD taken\_VBN during\_IN the\_DT day\_NN to\_TO discover\_VB on\_IN what\_WDT boat\_NN and\_CC whither\_NN bound\_VBD Count\_NNP Dracula\_NNP made\_VBD his\_PRP$ escape\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` As\_IN I\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN he\_PRP wanted\_VBD to\_TO get\_VB back\_RB to\_TO Transylvania\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP felt\_VBD sure\_JJ that\_IN he\_PRP must\_MD go\_VB by\_IN the\_DT Danube\_NNP mouth\_NN ;\_: or\_CC by\_IN somewhere\_RB in\_IN the\_DT Black\_NNP Sea\_NNP ,\_, since\_IN by\_IN that\_DT way\_NN he\_PRP come\_VBD .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT dreary\_JJ blank\_NN that\_WDT was\_VBD before\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

Omne\_FW ignotum\_FW pro\_FW magnifico\_FW ;\_: and\_CC so\_RB with\_IN heavy\_JJ hearts\_NNS we\_PRP start\_VBP to\_TO find\_VB what\_WP ships\_NNS leave\_VBP for\_IN the\_DT Black\_NNP Sea\_NNP last\_JJ night\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN sailing\_NN ship\_NN ,\_, since\_IN Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP tell\_VB of\_IN sails\_NNS being\_VBG set\_VBN .\_.

These\_DT not\_RB so\_RB important\_JJ as\_IN to\_TO go\_VB in\_IN your\_PRP$ list\_NN of\_IN the\_DT shipping\_NN in\_IN the\_DT Times\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB we\_PRP go\_VBP ,\_, by\_IN suggestion\_NN of\_IN Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP ,\_, to\_TO your\_PRP$ Lloyd\_NNP 's\_POS ,\_, where\_WRB are\_VBP note\_NN of\_IN all\_DT ships\_NNS that\_WDT sail\_VBP ,\_, however\_RB so\_RB small\_JJ .\_.

There\_EX we\_PRP find\_VBP that\_IN only\_RB one\_CD Black-Sea-bound\_JJ ship\_NN go\_VB out\_RP with\_IN the\_DT tide\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP is\_VBZ the\_DT Czarina\_NNP Catherine\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP sail\_VBP from\_IN Doolittle\_NNP 's\_POS Wharf\_NNP for\_IN Varna\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC thence\_RB on\_IN to\_TO other\_JJ parts\_NNS and\_CC up\_IN the\_DT Danube\_NNP .\_.

`\_`` Soh\_NN !\_. '\_''

said\_VBD I\_PRP ,\_, `\_`` this\_DT is\_VBZ the\_DT ship\_NN whereon\_NN is\_VBZ the\_DT Count\_NNP .\_. '\_''

So\_RB off\_IN we\_PRP go\_VBP to\_TO Doolittle\_NNP 's\_POS Wharf\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC there\_RB we\_PRP find\_VBP a\_DT man\_NN in\_IN an\_DT office\_NN of\_IN wood\_NN so\_RB small\_JJ that\_IN the\_DT man\_NN look\_NN bigger\_JJR than\_IN the\_DT office\_NN .\_.

From\_IN him\_PRP we\_PRP inquire\_VBP of\_IN the\_DT goings\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT Czarina\_NNP Catherine\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP swear\_VBP much\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP red\_JJ face\_NN and\_CC loud\_JJ of\_IN voice\_NN ,\_, but\_CC he\_PRP good\_JJ fellow\_NN all\_DT the\_DT same\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC when\_WRB Quincey\_NNP give\_VBP him\_PRP something\_NN from\_IN his\_PRP$ pocket\_NN which\_WDT crackle\_VBP as\_IN he\_PRP roll\_VBP it\_PRP up\_RP ,\_, and\_CC put\_VBD it\_PRP in\_IN a\_DT so\_RB small\_JJ bag\_NN which\_WDT he\_PRP have\_VBP hid\_VBN deep\_RB in\_IN his\_PRP$ clothing\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP still\_RB better\_JJR fellow\_NN and\_CC humble\_JJ servant\_NN to\_TO us\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP come\_VBP with\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC ask\_VB many\_JJ men\_NNS who\_WP are\_VBP rough\_JJ and\_CC hot\_JJ ;\_: these\_DT be\_VB better\_JJR fellows\_NNS too\_RB when\_WRB they\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN no\_DT more\_RBR thirsty\_JJ .\_.

They\_PRP say\_VBP much\_JJ of\_IN blood\_NN and\_CC bloom\_NN ,\_, and\_CC of\_IN others\_NNS which\_WDT I\_PRP comprehend\_VBD not\_RB ,\_, though\_IN I\_PRP guess\_VBP what\_WP they\_PRP mean\_VBP ;\_: but\_CC nevertheless\_RB they\_PRP tell\_VBP us\_PRP all\_DT things\_NNS which\_WDT we\_PRP want\_VBP to\_TO know\_VB .\_.

``\_`` They\_PRP make\_VBP known\_VBN to\_TO us\_PRP among\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, how\_WRB last\_JJ afternoon\_NN at\_IN about\_RB five\_CD o'clock\_RB comes\_VBZ a\_DT man\_NN so\_IN hurry\_NN .\_.

A\_DT tall\_JJ man\_NN ,\_, thin\_JJ and\_CC pale\_JJ ,\_, with\_IN high\_JJ nose\_NN and\_CC teeth\_NNS so\_RB white\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC eyes\_NNS that\_WDT seem\_VBP to\_TO be\_VB burning\_NN .\_.

That\_IN he\_PRP be\_VB all\_DT in\_IN black\_JJ ,\_, except\_IN that\_IN he\_PRP have\_VB a\_DT hat\_NN of\_IN straw\_NN which\_WDT suit\_VBP not\_RB him\_PRP or\_CC the\_DT time\_NN .\_.

That\_IN he\_PRP scatter\_VBD his\_PRP$ money\_NN in\_IN making\_VBG quick\_JJ inquiry\_NN as\_IN to\_TO what\_WP ship\_NN sails\_VBZ for\_IN the\_DT Black\_NNP Sea\_NNP and\_CC for\_IN where\_WRB .\_.

Some\_DT took\_VBD him\_PRP to\_TO the\_DT office\_NN and\_CC then\_RB to\_TO the\_DT ship\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB he\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB go\_VB aboard\_IN but\_CC halt\_NN at\_IN shore\_NN end\_NN of\_IN gang-plank\_NN ,\_, and\_CC ask\_VB that\_IN the\_DT captain\_NN come\_VBN to\_TO him\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT captain\_NN come\_VBN ,\_, when\_WRB told\_VBN that\_IN he\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB pay\_VB well\_RB ;\_: and\_CC though\_IN he\_PRP swear\_VB much\_RB at\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ he\_PRP agree\_VBP to\_TO term\_VB .\_.

Then\_RB the\_DT thin\_JJ man\_NN go\_VB and\_CC some\_DT one\_CD tell\_VB him\_PRP where\_WRB horse\_NN and\_CC cart\_NN can\_MD be\_VB hired\_VBN .\_.

He\_PRP go\_VBP there\_RB and\_CC soon\_RB he\_PRP come\_VB again\_RB ,\_, himself\_PRP driving\_VBG cart\_NN on\_IN which\_WDT a\_DT great\_JJ box\_NN ;\_: this\_DT he\_PRP himself\_PRP lift\_VBP down\_RP ,\_, though\_IN it\_PRP take\_VB several\_JJ to\_TO put\_VB it\_PRP on\_IN truck\_NN for\_IN the\_DT ship\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP give\_VBP much\_JJ talk\_NN to\_TO captain\_VB as\_IN to\_TO how\_WRB and\_CC where\_WRB his\_PRP$ box\_NN is\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB place\_NN ;\_: but\_CC the\_DT captain\_NN like\_IN it\_PRP not\_RB and\_CC swear\_VB at\_IN him\_PRP in\_IN many\_JJ tongues\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC tell\_VB him\_PRP that\_IN if\_IN he\_PRP like\_IN he\_PRP can\_MD come\_VB and\_CC see\_VB where\_WRB it\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB .\_.

But\_CC he\_PRP say\_VBP `\_`` no\_DT '\_'' ;\_: that\_IN he\_PRP come\_VB not\_RB yet\_RB ,\_, for\_IN that\_IN he\_PRP have\_VBP much\_RB to\_TO do\_VB .\_.

Whereupon\_VB the\_DT captain\_NN tell\_VBP him\_PRP that\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD better\_RBR be\_VB quick\_JJ --\_: with\_IN blood\_NN --\_: for\_IN that\_DT his\_PRP$ ship\_NN will\_MD leave\_VB the\_DT place\_NN --\_: of\_IN blood\_NN --\_: before\_IN the\_DT turn\_NN of\_IN the\_DT tide\_NN --\_: with\_IN blood\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB the\_DT thin\_JJ man\_NN smile\_NN and\_CC say\_VB that\_DT of\_IN course\_NN he\_PRP must\_MD go\_VB when\_WRB he\_PRP think\_VBP fit\_NN ;\_: but\_CC he\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB surprise\_JJ if\_IN he\_PRP go\_VBP quite\_RB so\_RB soon\_RB .\_.

The\_DT captain\_NN swear\_VBP again\_RB ,\_, polyglot\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT thin\_JJ man\_NN make\_VBP him\_PRP bow\_VB ,\_, and\_CC thank\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC say\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP will\_MD so\_RB far\_RB intrude\_VB on\_IN his\_PRP$ kindness\_NN as\_IN to\_TO come\_VB aboard\_RB before\_IN the\_DT sailing\_NN .\_.

Final\_NNP the\_DT captain\_NN ,\_, more\_RBR red\_JJ than\_IN ever\_RB ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN more\_JJR tongues\_NNS tell\_VBP him\_PRP that\_IN he\_PRP does\_VBZ n't\_RB want\_VB no\_DT Frenchmen\_NNP --\_: with\_IN bloom\_NN upon\_IN them\_PRP and\_CC also\_RB with\_IN blood\_NN --\_: in\_IN his\_PRP$ ship\_NN --\_: with\_IN blood\_NN on\_IN her\_PRP also\_RB .\_.

And\_CC so\_RB ,\_, after\_IN asking\_VBG where\_WRB there\_EX might\_MD be\_VB close\_JJ at\_IN hand\_NN a\_DT ship\_NN where\_WRB he\_PRP might\_MD purchase\_VB ship\_NN forms\_NNS ,\_, he\_PRP departed\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` No\_DT one\_NN knew\_VBD where\_WRB he\_PRP went\_VBD `\_`` or\_CC bloomin\_NN '\_'' well\_RB cared\_VBD ,\_, '\_'' as\_IN they\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, for\_IN they\_PRP had\_VBD something\_NN else\_RB to\_TO think\_VB of\_IN --\_: well\_RB with\_IN blood\_NN again\_RB ;\_: for\_IN it\_PRP soon\_RB became\_VBD apparent\_JJ to\_TO all\_DT that\_IN the\_DT Czarina\_NNP Catherine\_NNP would\_MD not\_RB sail\_VB as\_IN was\_VBD expected\_VBN .\_.

A\_DT thin\_JJ mist\_NN began\_VBD to\_TO creep\_VB up\_RP from\_IN the\_DT river\_NN ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP grew\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC grew\_VBD ;\_: till\_IN soon\_RB a\_DT dense\_JJ fog\_NN enveloped\_VBD the\_DT ship\_NN and\_CC all\_DT around\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT captain\_NN swore\_VBD polyglot\_JJ --\_: very\_RB polyglot\_JJ --\_: polyglot\_NN with\_IN bloom\_NN and\_CC blood\_NN ;\_: but\_CC he\_PRP could\_MD do\_VB nothing\_NN .\_.

The\_DT water\_NN rose\_VBD and\_CC rose\_VBD ;\_: and\_CC he\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO fear\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP would\_MD lose\_VB the\_DT tide\_NN altogether\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN no\_DT friendly\_JJ mood\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB just\_RB at\_IN full\_JJ tide\_NN ,\_, the\_DT thin\_JJ man\_NN came\_VBD up\_RP the\_DT gang-plank\_NN again\_RB and\_CC asked\_VBD to\_TO see\_VB where\_WRB his\_PRP$ box\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN stowed\_VBN .\_.

Then\_RB the\_DT captain\_NN replied\_VBD that\_IN he\_PRP wished\_VBD that\_IN he\_PRP and\_CC his\_PRP$ box\_NN --\_: old\_JJ and\_CC with\_IN much\_JJ bloom\_NN and\_CC blood\_NN --\_: were\_VBD in\_IN hell\_NN .\_.

But\_CC the\_DT thin\_JJ man\_NN did\_VBD not\_RB be\_VB offend\_VB ,\_, and\_CC went\_VBD down\_RP with\_IN the\_DT mate\_NN and\_CC saw\_VBD where\_WRB it\_PRP was\_VBD place\_NN ,\_, and\_CC came\_VBD up\_RB and\_CC stood\_VBD awhile\_RB on\_IN deck\_NN in\_IN fog\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB come\_VBN off\_RP by\_IN himself\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN none\_NN notice\_NN him\_PRP .\_.

Indeed\_RB they\_PRP thought\_VBD not\_RB of\_IN him\_PRP ;\_: for\_IN soon\_RB the\_DT fog\_NN begin\_VB to\_TO melt\_VB away\_RB ,\_, and\_CC all\_DT was\_VBD clear\_JJ again\_RB .\_.

My\_PRP$ friends\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT thirst\_NN and\_CC the\_DT language\_NN that\_WDT was\_VBD of\_IN bloom\_NN and\_CC blood\_NN laughed\_VBD ,\_, as\_IN they\_PRP told\_VBD how\_WRB the\_DT captain\_NN 's\_POS swears\_NNS exceeded\_VBD even\_RB his\_PRP$ usual\_JJ polyglot\_NN ,\_, and\_CC was\_VBD more\_RBR than\_IN ever\_RB full\_JJ of\_IN picturesque\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB on\_IN questioning\_VBG other\_JJ mariners\_NNS who\_WP were\_VBD on\_IN movement\_NN up\_IN and\_CC down\_IN on\_IN the\_DT river\_NN that\_IN hour\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP found\_VBD that\_IN few\_JJ of\_IN them\_PRP had\_VBD seen\_VBN any\_DT of\_IN fog\_NN at\_IN all\_DT ,\_, except\_IN where\_WRB it\_PRP lay\_VBD round\_NN the\_DT wharf\_NN .\_.

However\_RB ,\_, the\_DT ship\_NN went\_VBD out\_RP on\_IN the\_DT ebb\_NN tide\_NN ;\_: and\_CC was\_VBD doubtless\_JJ by\_IN morning\_NN far\_RB down\_IN the\_DT river\_NN mouth\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP was\_VBD by\_IN then\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB they\_PRP told\_VBD us\_PRP ,\_, well\_RB out\_IN to\_TO sea\_NN .\_.

``\_`` And\_CC so\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, it\_PRP is\_VBZ that\_IN we\_PRP have\_VBP to\_TO rest\_VB for\_IN a\_DT time\_NN ,\_, for\_IN our\_PRP$ enemy\_NN is\_VBZ on\_IN the\_DT sea\_NN ,\_, with\_IN the\_DT fog\_NN at\_IN his\_PRP$ command\_NN ,\_, on\_IN his\_PRP$ way\_NN to\_TO the\_DT Danube\_NNP mouth\_NN .\_.

To\_TO sail\_VB a\_DT ship\_NN takes\_VBZ time\_NN ,\_, go\_VB she\_PRP never\_RB so\_RB quick\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC when\_WRB we\_PRP start\_VBP we\_PRP go\_VBP on\_IN land\_NN more\_RBR quick\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP meet\_VBP him\_PRP there\_RB .\_.

Our\_PRP$ best\_JJS hope\_NN is\_VBZ to\_TO come\_VB on\_IN him\_PRP when\_WRB in\_IN the\_DT box\_NN between\_IN sunrise\_NN and\_CC sunset\_NN ;\_: for\_IN then\_RB he\_PRP can\_MD make\_VB no\_DT struggle\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP may\_MD deal\_VB with\_IN him\_PRP as\_IN we\_PRP should\_MD .\_.

There\_EX are\_VBP days\_NNS for\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, in\_IN which\_WDT we\_PRP can\_MD make\_VB ready\_JJ our\_PRP$ plan\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP know\_VBP all\_DT about\_IN where\_WRB he\_PRP go\_VB ;\_: for\_IN we\_PRP have\_VBP seen\_VBN the\_DT owner\_NN of\_IN the\_DT ship\_NN ,\_, who\_WP have\_VBP shown\_VBN us\_PRP invoices\_NNS and\_CC all\_DT papers\_NNS that\_WDT can\_MD be\_VB .\_.

The\_DT box\_NN we\_PRP seek\_VBP is\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB landed\_VBN in\_IN Varna\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO be\_VB given\_VBN to\_TO an\_DT agent\_NN ,\_, one\_CD Ristics\_NNPS who\_WP will\_MD there\_RB present\_VB his\_PRP$ credentials\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC so\_RB our\_PRP$ merchant\_NN friend\_NN will\_MD have\_VB done\_VBN his\_PRP$ part\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB he\_PRP ask\_VB if\_IN there\_EX be\_VB any\_DT wrong\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN that\_DT so\_RB ,\_, he\_PRP can\_MD telegraph\_VB and\_CC have\_VB inquiry\_NN made\_VBN at\_IN Varna\_NNP ,\_, we\_PRP say\_VBP `\_`` no\_DT '\_'' ;\_: for\_IN what\_WP is\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB done\_VBN is\_VBZ not\_RB for\_IN police\_NN or\_CC of\_IN the\_DT customs\_NNS .\_.

It\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB done\_VBN by\_IN us\_PRP alone\_RB and\_CC in\_IN our\_PRP$ own\_JJ way\_NN .\_. ''\_''

When\_WRB Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP had\_VBD done\_VBN speaking\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP asked\_VBD him\_PRP if\_IN he\_PRP were\_VBD certain\_JJ that\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP had\_VBD remained\_VBN on\_IN board\_NN the\_DT ship\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP replied\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` We\_PRP have\_VBP the\_DT best\_JJS proof\_NN of\_IN that\_DT :\_: your\_PRP$ own\_JJ evidence\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB in\_IN the\_DT hypnotic\_JJ trance\_NN this\_DT morning\_NN .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP asked\_VBD him\_PRP again\_RB if\_IN it\_PRP were\_VBD really\_RB necessary\_JJ that\_IN they\_PRP should\_MD pursue\_VB the\_DT Count\_NNP ,\_, for\_IN oh\_UH !\_.

I\_NN dread\_NN Jonathan\_NNP leaving\_VBG me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP know\_VBP that\_IN he\_PRP would\_MD surely\_RB go\_VB if\_IN the\_DT others\_NNS went\_VBD .\_.

He\_PRP answered\_VBD in\_IN growing\_VBG passion\_NN ,\_, at\_IN first\_RB quietly\_RB .\_.

As\_IN he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, he\_PRP grew\_VBD more\_RBR angry\_JJ and\_CC more\_RBR forceful\_JJ ,\_, till\_IN in\_IN the\_DT end\_NN we\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB but\_CC see\_VB wherein\_WRB was\_VBD at\_IN least\_JJS some\_DT of\_IN that\_DT personal\_JJ dominance\_NN which\_WDT made\_VBD him\_PRP so\_RB long\_RB a\_DT master\_NN amongst\_IN men\_NNS :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Yes\_UH ,\_, it\_PRP is\_VBZ necessary\_JJ --\_: necessary\_JJ --\_: necessary\_JJ !\_.

For\_IN your\_PRP$ sake\_NN in\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB for\_IN the\_DT sake\_NN of\_IN humanity\_NN .\_.

This\_DT monster\_NN has\_VBZ done\_VBN much\_JJ harm\_NN already\_RB ,\_, in\_IN the\_DT narrow\_JJ scope\_NN where\_WRB he\_PRP find\_VB himself\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN the\_DT short\_JJ time\_NN when\_WRB as\_RB yet\_RB he\_PRP was\_VBD only\_RB as\_IN a\_DT body\_NN groping\_VBG his\_PRP$ so\_RB small\_JJ measure\_NN in\_IN darkness\_NN and\_CC not\_RB knowing\_VBG .\_.

All\_PDT this\_DT have\_VBP I\_PRP told\_VBD these\_DT others\_NNS ;\_: you\_PRP ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, will\_MD learn\_VB it\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT phonograph\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, or\_CC in\_IN that\_DT of\_IN your\_PRP$ husband\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP told\_VBN them\_PRP how\_WRB the\_DT measure\_NN of\_IN leaving\_VBG his\_PRP$ own\_JJ barren\_JJ land\_NN --\_: barren\_JJ of\_IN peoples\_NNS --\_: and\_CC coming\_VBG to\_TO a\_DT new\_JJ land\_NN where\_WRB life\_NN of\_IN man\_NN teems\_NNS till\_IN they\_PRP are\_VBP like\_IN the\_DT multitude\_NN of\_IN standing\_NN corn\_NN ,\_, was\_VBD the\_DT work\_NN of\_IN centuries\_NNS .\_.

Were\_VBD another\_DT of\_IN the\_DT Un-Dead\_NNP ,\_, like\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, to\_TO try\_VB to\_TO do\_VB what\_WP he\_PRP has\_VBZ done\_VBN ,\_, perhaps\_RB not\_RB all\_PDT the\_DT centuries\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT world\_NN that\_WDT have\_VBP been\_VBN ,\_, or\_CC that\_DT will\_MD be\_VB ,\_, could\_MD aid\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

With\_IN this\_DT one\_CD ,\_, all\_PDT the\_DT forces\_NNS of\_IN nature\_NN that\_WDT are\_VBP occult\_JJ and\_CC deep\_JJ and\_CC strong\_JJ must\_MD have\_VB worked\_VBN together\_RB in\_IN some\_DT wondrous\_JJ way\_NN .\_.

The\_DT very\_JJ place\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB he\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN alive\_JJ ,\_, Un-Dead\_JJ for\_IN all\_PDT these\_DT centuries\_NNS ,\_, is\_VBZ full\_JJ of\_IN strangeness\_NN of\_IN the\_DT geologic\_JJ and\_CC chemical\_JJ world\_NN .\_.

There\_EX are\_VBP deep\_JJ caverns\_NNS and\_CC fissures\_NNS that\_WDT reach\_VBP none\_NN know\_VBP whither\_NN .\_.

There\_EX have\_VBP been\_VBN volcanoes\_NNS ,\_, some\_DT of\_IN whose\_WP$ openings\_NNS still\_RB send\_VBP out\_RP waters\_NNS of\_IN strange\_JJ properties\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC gases\_NNS that\_WDT kill\_VBP or\_CC make\_VBP to\_TO vivify\_VB .\_.

Doubtless\_NNP ,\_, there\_EX is\_VBZ something\_NN magnetic\_JJ or\_CC electric\_JJ in\_IN some\_DT of\_IN these\_DT combinations\_NNS of\_IN occult\_NN forces\_NNS which\_WDT work\_VBP for\_IN physical\_JJ life\_NN in\_IN strange\_JJ way\_NN ;\_: and\_CC in\_IN himself\_PRP were\_VBD from\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ some\_DT great\_JJ qualities\_NNS .\_.

In\_IN a\_DT hard\_JJ and\_CC warlike\_JJ time\_NN he\_PRP was\_VBD celebrate\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP have\_VB more\_JJR iron\_NN nerve\_NN ,\_, more\_RBR subtle\_JJ brain\_NN ,\_, more\_RBR braver\_JJ heart\_NN ,\_, than\_IN any\_DT man\_NN .\_.

In\_IN him\_PRP some\_DT vital\_JJ principle\_NN have\_VBP in\_IN strange\_JJ way\_NN found\_VBD their\_PRP$ utmost\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC as\_IN his\_PRP$ body\_NN keep\_VB strong\_JJ and\_CC grow\_VB and\_CC thrive\_VB ,\_, so\_IN his\_PRP$ brain\_NN grow\_VB too\_RB .\_.

All\_PDT this\_DT without\_IN that\_DT diabolic\_JJ aid\_NN which\_WDT is\_VBZ surely\_RB to\_TO him\_PRP ;\_: for\_IN it\_PRP have\_VBP to\_TO yield\_VB to\_TO the\_DT powers\_NNS that\_WDT come\_VBP from\_IN ,\_, and\_CC are\_VBP ,\_, symbolic\_JJ of\_IN good\_NN .\_.

And\_CC now\_RB this\_DT is\_VBZ what\_WP he\_PRP is\_VBZ to\_TO us\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP have\_VBP infect\_VB you\_PRP --\_: oh\_UH ,\_, forgive\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP must\_MD say\_VB such\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ for\_IN good\_NN of\_IN you\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP speak\_VBP .\_.

He\_PRP infect\_VBP you\_PRP in\_IN such\_JJ wise\_JJ ,\_, that\_IN even\_RB if\_IN he\_PRP do\_VBP no\_RB more\_JJR ,\_, you\_PRP have\_VBP only\_RB to\_TO live\_VB --\_: to\_TO live\_VB in\_IN your\_PRP$ own\_JJ old\_JJ ,\_, sweet\_JJ way\_NN ;\_: and\_CC so\_RB in\_IN time\_NN ,\_, death\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT is\_VBZ of\_IN man\_NN 's\_POS common\_JJ lot\_NN and\_CC with\_IN God\_NNP 's\_POS sanction\_NN ,\_, shall\_MD make\_VB you\_PRP like\_VB to\_TO him\_PRP .\_.

This\_DT must\_MD not\_RB be\_VB !\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP sworn\_VBN together\_RB that\_IN it\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB .\_.

Thus\_RB are\_VBP we\_PRP ministers\_NNS of\_IN God\_NNP 's\_POS own\_JJ wish\_NN :\_: that\_IN the\_DT world\_NN ,\_, and\_CC men\_NNS for\_IN whom\_WP His\_PRP$ Son\_NNP die\_NN ,\_, will\_MD not\_RB be\_VB given\_VBN over\_RP to\_TO monsters\_NNS ,\_, whose\_WP$ very\_JJ existence\_NN would\_MD defame\_VB Him\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP have\_VBP allowed\_VBN us\_PRP to\_TO redeem\_VB one\_CD soul\_NN already\_RB ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP go\_VBP out\_RP as\_IN the\_DT old\_JJ knights\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT Cross\_NNP to\_TO redeem\_VB more\_JJR .\_.

Like\_IN them\_PRP we\_PRP shall\_MD travel\_VB towards\_IN the\_DT sunrise\_NN ;\_: and\_CC like\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, if\_IN we\_PRP fall\_VBP ,\_, we\_PRP fall\_VBP in\_IN good\_JJ cause\_NN .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP paused\_VBD and\_CC I\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` But\_CC will\_MD not\_RB the\_DT Count\_NNP take\_VB his\_PRP$ rebuff\_NN wisely\_RB ?\_.

Since\_IN he\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN driven\_VBN from\_IN England\_NNP ,\_, will\_MD he\_PRP not\_RB avoid\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN a\_DT tiger\_NN does\_VBZ the\_DT village\_NN from\_IN which\_WDT he\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN hunted\_VBN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Aha\_NN !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` your\_PRP$ simile\_NN of\_IN the\_DT tiger\_NN good\_NN ,\_, for\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD adopt\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

Your\_PRP$ man-eater\_NN ,\_, as\_IN they\_PRP of\_IN India\_NNP call\_VB the\_DT tiger\_NN who\_WP has\_VBZ once\_RB tasted\_VBN blood\_NN of\_IN the\_DT human\_JJ ,\_, care\_NN no\_RB more\_JJR for\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ prey\_NN ,\_, but\_CC prowl\_NN unceasing\_JJ till\_IN he\_PRP get\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

This\_DT that\_IN we\_PRP hunt\_NN from\_IN our\_PRP$ village\_NN is\_VBZ a\_DT tiger\_NN ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, a\_DT man-eater\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP never\_RB cease\_VBP to\_TO prowl\_NN .\_.

Nay\_NNP ,\_, in\_IN himself\_PRP he\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB one\_CD to\_TO retire\_VB and\_CC stay\_VB afar\_NN .\_.

In\_IN his\_PRP$ life\_NN ,\_, his\_PRP$ living\_VBG life\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP go\_VBP over\_IN the\_DT Turkey\_NNP frontier\_NN and\_CC attack\_VB his\_PRP$ enemy\_NN on\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ ground\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP be\_VB beaten\_VBN back\_RB ,\_, but\_CC did\_VBD he\_PRP stay\_VB ?\_.

No\_DT !\_.

He\_PRP come\_VBP again\_RB ,\_, and\_CC again\_RB ,\_, and\_CC again\_RB .\_.

Look\_VB at\_IN his\_PRP$ persistence\_NN and\_CC endurance\_JJ .\_.

With\_IN the\_DT child-brain\_NN that\_WDT was\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP he\_PRP have\_VBP long\_RB since\_RB conceive\_VBP the\_DT idea\_NN of\_IN coming\_VBG to\_TO a\_DT great\_JJ city\_NN .\_.

What\_WP does\_VBZ he\_PRP do\_VB ?\_.

He\_PRP find\_VBP out\_RP the\_DT place\_NN of\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT world\_NN most\_JJS of\_IN promise\_NN for\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

Then\_RB he\_PRP deliberately\_RB set\_VBD himself\_PRP down\_RP to\_TO prepare\_VB for\_IN the\_DT task\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP find\_VBP in\_IN patience\_NN just\_RB how\_WRB is\_VBZ his\_PRP$ strength\_NN ,\_, and\_CC what\_WP are\_VBP his\_PRP$ powers\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP study\_VBD new\_JJ tongues\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP learn\_VBP new\_JJ social\_JJ life\_NN ;\_: new\_JJ environment\_NN of\_IN old\_JJ ways\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT politic\_NN ,\_, the\_DT law\_NN ,\_, the\_DT finance\_NN ,\_, the\_DT science\_NN ,\_, the\_DT habit\_NN of\_IN a\_DT new\_JJ land\_NN and\_CC a\_DT new\_JJ people\_NNS who\_WP have\_VBP come\_VBN to\_TO be\_VB since\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD .\_.

His\_PRP$ glimpse\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP have\_VBP had\_VBN ,\_, whet\_VB his\_PRP$ appetite\_NN only\_RB and\_CC enkeen\_VB his\_PRP$ desire\_NN .\_.

Nay\_NNP ,\_, it\_PRP help\_VB him\_PRP to\_TO grow\_VB as\_IN to\_TO his\_PRP$ brain\_NN ;\_: for\_IN it\_PRP all\_DT prove\_VBP to\_TO him\_PRP how\_WRB right\_RB he\_PRP was\_VBD at\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ in\_IN his\_PRP$ surmises\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP have\_VBP done\_VBN this\_DT alone\_RB ;\_: all\_RB alone\_RB !\_.

from\_IN a\_DT ruin\_VBP tomb\_NN in\_IN a\_DT forgotten\_VBN land\_NN .\_.

What\_WP more\_JJR may\_MD he\_PRP not\_RB do\_VB when\_WRB the\_DT greater\_JJR world\_NN of\_IN thought\_NN is\_VBZ open\_JJ to\_TO him\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP that\_WDT can\_MD smile\_VB at\_IN death\_NN ,\_, as\_IN we\_PRP know\_VBP him\_PRP ;\_: who\_WP can\_MD flourish\_VB in\_IN the\_DT midst\_NN of\_IN diseases\_NNS that\_WDT kill\_VBP off\_RP whole\_JJ peoples\_NNS .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, if\_IN such\_PDT an\_DT one\_NN was\_VBD to\_TO come\_VB from\_IN God\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC not\_RB the\_DT Devil\_NNP ,\_, what\_WP a\_DT force\_NN for\_IN good\_JJ might\_NN he\_PRP not\_RB be\_VB in\_IN this\_DT old\_JJ world\_NN of\_IN ours\_PRP .\_.

But\_CC we\_PRP are\_VBP pledged\_VBN to\_TO set\_VB the\_DT world\_NN free\_JJ .\_.

Our\_PRP$ toil\_VBP must\_MD be\_VB in\_IN silence\_NN ,\_, and\_CC our\_PRP$ efforts\_NNS all\_DT in\_IN secret\_NN ;\_: for\_IN in\_IN this\_DT enlightened\_VBN age\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB men\_NNS believe\_VBP not\_RB even\_RB what\_WP they\_PRP see\_VBP ,\_, the\_DT doubting\_NN of\_IN wise\_JJ men\_NNS would\_MD be\_VB his\_PRP$ greatest\_JJS strength\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB at\_IN once\_RB his\_PRP$ sheath\_NN and\_CC his\_PRP$ armour\_NN ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ weapons\_NNS to\_TO destroy\_VB us\_PRP ,\_, his\_PRP$ enemies\_NNS ,\_, who\_WP are\_VBP willing\_JJ to\_TO peril\_NN even\_RB our\_PRP$ own\_JJ souls\_NNS for\_IN the\_DT safety\_NN of\_IN one\_CD we\_PRP love\_VBP --\_: for\_IN the\_DT good\_NN of\_IN mankind\_NN ,\_, and\_CC for\_IN the\_DT honour\_NN and\_CC glory\_NN of\_IN God\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

After\_IN a\_DT general\_JJ discussion\_NN it\_PRP was\_VBD determined\_VBN that\_IN for\_IN to-night\_JJ nothing\_NN be\_VB definitely\_RB settled\_VBN ;\_: that\_IN we\_PRP should\_MD all\_DT sleep\_VB on\_IN the\_DT facts\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC try\_VB to\_TO think\_VB out\_RP the\_DT proper\_JJ conclusions\_NNS .\_.

To-morrow\_NN ,\_, at\_IN breakfast\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP are\_VBP to\_TO meet\_VB again\_RB ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, after\_IN making\_VBG our\_PRP$ conclusions\_NNS known\_VBN to\_TO one\_CD another\_DT ,\_, we\_PRP shall\_MD decide\_VB on\_IN some\_DT definite\_JJ cause\_NN of\_IN action\_NN .\_.

...\_: .\_.

I\_PRP feel\_VBP a\_DT wonderful\_JJ peace\_NN and\_CC rest\_NN to-night\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ as\_IN if\_IN some\_DT haunting\_VBG presence\_NN were\_VBD removed\_VBN from\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

Perhaps\_RB ...\_: My\_PRP$ surmise\_NN was\_VBD not\_RB finished\_VBN ,\_, could\_MD not\_RB be\_VB ;\_: for\_IN I\_PRP caught\_VBD sight\_NN in\_IN the\_DT mirror\_NN of\_IN the\_DT red\_JJ mark\_NN upon\_IN my\_PRP$ forehead\_NN ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD still\_RB unclean\_JJ .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

5\_CD October\_NNP .\_.

--\_: We\_PRP all\_DT rose\_VBD early\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP think\_VBP that\_IN sleep\_NN did\_VBD much\_JJ for\_IN each\_DT and\_CC all\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP met\_VBD at\_IN early\_JJ breakfast\_NN there\_EX was\_VBD more\_RBR general\_JJ cheerfulness\_NN than\_IN any\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP had\_VBD ever\_RB expected\_VBN to\_TO experience\_VB again\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ really\_RB wonderful\_JJ how\_WRB much\_JJ resilience\_NN there\_EX is\_VBZ in\_IN human\_JJ nature\_NN .\_.

Let\_VB any\_DT obstructing\_VBG cause\_NN ,\_, no\_DT matter\_NN what\_WP ,\_, be\_VB removed\_VBN in\_IN any\_DT way\_NN --\_: even\_RB by\_IN death\_NN --\_: and\_CC we\_PRP fly\_VBP back\_RB to\_TO first\_JJ principles\_NNS of\_IN hope\_NN and\_CC enjoyment\_NN .\_.

More\_JJR than\_IN once\_RB as\_IN we\_PRP sat\_VBD around\_IN the\_DT table\_NN ,\_, my\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS opened\_VBN in\_IN wonder\_NN whether\_IN the\_DT whole\_NN of\_IN the\_DT past\_JJ days\_NNS had\_VBD not\_RB been\_VBN a\_DT dream\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD only\_RB when\_WRB I\_PRP caught\_VBD sight\_NN of\_IN the\_DT red\_JJ blotch\_NN on\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS forehead\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD brought\_VBN back\_RB to\_TO reality\_NN .\_.

Even\_RB now\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB I\_PRP am\_VBP gravely\_RB revolving\_VBG the\_DT matter\_NN ,\_, it\_PRP is\_VBZ almost\_RB impossible\_JJ to\_TO realise\_VB that\_IN the\_DT cause\_NN of\_IN all\_DT our\_PRP$ trouble\_NN is\_VBZ still\_RB existent\_JJ .\_.

Even\_RB Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP seems\_VBZ to\_TO lose\_VB sight\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ trouble\_NN for\_IN whole\_JJ spells\_NNS ;\_: it\_PRP is\_VBZ only\_RB now\_RB and\_CC again\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB something\_NN recalls\_VBZ it\_PRP to\_TO her\_PRP$ mind\_NN ,\_, that\_IN she\_PRP thinks\_VBZ of\_IN her\_PRP$ terrible\_JJ scar\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP are\_VBP to\_TO meet\_VB here\_RB in\_IN my\_PRP$ study\_NN in\_IN half\_PDT an\_DT hour\_NN and\_CC decide\_VB on\_IN our\_PRP$ course\_NN of\_IN action\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP see\_VBP only\_RB one\_CD immediate\_JJ difficulty\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP know\_VBP it\_PRP by\_IN instinct\_NN rather\_RB than\_IN reason\_NN :\_: we\_PRP shall\_MD all\_DT have\_VBP to\_TO speak\_VB frankly\_RB ;\_: and\_CC yet\_RB I\_PRP fear\_VBP that\_IN in\_IN some\_DT mysterious\_JJ way\_NN poor\_JJ Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS tongue\_NN is\_VBZ tied\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP that\_IN she\_PRP forms\_VBZ conclusions\_NNS of\_IN her\_PRP$ own\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC from\_IN all\_DT that\_WDT has\_VBZ been\_VBN I\_PRP can\_MD guess\_VB how\_WRB brilliant\_JJ and\_CC how\_WRB true\_JJ they\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB ;\_: but\_CC she\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB ,\_, or\_CC can\_MD not\_RB ,\_, give\_VB them\_PRP utterance\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP mentioned\_VBN this\_DT to\_TO Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP and\_CC I\_PRP are\_VBP to\_TO talk\_VB it\_PRP over\_IN when\_WRB we\_PRP are\_VBP alone\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP suppose\_VBP it\_PRP is\_VBZ some\_DT of\_IN that\_DT horrid\_JJ poison\_NN which\_WDT has\_VBZ got\_VBN into\_IN her\_PRP$ veins\_NNS beginning\_VBG to\_TO work\_VB .\_.

The\_DT Count\_NNP had\_VBD his\_PRP$ own\_JJ purposes\_NNS when\_WRB he\_PRP gave\_VBD her\_PRP what\_WP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP called\_VBD ``\_`` the\_DT Vampire\_NNP 's\_POS baptism\_NN of\_IN blood\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Well\_RB ,\_, there\_EX may\_MD be\_VB a\_DT poison\_NN that\_WDT distils\_VBZ itself\_PRP out\_IN of\_IN good\_JJ things\_NNS ;\_: in\_IN an\_DT age\_NN when\_WRB the\_DT existence\_NN of\_IN ptomaines\_NNS is\_VBZ a\_DT mystery\_NN we\_PRP should\_MD not\_RB wonder\_VB at\_IN anything\_NN !\_.

One\_CD thing\_NN I\_PRP know\_VBP :\_: that\_IN if\_IN my\_PRP$ instinct\_NN be\_VB true\_JJ regarding\_VBG poor\_JJ Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS silences\_NNS ,\_, then\_RB there\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT terrible\_JJ difficulty\_NN --\_: an\_DT unknown\_JJ danger\_NN --\_: in\_IN the\_DT work\_NN before\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT same\_JJ power\_NN that\_WDT compels\_VBZ her\_PRP$ silence\_NN may\_MD compel\_VB her\_PRP$ speech\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP dare\_VBP not\_RB think\_VB further\_RB ;\_: for\_IN so\_RB I\_PRP should\_MD in\_IN my\_PRP$ thoughts\_NNS dishonour\_VBP a\_DT noble\_JJ woman\_NN !\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP is\_VBZ coming\_VBG to\_TO my\_PRP$ study\_NN a\_DT little\_JJ before\_IN the\_DT others\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD try\_VB to\_TO open\_VB the\_DT subject\_NN with\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

Later\_RB .\_.

--\_: When\_WRB the\_DT Professor\_NNP came\_VBD in\_RP ,\_, we\_PRP talked\_VBD over\_IN the\_DT state\_NN of\_IN things\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD something\_NN on\_IN his\_PRP$ mind\_NN which\_WDT he\_PRP wanted\_VBD to\_TO say\_VB ,\_, but\_CC felt\_VBD some\_DT hesitancy\_NN about\_IN broaching\_VBG the\_DT subject\_NN .\_.

After\_IN beating\_VBG about\_IN the\_DT bush\_NN a\_DT little\_JJ ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD suddenly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, there\_EX is\_VBZ something\_NN that\_IN you\_PRP and\_CC I\_PRP must\_MD talk\_VB of\_IN alone\_RB ,\_, just\_RB at\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ at\_IN any\_DT rate\_NN .\_.

Later\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP may\_MD have\_VB to\_TO take\_VB the\_DT others\_NNS into\_IN our\_PRP$ confidence\_NN ''\_'' ;\_: then\_RB he\_PRP stopped\_VBD ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP waited\_VBD ;\_: he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, our\_PRP$ poor\_JJ ,\_, dear\_RB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP is\_VBZ changing\_VBG .\_. ''\_''

A\_DT cold\_NN shiver\_VB ran\_VBD through\_IN me\_PRP to\_TO find\_VB my\_PRP$ worst\_JJS fears\_NNS thus\_RB endorsed\_VBN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP continued\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` With\_IN the\_DT sad\_JJ experience\_NN of\_IN Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP ,\_, we\_PRP must\_MD this\_DT time\_NN be\_VB warned\_VBN before\_IN things\_NNS go\_VBP too\_RB far\_RB .\_.

Our\_PRP$ task\_NN is\_VBZ now\_RB in\_IN reality\_NN more\_RBR difficult\_JJ than\_IN ever\_RB ,\_, and\_CC this\_DT new\_JJ trouble\_NN makes\_VBZ every\_DT hour\_NN of\_IN the\_DT direst\_JJS importance\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP can\_MD see\_VB the\_DT characteristics\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT vampire\_NN coming\_VBG in\_IN her\_PRP$ face\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ now\_RB but\_CC very\_RB ,\_, very\_RB slight\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB seen\_VBN if\_IN we\_PRP have\_VBP eyes\_NNS to\_TO notice\_VB without\_IN to\_TO prejudge\_VB .\_.

Her\_PRP$ teeth\_NNS are\_VBP some\_DT sharper\_JJR ,\_, and\_CC at\_IN times\_NNS her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS are\_VBP more\_RBR hard\_JJ .\_.

But\_CC these\_DT are\_VBP not\_RB all\_DT ,\_, there\_EX is\_VBZ to\_TO her\_PRP$ the\_DT silence\_NN now\_RB often\_RB ;\_: as\_IN so\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD with\_IN Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP .\_.

She\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB speak\_VB ,\_, even\_RB when\_WRB she\_PRP wrote\_VBD that\_IN which\_WDT she\_PRP wished\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB known\_VBN later\_RB .\_.

Now\_RB my\_PRP$ fear\_NN is\_VBZ this\_DT .\_.

If\_IN it\_PRP be\_VB that\_IN she\_PRP can\_MD ,\_, by\_IN our\_PRP$ hypnotic\_JJ trance\_NN ,\_, tell\_VBP what\_WP the\_DT Count\_NNP see\_VB and\_CC hear\_VB ,\_, is\_VBZ it\_PRP not\_RB more\_RBR true\_JJ that\_IN he\_PRP who\_WP have\_VBP hypnotise\_VBN her\_PRP$ first\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC who\_WP have\_VBP drink\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ very\_JJ blood\_NN and\_CC make\_VB her\_PRP$ drink\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ ,\_, should\_MD ,\_, if\_IN he\_PRP will\_MD ,\_, compel\_VB her\_PRP$ mind\_NN to\_TO disclose\_VB to\_TO him\_PRP that\_IN which\_WDT she\_PRP know\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP nodded\_VBD acquiescence\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Then\_RB ,\_, what\_WP we\_PRP must\_MD do\_VB is\_VBZ to\_TO prevent\_VB this\_DT ;\_: we\_PRP must\_MD keep\_VB her\_PRP$ ignorant\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ intent\_NN ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB she\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB tell\_VB what\_WP she\_PRP know\_VBP not\_RB .\_.

This\_DT is\_VBZ a\_DT painful\_JJ task\_NN !\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, so\_RB painful\_JJ that\_IN it\_PRP heart-break\_JJ me\_PRP to\_TO think\_VB of\_IN ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB .\_.

When\_WRB to-day\_JJ we\_PRP meet\_VBP ,\_, I\_PRP must\_MD tell\_VB her\_PRP that\_IN for\_IN reason\_NN which\_WDT we\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB to\_TO speak\_VB she\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB more\_RBR be\_VB of\_IN our\_PRP$ council\_NN ,\_, but\_CC be\_VB simply\_RB guarded\_VBN by\_IN us\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP wiped\_VBD his\_PRP$ forehead\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT had\_VBD broken\_VBN out\_RP in\_IN profuse\_JJ perspiration\_NN at\_IN the\_DT thought\_NN of\_IN the\_DT pain\_NN which\_WDT he\_PRP might\_MD have\_VB to\_TO inflict\_VB upon\_IN the\_DT poor\_JJ soul\_NN already\_RB so\_RB tortured\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN it\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB some\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN comfort\_NN to\_TO him\_PRP if\_IN I\_PRP told\_VBD him\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP also\_RB had\_VBD come\_VBN to\_TO the\_DT same\_JJ conclusion\_NN ;\_: for\_IN at\_IN any\_DT rate\_NN it\_PRP would\_MD take\_VB away\_RP the\_DT pain\_NN of\_IN doubt\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP told\_VBD him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT effect\_NN was\_VBD as\_IN I\_PRP expected\_VBD .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ now\_RB close\_RB to\_TO the\_DT time\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ general\_JJ gathering\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP has\_VBZ gone\_VBN away\_RB to\_TO prepare\_VB for\_IN the\_DT meeting\_NN ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ painful\_JJ part\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP really\_RB believe\_VB his\_PRP$ purpose\_NN is\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB able\_JJ to\_TO pray\_VB alone\_RB .\_.

Later\_RB .\_.

--\_: At\_IN the\_DT very\_JJ outset\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ meeting\_NN a\_DT great\_JJ personal\_JJ relief\_NN was\_VBD experienced\_VBN by\_IN both\_DT Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP and\_CC myself\_PRP .\_.

Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP had\_VBD sent\_VBN a\_DT message\_NN by\_IN her\_PRP$ husband\_NN to\_TO say\_VB that\_IN she\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB join\_VB us\_PRP at\_IN present\_NN ,\_, as\_IN she\_PRP thought\_VBD it\_PRP better\_RBR that\_IN we\_PRP should\_MD be\_VB free\_JJ to\_TO discuss\_VB our\_PRP$ movements\_NNS without\_IN her\_PRP$ presence\_NN to\_TO embarrass\_VB us\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP looked\_VBD at\_IN each\_DT other\_JJ for\_IN an\_DT instant\_NN ,\_, and\_CC somehow\_RB we\_PRP both\_DT seemed\_VBD relieved\_JJ .\_.

For\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ part\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP thought\_VBD that\_IN if\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP realised\_VBD the\_DT danger\_NN herself\_PRP ,\_, it\_PRP was\_VBD much\_JJ pain\_NN as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN much\_JJ danger\_NN averted\_VBN .\_.

Under\_IN the\_DT circumstances\_NNS we\_PRP agreed\_VBD ,\_, by\_IN a\_DT questioning\_VBG look\_NN and\_CC answer\_NN ,\_, with\_IN finger\_NN on\_IN lip\_NN ,\_, to\_TO preserve\_VB silence\_NN in\_IN our\_PRP$ suspicions\_NNS ,\_, until\_IN we\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN able\_JJ to\_TO confer\_VB alone\_RB again\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP went\_VBD at\_IN once\_RB into\_IN our\_PRP$ Plan\_NNP of\_IN Campaign\_NNP .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP roughly\_RB put\_VBD the\_DT facts\_NNS before\_IN us\_PRP first\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` The\_DT Czarina\_NNP Catherine\_NNP left\_VBD the\_DT Thames\_NNP yesterday\_NN morning\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP will\_MD take\_VB her\_PRP at\_IN the\_DT quickest\_JJS speed\_NN she\_PRP has\_VBZ ever\_RB made\_VBN at\_IN least\_JJS three\_CD weeks\_NNS to\_TO reach\_VB Varna\_NNP ;\_: but\_CC we\_PRP can\_MD travel\_VB overland\_NN to\_TO the\_DT same\_JJ place\_NN in\_IN three\_CD days\_NNS .\_.

Now\_RB ,\_, if\_IN we\_PRP allow\_VBP for\_IN two\_CD days\_NNS less\_JJR for\_IN the\_DT ship\_NN 's\_POS voyage\_NN ,\_, owing\_VBG to\_TO such\_JJ weather\_NN influences\_NNS as\_IN we\_PRP know\_VBP that\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN can\_MD bring\_VB to\_TO bear\_VB ;\_: and\_CC if\_IN we\_PRP allow\_VBP a\_DT whole\_JJ day\_NN and\_CC night\_NN for\_IN any\_DT delays\_NNS which\_WDT may\_MD occur\_VB to\_TO us\_PRP ,\_, then\_RB we\_PRP have\_VBP a\_DT margin\_NN of\_IN nearly\_RB two\_CD weeks\_NNS .\_.

Thus\_RB ,\_, in\_IN order\_NN to\_TO be\_VB quite\_RB safe\_JJ ,\_, we\_PRP must\_MD leave\_VB here\_RB on\_IN 17th\_JJ at\_IN latest\_JJS .\_.

Then\_RB we\_PRP shall\_MD at\_IN any\_DT rate\_NN be\_VB in\_IN Varna\_NNP a\_DT day\_NN before\_IN the\_DT ship\_NN arrives\_VBZ ,\_, and\_CC able\_JJ to\_TO make\_VB such\_JJ preparations\_NNS as\_IN may\_MD be\_VB necessary\_JJ .\_.

Of\_IN course\_NN we\_PRP shall\_MD all\_RB go\_VB armed\_VBN --\_: armed\_VBN against\_IN evil\_JJ things\_NNS ,\_, spiritual\_JJ as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN physical\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Here\_RB Quincey\_NNP Morris\_NNP added\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP understand\_VBP that\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN comes\_VBZ from\_IN a\_DT wolf\_NN country\_NN ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP shall\_MD get\_VB there\_RB before\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP propose\_VBP that\_IN we\_PRP add\_VBP Winchesters\_NNS to\_TO our\_PRP$ armament\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP a\_DT kind\_NN of\_IN belief\_NN in\_IN a\_DT Winchester\_NNP when\_WRB there\_EX is\_VBZ any\_DT trouble\_NN of\_IN that\_DT sort\_NN around\_RB .\_.

Do\_VBP you\_PRP remember\_VB ,\_, Art\_NNP ,\_, when\_WRB we\_PRP had\_VBD the\_DT pack\_NN after\_IN us\_PRP at\_IN Tobolsk\_NNP ?\_.

What\_WP would\_MD n't\_RB we\_PRP have\_VBP given\_VBN then\_RB for\_IN a\_DT repeater\_NN apiece\_RB !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Good\_JJ !\_. ''\_''

said\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, ``\_`` Winchesters\_NNS it\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB .\_.

Quincey\_NNP 's\_POS head\_NN is\_VBZ level\_NN at\_IN all\_DT times\_NNS ,\_, but\_CC most\_RBS so\_RB when\_WRB there\_EX is\_VBZ to\_TO hunt\_NN ,\_, metaphor\_NN be\_VB more\_JJR dishonour\_NN to\_TO science\_NN than\_IN wolves\_NNS be\_VB of\_IN danger\_NN to\_TO man\_NN .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT meantime\_NN we\_PRP can\_MD do\_VB nothing\_NN here\_RB ;\_: and\_CC as\_IN I\_PRP think\_VBP that\_IN Varna\_NNP is\_VBZ not\_RB familiar\_JJ to\_TO any\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, why\_WRB not\_RB go\_VB there\_RB more\_RBR soon\_RB ?\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ as\_RB long\_JJ to\_TO wait\_VB here\_RB as\_RB there\_RB .\_.

To-night\_NN and\_CC to-morrow\_NN we\_PRP can\_MD get\_VB ready\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB ,\_, if\_IN all\_DT be\_VB well\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP four\_CD can\_MD set\_VB out\_RP on\_IN our\_PRP$ journey\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` We\_PRP four\_CD ?\_. ''\_''

said\_VBD Harker\_NNP interrogatively\_RB ,\_, looking\_VBG from\_IN one\_CD to\_TO another\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

``\_`` Of\_IN course\_NN !\_. ''\_''

answered\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP quickly\_RB ,\_, ``\_`` you\_PRP must\_MD remain\_VB to\_TO take\_VB care\_NN of\_IN your\_PRP$ so\_RB sweet\_JJ wife\_NN !\_. ''\_''

Harker\_NNP was\_VBD silent\_JJ for\_IN awhile\_RB and\_CC then\_RB said\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT hollow\_JJ voice\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Let\_VB us\_PRP talk\_NN of\_IN that\_DT part\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP want\_VBP to\_TO consult\_VB with\_IN Mina\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP thought\_VBD that\_IN now\_RB was\_VBD the\_DT time\_NN for\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP to\_TO warn\_VB him\_PRP not\_RB to\_TO disclose\_VB our\_PRP$ plans\_NNS to\_TO her\_PRP$ ;\_: but\_CC he\_PRP took\_VBD no\_DT notice\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP looked\_VBD at\_IN him\_PRP significantly\_RB and\_CC coughed\_VBD .\_.

For\_IN answer\_NN he\_PRP put\_VBD his\_PRP$ finger\_NN on\_IN his\_PRP$ lips\_NNS and\_CC turned\_VBD away\_RB .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP .\_.

5\_CD October\_NNP ,\_, afternoon\_NN .\_.

--\_: For\_IN some\_DT time\_NN after\_IN our\_PRP$ meeting\_NN this\_DT morning\_NN I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB think\_VB .\_.

The\_DT new\_JJ phases\_NNS of\_IN things\_NNS leave\_VBP my\_PRP$ mind\_NN in\_IN a\_DT state\_NN of\_IN wonder\_NN which\_WDT allows\_VBZ no\_DT room\_NN for\_IN active\_JJ thought\_NN .\_.

Mina\_NNP 's\_POS determination\_NN not\_RB to\_TO take\_VB any\_DT part\_NN in\_IN the\_DT discussion\_NN set\_VBD me\_PRP thinking\_NN ;\_: and\_CC as\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB argue\_VB the\_DT matter\_NN with\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD only\_RB guess\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP as\_RB far\_RB as\_IN ever\_RB from\_IN a\_DT solution\_NN now\_RB .\_.

The\_DT way\_NN the\_DT others\_NNS received\_VBD it\_PRP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, puzzled\_VBD me\_PRP ;\_: the\_DT last\_JJ time\_NN we\_PRP talked\_VBD of\_IN the\_DT subject\_NN we\_PRP agreed\_VBD that\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB no\_RB more\_JJR concealment\_NN of\_IN anything\_NN amongst\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

Mina\_NNP is\_VBZ sleeping\_VBG now\_RB ,\_, calmly\_RB and\_CC sweetly\_RB like\_IN a\_DT little\_JJ child\_NN .\_.

Her\_PRP$ lips\_NNS are\_VBP curved\_VBN and\_CC her\_PRP$ face\_NN beams\_NNS with\_IN happiness\_NN .\_.

Thank\_VB God\_NNP ,\_, there\_EX are\_VBP such\_JJ moments\_NNS still\_RB for\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

Later\_RB .\_.

--\_: How\_WRB strange\_JJ it\_PRP all\_DT is\_VBZ .\_.

I\_PRP sat\_VBD watching\_VBG Mina\_NNP 's\_POS happy\_JJ sleep\_NN ,\_, and\_CC came\_VBD as\_RB near\_JJ to\_TO being\_VBG happy\_JJ myself\_PRP as\_IN I\_PRP suppose\_VBP I\_PRP shall\_MD ever\_RB be\_VB .\_.

As\_IN the\_DT evening\_NN drew\_VBD on\_IN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT earth\_NN took\_VBD its\_PRP$ shadows\_NNS from\_IN the\_DT sun\_NN sinking\_NN lower\_RBR ,\_, the\_DT silence\_NN of\_IN the\_DT room\_NN grew\_VBD more\_RBR and\_CC more\_RBR solemn\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

All\_DT at\_IN once\_RB Mina\_NNP opened\_VBD her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC looking\_VBG at\_IN me\_PRP tenderly\_RB ,\_, said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP want\_VBP you\_PRP to\_TO promise\_VB me\_PRP something\_NN on\_IN your\_PRP$ word\_NN of\_IN honour\_NN .\_.

A\_DT promise\_NN made\_VBN to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC made\_VBD holily\_RB in\_IN God\_NNP 's\_POS hearing\_NN ,\_, and\_CC not\_RB to\_TO be\_VB broken\_VBN though\_IN I\_PRP should\_MD go\_VB down\_RP on\_IN my\_PRP$ knees\_NNS and\_CC implore\_VB you\_PRP with\_IN bitter\_JJ tears\_NNS .\_.

Quick\_RB ,\_, you\_PRP must\_MD make\_VB it\_PRP to\_TO me\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Mina\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' I\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` a\_DT promise\_NN like\_IN that\_DT ,\_, I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB make\_VB at\_IN once\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP may\_MD have\_VB no\_DT right\_NN to\_TO make\_VB it\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` But\_CC ,\_, dear\_RB one\_CD ,\_, ''\_'' she\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, with\_IN such\_JJ spiritual\_JJ intensity\_NN that\_IN her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS were\_VBD like\_IN pole\_NN stars\_NNS ,\_, ``\_`` it\_PRP is\_VBZ I\_PRP who\_WP wish\_VBP it\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB for\_IN myself\_PRP .\_.

You\_PRP can\_MD ask\_VB Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP if\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB right\_JJ ;\_: if\_IN he\_PRP disagrees\_VBZ you\_PRP may\_MD do\_VB as\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD .\_.

Nay\_NNP ,\_, more\_JJR ,\_, if\_IN you\_PRP all\_DT agree\_VBP ,\_, later\_RB ,\_, you\_PRP are\_VBP absolved\_JJ from\_IN the\_DT promise\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP promise\_VBP !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC for\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN she\_PRP looked\_VBD supremely\_RB happy\_JJ ;\_: though\_IN to\_TO me\_PRP all\_DT happiness\_NN for\_IN her\_PRP was\_VBD denied\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT red\_JJ scar\_NN on\_IN her\_PRP$ forehead\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Promise\_NNP me\_PRP that\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB tell\_VB me\_PRP anything\_NN of\_IN the\_DT plans\_NNS formed\_VBN for\_IN the\_DT campaign\_NN against\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN .\_.

Not\_RB by\_IN word\_NN ,\_, or\_CC inference\_NN ,\_, or\_CC implication\_NN ;\_: not\_RB at\_IN any\_DT time\_NN whilst\_IN this\_DT remains\_VBZ to\_TO me\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

and\_CC she\_PRP solemnly\_RB pointed\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT scar\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP saw\_VBD that\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN earnest\_NN ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD solemnly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP promise\_VBP !\_. ''\_''

and\_CC as\_IN I\_PRP said\_VBD it\_PRP I\_PRP felt\_VBD that\_IN from\_IN that\_DT instant\_NN a\_DT door\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN shut\_VBN between\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

Later\_RB ,\_, midnight\_NN .\_.

--\_: Mina\_NNP has\_VBZ been\_VBN bright\_JJ and\_CC cheerful\_JJ all\_PDT the\_DT evening\_NN .\_.

So\_RB much\_RB so\_IN that\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT rest\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO take\_VB courage\_NN ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN infected\_JJ somewhat\_RB with\_IN her\_PRP$ gaiety\_NN ;\_: as\_IN a\_DT result\_NN even\_RB I\_PRP myself\_PRP felt\_VBD as\_IN if\_IN the\_DT pall\_NN of\_IN gloom\_NN which\_WDT weighs\_VBZ us\_PRP down\_RB were\_VBD somewhat\_RB lifted\_VBN .\_.

We\_PRP all\_DT retired\_VBD early\_RB .\_.

Mina\_NNP is\_VBZ now\_RB sleeping\_VBG like\_IN a\_DT little\_JJ child\_NN ;\_: it\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT wonderful\_JJ thing\_NN that\_IN her\_PRP$ faculty\_NN of\_IN sleep\_NN remains\_VBZ to\_TO her\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT midst\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ terrible\_JJ trouble\_NN .\_.

Thank\_VB God\_NNP for\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN then\_RB at\_IN least\_JJS she\_PRP can\_MD forget\_VB her\_PRP$ care\_NN .\_.

Perhaps\_RB her\_PRP$ example\_NN may\_MD affect\_VB me\_PRP as\_IN her\_PRP$ gaiety\_NN did\_VBD to-night\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD try\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

Oh\_UH !\_.

for\_IN a\_DT dreamless\_JJ sleep\_NN .\_.

6\_CD October\_NNP ,\_, morning\_NN .\_.

--\_: Another\_DT surprise\_NN .\_.

Mina\_NNP woke\_VBD me\_PRP early\_RB ,\_, about\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ time\_NN as\_IN yesterday\_NN ,\_, and\_CC asked\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO bring\_VB Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP thought\_VBD that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD another\_DT occasion\_NN for\_IN hypnotism\_NN ,\_, and\_CC without\_IN question\_NN went\_VBD for\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD evidently\_RB expected\_VBN some\_DT such\_JJ call\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP found\_VBD him\_PRP dressed\_VBN in\_IN his\_PRP$ room\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ door\_NN was\_VBD ajar\_JJ ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN he\_PRP could\_MD hear\_VB the\_DT opening\_NN of\_IN the\_DT door\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ room\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP came\_VBD at\_IN once\_RB ;\_: as\_IN he\_PRP passed\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP asked\_VBD Mina\_NNP if\_IN the\_DT others\_NNS might\_MD come\_VB ,\_, too\_RB .\_.

``\_`` No\_UH ,\_, ''\_'' she\_PRP said\_VBD quite\_RB simply\_RB ,\_, ``\_`` it\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB be\_VB necessary\_JJ .\_.

You\_PRP can\_MD tell\_VB them\_PRP just\_RB as\_RB well\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP must\_MD go\_VB with\_IN you\_PRP on\_IN your\_PRP$ journey\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP was\_VBD as\_RB startled\_VBN as\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD .\_.

After\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN 's\_POS pause\_NN he\_PRP asked\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` But\_CC why\_WRB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` You\_PRP must\_MD take\_VB me\_PRP with\_IN you\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP safer\_JJR with\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB safer\_JJR ,\_, too\_RB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` But\_CC why\_WRB ,\_, dear\_RB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ?\_.

You\_PRP know\_VBP that\_IN your\_PRP$ safety\_NN is\_VBZ our\_PRP$ solemnest\_JJ duty\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP go\_VBP into\_IN danger\_NN ,\_, to\_TO which\_WDT you\_PRP are\_VBP ,\_, or\_CC may\_MD be\_VB ,\_, more\_RBR liable\_JJ than\_IN any\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP from\_IN --\_: from\_IN circumstances\_NNS --\_: things\_NNS that\_WDT have\_VBP been\_VBN .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP paused\_VBD ,\_, embarrassed\_JJ .\_.

As\_IN she\_PRP replied\_VBD ,\_, she\_PRP raised\_VBD her\_PRP$ finger\_NN and\_CC pointed\_VBD to\_TO her\_PRP$ forehead\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP know\_VBP .\_.

That\_DT is\_VBZ why\_WRB I\_PRP must\_MD go\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP can\_MD tell\_VB you\_PRP now\_RB ,\_, whilst\_IN the\_DT sun\_NN is\_VBZ coming\_VBG up\_RP ;\_: I\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB be\_VB able\_JJ again\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP that\_IN when\_WRB the\_DT Count\_NN wills\_NNS me\_PRP I\_PRP must\_MD go\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP that\_IN if\_IN he\_PRP tells\_VBZ me\_PRP to\_TO come\_VB in\_IN secret\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP must\_MD come\_VB by\_IN wile\_NN ;\_: by\_IN any\_DT device\_NN to\_TO hoodwink\_VB --\_: even\_RB Jonathan\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

God\_NNP saw\_VBD the\_DT look\_NN that\_IN she\_PRP turned\_VBD on\_RP me\_PRP as\_IN she\_PRP spoke\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC if\_IN there\_RB be\_VB indeed\_RB a\_DT Recording\_NNP Angel\_NNP that\_IN look\_NN is\_VBZ noted\_VBN to\_TO her\_PRP$ everlasting\_JJ honour\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD only\_RB clasp\_VB her\_PRP$ hand\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB speak\_VB ;\_: my\_PRP$ emotion\_NN was\_VBD too\_RB great\_JJ for\_IN even\_RB the\_DT relief\_NN of\_IN tears\_NNS .\_.

She\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP men\_NNS are\_VBP brave\_VB and\_CC strong\_JJ .\_.

You\_PRP are\_VBP strong\_JJ in\_IN your\_PRP$ numbers\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN you\_PRP can\_MD defy\_VB that\_IN which\_WDT would\_MD break\_VB down\_RP the\_DT human\_JJ endurance\_JJ of\_IN one\_CD who\_WP had\_VBD to\_TO guard\_VB alone\_RB .\_.

Besides\_IN ,\_, I\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB of\_IN service\_NN ,\_, since\_IN you\_PRP can\_MD hypnotise\_VB me\_PRP and\_CC so\_RB learn\_VB that\_IN which\_WDT even\_RB I\_PRP myself\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB know\_VB .\_. ''\_''

Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP said\_VBD very\_RB gravely\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, you\_PRP are\_VBP ,\_, as\_IN always\_RB ,\_, most\_RBS wise\_JJ .\_.

You\_PRP shall\_MD with\_IN us\_PRP come\_VB ;\_: and\_CC together\_RB we\_PRP shall\_MD do\_VB that\_DT which\_WDT we\_PRP go\_VBP forth\_RB to\_TO achieve\_VB .\_. ''\_''

When\_WRB he\_PRP had\_VBD spoken\_VBN ,\_, Mina\_NNP 's\_POS long\_JJ spell\_NN of\_IN silence\_NN made\_VBD me\_PRP look\_VB at\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

She\_PRP had\_VBD fallen\_VBN back\_RB on\_IN her\_PRP$ pillow\_NN asleep\_RB ;\_: she\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB even\_RB wake\_VB when\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD pulled\_VBN up\_RP the\_DT blind\_JJ and\_CC let\_VB in\_IN the\_DT sunlight\_NN which\_WDT flooded\_VBD the\_DT room\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP motioned\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP to\_TO come\_VB with\_IN him\_PRP quietly\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO his\_PRP$ room\_NN ,\_, and\_CC within\_IN a\_DT minute\_NN Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP ,\_, Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP were\_VBD with\_IN us\_PRP also\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP told\_VBD them\_PRP what\_WP Mina\_NNP had\_VBD said\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` In\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN we\_PRP shall\_MD leave\_VB for\_IN Varna\_NNP .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP now\_RB to\_TO deal\_VB with\_IN a\_DT new\_JJ factor\_NN :\_: Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, but\_CC her\_PRP$ soul\_NN is\_VBZ true\_JJ .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ to\_TO her\_PRP an\_DT agony\_NN to\_TO tell\_VB us\_PRP so\_RB much\_RB as\_IN she\_PRP has\_VBZ done\_VBN ;\_: but\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ most\_RBS right\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP are\_VBP warned\_VBN in\_IN time\_NN .\_.

There\_EX must\_MD be\_VB no\_DT chance\_NN lost\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN Varna\_NNP we\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB ready\_JJ to\_TO act\_VB the\_DT instant\_NN when\_WRB that\_DT ship\_NN arrives\_VBZ .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` What\_WP shall\_MD we\_PRP do\_VB exactly\_RB ?\_. ''\_''

asked\_VBD Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP laconically\_RB .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP paused\_VBD before\_IN replying\_VBG :\_: --\_: ``\_`` We\_PRP shall\_MD at\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ board\_NN that\_IN ship\_NN ;\_: then\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB we\_PRP have\_VBP identified\_VBN the\_DT box\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP shall\_MD place\_VB a\_DT branch\_NN of\_IN the\_DT wild\_JJ rose\_NN on\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

This\_DT we\_PRP shall\_MD fasten\_VB ,\_, for\_IN when\_WRB it\_PRP is\_VBZ there\_RB none\_NN can\_MD emerge\_VB ;\_: so\_RB at\_IN least\_JJS says\_VBZ the\_DT superstition\_NN .\_.

And\_CC to\_TO superstition\_NN must\_MD we\_VB trust\_NN at\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ ;\_: it\_PRP was\_VBD man\_NN 's\_POS faith\_NN in\_IN the\_DT early\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP have\_VBP its\_PRP$ root\_NN in\_IN faith\_NN still\_RB .\_.

Then\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB we\_PRP get\_VBP the\_DT opportunity\_NN that\_IN we\_PRP seek\_VBP ,\_, when\_WRB none\_NN are\_VBP near\_JJ to\_TO see\_VB ,\_, we\_PRP shall\_MD open\_VB the\_DT box\_NN ,\_, and\_CC --\_: and\_CC all\_DT will\_MD be\_VB well\_RB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB wait\_VB for\_IN any\_DT opportunity\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD Morris\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` When\_WRB I\_PRP see\_VBP the\_DT box\_NN I\_PRP shall\_MD open\_VB it\_PRP and\_CC destroy\_VB the\_DT monster\_NN ,\_, though\_IN there\_EX were\_VBD a\_DT thousand\_CD men\_NNS looking\_VBG on\_IN ,\_, and\_CC if\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP to\_TO be\_VB wiped\_VBN out\_RP for\_IN it\_PRP the\_DT next\_JJ moment\_NN !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP grasped\_VBD his\_PRP$ hand\_NN instinctively\_RB and\_CC found\_VBD it\_PRP as\_IN firm\_NN as\_IN a\_DT piece\_NN of\_IN steel\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP think\_VBP he\_PRP understood\_VBD my\_PRP$ look\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP hope\_VBP he\_PRP did\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` Good\_JJ boy\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` Brave\_NNP boy\_NN .\_.

Quincey\_NNP is\_VBZ all\_DT man\_NN .\_.

God\_NNP bless\_VBP him\_PRP for\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

My\_PRP$ child\_NN ,\_, believe\_VB me\_PRP none\_NN of\_IN us\_PRP shall\_MD lag\_VB behind\_RB or\_CC pause\_VB from\_IN any\_DT fear\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP but\_CC say\_VBP what\_WP we\_PRP may\_MD do\_VB --\_: what\_WP we\_PRP must\_MD do\_VB .\_.

But\_CC ,\_, indeed\_RB ,\_, indeed\_RB we\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB say\_VB what\_WP we\_PRP shall\_MD do\_VB .\_.

There\_EX are\_VBP so\_RB many\_JJ things\_NNS which\_WDT may\_MD happen\_VB ,\_, and\_CC their\_PRP$ ways\_NNS and\_CC their\_PRP$ ends\_NNS are\_VBP so\_RB various\_JJ that\_IN until\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN we\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB say\_VB .\_.

We\_PRP shall\_MD all\_RB be\_VB armed\_VBN ,\_, in\_IN all\_DT ways\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC when\_WRB the\_DT time\_NN for\_IN the\_DT end\_NN has\_VBZ come\_VBN ,\_, our\_PRP$ effort\_NN shall\_MD not\_RB be\_VB lack\_NN .\_.

Now\_RB let\_VB us\_PRP to-day\_JJ put\_NN all\_DT our\_PRP$ affairs\_NNS in\_IN order\_NN .\_.

Let\_VB all\_DT things\_NNS which\_WDT touch\_VBP on\_IN others\_NNS dear\_RB to\_TO us\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC who\_WP on\_IN us\_PRP depend\_VB ,\_, be\_VB complete\_JJ ;\_: for\_IN none\_NN of\_IN us\_PRP can\_MD tell\_VB what\_WP ,\_, or\_CC when\_WRB ,\_, or\_CC how\_WRB ,\_, the\_DT end\_NN may\_MD be\_VB .\_.

As\_IN for\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, my\_PRP$ own\_JJ affairs\_NNS are\_VBP regulate\_VB ;\_: and\_CC as\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP nothing\_NN else\_RB to\_TO do\_VB ,\_, I\_PRP shall\_MD go\_VB make\_NN arrangements\_NNS for\_IN the\_DT travel\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD have\_VB all\_DT tickets\_NNS and\_CC so\_RB forth\_RB for\_IN our\_PRP$ journey\_NN .\_. ''\_''

There\_EX was\_VBD nothing\_NN further\_JJ to\_TO be\_VB said\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP parted\_VBD .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD now\_RB settle\_VB up\_RP all\_DT my\_PRP$ affairs\_NNS of\_IN earth\_NN ,\_, and\_CC be\_VB ready\_JJ for\_IN whatever\_WDT may\_MD come\_VB ...\_: .\_.

Later\_RB .\_.

--\_: It\_PRP is\_VBZ all\_DT done\_VBN ;\_: my\_PRP$ will\_NN is\_VBZ made\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC all\_DT complete\_JJ .\_.

Mina\_NNP if\_IN she\_PRP survive\_VBP is\_VBZ my\_PRP$ sole\_JJ heir\_NN .\_.

If\_IN it\_PRP should\_MD not\_RB be\_VB so\_RB ,\_, then\_RB the\_DT others\_NNS who\_WP have\_VBP been\_VBN so\_RB good\_JJ to\_TO us\_PRP shall\_MD have\_VB remainder\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ now\_RB drawing\_VBG towards\_IN the\_DT sunset\_NN ;\_: Mina\_NNP 's\_POS uneasiness\_NN calls\_VBZ my\_PRP$ attention\_NN to\_TO it\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP sure\_JJ that\_IN there\_EX is\_VBZ something\_NN on\_IN her\_PRP$ mind\_NN which\_WDT the\_DT time\_NN of\_IN exact\_JJ sunset\_NN will\_MD reveal\_VB .\_.

These\_DT occasions\_NNS are\_VBP becoming\_VBG harrowing\_JJ times\_NNS for\_IN us\_PRP all\_DT ,\_, for\_IN each\_DT sunrise\_NN and\_CC sunset\_NN opens\_VBZ up\_RP some\_DT new\_JJ danger\_NN --\_: some\_DT new\_JJ pain\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, may\_MD in\_IN God\_NNP 's\_POS will\_MD be\_VB means\_NNS to\_TO a\_DT good\_JJ end\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP write\_VBP all\_PDT these\_DT things\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT diary\_NN since\_IN my\_PRP$ darling\_NN must\_MD not\_RB hear\_VB them\_PRP now\_RB ;\_: but\_CC if\_IN it\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB that\_IN she\_PRP can\_MD see\_VB them\_PRP again\_RB ,\_, they\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB ready\_JJ .\_.

She\_PRP is\_VBZ calling\_VBG to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

CHAPTER\_NNP XXV\_NNP DR.\_NNP SEWARD\_NNP 'S\_POS DIARY\_NN 11\_CD October\_NNP ,\_, Evening\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Jonathan\_NNP Harker\_NNP has\_VBZ asked\_VBN me\_PRP to\_TO note\_VB this\_DT ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP says\_VBZ he\_PRP is\_VBZ hardly\_RB equal\_JJ to\_TO the\_DT task\_NN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP wants\_VBZ an\_DT exact\_JJ record\_NN kept\_VBD .\_.

I\_PRP think\_VBP that\_IN none\_NN of\_IN us\_PRP were\_VBD surprised\_VBN when\_WRB we\_PRP were\_VBD asked\_VBN to\_TO see\_VB Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP a\_DT little\_JJ before\_IN the\_DT time\_NN of\_IN sunset\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP of\_IN late\_RB come\_VBN to\_TO understand\_VB that\_DT sunrise\_NN and\_CC sunset\_NN are\_VBP to\_TO her\_PRP$ times\_NNS of\_IN peculiar\_JJ freedom\_NN ;\_: when\_WRB her\_PRP$ old\_JJ self\_NN can\_MD be\_VB manifest\_JJ without\_IN any\_DT controlling\_VBG force\_NN subduing\_VBG or\_CC restraining\_VBG her\_PRP ,\_, or\_CC inciting\_VBG her\_PRP to\_TO action\_NN .\_.

This\_DT mood\_NN or\_CC condition\_NN begins\_VBZ some\_DT half\_JJ hour\_NN or\_CC more\_JJR before\_IN actual\_JJ sunrise\_NN or\_CC sunset\_NN ,\_, and\_CC lasts\_VBZ till\_IN either\_CC the\_DT sun\_NN is\_VBZ high\_JJ ,\_, or\_CC whilst\_IN the\_DT clouds\_NNS are\_VBP still\_RB aglow\_JJ with\_IN the\_DT rays\_NNS streaming\_NN above\_IN the\_DT horizon\_NN .\_.

At\_IN first\_JJ there\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN negative\_JJ condition\_NN ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN some\_DT tie\_NN were\_VBD loosened\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB the\_DT absolute\_JJ freedom\_NN quickly\_RB follows\_VBZ ;\_: when\_WRB ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, the\_DT freedom\_NN ceases\_VBZ the\_DT change-back\_NN or\_CC relapse\_NN comes\_VBZ quickly\_RB ,\_, preceded\_VBD only\_RB by\_IN a\_DT spell\_NN of\_IN warning\_NN silence\_NN .\_.

To-night\_JJ ,\_, when\_WRB we\_PRP met\_VBD ,\_, she\_PRP was\_VBD somewhat\_RB constrained\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC bore\_VBD all\_PDT the\_DT signs\_NNS of\_IN an\_DT internal\_JJ struggle\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP put\_VBP it\_PRP down\_IN myself\_PRP to\_TO her\_PRP$ making\_VBG a\_DT violent\_JJ effort\_NN at\_IN the\_DT earliest\_JJS instant\_NN she\_PRP could\_MD do\_VB so\_RB .\_.

A\_DT very\_RB few\_JJ minutes\_NNS ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, gave\_VBD her\_PRP$ complete\_JJ control\_NN of\_IN herself\_PRP ;\_: then\_RB ,\_, motioning\_VBG her\_PRP$ husband\_NN to\_TO sit\_VB beside\_IN her\_PRP on\_IN the\_DT sofa\_NN where\_WRB she\_PRP was\_VBD half\_JJ reclining\_NN ,\_, she\_PRP made\_VBD the\_DT rest\_NN of\_IN us\_PRP bring\_VBP chairs\_NNS up\_RB close\_RB .\_.

Taking\_VBG her\_PRP$ husband\_NN 's\_POS hand\_NN in\_IN hers\_NNS began\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` We\_PRP are\_VBP all\_RB here\_RB together\_RB in\_IN freedom\_NN ,\_, for\_IN perhaps\_RB the\_DT last\_JJ time\_NN !\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, dear\_RB ;\_: I\_PRP know\_VBP that\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD always\_RB be\_VB with\_IN me\_PRP to\_TO the\_DT end\_NN .\_. ''\_''

This\_DT was\_VBD to\_TO her\_PRP$ husband\_NN whose\_WP$ hand\_NN had\_VBD ,\_, as\_IN we\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB ,\_, tightened\_VBN upon\_IN hers\_NNS .\_.

``\_`` In\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN we\_PRP go\_VBP out\_RB upon\_IN our\_PRP$ task\_NN ,\_, and\_CC God\_NNP alone\_RB knows\_VBZ what\_WP may\_MD be\_VB in\_IN store\_NN for\_IN any\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

You\_PRP are\_VBP going\_VBG to\_TO be\_VB so\_RB good\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP as\_IN to\_TO take\_VB me\_PRP with\_IN you\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP that\_IN all\_DT that\_WDT brave\_VBP earnest\_JJ men\_NNS can\_MD do\_VB for\_IN a\_DT poor\_JJ weak\_JJ woman\_NN ,\_, whose\_WP$ soul\_NN perhaps\_RB is\_VBZ lost\_VBN --\_: no\_RB ,\_, no\_DT ,\_, not\_RB yet\_RB ,\_, but\_CC is\_VBZ at\_IN any\_DT rate\_NN at\_IN stake\_NN --\_: you\_PRP will\_MD do\_VB .\_.

But\_CC you\_PRP must\_MD remember\_VB that\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB as\_IN you\_PRP are\_VBP .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT poison\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ blood\_NN ,\_, in\_IN my\_PRP$ soul\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT may\_MD destroy\_VB me\_PRP ;\_: which\_WDT must\_MD destroy\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, unless\_IN some\_DT relief\_NN comes\_VBZ to\_TO us\_PRP .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, my\_PRP$ friends\_NNS ,\_, you\_PRP know\_VBP as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP do\_VBP ,\_, that\_IN my\_PRP$ soul\_NN is\_VBZ at\_IN stake\_NN ;\_: and\_CC though\_IN I\_PRP know\_VBP there\_EX is\_VBZ one\_CD way\_NN out\_RP for\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, you\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB and\_CC I\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB take\_VB it\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

She\_PRP looked\_VBD appealingly\_RB to\_TO us\_PRP all\_DT in\_IN turn\_NN ,\_, beginning\_VBG and\_CC ending\_VBG with\_IN her\_PRP$ husband\_NN .\_.

``\_`` What\_WP is\_VBZ that\_DT way\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

asked\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP in\_IN a\_DT hoarse\_JJ voice\_NN .\_.

``\_`` What\_WP is\_VBZ that\_DT way\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT we\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB --\_: may\_MD not\_RB --\_: take\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` That\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD die\_VB now\_RB ,\_, either\_CC by\_IN my\_PRP$ own\_JJ hand\_NN or\_CC that\_DT of\_IN another\_DT ,\_, before\_IN the\_DT greater\_JJR evil\_NN is\_VBZ entirely\_RB wrought\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, that\_WDT were\_VBD I\_PRP once\_RB dead\_VBD you\_PRP could\_MD and\_CC would\_MD set\_VB free\_JJ my\_PRP$ immortal\_JJ spirit\_NN ,\_, even\_RB as\_IN you\_PRP did\_VBD my\_PRP$ poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS .\_.

Were\_VBD death\_NN ,\_, or\_CC the\_DT fear\_NN of\_IN death\_NN ,\_, the\_DT only\_JJ thing\_NN that\_WDT stood\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT way\_NN I\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB shrink\_VB to\_TO die\_VB here\_RB ,\_, now\_RB ,\_, amidst\_IN the\_DT friends\_NNS who\_WP love\_VBP me\_PRP .\_.

But\_CC death\_NN is\_VBZ not\_RB all\_DT .\_.

I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB believe\_VB that\_DT to\_TO die\_VB in\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT case\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB there\_EX is\_VBZ hope\_NN before\_IN us\_PRP and\_CC a\_DT bitter\_JJ task\_NN to\_TO be\_VB done\_VBN ,\_, is\_VBZ God\_NNP 's\_POS will\_NN .\_.

Therefore\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP ,\_, on\_IN my\_PRP$ part\_NN ,\_, give\_VB up\_RP here\_RB the\_DT certainty\_NN of\_IN eternal\_JJ rest\_NN ,\_, and\_CC go\_VB out\_RP into\_IN the\_DT dark\_NN where\_WRB may\_MD be\_VB the\_DT blackest\_JJS things\_NNS that\_IN the\_DT world\_NN or\_CC the\_DT nether\_JJ world\_NN holds\_VBZ !\_. ''\_''

We\_PRP were\_VBD all\_DT silent\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN we\_PRP knew\_VBD instinctively\_RB that\_IN this\_DT was\_VBD only\_RB a\_DT prelude\_NN .\_.

The\_DT faces\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT others\_NNS were\_VBD set\_VBN and\_CC Harker\_NNP 's\_POS grew\_VBD ashen\_JJ grey\_JJ ;\_: perhaps\_RB he\_PRP guessed\_VBD better\_RBR than\_IN any\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP what\_WP was\_VBD coming\_VBG .\_.

She\_PRP continued\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` This\_DT is\_VBZ what\_WP I\_PRP can\_MD give\_VB into\_IN the\_DT hotch-pot\_NN .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB but\_CC note\_VB the\_DT quaint\_JJ legal\_JJ phrase\_NN which\_WDT she\_PRP used\_VBD in\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT place\_NN ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN all\_DT seriousness\_NN .\_.

``\_`` What\_WP will\_MD each\_DT of\_IN you\_PRP give\_VB ?\_.

Your\_PRP$ lives\_NNS I\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, ''\_'' she\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN quickly\_RB ,\_, ``\_`` that\_DT is\_VBZ easy\_JJ for\_IN brave\_VB men\_NNS .\_.

Your\_PRP$ lives\_NNS are\_VBP God\_NNP 's\_POS ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP can\_MD give\_VB them\_PRP back\_RB to\_TO Him\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC what\_WP will\_MD you\_PRP give\_VB to\_TO me\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

She\_PRP looked\_VBD again\_RB questioningly\_RB ,\_, but\_CC this\_DT time\_NN avoided\_VBD her\_PRP$ husband\_NN 's\_POS face\_NN .\_.

Quincey\_NNP seemed\_VBD to\_TO understand\_VB ;\_: he\_PRP nodded\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC her\_PRP face\_VBP lit\_VBN up\_RP .\_.

``\_`` Then\_RB I\_PRP shall\_MD tell\_VB you\_PRP plainly\_RB what\_WP I\_PRP want\_VBP ,\_, for\_IN there\_EX must\_MD be\_VB no\_DT doubtful\_JJ matter\_NN in\_IN this\_DT connection\_NN between\_IN us\_PRP now\_RB .\_.

You\_PRP must\_MD promise\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, one\_CD and\_CC all\_DT --\_: even\_RB you\_PRP ,\_, my\_PRP$ beloved\_JJ husband\_NN --\_: that\_IN ,\_, should\_MD the\_DT time\_NN come\_VBN ,\_, you\_PRP will\_MD kill\_VB me\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` What\_WP is\_VBZ that\_DT time\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

The\_DT voice\_NN was\_VBD Quincey\_NNP 's\_POS ,\_, but\_CC it\_PRP was\_VBD low\_JJ and\_CC strained\_JJ .\_.

``\_`` When\_WRB you\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB convinced\_VBN that\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP so\_RB changed\_JJ that\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ better\_JJR that\_IN I\_PRP die\_VBP that\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD live\_VB .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP am\_VBP thus\_RB dead\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT flesh\_NN ,\_, then\_RB you\_PRP will\_MD ,\_, without\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN 's\_POS delay\_NN ,\_, drive\_VBP a\_DT stake\_NN through\_IN me\_PRP and\_CC cut\_VB off\_RP my\_PRP$ head\_NN ;\_: or\_CC do\_VB whatever\_WDT else\_RB may\_MD be\_VB wanting\_VBG to\_TO give\_VB me\_PRP rest\_VB !\_. ''\_''

Quincey\_NNP was\_VBD the\_DT first\_JJ to\_TO rise\_VB after\_IN the\_DT pause\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP knelt\_VBD down\_RP before\_IN her\_PRP and\_CC taking\_VBG her\_PRP$ hand\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ said\_VBD solemnly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP 'm\_VBP only\_RB a\_DT rough\_JJ fellow\_NN ,\_, who\_WP has\_VBZ n't\_RB ,\_, perhaps\_RB ,\_, lived\_VBD as\_IN a\_DT man\_NN should\_MD to\_TO win\_VB such\_PDT a\_DT distinction\_NN ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP swear\_VBP to\_TO you\_PRP by\_IN all\_DT that\_IN I\_PRP hold\_VBP sacred\_JJ and\_CC dear\_RB that\_IN ,\_, should\_MD the\_DT time\_NN ever\_RB come\_VBN ,\_, I\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB flinch\_VB from\_IN the\_DT duty\_NN that\_IN you\_PRP have\_VBP set\_VBN us\_PRP .\_.

And\_CC I\_PRP promise\_VBP you\_PRP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP shall\_MD make\_VB all\_DT certain\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN if\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP only\_RB doubtful\_JJ I\_PRP shall\_MD take\_VB it\_PRP that\_IN the\_DT time\_NN has\_VBZ come\_VBN !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` My\_PRP$ true\_JJ friend\_NN !\_. ''\_''

was\_VBD all\_DT she\_PRP could\_MD say\_VB amid\_IN her\_PRP$ fast-falling\_JJ tears\_NNS ,\_, as\_IN ,\_, bending\_VBG over\_IN ,\_, she\_PRP kissed\_VBD his\_PRP$ hand\_NN .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP swear\_VBP the\_DT same\_JJ ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP !\_. ''\_''

said\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` And\_CC I\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

said\_VBD Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP ,\_, each\_DT of\_IN them\_PRP in\_IN turn\_NN kneeling\_VBG to\_TO her\_PRP to\_TO take\_VB the\_DT oath\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP followed\_VBD ,\_, myself\_PRP .\_.

Then\_RB her\_PRP$ husband\_NN turned\_VBD to\_TO her\_PRP$ wan-eyed\_JJ and\_CC with\_IN a\_DT greenish\_JJ pallor\_NN which\_WDT subdued\_VBD the\_DT snowy\_JJ whiteness\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ hair\_NN ,\_, and\_CC asked\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` And\_CC must\_MD I\_PRP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, make\_VB such\_PDT a\_DT promise\_NN ,\_, oh\_UH ,\_, my\_PRP$ wife\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` You\_PRP too\_RB ,\_, my\_PRP$ dearest\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' she\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, with\_IN infinite\_JJ yearning\_NN of\_IN pity\_NN in\_IN her\_PRP$ voice\_NN and\_CC eyes\_NNS .\_.

``\_`` You\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB shrink\_VB .\_.

You\_PRP are\_VBP nearest\_JJS and\_CC dearest\_JJS and\_CC all\_PDT the\_DT world\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP ;\_: our\_PRP$ souls\_NNS are\_VBP knit\_VBN into\_IN one\_CD ,\_, for\_IN all\_DT life\_NN and\_CC all\_DT time\_NN .\_.

Think\_VB ,\_, dear\_RB ,\_, that\_IN there\_EX have\_VBP been\_VBN times\_NNS when\_WRB brave\_VBP men\_NNS have\_VBP killed\_VBN their\_PRP$ wives\_NNS and\_CC their\_PRP$ womenkind\_NN ,\_, to\_TO keep\_VB them\_PRP from\_IN falling\_VBG into\_IN the\_DT hands\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT enemy\_NN .\_.

Their\_PRP$ hands\_NNS did\_VBD not\_RB falter\_VB any\_DT the\_DT more\_RBR because\_IN those\_DT that\_IN they\_PRP loved\_VBD implored\_VBD them\_PRP to\_TO slay\_VB them\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ men\_NNS 's\_POS duty\_NN towards\_IN those\_DT whom\_WP they\_PRP love\_VBP ,\_, in\_IN such\_JJ times\_NNS of\_IN sore\_JJ trial\_NN !\_.

And\_CC oh\_UH ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, if\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB that\_IN I\_PRP must\_MD meet\_VB death\_NN at\_IN any\_DT hand\_NN ,\_, let\_VB it\_PRP be\_VB at\_IN the\_DT hand\_NN of\_IN him\_PRP that\_WDT loves\_VBZ me\_PRP best\_JJS .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB forgotten\_VBN your\_PRP$ mercy\_NN in\_IN poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP 's\_POS case\_NN to\_TO him\_PRP who\_WP loved\_VBD ''\_'' --\_: she\_PRP stopped\_VBD with\_IN a\_DT flying\_NN blush\_VB ,\_, and\_CC changed\_VBD her\_PRP$ phrase\_NN --\_: ``\_`` to\_TO him\_PRP who\_WP had\_VBD best\_JJS right\_NN to\_TO give\_VB her\_PRP$ peace\_NN .\_.

If\_IN that\_DT time\_NN shall\_MD come\_VB again\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP look\_VBP to\_TO you\_PRP to\_TO make\_VB it\_PRP a\_DT happy\_JJ memory\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ husband\_NN 's\_POS life\_NN that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD his\_PRP$ loving\_JJ hand\_NN which\_WDT set\_VBD me\_PRP free\_JJ from\_IN the\_DT awful\_JJ thrall\_NN upon\_IN me\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Again\_RB I\_PRP swear\_VBP !\_. ''\_''

came\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP 's\_POS resonant\_JJ voice\_NN .\_.

Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP smiled\_VBD ,\_, positively\_RB smiled\_VBD ,\_, as\_IN with\_IN a\_DT sigh\_NN of\_IN relief\_NN she\_PRP leaned\_VBD back\_RB and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` And\_CC now\_RB one\_CD word\_NN of\_IN warning\_NN ,\_, a\_DT warning\_NN which\_WDT you\_PRP must\_MD never\_RB forget\_VB :\_: this\_DT time\_NN ,\_, if\_IN it\_PRP ever\_RB come\_VBP ,\_, may\_MD come\_VB quickly\_RB and\_CC unexpectedly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN such\_JJ case\_NN you\_PRP must\_MD lose\_VB no\_DT time\_NN in\_IN using\_VBG your\_PRP$ opportunity\_NN .\_.

At\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT time\_NN I\_CD myself\_PRP might\_MD be\_VB --\_: nay\_NN !\_.

if\_IN the\_DT time\_NN ever\_RB comes\_VBZ ,\_, shall\_MD be\_VB --\_: leagued\_VBN with\_IN your\_PRP$ enemy\_NN against\_IN you\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` One\_CD more\_JJR request\_NN ;\_: ''\_'' she\_PRP became\_VBD very\_RB solemn\_JJ as\_IN she\_PRP said\_VBD this\_DT ,\_, ``\_`` it\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB vital\_JJ and\_CC necessary\_JJ like\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP want\_VBP you\_PRP to\_TO do\_VB one\_CD thing\_NN for\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, if\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD .\_. ''\_''

We\_PRP all\_DT acquiesced\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC no\_DT one\_NN spoke\_VBD ;\_: there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT need\_NN to\_TO speak\_VB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP want\_VBP you\_PRP to\_TO read\_VB the\_DT Burial\_NNP Service\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

She\_PRP was\_VBD interrupted\_VBN by\_IN a\_DT deep\_JJ groan\_NN from\_IN her\_PRP$ husband\_NN ;\_: taking\_VBG his\_PRP$ hand\_NN in\_IN hers\_NNS ,\_, she\_PRP held\_VBD it\_PRP over\_IN her\_PRP$ heart\_NN ,\_, and\_CC continued\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP must\_MD read\_VB it\_PRP over\_IN me\_PRP some\_DT day\_NN .\_.

Whatever\_WDT may\_MD be\_VB the\_DT issue\_NN of\_IN all\_PDT this\_DT fearful\_JJ state\_NN of\_IN things\_NNS ,\_, it\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB a\_DT sweet\_JJ thought\_NN to\_TO all\_DT or\_CC some\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

You\_PRP ,\_, my\_PRP$ dearest\_NN ,\_, will\_MD I\_PRP hope\_VB read\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN then\_RB it\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB in\_IN your\_PRP$ voice\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ memory\_NN for\_IN ever\_RB --\_: come\_VBP what\_WP may\_MD !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` But\_CC oh\_UH ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB one\_CD ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP pleaded\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` death\_NN is\_VBZ afar\_VBN off\_RP from\_IN you\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Nay\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' she\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, holding\_VBG up\_RP a\_DT warning\_NN hand\_NN .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP am\_VBP deeper\_JJR in\_IN death\_NN at\_IN this\_DT moment\_NN than\_IN if\_IN the\_DT weight\_NN of\_IN an\_DT earthly\_JJ grave\_NN lay\_VBD heavy\_JJ upon\_IN me\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, my\_PRP$ wife\_NN ,\_, must\_MD I\_PRP read\_VB it\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, before\_IN he\_PRP began\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` It\_PRP would\_MD comfort\_VB me\_PRP ,\_, my\_PRP$ husband\_NN !\_. ''\_''

was\_VBD all\_DT she\_PRP said\_VBD ;\_: and\_CC he\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO read\_VB when\_WRB she\_PRP had\_VBD got\_VBN the\_DT book\_NN ready\_JJ .\_.

``\_`` How\_WRB can\_MD I\_PRP --\_: how\_WRB could\_MD any\_DT one\_CD --\_: tell\_VB of\_IN that\_DT strange\_JJ scene\_NN ,\_, its\_PRP$ solemnity\_NN ,\_, its\_PRP$ gloom\_NN ,\_, its\_PRP$ sadness\_NN ,\_, its\_PRP$ horror\_NN ;\_: and\_CC ,\_, withal\_JJ ,\_, its\_PRP$ sweetness\_NN .\_.

Even\_RB a\_DT sceptic\_NN ,\_, who\_WP can\_MD see\_VB nothing\_NN but\_CC a\_DT travesty\_NN of\_IN bitter\_JJ truth\_NN in\_IN anything\_NN holy\_JJ or\_CC emotional\_JJ ,\_, would\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN melted\_VBN to\_TO the\_DT heart\_NN had\_VBD he\_PRP seen\_VBN that\_IN little\_JJ group\_NN of\_IN loving\_JJ and\_CC devoted\_JJ friends\_NNS kneeling\_VBG round\_NN that\_IN stricken\_JJ and\_CC sorrowing\_JJ lady\_NN ;\_: or\_CC heard\_VBD the\_DT tender\_NN passion\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ husband\_NN 's\_POS voice\_NN ,\_, as\_IN in\_IN tones\_NNS so\_RB broken\_JJ with\_IN emotion\_NN that\_WDT often\_RB he\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO pause\_VB ,\_, he\_PRP read\_VBD the\_DT simple\_JJ and\_CC beautiful\_JJ service\_NN from\_IN the\_DT Burial\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Dead\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP --\_: I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB go\_VB on\_IN --\_: words\_NNS --\_: and\_CC --\_: v-voice\_NN --\_: f-fail\_NN m-me\_NN !\_. ''\_''

She\_PRP was\_VBD right\_JJ in\_IN her\_PRP$ instinct\_NN .\_.

Strange\_JJ as\_IN it\_PRP all\_DT was\_VBD ,\_, bizarre\_JJ as\_IN it\_PRP may\_MD hereafter\_RB seem\_VB even\_RB to\_TO us\_PRP who\_WP felt\_VBD its\_PRP$ potent\_JJ influence\_NN at\_IN the\_DT time\_NN ,\_, it\_PRP comforted\_VBD us\_PRP much\_RB ;\_: and\_CC the\_DT silence\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT showed\_VBD Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS coming\_VBG relapse\_NN from\_IN her\_PRP$ freedom\_NN of\_IN soul\_NN ,\_, did\_VBD not\_RB seem\_VB so\_RB full\_JJ of\_IN despair\_NN to\_TO any\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP as\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD dreaded\_VBN .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP .\_.

15\_CD October\_NNP ,\_, Varna\_NNP .\_.

--\_: We\_PRP left\_VBD Charing\_NNP Cross\_NNP on\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN of\_IN the\_DT 12th\_JJ ,\_, got\_VBD to\_TO Paris\_NNP the\_DT same\_JJ night\_NN ,\_, and\_CC took\_VBD the\_DT places\_NNS secured\_VBN for\_IN us\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT Orient\_NNP Express\_NNP .\_.

We\_PRP travelled\_VBD night\_NN and\_CC day\_NN ,\_, arriving\_VBG here\_RB at\_IN about\_RB five\_CD o'clock\_RB .\_.

Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP went\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT Consulate\_NNP to\_TO see\_VB if\_IN any\_DT telegram\_NN had\_VBD arrived\_VBN for\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, whilst\_IN the\_DT rest\_NN of\_IN us\_PRP came\_VBD on\_RP to\_TO this\_DT hotel\_NN --\_: ``\_`` the\_DT Odessus\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT journey\_NN may\_MD have\_VB had\_VBN incidents\_NNS ;\_: I\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, too\_RB eager\_JJ to\_TO get\_VB on\_IN ,\_, to\_TO care\_VB for\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

Until\_IN the\_DT Czarina\_NNP Catherine\_NNP comes\_VBZ into\_IN port\_NN there\_EX will\_MD be\_VB no\_DT interest\_NN for\_IN me\_PRP in\_IN anything\_NN in\_IN the\_DT wide\_JJ world\_NN .\_.

Thank\_VB God\_NNP !\_.

Mina\_NNP is\_VBZ well\_RB ,\_, and\_CC looks\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB getting\_VBG stronger\_JJR ;\_: her\_PRP$ colour\_NN is\_VBZ coming\_VBG back\_RB .\_.

She\_PRP sleeps\_VBZ a\_DT great\_JJ deal\_NN ;\_: throughout\_IN the\_DT journey\_NN she\_PRP slept\_VBD nearly\_RB all\_PDT the\_DT time\_NN .\_.

Before\_IN sunrise\_NN and\_CC sunset\_NN ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, she\_PRP is\_VBZ very\_RB wakeful\_JJ and\_CC alert\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC it\_PRP has\_VBZ become\_VBN a\_DT habit\_NN for\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP to\_TO hypnotise\_VB her\_PRP at\_IN such\_JJ times\_NNS .\_.

At\_IN first\_JJ ,\_, some\_DT effort\_NN was\_VBD needed\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO make\_VB many\_JJ passes\_NNS ;\_: but\_CC now\_RB ,\_, she\_PRP seems\_VBZ to\_TO yield\_VB at\_IN once\_RB ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN by\_IN habit\_NN ,\_, and\_CC scarcely\_RB any\_DT action\_NN is\_VBZ needed\_VBN .\_.

He\_PRP seems\_VBZ to\_TO have\_VB power\_NN at\_IN these\_DT particular\_JJ moments\_NNS to\_TO simply\_RB will\_VB ,\_, and\_CC her\_PRP$ thoughts\_NNS obey\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP always\_RB asks\_VBZ her\_PRP what\_WP she\_PRP can\_MD see\_VB and\_CC hear\_VB .\_.

She\_PRP answers\_VBZ to\_TO the\_DT first\_JJ :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Nothing\_NN ;\_: all\_DT is\_VBZ dark\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

And\_CC to\_TO the\_DT second\_JJ :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP can\_MD hear\_VB the\_DT waves\_NNS lapping\_VBG against\_IN the\_DT ship\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT water\_NN rushing\_VBG by\_IN .\_.

Canvas\_NN and\_CC cordage\_NN strain\_NN and\_CC masts\_NNS and\_CC yards\_NNS creak\_VBP .\_.

The\_DT wind\_NN is\_VBZ high\_JJ --\_: I\_PRP can\_MD hear\_VB it\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT shrouds\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT bow\_NN throws\_VBZ back\_RB the\_DT foam\_NN .\_. ''\_''

It\_PRP is\_VBZ evident\_JJ that\_IN the\_DT Czarina\_NNP Catherine\_NNP is\_VBZ still\_RB at\_IN sea\_NN ,\_, hastening\_VBG on\_IN her\_PRP$ way\_NN to\_TO Varna\_NNP .\_.

Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP has\_VBZ just\_RB returned\_VBN .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD four\_CD telegrams\_NNS ,\_, one\_CD each\_DT day\_NN since\_IN we\_PRP started\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC all\_DT to\_TO the\_DT same\_JJ effect\_NN :\_: that\_IN the\_DT Czarina\_NNP Catherine\_NNP had\_VBD not\_RB been\_VBN reported\_VBN to\_TO Lloyd\_NNP 's\_POS from\_IN anywhere\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD arranged\_VBN before\_IN leaving\_VBG London\_NNP that\_IN his\_PRP$ agent\_NN should\_MD send\_VB him\_PRP every\_DT day\_NN a\_DT telegram\_NN saying\_VBG if\_IN the\_DT ship\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN reported\_VBN .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD to\_TO have\_VB a\_DT message\_NN even\_RB if\_IN she\_PRP were\_VBD not\_RB reported\_VBN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN he\_PRP might\_MD be\_VB sure\_JJ that\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT watch\_NN being\_VBG kept\_VBN at\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ end\_NN of\_IN the\_DT wire\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP had\_VBD dinner\_NN and\_CC went\_VBD to\_TO bed\_NN early\_RB .\_.

To-morrow\_NN we\_PRP are\_VBP to\_TO see\_VB the\_DT Vice-Consul\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO arrange\_VB ,\_, if\_IN we\_PRP can\_MD ,\_, about\_IN getting\_VBG on\_IN board\_NN the\_DT ship\_NN as\_RB soon\_RB as\_IN she\_PRP arrives\_VBZ .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP says\_VBZ that\_IN our\_PRP$ chance\_NN will\_MD be\_VB to\_TO get\_VB on\_IN the\_DT boat\_NN between\_IN sunrise\_NN and\_CC sunset\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Count\_NNP ,\_, even\_RB if\_IN he\_PRP takes\_VBZ the\_DT form\_NN of\_IN a\_DT bat\_NN ,\_, can\_MD not\_RB cross\_VB the\_DT running\_VBG water\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ volition\_NN ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB can\_MD not\_RB leave\_VB the\_DT ship\_NN .\_.

As\_IN he\_PRP dare\_MD not\_RB change\_VB to\_TO man\_NN 's\_POS form\_NN without\_IN suspicion\_NN --\_: which\_WDT he\_PRP evidently\_RB wishes\_VBZ to\_TO avoid\_VB --\_: he\_PRP must\_MD remain\_VB in\_IN the\_DT box\_NN .\_.

If\_IN ,\_, then\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP can\_MD come\_VB on\_IN board\_NN after\_IN sunrise\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP is\_VBZ at\_IN our\_PRP$ mercy\_NN ;\_: for\_IN we\_PRP can\_MD open\_VB the\_DT box\_NN and\_CC make\_VB sure\_JJ of\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN we\_PRP did\_VBD of\_IN poor\_JJ Lucy\_NNP ,\_, before\_IN he\_PRP wakes\_VBZ .\_.

What\_WDT mercy\_NN he\_PRP shall\_MD get\_VB from\_IN us\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB count\_VB for\_IN much\_JJ .\_.

We\_PRP think\_VBP that\_IN we\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB have\_VB much\_JJ trouble\_NN with\_IN officials\_NNS or\_CC the\_DT seamen\_NNS .\_.

Thank\_VB God\_NNP !\_.

this\_DT is\_VBZ the\_DT country\_NN where\_WRB bribery\_NN can\_MD do\_VB anything\_NN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP are\_VBP well\_RB supplied\_VBN with\_IN money\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP only\_RB to\_TO make\_VB sure\_JJ that\_IN the\_DT ship\_NN can\_MD not\_RB come\_VB into\_IN port\_NN between\_IN sunset\_NN and\_CC sunrise\_NN without\_IN our\_PRP$ being\_VBG warned\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB safe\_JJ .\_.

Judge\_NNP Moneybag\_NNP will\_MD settle\_VB this\_DT case\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP think\_VBP !\_.

16\_CD October\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Mina\_NNP 's\_POS report\_NN still\_RB the\_DT same\_JJ :\_: lapping\_VBG waves\_NNS and\_CC rushing\_VBG water\_NN ,\_, darkness\_NN and\_CC favouring\_VBG winds\_NNS .\_.

We\_PRP are\_VBP evidently\_RB in\_IN good\_JJ time\_NN ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB we\_PRP hear\_VBP of\_IN the\_DT Czarina\_NNP Catherine\_NNP we\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB ready\_JJ .\_.

As\_IN she\_PRP must\_MD pass\_VB the\_DT Dardanelles\_NNPS we\_PRP are\_VBP sure\_JJ to\_TO have\_VB some\_DT report\_NN .\_.

...\_: 17\_CD October\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Everything\_NN is\_VBZ pretty\_RB well\_RB fixed\_VBN now\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP think\_VBP ,\_, to\_TO welcome\_VB the\_DT Count\_NN on\_IN his\_PRP$ return\_NN from\_IN his\_PRP$ tour\_NN .\_.

Godalming\_NNP told\_VBD the\_DT shippers\_NNS that\_IN he\_PRP fancied\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT box\_NN sent\_VBN aboard\_RB might\_MD contain\_VB something\_NN stolen\_VBN from\_IN a\_DT friend\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ ,\_, and\_CC got\_VBD a\_DT half\_JJ consent\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP might\_MD open\_VB it\_PRP at\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ risk\_NN .\_.

The\_DT owner\_NN gave\_VBD him\_PRP a\_DT paper\_NN telling\_VBG the\_DT Captain\_NNP to\_TO give\_VB him\_PRP every\_DT facility\_NN in\_IN doing\_VBG whatever\_WDT he\_PRP chose\_VBD on\_IN board\_NN the\_DT ship\_NN ,\_, and\_CC also\_RB a\_DT similar\_JJ authorisation\_NN to\_TO his\_PRP$ agent\_NN at\_IN Varna\_NNP .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP seen\_VBN the\_DT agent\_NN ,\_, who\_WP was\_VBD much\_RB impressed\_VBN with\_IN Godalming\_NNP 's\_POS kindly\_RB manner\_NN to\_TO him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP are\_VBP all\_DT satisfied\_VBD that\_IN whatever\_WDT he\_PRP can\_MD do\_VB to\_TO aid\_VB our\_PRP$ wishes\_NNS will\_MD be\_VB done\_VBN .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP already\_RB arranged\_VBN what\_WP to\_TO do\_VB in\_IN case\_NN we\_PRP get\_VBP the\_DT box\_NN open\_JJ .\_.

If\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP is\_VBZ there\_RB ,\_, Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP and\_CC Seward\_NNP will\_MD cut\_VB off\_RP his\_PRP$ head\_NN at\_IN once\_RB and\_CC drive\_VB a\_DT stake\_NN through\_IN his\_PRP$ heart\_NN .\_.

Morris\_NNP and\_CC Godalming\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD prevent\_VB interference\_NN ,\_, even\_RB if\_IN we\_PRP have\_VBP to\_TO use\_VB the\_DT arms\_NNS which\_WDT we\_PRP shall\_MD have\_VB ready\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP says\_VBZ that\_IN if\_IN we\_PRP can\_MD so\_RB treat\_VB the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS body\_NN ,\_, it\_PRP will\_MD soon\_RB after\_IN fall\_NN into\_IN dust\_NN .\_.

In\_IN such\_JJ case\_NN there\_EX would\_MD be\_VB no\_DT evidence\_NN against\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, in\_IN case\_NN any\_DT suspicion\_NN of\_IN murder\_NN were\_VBD aroused\_VBN .\_.

But\_CC even\_RB if\_IN it\_PRP were\_VBD not\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP should\_MD stand\_VB or\_CC fall\_VB by\_IN our\_PRP$ act\_NN ,\_, and\_CC perhaps\_RB some\_DT day\_NN this\_DT very\_JJ script\_NN may\_MD be\_VB evidence\_NN to\_TO come\_VB between\_IN some\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP and\_CC a\_DT rope\_NN .\_.

For\_IN myself\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP should\_MD take\_VB the\_DT chance\_NN only\_RB too\_RB thankfully\_RB if\_IN it\_PRP were\_VBD to\_TO come\_VB .\_.

We\_PRP mean\_VBP to\_TO leave\_VB no\_DT stone\_NN unturned\_VBD to\_TO carry\_VB out\_RP our\_PRP$ intent\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP arranged\_VBN with\_IN certain\_JJ officials\_NNS that\_IN the\_DT instant\_NN the\_DT Czarina\_NNP Catherine\_NNP is\_VBZ seen\_VBN ,\_, we\_PRP are\_VBP to\_TO be\_VB informed\_VBN by\_IN a\_DT special\_JJ messenger\_NN .\_.

24\_CD October\_NNP .\_.

--\_: A\_DT whole\_JJ week\_NN of\_IN waiting\_VBG .\_.

Daily\_JJ telegrams\_NNS to\_TO Godalming\_NNP ,\_, but\_CC only\_RB the\_DT same\_JJ story\_NN :\_: ``\_`` Not\_RB yet\_RB reported\_VBN .\_. ''\_''

Mina\_NNP 's\_POS morning\_NN and\_CC evening\_NN hypnotic\_JJ answer\_NN is\_VBZ unvaried\_JJ :\_: lapping\_VBG waves\_NNS ,\_, rushing\_VBG water\_NN ,\_, and\_CC creaking\_VBG masts\_NNS .\_.

Telegram\_NN ,\_, October\_NNP 24th\_JJ .\_.

Rufus\_NNP Smith\_NNP ,\_, Lloyd\_NNP 's\_POS ,\_, London\_NNP ,\_, to\_TO Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP ,\_, care\_NN of\_IN H.\_NNP B.\_NNP M.\_NNP Vice-Consul\_NNP ,\_, Varna\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` Czarina\_NNP Catherine\_NNP reported\_VBD this\_DT morning\_NN from\_IN Dardanelles\_NNPS .\_. ''\_''

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

25\_CD October\_NNP .\_.

--\_: How\_WRB I\_PRP miss\_VBP my\_PRP$ phonograph\_NN !\_.

To\_TO write\_VB diary\_NN with\_IN a\_DT pen\_NN is\_VBZ irksome\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP says\_VBZ I\_PRP must\_MD .\_.

We\_PRP were\_VBD all\_DT wild\_JJ with\_IN excitement\_NN yesterday\_NN when\_WRB Godalming\_NNP got\_VBD his\_PRP$ telegram\_NN from\_IN Lloyd\_NNP 's\_POS .\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP now\_RB what\_WP men\_NNS feel\_VBP in\_IN battle\_NN when\_WRB the\_DT call\_NN to\_TO action\_NN is\_VBZ heard\_VBN .\_.

Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP ,\_, alone\_RB of\_IN our\_PRP$ party\_NN ,\_, did\_VBD not\_RB show\_VB any\_DT signs\_NNS of\_IN emotion\_NN .\_.

After\_IN all\_DT ,\_, it\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB strange\_JJ that\_IN she\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB ;\_: for\_IN we\_PRP took\_VBD special\_JJ care\_NN not\_RB to\_TO let\_VB her\_PRP know\_VB anything\_NN about\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP all\_DT tried\_VBD not\_RB to\_TO show\_VB any\_DT excitement\_NN when\_WRB we\_PRP were\_VBD in\_IN her\_PRP$ presence\_NN .\_.

In\_IN old\_JJ days\_NNS she\_PRP would\_MD ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP sure\_JJ ,\_, have\_VBP noticed\_VBN ,\_, no\_DT matter\_NN how\_WRB we\_PRP might\_MD have\_VB tried\_VBN to\_TO conceal\_VB it\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC in\_IN this\_DT way\_NN she\_PRP is\_VBZ greatly\_RB changed\_VBN during\_IN the\_DT past\_JJ three\_CD weeks\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT lethargy\_NN grows\_VBZ upon\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC though\_IN she\_PRP seems\_VBZ strong\_JJ and\_CC well\_RB ,\_, and\_CC is\_VBZ getting\_VBG back\_RP some\_DT of\_IN her\_PRP$ colour\_NN ,\_, Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP are\_VBP not\_RB satisfied\_VBN .\_.

We\_PRP talk\_VBP of\_IN her\_PRP often\_RB ;\_: we\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, said\_VBD a\_DT word\_NN to\_TO the\_DT others\_NNS .\_.

It\_PRP would\_MD break\_VB poor\_JJ Harker\_NNP 's\_POS heart\_NN --\_: certainly\_RB his\_PRP$ nerve\_NN --\_: if\_IN he\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD even\_RB a\_DT suspicion\_NN on\_IN the\_DT subject\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP examines\_VBZ ,\_, he\_PRP tells\_VBZ me\_PRP ,\_, her\_PRP$ teeth\_NNS very\_RB carefully\_RB ,\_, whilst\_IN she\_PRP is\_VBZ in\_IN the\_DT hypnotic\_JJ condition\_NN ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP says\_VBZ that\_IN so\_RB long\_RB as\_IN they\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB begin\_VB to\_TO sharpen\_VB there\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT active\_JJ danger\_NN of\_IN a\_DT change\_NN in\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

If\_IN this\_DT change\_NN should\_MD come\_VB ,\_, it\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB necessary\_JJ to\_TO take\_VB steps\_NNS !\_.

...\_: We\_PRP both\_DT know\_VBP what\_WP those\_DT steps\_NNS would\_MD have\_VB to\_TO be\_VB ,\_, though\_IN we\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB mention\_VB our\_PRP$ thoughts\_NNS to\_TO each\_DT other\_JJ .\_.

We\_PRP should\_MD neither\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP shrink\_VB from\_IN the\_DT task\_NN --\_: awful\_JJ though\_IN it\_PRP be\_VB to\_TO contemplate\_VB .\_.

``\_`` Euthanasia\_NNP ''\_'' is\_VBZ an\_DT excellent\_JJ and\_CC a\_DT comforting\_JJ word\_NN !\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP grateful\_JJ to\_TO whoever\_WP invented\_VBD it\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ only\_RB about\_RB 24\_CD hours\_NNS '\_POS sail\_NN from\_IN the\_DT Dardanelles\_NNPS to\_TO here\_RB ,\_, at\_IN the\_DT rate\_NN the\_DT Czarina\_NNP Catherine\_NNP has\_VBZ come\_VBN from\_IN London\_NNP .\_.

She\_PRP should\_MD therefore\_RB arrive\_VB some\_DT time\_NN in\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN ;\_: but\_CC as\_IN she\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB possibly\_RB get\_VB in\_RP before\_IN then\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP are\_VBP all\_DT about\_IN to\_TO retire\_VB early\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP shall\_MD get\_VB up\_RP at\_IN one\_CD o'clock\_RB ,\_, so\_RB as\_IN to\_TO be\_VB ready\_JJ .\_.

25\_CD October\_NNP ,\_, Noon\_NNP .\_.

--\_: No\_DT news\_NN yet\_RB of\_IN the\_DT ship\_NN 's\_POS arrival\_NN .\_.

Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS hypnotic\_JJ report\_NN this\_DT morning\_NN was\_VBD the\_DT same\_JJ as\_IN usual\_JJ ,\_, so\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ possible\_JJ that\_IN we\_PRP may\_MD get\_VB news\_NN at\_IN any\_DT moment\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP men\_NNS are\_VBP all\_DT in\_IN a\_DT fever\_NN of\_IN excitement\_NN ,\_, except\_IN Harker\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP is\_VBZ calm\_NN ;\_: his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS are\_VBP cold\_JJ as\_IN ice\_NN ,\_, and\_CC an\_DT hour\_NN ago\_IN I\_PRP found\_VBD him\_PRP whetting\_VBG the\_DT edge\_NN of\_IN the\_DT great\_JJ Ghoorka\_NNP knife\_NN which\_WDT he\_PRP now\_RB always\_RB carries\_VBZ with\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB a\_DT bad\_JJ lookout\_NN for\_IN the\_DT Count\_NN if\_IN the\_DT edge\_NN of\_IN that\_DT ``\_`` Kukri\_NNP ''\_'' ever\_RB touches\_NNS his\_PRP$ throat\_NN ,\_, driven\_VBN by\_IN that\_DT stern\_JJ ,\_, ice-cold\_JJ hand\_NN !\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP were\_VBD a\_DT little\_RB alarmed\_JJ about\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP to-day\_NN .\_.

About\_IN noon\_NN she\_PRP got\_VBD into\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN lethargy\_NN which\_WDT we\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB like\_VB ;\_: although\_IN we\_PRP kept\_VBD silence\_NN to\_TO the\_DT others\_NNS ,\_, we\_PRP were\_VBD neither\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP happy\_JJ about\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

She\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN restless\_JJ all\_PDT the\_DT morning\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD at\_IN first\_RB glad\_JJ to\_TO know\_VB that\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD sleeping\_VBG .\_.

When\_WRB ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, her\_PRP$ husband\_NN mentioned\_VBD casually\_RB that\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD sleeping\_VBG so\_RB soundly\_RB that\_IN he\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB wake\_VB her\_PRP ,\_, we\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO her\_PRP$ room\_NN to\_TO see\_VB for\_IN ourselves\_PRP .\_.

She\_PRP was\_VBD breathing\_VBG naturally\_RB and\_CC looked\_VBD so\_RB well\_RB and\_CC peaceful\_JJ that\_IN we\_PRP agreed\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT sleep\_NN was\_VBD better\_JJR for\_IN her\_PRP than\_IN anything\_NN else\_RB .\_.

Poor\_NNP girl\_NN ,\_, she\_PRP has\_VBZ so\_RB much\_JJ to\_TO forget\_VB that\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ no\_DT wonder\_NN that\_IN sleep\_NN ,\_, if\_IN it\_PRP brings\_VBZ oblivion\_NN to\_TO her\_PRP ,\_, does\_VBZ her\_PRP$ good\_NN .\_.

Later\_RB .\_.

--\_: Our\_PRP$ opinion\_NN was\_VBD justified\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN when\_WRB after\_IN a\_DT refreshing\_JJ sleep\_NN of\_IN some\_DT hours\_NNS she\_PRP woke\_VBD up\_RP ,\_, she\_PRP seemed\_VBD brighter\_JJR and\_CC better\_JJR than\_IN she\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN for\_IN days\_NNS .\_.

At\_IN sunset\_NN she\_PRP made\_VBD the\_DT usual\_JJ hypnotic\_JJ report\_NN .\_.

Wherever\_NNP he\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB in\_IN the\_DT Black\_NNP Sea\_NNP ,\_, the\_DT Count\_NNP is\_VBZ hurrying\_VBG to\_TO his\_PRP$ destination\_NN .\_.

To\_TO his\_PRP$ doom\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP trust\_VBP !\_.

26\_CD October\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Another\_DT day\_NN and\_CC no\_DT tidings\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT Czarina\_NNP Catherine\_NNP .\_.

She\_PRP ought\_MD to\_TO be\_VB here\_RB by\_IN now\_RB .\_.

That\_IN she\_PRP is\_VBZ still\_RB journeying\_VBG somewhere\_RB is\_VBZ apparent\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS hypnotic\_JJ report\_NN at\_IN sunrise\_NN was\_VBD still\_RB the\_DT same\_JJ .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ possible\_JJ that\_IN the\_DT vessel\_NN may\_MD be\_VB lying\_VBG by\_IN ,\_, at\_IN times\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN fog\_NN ;\_: some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT steamers\_NNS which\_WDT came\_VBD in\_IN last\_JJ evening\_NN reported\_VBD patches\_NNS of\_IN fog\_NN both\_DT to\_TO north\_RB and\_CC south\_RB of\_IN the\_DT port\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP must\_MD continue\_VB our\_PRP$ watching\_NN ,\_, as\_IN the\_DT ship\_NN may\_MD now\_RB be\_VB signalled\_VBN any\_DT moment\_NN .\_.

27\_CD October\_NNP ,\_, Noon\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Most\_RBS strange\_JJ ;\_: no\_DT news\_NN yet\_RB of\_IN the\_DT ship\_NN we\_PRP wait\_VBP for\_IN .\_.

Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP reported\_VBD last\_JJ night\_NN and\_CC this\_DT morning\_NN as\_IN usual\_JJ :\_: ``\_`` lapping\_VBG waves\_NNS and\_CC rushing\_VBG water\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' though\_IN she\_PRP added\_VBD that\_IN ``\_`` the\_DT waves\_NNS were\_VBD very\_RB faint\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT telegrams\_NNS from\_IN London\_NNP have\_VBP been\_VBN the\_DT same\_JJ :\_: ``\_`` no\_DT further\_JJ report\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP is\_VBZ terribly\_RB anxious\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC told\_VBD me\_PRP just\_RB now\_RB that\_IN he\_PRP fears\_VBZ the\_DT Count\_NNP is\_VBZ escaping\_VBG us\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP added\_VBD significantly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB like\_VB that\_DT lethargy\_NN of\_IN Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP 's\_POS .\_.

Souls\_NNS and\_CC memories\_NNS can\_MD do\_VB strange\_JJ things\_NNS during\_IN trance\_NN .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP was\_VBD about\_IN to\_TO ask\_VB him\_PRP more\_JJR ,\_, but\_CC Harker\_NNP just\_RB then\_RB came\_VBD in\_IN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP held\_VBD up\_RP a\_DT warning\_NN hand\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP must\_MD try\_VB to-night\_NN at\_IN sunset\_NN to\_TO make\_VB her\_PRP speak\_VB more\_RBR fully\_RB when\_WRB in\_IN her\_PRP$ hypnotic\_JJ state\_NN .\_.

28\_CD October\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Telegram\_NN .\_.

Rufus\_NNP Smith\_NNP ,\_, London\_NNP ,\_, to\_TO Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP ,\_, care\_NN H.\_NNP B.\_NNP M.\_NNP Vice\_NNP Consul\_NNP ,\_, Varna\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` Czarina\_NNP Catherine\_NNP reported\_VBD entering\_VBG Galatz\_NNP at\_IN one\_CD o'clock\_RB to-day\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

28\_CD October\_NNP .\_.

--\_: When\_WRB the\_DT telegram\_NN came\_VBD announcing\_VBG the\_DT arrival\_NN in\_IN Galatz\_NNP I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB think\_VB it\_PRP was\_VBD such\_JJ a\_DT shock\_NN to\_TO any\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP as\_IN might\_NN have\_VBP been\_VBN expected\_VBN .\_.

True\_JJ ,\_, we\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB know\_VB whence\_NN ,\_, or\_CC how\_WRB ,\_, or\_CC when\_WRB ,\_, the\_DT bolt\_NN would\_MD come\_VB ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP think\_VBP we\_PRP all\_DT expected\_VBD that\_IN something\_NN strange\_JJ would\_MD happen\_VB .\_.

The\_DT delay\_NN of\_IN arrival\_NN at\_IN Varna\_NNP made\_VBD us\_PRP individually\_RB satisfied\_VBD that\_IN things\_NNS would\_MD not\_RB be\_VB just\_RB as\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD expected\_VBN ;\_: we\_PRP only\_RB waited\_VBD to\_TO learn\_VB where\_WRB the\_DT change\_NN would\_MD occur\_VB .\_.

None\_NN the\_DT less\_JJR ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, was\_VBD it\_PRP a\_DT surprise\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP suppose\_VBP that\_IN nature\_NN works\_VBZ on\_IN such\_PDT a\_DT hopeful\_JJ basis\_NN that\_IN we\_PRP believe\_VBP against\_IN ourselves\_PRP that\_IN things\_NNS will\_MD be\_VB as\_IN they\_PRP ought\_MD to\_TO be\_VB ,\_, not\_RB as\_IN we\_PRP should\_MD know\_VB that\_IN they\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB .\_.

Transcendentalism\_NNP is\_VBZ a\_DT beacon\_NN to\_TO the\_DT angels\_NNS ,\_, even\_RB if\_IN it\_PRP be\_VB a\_DT will-o\_NN '\_'' -\_: the-wisp\_JJ to\_TO man\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD an\_DT odd\_JJ experience\_NN and\_CC we\_PRP all\_DT took\_VBD it\_PRP differently\_RB .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP raised\_VBD his\_PRP$ hand\_NN over\_IN his\_PRP$ head\_NN for\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN in\_IN remonstrance\_NN with\_IN the\_DT Almighty\_NNP ;\_: but\_CC he\_PRP said\_VBD not\_RB a\_DT word\_NN ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ seconds\_NNS stood\_VBD up\_RP with\_IN his\_PRP$ face\_NN sternly\_RB set\_VBN .\_.

Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP grew\_VBD very\_RB pale\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC sat\_VBD breathing\_NN heavily\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD myself\_PRP half\_RB stunned\_VBD and\_CC looked\_VBD in\_IN wonder\_NN at\_IN one\_CD after\_IN another\_DT .\_.

Quincey\_NNP Morris\_NNP tightened\_VBD his\_PRP$ belt\_NN with\_IN that\_DT quick\_JJ movement\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP knew\_VBD so\_RB well\_RB ;\_: in\_IN our\_PRP$ old\_JJ wandering\_VBG days\_NNS it\_PRP meant\_VBD ``\_`` action\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP grew\_VBD ghastly\_JJ white\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN the\_DT scar\_NN on\_IN her\_PRP$ forehead\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO burn\_VB ,\_, but\_CC she\_PRP folded\_VBD her\_PRP$ hands\_NNS meekly\_RB and\_CC looked\_VBD up\_RP in\_IN prayer\_NN .\_.

Harker\_NNP smiled\_VBD --\_: actually\_RB smiled\_VBD --\_: the\_DT dark\_JJ ,\_, bitter\_JJ smile\_NN of\_IN one\_CD who\_WP is\_VBZ without\_IN hope\_NN ;\_: but\_CC at\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ time\_NN his\_PRP$ action\_NN belied\_VBD his\_PRP$ words\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS instinctively\_RB sought\_VBD the\_DT hilt\_NN of\_IN the\_DT great\_JJ Kukri\_NNP knife\_NN and\_CC rested\_VBD there\_RB .\_.

``\_`` When\_WRB does\_VBZ the\_DT next\_JJ train\_NN start\_NN for\_IN Galatz\_NNP ?\_. ''\_''

said\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP to\_TO us\_PRP generally\_RB .\_.

``\_`` At\_IN 6:30\_CD to-morrow\_NN morning\_NN !\_. ''\_''

We\_PRP all\_DT started\_VBD ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT answer\_NN came\_VBD from\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` How\_WRB on\_IN earth\_NN do\_VBP you\_PRP know\_VB ?\_. ''\_''

said\_VBD Art\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` You\_PRP forget\_VBP --\_: or\_CC perhaps\_RB you\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB know\_VB ,\_, though\_IN Jonathan\_NNP does\_VBZ and\_CC so\_RB does\_VBZ Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP --\_: that\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP the\_DT train\_NN fiend\_NN .\_.

At\_IN home\_NN in\_IN Exeter\_NNP I\_PRP always\_RB used\_VBD to\_TO make\_VB up\_RP the\_DT time-tables\_NNS ,\_, so\_RB as\_IN to\_TO be\_VB helpful\_JJ to\_TO my\_PRP$ husband\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP found\_VBD it\_PRP so\_RB useful\_JJ sometimes\_RB ,\_, that\_IN I\_PRP always\_RB make\_VBP a\_DT study\_NN of\_IN the\_DT time-tables\_NNS now\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN if\_IN anything\_NN were\_VBD to\_TO take\_VB us\_PRP to\_TO Castle\_NNP Dracula\_NNP we\_PRP should\_MD go\_VB by\_IN Galatz\_NNP ,\_, or\_CC at\_IN any\_DT rate\_NN through\_IN Bucharest\_NNP ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP learned\_VBD the\_DT times\_NNS very\_RB carefully\_RB .\_.

Unhappily\_RB there\_EX are\_VBP not\_RB many\_JJ to\_TO learn\_VB ,\_, as\_IN the\_DT only\_JJ train\_NN to-morrow\_NN leaves\_VBZ as\_IN I\_PRP say\_VBP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Wonderful\_JJ woman\_NN !\_. ''\_''

murmured\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` Ca\_MD n't\_RB we\_PRP get\_VB a\_DT special\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

asked\_VBD Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP shook\_VBD his\_PRP$ head\_NN :\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP fear\_VBP not\_RB .\_.

This\_DT land\_NN is\_VBZ very\_RB different\_JJ from\_IN yours\_PRP$ or\_CC mine\_NN ;\_: even\_RB if\_IN we\_PRP did\_VBD have\_VB a\_DT special\_JJ ,\_, it\_PRP would\_MD probably\_RB not\_RB arrive\_VB as\_RB soon\_RB as\_IN our\_PRP$ regular\_JJ train\_NN .\_.

Moreover\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP have\_VBP something\_NN to\_TO prepare\_VB .\_.

We\_PRP must\_MD think\_VB .\_.

Now\_RB let\_VB us\_PRP organize\_VB .\_.

You\_PRP ,\_, friend\_NN Arthur\_NNP ,\_, go\_VB to\_TO the\_DT train\_NN and\_CC get\_VB the\_DT tickets\_NNS and\_CC arrange\_VB that\_IN all\_DT be\_VB ready\_JJ for\_IN us\_PRP to\_TO go\_VB in\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN .\_.

Do\_VBP you\_PRP ,\_, friend\_NN Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, go\_VB to\_TO the\_DT agent\_NN of\_IN the\_DT ship\_NN and\_CC get\_VB from\_IN him\_PRP letters\_NNS to\_TO the\_DT agent\_NN in\_IN Galatz\_NNP ,\_, with\_IN authority\_NN to\_TO make\_VB search\_NN the\_DT ship\_NN just\_RB as\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD here\_RB .\_.

Morris\_NNP Quincey\_NNP ,\_, you\_PRP see\_VBP the\_DT Vice-Consul\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC get\_VB his\_PRP$ aid\_NN with\_IN his\_PRP$ fellow\_NN in\_IN Galatz\_NNP and\_CC all\_DT he\_PRP can\_MD do\_VB to\_TO make\_VB our\_PRP$ way\_NN smooth\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN no\_DT times\_NNS be\_VB lost\_VBN when\_WRB over\_IN the\_DT Danube\_NNP .\_.

John\_NNP will\_MD stay\_VB with\_IN Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP and\_CC me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP shall\_MD consult\_VB .\_.

For\_IN so\_RB if\_IN time\_NN be\_VB long\_RB you\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB delayed\_VBN ;\_: and\_CC it\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB matter\_VB when\_WRB the\_DT sun\_NN set\_NN ,\_, since\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP here\_RB with\_IN Madam\_NNP to\_TO make\_VB report\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` And\_CC I\_PRP ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP brightly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC more\_RBR like\_IN her\_PRP$ old\_JJ self\_NN than\_IN she\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN for\_IN many\_JJ a\_DT long\_JJ day\_NN ,\_, ``\_`` shall\_MD try\_VB to\_TO be\_VB of\_IN use\_NN in\_IN all\_DT ways\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC shall\_MD think\_VB and\_CC write\_VB for\_IN you\_PRP as\_IN I\_PRP used\_VBD to\_TO do\_VB .\_.

Something\_NN is\_VBZ shifting\_VBG from\_IN me\_PRP in\_IN some\_DT strange\_JJ way\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP feel\_VBP freer\_JJR than\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN of\_IN late\_RB !\_. ''\_''

The\_DT three\_CD younger\_JJR men\_NNS looked\_VBD happier\_JJR at\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN as\_IN they\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO realise\_VB the\_DT significance\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ words\_NNS ;\_: but\_CC Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP and\_CC I\_NNP ,\_, turning\_VBG to\_TO each\_DT other\_JJ ,\_, met\_VBD each\_DT a\_DT grave\_JJ and\_CC troubled\_JJ glance\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP said\_VBD nothing\_NN at\_IN the\_DT time\_NN ,\_, however\_RB .\_.

When\_WRB the\_DT three\_CD men\_NNS had\_VBD gone\_VBN out\_RP to\_TO their\_PRP$ tasks\_NNS Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP asked\_VBD Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP to\_TO look\_VB up\_RP the\_DT copy\_NN of\_IN the\_DT diaries\_NNS and\_CC find\_VB him\_PRP the\_DT part\_NN of\_IN Harker\_NNP 's\_POS journal\_NN at\_IN the\_DT Castle\_NNP .\_.

She\_PRP went\_VBD away\_RB to\_TO get\_VB it\_PRP ;\_: when\_WRB the\_DT door\_NN was\_VBD shut\_VBN upon\_IN her\_PRP he\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` We\_PRP mean\_VBP the\_DT same\_JJ !\_.

speak\_VB out\_RP !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` There\_EX is\_VBZ some\_DT change\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT hope\_NN that\_WDT makes\_VBZ me\_PRP sick\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP may\_MD deceive\_VB us\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Quite\_RB so\_RB .\_.

Do\_VBP you\_PRP know\_VB why\_WRB I\_PRP asked\_VBD her\_PRP to\_TO get\_VB the\_DT manuscript\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

``\_`` No\_UH !\_. ''\_''

said\_VBD I\_PRP ,\_, ``\_`` unless\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD to\_TO get\_VB an\_DT opportunity\_NN of\_IN seeing\_VBG me\_PRP alone\_RB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` You\_PRP are\_VBP in\_IN part\_NN right\_NN ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, but\_CC only\_RB in\_IN part\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP want\_VBP to\_TO tell\_VB you\_PRP something\_NN .\_.

And\_CC oh\_UH ,\_, my\_PRP$ friend\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP taking\_VBG a\_DT great\_JJ --\_: a\_DT terrible\_JJ --\_: risk\_NN ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP believe\_VBP it\_PRP is\_VBZ right\_JJ .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT moment\_NN when\_WRB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP said\_VBD those\_DT words\_NNS that\_WDT arrest\_VBP both\_DT our\_PRP$ understanding\_NN ,\_, an\_DT inspiration\_NN came\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT trance\_NN of\_IN three\_CD days\_NNS ago\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP sent\_VBD her\_PRP his\_PRP$ spirit\_NN to\_TO read\_VB her\_PRP$ mind\_NN ;\_: or\_CC more\_JJR like\_IN he\_PRP took\_VBD her\_PRP to\_TO see\_VB him\_PRP in\_IN his\_PRP$ earth-box\_NN in\_IN the\_DT ship\_NN with\_IN water\_NN rushing\_VBG ,\_, just\_RB as\_IN it\_PRP go\_VBP free\_JJ at\_IN rise\_NN and\_CC set\_NN of\_IN sun\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP learn\_VBP then\_RB that\_IN we\_PRP are\_VBP here\_RB ;\_: for\_IN she\_PRP have\_VBP more\_JJR to\_TO tell\_VB in\_IN her\_PRP$ open\_JJ life\_NN with\_IN eyes\_NNS to\_TO see\_VB and\_CC ears\_NNS to\_TO hear\_VB than\_IN he\_PRP ,\_, shut\_VB ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ ,\_, in\_IN his\_PRP$ coffin-box\_NN .\_.

Now\_RB he\_PRP make\_VB his\_PRP$ most\_JJS effort\_NN to\_TO escape\_VB us\_PRP .\_.

At\_IN present\_JJ he\_PRP want\_VBP her\_PRP not\_RB .\_.

``\_`` He\_PRP is\_VBZ sure\_JJ with\_IN his\_PRP$ so\_RB great\_JJ knowledge\_NN that\_IN she\_PRP will\_MD come\_VB at\_IN his\_PRP$ call\_NN ;\_: but\_CC he\_PRP cut\_VBD her\_PRP off\_RP --\_: take\_VB her\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP can\_MD do\_VB ,\_, out\_IN of\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ power\_NN ,\_, that\_IN so\_IN she\_PRP come\_VBP not\_RB to\_TO him\_PRP .\_.

Ah\_UH !\_.

there\_RB I\_PRP have\_VBP hope\_NN that\_IN our\_PRP$ man-brains\_NNS that\_WDT have\_VBP been\_VBN of\_IN man\_NN so\_RB long\_RB and\_CC that\_WDT have\_VBP not\_RB lost\_VBN the\_DT grace\_NN of\_IN God\_NNP ,\_, will\_MD come\_VB higher\_JJR than\_IN his\_PRP$ child-brain\_NN that\_WDT lie\_VBP in\_IN his\_PRP$ tomb\_NN for\_IN centuries\_NNS ,\_, that\_WDT grow\_VBP not\_RB yet\_RB to\_TO our\_PRP$ stature\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_WDT do\_VBP only\_RB work\_VB selfish\_JJ and\_CC therefore\_RB small\_JJ .\_.

Here\_RB comes\_VBZ Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ;\_: not\_RB a\_DT word\_NN to\_TO her\_PRP of\_IN her\_PRP$ trance\_NN !\_.

She\_PRP know\_VBP it\_PRP not\_RB ;\_: and\_CC it\_PRP would\_MD overwhelm\_VB her\_PRP and\_CC make\_VB despair\_NN just\_RB when\_WRB we\_PRP want\_VBP all\_DT her\_PRP$ hope\_NN ,\_, all\_DT her\_PRP$ courage\_NN ;\_: when\_WRB most\_RBS we\_PRP want\_VBP all\_DT her\_PRP$ great\_JJ brain\_NN which\_WDT is\_VBZ trained\_VBN like\_IN man\_NN 's\_POS brain\_NN ,\_, but\_CC is\_VBZ of\_IN sweet\_JJ woman\_NN and\_CC have\_VBP a\_DT special\_JJ power\_NN which\_WDT the\_DT Count\_NNP give\_VB her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC which\_WDT he\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB take\_VB away\_RP altogether\_RB --\_: though\_IN he\_PRP think\_VBP not\_RB so\_RB .\_.

Hush\_JJ !\_.

let\_VB me\_PRP speak\_VB ,\_, and\_CC you\_PRP shall\_MD learn\_VB .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, John\_NNP ,\_, my\_PRP$ friend\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP are\_VBP in\_IN awful\_JJ straits\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP fear\_VBP ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP never\_RB feared\_VBD before\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP can\_MD only\_RB trust\_VB the\_DT good\_JJ God\_NNP .\_.

Silence\_NN !\_.

here\_RB she\_PRP comes\_VBZ !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP thought\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP was\_VBD going\_VBG to\_TO break\_VB down\_RP and\_CC have\_VBP hysterics\_NNS ,\_, just\_RB as\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD when\_WRB Lucy\_NNP died\_VBD ,\_, but\_CC with\_IN a\_DT great\_JJ effort\_NN he\_PRP controlled\_VBD himself\_PRP and\_CC was\_VBD at\_IN perfect\_JJ nervous\_JJ poise\_NN when\_WRB Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP tripped\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, bright\_JJ and\_CC happy-looking\_JJ and\_CC ,\_, in\_IN the\_DT doing\_VBG of\_IN work\_NN ,\_, seemingly\_RB forgetful\_JJ of\_IN her\_PRP$ misery\_NN .\_.

As\_IN she\_PRP came\_VBD in\_RP ,\_, she\_PRP handed\_VBD a\_DT number\_NN of\_IN sheets\_NNS of\_IN typewriting\_VBG to\_TO Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP looked\_VBD over\_IN them\_PRP gravely\_RB ,\_, his\_PRP$ face\_NN brightening\_VBG up\_RP as\_IN he\_PRP read\_VBD .\_.

Then\_RB holding\_VBG the\_DT pages\_NNS between\_IN his\_PRP$ finger\_NN and\_CC thumb\_NN he\_PRP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, to\_TO you\_PRP with\_IN so\_RB much\_JJ of\_IN experience\_NN already\_RB --\_: and\_CC you\_PRP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, dear\_RB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, that\_WDT are\_VBP young\_JJ --\_: here\_RB is\_VBZ a\_DT lesson\_NN :\_: do\_VBP not\_RB fear\_VB ever\_RB to\_TO think\_VB .\_.

A\_DT half-thought\_NN has\_VBZ been\_VBN buzzing\_VBG often\_RB in\_IN my\_PRP$ brain\_NN ,\_, but\_CC I\_PRP fear\_VBP to\_TO let\_VB him\_PRP loose\_VB his\_PRP$ wings\_NNS .\_.

Here\_RB now\_RB ,\_, with\_IN more\_JJR knowledge\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP go\_VBP back\_RB to\_TO where\_WRB that\_DT half-thought\_NN come\_VBN from\_IN and\_CC I\_PRP find\_VBP that\_IN he\_PRP be\_VB no\_DT half-thought\_NN at\_IN all\_DT ;\_: that\_IN be\_VB a\_DT whole\_JJ thought\_NN ,\_, though\_IN so\_RB young\_JJ that\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB yet\_RB strong\_JJ to\_TO use\_VB his\_PRP$ little\_JJ wings\_NNS .\_.

Nay\_NNP ,\_, like\_IN the\_DT ``\_`` Ugly\_JJ Duck\_NN ''\_'' of\_IN my\_PRP$ friend\_NN Hans\_NNP Andersen\_NNP ,\_, he\_PRP be\_VB no\_DT duck-thought\_NN at\_IN all\_DT ,\_, but\_CC a\_DT big\_JJ swan-thought\_NN that\_WDT sail\_VBP nobly\_RB on\_IN big\_JJ wings\_NNS ,\_, when\_WRB the\_DT time\_NN come\_VBN for\_IN him\_PRP to\_TO try\_VB them\_PRP .\_.

See\_VB I\_PRP read\_VBP here\_RB what\_WP Jonathan\_NNP have\_VBP written\_VBN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` That\_DT other\_JJ of\_IN his\_PRP$ race\_NN who\_WP ,\_, in\_IN a\_DT later\_JJ age\_NN ,\_, again\_RB and\_CC again\_RB ,\_, brought\_VBD his\_PRP$ forces\_NNS over\_IN The\_DT Great\_NNP River\_NNP into\_IN Turkey\_NNP Land\_NNP ;\_: who\_WP ,\_, when\_WRB he\_PRP was\_VBD beaten\_VBN back\_RB ,\_, came\_VBD again\_RB ,\_, and\_CC again\_RB ,\_, and\_CC again\_RB ,\_, though\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO come\_VB alone\_RB from\_IN the\_DT bloody\_JJ field\_NN where\_WRB his\_PRP$ troops\_NNS were\_VBD being\_VBG slaughtered\_VBN ,\_, since\_IN he\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN he\_PRP alone\_RB could\_MD ultimately\_RB triumph\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` What\_WP does\_VBZ this\_DT tell\_VB us\_PRP ?\_.

Not\_RB much\_RB ?\_.

no\_DT !\_.

The\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS child-thought\_JJ see\_VBP nothing\_NN ;\_: therefore\_RB he\_PRP speak\_VBP so\_RB free\_JJ .\_.

Your\_PRP$ man-thought\_NN see\_VBP nothing\_NN ;\_: my\_PRP$ man-thought\_NN see\_VBP nothing\_NN ,\_, till\_IN just\_RB now\_RB .\_.

No\_DT !\_.

But\_CC there\_EX comes\_VBZ another\_DT word\_NN from\_IN some\_DT one\_CD who\_WP speak\_VBP without\_IN thought\_NN because\_IN she\_PRP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, know\_VBP not\_RB what\_WP it\_PRP mean\_VB --\_: what\_WP it\_PRP might\_MD mean\_VB .\_.

Just\_RB as\_IN there\_EX are\_VBP elements\_NNS which\_WDT rest\_VBP ,\_, yet\_RB when\_WRB in\_IN nature\_NN 's\_POS course\_NN they\_PRP move\_VBP on\_IN their\_PRP$ way\_NN and\_CC they\_PRP touch\_VBP --\_: then\_RB pouf\_NN !\_.

and\_CC there\_EX comes\_VBZ a\_DT flash\_NN of\_IN light\_NN ,\_, heaven\_NN wide\_JJ ,\_, that\_IN blind\_JJ and\_CC kill\_VB and\_CC destroy\_VB some\_DT ;\_: but\_CC that\_WDT show\_VBP up\_RP all\_DT earth\_NN below\_IN for\_IN leagues\_NNS and\_CC leagues\_NNS .\_.

Is\_VBZ it\_PRP not\_RB so\_RB ?\_.

Well\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP shall\_MD explain\_VB .\_.

To\_TO begin\_VB ,\_, have\_VB you\_PRP ever\_RB study\_VB the\_DT philosophy\_NN of\_IN crime\_NN ?\_.

`\_`` Yes\_NNP '\_'' and\_CC `\_`` No\_UH .\_. '\_''

You\_PRP ,\_, John\_NNP ,\_, yes\_RB ;\_: for\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT study\_NN of\_IN insanity\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP ,\_, no\_DT ,\_, Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ;\_: for\_IN crime\_NN touch\_NN you\_PRP not\_RB --\_: not\_RB but\_CC once\_RB .\_.

Still\_RB ,\_, your\_PRP$ mind\_NN works\_VBZ true\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC argues\_VBZ not\_RB a\_DT particulari\_JJ ad\_NN universale\_NN .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ this\_DT peculiarity\_NN in\_IN criminals\_NNS .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ so\_RB constant\_JJ ,\_, in\_IN all\_DT countries\_NNS and\_CC at\_IN all\_DT times\_NNS ,\_, that\_IN even\_JJ police\_NNS ,\_, who\_WP know\_VBP not\_RB much\_RB from\_IN philosophy\_NN ,\_, come\_VBN to\_TO know\_VB it\_PRP empirically\_RB ,\_, that\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ .\_.

That\_DT is\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB empiric\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT criminal\_NN always\_RB work\_VBP at\_IN one\_CD crime\_NN --\_: that\_DT is\_VBZ the\_DT true\_JJ criminal\_NN who\_WP seems\_VBZ predestinate\_JJ to\_TO crime\_NN ,\_, and\_CC who\_WP will\_MD of\_IN none\_NN other\_JJ .\_.

This\_DT criminal\_NN has\_VBZ not\_RB full\_JJ man-brain\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ clever\_JJ and\_CC cunning\_JJ and\_CC resourceful\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC he\_PRP be\_VB not\_RB of\_IN man-stature\_NN as\_IN to\_TO brain\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP be\_VB of\_IN child-brain\_NN in\_IN much\_JJ .\_.

Now\_RB this\_DT criminal\_NN of\_IN ours\_PRP is\_VBZ predestinate\_JJ to\_TO crime\_NN also\_RB ;\_: he\_PRP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, have\_VBP child-brain\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ of\_IN the\_DT child\_NN to\_TO do\_VB what\_WP he\_PRP have\_VBP done\_VBN .\_.

The\_DT little\_JJ bird\_NN ,\_, the\_DT little\_JJ fish\_NN ,\_, the\_DT little\_JJ animal\_NN learn\_VBP not\_RB by\_IN principle\_NN ,\_, but\_CC empirically\_RB ;\_: and\_CC when\_WRB he\_PRP learn\_VBP to\_TO do\_VB ,\_, then\_RB there\_EX is\_VBZ to\_TO him\_PRP the\_DT ground\_NN to\_TO start\_VB from\_IN to\_TO do\_VB more\_JJR .\_.

`\_`` Dos\_NNP pou\_NNP sto\_NNP ,\_, '\_'' said\_VBD Archimedes\_NNP .\_.

`\_`` Give\_VB me\_PRP a\_DT fulcrum\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP shall\_MD move\_VB the\_DT world\_NN !\_. '\_''

To\_TO do\_VB once\_RB ,\_, is\_VBZ the\_DT fulcrum\_NN whereby\_WRB child-brain\_JJ become\_VBN man-brain\_NN ;\_: and\_CC until\_IN he\_PRP have\_VBP the\_DT purpose\_NN to\_TO do\_VB more\_JJR ,\_, he\_PRP continue\_VBP to\_TO do\_VB the\_DT same\_JJ again\_RB every\_DT time\_NN ,\_, just\_RB as\_IN he\_PRP have\_VBP done\_VBN before\_RB !\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, my\_PRP$ dear\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP see\_VBP that\_IN your\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS are\_VBP opened\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN to\_TO you\_PRP the\_DT lightning\_NN flash\_NN show\_NN all\_PDT the\_DT leagues\_NNS ,\_, ''\_'' for\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP began\_VBD to\_TO clap\_VB her\_PRP$ hands\_NNS and\_CC her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS sparkled\_VBD .\_.

He\_PRP went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Now\_RB you\_PRP shall\_MD speak\_VB .\_.

Tell\_VB us\_PRP two\_CD dry\_JJ men\_NNS of\_IN science\_NN what\_WP you\_PRP see\_VBP with\_IN those\_DT so\_RB bright\_JJ eyes\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP took\_VBD her\_PRP$ hand\_NN and\_CC held\_VBD it\_PRP whilst\_IN she\_PRP spoke\_VBD .\_.

His\_PRP$ finger\_NN and\_CC thumb\_NN closed\_VBD on\_IN her\_PRP$ pulse\_NN ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP thought\_VBD instinctively\_RB and\_CC unconsciously\_RB ,\_, as\_IN she\_PRP spoke\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` The\_DT Count\_NN is\_VBZ a\_DT criminal\_JJ and\_CC of\_IN criminal\_JJ type\_NN .\_.

Nordau\_NNP and\_CC Lombroso\_NNP would\_MD so\_RB classify\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC quâ\_NN criminal\_NN he\_PRP is\_VBZ of\_IN imperfectly\_RB formed\_VBN mind\_NN .\_.

Thus\_RB ,\_, in\_IN a\_DT difficulty\_NN he\_PRP has\_VBZ to\_TO seek\_VB resource\_NN in\_IN habit\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ past\_NN is\_VBZ a\_DT clue\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT one\_CD page\_NN of\_IN it\_PRP that\_IN we\_PRP know\_VBP --\_: and\_CC that\_IN from\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ lips\_NNS --\_: tells\_VBZ that\_IN once\_RB before\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB in\_IN what\_WP Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP would\_MD call\_VB a\_DT `\_`` tight\_JJ place\_NN ,\_, '\_'' he\_PRP went\_VBD back\_RB to\_TO his\_PRP$ own\_JJ country\_NN from\_IN the\_DT land\_NN he\_PRP had\_VBD tried\_VBN to\_TO invade\_VB ,\_, and\_CC thence\_RB ,\_, without\_IN losing\_VBG purpose\_NN ,\_, prepared\_VBD himself\_PRP for\_IN a\_DT new\_JJ effort\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP came\_VBD again\_RB better\_RB equipped\_VBN for\_IN his\_PRP$ work\_NN ;\_: and\_CC won\_VBD .\_.

So\_RB he\_PRP came\_VBD to\_TO London\_NNP to\_TO invade\_VB a\_DT new\_JJ land\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD beaten\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC when\_WRB all\_DT hope\_NN of\_IN success\_NN was\_VBD lost\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ existence\_NN in\_IN danger\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP fled\_VBD back\_RB over\_IN the\_DT sea\_NN to\_TO his\_PRP$ home\_NN ;\_: just\_RB as\_RB formerly\_RB he\_PRP had\_VBD fled\_VBN back\_RB over\_IN the\_DT Danube\_NNP from\_IN Turkey\_NNP Land\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Good\_JJ ,\_, good\_JJ !\_.

oh\_UH ,\_, you\_PRP so\_RB clever\_JJ lady\_NN !\_. ''\_''

said\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, enthusiastically\_RB ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP stooped\_VBD and\_CC kissed\_VBD her\_PRP$ hand\_NN .\_.

A\_DT moment\_NN later\_RB he\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, as\_RB calmly\_RB as\_IN though\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN having\_VBG a\_DT sick-room\_JJ consultation\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Seventy-two\_JJ only\_RB ;\_: and\_CC in\_IN all\_PDT this\_DT excitement\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP hope\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Turning\_VBG to\_TO her\_PRP again\_RB ,\_, he\_PRP said\_VBD with\_IN keen\_JJ expectation\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` But\_CC go\_VB on\_RP .\_.

Go\_VB on\_IN !\_.

there\_EX is\_VBZ more\_JJR to\_TO tell\_VB if\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD .\_.

Be\_VB not\_RB afraid\_JJ ;\_: John\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP know\_VBP .\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP in\_IN any\_DT case\_NN ,\_, and\_CC shall\_MD tell\_VB you\_PRP if\_IN you\_PRP are\_VBP right\_JJ .\_.

Speak\_VB ,\_, without\_IN fear\_NN !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP will\_MD try\_VB to\_TO ;\_: but\_CC you\_PRP will\_MD forgive\_VB me\_PRP if\_IN I\_PRP seem\_VBP egotistical\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Nay\_NN !\_.

fear\_VB not\_RB ,\_, you\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB egotist\_NN ,\_, for\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ of\_IN you\_PRP that\_IN we\_PRP think\_VBP .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Then\_RB ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ criminal\_JJ he\_PRP is\_VBZ selfish\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC as\_IN his\_PRP$ intellect\_NN is\_VBZ small\_JJ and\_CC his\_PRP$ action\_NN is\_VBZ based\_VBN on\_IN selfishness\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP confines\_NNS himself\_PRP to\_TO one\_CD purpose\_NN .\_.

That\_DT purpose\_NN is\_VBZ remorseless\_JJ .\_.

As\_IN he\_PRP fled\_VBD back\_RB over\_IN the\_DT Danube\_NNP ,\_, leaving\_VBG his\_PRP$ forces\_NNS to\_TO be\_VB cut\_VBN to\_TO pieces\_NNS ,\_, so\_RB now\_RB he\_PRP is\_VBZ intent\_JJ on\_IN being\_VBG safe\_JJ ,\_, careless\_JJ of\_IN all\_DT .\_.

So\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ selfishness\_NN frees\_VBZ my\_PRP$ soul\_NN somewhat\_RB from\_IN the\_DT terrible\_JJ power\_NN which\_WDT he\_PRP acquired\_VBD over\_IN me\_PRP on\_IN that\_DT dreadful\_JJ night\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP felt\_VBD it\_PRP !\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, I\_PRP felt\_VBD it\_PRP !\_.

Thank\_VB God\_NNP ,\_, for\_IN His\_PRP$ great\_JJ mercy\_NN !\_.

My\_PRP$ soul\_NN is\_VBZ freer\_JJR than\_IN it\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN since\_IN that\_DT awful\_JJ hour\_NN ;\_: and\_CC all\_DT that\_IN haunts\_NNS me\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT fear\_NN lest\_IN in\_IN some\_DT trance\_NN or\_CC dream\_NN he\_PRP may\_MD have\_VB used\_VBN my\_PRP$ knowledge\_NN for\_IN his\_PRP$ ends\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

The\_DT Professor\_NNP stood\_VBD up\_RP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` He\_PRP has\_VBZ so\_RB used\_VBN your\_PRP$ mind\_NN ;\_: and\_CC by\_IN it\_PRP he\_PRP has\_VBZ left\_VBN us\_PRP here\_RB in\_IN Varna\_NNP ,\_, whilst\_IN the\_DT ship\_NN that\_WDT carried\_VBD him\_PRP rushed\_VBD through\_IN enveloping\_VBG fog\_NN up\_IN to\_TO Galatz\_NNP ,\_, where\_WRB ,\_, doubtless\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP had\_VBD made\_VBN preparation\_NN for\_IN escaping\_VBG from\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

But\_CC his\_PRP$ child-mind\_NN only\_RB saw\_VBD so\_RB far\_RB ;\_: and\_CC it\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB that\_DT ,\_, as\_RB ever\_RB is\_VBZ in\_IN God\_NNP 's\_POS Providence\_NNP ,\_, the\_DT very\_JJ thing\_NN that\_IN the\_DT evil-doer\_NN most\_RBS reckoned\_VBN on\_RP for\_IN his\_PRP$ selfish\_JJ good\_NN ,\_, turns\_VBZ out\_RP to\_TO be\_VB his\_PRP$ chiefest\_JJ harm\_NN .\_.

The\_DT hunter\_NN is\_VBZ taken\_VBN in\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ snare\_NN ,\_, as\_IN the\_DT great\_JJ Psalmist\_NNP says\_VBZ .\_.

For\_IN now\_RB that\_IN he\_PRP think\_VB he\_PRP is\_VBZ free\_JJ from\_IN every\_DT trace\_NN of\_IN us\_PRP all\_DT ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN he\_PRP has\_VBZ escaped\_VBN us\_PRP with\_IN so\_RB many\_JJ hours\_NNS to\_TO him\_PRP ,\_, then\_RB his\_PRP$ selfish\_JJ child-brain\_NN will\_MD whisper\_VB him\_PRP to\_TO sleep\_VB .\_.

He\_PRP think\_VBP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, that\_IN as\_IN he\_PRP cut\_VBD himself\_PRP off\_RP from\_IN knowing\_VBG your\_PRP$ mind\_NN ,\_, there\_EX can\_MD be\_VB no\_DT knowledge\_NN of\_IN him\_PRP to\_TO you\_PRP ;\_: there\_EX is\_VBZ where\_WRB he\_PRP fail\_VBP !\_.

That\_DT terrible\_JJ baptism\_NN of\_IN blood\_NN which\_WDT he\_PRP give\_VBP you\_PRP makes\_VBZ you\_PRP free\_JJ to\_TO go\_VB to\_TO him\_PRP in\_IN spirit\_NN ,\_, as\_IN you\_PRP have\_VBP as\_RB yet\_RB done\_VBN in\_IN your\_PRP$ times\_NNS of\_IN freedom\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB the\_DT sun\_NN rise\_NN and\_CC set\_NN .\_.

At\_IN such\_JJ times\_NNS you\_PRP go\_VBP by\_IN my\_PRP$ volition\_NN and\_CC not\_RB by\_IN his\_PRP$ ;\_: and\_CC this\_DT power\_NN to\_TO good\_JJ of\_IN you\_PRP and\_CC others\_NNS ,\_, as\_IN you\_PRP have\_VBP won\_VBN from\_IN your\_PRP$ suffering\_NN at\_IN his\_PRP$ hands\_NNS .\_.

This\_DT is\_VBZ now\_RB all\_PDT the\_DT more\_RBR precious\_JJ that\_IN he\_PRP know\_VBP it\_PRP not\_RB ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO guard\_VB himself\_PRP have\_VBP even\_RB cut\_VBN himself\_PRP off\_RP from\_IN his\_PRP$ knowledge\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ where\_WRB .\_.

We\_PRP ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, are\_VBP not\_RB selfish\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP believe\_VBP that\_IN God\_NNP is\_VBZ with\_IN us\_PRP through\_IN all\_PDT this\_DT blackness\_NN ,\_, and\_CC these\_DT many\_JJ dark\_JJ hours\_NNS .\_.

We\_PRP shall\_MD follow\_VB him\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC we\_PRP shall\_MD not\_RB flinch\_VB ;\_: even\_RB if\_IN we\_PRP peril\_NN ourselves\_PRP that\_IN we\_PRP become\_VBP like\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

Friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, this\_DT has\_VBZ been\_VBN a\_DT great\_JJ hour\_NN ;\_: and\_CC it\_PRP have\_VBP done\_VBN much\_RB to\_TO advance\_VB us\_PRP on\_IN our\_PRP$ way\_NN .\_.

You\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB scribe\_NN and\_CC write\_VB him\_PRP all\_DT down\_RP ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN when\_WRB the\_DT others\_NNS return\_NN from\_IN their\_PRP$ work\_NN you\_PRP can\_MD give\_VB it\_PRP to\_TO them\_PRP ;\_: then\_RB they\_PRP shall\_MD know\_VB as\_IN we\_PRP do\_VBP .\_. ''\_''

And\_CC so\_RB I\_PRP have\_VBP written\_VBN it\_PRP whilst\_IN we\_PRP wait\_VBP their\_PRP$ return\_NN ,\_, and\_CC Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP has\_VBZ written\_VBN with\_IN her\_PRP$ typewriter\_NN all\_DT since\_IN she\_PRP brought\_VBD the\_DT MS.\_NN to\_TO us\_PRP .\_.

CHAPTER\_NNP XXVI\_NNP DR.\_NNP SEWARD\_NNP 'S\_POS DIARY\_NN 29\_CD October\_NNP .\_.

--\_: This\_DT is\_VBZ written\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT train\_NN from\_IN Varna\_NNP to\_TO Galatz\_NNP .\_.

Last\_JJ night\_NN we\_PRP all\_DT assembled\_VBD a\_DT little\_JJ before\_IN the\_DT time\_NN of\_IN sunset\_NN .\_.

Each\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP had\_VBD done\_VBN his\_PRP$ work\_NN as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN he\_PRP could\_MD ;\_: so\_RB far\_RB as\_IN thought\_NN ,\_, and\_CC endeavour\_NN ,\_, and\_CC opportunity\_NN go\_VBP ,\_, we\_PRP are\_VBP prepared\_VBN for\_IN the\_DT whole\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ journey\_NN ,\_, and\_CC for\_IN our\_PRP$ work\_NN when\_WRB we\_PRP get\_VBP to\_TO Galatz\_NNP .\_.

When\_WRB the\_DT usual\_JJ time\_NN came\_VBD round\_JJ Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP prepared\_VBD herself\_PRP for\_IN her\_PRP$ hypnotic\_JJ effort\_NN ;\_: and\_CC after\_IN a\_DT longer\_RBR and\_CC more\_RBR serious\_JJ effort\_NN on\_IN the\_DT part\_NN of\_IN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP than\_IN has\_VBZ been\_VBN usually\_RB necessary\_JJ ,\_, she\_PRP sank\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT trance\_NN .\_.

Usually\_RB she\_PRP speaks\_VBZ on\_IN a\_DT hint\_NN ;\_: but\_CC this\_DT time\_NN the\_DT Professor\_NNP had\_VBD to\_TO ask\_VB her\_PRP$ questions\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO ask\_VB them\_PRP pretty\_RB resolutely\_RB ,\_, before\_IN we\_PRP could\_MD learn\_VB anything\_NN ;\_: at\_IN last\_JJ her\_PRP$ answer\_NN came\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP can\_MD see\_VB nothing\_NN ;\_: we\_PRP are\_VBP still\_RB ;\_: there\_EX are\_VBP no\_DT waves\_NNS lapping\_VBG ,\_, but\_CC only\_RB a\_DT steady\_JJ swirl\_NN of\_IN water\_NN softly\_RB running\_VBG against\_IN the\_DT hawser\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP can\_MD hear\_VB men\_NNS 's\_POS voices\_NNS calling\_VBG ,\_, near\_RB and\_CC far\_RB ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT roll\_NN and\_CC creak\_VB of\_IN oars\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT rowlocks\_NNS .\_.

A\_DT gun\_NN is\_VBZ fired\_VBN somewhere\_RB ;\_: the\_DT echo\_VBP of\_IN it\_PRP seems\_VBZ far\_RB away\_RB .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ tramping\_VBG of\_IN feet\_NNS overhead\_RB ,\_, and\_CC ropes\_NNS and\_CC chains\_NNS are\_VBP dragged\_VBN along\_IN .\_.

What\_WP is\_VBZ this\_DT ?\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT gleam\_NN of\_IN light\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP can\_MD feel\_VB the\_DT air\_NN blowing\_VBG upon\_IN me\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

Here\_RB she\_PRP stopped\_VBD .\_.

She\_PRP had\_VBD risen\_VBN ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN impulsively\_RB ,\_, from\_IN where\_WRB she\_PRP lay\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT sofa\_NN ,\_, and\_CC raised\_VBD both\_DT her\_PRP$ hands\_NNS ,\_, palms\_NNS upwards\_NNS ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN lifting\_VBG a\_DT weight\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP looked\_VBD at\_IN each\_DT other\_JJ with\_IN understanding\_NN .\_.

Quincey\_NNP raised\_VBD his\_PRP$ eyebrows\_NNS slightly\_RB and\_CC looked\_VBD at\_IN her\_PRP intently\_RB ,\_, whilst\_IN Harker\_NNP 's\_POS hand\_NN instinctively\_RB closed\_VBD round\_NN the\_DT hilt\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ Kukri\_NNP .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT long\_JJ pause\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP all\_DT knew\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT time\_NN when\_WRB she\_PRP could\_MD speak\_VB was\_VBD passing\_VBG ;\_: but\_CC we\_PRP felt\_VBD that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD useless\_JJ to\_TO say\_VB anything\_NN .\_.

Suddenly\_RB she\_PRP sat\_VBD up\_RB ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, as\_IN she\_PRP opened\_VBD her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ,\_, said\_VBD sweetly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Would\_MD none\_NN of\_IN you\_PRP like\_IN a\_DT cup\_NN of\_IN tea\_NN ?\_.

You\_PRP must\_MD all\_DT be\_VB so\_RB tired\_JJ !\_. ''\_''

We\_PRP could\_MD only\_RB make\_VB her\_PRP$ happy\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB acquiesced\_VBD .\_.

She\_PRP bustled\_VBD off\_RP to\_TO get\_VB tea\_NN ;\_: when\_WRB she\_PRP had\_VBD gone\_VBN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` You\_PRP see\_VBP ,\_, my\_PRP$ friends\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ close\_JJ to\_TO land\_NN :\_: he\_PRP has\_VBZ left\_VBN his\_PRP$ earth-chest\_JJ .\_.

But\_CC he\_PRP has\_VBZ yet\_RB to\_TO get\_VB on\_IN shore\_NN .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT night\_NN he\_PRP may\_MD lie\_VB hidden\_VBN somewhere\_RB ;\_: but\_CC if\_IN he\_PRP be\_VB not\_RB carried\_VBN on\_IN shore\_NN ,\_, or\_CC if\_IN the\_DT ship\_NN do\_VBP not\_RB touch\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB achieve\_VB the\_DT land\_NN .\_.

In\_IN such\_JJ case\_NN he\_PRP can\_MD ,\_, if\_IN it\_PRP be\_VB in\_IN the\_DT night\_NN ,\_, change\_VB his\_PRP$ form\_NN and\_CC can\_MD jump\_VB or\_CC fly\_VB on\_IN shore\_NN ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD at\_IN Whitby\_NNP .\_.

But\_CC if\_IN the\_DT day\_NN come\_VBN before\_IN he\_PRP get\_VB on\_IN shore\_NN ,\_, then\_RB ,\_, unless\_IN he\_PRP be\_VB carried\_VBN he\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB escape\_VB .\_.

And\_CC if\_IN he\_PRP be\_VB carried\_VBN ,\_, then\_RB the\_DT customs\_NNS men\_NNS may\_MD discover\_VB what\_WP the\_DT box\_NN contain\_VBP .\_.

Thus\_RB ,\_, in\_IN fine\_NN ,\_, if\_IN he\_PRP escape\_VB not\_RB on\_IN shore\_NN to-night\_NN ,\_, or\_CC before\_IN dawn\_NN ,\_, there\_EX will\_MD be\_VB the\_DT whole\_JJ day\_NN lost\_VBN to\_TO him\_PRP .\_.

We\_PRP may\_MD then\_RB arrive\_VB in\_IN time\_NN ;\_: for\_IN if\_IN he\_PRP escape\_VB not\_RB at\_IN night\_NN we\_PRP shall\_MD come\_VB on\_IN him\_PRP in\_IN daytime\_JJ ,\_, boxed\_VBN up\_IN and\_CC at\_IN our\_PRP$ mercy\_NN ;\_: for\_IN he\_PRP dare\_MD not\_RB be\_VB his\_PRP$ true\_JJ self\_NN ,\_, awake\_JJ and\_CC visible\_JJ ,\_, lest\_IN he\_PRP be\_VB discovered\_VBN .\_. ''\_''

There\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT more\_JJR to\_TO be\_VB said\_VBN ,\_, so\_IN we\_PRP waited\_VBD in\_IN patience\_NN until\_IN the\_DT dawn\_NN ;\_: at\_IN which\_WDT time\_NN we\_PRP might\_MD learn\_VB more\_RBR from\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP .\_.

Early\_RB this\_DT morning\_NN we\_PRP listened\_VBD ,\_, with\_IN breathless\_JJ anxiety\_NN ,\_, for\_IN her\_PRP$ response\_NN in\_IN her\_PRP$ trance\_NN .\_.

The\_DT hypnotic\_JJ stage\_NN was\_VBD even\_RB longer\_RBR in\_IN coming\_VBG than\_IN before\_RB ;\_: and\_CC when\_WRB it\_PRP came\_VBD the\_DT time\_NN remaining\_VBG until\_IN full\_JJ sunrise\_NN was\_VBD so\_RB short\_JJ that\_IN we\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO despair\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP seemed\_VBD to\_TO throw\_VB his\_PRP$ whole\_JJ soul\_NN into\_IN the\_DT effort\_NN ;\_: at\_IN last\_JJ ,\_, in\_IN obedience\_NN to\_TO his\_PRP$ will\_MD she\_PRP made\_VBD reply\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` All\_DT is\_VBZ dark\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP hear\_VBP lapping\_VBG water\_NN ,\_, level\_NN with\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC some\_DT creaking\_VBG as\_IN of\_IN wood\_NN on\_IN wood\_NN .\_. ''\_''

She\_PRP paused\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT red\_JJ sun\_NN shot\_VBN up\_RP .\_.

We\_PRP must\_MD wait\_VB till\_IN to-night\_NN .\_.

And\_CC so\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ that\_IN we\_PRP are\_VBP travelling\_VBG towards\_IN Galatz\_NNP in\_IN an\_DT agony\_NN of\_IN expectation\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP are\_VBP due\_JJ to\_TO arrive\_VB between\_IN two\_CD and\_CC three\_CD in\_IN the\_DT morning\_NN ;\_: but\_CC already\_RB ,\_, at\_IN Bucharest\_NNP ,\_, we\_PRP are\_VBP three\_CD hours\_NNS late\_RB ,\_, so\_IN we\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB possibly\_RB get\_VB in\_RP till\_IN well\_RB after\_IN sun-up\_NN .\_.

Thus\_RB we\_PRP shall\_MD have\_VB two\_CD more\_JJR hypnotic\_JJ messages\_NNS from\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP ;\_: either\_CC or\_CC both\_DT may\_MD possibly\_RB throw\_VB more\_JJR light\_NN on\_IN what\_WP is\_VBZ happening\_VBG .\_.

Later\_RB .\_.

--\_: Sunset\_NNP has\_VBZ come\_VBN and\_CC gone\_VBN .\_.

Fortunately\_RB it\_PRP came\_VBD at\_IN a\_DT time\_NN when\_WRB there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT distraction\_NN ;\_: for\_IN had\_VBD it\_PRP occurred\_VBD whilst\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD at\_IN a\_DT station\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP might\_MD not\_RB have\_VB secured\_VBN the\_DT necessary\_JJ calm\_NN and\_CC isolation\_NN .\_.

Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP yielded\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT hypnotic\_JJ influence\_NN even\_RB less\_RBR readily\_RB than\_IN this\_DT morning\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP in\_IN fear\_NN that\_IN her\_PRP$ power\_NN of\_IN reading\_VBG the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS sensations\_NNS may\_MD die\_VB away\_RB ,\_, just\_RB when\_WRB we\_PRP want\_VBP it\_PRP most\_JJS .\_.

It\_PRP seems\_VBZ to\_TO me\_PRP that\_IN her\_PRP$ imagination\_NN is\_VBZ beginning\_VBG to\_TO work\_VB .\_.

Whilst\_IN she\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT trance\_NN hitherto\_RB she\_PRP has\_VBZ confined\_VBN herself\_PRP to\_TO the\_DT simplest\_JJS of\_IN facts\_NNS .\_.

If\_IN this\_DT goes\_VBZ on\_IN it\_PRP may\_MD ultimately\_RB mislead\_VB us\_PRP .\_.

If\_IN I\_PRP thought\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS power\_NN over\_IN her\_PRP would\_MD die\_VB away\_RB equally\_RB with\_IN her\_PRP$ power\_NN of\_IN knowledge\_NN it\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB a\_DT happy\_JJ thought\_NN ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP afraid\_JJ that\_IN it\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB be\_VB so\_RB .\_.

When\_WRB she\_PRP did\_VBD speak\_VB ,\_, her\_PRP$ words\_NNS were\_VBD enigmatical\_JJ :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Something\_NN is\_VBZ going\_VBG out\_RP ;\_: I\_PRP can\_MD feel\_VB it\_PRP pass\_VB me\_PRP like\_IN a\_DT cold\_JJ wind\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP can\_MD hear\_VB ,\_, far\_RB off\_RB ,\_, confused\_JJ sounds\_NNS --\_: as\_IN of\_IN men\_NNS talking\_VBG in\_IN strange\_JJ tongues\_NNS ,\_, fierce-falling\_JJ water\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT howling\_NN of\_IN wolves\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

She\_PRP stopped\_VBD and\_CC a\_DT shudder\_NN ran\_VBD through\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, increasing\_VBG in\_IN intensity\_NN for\_IN a\_DT few\_JJ seconds\_NNS ,\_, till\_IN ,\_, at\_IN the\_DT end\_NN ,\_, she\_PRP shook\_VBD as\_IN though\_IN in\_IN a\_DT palsy\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP said\_VBD no\_DT more\_JJR ,\_, even\_RB in\_IN answer\_NN to\_TO the\_DT Professor\_NNP 's\_POS imperative\_JJ questioning\_VBG .\_.

When\_WRB she\_PRP woke\_VBD from\_IN the\_DT trance\_NN ,\_, she\_PRP was\_VBD cold\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC exhausted\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC languid\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC her\_PRP$ mind\_NN was\_VBD all\_DT alert\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB remember\_VB anything\_NN ,\_, but\_CC asked\_VBD what\_WP she\_PRP had\_VBD said\_VBN ;\_: when\_WRB she\_PRP was\_VBD told\_VBN ,\_, she\_PRP pondered\_VBD over\_IN it\_PRP deeply\_RB for\_IN a\_DT long\_JJ time\_NN and\_CC in\_IN silence\_NN .\_.

30\_CD October\_NNP ,\_, 7\_CD a.\_FW m.\_FW --\_: We\_PRP are\_VBP near\_IN Galatz\_NNP now\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB have\_VB time\_NN to\_TO write\_VB later\_RB .\_.

Sunrise\_NNP this\_DT morning\_NN was\_VBD anxiously\_RB looked\_VBN for\_IN by\_IN us\_PRP all\_DT .\_.

Knowing\_VBG of\_IN the\_DT increasing\_VBG difficulty\_NN of\_IN procuring\_VBG the\_DT hypnotic\_JJ trance\_NN ,\_, Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP began\_VBD his\_PRP$ passes\_NNS earlier\_RBR than\_IN usual\_JJ .\_.

They\_PRP produced\_VBD no\_DT effect\_NN ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, until\_IN the\_DT regular\_JJ time\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB she\_PRP yielded\_VBD with\_IN a\_DT still\_RB greater\_JJR difficulty\_NN ,\_, only\_RB a\_DT minute\_NN before\_IN the\_DT sun\_NN rose\_VBD .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP lost\_VBD no\_DT time\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ questioning\_VBG ;\_: her\_PRP$ answer\_NN came\_VBD with\_IN equal\_JJ quickness\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` All\_DT is\_VBZ dark\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP hear\_VBP water\_NN swirling\_VBG by\_IN ,\_, level\_NN with\_IN my\_PRP$ ears\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT creaking\_NN of\_IN wood\_NN on\_IN wood\_NN .\_.

Cattle\_NNP low\_JJ far\_RB off\_RB .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ another\_DT sound\_NN ,\_, a\_DT queer\_JJR one\_CD like\_IN --\_: --\_: ''\_'' She\_PRP stopped\_VBD and\_CC grew\_VBD white\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC whiter\_NN still\_RB .\_.

``\_`` Go\_VB on\_IN ;\_: go\_VB on\_IN !\_.

Speak\_VB ,\_, I\_PRP command\_VBP you\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

said\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP in\_IN an\_DT agonised\_JJ voice\_NN .\_.

At\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ time\_NN there\_EX was\_VBD despair\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT risen\_VBN sun\_NN was\_VBD reddening\_VBG even\_RB Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS pale\_JJ face\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP opened\_VBD her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP all\_DT started\_VBD as\_IN she\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, sweetly\_RB and\_CC seemingly\_RB with\_IN the\_DT utmost\_JJ unconcern\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, Professor\_NNP ,\_, why\_WRB ask\_VB me\_PRP to\_TO do\_VB what\_WP you\_PRP know\_VBP I\_PRP ca\_MD n't\_RB ?\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB remember\_VB anything\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Then\_RB ,\_, seeing\_VBG the\_DT look\_NN of\_IN amazement\_NN on\_IN our\_PRP$ faces\_NNS ,\_, she\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, turning\_VBG from\_IN one\_CD to\_TO the\_DT other\_JJ with\_IN a\_DT troubled\_JJ look\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` What\_WP have\_VBP I\_PRP said\_VBD ?\_.

What\_WP have\_VBP I\_PRP done\_VBN ?\_.

I\_PRP know\_VBP nothing\_NN ,\_, only\_RB that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD lying\_VBG here\_RB ,\_, half\_NN asleep\_RB ,\_, and\_CC heard\_VBD you\_PRP say\_VBP go\_VB on\_IN !\_.

speak\_VB ,\_, I\_PRP command\_VBP you\_PRP !\_. '\_''

It\_PRP seemed\_VBD so\_RB funny\_JJ to\_TO hear\_VB you\_PRP order\_VB me\_PRP about\_IN ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN I\_PRP were\_VBD a\_DT bad\_JJ child\_NN !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, sadly\_RB ,\_, ``\_`` it\_PRP is\_VBZ proof\_JJ ,\_, if\_IN proof\_NN be\_VB needed\_VBN ,\_, of\_IN how\_WRB I\_PRP love\_VBP and\_CC honour\_VBP you\_PRP ,\_, when\_WRB a\_DT word\_NN for\_IN your\_PRP$ good\_NN ,\_, spoken\_VBD more\_RBR earnest\_JJ than\_IN ever\_RB ,\_, can\_MD seem\_VB so\_RB strange\_JJ because\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ to\_TO order\_VB her\_PRP whom\_WP I\_PRP am\_VBP proud\_JJ to\_TO obey\_VB !\_. ''\_''

The\_DT whistles\_NNS are\_VBP sounding\_VBG ;\_: we\_PRP are\_VBP nearing\_VBG Galatz\_NNP .\_.

We\_PRP are\_VBP on\_IN fire\_NN with\_IN anxiety\_NN and\_CC eagerness\_NN .\_.

Mina\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP .\_.

30\_CD October\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP took\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO the\_DT hotel\_NN where\_WRB our\_PRP$ rooms\_NNS had\_VBD been\_VBN ordered\_VBN by\_IN telegraph\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP being\_VBG the\_DT one\_NN who\_WP could\_MD best\_RB be\_VB spared\_VBN ,\_, since\_IN he\_PRP does\_VBZ not\_RB speak\_VB any\_DT foreign\_JJ language\_NN .\_.

The\_DT forces\_NNS were\_VBD distributed\_VBN much\_RB as\_IN they\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN at\_IN Varna\_NNP ,\_, except\_IN that\_DT Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP went\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT Vice-Consul\_NNP ,\_, as\_IN his\_PRP$ rank\_NN might\_MD serve\_VB as\_IN an\_DT immediate\_JJ guarantee\_NN of\_IN some\_DT sort\_NN to\_TO the\_DT official\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP being\_VBG in\_IN extreme\_JJ hurry\_NN .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP and\_CC the\_DT two\_CD doctors\_NNS went\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT shipping\_NN agent\_NN to\_TO learn\_VB particulars\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT arrival\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Czarina\_NNP Catherine\_NNP .\_.

Later\_RB .\_.

--\_: Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP has\_VBZ returned\_VBN .\_.

The\_DT Consul\_NNP is\_VBZ away\_RB ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT Vice-Consul\_NNP sick\_JJ ;\_: so\_IN the\_DT routine\_JJ work\_NN has\_VBZ been\_VBN attended\_VBN to\_TO by\_IN a\_DT clerk\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD very\_RB obliging\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC offered\_VBD to\_TO do\_VB anything\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ power\_NN .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP .\_.

30\_CD October\_NNP .\_.

--\_: At\_IN nine\_CD o'clock\_RB Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP called\_VBD on\_IN Messrs.\_NNP Mackenzie\_NNP &\_CC Steinkoff\_NNP ,\_, the\_DT agents\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT London\_NNP firm\_NN of\_IN Hapgood\_NNP .\_.

They\_PRP had\_VBD received\_VBN a\_DT wire\_NN from\_IN London\_NNP ,\_, in\_IN answer\_NN to\_TO Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP 's\_POS telegraphed\_VBN request\_NN ,\_, asking\_VBG us\_PRP to\_TO show\_VB them\_PRP any\_DT civility\_NN in\_IN their\_PRP$ power\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP were\_VBD more\_JJR than\_IN kind\_NN and\_CC courteous\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC took\_VBD us\_PRP at\_IN once\_RB on\_IN board\_NN the\_DT Czarina\_NNP Catherine\_NNP ,\_, which\_WDT lay\_VBD at\_IN anchor\_NN out\_IN in\_IN the\_DT river\_NN harbour\_NN .\_.

There\_EX we\_PRP saw\_VBD the\_DT Captain\_NNP ,\_, Donelson\_NNP by\_IN name\_NN ,\_, who\_WP told\_VBD us\_PRP of\_IN his\_PRP$ voyage\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP said\_VBD that\_IN in\_IN all\_PDT his\_PRP$ life\_NN he\_PRP had\_VBD never\_RB had\_VBN so\_RB favourable\_JJ a\_DT run\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Man\_NN !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` but\_CC it\_PRP made\_VBD us\_PRP afeard\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN we\_PRP expeckit\_VBP that\_IN we\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB to\_TO pay\_VB for\_IN it\_PRP wi\_FW '\_'' some\_DT rare\_JJ piece\_NN o\_NN '\_'' ill\_JJ luck\_NN ,\_, so\_RB as\_IN to\_TO keep\_VB up\_RP the\_DT average\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP 's\_VBZ no\_DT canny\_JJ to\_TO run\_VB frae\_JJ London\_NNP to\_TO the\_DT Black\_JJ Sea\_NN wi\_NN '\_'' a\_DT wind\_NN ahint\_NN ye\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN the\_DT Deil\_NNP himself\_PRP were\_VBD blawin\_NN '\_'' on\_IN yer\_FW sail\_FW for\_IN his\_PRP$ ain\_NN purpose\_NN .\_.

An\_DT '\_'' a\_DT '\_'' the\_DT time\_NN we\_PRP could\_MD no\_RB speer\_VB a\_DT thing\_NN .\_.

Gin\_NN we\_PRP were\_VBD nigh\_IN a\_DT ship\_NN ,\_, or\_CC a\_DT port\_NN ,\_, or\_CC a\_DT headland\_NN ,\_, a\_DT fog\_NN fell\_VBD on\_IN us\_PRP and\_CC travelled\_VBD wi\_NN '\_'' us\_PRP ,\_, till\_IN when\_WRB after\_IN it\_PRP had\_VBD lifted\_VBN and\_CC we\_PRP looked\_VBD out\_RP ,\_, the\_DT deil\_NN a\_DT thing\_NN could\_MD we\_PRP see\_VB .\_.

We\_PRP ran\_VBD by\_IN Gibraltar\_NNP wi'oot\_FW bein\_FW '\_'' able\_JJ to\_TO signal\_VB ;\_: an\_DT '\_'' till\_IN we\_PRP came\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT Dardanelles\_NNPS and\_CC had\_VBD to\_TO wait\_VB to\_TO get\_VB our\_PRP$ permit\_NN to\_TO pass\_VB ,\_, we\_PRP never\_RB were\_VBD within\_IN hail\_NN o\_NN '\_POS aught\_NN .\_.

At\_IN first\_JJ I\_NN inclined\_VBN to\_TO slack\_VB off\_RP sail\_VB and\_CC beat\_VB about\_IN till\_IN the\_DT fog\_NN was\_VBD lifted\_VBN ;\_: but\_CC whiles\_VBZ ,\_, I\_PRP thocht\_VBP that\_IN if\_IN the\_DT Deil\_NNP was\_VBD minded\_VBN to\_TO get\_VB us\_PRP into\_IN the\_DT Black\_NNP Sea\_NNP quick\_JJ ,\_, he\_PRP was\_VBD like\_IN to\_TO do\_VB it\_PRP whether\_IN we\_PRP would\_MD or\_CC no\_DT .\_.

If\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT quick\_JJ voyage\_NN it\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB no\_RB to\_TO our\_PRP$ miscredit\_NN wi\_NN '\_'' the\_DT owners\_NNS ,\_, or\_CC no\_DT hurt\_NN to\_TO our\_PRP$ traffic\_NN ;\_: an\_DT '\_'' the\_DT Old\_NNP Mon\_NNP who\_WP had\_VBD served\_VBN his\_PRP$ ain\_NN purpose\_NN wad\_NN be\_VB decently\_RB grateful\_JJ to\_TO us\_PRP for\_IN no\_DT hinderin\_NN '\_'' him\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

This\_DT mixture\_NN of\_IN simplicity\_NN and\_CC cunning\_JJ ,\_, of\_IN superstition\_NN and\_CC commercial\_JJ reasoning\_NN ,\_, aroused\_VBD Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Mine\_NNP friend\_NN ,\_, that\_IN Devil\_NNP is\_VBZ more\_RBR clever\_JJ than\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ thought\_VBN by\_IN some\_DT ;\_: and\_CC he\_PRP know\_VBP when\_WRB he\_PRP meet\_VB his\_PRP$ match\_NN !\_. ''\_''

The\_DT skipper\_NN was\_VBD not\_RB displeased\_JJ with\_IN the\_DT compliment\_NN ,\_, and\_CC went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` When\_WRB we\_PRP got\_VBD past\_IN the\_DT Bosphorus\_NNP the\_DT men\_NNS began\_VBD to\_TO grumble\_VB ;\_: some\_DT o\_NN '\_'' them\_PRP ,\_, the\_DT Roumanians\_NNPS ,\_, came\_VBD and\_CC asked\_VBD me\_PRP to\_TO heave\_VB overboard\_RB a\_DT big\_JJ box\_NN which\_WDT had\_VBD been\_VBN put\_VBN on\_IN board\_NN by\_IN a\_DT queer\_FW lookin\_FW '\_POS old\_JJ man\_NN just\_RB before\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD started\_VBN frae\_JJ London\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD seen\_VBN them\_PRP speer\_VBP at\_IN the\_DT fellow\_NN ,\_, and\_CC put\_VBD out\_RP their\_PRP$ twa\_NN fingers\_NNS when\_WRB they\_PRP saw\_VBD him\_PRP ,\_, to\_TO guard\_VB against\_IN the\_DT evil\_JJ eye\_NN .\_.

Man\_NN !\_.

but\_CC the\_DT supersteetion\_NN of\_IN foreigners\_NNS is\_VBZ pairfectly\_RB rideeculous\_JJ !\_.

I\_PRP sent\_VBD them\_PRP aboot\_VBP their\_PRP$ business\_NN pretty\_RB quick\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC as\_RB just\_RB after\_IN a\_DT fog\_NN closed\_VBN in\_RP on\_IN us\_PRP I\_PRP felt\_VBD a\_DT wee\_NN bit\_NN as\_IN they\_PRP did\_VBD anent\_JJ something\_NN ,\_, though\_IN I\_PRP would\_MD n't\_RB say\_VB it\_PRP was\_VBD agin\_IN the\_DT big\_JJ box\_NN .\_.

Well\_RB ,\_, on\_IN we\_PRP went\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN the\_DT fog\_NN did\_VBD n't\_RB let\_VB up\_RP for\_IN five\_CD days\_NNS I\_PRP joost\_VBP let\_VB the\_DT wind\_NN carry\_VBP us\_PRP ;\_: for\_IN if\_IN the\_DT Deil\_NNP wanted\_VBD to\_TO get\_VB somewheres\_NNS --\_: well\_RB ,\_, he\_PRP would\_MD fetch\_VB it\_PRP up\_RP a\_DT '\_POS reet\_NN .\_.

An\_DT '\_'' if\_IN he\_PRP did\_VBD n't\_RB ,\_, well\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP 'd\_MD keep\_VB a\_DT sharp\_JJ lookout\_NN anyhow\_NN .\_.

Sure\_JJ eneuch\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT fair\_JJ way\_NN and\_CC deep\_JJ water\_NN all\_PDT the\_DT time\_NN ;\_: and\_CC two\_CD days\_NNS ago\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB the\_DT mornin\_NN '\_POS sun\_NN came\_VBD through\_IN the\_DT fog\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP found\_VBD ourselves\_PRP just\_RB in\_IN the\_DT river\_NN opposite\_JJ Galatz\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT Roumanians\_NNPS were\_VBD wild\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC wanted\_VBD me\_PRP right\_JJ or\_CC wrong\_JJ to\_TO take\_VB out\_RP the\_DT box\_NN and\_CC fling\_VBG it\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT river\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO argy\_FW wi\_FW '\_'' them\_PRP aboot\_VBP it\_PRP wi\_FW '\_'' a\_DT handspike\_NN ;\_: an\_DT '\_'' when\_WRB the\_DT last\_JJ o\_NN '\_'' them\_PRP rose\_VBD off\_RP the\_DT deck\_NN wi\_NN '\_'' his\_PRP$ head\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ hand\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP had\_VBD convinced\_VBN them\_PRP that\_IN ,\_, evil\_JJ eye\_NN or\_CC no\_DT evil\_JJ eye\_NN ,\_, the\_DT property\_NN and\_CC the\_DT trust\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ owners\_NNS were\_VBD better\_JJR in\_IN my\_PRP$ hands\_NNS than\_IN in\_IN the\_DT river\_NN Danube\_NNP .\_.

They\_PRP had\_VBD ,\_, mind\_VB ye\_PRP ,\_, taken\_VBN the\_DT box\_NN on\_IN the\_DT deck\_NN ready\_JJ to\_TO fling\_VB in\_IN ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD marked\_VBN Galatz\_NNP via\_IN Varna\_NNP ,\_, I\_PRP thocht\_VBP I\_PRP 'd\_MD let\_VB it\_PRP lie\_VB till\_IN we\_PRP discharged\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT port\_NN an\_DT '\_'' get\_VB rid\_JJ o\_NN '\_'' t\_NN althegither\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP did\_VBD n't\_RB do\_VB much\_JJ clearin\_NN '\_'' that\_DT day\_NN ,\_, an\_DT '\_'' had\_VBD to\_TO remain\_VB the\_DT nicht\_NN at\_IN anchor\_NN ;\_: but\_CC in\_IN the\_DT mornin\_NN '\_'' ,\_, braw\_VB an\_DT '\_'' airly\_RB ,\_, an\_DT hour\_NN before\_IN sun-up\_NN ,\_, a\_DT man\_NN came\_VBD aboard\_IN wi\_NN '\_'' an\_DT order\_NN ,\_, written\_VBN to\_TO him\_PRP from\_IN England\_NNP ,\_, to\_TO receive\_VB a\_DT box\_NN marked\_JJ for\_IN one\_CD Count\_NNP Dracula\_NNP .\_.

Sure\_JJ eneuch\_NN the\_DT matter\_NN was\_VBD one\_CD ready\_JJ to\_TO his\_PRP$ hand\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD his\_PRP$ papers\_NNS a\_DT '\_'' reet\_NN ,\_, an\_DT '\_'' glad\_JJ I\_PRP was\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB rid\_JJ o\_NN '\_'' the\_DT dam\_NN '\_POS thing\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD beginnin\_NN '\_POS masel\_NN '\_'' to\_TO feel\_VB uneasy\_JJ at\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

If\_IN the\_DT Deil\_NNP did\_VBD have\_VB any\_DT luggage\_NN aboord\_VBD the\_DT ship\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP 'm\_VBP thinkin\_VBG '\_'' it\_PRP was\_VBD nane\_FW ither\_FW than\_IN that\_DT same\_JJ !\_. ''\_''

``\_`` What\_WP was\_VBD the\_DT name\_NN of\_IN the\_DT man\_NN who\_WP took\_VBD it\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

asked\_VBD Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP with\_IN restrained\_JJ eagerness\_NN .\_.

``\_`` I\_PRP 'll\_MD be\_VB tellin\_VBN '\_'' ye\_PRP quick\_JJ !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP answered\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, stepping\_VBG down\_RP to\_TO his\_PRP$ cabin\_NN ,\_, produced\_VBD a\_DT receipt\_NN signed\_VBN ``\_`` Immanuel\_NNP Hildesheim\_NNP .\_. ''\_''

Burgen-strasse\_NN 16\_CD was\_VBD the\_DT address\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP found\_VBD out\_RP that\_IN this\_DT was\_VBD all\_PDT the\_DT Captain\_NNP knew\_VBD ;\_: so\_RB with\_IN thanks\_NNS we\_PRP came\_VBD away\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP found\_VBD Hildesheim\_NNP in\_IN his\_PRP$ office\_NN ,\_, a\_DT Hebrew\_NNP of\_IN rather\_RB the\_DT Adelphi\_NNP Theatre\_NNP type\_NN ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT nose\_NN like\_IN a\_DT sheep\_NN ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT fez\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ arguments\_NNS were\_VBD pointed\_VBN with\_IN specie\_NN --\_: we\_PRP doing\_VBG the\_DT punctuation\_NN --\_: and\_CC with\_IN a\_DT little\_JJ bargaining\_NN he\_PRP told\_VBD us\_PRP what\_WP he\_PRP knew\_VBD .\_.

This\_DT turned\_VBD out\_RP to\_TO be\_VB simple\_JJ but\_CC important\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD received\_VBN a\_DT letter\_NN from\_IN Mr.\_NNP de\_NNP Ville\_NNP of\_IN London\_NNP ,\_, telling\_VBG him\_PRP to\_TO receive\_VB ,\_, if\_IN possible\_JJ before\_IN sunrise\_NN so\_RB as\_IN to\_TO avoid\_VB customs\_NNS ,\_, a\_DT box\_NN which\_WDT would\_MD arrive\_VB at\_IN Galatz\_NNP in\_IN the\_DT Czarina\_NNP Catherine\_NNP .\_.

This\_DT he\_PRP was\_VBD to\_TO give\_VB in\_IN charge\_NN to\_TO a\_DT certain\_JJ Petrof\_NNP Skinsky\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP dealt\_VBD with\_IN the\_DT Slovaks\_NNPS who\_WP traded\_VBD down\_RP the\_DT river\_NN to\_TO the\_DT port\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN paid\_VBN for\_IN his\_PRP$ work\_NN by\_IN an\_DT English\_JJ bank\_NN note\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT had\_VBD been\_VBN duly\_RB cashed\_VBN for\_IN gold\_NN at\_IN the\_DT Danube\_NNP International\_NNP Bank\_NNP .\_.

When\_WRB Skinsky\_NNP had\_VBD come\_VBN to\_TO him\_PRP ,\_, he\_PRP had\_VBD taken\_VBN him\_PRP to\_TO the\_DT ship\_NN and\_CC handed\_NN over\_IN the\_DT box\_NN ,\_, so\_RB as\_IN to\_TO save\_VB porterage\_NN .\_.

That\_DT was\_VBD all\_DT he\_PRP knew\_VBD .\_.

We\_PRP then\_RB sought\_VBD for\_IN Skinsky\_NNP ,\_, but\_CC were\_VBD unable\_JJ to\_TO find\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

One\_CD of\_IN his\_PRP$ neighbours\_NNS ,\_, who\_WP did\_VBD not\_RB seem\_VB to\_TO bear\_VB him\_PRP any\_DT affection\_NN ,\_, said\_VBD that\_IN he\_PRP had\_VBD gone\_VBN away\_RB two\_CD days\_NNS before\_RB ,\_, no\_DT one\_NN knew\_VBD whither\_NN .\_.

This\_DT was\_VBD corroborated\_VBN by\_IN his\_PRP$ landlord\_NN ,\_, who\_WP had\_VBD received\_VBN by\_IN messenger\_NN the\_DT key\_NN of\_IN the\_DT house\_NN together\_RB with\_IN the\_DT rent\_NN due\_JJ ,\_, in\_IN English\_JJ money\_NN .\_.

This\_DT had\_VBD been\_VBN between\_IN ten\_CD and\_CC eleven\_NNS o'clock\_RB last\_JJ night\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP were\_VBD at\_IN a\_DT standstill\_NN again\_RB .\_.

Whilst\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD talking\_VBG one\_CD came\_VBD running\_VBG and\_CC breathlessly\_RB gasped\_VBD out\_RP that\_IN the\_DT body\_NN of\_IN Skinsky\_NNP had\_VBD been\_VBN found\_VBN inside\_IN the\_DT wall\_NN of\_IN the\_DT churchyard\_NN of\_IN St.\_NNP Peter\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN the\_DT throat\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN torn\_VBN open\_JJ as\_IN if\_IN by\_IN some\_DT wild\_JJ animal\_NN .\_.

Those\_DT we\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN speaking\_VBG with\_IN ran\_VBD off\_RP to\_TO see\_VB the\_DT horror\_NN ,\_, the\_DT women\_NNS crying\_VBG out\_RP ``\_`` This\_DT is\_VBZ the\_DT work\_NN of\_IN a\_DT Slovak\_NN !\_. ''\_''

We\_PRP hurried\_VBD away\_RB lest\_IN we\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN in\_IN some\_DT way\_NN drawn\_VBN into\_IN the\_DT affair\_NN ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB detained\_VBN .\_.

As\_IN we\_PRP came\_VBD home\_NN we\_PRP could\_MD arrive\_VB at\_IN no\_DT definite\_JJ conclusion\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP were\_VBD all\_DT convinced\_VBN that\_IN the\_DT box\_NN was\_VBD on\_IN its\_PRP$ way\_NN ,\_, by\_IN water\_NN ,\_, to\_TO somewhere\_RB ;\_: but\_CC where\_WRB that\_DT might\_MD be\_VB we\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB to\_TO discover\_VB .\_.

With\_IN heavy\_JJ hearts\_NNS we\_PRP came\_VBD home\_NN to\_TO the\_DT hotel\_NN to\_TO Mina\_NNP .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP met\_VBD together\_RB ,\_, the\_DT first\_JJ thing\_NN was\_VBD to\_TO consult\_VB as\_IN to\_TO taking\_VBG Mina\_NNP again\_RB into\_IN our\_PRP$ confidence\_NN .\_.

Things\_NNS are\_VBP getting\_VBG desperate\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ at\_IN least\_JJS a\_DT chance\_NN ,\_, though\_IN a\_DT hazardous\_JJ one\_CD .\_.

As\_IN a\_DT preliminary\_JJ step\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP was\_VBD released\_VBN from\_IN my\_PRP$ promise\_NN to\_TO her\_PRP .\_.

Mina\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP .\_.

30\_CD October\_NNP ,\_, evening\_NN .\_.

--\_: They\_PRP were\_VBD so\_RB tired\_VBN and\_CC worn\_VBN out\_RP and\_CC dispirited\_VBD that\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD nothing\_NN to\_TO be\_VB done\_VBN till\_IN they\_PRP had\_VBD some\_DT rest\_NN ;\_: so\_IN I\_PRP asked\_VBD them\_PRP all\_DT to\_TO lie\_VB down\_RP for\_IN half\_PDT an\_DT hour\_NN whilst\_IN I\_PRP should\_MD enter\_VB everything\_NN up\_IN to\_TO the\_DT moment\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP feel\_VBP so\_RB grateful\_JJ to\_TO the\_DT man\_NN who\_WP invented\_VBD the\_DT ``\_`` Traveller\_NNP 's\_POS ''\_'' typewriter\_NN ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP for\_IN getting\_VBG this\_DT one\_NN for\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB felt\_VBN quite\_RB ;\_: astray\_RB doing\_VBG the\_DT work\_NN if\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO write\_VB with\_IN a\_DT pen\_NN ...\_: .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ all\_DT done\_VBN ;\_: poor\_JJ dear\_RB ,\_, dear\_RB Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, what\_WP he\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB suffered\_VBN ,\_, what\_WP must\_MD he\_PRP be\_VB suffering\_VBG now\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP lies\_VBZ on\_IN the\_DT sofa\_NN hardly\_RB seeming\_VBG to\_TO breathe\_VB ,\_, and\_CC his\_PRP$ whole\_JJ body\_NN appears\_VBZ in\_IN collapse\_NN .\_.

His\_PRP$ brows\_NNS are\_VBP knit\_VBN ;\_: his\_PRP$ face\_NN is\_VBZ drawn\_VBN with\_IN pain\_NN .\_.

Poor\_NNP fellow\_NN ,\_, maybe\_RB he\_PRP is\_VBZ thinking\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP can\_MD see\_VB his\_PRP$ face\_NN all\_DT wrinkled\_VBD up\_RP with\_IN the\_DT concentration\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ thoughts\_NNS .\_.

Oh\_UH !\_.

if\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD only\_RB help\_VB at\_IN all\_DT ...\_: .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD do\_VB what\_WP I\_PRP can\_MD .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP asked\_VBN Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP has\_VBZ got\_VBN me\_PRP all\_PDT the\_DT papers\_NNS that\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB yet\_RB seen\_VBN ...\_: .\_.

Whilst\_IN they\_PRP are\_VBP resting\_VBG ,\_, I\_PRP shall\_MD go\_VB over\_IN all\_DT carefully\_RB ,\_, and\_CC perhaps\_RB I\_PRP may\_MD arrive\_VB at\_IN some\_DT conclusion\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD try\_VB to\_TO follow\_VB the\_DT Professor\_NNP 's\_POS example\_NN ,\_, and\_CC think\_VBP without\_IN prejudice\_NN on\_IN the\_DT facts\_NNS before\_IN me\_PRP ...\_: .\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP believe\_VB that\_IN under\_IN God\_NNP 's\_POS providence\_NN I\_PRP have\_VBP made\_VBN a\_DT discovery\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD get\_VB the\_DT maps\_NNS and\_CC look\_VB over\_IN them\_PRP ...\_: .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP more\_RBR than\_IN ever\_RB sure\_JJ that\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP right\_JJ .\_.

My\_PRP$ new\_JJ conclusion\_NN is\_VBZ ready\_JJ ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP shall\_MD get\_VB our\_PRP$ party\_NN together\_RB and\_CC read\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

They\_PRP can\_MD judge\_VB it\_PRP ;\_: it\_PRP is\_VBZ well\_RB to\_TO be\_VB accurate\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC every\_DT minute\_NN is\_VBZ precious\_JJ .\_.

Mina\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS Memorandum\_NN .\_.

-LRB-\_-LRB- Entered\_VBN in\_IN her\_PRP$ Journal\_NNP .\_. -RRB-\_-RRB-

Ground\_NN of\_IN inquiry\_NN .\_.

--\_: Count\_NNP Dracula\_NNP 's\_POS problem\_NN is\_VBZ to\_TO get\_VB back\_RB to\_TO his\_PRP$ own\_JJ place\_NN .\_.

-LRB-\_-LRB- a\_DT -RRB-\_-RRB- He\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB brought\_VBN back\_RP by\_IN some\_DT one\_CD .\_.

This\_DT is\_VBZ evident\_JJ ;\_: for\_IN had\_VBD he\_PRP power\_NN to\_TO move\_VB himself\_PRP as\_IN he\_PRP wished\_VBD he\_PRP could\_MD go\_VB either\_CC as\_IN man\_NN ,\_, or\_CC wolf\_NN ,\_, or\_CC bat\_NN ,\_, or\_CC in\_IN some\_DT other\_JJ way\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP evidently\_RB fears\_VBZ discovery\_NN or\_CC interference\_NN ,\_, in\_IN the\_DT state\_NN of\_IN helplessness\_NN in\_IN which\_WDT he\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB --\_: confined\_VBN as\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ between\_IN dawn\_NN and\_CC sunset\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ wooden\_JJ box\_NN .\_.

-LRB-\_-LRB- b\_LS -RRB-\_-RRB- How\_WRB is\_VBZ he\_PRP to\_TO be\_VB taken\_VBN ?\_.

--\_: Here\_RB a\_DT process\_NN of\_IN exclusions\_NNS may\_MD help\_VB us\_PRP .\_.

By\_IN road\_NN ,\_, by\_IN rail\_NN ,\_, by\_IN water\_NN ?\_.

1\_CD .\_.

By\_IN Road\_NNP .\_.

--\_: There\_EX are\_VBP endless\_JJ difficulties\_NNS ,\_, especially\_RB in\_IN leaving\_VBG the\_DT city\_NN .\_.

-LRB-\_-LRB- x\_LS -RRB-\_-RRB- There\_EX are\_VBP people\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC people\_NNS are\_VBP curious\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC investigate\_VB .\_.

A\_DT hint\_NN ,\_, a\_DT surmise\_NN ,\_, a\_DT doubt\_NN as\_IN to\_TO what\_WP might\_MD be\_VB in\_IN the\_DT box\_NN ,\_, would\_MD destroy\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

-LRB-\_-LRB- y\_NN -RRB-\_-RRB- There\_EX are\_VBP ,\_, or\_CC there\_EX may\_MD be\_VB ,\_, customs\_NNS and\_CC octroi\_JJ officers\_NNS to\_TO pass\_VB .\_.

-LRB-\_-LRB- z\_SYM -RRB-\_-RRB- His\_PRP$ pursuers\_NNS might\_MD follow\_VB .\_.

This\_DT is\_VBZ his\_PRP$ highest\_JJS fear\_NN ;\_: and\_CC in\_IN order\_NN to\_TO prevent\_VB his\_PRP$ being\_VBG betrayed\_VBN he\_PRP has\_VBZ repelled\_VBN ,\_, so\_RB far\_RB as\_IN he\_PRP can\_MD ,\_, even\_RB his\_PRP$ victim\_NN --\_: me\_PRP !\_.

2\_CD .\_.

By\_IN Rail\_NNP .\_.

--\_: There\_EX is\_VBZ no\_DT one\_NN in\_IN charge\_NN of\_IN the\_DT box\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB to\_TO take\_VB its\_PRP$ chance\_NN of\_IN being\_VBG delayed\_VBN ;\_: and\_CC delay\_NN would\_MD be\_VB fatal\_JJ ,\_, with\_IN enemies\_NNS on\_IN the\_DT track\_NN .\_.

True\_JJ ,\_, he\_PRP might\_MD escape\_VB at\_IN night\_NN ;\_: but\_CC what\_WP would\_MD he\_PRP be\_VB ,\_, if\_IN left\_VBN in\_IN a\_DT strange\_JJ place\_NN with\_IN no\_DT refuge\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP could\_MD fly\_VB to\_TO ?\_.

This\_DT is\_VBZ not\_RB what\_WP he\_PRP intends\_VBZ ;\_: and\_CC he\_PRP does\_VBZ not\_RB mean\_VB to\_TO risk\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

3\_LS .\_.

By\_IN Water\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Here\_RB is\_VBZ the\_DT safest\_JJS way\_NN ,\_, in\_IN one\_CD respect\_NN ,\_, but\_CC with\_IN most\_JJS danger\_NN in\_IN another\_DT .\_.

On\_IN the\_DT water\_NN he\_PRP is\_VBZ powerless\_JJ except\_IN at\_IN night\_NN ;\_: even\_RB then\_RB he\_PRP can\_MD only\_RB summon\_VB fog\_NN and\_CC storm\_NN and\_CC snow\_NN and\_CC his\_PRP$ wolves\_NNS .\_.

But\_CC were\_VBD he\_PRP wrecked\_VBD ,\_, the\_DT living\_VBG water\_NN would\_MD engulf\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, helpless\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC he\_PRP would\_MD indeed\_RB be\_VB lost\_VBN .\_.

He\_PRP could\_MD have\_VB the\_DT vessel\_NN drive\_NN to\_TO land\_VB ;\_: but\_CC if\_IN it\_PRP were\_VBD unfriendly\_JJ land\_NN ,\_, wherein\_WRB he\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB free\_JJ to\_TO move\_VB ,\_, his\_PRP$ position\_NN would\_MD still\_RB be\_VB desperate\_JJ .\_.

We\_PRP know\_VBP from\_IN the\_DT record\_NN that\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT water\_NN ;\_: so\_RB what\_WP we\_PRP have\_VBP to\_TO do\_VB is\_VBZ to\_TO ascertain\_VB what\_WP water\_NN .\_.

The\_DT first\_JJ thing\_NN is\_VBZ to\_TO realise\_VB exactly\_RB what\_WP he\_PRP has\_VBZ done\_VBN as\_RB yet\_RB ;\_: we\_PRP may\_MD ,\_, then\_RB ,\_, get\_VB a\_DT light\_NN on\_IN what\_WP his\_PRP$ later\_JJ task\_NN is\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB .\_.

Firstly\_RB .\_.

--\_: We\_PRP must\_MD differentiate\_VB between\_IN what\_WP he\_PRP did\_VBD in\_IN London\_NNP as\_IN part\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ general\_JJ plan\_NN of\_IN action\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB he\_PRP was\_VBD pressed\_VBN for\_IN moments\_NNS and\_CC had\_VBD to\_TO arrange\_VB as\_RB best\_RB he\_PRP could\_MD .\_.

Secondly\_RB we\_PRP must\_MD see\_VB ,\_, as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN we\_PRP can\_MD surmise\_VB it\_PRP from\_IN the\_DT facts\_NNS we\_PRP know\_VBP of\_IN ,\_, what\_WP he\_PRP has\_VBZ done\_VBN here\_RB .\_.

As\_IN to\_TO the\_DT first\_JJ ,\_, he\_PRP evidently\_RB intended\_VBD to\_TO arrive\_VB at\_IN Galatz\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC sent\_VBD invoice\_NN to\_TO Varna\_NNP to\_TO deceive\_VB us\_PRP lest\_IN we\_PRP should\_MD ascertain\_VB his\_PRP$ means\_NNS of\_IN exit\_NN from\_IN England\_NNP ;\_: his\_PRP$ immediate\_JJ and\_CC sole\_JJ purpose\_NN then\_RB was\_VBD to\_TO escape\_VB .\_.

The\_DT proof\_NN of\_IN this\_DT ,\_, is\_VBZ the\_DT letter\_NN of\_IN instructions\_NNS sent\_VBN to\_TO Immanuel\_NNP Hildesheim\_NNP to\_TO clear\_VB and\_CC take\_VB away\_RP the\_DT box\_NN before\_IN sunrise\_NN .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ also\_RB the\_DT instruction\_NN to\_TO Petrof\_NNP Skinsky\_NNP .\_.

These\_DT we\_PRP must\_MD only\_RB guess\_VB at\_IN ;\_: but\_CC there\_EX must\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN some\_DT letter\_NN or\_CC message\_NN ,\_, since\_IN Skinsky\_NNP came\_VBD to\_TO Hildesheim\_NNP .\_.

That\_DT ,\_, so\_RB far\_RB ,\_, his\_PRP$ plans\_NNS were\_VBD successful\_JJ we\_PRP know\_VBP .\_.

The\_DT Czarina\_NNP Catherine\_NNP made\_VBD a\_DT phenomenally\_RB quick\_JJ journey\_NN --\_: so\_RB much\_RB so\_IN that\_IN Captain\_NNP Donelson\_NNP 's\_POS suspicions\_NNS were\_VBD aroused\_VBN ;\_: but\_CC his\_PRP$ superstition\_NN united\_VBN with\_IN his\_PRP$ canniness\_NN played\_VBD the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS game\_NN for\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP ran\_VBD with\_IN his\_PRP$ favouring\_VBG wind\_NN through\_IN fogs\_NNS and\_CC all\_DT till\_IN he\_PRP brought\_VBD up\_RP blindfold\_NN at\_IN Galatz\_NNP .\_.

That\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS arrangements\_NNS were\_VBD well\_RB made\_VBN ,\_, has\_VBZ been\_VBN proved\_VBN .\_.

Hildesheim\_NNP cleared\_VBD the\_DT box\_NN ,\_, took\_VBD it\_PRP off\_RP ,\_, and\_CC gave\_VBD it\_PRP to\_TO Skinsky\_NNP .\_.

Skinsky\_NNP took\_VBD it\_PRP --\_: and\_CC here\_RB we\_PRP lose\_VBP the\_DT trail\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP only\_RB know\_VBP that\_IN the\_DT box\_NN is\_VBZ somewhere\_RB on\_IN the\_DT water\_NN ,\_, moving\_VBG along\_RB .\_.

The\_DT customs\_NNS and\_CC the\_DT octroi\_NN ,\_, if\_IN there\_EX be\_VB any\_DT ,\_, have\_VBP been\_VBN avoided\_VBN .\_.

Now\_RB we\_PRP come\_VBP to\_TO what\_WP the\_DT Count\_NNP must\_MD have\_VB done\_VBN after\_IN his\_PRP$ arrival\_NN --\_: on\_IN land\_NN ,\_, at\_IN Galatz\_NNP .\_.

The\_DT box\_NN was\_VBD given\_VBN to\_TO Skinsky\_NNP before\_IN sunrise\_NN .\_.

At\_IN sunrise\_NN the\_DT Count\_NNP could\_MD appear\_VB in\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ form\_NN .\_.

Here\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP ask\_VBP why\_WRB Skinsky\_NNP was\_VBD chosen\_VBN at\_IN all\_DT to\_TO aid\_VB in\_IN the\_DT work\_NN ?\_.

In\_IN my\_PRP$ husband\_NN 's\_POS diary\_NN ,\_, Skinsky\_NNP is\_VBZ mentioned\_VBN as\_IN dealing\_VBG with\_IN the\_DT Slovaks\_NNPS who\_WP trade\_VBP down\_RP the\_DT river\_NN to\_TO the\_DT port\_NN ;\_: and\_CC the\_DT man\_NN 's\_POS remark\_NN ,\_, that\_IN the\_DT murder\_NN was\_VBD the\_DT work\_NN of\_IN a\_DT Slovak\_NNP ,\_, showed\_VBD the\_DT general\_JJ feeling\_NN against\_IN his\_PRP$ class\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Count\_NNP wanted\_VBD isolation\_NN .\_.

My\_PRP$ surmise\_NN is\_VBZ ,\_, this\_DT :\_: that\_IN in\_IN London\_NNP the\_DT Count\_NNP decided\_VBD to\_TO get\_VB back\_RB to\_TO his\_PRP$ castle\_NN by\_IN water\_NN ,\_, as\_IN the\_DT most\_RBS safe\_JJ and\_CC secret\_JJ way\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD brought\_VBN from\_IN the\_DT castle\_NN by\_IN Szgany\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC probably\_RB they\_PRP delivered\_VBD their\_PRP$ cargo\_NN to\_TO Slovaks\_NNPS who\_WP took\_VBD the\_DT boxes\_NNS to\_TO Varna\_NNP ,\_, for\_IN there\_EX they\_PRP were\_VBD shipped\_VBN for\_IN London\_NNP .\_.

Thus\_RB the\_DT Count\_NN had\_VBD knowledge\_NN of\_IN the\_DT persons\_NNS who\_WP could\_MD arrange\_VB this\_DT service\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB the\_DT box\_NN was\_VBD on\_IN land\_NN ,\_, before\_IN sunrise\_NN or\_CC after\_IN sunset\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP came\_VBD out\_RP from\_IN his\_PRP$ box\_NN ,\_, met\_VBD Skinsky\_NNP and\_CC instructed\_VBD him\_PRP what\_WP to\_TO do\_VB as\_IN to\_TO arranging\_VBG the\_DT carriage\_NN of\_IN the\_DT box\_NN up\_RP some\_DT river\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB this\_DT was\_VBD done\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN all\_DT was\_VBD in\_IN train\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP blotted\_VBD out\_RP his\_PRP$ traces\_NNS ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP thought\_VBD ,\_, by\_IN murdering\_VBG his\_PRP$ agent\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP examined\_VBN the\_DT map\_NN and\_CC find\_VBP that\_IN the\_DT river\_NN most\_RBS suitable\_JJ for\_IN the\_DT Slovaks\_NNPS to\_TO have\_VB ascended\_VBN is\_VBZ either\_CC the\_DT Pruth\_NNP or\_CC the\_DT Sereth\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP read\_VBP in\_IN the\_DT typescript\_NN that\_IN in\_IN my\_PRP$ trance\_NN I\_PRP heard\_VBD cows\_NNS low\_JJ and\_CC water\_NN swirling\_VBG level\_NN with\_IN my\_PRP$ ears\_NNS and\_CC the\_DT creaking\_NN of\_IN wood\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Count\_NN in\_IN his\_PRP$ box\_NN ,\_, then\_RB ,\_, was\_VBD on\_IN a\_DT river\_NN in\_IN an\_DT open\_JJ boat\_NN --\_: propelled\_VBD probably\_RB either\_CC by\_IN oars\_NNS or\_CC poles\_NNS ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT banks\_NNS are\_VBP near\_JJ and\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ working\_VBG against\_IN stream\_NN .\_.

There\_EX would\_MD be\_VB no\_DT such\_JJ sound\_NN if\_IN floating\_VBG down\_RP stream\_NN .\_.

Of\_IN course\_NN it\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB be\_VB either\_CC the\_DT Sereth\_NNP or\_CC the\_DT Pruth\_NNP ,\_, but\_CC we\_PRP may\_MD possibly\_RB investigate\_VB further\_RB .\_.

Now\_RB of\_IN these\_DT two\_CD ,\_, the\_DT Pruth\_NNP is\_VBZ the\_DT more\_RBR easily\_RB navigated\_VBN ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT Sereth\_NNP is\_VBZ ,\_, at\_IN Fundu\_NNP ,\_, joined\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT Bistritza\_NNP which\_WDT runs\_VBZ up\_RP round\_VB the\_DT Borgo\_NNP Pass\_NN .\_.

The\_DT loop\_NN it\_PRP makes\_VBZ is\_VBZ manifestly\_RB as\_RB close\_JJ to\_TO Dracula\_NNP 's\_POS castle\_NN as\_IN can\_MD be\_VB got\_VBN by\_IN water\_NN .\_.

Mina\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP --\_: continued\_VBD .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP had\_VBD done\_VBN reading\_NN ,\_, Jonathan\_NNP took\_VBD me\_PRP in\_IN his\_PRP$ arms\_NNS and\_CC kissed\_VBD me\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT others\_NNS kept\_VBD shaking\_VBG me\_PRP by\_IN both\_DT hands\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Our\_PRP$ dear\_RB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP is\_VBZ once\_RB more\_JJR our\_PRP$ teacher\_NN .\_.

Her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS have\_VBP been\_VBN where\_WRB we\_PRP were\_VBD blinded\_VBN .\_.

Now\_RB we\_PRP are\_VBP on\_IN the\_DT track\_NN once\_RB again\_RB ,\_, and\_CC this\_DT time\_NN we\_PRP may\_MD succeed\_VB .\_.

Our\_PRP$ enemy\_NN is\_VBZ at\_IN his\_PRP$ most\_RBS helpless\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC if\_IN we\_PRP can\_MD come\_VB on\_IN him\_PRP by\_IN day\_NN ,\_, on\_IN the\_DT water\_NN ,\_, our\_PRP$ task\_NN will\_MD be\_VB over\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ a\_DT start\_NN ,\_, but\_CC he\_PRP is\_VBZ powerless\_JJ to\_TO hasten\_VB ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB leave\_VB his\_PRP$ box\_NN lest\_IN those\_DT who\_WP carry\_VBP him\_PRP may\_MD suspect\_VB ;\_: for\_IN them\_PRP to\_TO suspect\_VB would\_MD be\_VB to\_TO prompt\_VB them\_PRP to\_TO throw\_VB him\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT stream\_NN where\_WRB he\_PRP perish\_VBP .\_.

This\_DT he\_PRP knows\_VBZ ,\_, and\_CC will\_MD not\_RB .\_.

Now\_RB men\_NNS ,\_, to\_TO our\_PRP$ Council\_NNP of\_IN War\_NNP ;\_: for\_IN ,\_, here\_RB and\_CC now\_RB ,\_, we\_PRP must\_MD plan\_VB what\_WP each\_DT and\_CC all\_DT shall\_MD do\_VB .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` I\_PRP shall\_MD get\_VB a\_DT steam\_NN launch\_NN and\_CC follow\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` And\_CC I\_PRP ,\_, horses\_NNS to\_TO follow\_VB on\_IN the\_DT bank\_NN lest\_IN by\_IN chance\_NN he\_PRP land\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP .\_.

``\_`` Good\_JJ !\_. ''\_''

said\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP ,\_, ``\_`` both\_DT good\_JJ .\_.

But\_CC neither\_DT must\_MD go\_VB alone\_RB .\_.

There\_EX must\_MD be\_VB force\_NN to\_TO overcome\_VB force\_NN if\_IN need\_NN be\_VB ;\_: the\_DT Slovak\_NNP is\_VBZ strong\_JJ and\_CC rough\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP carries\_VBZ rude\_JJ arms\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

All\_PDT the\_DT men\_NNS smiled\_VBD ,\_, for\_IN amongst\_IN them\_PRP they\_PRP carried\_VBD a\_DT small\_JJ arsenal\_NN .\_.

Said\_NNP Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP have\_VBP brought\_VBN some\_DT Winchesters\_NNS ;\_: they\_PRP are\_VBP pretty\_RB handy\_JJ in\_IN a\_DT crowd\_NN ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX may\_MD be\_VB wolves\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT Count\_NNP ,\_, if\_IN you\_PRP remember\_VBP ,\_, took\_VBD some\_DT other\_JJ precautions\_NNS ;\_: he\_PRP made\_VBD some\_DT requisitions\_NNS on\_IN others\_NNS that\_IN Mrs.\_NNP Harker\_NNP could\_MD not\_RB quite\_RB hear\_VB or\_CC understand\_VB .\_.

We\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB ready\_JJ at\_IN all\_DT points\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP think\_VBP I\_PRP had\_VBD better\_RBR go\_VB with\_IN Quincey\_NNP .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP been\_VBN accustomed\_VBN to\_TO hunt\_NN together\_RB ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP two\_CD ,\_, well\_RB armed\_VBN ,\_, will\_MD be\_VB a\_DT match\_NN for\_IN whatever\_WDT may\_MD come\_VB along\_RB .\_.

You\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB be\_VB alone\_RB ,\_, Art\_NNP .\_.

It\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB necessary\_JJ to\_TO fight\_VB the\_DT Slovaks\_NNPS ,\_, and\_CC a\_DT chance\_NN thrust\_NN --\_: for\_IN I\_PRP do\_VBP n't\_RB suppose\_VB these\_DT fellows\_NNS carry\_VBP guns\_NNS --\_: would\_MD undo\_VB all\_DT our\_PRP$ plans\_NNS .\_.

There\_EX must\_MD be\_VB no\_DT chances\_NNS ,\_, this\_DT time\_NN ;\_: we\_PRP shall\_MD ,\_, not\_RB rest\_VB until\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS head\_NN and\_CC body\_NN have\_VBP been\_VBN separated\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP are\_VBP sure\_JJ that\_IN he\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB re-incarnate\_VB .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP looked\_VBD at\_IN Jonathan\_NNP as\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC Jonathan\_NNP looked\_VBD at\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB that\_IN the\_DT poor\_NN dear\_RB was\_VBD torn\_VBN about\_RB in\_IN his\_PRP$ mind\_NN .\_.

Of\_IN course\_NN he\_PRP wanted\_VBD to\_TO be\_VB with\_IN me\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC then\_RB the\_DT boat\_NN service\_NN would\_MD ,\_, most\_RBS likely\_RB ,\_, be\_VB the\_DT one\_NN which\_WDT would\_MD destroy\_VB the\_DT ...\_: the\_DT ...\_: the\_DT ...\_: Vampire\_NNP .\_.

-LRB-\_-LRB- Why\_WRB did\_VBD I\_PRP hesitate\_VB to\_TO write\_VB the\_DT word\_NN ?\_. -RRB-\_-RRB-

He\_PRP was\_VBD silent\_JJ awhile\_RB ,\_, and\_CC during\_IN his\_PRP$ silence\_NN Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP spoke\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Friend\_NN Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, this\_DT is\_VBZ to\_TO you\_PRP for\_IN twice\_JJ reasons\_NNS .\_.

First\_RB ,\_, because\_IN you\_PRP are\_VBP young\_JJ and\_CC brave\_VB and\_CC can\_MD fight\_VB ,\_, and\_CC all\_DT energies\_NNS may\_MD be\_VB needed\_VBN at\_IN the\_DT last\_JJ ;\_: and\_CC again\_RB that\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ your\_PRP$ right\_NN to\_TO destroy\_VB him\_PRP --\_: that\_DT --\_: which\_WDT has\_VBZ wrought\_VBN such\_JJ woe\_NN to\_TO you\_PRP and\_CC yours\_PRP$ .\_.

Be\_VB not\_RB afraid\_JJ for\_IN Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ;\_: she\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB my\_PRP$ care\_NN ,\_, if\_IN I\_PRP may\_MD .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP old\_JJ .\_.

My\_PRP$ legs\_NNS are\_VBP not\_RB so\_RB quick\_JJ to\_TO run\_VB as\_RB once\_RB ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB used\_VBN to\_TO ride\_VB so\_RB long\_RB or\_CC to\_TO pursue\_VB as\_IN need\_NN be\_VB ,\_, or\_CC to\_TO fight\_VB with\_IN lethal\_JJ weapons\_NNS .\_.

But\_CC I\_PRP can\_MD be\_VB of\_IN other\_JJ service\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP can\_MD fight\_VB in\_IN other\_JJ way\_NN .\_.

And\_CC I\_PRP can\_MD die\_VB ,\_, if\_IN need\_NN be\_VB ,\_, as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN younger\_JJR men\_NNS .\_.

Now\_RB let\_VB me\_PRP say\_VB that\_IN what\_WP I\_PRP would\_MD is\_VBZ this\_DT :\_: while\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, my\_PRP$ Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP and\_CC friend\_NN Jonathan\_NNP go\_VB in\_IN your\_PRP$ so\_RB swift\_JJ little\_JJ steamboat\_NN up\_IN the\_DT river\_NN ,\_, and\_CC whilst\_IN John\_NNP and\_CC Quincey\_NNP guard\_VBP the\_DT bank\_NN where\_WRB perchance\_NN he\_PRP might\_MD be\_VB landed\_VBN ,\_, I\_PRP will\_MD take\_VB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP right\_RB into\_IN the\_DT heart\_NN of\_IN the\_DT enemy\_NN 's\_POS country\_NN .\_.

Whilst\_IN the\_DT old\_JJ fox\_NN is\_VBZ tied\_VBN in\_IN his\_PRP$ box\_NN ,\_, floating\_VBG on\_IN the\_DT running\_VBG stream\_NN whence\_NN he\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB escape\_VB to\_TO land\_VB --\_: where\_WRB he\_PRP dares\_VBZ not\_RB raise\_VB the\_DT lid\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ coffin-box\_NN lest\_IN his\_PRP$ Slovak\_JJ carriers\_NNS should\_MD in\_IN fear\_NN leave\_VBP him\_PRP to\_TO perish\_VB --\_: we\_PRP shall\_MD go\_VB in\_IN the\_DT track\_NN where\_WRB Jonathan\_NNP went\_VBD ,\_, --\_: from\_IN Bistritz\_NNP over\_IN the\_DT Borgo\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC find\_VB our\_PRP$ way\_NN to\_TO the\_DT Castle\_NNP of\_IN Dracula\_NNP .\_.

Here\_RB ,\_, Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP 's\_POS hypnotic\_JJ power\_NN will\_MD surely\_RB help\_VB ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP shall\_MD find\_VB our\_PRP$ way\_NN --\_: all\_DT dark\_JJ and\_CC unknown\_JJ otherwise\_RB --\_: after\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ sunrise\_NN when\_WRB we\_PRP are\_VBP near\_IN that\_DT fateful\_JJ place\_NN .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ much\_JJ to\_TO be\_VB done\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC other\_JJ places\_NNS to\_TO be\_VB made\_VBN sanctify\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN that\_DT nest\_NN of\_IN vipers\_NNS be\_VB obliterated\_VBN .\_. ''\_''

Here\_RB Jonathan\_NNP interrupted\_VBD him\_PRP hotly\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Do\_VBP you\_PRP mean\_VB to\_TO say\_VB ,\_, Professor\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, that\_IN you\_PRP would\_MD bring\_VB Mina\_NNP ,\_, in\_IN her\_PRP$ sad\_JJ case\_NN and\_CC tainted\_VBD as\_IN she\_PRP is\_VBZ with\_IN that\_DT devil\_NNP 's\_POS illness\_NN ,\_, right\_RB into\_IN the\_DT jaws\_NNS of\_IN his\_PRP$ death-trap\_NN ?\_.

Not\_RB for\_IN the\_DT world\_NN !\_.

Not\_RB for\_IN Heaven\_NNP or\_CC Hell\_NNP !\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP became\_VBD almost\_RB speechless\_JJ for\_IN a\_DT minute\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB went\_VBD on\_IN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Do\_VBP you\_PRP know\_VB what\_WP the\_DT place\_NN is\_VBZ ?\_.

Have\_VBP you\_PRP seen\_VBN that\_IN awful\_JJ den\_NN of\_IN hellish\_JJ infamy\_NN --\_: with\_IN the\_DT very\_JJ moonlight\_NN alive\_JJ with\_IN grisly\_JJ shapes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC every\_DT speck\_NN of\_IN dust\_NN that\_WDT whirls\_VBZ in\_IN the\_DT wind\_NN a\_DT devouring\_VBG monster\_NN in\_IN embryo\_NN ?\_.

Have\_VBP you\_PRP felt\_VBD the\_DT Vampire\_NNP 's\_POS lips\_NNS upon\_IN your\_PRP$ throat\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

Here\_RB he\_PRP turned\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN his\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS lit\_VBN on\_IN my\_PRP$ forehead\_NN he\_PRP threw\_VBD up\_RP his\_PRP$ arms\_NNS with\_IN a\_DT cry\_NN :\_: ``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, my\_PRP$ God\_NNP ,\_, what\_WP have\_VBP we\_PRP done\_VBN to\_TO have\_VB this\_DT terror\_NN upon\_IN us\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

and\_CC he\_PRP sank\_VBD down\_RP on\_IN the\_DT sofa\_NN in\_IN a\_DT collapse\_NN of\_IN misery\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP 's\_POS voice\_NN ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP spoke\_VBD in\_IN clear\_JJ ,\_, sweet\_JJ tones\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT seemed\_VBD to\_TO vibrate\_VB in\_IN the\_DT air\_NN ,\_, calmed\_VBD us\_PRP all\_DT :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Oh\_UH ,\_, my\_PRP$ friend\_NN ,\_, it\_PRP is\_VBZ because\_IN I\_PRP would\_MD save\_VB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP from\_IN that\_DT awful\_JJ place\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP would\_MD go\_VB .\_.

God\_NNP forbid\_VBD that\_IN I\_PRP should\_MD take\_VB her\_PRP into\_IN that\_DT place\_NN .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ work\_NN --\_: wild\_JJ work\_NN --\_: to\_TO be\_VB done\_VBN there\_RB ,\_, that\_IN her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS may\_MD not\_RB see\_VB .\_.

We\_PRP men\_NNS here\_RB ,\_, all\_DT save\_IN Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, have\_VBP seen\_VBN with\_IN their\_PRP$ own\_JJ eyes\_NNS what\_WP is\_VBZ to\_TO be\_VB done\_VBN before\_IN that\_DT place\_NN can\_MD be\_VB purify\_VB .\_.

Remember\_VB that\_IN we\_PRP are\_VBP in\_IN terrible\_JJ straits\_NNS .\_.

If\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP escape\_VB us\_PRP this\_DT time\_NN --\_: and\_CC he\_PRP is\_VBZ strong\_JJ and\_CC subtle\_JJ and\_CC cunning\_JJ --\_: he\_PRP may\_MD choose\_VB to\_TO sleep\_VB him\_PRP for\_IN a\_DT century\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB in\_IN time\_NN our\_PRP$ dear\_RB one\_CD ''\_'' --\_: he\_PRP took\_VBD my\_PRP$ hand\_NN --\_: ``\_`` would\_MD come\_VB to\_TO him\_PRP to\_TO keep\_VB him\_PRP company\_NN ,\_, and\_CC would\_MD be\_VB as\_IN those\_DT others\_NNS that\_IN you\_PRP ,\_, Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, saw\_VBD .\_.

You\_PRP have\_VBP told\_VBN us\_PRP of\_IN their\_PRP$ gloating\_VBG lips\_NNS ;\_: you\_PRP heard\_VBD their\_PRP$ ribald\_JJ laugh\_NN as\_IN they\_PRP clutched\_VBD the\_DT moving\_VBG bag\_NN that\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP threw\_VBD to\_TO them\_PRP .\_.

You\_PRP shudder\_VBP ;\_: and\_CC well\_RB may\_MD it\_PRP be\_VB .\_.

Forgive\_VB me\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP make\_VBP you\_PRP so\_RB much\_JJ pain\_NN ,\_, but\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ necessary\_JJ .\_.

My\_PRP$ friend\_NN ,\_, is\_VBZ it\_PRP not\_RB a\_DT dire\_JJ need\_NN for\_IN the\_DT which\_WDT I\_PRP am\_VBP giving\_VBG ,\_, possibly\_RB my\_PRP$ life\_NN ?\_.

If\_IN it\_PRP were\_VBD that\_IN any\_DT one\_CD went\_VBD into\_IN that\_DT place\_NN to\_TO stay\_VB ,\_, it\_PRP is\_VBZ I\_PRP who\_WP would\_MD have\_VB to\_TO go\_VB to\_TO keep\_VB them\_PRP company\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` Do\_VBP as\_IN you\_PRP will\_MD ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT sob\_VBP that\_DT shook\_VBD him\_PRP all\_RB over\_RB ,\_, ``\_`` we\_PRP are\_VBP in\_IN the\_DT hands\_NNS of\_IN God\_NNP !\_. ''\_''

Later\_RB .\_.

--\_: Oh\_UH ,\_, it\_PRP did\_VBD me\_PRP good\_JJ to\_TO see\_VB the\_DT way\_NN that\_IN these\_DT brave\_VBP men\_NNS worked\_VBD .\_.

How\_WRB can\_MD women\_NNS help\_VB loving\_JJ men\_NNS when\_WRB they\_PRP are\_VBP so\_RB earnest\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB true\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB brave\_VB !\_.

And\_CC ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, it\_PRP made\_VBD me\_PRP think\_VB of\_IN the\_DT wonderful\_JJ power\_NN of\_IN money\_NN !\_.

What\_WP can\_MD it\_PRP not\_RB do\_VB when\_WRB it\_PRP is\_VBZ properly\_RB applied\_VBN ;\_: and\_CC what\_WP might\_MD it\_PRP do\_VB when\_WRB basely\_RB used\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP felt\_VBD so\_RB thankful\_JJ that\_IN Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP is\_VBZ rich\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN both\_CC he\_PRP and\_CC Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP also\_RB has\_VBZ plenty\_NN of\_IN money\_NN ,\_, are\_VBP willing\_JJ to\_TO spend\_VB it\_PRP so\_RB freely\_RB .\_.

For\_IN if\_IN they\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB ,\_, our\_PRP$ little\_JJ expedition\_NN could\_MD not\_RB start\_VB ,\_, either\_CC so\_RB promptly\_RB or\_CC so\_RB well\_RB equipped\_VBN ,\_, as\_IN it\_PRP will\_MD within\_IN another\_DT hour\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ not\_RB three\_CD hours\_NNS since\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD arranged\_VBN what\_WDT part\_NN each\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP was\_VBD to\_TO do\_VB ;\_: and\_CC now\_RB Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP and\_CC Jonathan\_NNP have\_VBP a\_DT lovely\_JJ steam\_NN launch\_NN ,\_, with\_IN steam\_NN up\_RP ready\_JJ to\_TO start\_VB at\_IN a\_DT moment\_NN 's\_POS notice\_NN .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP and\_CC Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP have\_VBP half\_PDT a\_DT dozen\_NN good\_JJ horses\_NNS ,\_, well\_RB appointed\_VBN .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP all\_PDT the\_DT maps\_NNS and\_CC appliances\_NNS of\_IN various\_JJ kinds\_NNS that\_WDT can\_MD be\_VB had\_VBN .\_.

Professor\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP are\_VBP to\_TO leave\_VB by\_IN the\_DT 11:40\_CD train\_NN to-night\_NN for\_IN Veresti\_NNP ,\_, where\_WRB we\_PRP are\_VBP to\_TO get\_VB a\_DT carriage\_NN to\_TO drive\_VB to\_TO the\_DT Borgo\_NNP Pass\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP are\_VBP bringing\_VBG a\_DT good\_JJ deal\_NN of\_IN ready\_JJ money\_NN ,\_, as\_IN we\_PRP are\_VBP to\_TO buy\_VB a\_DT carriage\_NN and\_CC horses\_NNS .\_.

We\_PRP shall\_MD drive\_VB ourselves\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN we\_PRP have\_VBP no\_DT one\_NN whom\_WP we\_PRP can\_MD trust\_VB in\_IN the\_DT matter\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP knows\_VBZ something\_NN of\_IN a\_DT great\_JJ many\_JJ languages\_NNS ,\_, so\_IN we\_PRP shall\_MD get\_VB on\_IN all\_DT right\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP all\_DT got\_VBN arms\_NNS ,\_, even\_RB for\_IN me\_PRP a\_DT large-bore\_JJ revolver\_NN ;\_: Jonathan\_NNP would\_MD not\_RB be\_VB happy\_JJ unless\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD armed\_VBN like\_IN the\_DT rest\_NN .\_.

Alas\_NNS !\_.

I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB carry\_VB one\_CD arm\_NN that\_IN the\_DT rest\_NN do\_VBP ;\_: the\_DT scar\_NN on\_IN my\_PRP$ forehead\_NN forbids\_VBZ that\_IN .\_.

Dear\_NNP Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP comforts\_NNS me\_PRP by\_IN telling\_VBG me\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP fully\_RB armed\_VBN as\_IN there\_EX may\_MD be\_VB wolves\_NNS ;\_: the\_DT weather\_NN is\_VBZ getting\_VBG colder\_JJR every\_DT hour\_NN ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX are\_VBP snow-flurries\_NNS which\_WDT come\_VBP and\_CC go\_VBP as\_IN warnings\_NNS .\_.

Later\_RB .\_.

--\_: It\_PRP took\_VBD all\_DT my\_PRP$ courage\_NN to\_TO say\_VB good-bye\_NN to\_TO my\_PRP$ darling\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP may\_MD never\_RB meet\_VB again\_RB .\_.

Courage\_NN ,\_, Mina\_NNP !\_.

the\_DT Professor\_NNP is\_VBZ looking\_VBG at\_IN you\_PRP keenly\_RB ;\_: his\_PRP$ look\_NN is\_VBZ a\_DT warning\_NN .\_.

There\_EX must\_MD be\_VB no\_DT tears\_NNS now\_RB --\_: unless\_IN it\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB that\_IN God\_NNP will\_MD let\_VB them\_PRP fall\_VB in\_IN gladness\_NN .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP .\_.

October\_NNP 30\_CD .\_.

Night\_NN .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP am\_VBP writing\_VBG this\_DT in\_IN the\_DT light\_NN from\_IN the\_DT furnace\_NN door\_NN of\_IN the\_DT steam\_NN launch\_NN :\_: Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP is\_VBZ firing\_NN up\_RP .\_.

He\_PRP is\_VBZ an\_DT experienced\_JJ hand\_NN at\_IN the\_DT work\_NN ,\_, as\_IN he\_PRP has\_VBZ had\_VBN for\_IN years\_NNS a\_DT launch\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ on\_IN the\_DT Thames\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC another\_DT on\_IN the\_DT Norfolk\_NNP Broads\_NNPS .\_.

Regarding\_VBG our\_PRP$ plans\_NNS ,\_, we\_PRP finally\_RB decided\_VBD that\_IN Mina\_NNP 's\_POS guess\_NN was\_VBD correct\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN if\_IN any\_DT waterway\_NN was\_VBD chosen\_VBN for\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS escape\_NN back\_RB to\_TO his\_PRP$ Castle\_NNP ,\_, the\_DT Sereth\_NNP and\_CC then\_RB the\_DT Bistritza\_NNP at\_IN its\_PRP$ junction\_NN ,\_, would\_MD be\_VB the\_DT one\_CD .\_.

We\_PRP took\_VBD it\_PRP ,\_, that\_IN somewhere\_RB about\_IN the\_DT 47th\_JJ degree\_NN ,\_, north\_NN latitude\_NN ,\_, would\_MD be\_VB the\_DT place\_NN chosen\_VBN for\_IN the\_DT crossing\_VBG the\_DT country\_NN between\_IN the\_DT river\_NN and\_CC the\_DT Carpathians\_NNPS .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP no\_DT fear\_NN in\_IN running\_VBG at\_IN good\_JJ speed\_NN up\_RP the\_DT river\_NN at\_IN night\_NN ;\_: there\_EX is\_VBZ plenty\_NN of\_IN water\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT banks\_NNS are\_VBP wide\_JJ enough\_RB apart\_RB to\_TO make\_VB steaming\_VBG ,\_, even\_RB in\_IN the\_DT dark\_JJ ,\_, easy\_JJ enough\_RB .\_.

Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP tells\_VBZ me\_PRP to\_TO sleep\_VB for\_IN a\_DT while\_NN ,\_, as\_IN it\_PRP is\_VBZ enough\_JJ for\_IN the\_DT present\_JJ for\_IN one\_CD to\_TO be\_VB on\_IN watch\_NN .\_.

But\_CC I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB sleep\_VB --\_: how\_WRB can\_MD I\_PRP with\_IN the\_DT terrible\_JJ danger\_NN hanging\_VBG over\_IN my\_PRP$ darling\_NN ,\_, and\_CC her\_PRP$ going\_VBG out\_RP into\_IN that\_DT awful\_JJ place\_NN ...\_: .\_.

My\_PRP$ only\_JJ comfort\_NN is\_VBZ that\_IN we\_PRP are\_VBP in\_IN the\_DT hands\_NNS of\_IN God\_NNP .\_.

Only\_RB for\_IN that\_DT faith\_NN it\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB easier\_JJR to\_TO die\_VB than\_IN to\_TO live\_VB ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB be\_VB quit\_VBN of\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT trouble\_NN .\_.

Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP and\_CC Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP were\_VBD off\_RP on\_IN their\_PRP$ long\_JJ ride\_NN before\_IN we\_PRP started\_VBD ;\_: they\_PRP are\_VBP to\_TO keep\_VB up\_RP the\_DT right\_JJ bank\_NN ,\_, far\_RB enough\_RB off\_RP to\_TO get\_VB on\_IN higher\_JJR lands\_NNS where\_WRB they\_PRP can\_MD see\_VB a\_DT good\_JJ stretch\_NN of\_IN river\_NN and\_CC avoid\_VB the\_DT following\_NN of\_IN its\_PRP$ curves\_NNS .\_.

They\_PRP have\_VBP ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ stages\_NNS ,\_, two\_CD men\_NNS to\_TO ride\_VB and\_CC lead\_VB their\_PRP$ spare\_JJ horses\_NNS --\_: four\_CD in\_IN all\_DT ,\_, so\_RB as\_RB not\_RB to\_TO excite\_VB curiosity\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB they\_PRP dismiss\_VBP the\_DT men\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT shall\_MD be\_VB shortly\_RB ,\_, they\_PRP shall\_MD themselves\_PRP look\_VB after\_IN the\_DT horses\_NNS .\_.

It\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB necessary\_JJ for\_IN us\_PRP to\_TO join\_VB forces\_NNS ;\_: if\_IN so\_RB they\_PRP can\_MD mount\_VB our\_PRP$ whole\_JJ party\_NN .\_.

One\_CD of\_IN the\_DT saddles\_NNS has\_VBZ a\_DT movable\_JJ horn\_NN ,\_, and\_CC can\_MD be\_VB easily\_RB adapted\_VBN for\_IN Mina\_NNP ,\_, if\_IN required\_VBN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT wild\_JJ adventure\_NN we\_PRP are\_VBP on\_RP .\_.

Here\_RB ,\_, as\_IN we\_PRP are\_VBP rushing\_VBG along\_RB through\_IN the\_DT darkness\_NN ,\_, with\_IN the\_DT cold\_NN from\_IN the\_DT river\_NN seeming\_VBG to\_TO rise\_VB up\_RP and\_CC strike\_VB us\_PRP ;\_: with\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT mysterious\_JJ voices\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT night\_NN around\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, it\_PRP all\_DT comes\_VBZ home\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP seem\_VBP to\_TO be\_VB drifting\_VBG into\_IN unknown\_JJ places\_NNS and\_CC unknown\_JJ ways\_NNS ;\_: into\_IN a\_DT whole\_JJ world\_NN of\_IN dark\_JJ and\_CC dreadful\_JJ things\_NNS .\_.

Godalming\_NNP is\_VBZ shutting\_VBG the\_DT furnace\_NN door\_NN ...\_: 31\_CD October\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Still\_RB hurrying\_VBG along\_RB .\_.

The\_DT day\_NN has\_VBZ come\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC Godalming\_NNP is\_VBZ sleeping\_VBG .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP on\_IN watch\_NN .\_.

The\_DT morning\_NN is\_VBZ bitterly\_RB cold\_JJ ;\_: the\_DT furnace\_NN heat\_NN is\_VBZ grateful\_JJ ,\_, though\_IN we\_PRP have\_VBP heavy\_JJ fur\_NN coats\_NNS .\_.

As\_IN yet\_RB we\_PRP have\_VBP passed\_VBN only\_RB a\_DT few\_JJ open\_JJ boats\_NNS ,\_, but\_CC none\_NN of\_IN them\_PRP had\_VBD on\_IN board\_NN any\_DT box\_NN or\_CC package\_NN of\_IN anything\_NN like\_IN the\_DT size\_NN of\_IN the\_DT one\_NN we\_PRP seek\_VBP .\_.

The\_DT men\_NNS were\_VBD scared\_VBN every\_DT time\_NN we\_PRP turned\_VBD our\_PRP$ electric\_JJ lamp\_NN on\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC fell\_VBD on\_IN their\_PRP$ knees\_NNS and\_CC prayed\_VBD .\_.

1\_CD November\_NNP ,\_, evening\_NN .\_.

--\_: No\_DT news\_NN all\_DT day\_NN ;\_: we\_PRP have\_VBP found\_VBN nothing\_NN of\_IN the\_DT kind\_NN we\_PRP seek\_VBP .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP now\_RB passed\_VBN into\_IN the\_DT Bistritza\_NNP ;\_: and\_CC if\_IN we\_PRP are\_VBP wrong\_JJ in\_IN our\_PRP$ surmise\_NN our\_PRP$ chance\_NN is\_VBZ gone\_VBN .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP over-hauled\_VBN every\_DT boat\_NN ,\_, big\_JJ and\_CC little\_JJ .\_.

Early\_RB this\_DT morning\_NN ,\_, one\_CD crew\_NN took\_VBD us\_PRP for\_IN a\_DT Government\_NNP boat\_NN ,\_, and\_CC treated\_VBD us\_PRP accordingly\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP saw\_VBD in\_IN this\_DT a\_DT way\_NN of\_IN smoothing\_VBG matters\_NNS ,\_, so\_RB at\_IN Fundu\_NNP ,\_, where\_WRB the\_DT Bistritza\_NNP runs\_VBZ into\_IN the\_DT Sereth\_NNP ,\_, we\_PRP got\_VBD a\_DT Roumanian\_JJ flag\_NN which\_WDT we\_PRP now\_RB fly\_VBP conspicuously\_RB .\_.

With\_IN every\_DT boat\_NN which\_WDT we\_PRP have\_VBP over-hauled\_VBN since\_IN then\_RB this\_DT trick\_NN has\_VBZ succeeded\_VBN ;\_: we\_PRP have\_VBP had\_VBN every\_DT deference\_NN shown\_VBN to\_TO us\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC not\_RB once\_RB any\_DT objection\_NN to\_TO whatever\_WDT we\_PRP chose\_VBD to\_TO ask\_VB or\_CC do\_VB .\_.

Some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT Slovaks\_NNPS tell\_VBP us\_PRP that\_IN a\_DT big\_JJ boat\_NN passed\_VBD them\_PRP ,\_, going\_VBG at\_IN more\_JJR than\_IN usual\_JJ speed\_NN as\_IN she\_PRP had\_VBD a\_DT double\_JJ crew\_NN on\_IN board\_NN .\_.

This\_DT was\_VBD before\_IN they\_PRP came\_VBD to\_TO Fundu\_NNP ,\_, so\_IN they\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB tell\_VB us\_PRP whether\_IN the\_DT boat\_NN turned\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT Bistritza\_NNP or\_CC continued\_VBN on\_IN up\_RB the\_DT Sereth\_NNP .\_.

At\_IN Fundu\_NNP we\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB hear\_VB of\_IN any\_DT such\_JJ boat\_NN ,\_, so\_IN she\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB passed\_VBN there\_RB in\_IN the\_DT night\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP feeling\_VBG very\_RB sleepy\_JJ ;\_: the\_DT cold\_NN is\_VBZ perhaps\_RB beginning\_VBG to\_TO tell\_VB upon\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC nature\_NN must\_MD have\_VB rest\_NN some\_DT time\_NN .\_.

Godalming\_NNP insists\_VBZ that\_IN he\_PRP shall\_MD keep\_VB the\_DT first\_JJ watch\_NN .\_.

God\_NNP bless\_VBP him\_PRP for\_IN all\_PDT his\_PRP$ goodness\_NN to\_TO poor\_JJ dear\_RB Mina\_NNP and\_CC me\_PRP .\_.

2\_CD November\_NNP ,\_, morning\_NN .\_.

--\_: It\_PRP is\_VBZ broad\_JJ daylight\_NN .\_.

That\_DT good\_JJ fellow\_NN would\_MD not\_RB wake\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP says\_VBZ it\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN a\_DT sin\_NN to\_TO ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP slept\_VBD peacefully\_RB and\_CC was\_VBD forgetting\_VBG my\_PRP$ trouble\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP seems\_VBZ brutally\_RB selfish\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP to\_TO have\_VB slept\_VBN so\_RB long\_RB ,\_, and\_CC let\_VB him\_PRP watch\_VB all\_DT night\_NN ;\_: but\_CC he\_PRP was\_VBD quite\_RB right\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP a\_DT new\_JJ man\_NN this\_DT morning\_NN ;\_: and\_CC ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP sit\_VBP here\_RB and\_CC watch\_VB him\_PRP sleeping\_VBG ,\_, I\_PRP can\_MD do\_VB all\_DT that\_WDT is\_VBZ necessary\_JJ both\_CC as\_IN to\_TO minding\_VBG the\_DT engine\_NN ,\_, steering\_NN ,\_, and\_CC keeping\_VBG watch\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP can\_MD feel\_VB that\_DT my\_PRP$ strength\_NN and\_CC energy\_NN are\_VBP coming\_VBG back\_RB to\_TO me\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP wonder\_VBP where\_WRB Mina\_NNP is\_VBZ now\_RB ,\_, and\_CC Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP .\_.

They\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB got\_VBN to\_TO Veresti\_NNP about\_IN noon\_NN on\_IN Wednesday\_NNP .\_.

It\_PRP would\_MD take\_VB them\_PRP some\_DT time\_NN to\_TO get\_VB the\_DT carriage\_NN and\_CC horses\_NNS ;\_: so\_RB if\_IN they\_PRP had\_VBD started\_VBN and\_CC travelled\_VBN hard\_RB ,\_, they\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB about\_IN now\_RB at\_IN the\_DT Borgo\_NNP Pass\_NN .\_.

God\_NN guide\_NN and\_CC help\_VB them\_PRP !\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP afraid\_JJ to\_TO think\_VB what\_WP may\_MD happen\_VB .\_.

If\_IN we\_PRP could\_MD only\_RB go\_VB faster\_RBR !\_.

but\_CC we\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB ;\_: the\_DT engines\_NNS are\_VBP throbbing\_VBG and\_CC doing\_VBG their\_PRP$ utmost\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP wonder\_VBP how\_WRB Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP and\_CC Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP are\_VBP getting\_VBG on\_IN .\_.

There\_EX seem\_VBP to\_TO be\_VB endless\_JJ streams\_NNS running\_VBG down\_RP the\_DT mountains\_NNS into\_IN this\_DT river\_NN ,\_, but\_CC as\_IN none\_NN of\_IN them\_PRP are\_VBP very\_RB large\_JJ --\_: at\_IN present\_NN ,\_, at\_IN all\_DT events\_NNS ,\_, though\_IN they\_PRP are\_VBP terrible\_JJ doubtless\_NN in\_IN winter\_NN and\_CC when\_WRB the\_DT snow\_NN melts\_VBZ --\_: the\_DT horsemen\_NNS may\_MD not\_RB have\_VB met\_VBN much\_JJ obstruction\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP hope\_VBP that\_IN before\_IN we\_PRP get\_VBP to\_TO Strasba\_NNP we\_PRP may\_MD see\_VB them\_PRP ;\_: for\_IN if\_IN by\_IN that\_DT time\_NN we\_PRP have\_VBP not\_RB overtaken\_VBN the\_DT Count\_NNP ,\_, it\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB necessary\_JJ to\_TO take\_VB counsel\_NN together\_RB what\_WP to\_TO do\_VB next\_JJ .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

2\_CD November\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Three\_CD days\_NNS on\_IN the\_DT road\_NN .\_.

No\_DT news\_NN ,\_, and\_CC no\_DT time\_NN to\_TO write\_VB it\_PRP if\_IN there\_EX had\_VBD been\_VBN ,\_, for\_IN every\_DT moment\_NN is\_VBZ precious\_JJ .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP had\_VBN only\_RB the\_DT rest\_NN needful\_JJ for\_IN the\_DT horses\_NNS ;\_: but\_CC we\_PRP are\_VBP both\_DT bearing\_VBG it\_PRP wonderfully\_RB .\_.

Those\_DT adventurous\_JJ days\_NNS of\_IN ours\_PRP are\_VBP turning\_VBG up\_RP useful\_JJ .\_.

We\_PRP must\_MD push\_VB on\_IN ;\_: we\_PRP shall\_MD never\_RB feel\_VB happy\_JJ till\_IN we\_PRP get\_VBP the\_DT launch\_NN in\_IN sight\_NN again\_RB .\_.

3\_CD November\_NNP .\_.

--\_: We\_PRP heard\_VBD at\_IN Fundu\_NNP that\_IN the\_DT launch\_NN had\_VBD gone\_VBN up\_RP the\_DT Bistritza\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP wish\_VBP it\_PRP was\_VBD n't\_RB so\_RB cold\_JJ .\_.

There\_EX are\_VBP signs\_NNS of\_IN snow\_NN coming\_VBG ;\_: and\_CC if\_IN it\_PRP falls\_VBZ heavy\_JJ it\_PRP will\_MD stop\_VB us\_PRP .\_.

In\_IN such\_JJ case\_NN we\_PRP must\_MD get\_VB a\_DT sledge\_NN and\_CC go\_VB on\_RP ,\_, Russian\_JJ fashion\_NN .\_.

4\_CD November\_NNP .\_.

--\_: To-day\_NN we\_PRP heard\_VBD of\_IN the\_DT launch\_NN having\_VBG been\_VBN detained\_VBN by\_IN an\_DT accident\_NN when\_WRB trying\_VBG to\_TO force\_VB a\_DT way\_NN up\_RP the\_DT rapids\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT Slovak\_NNP boats\_NNS get\_VBP up\_RP all\_DT right\_NN ,\_, by\_IN aid\_NN of\_IN a\_DT rope\_NN and\_CC steering\_VBG with\_IN knowledge\_NN .\_.

Some\_DT went\_VBD up\_RB only\_RB a\_DT few\_JJ hours\_NNS before\_RB .\_.

Godalming\_NNP is\_VBZ an\_DT amateur\_JJ fitter\_NN himself\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC evidently\_RB it\_PRP was\_VBD he\_PRP who\_WP put\_VBD the\_DT launch\_NN in\_IN trim\_JJ again\_RB .\_.

Finally\_RB ,\_, they\_PRP got\_VBD up\_RP the\_DT rapids\_NNS all\_DT right\_NN ,\_, with\_IN local\_JJ help\_NN ,\_, and\_CC are\_VBP off\_RP on\_IN the\_DT chase\_NN afresh\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP fear\_VBP that\_IN the\_DT boat\_NN is\_VBZ not\_RB any\_DT better\_JJR for\_IN the\_DT accident\_NN ;\_: the\_DT peasantry\_NN tell\_VBP us\_PRP that\_IN after\_IN she\_PRP got\_VBD upon\_IN smooth\_JJ water\_NN again\_RB ,\_, she\_PRP kept\_VBD stopping\_VBG every\_DT now\_RB and\_CC again\_RB so\_RB long\_RB as\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN sight\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP must\_MD push\_VB on\_IN harder\_RBR than\_IN ever\_RB ;\_: our\_PRP$ help\_NN may\_MD be\_VB wanted\_VBN soon\_RB .\_.

Mina\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP .\_.

31\_CD October\_NNP .\_.

--\_: Arrived\_VBD at\_IN Veresti\_NNP at\_IN noon\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP tells\_VBZ me\_PRP that\_IN this\_DT morning\_NN at\_IN dawn\_NN he\_PRP could\_MD hardly\_RB hypnotise\_VB me\_PRP at\_IN all\_DT ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN all\_DT I\_PRP could\_MD say\_VB was\_VBD :\_: ``\_`` dark\_JJ and\_CC quiet\_JJ .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP is\_VBZ off\_IN now\_RB buying\_VBG a\_DT carriage\_NN and\_CC horses\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP says\_VBZ that\_IN he\_PRP will\_MD later\_RB on\_IN try\_NN to\_TO buy\_VB additional\_JJ horses\_NNS ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN we\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB able\_JJ to\_TO change\_VB them\_PRP on\_IN the\_DT way\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP something\_NN more\_JJR than\_IN 70\_CD miles\_NNS before\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT country\_NN is\_VBZ lovely\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC most\_RBS interesting\_JJ ;\_: if\_IN only\_RB we\_PRP were\_VBD under\_IN different\_JJ conditions\_NNS ,\_, how\_WRB delightful\_JJ it\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB to\_TO see\_VB it\_PRP all\_DT .\_.

If\_IN Jonathan\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP were\_VBD driving\_VBG through\_IN it\_PRP alone\_RB what\_WP a\_DT pleasure\_NN it\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB .\_.

To\_TO stop\_VB and\_CC see\_VB people\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC learn\_VB something\_NN of\_IN their\_PRP$ life\_NN ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO fill\_VB our\_PRP$ minds\_NNS and\_CC memories\_NNS with\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT colour\_NN and\_CC picturesqueness\_NN of\_IN the\_DT whole\_JJ wild\_JJ ,\_, beautiful\_JJ country\_NN and\_CC the\_DT quaint\_JJ people\_NNS !\_.

But\_CC ,\_, alas\_UH !\_.

--\_: Later\_RB .\_.

--\_: Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP has\_VBZ returned\_VBN .\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ got\_VBN the\_DT carriage\_NN and\_CC horses\_NNS ;\_: we\_PRP are\_VBP to\_TO have\_VB some\_DT dinner\_NN ,\_, and\_CC to\_TO start\_VB in\_IN an\_DT hour\_NN .\_.

The\_DT landlady\_NN is\_VBZ putting\_VBG us\_PRP up\_RP a\_DT huge\_JJ basket\_NN of\_IN provisions\_NNS ;\_: it\_PRP seems\_VBZ enough\_RB for\_IN a\_DT company\_NN of\_IN soldiers\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP encourages\_VBZ her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC whispers\_NNS to\_TO me\_PRP that\_IN it\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB a\_DT week\_NN before\_IN we\_PRP can\_MD get\_VB any\_DT good\_JJ food\_NN again\_RB .\_.

He\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN shopping\_VBG too\_RB ,\_, and\_CC has\_VBZ sent\_VBN home\_NN such\_PDT a\_DT wonderful\_JJ lot\_NN of\_IN fur\_NN coats\_NNS and\_CC wraps\_VBZ ,\_, and\_CC all\_DT sorts\_NNS of\_IN warm\_JJ things\_NNS .\_.

There\_EX will\_MD not\_RB be\_VB any\_DT chance\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ being\_VBG cold\_JJ .\_.

...\_: .\_.

We\_PRP shall\_MD soon\_RB be\_VB off\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP afraid\_JJ to\_TO think\_VB what\_WP may\_MD happen\_VB to\_TO us\_PRP .\_.

We\_PRP are\_VBP truly\_RB in\_IN the\_DT hands\_NNS of\_IN God\_NNP .\_.

He\_PRP alone\_RB knows\_VBZ what\_WP may\_MD be\_VB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP pray\_VBP Him\_PRP ,\_, with\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT strength\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ sad\_JJ and\_CC humble\_JJ soul\_NN ,\_, that\_IN He\_PRP will\_MD watch\_VB over\_IN my\_PRP$ beloved\_JJ husband\_NN ;\_: that\_IN whatever\_WDT may\_MD happen\_VB ,\_, Jonathan\_NNP may\_MD know\_VB that\_IN I\_PRP loved\_VBD him\_PRP and\_CC honoured\_VBD him\_PRP more\_JJR than\_IN I\_PRP can\_MD say\_VB ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN my\_PRP$ latest\_JJS and\_CC truest\_JJS thought\_NN will\_MD be\_VB always\_RB for\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

CHAPTER\_NNP XXVII\_NNP MINA\_NNP HARKER\_NNP 'S\_POS JOURNAL\_NN 1\_CD November\_NNP .\_.

--\_: All\_DT day\_NN long\_RB we\_PRP have\_VBP travelled\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC at\_IN a\_DT good\_JJ speed\_NN .\_.

The\_DT horses\_NNS seem\_VBP to\_TO know\_VB that\_IN they\_PRP are\_VBP being\_VBG kindly\_RB treated\_VBN ,\_, for\_IN they\_PRP go\_VBP willingly\_RB their\_PRP$ full\_JJ stage\_NN at\_IN best\_JJS speed\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP now\_RB had\_VBN so\_RB many\_JJ changes\_NNS and\_CC find\_VB the\_DT same\_JJ thing\_NN so\_RB constantly\_RB that\_IN we\_PRP are\_VBP encouraged\_VBN to\_TO think\_VB that\_IN the\_DT journey\_NN will\_MD be\_VB an\_DT easy\_JJ one\_CD .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP is\_VBZ laconic\_JJ ;\_: he\_PRP tells\_VBZ the\_DT farmers\_NNS that\_IN he\_PRP is\_VBZ hurrying\_VBG to\_TO Bistritz\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC pays\_VBZ them\_PRP well\_RB to\_TO make\_VB the\_DT exchange\_NN of\_IN horses\_NNS .\_.

We\_PRP get\_VBP hot\_JJ soup\_NN ,\_, or\_CC coffee\_NN ,\_, or\_CC tea\_NN ;\_: and\_CC off\_IN we\_PRP go\_VBP .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ a\_DT lovely\_JJ country\_NN ;\_: full\_JJ of\_IN beauties\_NNS of\_IN all\_DT imaginable\_JJ kinds\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT people\_NNS are\_VBP brave\_VB ,\_, and\_CC strong\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC simple\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC seem\_VBP full\_JJ of\_IN nice\_JJ qualities\_NNS .\_.

They\_PRP are\_VBP very\_RB ,\_, very\_RB superstitious\_JJ .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ house\_NN where\_WRB we\_PRP stopped\_VBD ,\_, when\_WRB the\_DT woman\_NN who\_WP served\_VBD us\_PRP saw\_VBD the\_DT scar\_NN on\_IN my\_PRP$ forehead\_NN ,\_, she\_PRP crossed\_VBD herself\_PRP and\_CC put\_VBD out\_RP two\_CD fingers\_NNS towards\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, to\_TO keep\_VB off\_RP the\_DT evil\_JJ eye\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP believe\_VBP they\_PRP went\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT trouble\_NN of\_IN putting\_VBG an\_DT extra\_JJ amount\_NN of\_IN garlic\_NN into\_IN our\_PRP$ food\_NN ;\_: and\_CC I\_PRP ca\_MD n't\_RB abide\_VB garlic\_NN .\_.

Ever\_RB since\_IN then\_RB I\_PRP have\_VBP taken\_VBN care\_NN not\_RB to\_TO take\_VB off\_RP my\_PRP$ hat\_NN or\_CC veil\_NN ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB have\_VB escaped\_VBN their\_PRP$ suspicions\_NNS .\_.

We\_PRP are\_VBP travelling\_VBG fast\_RB ,\_, and\_CC as\_IN we\_PRP have\_VBP no\_DT driver\_NN with\_IN us\_PRP to\_TO carry\_VB tales\_NNS ,\_, we\_PRP go\_VBP ahead\_RB of\_IN scandal\_NN ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP daresay\_VBP that\_IN fear\_NN of\_IN the\_DT evil\_JJ eye\_NN will\_MD follow\_VB hard\_RB behind\_IN us\_PRP all\_PDT the\_DT way\_NN .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP seems\_VBZ tireless\_JJ ;\_: all\_DT day\_NN he\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB take\_VB any\_DT rest\_NN ,\_, though\_IN he\_PRP made\_VBD me\_PRP sleep\_VB for\_IN a\_DT long\_JJ spell\_NN .\_.

At\_IN sunset\_NN time\_NN he\_PRP hypnotised\_VBD me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC he\_PRP says\_VBZ that\_IN I\_PRP answered\_VBD as\_IN usual\_JJ ``\_`` darkness\_NN ,\_, lapping\_VBG water\_NN and\_CC creaking\_JJ wood\_NN ''\_'' ;\_: so\_RB our\_PRP$ enemy\_NN is\_VBZ still\_RB on\_IN the\_DT river\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP afraid\_JJ to\_TO think\_VB of\_IN Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, but\_CC somehow\_RB I\_PRP have\_VBP now\_RB no\_DT fear\_NN for\_IN him\_PRP ,\_, or\_CC for\_IN myself\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP write\_VBP this\_DT whilst\_IN we\_PRP wait\_VBP in\_IN a\_DT farmhouse\_NN for\_IN the\_DT horses\_NNS to\_TO be\_VB got\_VBN ready\_JJ .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP is\_VBZ sleeping\_VBG ,\_, Poor\_NNP dear\_RB ,\_, he\_PRP looks\_VBZ very\_RB tired\_JJ and\_CC old\_JJ and\_CC grey\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC his\_PRP$ mouth\_NN is\_VBZ set\_VBN as\_RB firmly\_RB as\_IN a\_DT conqueror\_NN 's\_POS ;\_: even\_RB in\_IN his\_PRP$ sleep\_NN he\_PRP is\_VBZ instinct\_NN with\_IN resolution\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP have\_VBP well\_RB started\_VBN I\_PRP must\_MD make\_VB him\_PRP rest\_VB whilst\_IN I\_PRP drive\_VBP .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD tell\_VB him\_PRP that\_IN we\_PRP have\_VBP days\_NNS before\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB break\_VB down\_RP when\_WRB most\_JJS of\_IN all\_PDT his\_PRP$ strength\_NN will\_MD be\_VB needed\_VBN ...\_: .\_.

All\_DT is\_VBZ ready\_JJ ;\_: we\_PRP are\_VBP off\_RB shortly\_RB .\_.

2\_CD November\_NNP ,\_, morning\_NN .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP was\_VBD successful\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP took\_VBD turns\_NNS driving\_VBG all\_DT night\_NN ;\_: now\_RB the\_DT day\_NN is\_VBZ on\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, bright\_JJ though\_IN cold\_NN .\_.

There\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT strange\_JJ heaviness\_NN in\_IN the\_DT air\_NN --\_: I\_PRP say\_VBP heaviness\_NN for\_IN want\_VBP of\_IN a\_DT better\_JJR word\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP mean\_VBP that\_IN it\_PRP oppresses\_VBZ us\_PRP both\_DT .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ very\_RB cold\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC only\_RB our\_PRP$ warm\_JJ furs\_NNS keep\_VBP us\_PRP comfortable\_JJ .\_.

At\_IN dawn\_NN Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP hypnotised\_VBD me\_PRP ;\_: he\_PRP says\_VBZ I\_PRP answered\_VBD ``\_`` darkness\_NN ,\_, creaking\_VBG wood\_NN and\_CC roaring\_VBG water\_NN ,\_, ''\_'' so\_IN the\_DT river\_NN is\_VBZ changing\_VBG as\_IN they\_PRP ascend\_VBP .\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP hope\_VB that\_DT my\_PRP$ darling\_NN will\_MD not\_RB run\_VB any\_DT chance\_NN of\_IN danger\_NN --\_: more\_JJR than\_IN need\_MD be\_VB ;\_: but\_CC we\_PRP are\_VBP in\_IN God\_NNP 's\_POS hands\_NNS .\_.

2\_CD November\_NNP ,\_, night\_NN .\_.

--\_: All\_DT day\_NN long\_JJ driving\_NN .\_.

The\_DT country\_NN gets\_VBZ wilder\_NN as\_IN we\_PRP go\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT great\_JJ spurs\_VBZ of\_IN the\_DT Carpathians\_NNPS ,\_, which\_WDT at\_IN Veresti\_NNP seemed\_VBD so\_RB far\_RB from\_IN us\_PRP and\_CC so\_RB low\_JJ on\_IN the\_DT horizon\_NN ,\_, now\_RB seem\_VBP to\_TO gather\_VB round\_NN us\_PRP and\_CC tower\_NN in\_IN front\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP both\_DT seem\_VBP in\_IN good\_JJ spirits\_NNS ;\_: I\_PRP think\_VBP we\_PRP make\_VBP an\_DT effort\_NN each\_DT to\_TO cheer\_VB the\_DT other\_JJ ;\_: in\_IN the\_DT doing\_VBG so\_IN we\_PRP cheer\_VBP ourselves\_PRP .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP says\_VBZ that\_IN by\_IN morning\_NN we\_PRP shall\_MD reach\_VB the\_DT Borgo\_NNP Pass\_NN .\_.

The\_DT houses\_NNS are\_VBP very\_RB few\_JJ here\_RB now\_RB ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT Professor\_NNP says\_VBZ that\_IN the\_DT last\_JJ horse\_NN we\_PRP got\_VBD will\_MD have\_VB to\_TO go\_VB on\_RP with\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, as\_IN we\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB be\_VB able\_JJ to\_TO change\_VB .\_.

He\_PRP got\_VBD two\_CD in\_IN addition\_NN to\_TO the\_DT two\_CD we\_PRP changed\_VBD ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN now\_RB we\_PRP have\_VBP a\_DT rude\_JJ four-in-hand\_NN .\_.

The\_DT dear\_RB horses\_NNS are\_VBP patient\_JJ and\_CC good\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC they\_PRP give\_VBP us\_PRP no\_DT trouble\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP are\_VBP not\_RB worried\_VBN with\_IN other\_JJ travellers\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB even\_RB I\_PRP can\_MD drive\_VB .\_.

We\_PRP shall\_MD get\_VB to\_TO the\_DT Pass\_NN in\_IN daylight\_NN ;\_: we\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB want\_VB to\_TO arrive\_VB before\_RB .\_.

So\_RB we\_PRP take\_VBP it\_PRP easy\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC have\_VBP each\_DT a\_DT long\_JJ rest\_NN in\_IN turn\_NN .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, what\_WP will\_MD to-morrow\_RB bring\_VB to\_TO us\_PRP ?\_.

We\_PRP go\_VBP to\_TO seek\_VB the\_DT place\_NN where\_WRB my\_PRP$ poor\_JJ darling\_NN suffered\_VBD so\_RB much\_JJ .\_.

God\_NN grant\_NN that\_IN we\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB guided\_VBN aright\_RB ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN He\_PRP will\_MD deign\_VB to\_TO watch\_VB over\_IN my\_PRP$ husband\_NN and\_CC those\_DT dear\_RB to\_TO us\_PRP both\_DT ,\_, and\_CC who\_WP are\_VBP in\_IN such\_JJ deadly\_JJ peril\_NN .\_.

As\_IN for\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP am\_VBP not\_RB worthy\_JJ in\_IN His\_PRP$ sight\_NN .\_.

Alas\_NNS !\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP unclean\_JJ to\_TO His\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC shall\_MD be\_VB until\_IN He\_PRP may\_MD deign\_VB to\_TO let\_VB me\_PRP stand\_VB forth\_RB in\_IN His\_PRP$ sight\_NN as\_IN one\_CD of\_IN those\_DT who\_WP have\_VBP not\_RB incurred\_VBN His\_PRP$ wrath\_NN .\_.

Memorandum\_NN by\_IN Abraham\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP .\_.

4\_CD November\_NNP .\_.

--\_: This\_DT to\_TO my\_PRP$ old\_JJ and\_CC true\_JJ friend\_NN John\_NNP Seward\_NNP ,\_, M.D.\_NNP ,\_, of\_IN Purfleet\_NNP ,\_, London\_NNP ,\_, in\_IN case\_NN I\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB see\_VB him\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP may\_MD explain\_VB .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ morning\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP write\_VBP by\_IN a\_DT fire\_NN which\_WDT all\_PDT the\_DT night\_NN I\_PRP have\_VBP kept\_VBN alive\_JJ --\_: Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP aiding\_VBG me\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ cold\_JJ ,\_, cold\_JJ ;\_: so\_RB cold\_JJ that\_IN the\_DT grey\_JJ heavy\_JJ sky\_NN is\_VBZ full\_JJ of\_IN snow\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT when\_WRB it\_PRP falls\_VBZ will\_MD settle\_VB for\_IN all\_DT winter\_NN as\_IN the\_DT ground\_NN is\_VBZ hardening\_VBG to\_TO receive\_VB it\_PRP .\_.

It\_PRP seems\_VBZ to\_TO have\_VB affected\_VBN Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ;\_: she\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN so\_RB heavy\_JJ of\_IN head\_NN all\_DT day\_NN that\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB like\_IN herself\_PRP .\_.

She\_PRP sleeps\_VBZ ,\_, and\_CC sleeps\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC sleeps\_NNS !\_.

She\_PRP who\_WP is\_VBZ usual\_JJ so\_RB alert\_JJ ,\_, have\_VBP done\_VBN literally\_RB nothing\_NN all\_PDT the\_DT day\_NN ;\_: she\_PRP even\_RB have\_VBP lost\_VBN her\_PRP$ appetite\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP make\_VBP no\_DT entry\_NN into\_IN her\_PRP$ little\_JJ diary\_NN ,\_, she\_PRP who\_WP write\_VBP so\_RB faithful\_JJ at\_IN every\_DT pause\_NN .\_.

Something\_NN whisper\_NN to\_TO me\_PRP that\_IN all\_DT is\_VBZ not\_RB well\_RB .\_.

However\_RB ,\_, to-night\_JJ she\_PRP is\_VBZ more\_JJR vif\_NN .\_.

Her\_PRP$ long\_JJ sleep\_NN all\_DT day\_NN have\_VBP refresh\_VB and\_CC restore\_VB her\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN now\_RB she\_PRP is\_VBZ all\_DT sweet\_JJ and\_CC bright\_JJ as\_IN ever\_RB .\_.

At\_IN sunset\_NN I\_PRP try\_VBP to\_TO hypnotise\_VB her\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC alas\_UH !\_.

with\_IN no\_DT effect\_NN ;\_: the\_DT power\_NN has\_VBZ grown\_VBN less\_JJR and\_CC less\_JJR with\_IN each\_DT day\_NN ,\_, and\_CC to-night\_JJ it\_PRP fail\_VB me\_PRP altogether\_RB .\_.

Well\_RB ,\_, God\_NNP 's\_POS will\_MD be\_VB done\_VBN --\_: whatever\_WDT it\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB ,\_, and\_CC whithersoever\_NN it\_PRP may\_MD lead\_VB !\_.

Now\_RB to\_TO the\_DT historical\_JJ ,\_, for\_IN as\_IN Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP write\_VB not\_RB in\_IN her\_PRP$ stenography\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP must\_MD ,\_, in\_IN my\_PRP$ cumbrous\_JJ old\_JJ fashion\_NN ,\_, that\_IN so\_IN each\_DT day\_NN of\_IN us\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB go\_VB unrecorded\_JJ .\_.

We\_PRP got\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT Borgo\_NNP Pass\_NN just\_RB after\_IN sunrise\_NN yesterday\_NN morning\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP saw\_VBD the\_DT signs\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT dawn\_NN I\_PRP got\_VBD ready\_JJ for\_IN the\_DT hypnotism\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP stopped\_VBD our\_PRP$ carriage\_NN ,\_, and\_CC got\_VBD down\_RB so\_RB that\_IN there\_EX might\_MD be\_VB no\_DT disturbance\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP made\_VBD a\_DT couch\_NN with\_IN furs\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, lying\_VBG down\_IN ,\_, yield\_VB herself\_PRP as\_IN usual\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC more\_RBR slow\_JJ and\_CC more\_RBR short\_JJ time\_NN than\_IN ever\_RB ,\_, to\_TO the\_DT hypnotic\_JJ sleep\_NN .\_.

As\_IN before\_RB ,\_, came\_VBD the\_DT answer\_NN :\_: ``\_`` darkness\_NN and\_CC the\_DT swirling\_NN of\_IN water\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Then\_RB she\_PRP woke\_VBD ,\_, bright\_JJ and\_CC radiant\_JJ and\_CC we\_PRP go\_VBP on\_IN our\_PRP$ way\_NN and\_CC soon\_RB reach\_VB the\_DT Pass\_NN .\_.

At\_IN this\_DT time\_NN and\_CC place\_NN ,\_, she\_PRP become\_VBD all\_DT on\_IN fire\_NN with\_IN zeal\_NN ;\_: some\_DT new\_JJ guiding\_VBG power\_NN be\_VB in\_IN her\_PRP manifested\_VBD ,\_, for\_IN she\_PRP point\_VBP to\_TO a\_DT road\_NN and\_CC say\_VB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` This\_DT is\_VBZ the\_DT way\_NN .\_. ''\_''

``\_`` How\_WRB know\_VBP you\_PRP it\_PRP ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP ask\_VBP .\_.

``\_`` Of\_IN course\_NN I\_PRP know\_VBP it\_PRP ,\_, ''\_'' she\_PRP answer\_NN ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN a\_DT pause\_NN ,\_, add\_VB :\_: ``\_`` Have\_VBP not\_RB my\_PRP$ Jonathan\_NNP travelled\_VBD it\_PRP and\_CC wrote\_VBD of\_IN his\_PRP$ travel\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

At\_IN first\_RB I\_PRP think\_VBP somewhat\_RB strange\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC soon\_RB I\_PRP see\_VBP that\_IN there\_EX be\_VB only\_RB one\_CD such\_JJ by-road\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ used\_VBN but\_CC little\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC very\_RB different\_JJ from\_IN the\_DT coach\_NN road\_NN from\_IN the\_DT Bukovina\_NNP to\_TO Bistritz\_NNP ,\_, which\_WDT is\_VBZ more\_RBR wide\_JJ and\_CC hard\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC more\_JJR of\_IN use\_NN .\_.

So\_RB we\_PRP came\_VBD down\_RB this\_DT road\_NN ;\_: when\_WRB we\_PRP meet\_VBP other\_JJ ways\_NNS --\_: not\_RB always\_RB were\_VBD we\_PRP sure\_JJ that\_IN they\_PRP were\_VBD roads\_NNS at\_IN all\_DT ,\_, for\_IN they\_PRP be\_VB neglect\_NN and\_CC light\_NN snow\_NN have\_VBP fallen\_VBN --\_: the\_DT horses\_NNS know\_VBP and\_CC they\_PRP only\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP give\_VBP rein\_NN to\_TO them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC they\_PRP go\_VBP on\_IN so\_RB patient\_JJ .\_.

By-and-by\_JJ we\_PRP find\_VBP all\_PDT the\_DT things\_NNS which\_WDT Jonathan\_NNP have\_VBP note\_NN in\_IN that\_DT wonderful\_JJ diary\_NN of\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

Then\_RB we\_PRP go\_VBP on\_IN for\_IN long\_JJ ,\_, long\_JJ hours\_NNS and\_CC hours\_NNS .\_.

At\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ ,\_, I\_PRP tell\_VBP Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP to\_TO sleep\_VB ;\_: she\_PRP try\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP succeed\_VB .\_.

She\_PRP sleep\_VBP all\_PDT the\_DT time\_NN ;\_: till\_IN at\_IN the\_DT last\_JJ ,\_, I\_PRP feel\_VBP myself\_PRP to\_TO suspicious\_JJ grow\_VB ,\_, and\_CC attempt\_NN to\_TO wake\_VB her\_PRP .\_.

But\_CC she\_PRP sleep\_VBP on\_IN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB wake\_VB her\_PRP though\_IN I\_PRP try\_VBP .\_.

I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB wish\_VB to\_TO try\_VB too\_RB hard\_RB lest\_IN I\_PRP harm\_VBP her\_PRP ;\_: for\_IN I\_PRP know\_VBP that\_IN she\_PRP have\_VBP suffer\_VB much\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC sleep\_NN at\_IN times\_NNS be\_VB all-in-all\_RB to\_TO her\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP think\_VBP I\_PRP drowse\_VBP myself\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN all\_DT of\_IN sudden\_JJ I\_PRP feel\_VBP guilt\_NN ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP done\_VBN something\_NN ;\_: I\_PRP find\_VBP myself\_PRP bolt\_NN up\_RP ,\_, with\_IN the\_DT reins\_NNS in\_IN my\_PRP$ hand\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT good\_JJ horses\_NNS go\_VBP along\_IN jog\_NN ,\_, jog\_NN ,\_, just\_RB as\_RB ever\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP look\_VBP down\_RB and\_CC find\_VB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP still\_RB sleep\_VB .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ now\_RB not\_RB far\_RB off\_IN sunset\_NN time\_NN ,\_, and\_CC over\_IN the\_DT snow\_NN the\_DT light\_NN of\_IN the\_DT sun\_NN flow\_NN in\_IN big\_JJ yellow\_JJ flood\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN we\_PRP throw\_VBP great\_JJ long\_JJ shadow\_NN on\_IN where\_WRB the\_DT mountain\_NN rise\_NN so\_RB steep\_JJ .\_.

For\_IN we\_PRP are\_VBP going\_VBG up\_RB ,\_, and\_CC up\_RB ;\_: and\_CC all\_DT is\_VBZ oh\_UH !\_.

so\_RB wild\_JJ and\_CC rocky\_JJ ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN it\_PRP were\_VBD the\_DT end\_NN of\_IN the\_DT world\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB I\_PRP arouse\_VBP Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP .\_.

This\_DT time\_NN she\_PRP wake\_VBP with\_IN not\_RB much\_JJ trouble\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB I\_PRP try\_VBP to\_TO put\_VB her\_PRP to\_TO hypnotic\_JJ sleep\_NN .\_.

But\_CC she\_PRP sleep\_VBP not\_RB ,\_, being\_VBG as\_IN though\_IN I\_PRP were\_VBD not\_RB .\_.

Still\_RB I\_PRP try\_VBP and\_CC try\_VBP ,\_, till\_IN all\_DT at\_IN once\_RB I\_PRP find\_VBP her\_PRP and\_CC myself\_PRP in\_IN dark\_NN ;\_: so\_IN I\_PRP look\_VBP round\_NN ,\_, and\_CC find\_VBP that\_IN the\_DT sun\_NN have\_VBP gone\_VBN down\_RP .\_.

Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP laugh\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP turn\_VBP and\_CC look\_VBP at\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

She\_PRP is\_VBZ now\_RB quite\_RB awake\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC look\_VB so\_RB well\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP never\_RB saw\_VBD her\_PRP since\_IN that\_DT night\_NN at\_IN Carfax\_NNP when\_WRB we\_PRP first\_RB enter\_VBP the\_DT Count\_NNP 's\_POS house\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP am\_VBP amaze\_VB ,\_, and\_CC not\_RB at\_IN ease\_NN then\_RB ;\_: but\_CC she\_PRP is\_VBZ so\_RB bright\_JJ and\_CC tender\_JJ and\_CC thoughtful\_JJ for\_IN me\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP forget\_VBP all\_DT fear\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP light\_VBP a\_DT fire\_NN ,\_, for\_IN we\_PRP have\_VBP brought\_VBN supply\_NN of\_IN wood\_NN with\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP prepare\_VBP food\_NN while\_IN I\_PRP undo\_VBP the\_DT horses\_NNS and\_CC set\_VB them\_PRP ,\_, tethered\_JJ in\_IN shelter\_NN ,\_, to\_TO feed\_VB .\_.

Then\_RB when\_WRB I\_PRP return\_VBP to\_TO the\_DT fire\_NN she\_PRP have\_VBP my\_PRP$ supper\_NN ready\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP go\_VBP to\_TO help\_VB her\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC she\_PRP smile\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC tell\_VB me\_PRP that\_IN she\_PRP have\_VBP eat\_VB already\_RB --\_: that\_IN she\_PRP was\_VBD so\_RB hungry\_JJ that\_IN she\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB wait\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP like\_VBP it\_PRP not\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP grave\_JJ doubts\_NNS ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP fear\_VBP to\_TO affright\_VB her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB I\_PRP am\_VBP silent\_JJ of\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

She\_PRP help\_VBP me\_PRP and\_CC I\_PRP eat\_VBP alone\_RB ;\_: and\_CC then\_RB we\_PRP wrap\_VBP in\_IN fur\_NN and\_CC lie\_NN beside\_IN the\_DT fire\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP tell\_VBP her\_PRP to\_TO sleep\_VB while\_IN I\_PRP watch\_VBP .\_.

But\_CC presently\_RB I\_PRP forget\_VBP all\_DT of\_IN watching\_NN ;\_: and\_CC when\_WRB I\_PRP sudden\_JJ remember\_VBP that\_IN I\_PRP watch\_VBP ,\_, I\_PRP find\_VBP her\_PRP lying\_VBG quiet\_NN ,\_, but\_CC awake\_RB ,\_, and\_CC looking\_VBG at\_IN me\_PRP with\_IN so\_RB bright\_JJ eyes\_NNS .\_.

Once\_RB ,\_, twice\_RB more\_RBR the\_DT same\_JJ occur\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP get\_VBP much\_JJ sleep\_NN till\_IN before\_IN morning\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP wake\_VBP I\_PRP try\_VBP to\_TO hypnotise\_VB her\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC alas\_UH !\_.

though\_IN she\_PRP shut\_VBD her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS obedient\_JJ ,\_, she\_PRP may\_MD not\_RB sleep\_VB .\_.

The\_DT sun\_NN rise\_NN up\_RB ,\_, and\_CC up\_RB ,\_, and\_CC up\_RB ;\_: and\_CC then\_RB sleep\_VB come\_VBN to\_TO her\_PRP too\_RB late\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC so\_RB heavy\_JJ that\_IN she\_PRP will\_MD not\_RB wake\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP to\_TO lift\_VB her\_PRP up\_RP ,\_, and\_CC place\_VB her\_PRP$ sleeping\_NN in\_IN the\_DT carriage\_NN when\_WRB I\_PRP have\_VBP harnessed\_VBN the\_DT horses\_NNS and\_CC made\_VBD all\_DT ready\_JJ .\_.

Madam\_NNP still\_RB sleep\_VB ,\_, and\_CC she\_PRP look\_VBP in\_IN her\_PRP$ sleep\_NN more\_RBR healthy\_JJ and\_CC more\_JJR redder\_JJR than\_IN before\_RB .\_.

And\_CC I\_PRP like\_VBP it\_PRP not\_RB .\_.

And\_CC I\_PRP am\_VBP afraid\_JJ ,\_, afraid\_JJ ,\_, afraid\_JJ !\_.

--\_: I\_PRP am\_VBP afraid\_JJ of\_IN all\_DT things\_NNS --\_: even\_RB to\_TO think\_VB but\_CC I\_PRP must\_MD go\_VB on\_IN my\_PRP$ way\_NN .\_.

The\_DT stake\_NN we\_PRP play\_VBP for\_IN is\_VBZ life\_NN and\_CC death\_NN ,\_, or\_CC more\_JJR than\_IN these\_DT ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP must\_MD not\_RB flinch\_VB .\_.

5\_CD November\_NNP ,\_, morning\_NN .\_.

--\_: Let\_VB me\_PRP be\_VB accurate\_JJ in\_IN everything\_NN ,\_, for\_IN though\_IN you\_PRP and\_CC I\_PRP have\_VBP seen\_VBN some\_DT strange\_JJ things\_NNS together\_RB ,\_, you\_PRP may\_MD at\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ think\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP ,\_, Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, am\_VBP mad\_JJ --\_: that\_IN the\_DT many\_JJ horrors\_NNS and\_CC the\_DT so\_RB long\_JJ strain\_NN on\_IN nerves\_NNS has\_VBZ at\_IN the\_DT last\_JJ turn\_NN my\_PRP$ brain\_NN .\_.

All\_DT yesterday\_NN we\_PRP travel\_VBP ,\_, ever\_RB getting\_VBG closer\_RBR to\_TO the\_DT mountains\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC moving\_VBG into\_IN a\_DT more\_RBR and\_CC more\_RBR wild\_JJ and\_CC desert\_NN land\_NN .\_.

There\_EX are\_VBP great\_JJ ,\_, frowning\_VBG precipices\_NNS and\_CC much\_RB falling\_VBG water\_NN ,\_, and\_CC Nature\_NNP seem\_VBP to\_TO have\_VB held\_VBN sometime\_RB her\_PRP$ carnival\_NN .\_.

Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP still\_RB sleep\_VB and\_CC sleep\_VB ;\_: and\_CC though\_IN I\_PRP did\_VBD have\_VB hunger\_NN and\_CC appeased\_VBD it\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB waken\_VB her\_PRP --\_: even\_RB for\_IN food\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO fear\_VB that\_IN the\_DT fatal\_JJ spell\_NN of\_IN the\_DT place\_NN was\_VBD upon\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, tainted\_VBN as\_IN she\_PRP is\_VBZ with\_IN that\_DT Vampire\_NNP baptism\_NN .\_.

``\_`` Well\_UH ,\_, ''\_'' said\_VBD I\_PRP to\_TO myself\_PRP ,\_, ``\_`` if\_IN it\_PRP be\_VB that\_IN she\_PRP sleep\_VB all\_PDT the\_DT day\_NN ,\_, it\_PRP shall\_MD also\_RB be\_VB that\_IN I\_PRP do\_VBP not\_RB sleep\_VB at\_IN night\_NN .\_. ''\_''

As\_IN we\_PRP travel\_VBP on\_IN the\_DT rough\_JJ road\_NN ,\_, for\_IN a\_DT road\_NN of\_IN an\_DT ancient\_JJ and\_CC imperfect\_JJ kind\_NN there\_EX was\_VBD ,\_, I\_PRP held\_VBD down\_RP my\_PRP$ head\_NN and\_CC slept\_VBD .\_.

Again\_RB I\_PRP waked\_VBD with\_IN a\_DT sense\_NN of\_IN guilt\_NN and\_CC of\_IN time\_NN passed\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC found\_VBD Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP still\_RB sleeping\_VBG ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT sun\_NN low\_JJ down\_NN .\_.

But\_CC all\_DT was\_VBD indeed\_RB changed\_VBN ;\_: the\_DT frowning\_VBG mountains\_NNS seemed\_VBD further\_RBR away\_RB ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP were\_VBD near\_IN the\_DT top\_NN of\_IN a\_DT steep-rising\_JJ hill\_NN ,\_, on\_IN summit\_NN of\_IN which\_WDT was\_VBD such\_JJ a\_DT castle\_NN as\_IN Jonathan\_NNP tell\_VBP of\_IN in\_IN his\_PRP$ diary\_NN .\_.

At\_IN once\_RB I\_PRP exulted\_VBD and\_CC feared\_VBD ;\_: for\_IN now\_RB ,\_, for\_IN good\_JJ or\_CC ill\_JJ ,\_, the\_DT end\_NN was\_VBD near\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP woke\_VBD Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC again\_RB tried\_VBD to\_TO hypnotise\_VB her\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC alas\_UH !\_.

unavailing\_VBG till\_IN too\_RB late\_JJ .\_.

Then\_RB ,\_, ere\_VBP the\_DT great\_JJ dark\_NN came\_VBD upon\_IN us\_PRP --\_: for\_IN even\_RB after\_IN down-sun\_NN the\_DT heavens\_NNS reflected\_VBD the\_DT gone\_VBN sun\_NN on\_IN the\_DT snow\_NN ,\_, and\_CC all\_DT was\_VBD for\_IN a\_DT time\_NN in\_IN a\_DT great\_JJ twilight\_NN --\_: I\_PRP took\_VBD out\_RP the\_DT horses\_NNS and\_CC fed\_VBD them\_PRP in\_IN what\_WDT shelter\_NN I\_PRP could\_MD .\_.

Then\_RB I\_PRP make\_VBP a\_DT fire\_NN ;\_: and\_CC near\_IN it\_PRP I\_PRP make\_VBP Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, now\_RB awake\_RB and\_CC more\_RBR charming\_JJ than\_IN ever\_RB ,\_, sit\_VBP comfortable\_JJ amid\_IN her\_PRP$ rugs\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP got\_VBD ready\_JJ food\_NN :\_: but\_CC she\_PRP would\_MD not\_RB eat\_VB ,\_, simply\_RB saying\_VBG that\_IN she\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB hunger\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB press\_VB her\_PRP ,\_, knowing\_VBG her\_PRP$ unavailingness\_NN .\_.

But\_CC I\_PRP myself\_PRP eat\_VBP ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP must\_MD needs\_VBZ now\_RB be\_VB strong\_JJ for\_IN all\_DT .\_.

Then\_RB ,\_, with\_IN the\_DT fear\_NN on\_IN me\_PRP of\_IN what\_WP might\_MD be\_VB ,\_, I\_PRP drew\_VBD a\_DT ring\_NN so\_RB big\_JJ for\_IN her\_PRP$ comfort\_NN ,\_, round\_NN where\_WRB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP sat\_VBD ;\_: and\_CC over\_IN the\_DT ring\_NN I\_PRP passed\_VBD some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT wafer\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP broke\_VBD it\_PRP fine\_JJ so\_IN that\_IN all\_DT was\_VBD well\_RB guarded\_VBN .\_.

She\_PRP sat\_VBD still\_RB all\_PDT the\_DT time\_NN --\_: so\_RB still\_RB as\_IN one\_CD dead\_NN ;\_: and\_CC she\_PRP grew\_VBD whiter\_RBR and\_CC ever\_RB whiter\_JJR till\_IN the\_DT snow\_NN was\_VBD not\_RB more\_JJR pale\_NN ;\_: and\_CC no\_DT word\_NN she\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

But\_CC when\_WRB I\_PRP drew\_VBD near\_IN ,\_, she\_PRP clung\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD know\_VB that\_IN the\_DT poor\_JJ soul\_NN shook\_VBD her\_PRP from\_IN head\_NN to\_TO feet\_NNS with\_IN a\_DT tremor\_NN that\_WDT was\_VBD pain\_NN to\_TO feel\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP said\_VBD to\_TO her\_PRP presently\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB she\_PRP had\_VBD grown\_VBN more\_RBR quiet\_JJ :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Will\_MD you\_PRP not\_RB come\_VB over\_RP to\_TO the\_DT fire\_NN ?\_. ''\_''

for\_IN I\_PRP wished\_VBD to\_TO make\_VB a\_DT test\_NN of\_IN what\_WP she\_PRP could\_MD .\_.

She\_PRP rose\_VBD obedient\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC when\_WRB she\_PRP have\_VBP made\_VBN a\_DT step\_NN she\_PRP stopped\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC stood\_VBD as\_IN one\_CD stricken\_JJ .\_.

``\_`` Why\_WRB not\_RB go\_VB on\_IN ?\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP asked\_VBD .\_.

She\_PRP shook\_VBD her\_PRP$ head\_NN ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, coming\_VBG back\_RB ,\_, sat\_VBD down\_RB in\_IN her\_PRP$ place\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB ,\_, looking\_VBG at\_IN me\_PRP with\_IN open\_JJ eyes\_NNS ,\_, as\_IN of\_IN one\_CD waked\_VBN from\_IN sleep\_NN ,\_, she\_PRP said\_VBD simply\_RB :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP can\_MD not\_RB !\_. ''\_''

and\_CC remained\_VBD silent\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP rejoiced\_VBD ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN what\_WP she\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB ,\_, none\_NN of\_IN those\_DT that\_IN we\_PRP dreaded\_VBD could\_MD .\_.

Though\_IN there\_EX might\_MD be\_VB danger\_NN to\_TO her\_PRP$ body\_NN ,\_, yet\_RB her\_PRP$ soul\_NN was\_VBD safe\_JJ !\_.

Presently\_RB the\_DT horses\_NNS began\_VBD to\_TO scream\_VB ,\_, and\_CC tore\_VBD at\_IN their\_PRP$ tethers\_NNS till\_IN I\_PRP came\_VBD to\_TO them\_PRP and\_CC quieted\_VBD them\_PRP .\_.

When\_WRB they\_PRP did\_VBD feel\_VB my\_PRP$ hands\_NNS on\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, they\_PRP whinnied\_VBD low\_JJ as\_IN in\_IN joy\_NN ,\_, and\_CC licked\_VBD at\_IN my\_PRP$ hands\_NNS and\_CC were\_VBD quiet\_JJ for\_IN a\_DT time\_NN .\_.

Many\_JJ times\_NNS through\_IN the\_DT night\_NN did\_VBD I\_PRP come\_VB to\_TO them\_PRP ,\_, till\_IN it\_PRP arrive\_VB to\_TO the\_DT cold\_JJ hour\_NN when\_WRB all\_DT nature\_NN is\_VBZ at\_IN lowest\_JJS ;\_: and\_CC every\_DT time\_NN my\_PRP$ coming\_VBG was\_VBD with\_IN quiet\_NN of\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT cold\_JJ hour\_NN the\_DT fire\_NN began\_VBD to\_TO die\_VB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP was\_VBD about\_IN stepping\_VBG forth\_RB to\_TO replenish\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN now\_RB the\_DT snow\_NN came\_VBD in\_IN flying\_VBG sweeps\_NNS and\_CC with\_IN it\_PRP a\_DT chill\_NN mist\_NN .\_.

Even\_RB in\_IN the\_DT dark\_NN there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT light\_NN of\_IN some\_DT kind\_NN ,\_, as\_IN there\_EX ever\_RB is\_VBZ over\_IN snow\_NN ;\_: and\_CC it\_PRP seemed\_VBD as\_IN though\_IN the\_DT snow-flurries\_NNS and\_CC the\_DT wreaths\_NNS of\_IN mist\_NN took\_VBD shape\_NN as\_IN of\_IN women\_NNS with\_IN trailing\_VBG garments\_NNS .\_.

All\_DT was\_VBD in\_IN dead\_JJ ,\_, grim\_JJ silence\_NN only\_RB that\_IN the\_DT horses\_NNS whinnied\_VBD and\_CC cowered\_VBD ,\_, as\_IN if\_IN in\_IN terror\_NN of\_IN the\_DT worst\_JJS .\_.

I\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO fear\_VB --\_: horrible\_JJ fears\_NNS ;\_: but\_CC then\_RB came\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP the\_DT sense\_NN of\_IN safety\_NN in\_IN that\_DT ring\_NN wherein\_WRB I\_PRP stood\_VBD .\_.

I\_PRP began\_VBD ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, to\_TO think\_VB that\_IN my\_PRP$ imaginings\_NNS were\_VBD of\_IN the\_DT night\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT gloom\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT unrest\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP gone\_VBN through\_IN ,\_, and\_CC all\_PDT the\_DT terrible\_JJ anxiety\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD as\_IN though\_IN my\_PRP$ memories\_NNS of\_IN all\_DT Jonathan\_NNP 's\_POS horrid\_JJ experience\_NN were\_VBD befooling\_VBG me\_PRP ;\_: for\_IN the\_DT snow\_NN flakes\_NNS and\_CC the\_DT mist\_NN began\_VBD to\_TO wheel\_NN and\_CC circle\_NN round\_NN ,\_, till\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD get\_VB as\_IN though\_IN a\_DT shadowy\_JJ glimpse\_NN of\_IN those\_DT women\_NNS that\_WDT would\_MD have\_VB kissed\_VBN him\_PRP .\_.

And\_CC then\_RB the\_DT horses\_NNS cowered\_VBD lower\_JJR and\_CC lower\_JJR ,\_, and\_CC moaned\_VBD in\_IN terror\_NN as\_IN men\_NNS do\_VBP in\_IN pain\_NN .\_.

Even\_RB the\_DT madness\_NN of\_IN fright\_NN was\_VBD not\_RB to\_TO them\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN they\_PRP could\_MD break\_VB away\_RB .\_.

I\_PRP feared\_VBD for\_IN my\_PRP$ dear\_RB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP when\_WRB these\_DT weird\_JJ figures\_NNS drew\_VBD near\_IN and\_CC circled\_VBD round\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP looked\_VBD at\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, but\_CC she\_PRP sat\_VBD calm\_NN ,\_, and\_CC smiled\_VBD at\_IN me\_PRP ;\_: when\_WRB I\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB stepped\_VBN to\_TO the\_DT fire\_NN to\_TO replenish\_VB it\_PRP ,\_, she\_PRP caught\_VBD me\_PRP and\_CC held\_VBD me\_PRP back\_RB ,\_, and\_CC whispered\_VBD ,\_, like\_IN a\_DT voice\_NN that\_IN one\_CD hears\_VBZ in\_IN a\_DT dream\_NN ,\_, so\_RB low\_JJ it\_PRP was\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` No\_UH !\_.

No\_DT !\_.

Do\_VBP not\_RB go\_VB without\_IN .\_.

Here\_RB you\_PRP are\_VBP safe\_JJ !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP turned\_VBD to\_TO her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC looking\_VBG in\_IN her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS ,\_, said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` But\_CC you\_PRP ?\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ for\_IN you\_PRP that\_IN I\_PRP fear\_VBP !\_. ''\_''

whereat\_VB she\_PRP laughed\_VBD --\_: a\_DT laugh\_NN ,\_, low\_JJ and\_CC unreal\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Fear\_NN for\_IN me\_PRP !\_.

Why\_WRB fear\_NN for\_IN me\_PRP ?\_.

None\_NN safer\_JJR in\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT world\_NN from\_IN them\_PRP than\_IN I\_PRP am\_VBP ,\_, ''\_'' and\_CC as\_IN I\_PRP wondered\_VBD at\_IN the\_DT meaning\_NN of\_IN her\_PRP$ words\_NNS ,\_, a\_DT puff\_NN of\_IN wind\_NN made\_VBD the\_DT flame\_NN leap\_NN up\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP see\_VBP the\_DT red\_JJ scar\_NN on\_IN her\_PRP$ forehead\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB ,\_, alas\_UH !\_.

I\_PRP knew\_VBD .\_.

Did\_VBD I\_PRP not\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP would\_MD soon\_RB have\_VB learned\_VBN ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT wheeling\_NN figures\_NNS of\_IN mist\_NN and\_CC snow\_NN came\_VBD closer\_JJR ,\_, but\_CC keeping\_VBG ever\_RB without\_IN the\_DT Holy\_JJ circle\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB they\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO materialise\_VB till\_IN --\_: if\_IN God\_NNP have\_VBP not\_RB take\_VB away\_RP my\_PRP$ reason\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP saw\_VBD it\_PRP through\_IN my\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS --\_: there\_EX were\_VBD before\_IN me\_PRP in\_IN actual\_JJ flesh\_NN the\_DT same\_JJ three\_CD women\_NNS that\_IN Jonathan\_NNP saw\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT room\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB they\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB kissed\_VBN his\_PRP$ throat\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP knew\_VBD the\_DT swaying\_VBG round\_NN forms\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT bright\_JJ hard\_JJ eyes\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT white\_JJ teeth\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT ruddy\_JJ colour\_NN ,\_, the\_DT voluptuous\_JJ lips\_NNS .\_.

They\_PRP smiled\_VBD ever\_RB at\_IN poor\_JJ dear\_RB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ;\_: and\_CC as\_IN their\_PRP$ laugh\_NN came\_VBD through\_IN the\_DT silence\_NN of\_IN the\_DT night\_NN ,\_, they\_PRP twined\_VBD their\_PRP$ arms\_NNS and\_CC pointed\_VBD to\_TO her\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC said\_VBD in\_IN those\_DT so\_RB sweet\_JJ tingling\_VBG tones\_NNS that\_IN Jonathan\_NNP said\_VBD were\_VBD of\_IN the\_DT intolerable\_JJ sweetness\_NN of\_IN the\_DT water-glasses\_NNS :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Come\_VB ,\_, sister\_NN .\_.

Come\_VB to\_TO us\_PRP .\_.

Come\_VB !\_.

Come\_VB !\_. ''\_''

In\_IN fear\_NN I\_PRP turned\_VBD to\_TO my\_PRP$ poor\_JJ Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC my\_PRP$ heart\_NN with\_IN gladness\_NN leapt\_VBD like\_IN flame\_NN ;\_: for\_IN oh\_UH !\_.

the\_DT terror\_NN in\_IN her\_PRP$ sweet\_JJ eyes\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT repulsion\_NN ,\_, the\_DT horror\_NN ,\_, told\_VBD a\_DT story\_NN to\_TO my\_PRP$ heart\_NN that\_WDT was\_VBD all\_DT of\_IN hope\_NN .\_.

God\_NNP be\_VB thanked\_VBN she\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB ,\_, yet\_RB ,\_, of\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP seized\_VBD some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT firewood\_NN which\_WDT was\_VBD by\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC holding\_VBG out\_RP some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT Wafer\_NNP ,\_, advanced\_VBD on\_IN them\_PRP towards\_IN the\_DT fire\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP drew\_VBD back\_RB before\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC laughed\_VBD their\_PRP$ low\_JJ horrid\_JJ laugh\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP fed\_VBD the\_DT fire\_NN ,\_, and\_CC feared\_VBD them\_PRP not\_RB ;\_: for\_IN I\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD safe\_JJ within\_IN our\_PRP$ protections\_NNS .\_.

They\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB approach\_VB ,\_, me\_PRP ,\_, whilst\_IN so\_RB armed\_JJ ,\_, nor\_CC Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP whilst\_IN she\_PRP remained\_VBD within\_IN the\_DT ring\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT she\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB leave\_VB no\_RB more\_JJR than\_IN they\_PRP could\_MD enter\_VB .\_.

The\_DT horses\_NNS had\_VBD ceased\_VBN to\_TO moan\_VB ,\_, and\_CC lay\_VBD still\_RB on\_IN the\_DT ground\_NN ;\_: the\_DT snow\_NN fell\_VBD on\_IN them\_PRP softly\_RB ,\_, and\_CC they\_PRP grew\_VBD whiter\_JJR .\_.

I\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD for\_IN the\_DT poor\_JJ beasts\_NNS no\_RB more\_JJR of\_IN terror\_NN .\_.

And\_CC so\_RB we\_PRP remained\_VBD till\_IN the\_DT red\_NN of\_IN the\_DT dawn\_NN to\_TO fall\_VB through\_IN the\_DT snow-gloom\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD desolate\_JJ and\_CC afraid\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC full\_JJ of\_IN woe\_NN and\_CC terror\_NN ;\_: but\_CC when\_WRB that\_DT beautiful\_JJ sun\_NN began\_VBD to\_TO climb\_VB the\_DT horizon\_NN life\_NN was\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP again\_RB .\_.

At\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ coming\_VBG of\_IN the\_DT dawn\_NN the\_DT horrid\_JJ figures\_NNS melted\_VBN in\_IN the\_DT whirling\_JJ mist\_NN and\_CC snow\_NN ;\_: the\_DT wreaths\_NNS of\_IN transparent\_JJ gloom\_NN moved\_VBD away\_RB towards\_IN the\_DT castle\_NN ,\_, and\_CC were\_VBD lost\_VBN .\_.

Instinctively\_RB ,\_, with\_IN the\_DT dawn\_NN coming\_VBG ,\_, I\_PRP turned\_VBD to\_TO Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, intending\_VBG to\_TO hypnotise\_VB her\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC she\_PRP lay\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT deep\_JJ and\_CC sudden\_JJ sleep\_NN ,\_, from\_IN which\_WDT I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB wake\_VB her\_PRP .\_.

I\_PRP tried\_VBD to\_TO hypnotise\_VB through\_IN her\_PRP$ sleep\_NN ,\_, but\_CC she\_PRP made\_VBD no\_DT response\_NN ,\_, none\_NN at\_IN all\_DT ;\_: and\_CC the\_DT day\_NN broke\_VBD .\_.

I\_PRP fear\_VBP yet\_RB to\_TO stir\_VB .\_.

I\_PRP have\_VBP made\_VBN my\_PRP$ fire\_NN and\_CC have\_VBP seen\_VBN the\_DT horses\_NNS ,\_, they\_PRP are\_VBP all\_DT dead\_JJ .\_.

To-day\_JJ I\_PRP have\_VBP much\_JJ to\_TO do\_VB here\_RB ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP keep\_VBP waiting\_VBG till\_IN the\_DT sun\_NN is\_VBZ up\_RB high\_JJ ;\_: for\_IN there\_EX may\_MD be\_VB places\_NNS where\_WRB I\_PRP must\_MD go\_VB ,\_, where\_WRB that\_DT sunlight\_NN ,\_, though\_IN snow\_NN and\_CC mist\_NN obscure\_VBP it\_PRP ,\_, will\_MD be\_VB to\_TO me\_PRP a\_DT safety\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP will\_MD strengthen\_VB me\_PRP with\_IN breakfast\_NN ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB I\_PRP will\_MD to\_TO my\_PRP$ terrible\_JJ work\_NN .\_.

Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP still\_RB sleeps\_VBZ ;\_: and\_CC ,\_, God\_NNP be\_VB thanked\_VBN !\_.

she\_PRP is\_VBZ calm\_JJ in\_IN her\_PRP$ sleep\_NN ...\_: .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP .\_.

4\_CD November\_NNP ,\_, evening\_NN .\_.

--\_: The\_DT accident\_NN to\_TO the\_DT launch\_NN has\_VBZ been\_VBN a\_DT terrible\_JJ thing\_NN for\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

Only\_RB for\_IN it\_PRP we\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB overtaken\_VBN the\_DT boat\_NN long\_RB ago\_RB ;\_: and\_CC by\_IN now\_RB my\_PRP$ dear\_RB Mina\_NNP would\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN free\_JJ .\_.

I\_PRP fear\_VBP to\_TO think\_VB of\_IN her\_PRP ,\_, off\_RB on\_IN the\_DT wolds\_NNS near\_IN that\_DT horrid\_JJ place\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP got\_VBN horses\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP follow\_VBP on\_IN the\_DT track\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP note\_VBP this\_DT whilst\_IN Godalming\_NNP is\_VBZ getting\_VBG ready\_JJ .\_.

We\_PRP have\_VBP our\_PRP$ arms\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT Szgany\_NNP must\_MD look\_VB out\_RP if\_IN they\_PRP mean\_VBP fight\_NN .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, if\_IN only\_JJ Morris\_NNP and\_CC Seward\_NNP were\_VBD with\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

We\_PRP must\_MD only\_RB hope\_VB !\_.

If\_IN I\_PRP write\_VBP no\_DT more\_RBR Good-bye\_JJ ,\_, Mina\_NNP !\_.

God\_NNP bless\_VB and\_CC keep\_VB you\_PRP .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP 's\_POS Diary\_NNP .\_.

5\_CD November\_NNP .\_.

--\_: With\_IN the\_DT dawn\_NN we\_PRP saw\_VBD the\_DT body\_NN of\_IN Szgany\_NNP before\_IN us\_PRP dashing\_VBG away\_RB from\_IN the\_DT river\_NN with\_IN their\_PRP$ leiter-wagon\_NN .\_.

They\_PRP surrounded\_VBD it\_PRP in\_IN a\_DT cluster\_NN ,\_, and\_CC hurried\_VBD along\_RB as\_IN though\_IN beset\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT snow\_NN is\_VBZ falling\_VBG lightly\_RB and\_CC there\_EX is\_VBZ a\_DT strange\_JJ excitement\_NN in\_IN the\_DT air\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB our\_PRP$ own\_JJ feelings\_NNS ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT depression\_NN is\_VBZ strange\_JJ .\_.

Far\_RB off\_IN I\_PRP hear\_VBP the\_DT howling\_NN of\_IN wolves\_NNS ;\_: the\_DT snow\_NN brings\_VBZ them\_PRP down\_RP from\_IN the\_DT mountains\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC there\_EX are\_VBP dangers\_NNS to\_TO all\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC from\_IN all\_DT sides\_NNS .\_.

The\_DT horses\_NNS are\_VBP nearly\_RB ready\_JJ ,\_, and\_CC we\_PRP are\_VBP soon\_RB off\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP ride\_VBP to\_TO death\_NN of\_IN some\_DT one\_CD .\_.

God\_NNP alone\_RB knows\_VBZ who\_WP ,\_, or\_CC where\_WRB ,\_, or\_CC what\_WP ,\_, or\_CC when\_WRB ,\_, or\_CC how\_WRB it\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB ...\_: .\_.

Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP 's\_POS Memorandum\_NN .\_.

5\_CD November\_NNP ,\_, afternoon\_NN .\_.

--\_: I\_PRP am\_VBP at\_IN least\_JJS sane\_NN .\_.

Thank\_VB God\_NNP for\_IN that\_DT mercy\_NN at\_IN all\_DT events\_NNS ,\_, though\_IN the\_DT proving\_NN it\_PRP has\_VBZ been\_VBN dreadful\_JJ .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP left\_VBD Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP sleeping\_VBG within\_IN the\_DT Holy\_JJ circle\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP took\_VBD my\_PRP$ way\_NN to\_TO the\_DT castle\_NN .\_.

The\_DT blacksmith\_NN hammer\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP took\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT carriage\_NN from\_IN Veresti\_NNP was\_VBD useful\_JJ ;\_: though\_IN the\_DT doors\_NNS were\_VBD all\_DT open\_JJ I\_PRP broke\_VBD them\_PRP off\_IN the\_DT rusty\_JJ hinges\_NNS ,\_, lest\_IN some\_DT ill-intent\_JJ or\_CC ill-chance\_JJ should\_MD close\_VB them\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN being\_VBG entered\_VBN I\_PRP might\_MD not\_RB get\_VB out\_RB .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP 's\_POS bitter\_JJ experience\_NN served\_VBD me\_PRP here\_RB .\_.

By\_IN memory\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ diary\_NN I\_PRP found\_VBD my\_PRP$ way\_NN to\_TO the\_DT old\_JJ chapel\_NN ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN here\_RB my\_PRP$ work\_NN lay\_VBD .\_.

The\_DT air\_NN was\_VBD oppressive\_JJ ;\_: it\_PRP seemed\_VBD as\_IN if\_IN there\_EX was\_VBD some\_DT sulphurous\_JJ fume\_NN ,\_, which\_WDT at\_IN times\_NNS made\_VBD me\_PRP dizzy\_JJ .\_.

Either\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD a\_DT roaring\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ ears\_NNS or\_CC I\_PRP heard\_VBD afar\_NN off\_IN the\_DT howl\_NN of\_IN wolves\_NNS .\_.

Then\_RB I\_PRP bethought\_VBP me\_PRP of\_IN my\_PRP$ dear\_RB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP was\_VBD in\_IN terrible\_JJ plight\_NN .\_.

The\_DT dilemma\_NN had\_VBD me\_PRP between\_IN his\_PRP$ horns\_NNS .\_.

Her\_PRP$ ,\_, I\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB dare\_VB to\_TO take\_VB into\_IN this\_DT place\_NN ,\_, but\_CC left\_VBD safe\_JJ from\_IN the\_DT Vampire\_NNP in\_IN that\_DT Holy\_JJ circle\_NN ;\_: and\_CC yet\_RB even\_RB there\_EX would\_MD be\_VB the\_DT wolf\_NN !\_.

I\_PRP resolve\_VBP me\_PRP that\_IN my\_PRP$ work\_NN lay\_VBD here\_RB ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN as\_IN to\_TO the\_DT wolves\_NNS we\_PRP must\_MD submit\_VB ,\_, if\_IN it\_PRP were\_VBD God\_NNP 's\_POS will\_NN .\_.

At\_IN any\_DT rate\_NN it\_PRP was\_VBD only\_RB death\_NN and\_CC freedom\_NN beyond\_IN .\_.

So\_RB did\_VBD I\_PRP choose\_VB for\_IN her\_PRP .\_.

Had\_VBD it\_PRP but\_CC been\_VBN for\_IN myself\_PRP the\_DT choice\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN easy\_JJ ,\_, the\_DT maw\_NN of\_IN the\_DT wolf\_NN were\_VBD better\_JJR to\_TO rest\_VB in\_RP than\_IN the\_DT grave\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Vampire\_NNP !\_.

So\_RB I\_PRP make\_VBP my\_PRP$ choice\_NN to\_TO go\_VB on\_RP with\_IN my\_PRP$ work\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN there\_EX were\_VBD at\_IN least\_JJS three\_CD graves\_NNS to\_TO find\_VB --\_: graves\_NNS that\_WDT are\_VBP inhabit\_VB ;\_: so\_IN I\_PRP search\_VBP ,\_, and\_CC search\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP find\_VBP one\_CD of\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

She\_PRP lay\_VBD in\_IN her\_PRP$ Vampire\_NNP sleep\_NN ,\_, so\_RB full\_JJ of\_IN life\_NN and\_CC voluptuous\_JJ beauty\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP shudder\_VBP as\_IN though\_IN I\_PRP have\_VBP come\_VBN to\_TO do\_VB murder\_NN .\_.

Ah\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP doubt\_VBP not\_RB that\_IN in\_IN old\_JJ time\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB such\_JJ things\_NNS were\_VBD ,\_, many\_JJ a\_DT man\_NN who\_WP set\_VBD forth\_RB to\_TO do\_VB such\_PDT a\_DT task\_NN as\_IN mine\_NN ,\_, found\_VBN at\_IN the\_DT last\_JJ his\_PRP$ heart\_NN fail\_VBP him\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC then\_RB his\_PRP$ nerve\_NN .\_.

So\_RB he\_PRP delay\_NN ,\_, and\_CC delay\_NN ,\_, and\_CC delay\_NN ,\_, till\_IN the\_DT mere\_JJ beauty\_NN and\_CC the\_DT fascination\_NN of\_IN the\_DT wanton\_JJ Un-Dead\_NNP have\_VBP hypnotise\_JJ him\_PRP ;\_: and\_CC he\_PRP remain\_VBP on\_IN and\_CC on\_IN ,\_, till\_IN sunset\_NN come\_VBN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT Vampire\_NNP sleep\_NN be\_VB over\_RB .\_.

Then\_RB the\_DT beautiful\_JJ eyes\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT fair\_JJ woman\_NN open\_NN and\_CC look\_NN love\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT voluptuous\_JJ mouth\_NN present\_JJ to\_TO a\_DT kiss\_NN --\_: and\_CC man\_NN is\_VBZ weak\_JJ .\_.

And\_CC there\_EX remain\_VBP one\_CD more\_JJR victim\_NN in\_IN the\_DT Vampire\_NNP fold\_NN ;\_: one\_CD more\_JJR to\_TO swell\_VB the\_DT grim\_JJ and\_CC grisly\_JJ ranks\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT Un-Dead\_NNP !\_.

...\_: There\_EX is\_VBZ some\_DT fascination\_NN ,\_, surely\_RB ,\_, when\_WRB I\_PRP am\_VBP moved\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT mere\_JJ presence\_NN of\_IN such\_PDT an\_DT one\_CD ,\_, even\_RB lying\_VBG as\_IN she\_PRP lay\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT tomb\_NN fretted\_VBN with\_IN age\_NN and\_CC heavy\_JJ with\_IN the\_DT dust\_NN of\_IN centuries\_NNS ,\_, though\_IN there\_EX be\_VB that\_IN horrid\_JJ odour\_NN such\_JJ as\_IN the\_DT lairs\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT Count\_NNP have\_VBP had\_VBN .\_.

Yes\_UH ,\_, I\_PRP was\_VBD moved\_VBN --\_: I\_PRP ,\_, Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP ,\_, with\_IN all\_DT my\_PRP$ purpose\_NN and\_CC with\_IN my\_PRP$ motive\_NN for\_IN hate\_NN --\_: I\_PRP was\_VBD moved\_VBN to\_TO a\_DT yearning\_NN for\_IN delay\_NN which\_WDT seemed\_VBD to\_TO paralyse\_VB my\_PRP$ faculties\_NNS and\_CC to\_TO clog\_VB my\_PRP$ very\_JJ soul\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP may\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN that\_IN the\_DT need\_NN of\_IN natural\_JJ sleep\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT strange\_JJ oppression\_NN of\_IN the\_DT air\_NN were\_VBD beginning\_VBG to\_TO overcome\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

Certain\_JJ it\_PRP was\_VBD that\_IN I\_PRP was\_VBD lapsing\_VBG into\_IN sleep\_NN ,\_, the\_DT open-eyed\_JJ sleep\_NN of\_IN one\_CD who\_WP yields\_VBZ to\_TO a\_DT sweet\_JJ fascination\_NN ,\_, when\_WRB there\_EX came\_VBD through\_IN the\_DT snow-stilled\_JJ air\_NN a\_DT long\_JJ ,\_, low\_JJ wail\_VB ,\_, so\_RB full\_JJ of\_IN woe\_NN and\_CC pity\_NN that\_IN it\_PRP woke\_VBD me\_PRP like\_IN the\_DT sound\_NN of\_IN a\_DT clarion\_NN .\_.

For\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD the\_DT voice\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ dear\_RB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP that\_IN I\_PRP heard\_VBD .\_.

Then\_RB I\_PRP braced\_VBD myself\_PRP again\_RB to\_TO my\_PRP$ horrid\_JJ task\_NN ,\_, and\_CC found\_VBN by\_IN wrenching\_JJ away\_RB tomb-tops\_JJ one\_CD other\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT sisters\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT other\_JJ dark\_NN one\_CD .\_.

I\_PRP dared\_VBD not\_RB pause\_VB to\_TO look\_VB on\_IN her\_PRP as\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD on\_IN her\_PRP$ sister\_NN ,\_, lest\_IN once\_RB more\_JJR I\_PRP should\_MD begin\_VB to\_TO be\_VB enthrall\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC I\_PRP go\_VBP on\_IN searching\_VBG until\_IN ,\_, presently\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP find\_VBP in\_IN a\_DT high\_JJ great\_JJ tomb\_NN as\_IN if\_IN made\_VBN to\_TO one\_CD much\_RB beloved\_JJ that\_IN other\_JJ fair\_JJ sister\_NN which\_WDT ,\_, like\_IN Jonathan\_NNP I\_PRP had\_VBD seen\_VBN to\_TO gather\_VB herself\_PRP out\_IN of\_IN the\_DT atoms\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT mist\_NN .\_.

She\_PRP was\_VBD so\_RB fair\_JJ to\_TO look\_VB on\_IN ,\_, so\_RB radiantly\_RB beautiful\_JJ ,\_, so\_RB exquisitely\_RB voluptuous\_JJ ,\_, that\_IN the\_DT very\_JJ instinct\_NN of\_IN man\_NN in\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, which\_WDT calls\_VBZ some\_DT of\_IN my\_PRP$ sex\_NN to\_TO love\_VB and\_CC to\_TO protect\_VB one\_CD of\_IN hers\_NNS ,\_, made\_VBD my\_PRP$ head\_NN whirl\_NN with\_IN new\_JJ emotion\_NN .\_.

But\_CC God\_NNP be\_VB thanked\_VBN ,\_, that\_IN soul-wail\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ dear\_RB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP had\_VBD not\_RB died\_VBN out\_IN of\_IN my\_PRP$ ears\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC ,\_, before\_IN the\_DT spell\_NN could\_MD be\_VB wrought\_VBN further\_RB upon\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP had\_VBD nerved\_VBN myself\_PRP to\_TO my\_PRP$ wild\_JJ work\_NN .\_.

By\_IN this\_DT time\_NN I\_PRP had\_VBD searched\_VBN all\_PDT the\_DT tombs\_NNS in\_IN the\_DT chapel\_NN ,\_, so\_RB far\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP could\_MD tell\_VB ;\_: and\_CC as\_IN there\_EX had\_VBD been\_VBN only\_RB three\_CD of\_IN these\_DT Un-Dead\_JJ phantoms\_NNS around\_IN us\_PRP in\_IN the\_DT night\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP took\_VBD it\_PRP that\_IN there\_EX were\_VBD no\_DT more\_JJR of\_IN active\_JJ Un-Dead\_NNP existent\_JJ .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD one\_CD great\_JJ tomb\_NN more\_RBR lordly\_RB than\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT rest\_NN ;\_: huge\_JJ it\_PRP was\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC nobly\_RB proportioned\_VBN .\_.

On\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD but\_CC one\_CD word\_NN DRACULA\_NNP .\_.

This\_DT then\_RB was\_VBD the\_DT Un-Dead\_JJ home\_NN of\_IN the\_DT King-Vampire\_NNP ,\_, to\_TO whom\_WP so\_RB many\_JJ more\_JJR were\_VBD due\_JJ .\_.

Its\_PRP$ emptiness\_NN spoke\_VBD eloquent\_JJ to\_TO make\_VB certain\_JJ what\_WP I\_PRP knew\_VBD .\_.

Before\_IN I\_PRP began\_VBD to\_TO restore\_VB these\_DT women\_NNS to\_TO their\_PRP$ dead\_JJ selves\_NNS through\_IN my\_PRP$ awful\_JJ work\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP laid\_VBD in\_IN Dracula\_NNP 's\_POS tomb\_NN some\_DT of\_IN the\_DT Wafer\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC so\_RB banished\_VBD him\_PRP from\_IN it\_PRP ,\_, Un-Dead\_NNP ,\_, for\_IN ever\_RB .\_.

Then\_RB began\_VBD my\_PRP$ terrible\_JJ task\_NN ,\_, and\_CC I\_PRP dreaded\_VBD it\_PRP .\_.

Had\_VBD it\_PRP been\_VBN but\_CC one\_CD ,\_, it\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN easy\_JJ ,\_, comparative\_JJ .\_.

But\_CC three\_CD !\_.

To\_TO begin\_VB twice\_RB more\_RBR after\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN through\_IN a\_DT deed\_NN of\_IN horror\_NN ;\_: for\_IN if\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD terrible\_JJ with\_IN the\_DT sweet\_JJ Miss\_NNP Lucy\_NNP ,\_, what\_WP would\_MD it\_PRP not\_RB be\_VB with\_IN these\_DT strange\_JJ ones\_NNS who\_WP had\_VBD survived\_VBN through\_IN centuries\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC who\_WP had\_VBD been\_VBN strengthened\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT passing\_NN of\_IN the\_DT years\_NNS ;\_: who\_WP would\_MD ,\_, if\_IN they\_PRP could\_MD ,\_, have\_VBP fought\_VBN for\_IN their\_PRP$ foul\_JJ lives\_NNS ...\_: .\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, my\_PRP$ friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, but\_CC it\_PRP was\_VBD butcher\_NN work\_NN ;\_: had\_VBD I\_PRP not\_RB been\_VBN nerved\_VBN by\_IN thoughts\_NNS of\_IN other\_JJ dead\_NN ,\_, and\_CC of\_IN the\_DT living\_NN over\_IN whom\_WP hung\_VBD such\_PDT a\_DT pall\_NN of\_IN fear\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB have\_VB gone\_VBN on\_RP .\_.

I\_PRP tremble\_VBP and\_CC tremble\_VBP even\_RB yet\_RB ,\_, though\_IN till\_IN all\_DT was\_VBD over\_RB ,\_, God\_NNP be\_VB thanked\_VBN ,\_, my\_PRP$ nerve\_NN did\_VBD stand\_VB .\_.

Had\_VBD I\_PRP not\_RB seen\_VBN the\_DT repose\_NN in\_IN the\_DT first\_JJ place\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT gladness\_NN that\_WDT stole\_VBD over\_IN it\_PRP just\_RB ere\_VBP the\_DT final\_JJ dissolution\_NN came\_VBD ,\_, as\_IN realisation\_NN that\_IN the\_DT soul\_NN had\_VBD been\_VBN won\_VBN ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB have\_VB gone\_VBN further\_RB with\_IN my\_PRP$ butchery\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB have\_VB endured\_VBN the\_DT horrid\_NN screeching\_VBG as\_IN the\_DT stake\_NN drove\_VBD home\_NN ;\_: the\_DT plunging\_NN of\_IN writhing\_VBG form\_NN ,\_, and\_CC lips\_NNS of\_IN bloody\_JJ foam\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB fled\_VBN in\_IN terror\_NN and\_CC left\_VBD my\_PRP$ work\_NN undone\_VBN .\_.

But\_CC it\_PRP is\_VBZ over\_IN !\_.

And\_CC the\_DT poor\_JJ souls\_NNS ,\_, I\_PRP can\_MD pity\_NN them\_PRP now\_RB and\_CC weep\_NN ,\_, as\_IN I\_PRP think\_VBP of\_IN them\_PRP placid\_JJ each\_DT in\_IN her\_PRP$ full\_JJ sleep\_NN of\_IN death\_NN for\_IN a\_DT short\_JJ moment\_NN ere\_NN fading\_JJ .\_.

For\_IN ,\_, friend\_NN John\_NNP ,\_, hardly\_RB had\_VBD my\_PRP$ knife\_NN severed\_VBD the\_DT head\_NN of\_IN each\_DT ,\_, before\_IN the\_DT whole\_JJ body\_NN began\_VBD to\_TO melt\_VB away\_RB and\_CC crumble\_VB in\_IN to\_TO its\_PRP$ native\_JJ dust\_NN ,\_, as\_IN though\_IN the\_DT death\_NN that\_WDT should\_MD have\_VB come\_VBN centuries\_NNS agone\_NN had\_VBD at\_IN last\_JJ assert\_VB himself\_PRP and\_CC say\_VB at\_IN once\_RB and\_CC loud\_RB ``\_`` I\_PRP am\_VBP here\_RB !\_. ''\_''

Before\_IN I\_PRP left\_VBD the\_DT castle\_NN I\_PRP so\_RB fixed\_VBD its\_PRP$ entrances\_NNS that\_WDT never\_RB more\_JJR can\_MD the\_DT Count\_NNP enter\_VBP there\_EX Un-Dead\_NNP .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP stepped\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT circle\_NN where\_WRB Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP slept\_VBD ,\_, she\_PRP woke\_VBD from\_IN her\_PRP$ sleep\_NN ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, seeing\_VBG ,\_, me\_PRP ,\_, cried\_VBD out\_RP in\_IN pain\_NN that\_IN I\_PRP had\_VBD endured\_VBN too\_RB much\_RB .\_.

``\_`` Come\_VB !\_. ''\_''

she\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` come\_VB away\_RB from\_IN this\_DT awful\_JJ place\_NN !\_.

Let\_VB us\_PRP go\_VB to\_TO meet\_VB my\_PRP$ husband\_NN who\_WP is\_VBZ ,\_, I\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, coming\_VBG towards\_IN us\_PRP .\_. ''\_''

She\_PRP was\_VBD looking\_VBG thin\_JJ and\_CC pale\_JJ and\_CC weak\_JJ ;\_: but\_CC her\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS were\_VBD pure\_JJ and\_CC glowed\_VBD with\_IN fervour\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP was\_VBD glad\_JJ to\_TO see\_VB her\_PRP$ paleness\_NN and\_CC her\_PRP$ illness\_NN ,\_, for\_IN my\_PRP$ mind\_NN was\_VBD full\_JJ of\_IN the\_DT fresh\_JJ horror\_NN of\_IN that\_DT ruddy\_JJ vampire\_NN sleep\_NN .\_.

And\_CC so\_RB with\_IN trust\_NN and\_CC hope\_NN ,\_, and\_CC yet\_RB full\_JJ of\_IN fear\_NN ,\_, we\_PRP go\_VBP eastward\_RB to\_TO meet\_VB our\_PRP$ friends\_NNS --\_: and\_CC him\_PRP --\_: whom\_WP Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP tell\_VB me\_PRP that\_IN she\_PRP know\_VBP are\_VBP coming\_VBG to\_TO meet\_VB us\_PRP .\_.

Mina\_NNP Harker\_NNP 's\_POS Journal\_NNP .\_.

6\_CD November\_NNP .\_.

--\_: It\_PRP was\_VBD late\_JJ in\_IN the\_DT afternoon\_NN when\_WRB the\_DT Professor\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP took\_VBD our\_PRP$ way\_NN towards\_IN the\_DT east\_JJ whence\_NN I\_PRP knew\_VBD Jonathan\_NNP was\_VBD coming\_VBG .\_.

We\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB go\_VB fast\_RB ,\_, though\_IN the\_DT way\_NN was\_VBD steeply\_RB downhill\_RB ,\_, for\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO take\_VB heavy\_JJ rugs\_NNS and\_CC wraps\_VBZ with\_IN us\_PRP ;\_: we\_PRP dared\_VBD not\_RB face\_VB the\_DT possibility\_NN of\_IN being\_VBG left\_VBN without\_IN warmth\_NN in\_IN the\_DT cold\_NN and\_CC the\_DT snow\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP had\_VBD to\_TO take\_VB some\_DT of\_IN our\_PRP$ provisions\_NNS ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, for\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD in\_IN a\_DT perfect\_JJ desolation\_NN ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, so\_RB far\_RB as\_IN we\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB through\_IN the\_DT snowfall\_NN ,\_, there\_EX was\_VBD not\_RB even\_RB the\_DT sign\_NN of\_IN habitation\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP had\_VBD gone\_VBN about\_IN a\_DT mile\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP was\_VBD tired\_VBN with\_IN the\_DT heavy\_JJ walking\_NN and\_CC sat\_VBD down\_RB to\_TO rest\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB we\_PRP looked\_VBD back\_RB and\_CC saw\_VBD where\_WRB the\_DT clear\_JJ line\_NN of\_IN Dracula\_NNP 's\_POS castle\_NN cut\_VBD the\_DT sky\_NN ;\_: for\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD so\_RB deep\_JJ under\_IN the\_DT hill\_NN whereon\_NN it\_PRP was\_VBD set\_VBN that\_IN the\_DT angle\_NN of\_IN perspective\_NN of\_IN the\_DT Carpathian\_NNP mountains\_NNS was\_VBD far\_RB below\_IN it\_PRP .\_.

We\_PRP saw\_VBD it\_PRP in\_IN all\_DT its\_PRP$ grandeur\_NN ,\_, perched\_VBD a\_DT thousand\_CD feet\_NNS on\_IN the\_DT summit\_NN of\_IN a\_DT sheer\_JJ precipice\_NN ,\_, and\_CC with\_IN seemingly\_RB a\_DT great\_JJ gap\_NN between\_IN it\_PRP and\_CC the\_DT steep\_NN of\_IN the\_DT adjacent\_JJ mountain\_NN on\_IN any\_DT side\_NN .\_.

There\_EX was\_VBD something\_NN wild\_JJ and\_CC uncanny\_JJ about\_IN the\_DT place\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP could\_MD hear\_VB the\_DT distant\_JJ howling\_NN of\_IN wolves\_NNS .\_.

They\_PRP were\_VBD far\_RB off\_RB ,\_, but\_CC the\_DT sound\_NN ,\_, even\_RB though\_IN coming\_VBG muffled\_VBN through\_IN the\_DT deadening\_JJ snowfall\_NN ,\_, was\_VBD full\_JJ of\_IN terror\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP knew\_VBD from\_IN the\_DT way\_NN Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP was\_VBD searching\_VBG about\_IN that\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD trying\_VBG to\_TO seek\_VB some\_DT strategic\_JJ point\_NN ,\_, where\_WRB we\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB less\_JJR exposed\_VBN in\_IN case\_NN of\_IN attack\_NN .\_.

The\_DT rough\_JJ roadway\_NN still\_RB led\_VBD downwards\_NNS ;\_: we\_PRP could\_MD trace\_VB it\_PRP through\_IN the\_DT drifted\_VBN snow\_NN .\_.

In\_IN a\_DT little\_JJ while\_IN the\_DT Professor\_NNP signalled\_VBD to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, so\_IN I\_PRP got\_VBD up\_RB and\_CC joined\_VBD him\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD found\_VBN a\_DT wonderful\_JJ spot\_NN ,\_, a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN natural\_JJ hollow\_JJ in\_IN a\_DT rock\_NN ,\_, with\_IN an\_DT entrance\_NN like\_IN a\_DT doorway\_NN between\_IN two\_CD boulders\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP took\_VBD me\_PRP by\_IN the\_DT hand\_NN and\_CC drew\_VBD me\_PRP in\_IN :\_: ``\_`` See\_VB !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` here\_RB you\_PRP will\_MD be\_VB in\_IN shelter\_NN ;\_: and\_CC if\_IN the\_DT wolves\_NNS do\_VBP come\_VB I\_PRP can\_MD meet\_VB them\_PRP one\_CD by\_IN one\_CD .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP brought\_VBD in\_RP our\_PRP$ furs\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC made\_VBD a\_DT snug\_JJ nest\_NN for\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC got\_VBD out\_RP some\_DT provisions\_NNS and\_CC forced\_VBD them\_PRP upon\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

But\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB eat\_VB ;\_: to\_TO even\_RB try\_VB to\_TO do\_VB so\_RB was\_VBD repulsive\_JJ to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, much\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP would\_MD have\_VB liked\_VBN to\_TO please\_VB him\_PRP ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB bring\_VB myself\_PRP to\_TO the\_DT attempt\_NN .\_.

He\_PRP looked\_VBD very\_RB sad\_JJ ,\_, but\_CC did\_VBD not\_RB reproach\_VB me\_PRP .\_.

Taking\_VBG his\_PRP$ field-glasses\_NNS from\_IN the\_DT case\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP stood\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT top\_NN of\_IN the\_DT rock\_NN ,\_, and\_CC began\_VBD to\_TO search\_VB the\_DT horizon\_NN .\_.

Suddenly\_RB he\_PRP called\_VBD out\_RP :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Look\_VB !\_.

Madam\_NNP Mina\_NNP ,\_, look\_NN !\_.

look\_VB !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP sprang\_VBD up\_RB and\_CC stood\_VBD beside\_IN him\_PRP on\_IN the\_DT rock\_NN ;\_: he\_PRP handed\_VBD me\_PRP his\_PRP$ glasses\_NNS and\_CC pointed\_VBD .\_.

The\_DT snow\_NN was\_VBD now\_RB falling\_VBG more\_RBR heavily\_RB ,\_, and\_CC swirled\_VBD about\_IN fiercely\_RB ,\_, for\_IN a\_DT high\_JJ wind\_NN was\_VBD beginning\_VBG to\_TO blow\_VB .\_.

However\_RB ,\_, there\_EX were\_VBD times\_NNS when\_WRB there\_EX were\_VBD pauses\_VBZ between\_IN the\_DT snow\_NN flurries\_NNS and\_CC I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB a\_DT long\_JJ way\_NN round\_NN .\_.

From\_IN the\_DT height\_NN where\_WRB we\_PRP were\_VBD it\_PRP was\_VBD possible\_JJ to\_TO see\_VB a\_DT great\_JJ distance\_NN ;\_: and\_CC far\_RB off\_RB ,\_, beyond\_IN the\_DT white\_JJ waste\_NN of\_IN snow\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB the\_DT river\_NN lying\_VBG like\_IN a\_DT black\_JJ ribbon\_NN in\_IN kinks\_NNS and\_CC curls\_NNS as\_IN it\_PRP wound\_VBD its\_PRP$ way\_NN .\_.

Straight\_NN in\_IN front\_NN of\_IN us\_PRP and\_CC not\_RB far\_RB off\_RB --\_: in\_IN fact\_NN ,\_, so\_RB near\_IN that\_IN I\_PRP wondered\_VBD we\_PRP had\_VBD not\_RB noticed\_VBN before\_RB --\_: came\_VBD a\_DT group\_NN of\_IN mounted\_VBN men\_NNS hurrying\_VBG along\_RB .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT midst\_NN of\_IN them\_PRP was\_VBD a\_DT cart\_NN ,\_, a\_DT long\_JJ leiter-wagon\_NN which\_WDT swept\_VBD from\_IN side\_NN to\_TO side\_VB ,\_, like\_IN a\_DT dog\_NN 's\_POS tail\_NN wagging\_NN ,\_, with\_IN each\_DT stern\_JJ inequality\_NN of\_IN the\_DT road\_NN .\_.

Outlined\_VBN against\_IN the\_DT snow\_NN as\_IN they\_PRP were\_VBD ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB from\_IN the\_DT men\_NNS 's\_POS clothes\_NNS that\_IN they\_PRP were\_VBD peasants\_NNS or\_CC gypsies\_NNS of\_IN some\_DT kind\_NN .\_.

On\_IN the\_DT cart\_NN was\_VBD a\_DT great\_JJ square\_NN chest\_NN .\_.

My\_PRP$ heart\_NN leaped\_VBD as\_IN I\_PRP saw\_VBD it\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN I\_PRP felt\_VBD that\_IN the\_DT end\_NN was\_VBD coming\_VBG .\_.

The\_DT evening\_NN was\_VBD now\_RB drawing\_VBG close\_NN ,\_, and\_CC well\_RB I\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN at\_IN sunset\_NN the\_DT Thing\_NNP ,\_, which\_WDT was\_VBD till\_IN then\_RB imprisoned\_VBN there\_RB ,\_, would\_MD take\_VB new\_JJ freedom\_NN and\_CC could\_MD in\_IN any\_DT of\_IN many\_JJ forms\_NNS elude\_VBP all\_DT pursuit\_NN .\_.

In\_IN fear\_NN I\_PRP turned\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT Professor\_NNP ;\_: to\_TO my\_PRP$ consternation\_NN ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, he\_PRP was\_VBD not\_RB there\_RB .\_.

An\_DT instant\_NN later\_RB ,\_, I\_PRP saw\_VBD him\_PRP below\_IN me\_PRP .\_.

Round\_NNP the\_DT rock\_NN he\_PRP had\_VBD drawn\_VBN a\_DT circle\_NN ,\_, such\_JJ as\_IN we\_PRP had\_VBD found\_VBN shelter\_NN in\_IN last\_JJ night\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB he\_PRP had\_VBD completed\_VBN it\_PRP he\_PRP stood\_VBD beside\_IN me\_PRP again\_RB ,\_, saying\_VBG :\_: --\_: ``\_`` At\_IN least\_JJS you\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB safe\_JJ here\_RB from\_IN him\_PRP !\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP took\_VBD the\_DT glasses\_NNS from\_IN me\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC at\_IN the\_DT next\_JJ lull\_NN of\_IN the\_DT snow\_NN swept\_VBD the\_DT whole\_JJ space\_NN below\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

``\_`` See\_VB ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, ``\_`` they\_PRP come\_VBP quickly\_RB ;\_: they\_PRP are\_VBP flogging\_VBG the\_DT horses\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC galloping\_VBG as\_RB hard\_RB as\_IN they\_PRP can\_MD .\_. ''\_''

He\_PRP paused\_VBD and\_CC went\_VBD on\_RP in\_IN a\_DT hollow\_JJ voice\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` They\_PRP are\_VBP racing\_VBG for\_IN the\_DT sunset\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP may\_MD be\_VB too\_RB late\_JJ .\_.

God\_NNP 's\_POS will\_MD be\_VB done\_VBN !\_. ''\_''

Down\_NNP came\_VBD another\_DT blinding\_JJ rush\_NN of\_IN driving\_VBG snow\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT whole\_JJ landscape\_NN was\_VBD blotted\_VBN out\_RP .\_.

It\_PRP soon\_RB passed\_VBD ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, and\_CC once\_RB more\_JJR his\_PRP$ glasses\_NNS were\_VBD fixed\_VBN on\_IN the\_DT plain\_NN .\_.

Then\_RB came\_VBD a\_DT sudden\_JJ cry\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Look\_VB !\_.

Look\_VB !\_.

Look\_VB !\_.

See\_NNP ,\_, two\_CD horsemen\_NNS follow\_VBP fast\_RB ,\_, coming\_VBG up\_RB from\_IN the\_DT south\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP must\_MD be\_VB Quincey\_NNP and\_CC John\_NNP .\_.

Take\_VB the\_DT glass\_NN .\_.

Look\_VB before\_IN the\_DT snow\_NN blots\_NNS it\_PRP all\_DT out\_RP !\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP took\_VBD it\_PRP and\_CC looked\_VBD .\_.

The\_DT two\_CD men\_NNS might\_MD be\_VB Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP and\_CC Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP .\_.

I\_PRP knew\_VBD at\_IN all\_DT events\_NNS that\_IN neither\_DT of\_IN them\_PRP was\_VBD Jonathan\_NNP .\_.

At\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ time\_NN I\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN Jonathan\_NNP was\_VBD not\_RB far\_RB off\_RB ;\_: looking\_VBG around\_IN I\_PRP saw\_VBD on\_IN the\_DT north\_JJ side\_NN of\_IN the\_DT coming\_VBG party\_NN two\_CD other\_JJ men\_NNS ,\_, riding\_VBG at\_IN break-neck\_JJ speed\_NN .\_.

One\_CD of\_IN them\_PRP I\_PRP knew\_VBD was\_VBD Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT other\_JJ I\_PRP took\_VBD ,\_, of\_IN course\_NN ,\_, to\_TO be\_VB Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP .\_.

They\_PRP ,\_, too\_RB ,\_, were\_VBD pursuing\_VBG the\_DT party\_NN with\_IN the\_DT cart\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB I\_PRP told\_VBD the\_DT Professor\_NNP he\_PRP shouted\_VBD in\_IN glee\_NN like\_IN a\_DT schoolboy\_NN ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, after\_IN looking\_VBG intently\_RB till\_IN a\_DT snow\_NN fall\_NN made\_VBD sight\_NN impossible\_JJ ,\_, he\_PRP laid\_VBD his\_PRP$ Winchester\_NNP rifle\_NN ready\_JJ for\_IN use\_NN against\_IN the\_DT boulder\_NN at\_IN the\_DT opening\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ shelter\_NN .\_.

``\_`` They\_PRP are\_VBP all\_DT converging\_VBG ,\_, ''\_'' he\_PRP said\_VBD .\_.

``\_`` When\_WRB the\_DT time\_NN comes\_VBZ we\_PRP shall\_MD have\_VB gypsies\_NNS on\_IN all\_DT sides\_NNS .\_. ''\_''

I\_PRP got\_VBD out\_RP my\_PRP$ revolver\_NN ready\_JJ to\_TO hand\_NN ,\_, for\_IN whilst\_IN we\_PRP were\_VBD speaking\_VBG the\_DT howling\_NN of\_IN wolves\_NNS came\_VBD louder\_RBR and\_CC closer\_JJR .\_.

When\_WRB the\_DT snow\_NN storm\_NN abated\_VBD a\_DT moment\_NN we\_PRP looked\_VBD again\_RB .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD strange\_JJ to\_TO see\_VB the\_DT snow\_NN falling\_VBG in\_IN such\_JJ heavy\_JJ flakes\_NNS close\_RB to\_TO us\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC beyond\_IN ,\_, the\_DT sun\_NN shining\_VBG more\_RBR and\_CC more\_RBR brightly\_RB as\_IN it\_PRP sank\_VBD down\_RB towards\_IN the\_DT far\_JJ mountain\_NN tops\_NNS .\_.

Sweeping\_VBG the\_DT glass\_NN all\_DT around\_IN us\_PRP I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB here\_RB and\_CC there\_RB dots\_NNS moving\_VBG singly\_RB and\_CC in\_IN twos\_NNS and\_CC threes\_NNS and\_CC larger\_JJR numbers\_NNS --\_: the\_DT wolves\_NNS were\_VBD gathering\_VBG for\_IN their\_PRP$ prey\_NN .\_.

Every\_DT instant\_NN seemed\_VBD an\_DT age\_NN whilst\_IN we\_PRP waited\_VBD .\_.

The\_DT wind\_NN came\_VBD now\_RB in\_IN fierce\_JJ bursts\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT snow\_NN was\_VBD driven\_VBN with\_IN fury\_NN as\_IN it\_PRP swept\_VBD upon\_IN us\_PRP in\_IN circling\_VBG eddies\_NNS .\_.

At\_IN times\_NNS we\_PRP could\_MD not\_RB see\_VB an\_DT arm\_NN 's\_POS length\_NN before\_IN us\_PRP ;\_: but\_CC at\_IN others\_NNS ,\_, as\_IN the\_DT hollow-sounding\_JJ wind\_NN swept\_VBN by\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, it\_PRP seemed\_VBD to\_TO clear\_VB the\_DT air-space\_NN around\_IN us\_PRP so\_IN that\_IN we\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB afar\_VB off\_RP .\_.

We\_PRP had\_VBD of\_IN late\_RB been\_VBN so\_RB accustomed\_JJ to\_TO watch\_VB for\_IN sunrise\_NN and\_CC sunset\_NN ,\_, that\_IN we\_PRP knew\_VBD with\_IN fair\_JJ accuracy\_NN when\_WRB it\_PRP would\_MD be\_VB ;\_: and\_CC we\_PRP knew\_VBD that\_IN before\_RB long\_RB the\_DT sun\_NN would\_MD set\_VB .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD hard\_JJ to\_TO believe\_VB that\_IN by\_IN our\_PRP$ watches\_NNS it\_PRP was\_VBD less\_JJR than\_IN an\_DT hour\_NN that\_IN we\_PRP waited\_VBD in\_IN that\_DT rocky\_JJ shelter\_NN before\_IN the\_DT various\_JJ bodies\_NNS began\_VBD to\_TO converge\_VB close\_RB upon\_IN us\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT wind\_NN came\_VBD now\_RB with\_IN fiercer\_JJR and\_CC more\_RBR bitter\_JJ sweeps\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC more\_RBR steadily\_RB from\_IN the\_DT north\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP seemingly\_RB had\_VBD driven\_VBN the\_DT snow\_NN clouds\_NNS from\_IN us\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN ,\_, with\_IN only\_JJ occasional\_JJ bursts\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT snow\_NN fell\_VBD .\_.

We\_PRP could\_MD distinguish\_VB clearly\_RB the\_DT individuals\_NNS of\_IN each\_DT party\_NN ,\_, the\_DT pursued\_JJ and\_CC the\_DT pursuers\_NNS .\_.

Strangely\_RB enough\_RB those\_DT pursued\_VBN did\_VBD not\_RB seem\_VB to\_TO realise\_VB ,\_, or\_CC at\_IN least\_JJS to\_TO care\_VB ,\_, that\_IN they\_PRP were\_VBD pursued\_VBN ;\_: they\_PRP seemed\_VBD ,\_, however\_RB ,\_, to\_TO hasten\_VB with\_IN redoubled\_JJ speed\_NN as\_IN the\_DT sun\_NN dropped\_VBD lower\_JJR and\_CC lower\_JJR on\_IN the\_DT mountain\_NN tops\_NNS .\_.

Closer\_JJR and\_CC closer\_JJR they\_PRP drew\_VBD .\_.

The\_DT Professor\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP crouched\_VBD down\_RB behind\_IN our\_PRP$ rock\_NN ,\_, and\_CC held\_VBD our\_PRP$ weapons\_NNS ready\_JJ ;\_: I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB that\_IN he\_PRP was\_VBD determined\_VBN that\_IN they\_PRP should\_MD not\_RB pass\_VB .\_.

One\_CD and\_CC all\_DT were\_VBD quite\_RB unaware\_JJ of\_IN our\_PRP$ presence\_NN .\_.

All\_DT at\_IN once\_RB two\_CD voices\_NNS shouted\_VBD out\_RP to\_TO :\_: ``\_`` Halt\_VB !\_. ''\_''

One\_CD was\_VBD my\_PRP$ Jonathan\_NNP 's\_POS ,\_, raised\_VBN in\_IN a\_DT high\_JJ key\_NN of\_IN passion\_NN ;\_: the\_DT other\_JJ Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP '\_POS strong\_JJ resolute\_JJ tone\_NN of\_IN quiet\_JJ command\_NN .\_.

The\_DT gypsies\_NNS may\_MD not\_RB have\_VB known\_VBN the\_DT language\_NN ,\_, but\_CC there\_EX was\_VBD no\_DT mistaking\_VBG the\_DT tone\_NN ,\_, in\_IN whatever\_WDT tongue\_NN the\_DT words\_NNS were\_VBD spoken\_VBN .\_.

Instinctively\_RB they\_PRP reined\_VBD in\_IN ,\_, and\_CC at\_IN the\_DT instant\_JJ Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP and\_CC Jonathan\_NNP dashed\_VBD up\_RP at\_IN one\_CD side\_NN and\_CC Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP and\_CC Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP on\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ .\_.

The\_DT leader\_NN of\_IN the\_DT gypsies\_NNS ,\_, a\_DT splendid-looking\_JJ fellow\_NN who\_WP sat\_VBD his\_PRP$ horse\_NN like\_IN a\_DT centaur\_NN ,\_, waved\_VBD them\_PRP back\_RB ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN a\_DT fierce\_JJ voice\_NN gave\_VBD to\_TO his\_PRP$ companions\_NNS some\_DT word\_NN to\_TO proceed\_VB .\_.

They\_PRP lashed\_VBD the\_DT horses\_NNS which\_WDT sprang\_VBD forward\_RB ;\_: but\_CC the\_DT four\_CD men\_NNS raised\_VBD their\_PRP$ Winchester\_NNP rifles\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC in\_IN an\_DT unmistakable\_JJ way\_NN commanded\_VBD them\_PRP to\_TO stop\_VB .\_.

At\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ moment\_NN Dr.\_NNP Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP and\_CC I\_PRP rose\_VBD behind\_IN the\_DT rock\_NN and\_CC pointed\_VBD our\_PRP$ weapons\_NNS at\_IN them\_PRP .\_.

Seeing\_VBG that\_IN they\_PRP were\_VBD surrounded\_VBN the\_DT men\_NNS tightened\_VBD their\_PRP$ reins\_NNS and\_CC drew\_VBD up\_RP .\_.

The\_DT leader\_NN turned\_VBD to\_TO them\_PRP and\_CC gave\_VBD a\_DT word\_NN at\_IN which\_WDT every\_DT man\_NN of\_IN the\_DT gypsy\_NN party\_NN drew\_VBD what\_WDT weapon\_NN he\_PRP carried\_VBD ,\_, knife\_NN or\_CC pistol\_NN ,\_, and\_CC held\_VBD himself\_PRP in\_IN readiness\_NN to\_TO attack\_NN .\_.

Issue\_NN was\_VBD joined\_VBN in\_IN an\_DT instant\_NN .\_.

The\_DT leader\_NN ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT quick\_JJ movement\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ rein\_NN ,\_, threw\_VBD his\_PRP$ horse\_NN out\_IN in\_IN front\_NN ,\_, and\_CC pointing\_VBG first\_RB to\_TO the\_DT sun\_NN --\_: now\_RB close\_VBP down\_RP on\_IN the\_DT hill\_NN tops\_NNS --\_: and\_CC then\_RB to\_TO the\_DT castle\_NN ,\_, said\_VBD something\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB understand\_VB .\_.

For\_IN answer\_NN ,\_, all\_DT four\_CD men\_NNS of\_IN our\_PRP$ party\_NN threw\_VBD themselves\_PRP from\_IN their\_PRP$ horses\_NNS and\_CC dashed\_VBD towards\_IN the\_DT cart\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP should\_MD have\_VB felt\_VBN terrible\_JJ fear\_NN at\_IN seeing\_VBG Jonathan\_NNP in\_IN such\_JJ danger\_NN ,\_, but\_CC that\_IN the\_DT ardour\_NN of\_IN battle\_NN must\_MD have\_VB been\_VBN upon\_IN me\_PRP as\_RB well\_RB as\_IN the\_DT rest\_NN of\_IN them\_PRP ;\_: I\_PRP felt\_VBD no\_DT fear\_NN ,\_, but\_CC only\_RB a\_DT wild\_JJ ,\_, surging\_JJ desire\_NN to\_TO do\_VB something\_NN .\_.

Seeing\_VBG the\_DT quick\_JJ movement\_NN of\_IN our\_PRP$ parties\_NNS ,\_, the\_DT leader\_NN of\_IN the\_DT gypsies\_NNS gave\_VBD a\_DT command\_NN ;\_: his\_PRP$ men\_NNS instantly\_RB formed\_VBD round\_NN the\_DT cart\_NN in\_IN a\_DT sort\_NN of\_IN undisciplined\_JJ endeavour\_NN ,\_, each\_DT one\_CD shouldering\_VBG and\_CC pushing\_VBG the\_DT other\_JJ in\_IN his\_PRP$ eagerness\_NN to\_TO carry\_VB out\_RP the\_DT order\_NN .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT midst\_NN of\_IN this\_DT I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB that\_IN Jonathan\_NNP on\_IN one\_CD side\_NN of\_IN the\_DT ring\_NN of\_IN men\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC Quincey\_NNP on\_IN the\_DT other\_JJ ,\_, were\_VBD forcing\_VBG a\_DT way\_NN to\_TO the\_DT cart\_NN ;\_: it\_PRP was\_VBD evident\_JJ that\_IN they\_PRP were\_VBD bent\_JJ on\_IN finishing\_VBG their\_PRP$ task\_NN before\_IN the\_DT sun\_NN should\_MD set\_VB .\_.

Nothing\_NN seemed\_VBD to\_TO stop\_VB or\_CC even\_RB to\_TO hinder\_VB them\_PRP .\_.

Neither\_CC the\_DT levelled\_VBN weapons\_NNS nor\_CC the\_DT flashing\_VBG knives\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT gypsies\_NNS in\_IN front\_NN ,\_, nor\_CC the\_DT howling\_NN of\_IN the\_DT wolves\_NNS behind\_IN ,\_, appeared\_VBD to\_TO even\_RB attract\_VB their\_PRP$ attention\_NN .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP 's\_POS impetuosity\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT manifest\_JJ singleness\_NN of\_IN his\_PRP$ purpose\_NN ,\_, seemed\_VBD to\_TO overawe\_VB those\_DT in\_IN front\_NN of\_IN him\_PRP ;\_: instinctively\_RB they\_PRP cowered\_VBD ,\_, aside\_RB and\_CC let\_VB him\_PRP pass\_VB .\_.

In\_IN an\_DT instant\_NN he\_PRP had\_VBD jumped\_VBN upon\_IN the\_DT cart\_NN ,\_, and\_CC ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT strength\_NN which\_WDT seemed\_VBD incredible\_JJ ,\_, raised\_VBD the\_DT great\_JJ box\_NN ,\_, and\_CC flung\_VBD it\_PRP over\_IN the\_DT wheel\_NN to\_TO the\_DT ground\_NN .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT meantime\_NN ,\_, Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP had\_VBD had\_VBN to\_TO use\_VB force\_NN to\_TO pass\_VB through\_IN his\_PRP$ side\_NN of\_IN the\_DT ring\_NN of\_IN Szgany\_NNP .\_.

All\_PDT the\_DT time\_NN I\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN breathlessly\_RB watching\_VBG Jonathan\_NNP I\_PRP had\_VBD ,\_, with\_IN the\_DT tail\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ eye\_NN ,\_, seen\_VBN him\_PRP pressing\_VBG desperately\_RB forward\_RB ,\_, and\_CC had\_VBD seen\_VBN the\_DT knives\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT gypsies\_NNS flash\_VBP as\_IN he\_PRP won\_VBD a\_DT way\_NN through\_IN them\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC they\_PRP cut\_VBD at\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP had\_VBD parried\_VBN with\_IN his\_PRP$ great\_JJ bowie\_NN knife\_NN ,\_, and\_CC at\_IN first\_RB I\_PRP thought\_VBD that\_IN he\_PRP too\_RB had\_VBD come\_VBN through\_RB in\_IN safety\_NN ;\_: but\_CC as\_IN he\_PRP sprang\_VBD beside\_IN Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP had\_VBD by\_IN now\_RB jumped\_VBN from\_IN the\_DT cart\_NN ,\_, I\_PRP could\_MD see\_VB that\_IN with\_IN his\_PRP$ left\_JJ hand\_NN he\_PRP was\_VBD clutching\_VBG at\_IN his\_PRP$ side\_NN ,\_, and\_CC that\_IN the\_DT blood\_NN was\_VBD spurting\_VBG through\_IN his\_PRP$ fingers\_NNS .\_.

He\_PRP did\_VBD not\_RB delay\_VB notwithstanding\_IN this\_DT ,\_, for\_IN as\_IN Jonathan\_NNP ,\_, with\_IN desperate\_JJ energy\_NN ,\_, attacked\_VBD one\_CD end\_NN of\_IN the\_DT chest\_NN ,\_, attempting\_VBG to\_TO prize\_NN off\_IN the\_DT lid\_NN with\_IN his\_PRP$ great\_JJ Kukri\_NNP knife\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP attacked\_VBD the\_DT other\_JJ frantically\_RB with\_IN his\_PRP$ bowie\_NN .\_.

Under\_IN the\_DT efforts\_NNS of\_IN both\_DT men\_NNS the\_DT lid\_NN began\_VBD to\_TO yield\_VB ;\_: the\_DT nails\_NNS drew\_VBD with\_IN a\_DT quick\_JJ screeching\_VBG sound\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT top\_NN of\_IN the\_DT box\_NN was\_VBD thrown\_VBN back\_RB .\_.

By\_IN this\_DT time\_NN the\_DT gypsies\_NNS ,\_, seeing\_VBG themselves\_PRP covered\_VBN by\_IN the\_DT Winchesters\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC at\_IN the\_DT mercy\_NN of\_IN Lord\_NNP Godalming\_NNP and\_CC Dr.\_NNP Seward\_NNP ,\_, had\_VBD given\_VBN in\_IN and\_CC made\_VBD no\_DT resistance\_NN .\_.

The\_DT sun\_NN was\_VBD almost\_RB down\_RB on\_IN the\_DT mountain\_NN tops\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT shadows\_NNS of\_IN the\_DT whole\_JJ group\_NN fell\_VBD long\_RB upon\_IN the\_DT snow\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP saw\_VBD the\_DT Count\_NN lying\_VBG within\_IN the\_DT box\_NN upon\_IN the\_DT earth\_NN ,\_, some\_DT of\_IN which\_WDT the\_DT rude\_JJ falling\_VBG from\_IN the\_DT cart\_NN had\_VBD scattered\_VBN over\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

He\_PRP was\_VBD deathly\_RB pale\_JJ ,\_, just\_RB like\_IN a\_DT waxen\_JJ image\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT red\_JJ eyes\_NNS glared\_VBD with\_IN the\_DT horrible\_JJ vindictive\_JJ look\_NN which\_WDT I\_PRP knew\_VBD too\_RB well\_RB .\_.

As\_IN I\_PRP looked\_VBD ,\_, the\_DT eyes\_NNS saw\_VBD the\_DT sinking\_NN sun\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT look\_NN of\_IN hate\_NN in\_IN them\_PRP turned\_VBD to\_TO triumph\_NN .\_.

But\_CC ,\_, on\_IN the\_DT instant\_NN ,\_, came\_VBD the\_DT sweep\_NN and\_CC flash\_NN of\_IN Jonathan\_NNP 's\_POS great\_JJ knife\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP shrieked\_VBD as\_IN I\_PRP saw\_VBD it\_PRP shear\_NN through\_IN the\_DT throat\_NN ;\_: whilst\_IN at\_IN the\_DT same\_JJ moment\_NN Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP 's\_POS bowie\_NN knife\_NN plunged\_VBD into\_IN the\_DT heart\_NN .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD like\_IN a\_DT miracle\_NN ;\_: but\_CC before\_IN our\_PRP$ very\_JJ eyes\_NNS ,\_, and\_CC almost\_RB in\_IN the\_DT drawing\_NN of\_IN a\_DT breath\_NN ,\_, the\_DT whole\_JJ body\_NN crumble\_VBP into\_IN dust\_NN and\_CC passed\_VBN from\_IN our\_PRP$ sight\_NN .\_.

I\_PRP shall\_MD be\_VB glad\_JJ as\_RB long\_RB as\_IN I\_PRP live\_VBP that\_IN even\_RB in\_IN that\_DT moment\_NN of\_IN final\_JJ dissolution\_NN ,\_, there\_EX was\_VBD in\_IN the\_DT face\_NN a\_DT look\_NN of\_IN peace\_NN ,\_, such\_JJ as\_IN I\_PRP never\_RB could\_MD have\_VB imagined\_VBN might\_MD have\_VB rested\_VBN there\_RB .\_.

The\_DT Castle\_NNP of\_IN Dracula\_NNP now\_RB stood\_VBD out\_RP against\_IN the\_DT red\_JJ sky\_NN ,\_, and\_CC every\_DT stone\_NN of\_IN its\_PRP$ broken\_JJ battlements\_NNS was\_VBD articulated\_VBN against\_IN the\_DT light\_NN of\_IN the\_DT setting\_NN sun\_NN .\_.

The\_DT gypsies\_NNS ,\_, taking\_VBG us\_PRP as\_IN in\_IN some\_DT way\_NN the\_DT cause\_NN of\_IN the\_DT extraordinary\_JJ disappearance\_NN of\_IN the\_DT dead\_JJ man\_NN ,\_, turned\_VBD ,\_, without\_IN a\_DT word\_NN ,\_, and\_CC rode\_VBD away\_RB as\_IN if\_IN for\_IN their\_PRP$ lives\_NNS .\_.

Those\_DT who\_WP were\_VBD unmounted\_JJ jumped\_VBD upon\_IN the\_DT leiter-wagon\_NN and\_CC shouted\_VBD to\_TO the\_DT horsemen\_NNS not\_RB to\_TO desert\_VB them\_PRP .\_.

The\_DT wolves\_NNS ,\_, which\_WDT had\_VBD withdrawn\_VBN to\_TO a\_DT safe\_JJ distance\_NN ,\_, followed\_VBN in\_IN their\_PRP$ wake\_NN ,\_, leaving\_VBG us\_PRP alone\_RB .\_.

Mr.\_NNP Morris\_NNP ,\_, who\_WP had\_VBD sunk\_VBN to\_TO the\_DT ground\_NN ,\_, leaned\_VBN on\_IN his\_PRP$ elbow\_NN ,\_, holding\_VBG his\_PRP$ hand\_NN pressed\_VBN to\_TO his\_PRP$ side\_NN ;\_: the\_DT blood\_NN still\_RB gushed\_VBD through\_IN his\_PRP$ fingers\_NNS .\_.

I\_PRP flew\_VBD to\_TO him\_PRP ,\_, for\_IN the\_DT Holy\_NNP circle\_NN did\_VBD not\_RB now\_RB keep\_VB me\_PRP back\_RB ;\_: so\_RB did\_VBD the\_DT two\_CD doctors\_NNS .\_.

Jonathan\_NNP knelt\_VBD behind\_IN him\_PRP and\_CC the\_DT wounded\_JJ man\_NN laid\_VBN back\_RP his\_PRP$ head\_NN on\_IN his\_PRP$ shoulder\_NN .\_.

With\_IN a\_DT sigh\_NN he\_PRP took\_VBD ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT feeble\_JJ effort\_NN ,\_, my\_PRP$ hand\_NN in\_IN that\_DT of\_IN his\_PRP$ own\_JJ which\_WDT was\_VBD unstained\_JJ .\_.

He\_PRP must\_MD have\_VB seen\_VBN the\_DT anguish\_NN of\_IN my\_PRP$ heart\_NN in\_IN my\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, for\_IN he\_PRP smiled\_VBD at\_IN me\_PRP and\_CC said\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` I\_PRP am\_VBP only\_RB too\_RB happy\_JJ to\_TO have\_VB been\_VBN of\_IN any\_DT service\_NN !\_.

Oh\_UH ,\_, God\_NNP !\_. ''\_''

he\_PRP cried\_VBD suddenly\_RB ,\_, struggling\_VBG up\_RP to\_TO a\_DT sitting\_VBG posture\_NN and\_CC pointing\_VBG to\_TO me\_PRP ,\_, ``\_`` It\_PRP was\_VBD worth\_JJ for\_IN this\_DT to\_TO die\_VB !\_.

Look\_VB !\_.

look\_VB !\_. ''\_''

The\_DT sun\_NN was\_VBD now\_RB right\_RB down\_RB upon\_IN the\_DT mountain\_NN top\_NN ,\_, and\_CC the\_DT red\_JJ gleams\_NNS fell\_VBD upon\_IN my\_PRP$ face\_NN ,\_, so\_IN that\_IN it\_PRP was\_VBD bathed\_VBN in\_IN rosy\_JJ light\_NN .\_.

With\_IN one\_CD impulse\_NN the\_DT men\_NNS sank\_VBD on\_IN their\_PRP$ knees\_NNS and\_CC a\_DT deep\_JJ and\_CC earnest\_JJ ``\_`` Amen\_UH ''\_'' broke\_VBD from\_IN all\_DT as\_IN their\_PRP$ eyes\_NNS followed\_VBD the\_DT pointing\_VBG of\_IN his\_PRP$ finger\_NN .\_.

The\_DT dying\_VBG man\_NN spoke\_VBD :\_: --\_: ``\_`` Now\_NNP God\_NNP be\_VB thanked\_VBN that\_IN all\_DT has\_VBZ not\_RB been\_VBN in\_IN vain\_JJ !\_.

See\_VB !\_.

the\_DT snow\_NN is\_VBZ not\_RB more\_RBR stainless\_JJ than\_IN her\_PRP$ forehead\_NN !\_.

The\_DT curse\_NN has\_VBZ passed\_VBN away\_RB !\_. ''\_''

And\_CC ,\_, to\_TO our\_PRP$ bitter\_JJ grief\_NN ,\_, with\_IN a\_DT smile\_NN and\_CC in\_IN silence\_NN ,\_, he\_PRP died\_VBD ,\_, a\_DT gallant\_JJ gentleman\_NN .\_.

NOTE\_VB Seven\_NNP years\_NNS ago\_IN we\_PRP all\_DT went\_VBD through\_IN the\_DT flames\_NNS ;\_: and\_CC the\_DT happiness\_NN of\_IN some\_DT of\_IN us\_PRP since\_IN then\_RB is\_VBZ ,\_, we\_PRP think\_VBP ,\_, well\_RB worth\_JJ the\_DT pain\_NN we\_PRP endured\_VBD .\_.

It\_PRP is\_VBZ an\_DT added\_VBN joy\_NN to\_TO Mina\_NNP and\_CC to\_TO me\_PRP that\_IN our\_PRP$ boy\_NN 's\_POS birthday\_NN is\_VBZ the\_DT same\_JJ day\_NN as\_IN that\_DT on\_IN which\_WDT Quincey\_NNP Morris\_NNP died\_VBD .\_.

His\_PRP$ mother\_NN holds\_VBZ ,\_, I\_PRP know\_VBP ,\_, the\_DT secret\_JJ belief\_NN that\_IN some\_DT of\_IN our\_PRP$ brave\_VB friend\_NN 's\_POS spirit\_NN has\_VBZ passed\_VBN into\_IN him\_PRP .\_.

His\_PRP$ bundle\_NN of\_IN names\_NNS links\_NNS all\_PDT our\_PRP$ little\_JJ band\_NN of\_IN men\_NNS together\_RB ;\_: but\_CC we\_PRP call\_VBP him\_PRP Quincey\_NNP .\_.

In\_IN the\_DT summer\_NN of\_IN this\_DT year\_NN we\_PRP made\_VBD a\_DT journey\_NN to\_TO Transylvania\_NNP ,\_, and\_CC went\_VBD over\_IN the\_DT old\_JJ ground\_NN which\_WDT was\_VBD ,\_, and\_CC is\_VBZ ,\_, to\_TO us\_PRP so\_RB full\_JJ of\_IN vivid\_JJ and\_CC terrible\_JJ memories\_NNS .\_.

It\_PRP was\_VBD almost\_RB impossible\_JJ to\_TO believe\_VB that\_IN the\_DT things\_NNS which\_WDT we\_PRP had\_VBD seen\_VBN with\_IN our\_PRP$ own\_JJ eyes\_NNS and\_CC heard\_VBD with\_IN our\_PRP$ own\_JJ ears\_NNS were\_VBD living\_VBG truths\_NNS .\_.

Every\_DT trace\_NN of\_IN all\_DT that\_WDT had\_VBD been\_VBN was\_VBD blotted\_VBN out\_RP .\_.

The\_DT castle\_NN stood\_VBD as\_IN before\_RB ,\_, reared\_VBN high\_RB above\_IN a\_DT waste\_NN of\_IN desolation\_NN .\_.

When\_WRB we\_PRP got\_VBD home\_NN we\_PRP were\_VBD talking\_VBG of\_IN the\_DT old\_JJ time\_NN --\_: which\_WDT we\_PRP could\_MD all\_DT look\_VB back\_RB on\_IN without\_IN despair\_NN ,\_, for\_IN Godalming\_NNP and\_CC Seward\_NNP are\_VBP both\_DT happily\_RB married\_VBN .\_.

I\_PRP took\_VBD the\_DT papers\_NNS from\_IN the\_DT safe\_NN where\_WRB they\_PRP had\_VBD been\_VBN ever\_RB since\_IN our\_PRP$ return\_NN so\_RB long\_RB ago\_RB .\_.

We\_PRP were\_VBD struck\_VBN with\_IN the\_DT fact\_NN ,\_, that\_IN in\_IN all\_PDT the\_DT mass\_NN of\_IN material\_NN of\_IN which\_WDT the\_DT record\_NN is\_VBZ composed\_VBN ,\_, there\_EX is\_VBZ hardly\_RB one\_CD authentic\_JJ document\_NN ;\_: nothing\_NN but\_CC a\_DT mass\_NN of\_IN typewriting\_NN ,\_, except\_IN the\_DT later\_JJ note-books\_NNS of\_IN Mina\_NNP and\_CC Seward\_NNP and\_CC myself\_PRP ,\_, and\_CC Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP 's\_POS memorandum\_NN .\_.

We\_PRP could\_MD hardly\_RB ask\_VB any\_DT one\_CD ,\_, even\_RB did\_VBD we\_PRP wish\_VB to\_TO ,\_, to\_TO accept\_VB these\_DT as\_IN proofs\_NNS of\_IN so\_RB wild\_JJ a\_DT story\_NN .\_.

Van\_NNP Helsing\_NNP summed\_VBD it\_PRP all\_DT up\_RP as\_IN he\_PRP said\_VBD ,\_, with\_IN our\_PRP$ boy\_NN on\_IN his\_PRP$ knee\_NN :\_: --\_: ``\_`` We\_PRP want\_VBP no\_DT proofs\_NNS ;\_: we\_PRP ask\_VBP none\_NN to\_TO believe\_VB us\_PRP !\_.

This\_DT boy\_NN will\_MD some\_DT day\_NN know\_VB what\_WP a\_DT brave\_VBP and\_CC gallant\_JJ woman\_NN his\_PRP$ mother\_NN is\_VBZ .\_.

Already\_RB he\_PRP knows\_VBZ her\_PRP$ sweetness\_NN and\_CC loving\_JJ care\_NN ;\_: later\_RB on\_IN he\_PRP will\_MD understand\_VB how\_WRB some\_DT men\_NNS so\_RB loved\_VBD her\_PRP ,\_, that\_IN they\_PRP did\_VBD dare\_VB much\_RB for\_IN her\_PRP$ sake\_NN .\_. ''\_''

Jonathan\_NNP Harker\_NNP .\_.

THE\_DT END\_NN